

# THE WORKS

OF

Mr. Richard Hooker,

(That *Learned, Godly, Judicious, and Eloquent Divine*)

Vindicating the

CHURCH of ENGLAND,

As truly *Christian*, and duly *Reformed*:

In Eight BOOKS of

ECCLESIASTICAL POLITY.

Now completed,

As with the *Sixth* and *Eighth*, so with the *SEVENTH*,  
(touching *Episcopacy*, as the *Primitive, Catholick* and *Apostolick*  
Government of the Church) out of his own Manuscripts, never  
before Published.

With an account of his *Holy Life*, and *Happy Death*,

Written by Dr. *John Gauden*, now Bishop of *Exeter*.

The entire *Edition* Dedicated to the Kings Most  
Excellent Majesty,

CHARLS the II.

By whose ROYAL FATHER (near His Mar-  
tyrdom) the former Five Books (then onely extant) were  
commended to his dear Children, as an excellent means  
to satisfie Private Scruples, and settle the Publique  
Peace of this Church and Kingdom.

---

James 3. 17. *The wisdom from above, is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, easie to be intreated, full of mercy and good works, without partiality and hypocrisie.*

---

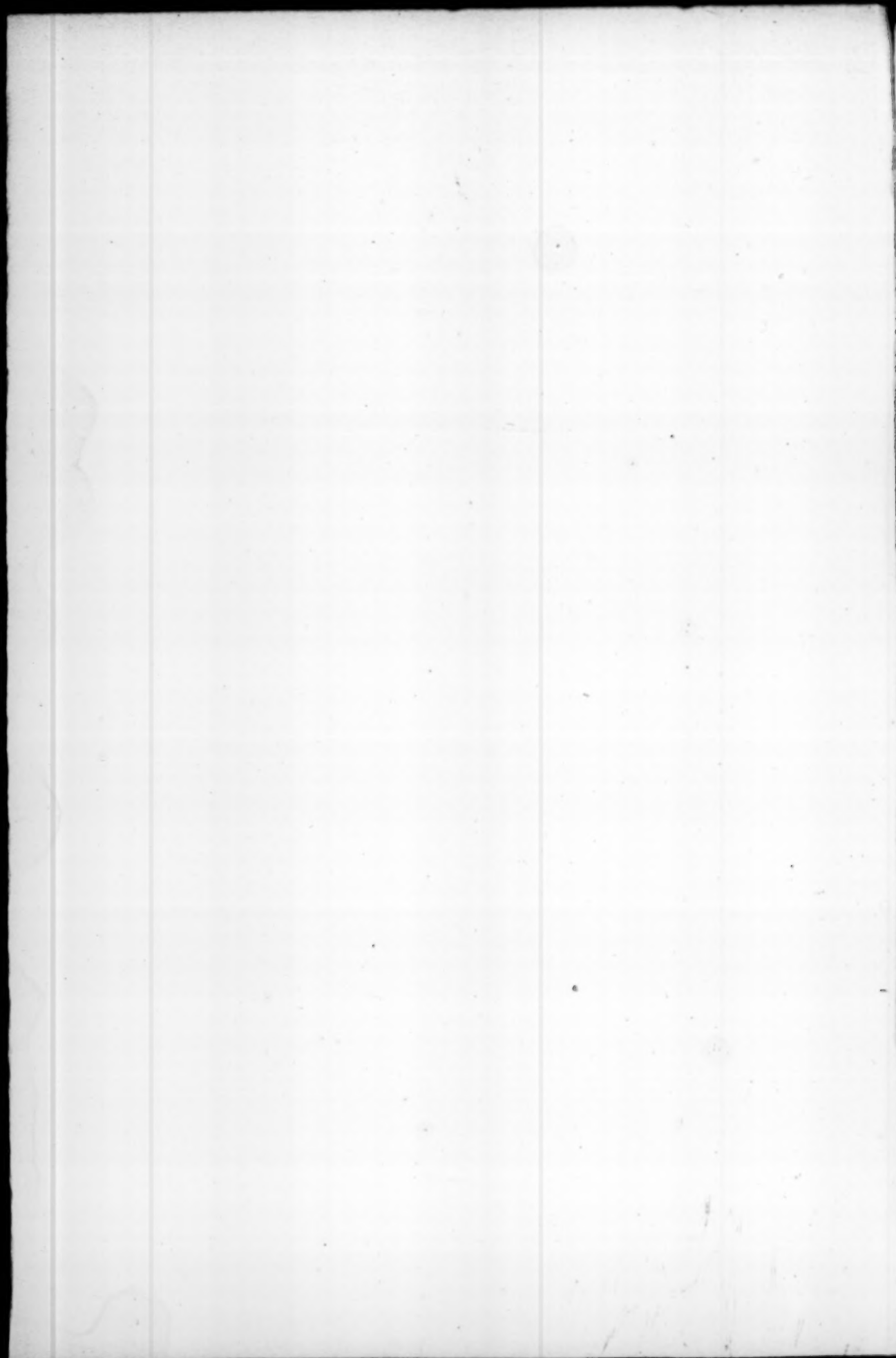
Μὴν τ' ἀληθινὰς αἰτίας, καὶ τ' ἀπὸν ἀνίστα. Plat.

*Multi radio investigande veritatis ad proximos divertunt errores. Min. Fel.*

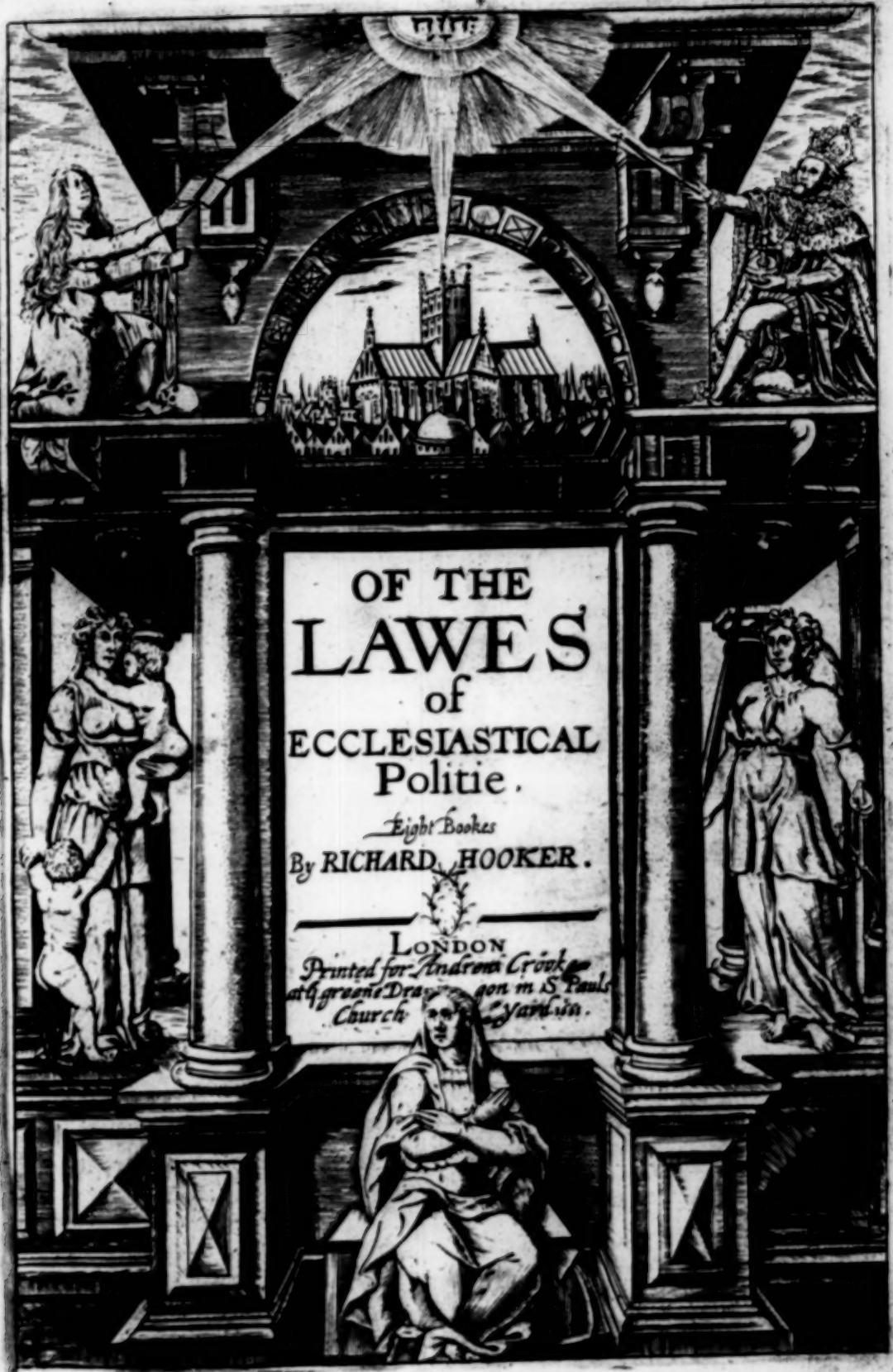
---

London, Printed by J. Beß, for Andrew Crook, at the Green Dragon in S. Pauls Church-yard. 1662.





Mail  
Paint  
16 Apr. 38



THE  
 WORKS  
 OF  
 Mr. Richard Hooker  
 In three volumes.  
 The first volume containing the  
 Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity.  
 The second volume containing the  
 Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity.  
 The third volume containing the  
 Laws of Ecclesiastical Polity.  
 Printed by W. Stansfeld, at the  
 Press of the University of  
 Cambridge.  
 1703.



TO THE  
**KINGS**  
Most EXCELLENT MAJESTIE  
**CHARLS the II.**

By the Grace of God,  
King of Great Britany, France and Ireland,  
Defender of the Faith, &c.

Most Gracions Sovereign,



*Although I know how little leisure  
Great Kings have to read Large  
Books, or indeed any, save one-  
ly Gods (the study, belief and  
obedience of which, is Precisely  
commanded, even to Kings, Deut.  
17. 18. 19. And from which, whatever wholly diverts  
them, will hazard to damn them: there being no af-  
fairs of so great importance, as their serving God, and  
saving their own souls; nor any Precepts so wise, just,  
holy and safe, as those of the Divine Oracles; nor  
any Empire so glorious, as that by which Kings being  
subject to Gods Law, have Dominion over them-*

A 2

selves,



---

## An Epistle to the King.

---

selves, and so best deserve and exercise it over their Subjects.)

Yet having lived to see the wonderful and happy Restauration of your Majesty to your Rightful Kingdoms, and of this reformed Church to its just rights, primitive order, and pristine constitution, by your Majesties prudent care, and unparallel'd bounty, I know not what to present more worthy of your Majesties acceptance, and my duty, then these elaborate and seasonable Works of the Famous and Prudent Mr. Richard Hooker now augmented, and I hope compleated with the three last Books, so much desired, and so long concealed.

The publishing of which Volume so intire, and thus presenting it to your Majesty, seems to be a blessing and honor reserved by Gods Providence, to adde a further Lustre to your Majesties glorious Name, and happy Reign, whose transcendent favour, justice, merit and munificence to the long afflicted Church of England, is a subject no less worthy of admiration then gratitude to all posterity: And of all things (next Gods grace) not to be abused or turned into wantonness by any of your Majesties Clergy, who are highly obliged beyond all other Subjects to piety, loyalty and industry.

I shall need nothing more to ingratiate this Incomparable Piece to your Majesties acceptance, and all the English worlds, then those high commendations it hath ever had, as from all prudent, peaceable and impartial Readers, so especially from your Majesties Royal Father, who a few days before he was Crowned with Martyrdom, commended to his dearest Children, the diligent Reading of Mr. Hookers Ecclesiastical Policy, even next the Bible; as an excellent means to  
settle

## An Epistle to the King.

*settle them in the truth of Religion, and in the peace of this Church, as much Christian, and as well Reformed as any under Heaven: As if God had reserved this signal Honor to be done by the best of Kings, and greatest Sufferers for this Church; to him who was one of the best Writers, and ablest Defenders of it.*

*To this compleated Edition, I have added such particular accounts as I could get, of the Authors person, education, temper, manners, fortunes, life and death, which no man hath hitherto done to any exactness or proportion: That hereby your Majesty and all the world may see (if I have been able at this distance of time to take his Effigies aright) what sort of men are fittest for Church-work (which like the building of Solomons Temple, is best carried on with most evenness of Judgement, and least noise of passion;) Also what manner of man he was, to whom we all owe this noble work, and durable defence.*

*Which is indeed at once (as the Tongues of Eloquent Princes are to themselves, and their Subjects) both a Treasury & an Armory, to enrich the friends, and defend against the Enemies of the Church of England: a rare composition of unpassionate Reason, and impartial Religion: the mature product of a judicious Scholar, a loyal Subject, an humble Preacher, and a most eloquent Writer: the very abstract and quintessence of Laws Humane and Divine, a summary of the grounds, rules and proportions of true Polity in Church and State: upon which clear, solid, and safe foundations, the good Order, Peace, and Government of this Church was anciently settled, and on which, while it stands firm, it will be flourishing: All other popular and specious pretensions being found by  
late*

## An Epistle to the King.

late sad experiences, to be, as novel and unfit, so factious and fallacious, yea dangerous and destructive to the peace and prosperity of this Church and Kingdom, whose inseparable happiness and Interests are bound up in Monarchy and Episcopacy.

The Politick and visible managing of both which, God hath now graciously restored, and committed to your Majesties Sovereign Wisdom and Authority, after the many & long Tragedies suffered from those Club-masters and Tub-ministers, who sought not fairly to obtain Reformation of what might seem amiss, but violently and wholly to overthrow the ancient and goodly Fabrick of this Church and Kingdom: For finding themselves not able in many years to Answer this one Book, long ago written in defence of the Truth, Order, Government, Authority and Liberty (in things indifferent) of this Reformed Church, agreeable to right Reason, and true Religion (which makes this well-tempered Peice a file capable to break the teeth of any that venture to bite it:) they conspired at last to betake themselves to Arms, to kindle those horrid fires of Civil Wars, which this wise Author foresaw and foretold in his admirable Preface, would follow those sparks, and that smoak which he saw rise in his days: So that from impertinent Disputes (seconded with scurrilous Pamphlets) they fled to tumults, sedition, rebellion, sacrilege, paracide, yea regicide, counsels, weapons and practices, certainly, no way becoming the hearts and hands of Christian subjects, nor ever sanctified by Christ, for his service, or his Churches good.

What now remains, but your Majesties perfecting and preserving that (in this Church) which you have  
with



## An Epistle to the King.

with much prudence and tenderness so happily begun, and prosecuted with more zeal then the establishment of your own Throne. The still crazy Church of England, together with this Book (its great and impregnable Shield) do further need, and humbly implore your Majesties Royal Protection under God: Nor can your Majesty by any generous instance and perseverance (most worthy of a Christian King) more express that pious and grateful sense which God and all good men expect from your Majesty, as some retribution for his many miraculous mercies to your self, then in a wise, speedy, and happy settling of our Religious peace, with the least grievance, & most satisfaction to all your good Subjects; Sacred Order and Uniformity being the centre and circumference of our Civil Tranquillity: Sedition naturally rising out of Schism, and Rebellion out of faction; The onely cure and Antidote against both, are good Laws and Canons, first, wisely made, with all Christian Moderation and Seasonable Charity; next, duly executed with Justice, and impartiality; which sober severity, is indeed the greatest Charity to the Publique. Whose Verity, Unity, Sanctity and Solemnity in Religious Concernments, being once duly established, must not be shaken or sacrificed to any private varieties and extravagancies. Where the intervals of Doctrine, <sup>internals</sup> Morality, Mysteries, and Evangelical Duties, being (as they are in the Church of England) sound and sacred, the externals of decent Forms, Circumstances, Rites and Ceremonies, being subordinate and servient to the main, cannot be either evil or unsafe, neither offensive to God nor good Christians.

For



---

An Epistle to the King.

---

*For the attaining of which blessed ends of Piety  
and Peace, that the sacred Sun and Shield of the  
Divine Grace and Power directing and protecting,  
may ever shine upon Your Maiesties Person and Fa-  
mily, Counsels and Power, is the humble prayer of*

Your Sacred Majesties

most Loyal Subject,

and devoted Servant,

January 1. 1661.

Ioh. Exon.

---

THE

---



THE  
LIFE & DEATH  
OF  
Mr. Richard Hooker,

(The Learned and justly Renowned Author of  
the *ECCLESIASTICAL POLITIE*.)

Written by  
*John Gauden* D.D. and Bishop of Exon.



Being not more earnestly desired by others, then Ambitionusly devoted of my self, to express my singular respect and gratitude to the memory of Mr. Richard Hooker, by whose Labours I have profited, in giving some account to the now *restored Church of England*, of the Person and Manners, the Life and Death of this its great Friend, faithful *Servant*, and valiant *Champion*, by way of Ornament to this new Edition of his incomparable *Work of Ecclesiastical Polity*; to which, by the care of some Learned men; especially of the Right Reverend Father in God, *Gilbert* now Lord Bishop of *London*, those genuine additions are now made of the three last Books, promised and performed by him; but long concealed from public view, not without great injury to the public good. I must confess, I was never more encouraged to such an undertaking by the real worth and illustrious merit (in general) of any Church-man, being set beyond all flattery or flattery on this part, and subject to do neither him nor myself any injury, but by my own defects: Nor was I ever less enabled to perform so public a service, as to those supplies of particular remarks, and exact memorials of his Life and Death, which are necessary to make a compleat History or Portraie of him; in whom some things were admirable, many things imitable, and all things commendable, yet having account publique or private hitherto been given of him, by any Writing or Information

mation proportionate to his Dimensions, who merited a Volume, and is not to be made up in short and obscure Narratives: For nothing is more deformed, then to see the *Heroick eminencies* of grand Persons shrunk to *pittiful Epitomies*, like *Aesop's Fables*, wrapping up *Achilles* in an *Enchiridion*, and putting *Hercules* into a *pintepot*; (*Augustissimas virtutes scripti Angustis minuendo*) setting Virtue as it were in the stocks, and wire-drawing ample worth, through the straits of an envious pen, or penurious stile: Great Saints do merit great shrines; eminent wisdom and valour may well expect *Iliads*.

Why no full  
account  
heretofore  
Given of Mr.  
R. Hooker.

Nor that Mr. Hooker wanted either *Excellencies* capable to have invited and employed the most accurate pens of his age; nor yet did he want learned *Friends*, and just *Admirers*, who were highly devoted to his honor; yea, indeed to Gods glory, which deserved and required some just and grateful description of those *rare gifts* and *graces*, which were liberally bestowed on him, and excellently used by him.

But the nobler and better sort of the *English Clergie* (who were conformable to this Church) seemed so satisfied with those illustrious (though till now defective) *Monuments*, which he left in his writings, that they thought he wanted nothing more to preserve his memory, or to keep Posterity in a perpetual admiration of him, then the reading of his works: They judged the *Jewel* of his name was so well set in his solid and splendid Writings, that there needed no other *foil*: And perhaps that was Mr. Hooker's fortune, which oft befalls rare faces, and singular beauties, to have no picture left of them, because no hand was so presumptuous of its skill, as to venture to take their *Portraiture*. So that the defect on this side may be imputed to a modest despair of emulating the *Original*, or hitting the life.

Others (who warped from the Church of England) and have ventured to be (*Biographers*) writers of the lives of some *English Divines* (as some of late have done during the *Anarchy* or *Anarchy* of *Presbytery* and *Independency*) these have either enviously passed by this Mr. Hooker, because they took him to be no friend to their parties (which were then to be cried up among the vulgar;) or they did him this right, to esteem him (*gravissimum & in tractabilem adversarium*) as a very learned, so a very heavy *Adversary*; not to be commended by them, because never to be answered, in his just, valiant and Victorious oppositions against their Designs, Principles, and Interests, who were either a little cross-grained, or more rudely non-conform to the Church of England.

Whose *scurrilous Petulance* (as to the meaner and more Plebeian sort of those *Scriblers*) Mr. Hooker then most severely chastised, when being intent onely to Reason and Religion, he disdained to answer them according to their folly and railing, but left them to be punished by their own impotent passions, and impudent manners: Others of that party, who seemed to be the soberest and strongest Pillars of it, this grand *Hero* courageously encountered, notably routed, and utterly vanquished, even to the silencing of them; seriously discovering their machinations and devices, gravely answering all their *Sophistical* and *Popular Fallacies*, fully confuting all their strongest Arguments, beating them out of their *Fastnesses* and *Retreats*, demolishing their very Fortifications, and those Towers of *Babel*, which their confused fancies and tongues had built in their own crowns, and sought to set up in this Church.

Mr. Hooker's name set off with equal wisdom and meekness, for the strength of truth managed by modest eloquence, gave such a terror to such writers, that they kept an astonished distance from him: And indeed this sort of *partial Historians*, chose to be wilfully ignorant of Mr. Hooker, and so to keep the world; afraid to read his works, and ashamed (if they did read them) to own that pregnancy of Reason which doth encounter them in all his writings: Hence they were so wary, as not to meddle with what they had no minde to perform, and thought it safer to let him rest in quiet, or to bury him in *Silence*, then either by disparaging of him to expose themselves to the laughter and scorn of all wise men; or by commending him, to disadvantage their party and cause, which for many years after his *Ecclesiastical Polity* was published, lay gasping and sprawling for breath, as *Assem* under the strict pressures or graspings of this mighty *Hercules*; out of whose

arms

were they despaired to get, unless some lucky opportunity would offer it self, to wit, not by *Arguments*, but by *Arms*; not by rational or Religious demonstrations, but tumultuous force, and violent impressions, cutting those cords asunder by *Sedition and Rebellion*, which they could not dissolve by just *disputation*: As it came to pass after many days, when the Goblin *Smectymnus* first appeared, and conjured up those *Presbyterian and Independent Spirits*, from the North and South, which could not be allayed, until they had quite tired out themselves, by tormenting others.

So partial, blinde, and bold doth *Faction* make all men (how able and plausible soever they seem to be for gifts and graces) if they have not humble and honest hearts, meek and quiet spirits; if they be not lovers of God, his truth, and the Churches publique peace, more then of their own private interests of profit or reputation. The mists which *prejudice* and *popularity* first; next, *pride* and *passion*, cast on mens judgements, do at length turn their very light into darkness, being loath to see or own worth in any person or performance, but what makes for their party. All their parts for Learning and Oratory, nay their very Zeal, must (*ut ailla Jussus*) serve their *cause* and *credit*, as an over-hot liver, and bilious temper, turns the sweetest nourishment into chollar and bitterness. At last they ferment to such presumptuous and precipitant practices of piety, as will adventure to shake and overthrow all that is settled in Church or State, as Sacred or Civil, rather then miscarry of their *wills*: What the Heaven of Reason and Religion, of Christian patience, and Loyal obedience cannot, yea will not do, that the gate and powers of Hell, fury and confusion must endeavour, though to the eternal reproach of the Authors and Abettors of that cause and means, which are carried on by such methods, as do in the end ruine such a Reformed Church, and flourishing Kingdom as *England* once was, and may again be by Gods blessing.

Whole publique honor and happiness, some mens heady zeal, and proud *superstition*, made no scruple grievously to revile, and terribly to threaten, even in Mr. Hookers days, and in after times to set all on a light fire; endeavouring to consume, and utterly bury so goodly a *Fabrick* as the Church of England was, in its own ashes and ruines; rather then endure some innocent carved work on its walls, or some dast and cobwebs in its windows: All which (as S. Austin in a like case against the fury of Novatians and Donatists of his time) were better born with Christian patience, or excused with *Charity*, or rightly interpreted without any prejudice or offence, then reformed with such fury, clamor, and confusion, as use not the besoms of lawful Authority, but onely the firebrands of popular insolency, forgetting all bounds of Modesty, Loyalty, and Charity, becoming Men, Subjects; and Christians.

This great Prophet Mr. Hooker (not such by extraordinary inspiration, but prudential consideration; (for, *prudencia est quedam divinitus*; and, *bonis conjectatur est vates optimus*; Wise men dwell next door to Prophets) wisely foresaw, and notably foretold above forty years before they came to pass, the probability of those distempers and conflagrations, which were likely to befall the Church of England, by the plausible, but inordinate pretensions of some mens opinions and practices; of whose pernicious principles and events he gives a large account by *Foreign experience*; also excellent counsel and caution against them, in his *Learned and Eloquent Preface* before his Ecclesiastical Polity.

And certainly, if the hand of any one man had been able to have applied an effectual antidote or defensive, against those then presaged, and now accomplished mischiefs, Mr. Hooker was likely to have done it: Such satisfaction his writings gave to all ingenious and impartial men, as to the scruples objected against the Church of England, not about its inward health, and soundness of constitution for faith and manner, for doctrine and true devotion (which few but Papists durst, or did then oppose) but as to its *cloathing* and ornaments; the outward form and modes of publique and solemn performing Religious Duties, which properly fall under the Cognizance, Care, and Appointment of Publique Wisdom, and Supreme Authority.

The blinde-  
ness, boldness  
and partiali-  
ty of faction:

Mr. Hooker  
Propheticke  
Spirit.

Hence



Mr. Hooker's  
achievements in his  
writings.

Hence he made, first, a very godly and grave *Vindication* of the Church of England, as to its *Conformity to the Word of God*, in all things that are the main essential, and immutable parts of Religion. Next, he justified its Power and Prudence, even in those minute and mutable *Circumstances and Ceremonies*, modes and Rites of outward Administrations of Religion; in which it either followed the *purest and primitive Antiquity*, or exercised its *own Christian liberty*, prudence and authority in the choice, use, and appointment of such things, as it esteemed most convenient for that publique Order and Decency, that uniformity and peace which must be kept in the Church of Christ; not either judging or imposing these things as matters of religious necessity or sanctity, in their general nature, or particular instance; but as objects of *Rational prudence*, *Christian liberty*, and *Supreme Authority* under God, in things not precisely commanded or forbidden by Him, but receiving such stamps of Religion, of Moral or Religious good or evil, as are set upon them by the relation they have to the end whereto they are applied; also to that lawful Authority, by which they are enjoined, agreeable to Gods Word: Which first commands all things to be *done decently, and in order*. Next, it intrusteth not private fancies, but publique Authority, and Sovereign Wisdom, with the particular determining and executing those general injunctions. Lastly, it commands obedience for the Lords sake to *Superiors*, in all such things as God hath thus put under their *Prudence and Regulation*.

Mr. Hooker's  
complete  
defence of  
the Church of  
England in-  
effectual.

Indeed Mr. Hooker left no part of the Church of England *unfortified*, but so substantially defended, even as to its very out-works, that one would wonder how it came in after ages to be so assaulted, stormed and slighted, as it was by a generation of men, whom he left so weak and inconsiderable, as the rigid *non-Conformists* were for many years in England, after his writings came to be read and admired by all wise men. It were a *superfluous curiosity*, to examine how the Church of England came to fall under the insolence of its enemies, after so strong and rational a defence made by Mr. Hooker, and when it had so resolute a Defender as the late excellent King Charles the first was.

How the  
Church of  
England came  
to be so de-  
sperately as-  
saulted, after  
Mr. Hooker's  
just defence  
of it.

This is certain, that (besides the *Traitors* of our epidemical and immoral times, which were within us, and which are capable to betray the most assured peace of Church or State) the strength of the Church of England was much decayed and undermined, before it was openly battered; partly by some superfluous, illegal and unauthorized innovations in point of Ceremony, which some men affected to use in publique, and impose upon others, which provoked people to jealousy and fury, even against things lawful, every man judging truly, that the measure of all publique obedience ought to be *publique Laws*; partly by a supine neglect in others of the main matters in which the Kingdom of God, the peace of Conscience, and of the Churches happiness do chiefly consist, while they were immoderately intent upon meer Formalities, and more zealous for an outward conformity to those shadows, than for that inward or outward conformity with Christ, in *holy hearts*, and *unblameable lives*, which most adorn true Religion.

Hence, as the Learned Dr. *Holsworth* observes in his first Lecture, did the vigilant Enemies of the Church of England take their rise; by these leaks in our own sides, the waters came in which sank us: Not that legal Conformity was either the sin or shame of this Church, or any good man: Decent Ceremonies, or Rites for Solemnity, as *motes in the Sun*, neither adding to the sacred light of Religion, nor detracting from it, where the conscience is pure, and the life unspotted: But to be *super-ceremonial*, or *solely-ceremonial*, is no less folly than to be *anti-ceremonial*; for it doth not only prejudice the wisdom and authority of the Church, as if it wholly, or too much doted on these petty matters (which is the great blemish, and just blame of the Church of Rome, where too much of Ceremonies, hath smothered and overlaid much of the true Religion, as ashes do the fire) but it gives an advantage to the novellizing insolency of its Adversaries, as great as *Dalilah* did to the *Philistines* against *Sampson*, when by cutting off his hair, she bereaved him of his great strength; nor that it lay in his hair, which was but a *symbole* of his vow, as a *Nazarite*; no more then the health, honor and happiness of the Church of England, lies in its legal Ceremonies: But these are such publique instances and evidences of its Authority; such boundaries, against all visible extravagances, such demonstrations of its

its unanimity, such ties and bonds of publique Uniformity, and such Ornaments of Reverend Solemnity, or visible sanctity, that whoever openly despiseth, forsaketh or violateth the Authority and wisdom of the Church in these things, either adding to, or taking from its customs or Constitutions, takes the course either to betray her, or destroy her: For fancying himself to be wiser then the Law, he wants nothing but power to make him Master of it; that so he and his party may (as Julius Caesar) become Dilectores to the Publique: Nothing keeping the peace of any Polity, Ecclesiastical or Civil, so firm and sure, as the strict keeping of all men to its Laws, without going to the right hand, or to the left: No man may diminish from, or adde to publique Constitutions; which like curiant Coyn, are stamped with the Image of supreme Wisdom and Authority, and may not be clipped or defaced by any private hand, nor yet heightened or abased by any private judgement, signifying neither more nor less, then the publique esteem and declared use hath set upon them.

Although this admirable Writer was not so happy to purge out the disease and humour wholly from this Church, yet (as the Jesuites powder doth in quarantines) he very much damped and quenched it; so that for a long time, the fits and paroxysms of Non-conformity were allayed: Nor do I doubt, but that God of his mercy stirred up so great an instrument of his glory in those times (when the Disciplinary faction boiled very high, yea, and bristled too against the Queen and Parliaments, as well as against Bishops; petitioning, remonstrating, murmuring, menacing, and mutyning, that he might (*frigida suspendere*) give them a cool dash, and thereby the tranquility of this Church might be lengthned; as it was, for the space of forty years; after the blasphemy and execution of Hooker and his Complices, had brought an infinite shame and horror upon all that dissenting party.

Mr. Hooker's pains strengthened the Churches tranquility.

Yet at length, the confluence of our common and personal sins, brought on the feared and foretold Calamities; prevailing against Gods patience and long suffering: And when there was no remedy, wrath broke forth upon all estates and degrees in Church and Kingdom: Not for any Legal, sober and due conformity to that Reformed Religion, which was established with truth and holiness for the substance, as with order and decency, for the Ceremony and Solemnity; without any known error in the former, or any superstition in the latter: But the sin, the Achan, the cursed thing that troubled Israel, chiefly lay in the emptiness, formality, unthankfulness, hypocrisie, and unfaithfulness of those, who knew not how to prize and use so great mercies temporal and spiritual, as were to be enjoyed in the Church of England, by Loyal and Religious Christians.

Conformity to the Laws, no cause of the Church of England's miseries.

Nor did the Divine Vengeance chuse or use any other rod of his wrath, wherewith to afflict this Church, but that which Mr. Hooker foresaw, and foretold: For all other *pests* and *Factions* were but the slips and surreptions of that old root of bitterness, which went under the name of Non-conformity; the head or tail, the sting and poison of which, were the Disciplinary; or Presbyterian, of all late dissenters, the most dangerous: For they moved not so much upon their scruples and dissatisfaction in point of some little Ceremonies (as many well-meaning men did but (*pro summa imperii*) they had an ambition to govern in common, as Presbyters: The better to promote this, they set up the new Title and Office of lay-Elders, that the common people in every Parish might be sprinkled with the same leaves; and swell to the height of Mole-hills, as to some part of Church Rule or Government in them.

The rod chosen by divine vengeance to chastise the Church of England.

These Presbyterian Pompeys, rather then fall of this so specious and popular design of governing, resolved to hazard all, having much to get, and little to lose of estate or reputation, such (old and young) Monsters indeed there were of Non-conformity; for I do in charity believe, their cruel plots of late practiced, were beyond the intent, and utterly against the mind of many more modest Non-conformists of old time; who had onely some fear, lest one or two of our Ceremonies, might favour still of Superstition or Popery (not considering, if abuse of things good and lawfull be capable to desecrate them for a time, sure the restored right use of them is as able to consecrate them a new, as it hath done our Churches (which some Fanaticks would have all demolished, because they are elder then the late Reformation;) but those milder spirits, Nonconformists, never opposed Liturgy or Episcopacy, much

The ambitious presumption of some Presbyters.

less the whole frame and being of the Church of England, to whole Articles and Canons they subscribed: However, many of them were carried down the latter streams of violence, which pretended at first onely to Reformation, not to extirpation: Ambitious projects never wanting specious vizards and pretensions by which to begin, and ever wanting moderation in their procedures.

The fury of  
some Non  
conformists.

The intemperate heat of those high-spirited and hot-spur'd Non-Conformists, at last so over-boyled, that they quenched for a time the light of our Israel, deformed the beauty of Order and Holiness, Law and Religion, Church and Kingdom, casting themselves and all things into such an Hell of horror, deformity and confusion, as nothing but multiplied miracles of Divine Mercy, could recover us out of that Abyss of despair; which had no hope left in it, but these maxims of Eternal Truth, which in the worst of times were some stay to pious minds: That God is merciful as well as just; That when wicked men are the rod to punish their betters, the chastisement will not be long, and is less to the sufferers, then to the unjust doers: That sin and hypocrisie can never prosper long, though it may prevail: That all sin is its own severest punishment: That evil opinions, are at last most severely confuted by their own evil practices, and fatal events: That patient obedience to God and man, will give a better account of it self to Conscience, though it be suffering, then the most prosperous sinning, upon any presumption whatsoever: That if man aim at Gods ends in good earnest, he will enquire, finde out and follow Gods means, which must ever be holy and just, according to Gods and mans Laws: That riotous and rebellious Reformations, are the greatest deformities of true Religion, prostituting the Sanctity and Virginity of it to vulgar lusts; like the Israelites Golden Calf, which they made without the presence, counsel or consent of Moses, which became their sin and snare, though they had cryed it up as the Gods of Israel, by popular acclamations.

The mercy  
of restored  
tranquillity  
to the Church  
of England.

These principles of Christian hopes, no times, no Tyrants, or Tragedies, were able to banish out of good mens minds: And blessed be God, we have not onely lived to see and feel the predictions of this great Prophet fulfilled; but we have outlived their dreadful accomplishments, and after the earthquake, tempest and fire are past, we have heard the soft voice of Gods presence; we are come to that serenity and safety, as may dare to own the sin and shame of former times and actions; to weep over our past calamities, and to joy in present mercies. It was of late capital to complain, a crime to mourn over bad, or to pray for better times; it was Treason, to speak truly of Treason; and loss of liberty, to deplore the publique slavery; to such a predominancy had the overflowing scourge, and the abomination of desolation prevailed, till God from above, rebuked the proud waves, and caused the dry land to appear in this Church and Kingdom; in which Religion, Loyalty and Learning, may now outface Hypocrisie, Rebellion, and Ignorance: We have now liberty, not onely to read, but reprint and practice Mr. Hookers Ecclesiastical Polity; to which, as to Jeremies Prophecie, many more like words are now added, together with some larger Commentary upon his life and death: All which may be both pleasant and profitable to the present age, restored now (as the dispossessed Demoniack) to its rights, wits and estates, to its former laws, and true liberties in Church and State.

How hard it  
is to write  
Mr. Hookers  
Life exactly

I well know, that a Picture taken at so great a distance from the life and death of Mr. Hooker (now sixty years past) can hardly hit the life exactly, Time with its black and impartial mantle wrapping up all things in darkness and oblivion, burying pearls no less then pebbles, in dust and ashes; especially where no care hath been taken (except in some superficial and general ways) to preserve any special characters of such a person, in whom no doubt, many particulars were rare, remarkable, both in Nature, Art, and Grace. But my aim is so far, at least, to retrieve the footsteps, not onely of his well-known fame and worth; but, 1. Of his Birth and Education. 2. His genius and temper of body and minde, with the most critical instances of his life and actions; his Person also, and outward Mine, or Aspect, which is no small indication of mens minds and manners. 3. Works, or *compositum*, as to his Writings. 4. His *agony* or *agonia* Sufferings and Tryals. 5. His Rewards and Preferments. 6. and lastly, His Death, and Burial, and Monument: That so the English World may see by a Retrospection (as glasses which present those objects before us, which are indeed behinde us) what kind of Lamp that was, which contained



contained such *Golden Oyl*; which shined with so bright a light of *Reason*, and *Religion*; which burned with so discreet a *Zeal*, and holy *Fervency* of united *Gifts* and *Graces*, as cheered the *Friends*; and danted the *Enemies* of the Church of *England*.

If I seem to come short in any of these his true proportions, it must not be imputed to my want of good will, or good colours, but to the want of a full view, and free Prospect of him; whom the long interval of time, and the negligence of former Writers, have left so unobserved, that my best intelligence hitherto, hath not been able to assure me, as to the first head of his birth, what Village, Town or City had the honor of his Nativity; for which, as for *Homer's* birth, many places would ambitiously contend. This onely is certain on all hands, that he was born in the West, either in, or not far from the City of *Exeter*; onely *Dr. Vilvain*, an Ancient and Learned Physician in *Exeter*, informs me, that he was born in *Southgate street* in *Exeter*, Anno 1550. His Countrey (as *Mr. Camden* observes) is indeed *ferax ingeniorum*, pregnant with good wits, and great spirits; necessitated to industry, by the native tenacity of the soil: addicted to Piety and Vertue, as having no great leisure for luxury; much encouraged to all ingenious Arts and Studies, by the health and long life they enjoy: But of what Parents, or with what presages of his future Eminency, there is not any notice to be had, although I have made diligent enquiry upon the place; where the name is not yet extinct: One of his Uncles, *Mr. John Hooker*, elder Brother to his Father, was *Chamberlain* of *Exeter* in *Mr. Hooker's* youth, and contributed both care and cost toward his Education in the Free-School at *Exeter*; His Parents of no further note, then that they lived contentedly, did all things commendably, and departed this life comfortably, enjoying competency with industry and piety, and dying in peace, as they lived without envy; needing no other renown or Monument of honor and happiness, then this, that they were the blessed Parents of so worthy a Son.

So that his *Originals*, like that of *Nilus*, are left obscure; but as the nobleness of that River recompenseth in its streams and exuberancy, the obscurity of its Fountains; so it is in this illustrious Person, what he seems to want in the honor of his Birth and Progeny, is made up in that of his Life and Labors. God oft raiseth as noble Plants out of small beds, as out of the humblest Gardens: *Literate* and pious *Nobility*, may be as honorable upon the account of the publique good, and grace, as that of *Blood* and *Parentage*, which is then most to be esteemed, when it is the least excellency of him that hath it.

Nor do I hear of any *Astrological* calculations made from the stars at his Nativity, the usual cheats and flatteries of vain men: But yet we have such *Theological* demonstrations in his life, of his rare worth, and gracious endowments (whose inclinations come from an higher and better influence then the stars) that we may conclude him to have been born, not onely with happy and propitious stars, but by the special Providence of the God of Heaven, who furnished him, by the ministration of Elementary principles, or second causes, with such a temper of body and minde, as were rarely fitted to each other, and both to those great designs for which the wise God intended him; to whose Omnipotent goodness, all things are equally easie: And however, he can work effectually by weak means, and improbable instruments, when he is pleased to exert his mighty arm in extraordinary operations, or special inspirations, by which he made Prophets of Shepherds, and Apostles of Fishermen (that mankind might sometimes look up to the first cause of causes, who is in, and above all second causes;) yet in the usual methods of his Providence, this (*vixas Aristoteles*) this great Worker gives his tools that temper in nature, for constitution of body, and disposition of minde, which is most proportionable to the work they are to do, as we see in *Moses*, *Aaron*, *Joshua*, *Sampson*, *Samuel*, *Eliab*, and others.

It is oft seen, that mens souls do (*male habitare*) lodge inconveniently; bodilly indispositions or preponderancies of constitution, being great alloys and impediments to the operations and improvements of their souls, either by the weakness of organs, or by the redundancy of indigested, dull, and phlegmatick humors, or by the Incubus of a morose Melancholy; or by the over-activity of a sanguinary calidness,

1. Mr. Hooker's birth and education;

2. The temper of his body and mind.

The symbolizing of souls and bodies.



and unsettledness; or by the too great sharpness and brittleness of a cholerick edge; which makes men sharp and untractable. Sometimes the soul is too keen for the body, as a knife which cuts through its sheath; sometimes the body is too sluggish and cumbersome for the soul, like Birds, whose feathers load them; as the Ostrich, of which it is a question, whether its plumes do more help, or hinder its flight: sometimes the Lights cannot shine through the thickness of the lantern, other-while the Candle is so great, or misplaced, that it burns the thin and horny sides of it.

Mr. Hooker's  
excellent  
constitution.

This excellent person Mr. Hooker, had a body and soul every way so adjusted and suited to each other, that they were like *meets pairs* happily married together, and living peaceably. His great soul seemed to be well pleased with the size of his body, which was not grand, but moderate; not *Pygmean*, nor *Cyclopick*; neither as a narrow Closet, nor a vast Hall, but an handsome *Parlour*, or *Chappel*: The habit also of his body was neither gross nor meager, sparing indeed, but not withered; he was neither (*μακρογυνος* nor *ψαλς*) large nor little. It is in mens *statures* observable, as in trees, if very tall, they are commonly barren; if shrubs and dwarfs, they bear but little fruit, though good: His outward aspect and carriage was rather comely then courtly, his looks always grave and reserved, not as sullenly discontented, but as *Ammianus Marcellinus* observes of primitive Bishops and Churchmen, modestly dejected: His soul seemed more retired and looking inward, then expatiating at his eyes, or taking the outward prospect of his senses: His whole garb and presence was rather plain then polished, and not very promising beyond a studious simplicity, and such a severe, but speculative gravity, as becomes a great Scholar, and solemn Divine: He went always, as if he meditated some great and good design; and was forming it, as it were, behind the veil, or curtain, in some more retired room of his spacious soul, before he would let the world see it.

His outward  
garb, deport-  
ment and  
aspect.

His aptitude  
to study and  
industry.

The happy constitution of Mr. Hooker, which was neither airy, nor earthy, nor watery, nor fiery, but all, made him capable to bear that great sedentary and sedentary pains, which his reading, meditating, digesting, and writing did require for the production of so profound and grave a Work, as he happily effected, without any remarkable injury to either health of body or minde.

The blessing  
of sober and  
sound Pa-  
rents.

Which blessing (and a great one it is as to this life) health being *for vita*, the flower and life of life) he owed principally to God, but secondarily to his Parents, whose honesty and industry kept them in health, and derived this to their children, in such temperature of body and minde, as were benign, adequate, and compleat, without any notable flaws, defects, excesses, or deformities; which very oft visit the Parents first on the children, who oft owe their rheumaticque, rickety, dwindling, diseased, impotent, and indisposed tempers of body and minde, to the distempers and debaucheries of their Progenitors, who have more care and caution for the breed of their horses and hounds, then of their children (whose health commonly follows the honesty and sobriety of their parents, as plenty doth peace and industry.) Nor are any injuries less reparable, then those that are thus seminal and connate with our very Genitures (as bricks ill tempered, and worse burns in the clay, are never good in the building, but always mouldring and decaying.) Against other accidents which may for a time depress natures vigour, yet at length a just and generous constitution raiseth up it self, and makes a valiant opposition; yea, in time conquers its oppressors, expels its Tyrants, and establisheth the Empire of its health to a greater firmness and constancy, then perhaps it would otherwise have enjoyed; strength encreasing by such contests, as valour doth by difficulties, and health enriching it self by the spoils of its subdued infirmities.

Hereditary  
maladies  
hardly over-  
come.

But Hereditary cankers, like those of *Sciens*, taken from fretted trees, are hardly, if ever outgrown, but become everlasting chains and logs to poor mortals; whose souls either always live like Prisoners and Galley-slaves, tugging at the chains and oars of their depressing bodies; or if they have a generous ambition to get above those wearisome dejections and pressures, they commonly make their way sooner out of their bodies; as the fire that once breaks out, sooner consumes the house, then that which is smothered within the walls: Hence that of the Poet is true of pregnant spirits in puling bodies,

*Præcursus brevis est atq; & rara senectus,*

which

which *Cardan* foretold of our *Edward the sixth*: Those whose bodies are too weak, or too strait, or too heavy for their souls, are not long lived, nor much at ease while they live, which makes them soon weary of life, and anxious of death; as their onely freedom from that captivity, in which their infirm and decayed bodies detain their nobler souls.

As the strings of Mr. *Hooker's* temper or constitution were true and well tuned, His Equable or set to an happy harmony between his soul and body; so did they always carry a grave and sober accord, or unison in his conversation (*id est* *sermone*, *et* *rege*, as *Marcus Aurelius* adviseth;) nothing was sudden, rash, violent, precipitant, extravagant, in his words, gestures, undertaking or actions: What he thought within his duty, reach, and capacity, that he designed; and what he so designed, he industriously and effectually acted, with due deliberation, diligence, constancy and modesty: Never vapouring or vexing, without any affectation or ostentation, always even at home composed, wrapt up in himself, and intire, seldom erring, and therefore seldom repenting.

His words, which are the pulse of the rational soul, were always sober, steady, apt, well-chosen, and well-ordered, not more in number then weight, if in a serious discourse; nor beyond civility and Sanctity, if remiss or jocose, which he rather not hated, then much loved: So far from being prodigal of speech (as some are, whose minds are always not onely set a-broach, but running out at the tap of their tongues) that he was rather parsimonious, and scarce liberal, unless he were well acquainted: He laid but little of his *finer ware* on the shopboard, or stall, as those do, whose stock of wit or knowledge, like a Pedlars pack, is presently open, and falls under one view; but as those that deal by whole-sale in rich commodities, he kept his treasure shut up, and under lock and key, in a large, but retired warehouse: He was like a hive full of honey, of a plain outside, and a narrow adoes or orifice; but heavy, as having in him all manner of good Literature, as that hath the quintessence of all vegetable or florid sweetness, industriously gathered, and aptly digested, very sweet, and very fluent, when he list to give it vent.

His words of Affability.

His Friends or Confidants were few, but choise, as one that had no great opinion of himself nor captated the applause of others; nor was much at leisure or vacance, more disposed to a reclus or eremitical life, then to the *Ayr* or *Sun*; and fitter for chamber practice at his study and pen, then for the bar or pulpit: But however, his natural temper was slow and reserved, as some Rivers, yet he had that in depth and clearness, which he seemed to want in noise and swiftness.

His Friends of confidants

He began betimes, even in the Grammar School of Exeter, to discover a great soul, pregnant as to wit and invention, capacious and extensive as to a largeness of understanding, fixed as to a gravity of judgement, blessed with fidelity of memory, and advancing dally by an indefatigable diligence, a silent, sedentary, and astonished way of industry in study; which like a ponderous and sharp wedge, followed with continual little strokes, did make its way through all things, on which it could fix.

His first essays and indications of learned industry.

At the same rate, or pace, slow, but sure, he went on in his Academical studies at Oxford, in acquiring the learned and sacred Languages, in attaining those intellectual Arts and Sciences, which are excellent handmaids to Divinity, in spoiling the Egyptians of their Jewels; the Heathen Philosophers, Historians, Poets, and Philologers, daily paying tribute to his victorious diligence. These (as his Works every where discover) he not onely tasted superficially, but thoroughly imbibed, fully exhausted, and methodically digested, in that still and sober way of his studies, which made not so much noise and flourish in the Schools and University, as many other young men; but he daily rooted deeper, and encreased more in all wisdom and understanding Humane and Divine; able, but not forward, to teach others, judging it the best method of a good Scholar, who intends to be a Preacher, first to be well instructed, before he undertakes to instruct others, to fill the cistern before he give it vent, not driving the bive, till it be well laden with honey.

His Academicall proficiency.

This made him demur for some years after he was Master of Arts, and Fellow of Corpus Christi Colledge, before he undertook any Ministerial Office or charge, having observed many precocious preachers, and preposterous writers, to be like prodigal young Gallants, newly come to their estates, who fancy they have nothing more to get,

His slowness to appear or preach.

or to save, but all the care is, to find ways to spend fast enough: hence, like *hot mettall & horses*, they soon tire, or founder by their too great activity and confidence at their first setting out; nothing spoiling a good Scholar, and making a bad Preacher, so much as *over-hasty preaching, and impatient scribbling*. As good husbandry is the foundation of hospitality, and thrusts the sower of magnificence; in domestick and Civil affairs: so in intellectual; neither fields nor *mines* will be fruitful, unless they have good *manure*, and due tillage, before the crop be expected.

His retired-  
ness at the  
Colledge.

While Mr. Hooker continued in *Corpus Christi Colledge*, few men of any note in either University, but promised more than he did, as to any great and publique undertaking: Not that he wanted a publique spirit, or excellent abilities in Nature and Education; but he was so locked up and reserved by a natural modesty, and self-deficiency or distrust, that he seemed to think it reward sufficient to have the confidence of well-doing; and pleasure enough, to see himself daily profit in his studies; and preferment even to an envy, to enjoy vertue, though never so cloistered and confined to his own breast: And although his face, as to the inward man, and as to his life, shined with all splendor of Gifts and Graces, yet he chose as *Moses*, to put a veil on himself, lest he should lose the true glory of it, by seeming in the least kinde to glory in it.

His obscur-  
ing of him-  
self a long  
time.

Neither his great dimensions nor deserts did yet appear in their true lustre; but as the Sun in a misty morn, he was clouded, till almost noon, before he brake through those native obscurities, for which the after brightness and heat of his day made a great amends. Nothing is more injudicious then to pass hasty judgement, or to take up men's prejudices against men of good breeding, ingenuity and industry, before they come to their proof: Men of modest and reserved tempers, like the more lasting fruit, ripen later then others seem to do; but they are more solid, sapid and lasting; as good liquor, which conceives greater spirits, by being long close bottled up, and stopped: Men of excellent Naturals, may as *Brutus* the younger, seem very dull and gross *Gurtons* while they are young, who afterward prove very eminent in all true worth, even beyond what was expectable from them: As did this worthy, but wary Scholar, who was not so active and forward as many others of his time, but left idle in his reserves, then most men are in their more airy appearances; and pragmatick ostentations: His retirings were his ripenings, and his being still wrapped up in himself, was his thickning or fulling, before he came to be put on the *seinters*, and laid forth to those great employments, to which he is judged by all wise men to be one of the most adequate of any man that ever entred the lists of combat with the *Aversaries* of the Order, Unity, Liberty, Authority and Peace of the Church of England. Few men were found upon just proof, to have had so much sound learning so well marshalled and disposed; few had so trusty memories, so profound and impartial judgements, so unperturbed passions, so copious, clear and current expressions; none more cogent in demonstrations, either for right Reason, or true Religion; none more pathetick in his excitation of serious and sober affections.

Not much  
noted or  
famed in the  
Colledge or  
University.

Yet while he lived in the Colledge and University, there seems to have been no great notice of him, further then of a good plodding Student, one that lay heavy on the plow, and was daily sowing good seed, but few expected so rich an harvest as afterward grew up in his soul, and was reaped by his pen: He was like a rich mine not yet fully discovered, but daily improving upon the Explorators. At last he made up the *Triumviri* of that little Colledge, those three men of Renown, in whose names it justly glories, as of the first three and highest form, for learned, great, and godly Divines.

Bishop Jewel  
of the same  
Colledge.

The first was Bishop Jewel, who (*vir sui nominis*) verified his name, esteemed at home and abroad by all reformed Divines one of the most splendid Gems that ever this, or any Church was adorned withal: Nor could the Romish envy or malice be so impudent, as either to deny or depreciate his incomparable worth, both for learning and holiness: However, reason of State and worldly Policy, would not suffer them to subscribe to those Reformed, but ancient Truths, which that excellent Prelate most convincingly maintained against them by Scriptures and Antiquity.

So was Dr.  
Reynolds.

The second was Dr. Reynolds, who was very good mettall and full weight for Learning and Piety, however he seemed a while something bowed and disfigured (by his Education and relations) as to the stamp of *black Conformity* with the Church of England,



England, until the Conference at Hampton-Court (where he was the chief *Agent* on that side) But the learned wisdom of King *JAMES*, set off with his potent *Discretion*, and a benignity more imperial than his Kingly Authority, restored that excellent Scholar to the perfect Character and Superintention of a good Subject, and a good Church-man: For after that Conference, which concluded with some gracious *Condescensions* of the King, this Dr. Reynolds, though neither tempted nor rewarded with a Bishoprick, fully conformed to the Church of England, and advised others so to do.

The third Coloss of fair, solid marble, which came out of that rich Quarry, was Mr. R. Hooker, though he was some time in hewing and polishing, before the ampleness and goodness of his figure, as to the soul and mind, did appear by his pen; which yet seemed not to have been to any great *conspicuity* or *expectancy*, while he continued in the Colledge, if we may take an estimate of the opinion had of him by the first offer of preferment, or rather imployment, made to him, yea and accepted by him, as to those small obscure livings; one of which was first given him by the Colledge, and leaving that, another was conferred on him by some private Patron; each of them being thought *comptent* entertainments, Even for Mr. Hooker's plainness and simplicity of living, at least they were better than some Fellowships of that Colledge.

Mr. Hooker made the third worthy of that Colledge.

Nor did the good man disdain either the one or the other (when he left the first:) And this not out of covetousness or ambition, alas there was no such bait or temptation in either; but chiefly out of a conscientious sense of the duty he owed to God and the Church, that he might pay them some grateful tribute by his pains in the Ministry, for that liberal Education he had enjoyed: And being now by years and inclination got above and beyond those juvenile and florid studies, which like flowers in the Spring, or first-fruits in Summer, adorn an Academical life, he began to consider what harvest he was now to bring forth to Gods glory, and the good of mens souls, proportionable to the seed that had been bestowed on him in the University studies.

His retiring to small Country Livings.

For the worthy person thought nothing less became the honor of Learning, and the dignity of the famous Universities, or the pious design of the munificent Founders, then for Scholars to grow too old, ripe and rotten too in their Chambers, as Monks in their Cells: Not but that as in Woods that are fell'd once in twelve years, some fair Standards may be left, of such as are proper for the support, exemplary conduct, and honor of Academical learning and Government: But for the general growth of the underwood, it is ill husbandry to let them continue too long in the shade and nursery, which not onely deprives the publique of the benefit they owe to it, but themselves also of that fruitfulness, beauty and sweetness which they might sooner attain, if they came sooner into the Sunshine, and freer conversation of the World, where they might more communicate their useful abilities; nor burying their many talents in a Napkin, which is the way to lose them; nor confining their ambition to the narrow Empire of a Fellowship, or the confines of a chamber, which is to put that Light under a bushel, which is fit to be set on the table, or on an Hill, to bless Parishes, Towns, Cities, and whole Countreys.

Why he left the University.

Many wise men have oft deplored the detriment that befalls Church and State, by the not timely imploying and improving to the publique good, Scholars of excellent abilities, well bred up in the Universities, but not so soon of happily transplanted as were meet. Which defect seems to arise from a twofold cause:

Scholars when ripe, are best transplanted out of the Universities. Two hindrances of timely transplantation.

1. Many ingenious and learned men suffer themselves (as those that have the scurvy) by degrees so to be pleased with a sedentary way of life, that they contract, if not a laziness, yet a great indisposition and loathness to come abroad, being so in love with speculation, that they *abhor action*; and being now wedded to their own content and ease, they grow divorced from the main ends of their studies, Gods glory, and the publique good, thinking it enough to be ever *betting the sibe*, but never *moving*; collecting materials and contriving, but never building: As if it were sufficient to commend a rich piece of scarlet, that dwells long in the dye-fat in order to imbibe a noble tincture, but is never to be put on the tunicate, or worn in garments: Which backwardness and barrenness is indeed to defeat, not onely the good intentions of the Founders, and the expectations of their friends, but to smother and stifles their

1. Too great delight in speculation and ease.



their own more capacious souls; which like vessels fill'd with generous wine, are therefore filled, as Christ commanded the water pots to be at the marriage, that thence they may draw forth and satiate others more than themselves, that like the Vine, Olive and Fig-tree in *Jothans Parable*, they may cheer and honour both God and men.

Improvement comes by reasonable employment of mens abilities.

Doubtless from fit employment comes daily improvement, and to him that hath shall be given, if he use well that which he hath; industry being the price and measure of proficiency, as proficiency is the first reward of industry: From too long reservedness good Scholars grow restive; from restive they become averse; from aversion they contract an enmity to activity; and thence an abhorrency of any thing that puts them upon more publique pains, or useful operations: At length silently and insensibly passing the Meridian of life, the shadows of the evening grow upon them, they feel or fancy those infirmities which must be now their *Apology* for their future silence: At last (as the Monks of old) they are as loth to leave their Cells as to put off their skins, like Birds or Squirrels bred in a Cage, they know not how to shift for themselves abroad: In fine, they wrapt themselves up in their Cynical way with *Diogenes*, grow morose, tetrical and censorious, like old and neglected maids that contemn all marriages, resolving to lay their bones there where they have so many years slept in quiet; they dread being transplanted when they are old, and burn at last to the very smuff, as candles that are hidden in a dark-lantern, without any other account of their lives, beyond what is to be found in the *Buttery book*, and deserve his Epitaph, *Fui non vixi, & habui quod edi: Didici, non docui*.

The second cause of Scholars non-improvement want of preferment.

2. A second defect much contributing to the publique detriment, by the non-improvement of Scholars when they are well trained in the University, and fit to be transplanted out of those Nurseries (that being set thinner they may spread wider, grow bigger, and bear much more fruit) is the want of publique care and Patrocinny to prefer and dispose of them, so as may be most agreeable to their abilities; Many times their modesty much curbs their activity (like ears of corn and boughs of trees, the more loaden, the more hidden and dejected) and being wholly destitute of such friends and relations as might put them forward, they have this to answer any that ask why they stand still till the ninth hour of the day, because no man hath hired them, or set them on work, or preferred them: Besides this, the swarms or lesser fry of other meaner Scholars, who have but a little tincture of learning in comparison, and who like *Bar-nacles* or *Solime Geese*, too soon drop off from the University, betaking themselves to Country Cures, according as their necessities compel them: These so forestall the markets of Parochial Livings and Church Preferments, gaining by their obsequiousness and adherencies, the favour and friendship of such Patrons as have any thing worth acceptance in their dispose, that many other good Scholars are left to superannuate in their solitude, to be confined to their Muses everlastingly, as if their ears had been bored through and fixed to the Colledge gates, or Study doors; as *Democritus junior* most elegantly and pathetically deplores this dereliction of rare men in the University, which makes the Muses melancholy, and depriving both merit of reward, and the publique of that good which these men might do as Master Builders in Gods Temple.

His humble stooping to a Country Cure.

Mr. Hooker did not look upon the ease and quietness of a Colledge life, as the ultimate design of his studies; nor did he say with the Apostles, *It is good to be here*, as in a settled Tabernacle; but gently embraced those small offers of Ministerial Employments in the Countrey which were made to him, by such as thought them somewhat proportionate, if not to his worth and learning, yet to that humble plainness and simplicity of his genius and mode of living.

Hence I finde him (as most mens manners and fortunes generally follows their constitution and temper) very easily removed, as if he chose a Country and retired life, even in the greatest vigor and activity, tamely embracing without any check or scruple, the first offer of a little Living called *Buscomb*, in the West, to which the Colledge of *Corpus Christi* presented him; and afterward that other, not much better in *Lincolnshire*, called *Drayton Beauchamp*.

His zeal to serve God and the Church in the Ministry.

Not that he was weary of a Collegiate and studious life, any more then Bees are of gathering honey; nor that he hastned to marriage as the Sanctuary of Chastity to some men (for he ever lived a single and unspotted life) but he did not think an Academic

real life either solitude enough, or (possibly) not work enough, willingly going about his *Fathers business*, and undertaking that *husbandry* of souls which should be the main end, and timely employment of those *Scholars*, who have by *holy Orders* put their band to that Sacred Plow.

Mr. Hooker looked more to his employment and retirement than his *Preferment*: hence I finde him *agreed* as soon as *lanced out*, and as it were buried so soon as he parted from his *Mother the University*, still shut up for many years in *Country obscurities*, where there could be no great profit nor pleasure, onely he fancied this way of living (*procul a turba*) out of the crowd, noise and tinsamr of the great World, chusing a little Creek, rather then a great arm of the Sea to anchor in; where, as there is more water, so there are greater winds and waves.

His little value of himself or preferment.

Nor is it probable he would of himself have stirred by any ambitious impatience from either of these *rustical retirements*, or *living Sepulchres* of him (no more then a gentle horse will move from that place on which his bridle hangs, rather *starving* then *stirring*) if others who had a truer estimate of him, then he had of himself, had not taken notice of his so so secluded worth, both pitying and envying to see such a rich treasury of eloquent Learning buried, and almost quite lost in a *rustical obscurity*, confined to *Cottages*, when he was capable to serve whole Churches and Kingdoms.

It is not seldom seen, that as some mens vapouring or crowing fancies are prone to set too great a value on themselves, having never well studied that *Socratick Lesson*, or Oracle of Apollo, *the knowledge of themselves*; so others are of that great modesty and native humility, that they are prone to *undervalue* themselves very much, and thereby much mistake that work to which they are most prepared by God in nature and education.

Indeed Mr. Hooker was not cut out for the plain, yet profitable work of preaching to a *Country Auditory*; he deserved to be employed with *Bezaleel*, in the curious and fine Embroideries, the rich and costly Gravings of the Tabernacle and Temple, rather then about the tacking together of boards and Badgers skins, or hewing of course stones: This great and well charged Cannon was planted, mounted and directed to another level, to a far higher pitch, not onely to fight against the immoralities and sensualities of mean peoples manners in the Country (whom Ministers have much ado, like *Ulysses* with his Companions, to keep from degenerating to Beasts, by those enchantments of brutish pleasures:) But he was to keep both the out-works of the Church of England, its innocent Rites and Ceremonies; and also to defend its ancient Liberty, Honor and Authority against factious and usurping novelties; he was to batter down those (*exequial*) strong-holds, and spiritual wickednesses which were speciously raised in the High places, the popular and proud imaginations of some ambitious Presbyters and people, against the good Order, Catholick Government, and lawful Constitution of the Church of England; which had no sooner come out of the house of bondage, the Romish oppression; and out of the hot furnace of the *Marian Persecution*, but it met with fiery Serpents and Amalekites, who sought by private opinions and presumption to overthrow publique Laws and Constitutions: Crying out against Pride and Superstition (as *Diogenes* trampled upon *Plato's mantle*) with far greater pride and superstition, denying the publique wisdom and power of Church and State that liberty, which themselves daily and boldly usurped; yea, and making such things sins, which no right Reason or Scripture any way condemns as such, but rather approves or allows.

Mr. Hooker fitter for higher and more accurate work.

These were the *Antagonists*, the *Anakims*, against whose proud boasting and defyings of the Church of England Mr. Hooker was to be set, these he was to undertake, and to encounter: With these, though on both of men, he fought such a duel, like *Sampson*, that he wounded and wasted them; he so routed and discomfited them by his potent and perspicuous demonstrations, that they never made any considerable head again during his life, until long peace and plenty had betrayed the Nation to those undoubted sins, which called for a *fore seavage* upon us, and this to be inflicted by that arrogant hand, which of all others was fittest to be an Executioner of wrath first upon others, and last upon it self.

The great designs for which Mr. Hooker was fitted.

His Countrey retirement was for his improvement to his great work.

Mr. Hookers first alarm and sense for the Church of England: danger and defence.

The matter and manner of his Ecclesiastical Polity.

And however this retired course of Mr. Hookers life might seem less *dispositive* of him for that great work (most Scholars learned abilities being prone to grow as rusty or retrograde in the Countrey through disuse (as the old Armour that hangs up in a Countrey Justices damp Hall;) yet the providence of God, who orders all things in wisdom and mercy to those that fear and love him (as he made Josephs pit the first step to his preferment) of whose thread we must not judge, till it be all wound on the bottom, no more then we can of an Arras hanging while it is on the loom, and unfinished: God, I say, not onely led Mr. Hooker to, but kept him in this simple Countrey privacy for eight years; in which he had leisure not onely to prosecute his former studies, but also to mature and digest them; yea and to lay out his great design of asserting the Church of England; in whose honor and peace he was now more sensibly concerned, then when he lived in a Collegiate retirement, out of the dash and importunity of those Pamphlets and Petitions of some Ministers and people, whose petulance gloried as much to bay unnecessarily at the Church of England, as some Dogs do at the Moon in the brightest and calmest night, as if they had more cause to quarrel at her spots, then to commend her light.

Those unseasonable and tedious noises which some Non-conformists made, kept this good Countrey Parson awake, who however he could bear with patience and silence there-approaches that might be cast upon himself as a private man for his conformity (which was by some made a great sin) yet he thought it a snare next to sin, or Leisbargy, for any Son to bear, without just indignation, his Father or Mother reviled or despised, by petulant, ignorant and ingrateful children: This roused up Mr. Hookers modest, but generous courage; this made this little David resolved to have a bout with these uncircumcised Philistines, who disdained to conform to the Wisdom, Piety and Authority of the whole Church and Kingdom: He first takes an exact view of the ground these Mutiniers had so long traversed; what armaments or artillery of Reason and Religion they pretended to bring, what counsels and correspondencies they had from Scripture and Antiquity: what design they managed under the name of this holy War, and new Discipline, wherewith they threatened the Queen, the Parliament, and all Estates in England; that did not speedily submit to their yet wooden ferula, which was shortly to be turned to an iron rod, and after that to a golden Scepter, even the Scepter of Jesus Christ, in the hands of Parochial Presbyters and their lay-Elders.

This popular vapour, and fallacious fallacy growing every day louder, by the subscription of a thousand Ministers hands to one Supplication, gave the alarm to Mr. Hooker: this put him, contrary to his meek and calm genius, to arm himself with the whole Armour of God, both in Reason and Scripture: This gave (as his privacy did opportunity) resolution to undertake the cause of the Church of England, which he knew was the cause of God, and of this Kingdom: Hence sprang that excellent Work of the Ecclesiastical Polity, which speaks sufficiently for it self to such as are capable to read and understand it, without prejudice or partiality.

The manner of his writing is at once liberal and elegant, copious and comely, with a majestick kinde of ampleness, and stately luxuriance, as the ancient Roman Buildings: or as bodies that are fair and full, sinewy and beautiful, handsome, and yet athletic, having no flat redundancy in his stile or matter, nothing defective or impertinent: so unaffected, impartial, profound, solid, conspicuous and conscientious, that as was said of Pindars Odes, he is both full, fluent and sublime, yet serene as the firmament: a Torrent indeed, but untroubled, carrying all before him with weighty and convincing reasonings: the whole Work, as the veil of the Temple, is interwoven and curiously wrought with Scripture demonstrations, adorned with apt and true allegations of antiquity from Councils, Fathers, Church Historians, Schoolmen, Philosophers and Philologists, with all sorts of excellent Observations, for wisdom and prudence, Theory and Practice; that bates him a little of the length of some of his periods and parenthesis (in which his premises being pregnant with many and complicated conceptions, seek to make the way firm and free for bringing up the conclusion) we may say of him, *Omne tulit punctum*: many Writers have done well, but in his vein he excels them all: 'Tis true of him what Photinus in his Bibliotheca writes by way of censure of some Authors, that they were weighty and grave for their matter, sublime and accurate for their manner of Writing; strong in their arguings, clear in their deductions, true in their Narratives,



*Narratives, and impartial in their judgements, pure in their stile, and compleat in all things, beginning their Works wisely, and finishing them happily.*

So are Mr. Hooker's *Works* to those that can read with *understanding*: The truth is, they require a very judicious, steady and undistracted Reader; in many things he is too deep for shallow capacities, whose cord is short, and their *buckets but little*; in many places he is very profound and sublime, leading the Reader either to the foundations of all Polity and Government, or to the very *pinacle of the Temple*; such high and abstracted notions he hath from Reason, Experience and Religion, so fair a way he makes for a wise man and good Christian to walk in, with peace with God, himself, and others, according to Laws Natural, Moral, Evangelical, Civil and Ecclesiastical: Weak brains are either afraid or loth to ascend so high, or descend so low, as the upper and nether *springs of Law* from God or man: Though Mr. Hooker hath made the steps very fair and ealie, some cannot bear the terror of so goodly a prospect, being wonted to mount no higher then their own *Closets and Families*, fancying it as ealie for them to prescribe ways of Government to such a great Church and Kingdom as England is, as it is to model their petty Oeconomy of their little Cottages or Families.

The profoundness of his writing.

The *Grandeur and Majesty* of his Writings hath occasioned some Scholars and Ministers (especially if toucht with Non-conformity) to be wholly strangers to them; some men chusing ealie and obvious errors, rather then difficult and retired truths; others were afraid lest they might grasp more then they could hold, or else be beaten from those petty opinions and prejudices of a non-conformable party, in whose clouts they had been swaddled, and with whose milk they had been suckled, and from which they were loth to be weaned, hoping that the breast of faction would afford as liberal nourishment to the Patrons and Chaplains of it, as others enjoyed who were of a more peaceable temper, and conformable to the Church of England: There being nothing more acceptable to common people and their Abettors (as this excellent Author observes) then to be told by their Preachers, that they are not so well governed or disciplined as they might be, if these young Masters had the power to dispose of all things in Church and State, so as might most mend their own Livings, and gratifie the ambition of their Patrons, upon whom they much depend, daily encouraging them to censure all men and all things severely but themselves, as a great point of zeal and piety, capable to go with their party for current repentance, to expiate their own faults, and hide all their infirmities.

Why many Ministers such strangers to Mr. Hooker's writings.

I cannot punctually tell what special stimulation Mr. Hooker had from persons of eminency in Church and State, to excite and encourage him to write these Books, which required both strength and valour, for he well knew he should meet with opposition enough: There is no doubt but the excellent Archbishop Whigge added much quickning edge to his, otherwise slow and hesitant temper; and no less did others of his favourers and friends, who knew him better for his sufficiencies, then he did himself.

His motives and encouragements to this work.

But the main and necessary motive (no doubt) to begin, carry on and compleat so useful and labourfom a work, was from the good Spirit of God working upon Mr. Hooker's heart, and deeply affecting him with that sense of duty, gratitude and compassion which he owed to the Church of England, which he saw conflicting with so much faction, seditious, importune, petulant, and never to be satisfied with Reason or Religion: He foretaw that it was likely to be evermore so afflicted (as Hannah with Peninnah's reproaches) unless the Authority of Gods and mans Laws did timely prevail against those specious principles, and desperate designs, which he knew some men meditated, yea declared, and hoped to carry on by the popular prejudices which they daily raised against the Church of England, the better to accomplish the modest designs of their party, which was onely to rule all things in Church and State, to bring both Printer and Parliament to receive Dictates and Oracles of Government from this *Tripus of Presbytery*, which was to be instituted by Jesus Christ, abetted with Teaching and Ruling Elders, who were all to be better then Bishops, even Kings and Priests, sitting and reigning with Jesus Christ on his Throne.

He saw that the ambition of some heady men, was to be screened by the superstition of others, well meaning Christians, whom they kept in a kinde of twilight Religion, forbidding them the use of right Reason in any matter of Religion, but enjoying the m

them to live in such an *implicite faith* as made them *infinitely shy* and *boggling* at those things as *great fins*, which he proves to be very *lawful and safe*: Left free by Christ, as in their *nature*, so in their *use*, agreeable to their nature, and not enjoyed by the Church under any other notion; not as fixed parts or *essentials* of Religion, but as *circumstantial* and *mutable ornaments*; which falling under the *cognizance* of *publique authority*, were to be limited by *publique wisdom*, in order to *decency, peace and uniformity* in the *publique worship* of God; the care and regulation of which, as to *things of indifferency*, is by God committed to the *Supreme power* in every *Polity and Kingdom*, as he *unanswerably* proves.

His filial regard to the Church of England.

This learned, sober and wise man could not but be secretly grieved to see the Church of England (which was so *happily reformed*, so flourishing in all *Piety, Learning and Peace*, so famous in this Western world, so established by excellent *Laws*, so every way compleat and most conform, for the main, to the *paterns primitive and Gods Word*, to see this (like *Naaman the Syrian*, (who was a *valiant man*, but a *Leper*) thus continually infested with the itch and tetter of *endless cavilling*, and eager contending about *small matters*, which are not, cannot be evil in themselves, because no where forbidden of God, no way contrary to *faith or good manners*, no way used or imposed beyond what their *nature bears*, and God allows, as to outward *Rites, Decency and Solemnity* of *publique Religion*.

His compassion for the opposers of the Church of England.

It grieved him to see so much *inordinate heat* in some mens spirits (otherways commendable for *Learning and Piety* (breaking out at their *tongues and pens*, in their *prayers and Sermons*, not against heresies and errors, vice and immorality, sin and profaneness, but against such forms and shadows, as their own needless jealousy and uncharitable suspicion made to them *Superstitious*, and so to their sequacious *Disciples*, who rather took their bare word, than the whole Churches authentick testimony; nor would they be so fair mannered as to give the Church and Kingdom leave to interpret its own *constitutions*, or to declare its *true intentions*, which it hath oft and fully in these things, to be as far from *Superstition, Idolatry*, or any addition to the Word and Worship of God, as any essential and necessary part of them, as the intention of the three Tribes was from *Apostatizing* from the true God, when they erected that *Altar of memory*, witness *historick*, and record on this side *Jordan*, in token of their fraternal Communion with the other Tribes in their Religion.

The state of the Church of England duly considered by him.

When this Learned and Prudent person had for some time duly considered the state of the controversy, the nature of the things disputed, light and small of themselves, yet as stubble or wisps of straw, fit to kindle and set all on fire; when he weighed the danger even of such petty division; how such differences daily ventilated by new passions, which are (*flabella opinionum*) the fan or bellows of their opinions, did grow to high animosities, dissensions and factions in Church and State, apt to serve the lusts of any ambitious and discontented people, who commonly take their fires from the Temple, and their coals from the Altar with which they intend to give light and heat to their designs: He did not like those *Twins of Conformity and Non-conformity* struggling in one womb, to the torture and terror of the Mother. Hence he applied himself to examine the general and particular nature of things disputed, thence to clear and compose differences, to satisfy scruples, and to justify the Churches liberty and authority, if by any means he might extinguish those fires whose smokings he already felt, and whose flames he feared would at last break out to *dreadful conflagrations*, as they did, after they had by his Writings been much allayed for a time, and rather *smothered* then *incinerated*.

When once he had fully considered, with what force he was able to meet those that came against him, and fought against the Churches Honor, Peace, Liberty, Authority and Unity, he mustered up all his strength; he became wholly captive to this great and good design: This possessed him intirely, so this all his studies and meditations were reduced: This, as a *strong bias*, swayed all his thoughts, counsels and conferences, as the building of the Temple was the grand design of *David* and *Solomon*s munificence: Nor did the giver of every good and perfect gift, fail to furnish this large and liberal soul with all *Sufficiencies* for so great a work, having vast abilities for *Learning*, a full maturity for his judgement, a great integrity in his design, an exact magistracy over his passions, a Dove-like *innocency* in his manners, and

an

an undefatigable industry in so good an undertaking, nothing was impossible, which this *Wise-man* would endeavour; being so judicious as not to take upon him more than his shoulders could bear, and so *industrious* as not to give over whatever was within the sphere of a Learned, Grave, Humble, Devout and diligent Divine.

Having thus fully debated the undertaking with himself, and wholly devoted himself (as *our*) by Gods direction and assistance to this *heroick design*, as another *Hercules* to tame *Schismatical Monsters*, to crop off the reviving heads of *seditious Heresies*, to cleanse the *Anglean filth*, which some mens tongues and pens by their impotent railings, and scurrilous writings had cast on the beauty and honor of the Church of England: It is not to be imagined what *mighty assistances*, what *generous successes* he daily had in this so honest and honorable an undertaking.

Such *plenty of matter*, such *variety of reading*, such *full and pertinent citations*, such *clear and copious expressions*, such *methodical distributions*, such *powerful demonstrations*, such *fundamentals of reason*, such *originals of Law*, such *essentials of Religion*, such *proportions of Polity and Order*, such *boundaries of Government*, such *necessary principles and ingredients* to make up the peace and happiness of mankind, both Temporal and Eternal, Personal and Political, did flow in upon his capacious soul, that he had matter more than enough to serve his turn; and he did so artificially dispose of his plenty and variety, that he hath justly obtained this *Encomium* from all intelligent Readers, both Foreign and Domestick, that never any man undertook since the ancient conflicts of the Fathers, *Irenaeus*, *Cyprian*, *Tertullian*, *Austin*, *Optatus*, *Hilary*, *Prosper*, and others, against the *Valentinians*, *Novatians*, *Manichees*, *Donatists*, and others, a better cause, or handled it with an honest heart, an abler judgement, or an eloquent style.

He searcheth, as a wise *Physitian* and *Chyrurgion*, the bottom of real or pretended sores and diseases; He evinceth the greatest complainers, and forwardest healers of the Church of England, to be the most diseased and depraved parts of it, either blind in their judgements, or blear-eyed with their passions, or partial in their interests, or lame in their obedience to God and man, uncharitably severe, and arrogantly censorious to others; impotent in their popular presumptions, confident in their vulgar errors, superstitious in their *severities*, inordinate in their motions, and subject to such various distempers, that sometime they are too hot in the *calentures* of their uncomely zeal beyond *understanding*; otherwhile they are too cold as to the glowings of their partial charity; the novelizing itch of their ambition to dictate and to domineer, being no less their own affliction and inquietude, then it threatened to be the leprosie or plague-sore of this whole Church and Kingdom (and the event hath too truly verified his prudent *conjecture*.)

Hence, like a skilful undertaker to cure a dangerous and spreading disease, he spares no time or labour to furnish himself with all sorts of apt and sovereign Medicines; he searcheth at home and abroad, he collects and applies what he thinketh most proper to stop the Gangreen of Faction, to allay the inflammation, to abate the tumors, to purge out the ill humors, to recover health and beauty to the Body Politick: For this purpose he rifles all Antiquity, despoils the Christian and Heathen Writers of those excellent principles, prescriptions and experiments, which he judged most suitable and seasonable for his design; nothing escapes his *Eagle-eye* that was remarkable in Philosophers, Poets, Orators, Fathers, Councils, Historians, School-men, Casuists and Civilians; he extracteth the spirits and quintessence of all Law and Reason, of all Order and Government out of the Greek and Roman *Lawyers*, the Imperial or Civil, the Canon or Ecclesiastical, also the Common and English Law: These he very artificially digests into such a Confession or Plaster as he thought most apt to abate the disease, and to advance sincere health: He infuseth all these in such *Celestial waters*, or *Scriptural distillations*, as were dropt from Heaven, from the Father and Fountain of all light and health, all true and saving wisdom: So that there wants nothing in his Writings, as in a rare composition, to make it grateful as well as useful, palatable as well as profitable, to mindes that are either curious for ancient Learning, or Admirers of strong reason, or adorers of Divine Revelation, or delighted with elegant expressions: So that he that will confute Mr. Hookers *Bookes*, must contradict the Scriptures, oppose Antiquity, cut the sinews of Reason, maim all true Religion, put all Order out of joynt, and give the strapado to all

His courage  
and encour-  
agements  
to the work.

His supplies  
and suffici-  
encies to the  
work.

His fidelity  
in the work.

The exact-  
ness of his  
industry, and  
compleat-  
ness of his  
design.



Government in Families, Cities, Churches and Kingdoms, yea he must deny himself to be a man and a Christian, fitter for brutish Solitudes, then for Civil or Ecclesiastical Societies, which are the conservatories of men and Christians, the Sanctuaries in which Reason and Religion are to be consecrated and preserved inviolable.

This wise Master-builder Mr. Hooker, was not now to lay the foundations of this Church anew, in Doctrine, Devotion, Discipline or Government (which work by the singular goodness of God had been done long before his days, by the learned pains and patience of many worthy Bishops and others, Martyrs and Confessors in the Church of England, to whose prudence and piety the favour of Princes and Parliaments had given the sanction and stability of the Laws.

The correspondencies of all parts in his work.

He was onely to repair and fortifie those parts of its *outworks*, as to Order, Decency, Polity and Government, which either the Romish Arts and Policies, or Schismatical discontents and factious designs sought to undermine and overthrow. For this end, he like an excellent Engineer, lays out his work or line of *circumvallation* by that exact method, that every one of his *eight Books*, like to many *Sconces* and *Bulwarks* well placed, aptly correspond and serve both to adorn and defend each other: There is so rare a *symmetry* and proportion in the *whole Fabrick*, both as to the foundation and superstructure, that neither can want the other, and together they are invincible; nothing can undermine his foundations of Eternal verity, equity and necessity; nothing can batter or demolish his superstructures of Humanity, Christianity and Polity: It will not be amiss to give the Reader a brief model of each Book.

The design of Mr. Hooker's first Book.

In the first Book Mr. Hooker searcheth and discovereth *Fontes legis*, the bottom of that great deep which we call Law; the source of which is from the *abyss* of Divine Wisdom, that eternal and essential reason, the emanations whereof, as the Rivers of Paradise, water the whole Creation in Nature and Providence; but the most eminent course thereof is contained within the current of rational and free natures, *Angels* and *men*, to whom Reason and Divine revelation, as the waters below and above the *firma-ment*, are dispensed as the dictates or Placita of that one great Lawgiver, God blessed for ever: Here he admirably expresseth as the original, so the necessity, use and end of all Laws for the good order, well-being, peace and Government of all things, specially of *Men* and *Angels*, who are not onely passive under the Law of Gods power, but may be active in obeying his will, either under the more immediate (*diapallia*) dispensation of Gods presence and pleasure; or by those *interventions*, of Princes and Lieutenancies which he hath appointed in Churches and Kingdoms by way of Magistrates, or Priests and Ministers: That all Law is but the circle of the Divine wisdom and goodness, drawn by his *holy will* and *just power*, about all things in heaven, earth and hell, keeping them within compass, and directing them to his glory, in which their own happiness, if willingly obedient, is included; or others welfare, if they are curbed and constrained thereunto: That by having Laws both in Reason and Religion, we men are manifested to be of higher extraction, nobler capacity, and neerer relation to the Divine Nature then other Creatures, vastly differing from beasts, next degree to *Angels*, and not far from the glory of the Creator; the express image or stamp of whose Beauty and Majestie, is most manifested by our conformity to him in *Righteousness* and *Holiness*; the first is wrought by the Laws of right Reason or *Morality*, the second by the Laws of true Religion, or Christian Sanctity.

The summary and design of the second Book.

The Law of God in Reason and Revelation, Nature and Scripture.

In the second Book Mr. Hooker notably asserteth against Papists and Enthusiasts, the Supremacy and sufficiency of that Law of Sanctity or Religion, which God hath revealed to his Church in the *Holy Scriptures*, thereby supplying those defects, and dispelling the mists which our lusts and passions have brought upon the Law of Nature or right Reason, which teacheth Humanity, Morality, and Natural Divinity, from which the ignorances, prejudices, prides and rebellions of mens hearts have now so perverted them, that without special grace teaching and assisting, they cannot attain to that supreme good and happiness which mankind is capable of, by an holy conformity to Gods will in grace, and in glory. Not that Scripture-light doth null or extinguish the light of true reason, so far as concerns the lower region of humane prudence and Polity



Polity in this World, but rather *confirms* it: Nor that the *Scripture-revelation*, which is sufficient to make a Christian perfect to *Salvation* and *Sanctification*, is so *precise*, *punctual* and *exact* a rule, or *Law* of all our inferior and exterior actions Natural, Civil and Religious, in respect of the particular *circumstantiating* or modifying of them, that nothing circumstantial or ceremonial is to be thought *good* or *lawful*, which hath not a *special command* in *Gods Word* to determine the particular manner, method, time, place, and other general circumstances which as inseparably doth all actions done under the Sun, as our skins do our bodies; without which exact regulations and proportions, the whole duty must be thought *superstitious*, condemned as *will-worship*, cryed down as vain traditions of men; all customs and forms must be Antichristian Rites, and sinful ceremonies, with the like *terriculaments* of expressions severely used as *specious terrors*, and *popular fallacies*, by the opposers of conformity, to take off mens esteem, reverence and observance to the Peace, Order, Decency, Providence and Authority of the Church of England, wisely limiting things of this nature so as it seems best for the publique Solemnities of Religion, and enjoining such a decent conformity thereto, as may avoid variety, novelty, faction and confusion.

This excellent Writer hath beyond all just reply, manifested these great truths, That as nothing can be *necessary* and *essential* to Religion; but what God hath *prescribed* in his Word (which is the doctrine of the Church of England;) so in *lesser matters*, which concern the *individualing* of general circumstances and things *less indifferent* (that is under no express command of God *affirmative* or *negative*, as to what time and place, in what method and manner, how long, and how much, in what tune or language, to what phrase and fashion, what gesture and vesture are to be used, what is to be first or last, with other like limitations or regulations which concern the visible Order, Decency, Solemnity and Uniformity of publique worship, and holy Ministrations) the *indulgence* of God hath not tied us up under the Gospel to *Judaick strictness* of this circumstance, and that ceremony, except in some things of the blessed Sacraments, divinely instituted as visible signs of invisible grace, but hath left every private Christian to his liberty in his closet: Also every chief Ruler of the Family, to his choice in his family duties; and every Ecclesiastical Polity or Body, to its freedom and choice what modes either by the *civil use* and *custom* of the Country, or any other measures of decency it lists to chuse to it self and the members of its community, where the major part in publique suffrages is to be esteemed the vote and law of all, and the minor part, however they do in their judgements prefer other forms, which possibly may be as well, or seem better in some respects, yet are they peaceably to conform to the spirits and result of the most, unless they will make Religion to interfere with *right reason*, and cease to live orderly as men, under a pretence of living piously as Christians; which is also the judgement of the most learned and holy Primate of Armagh in his excellent Sermon upon that Text, *God is not the Author of confusion, &c.*

Of the Churches power in circumstantials of Religion.

This Law of Christian liberty, managed by due Authority in humane Societies both Civil and Ecclesiastical, Mr. Hooker justly and fully vindicates, after S. Austin, as a *Law* of God both in reason and in Scripture commanding obedience to Superior power, and prudence in all these things, where they are commanded and used under no other notion then that which their nature bears, and God allows; not as essential, internal, necessary and immutable parts of Religion, but as external and mutable, onely for Order, Decency, Unity and Edification, no way prejudicial either to true faith, or good manners.

Nor may Christians under any *fancied* of Reformation and amendment, be rude Novellizers, or refractory Non-conformists in these things to publique usages, customs and appointments; since Christian Religion, which gives the greatest liberty to Christians in these things, both as to their judgement or conscience, and use of them in their private and proper sphere, doth also give to chief Magistrates and Governors in Church and State, a full and paramount Authority therein, obliging all private and subjected Christians to a more exact obedience as such; both to avoid scandal or offence against Governors, also to give testimonies of their charity, humility and ready obedience, as of all men furthest from peevishness, headiness, refractoriness and rebellions; whose judgements are still free to think of those things no otherwise then they are left by

Christian Liberty consistent with conformity to mans Laws.

God and the Church indifferent in their natures, and onely circumscribed (or limited) in their temporary use; not therefore enjoyed because necessary, but onely so far necessary in point of use, as they are enjoyed for Order, Decency, Peace and Unity.

Mr. Hooker striking the right vein of Non-conformity.

This one great *sinew or vein of Sophistry* being thus cut in funder, as Mr. Hooker doth it most effectually, both the *Negative Superstition* of Non-conformists is evinced, and justly *perstringed*, as an enemy to the *Liberty and Authority* of Christian Churches in these things; also the *bonds of needless scrupulosity*, by which they hamper many poor souls and well-meaning people, are utterly dissolved: Nor will the repeated *Crambers of the pattern in the Mount*; and, Christ being faithful in the house of God; and, not an *hoof must be left in Egypt*, and the like *enchancements of vulgar, weak and silly souls*; these will not any longer serve as *fig-leaves*, to cover the *infancy or obstinacy* of these eager disputers against the Church of England's Liberty, Prudence and Authority in these things, so far as it judgeth and declareth them expedient for the publique good of Church and State.

The great virtue and operation of this principle.

This principle being thus fully asserted by him: 1. It justifies the Church of England in its Constitutions. 2. It leaves other Churches to the like liberty and variety with charity. 3. It solves the great objection and fear of private scandal; which scares some, but is not to be considered, when in competition with publique duty and obedience in lawful things, to lawful Authority, to which we must not give any offence or publique scandal, in order to gratify any private scrupulosity. And indeed Mr. Hooker in this discourse maintaining the use of right reason, subordinate to true Religion, and of prudence consistent with piety, and of discretion with good conscience, did cast the Tortoise of Non-conformity on its back; nor could it ever recover its self, further then it represented false terrors to vulgar minds, bringing silly people by new clamors into the bondage of their own and others needless imaginations, when indeed they had Gods not onely permission, but warrant and injunction in such things to obey the Ordinances of men in point of outward Order, Polity and Peace for the Lords sake.

Here the long and hotly agitated controversy of limited circumstances and ceremonies of outward Rites, and customary Solemnities in the publique forms of Religion, where the faith is kept sound, and all superstitious fancies are abandoned, as in the declarations of the Church of England, had found a full period and solution, their death and burial, if *humility, modesty, ingenuity, right reason*, and peaceable Religion had been able to prevail against prejudices, animosities, adherences to parties emulation, ambition, reputation and self-interests of some popular Preachers and their Disciples, who all pretended they should do God good service, if they fought against the few innocent Ceremonies of the Church, rather then the insolent passions and presumptions of their own hearts, being unluckily advanced in the opposition of these thing beyond any handsome retreat. This made some of them persist (while others came in and submitted) not in reasoning, but in railing or clamouring most sadly against these poor shadows, that they were Jewish and Popish, Impious and Antichristian, Superstitious and Idolatrous; when the superstition was onely in themselves, who feared where no fear was, and called good evil, and evil good, challenging a liberty to dispute these Forms and Rites which the Church had chosen, and to chuse such others as they thought most comely or convenient for the discrimination, credit and support of their party: Nor indeed was any answer ever made to these Demonstrations, but such as violence, tumult and Rebellion put at length into some mens hearts and hands, bringing all things by a most horrid Non-conformity to a most abominable Confusion.

The summary of his third book.

In the third Book Mr. Hooker applies the former general rules of Christian Liberty, and lawful Authority in things of indifferency, to the particular state of the Church of England, or any other Ecclesiastical Polity, which is made up of one Magistratick Head as Supreme; and of subjects, as members of that body united by the ligatures of Laws, as the results of publique counsel and consent; no way contrary to the Word of God, but agreeable to that wisdom, freedom and power which he hath given Christian Societies to provide as they see best for the publique solemnity and decency of his worship, together with their own peace and good order.

Here he manifesteth, That the Church of England did (*jure suo & Autoritate sua*) do as God allowed, enabled, yea, and commanded her to do, by his general commands

commands of, *Let all things be done decently, and in order*; of, *Subjects obedience to Superiors in the Lord*; who is the God of Peace, Polity and Order, as well as of Piety; Zeal and Verity; an Enemy to *Follies and Confusion*, as well as to *Heretic and Error*; requiring outward Reverence and Solemnity, as well as inward Sanctity in his Worship. Here this great *Master of the Assembly*, not only drives home to the head these (*Clavus Trabales*, strong nails, which by the hammer of Reason he forged on the Anvil of Religion) but he clenches them so fast, that they are not to be drawn out: The main head of them, is the *Essential Sanctity* of all religious duties, to be measured only by Gods Word, and Divine Institution: The return, or satisfying of their points, is the necessity of Solemnity, Order and Decency in the outward Form, and publique Performance of such duties; in which the publique Laws and Constitutions are to be obeyed, as having that wisdom and authority which is least to be disputed, as the best chuser, and most authentick determiner of those things; provided they be enjoyed and used under no other notion, and to no other ends than those to which they are fitted in their nature, and so left free by the Divine Indulgence.

In the *fourth Book*, the Learned Author answers the many little cavils, which are importunately and particularly urged by *Non-conformists*, against some Rites and Ceremonies settled in the Church of *England*, according to the liberty and authority it hath from the God of Reason and Religion; in these things to advise for its own Peace and Order, as well as for the Reverence and Solemnity of Publique Worship: Against which neither the *use*, nor the *abuse* of the Church of *Rome* (which is odiously and popularly objected) nor the *disuse* of any *Reformed Foreign Churches*, can be any bar or prejudice to the Liberty and Authority of the Church of *England*; if the Objectors would seriously weigh the nature and truth of things, or give leave to the Church of *England* to interpret its own meaning in them, which they either pervert, or are willingly ignorant of: If they would cease to think themselves wiser than the Laws, then Kings, Prelates, and Convocations: If they would indulge the Church the same publique Liberty which they affect to take in these things, while they fear not to use what others have abused, in lifting up and opening their hands and eyes, or in shutting and closing them fast; in standing, kneeling, or sitting as they list: If they would cease to be children in understanding, and in peevishness: If they would be as wary of the Camel of Sedition, as they are of the Gnats of Ceremonies; this quarrel would soon be at an end, the Laws would be obeyed, the Church composed, Charity revived, dangers dispelled, the Kingdom settled, good Christians edified, and God in all things glorified; by our uniform obedience first to his holy commands, next to the *Ordinances of our Superiors*, for the Lords sake; while they keep within the bounds of his Word, free from *Superstition* and *Prophaneness*.

The sum of  
his fourth  
book.

The *fifth and last Book* of Mr. Hookers *Ecclesiastical Policy*, heretofore extant, and owned as Authentick, expatiates into all the windings and turnings, the *labyrinths* and *diverticles*, by which the versatile Adversaries of the Church of *Englands* peace sought to amuse the Vulgar, losing them in a *Wood or Wilderness* of petty *Scruples and Objections*, about Words and Expressions, Modes and Forms, Rites and Ceremonies, rather than any thing *Essential* or *Moral* as to the main of Religion, in *Faith, Doctrine, or Devotion*.

The sum of  
the fifth  
book.

Here that he might not only skin over the *scare or crust*, but search the very bottom of this running old Ulcer, this *Fistula* or *Canker* of Superstition, Schism and Sedition, which he saw festered in the minds of many well-meaning people, by the scrupulosity and pragmatickness of some Ministers, either weak or wilful: This excellent Author gives a short, but solid account of true Religion and its opposites; *Atheism*, which is below it; *Prophaneness*, which is against it; and *Superstition*, which affects to be above it, by an over-weening, and pragmatick kinde of righteousness.

After this, he opposeth a large shield of honest and unanswerable defence, full of Truth and Charity, Reason and Religion; of vast reading, and acute observation, against all those darts and arrows, greater or less, which the fierce *Non-conformists* cast against the Church of *Englands* Order, Beauty, Peace, Solemnity and Piety. He not only makes a general outwork for defence, but takes notice of every shot

and



and battery made against the Church of England, as to the places of *Publique* [Worships] our *materiel Churches*, their *Names*, *Forms*, *Sumptuousness*, *Dedication*, *ends* and *users* &c. so the times set apart for *publique Worship*, either the *Lords Day*, or other *Ecclesiastick Festivals*: He considers what true preaching is, and what are the several ways of *du. instructing people in Religion*; also by reading and catechising: Of *publike Prayer*, and *solemn Devotion*, by way of set *Forms*, or *publique Liturgies* in general, and this of the Church of England in particular, inferior to none that is, or ever was extant in any Church: After this, he weighs in the Balance of the Sanctuary, by *Religion* and *right Reason*, all the *publique Offices* and *Liturgical appointments* in the Church of England, for *matter and form*, substance and ceremony; not justifying all things, as best in their kinde or degree, or as necessary, but as good, apt, expedient, and better in some respects than the *novelties* obtruded by men that admire nothing so much as their own inventions; and instead of being humbly thankful to God and Christian Kings, for the rich means of salvation freely afforded them in the Church, they are ever quarrelling at the manner of it; despising, as the Jews in their wanton surfeits, that *Manna* which was liberally cast upon them, because it is not dressed, or dished for them, as they forsooth do most fancy in their lunatick or changeable humors.

Mr. Hooker's great patience in thus following the enemies of the Church in their fallacies and pretensions,

A Work worthy indeed of so able a pen, and fit to exercise so *Divine a patience*, which must attend so *minute objections*, and weigh very *atoms of circumstances*, and *notes of ceremonies*; yet with which he saw the *Enemies of the Churches peace* would vex the eyes of *poor people*, first to water or tears, next to *bloodshottness* and *fury*. Here I know not which most to *admire and commend*, whether his *Learning* and *Eloquence*, which dresseth up every mean thing *handsomely*; or his *candor* and *meekness*, which handles all things with *evenness* and *integrity*, neither perturbed with passion, nor conquered with opposition, nor tired with importunity.

Indeed his zeal for Gods glory, and this Churches both *honor and happiness*, that it might be free from *rent and reproach*, was so intensive, together with his charity and compassion even to the *Enemies of the Churches*, and their *own peace*, that he seems onely ambitious, as a *Silk-worm*, to bury himself in his *own Web*; to exhaust himself, that he might effect something of use or ornament to the Church.

The tediousness of his work in those many petty particulars.

No man that hath not tryed what it is to follow the *circulations of impotent objections*, and *Sceptical Criticks*, can imagine what a wearisome business this fifth Book must needs be to this grave Divine, whose profound judgement enabled him for *better work*, then thus to pursue every *bubble of froth* and *spittle*, which some mens *wanton breath* list to raise, and blow off into the ay, among the *common people*, with whom not the *weight*, but the number of *objections* is considerable: What a clear, calm and composed spirit he must needs have, duly to *weigh*, leisurely to *examine*, orderly to *digest*, and soberly to *determine* those things, whose very *lightness* and *thinness* makes them scarce fall under a wise mans *meditation*, or fit to be put into the balance of his judgement! To which purpose, he must have all *measures* and *weights*, even to *scruples* and *grains* of right reason, as well as *talents of Religion* at hand; not onely the pretended *allegations of Scriptures*, but the very circumstances of things, the several customs of Churches, the very *Ceremonies* for decency and reverence, must be brought to the *test or touchstone*: Also he was to carry a civil respect to the judgement of *Foreign*, as well as *Domestick Divines*; yet we finde this *Atlas* no where complaining, or stooping; no where tediously affected, or abating *his vigour*, but still so prosecuting every new particular, as if he had handled none before it; his devotion and zeal every day setting a *new edge*, and giving a *fresh quickness* to his industry: So *indefatigable is the love of the Churches peace*, so severe a Taskmaster is true *Charity to its self*; never satisfied, while any thing remains to be done that *concerns its duty*, despising nothing that may advance *its great design*, Gods Glory, and the good of Souls; nor thinking any thing small, which toucheth upon Religion or Conscience, or the Churches Peace; the skirt or lap of whose *Garments* may not be cut off by any *private Presumption*: No Pin or Utensil of the *Tabernacle* and *Temple of God* but was holy, and worthy of the Priests care, as well as the Levites carrying.



In this fifth Book Mr. Hooker being lead on by the importune molestations of I.C. and others, to try all things; and being commanded by the Apostle, to hold fast what is good, omits nothing that was objected, giving full force to the Adversaries Arguments (which is *καταμαρτυρεῖν*) to strive lawfully) and as full answers, as the nature of the things is capable of in Reason or Religion: Not that this Wiseman Magnifies every particular Rite and Ceremony used in the Church of England, as either necessary, or absolutely the best in it self; but onely justifying the use of them, because in themselves lawful and good, yea better then any mans private novelties, because settled by Publique Wisdom, and due Authority. Possibly he might in the abstract or general think, that some things in our Singing or Musick, in our Liturgy and Polity, or Church Government, might be altered and improved, when it should be thought convenient by the publique Wisdom and Piety; but he did not think that the Church was bound to alter its good Constitutions and Customs, so oft as every private fancy or faction shall pretend to a better Platform; as if a man should still be pulling down his house; to oft as any one list to commend a new Model of Building to him: Nay, he did not think (as no wise man doth) that any Church is always bound in these things, to alter for the better; its sufficeeth, if what is appointed, and in use, be good; for the matter, not contrary to the Word of God; for the manner, such as is not thought uncomely by the publique Prudence, which must set bounds to the vanity and variety of private fancies; which by daily novelty will destroy Unity and Constancy, introducing Faction, Levity and Confusion, under the pretence of bettering, altering, and endless Reforming; of which, who shall be Judge, if things be not confined to the publique determination?

Mr. Hooker's moderation in his vladication of Rites and Ceremonies, &c.

Many things he justifies to be, as very ancient, so very good; others to be more convenient then better, because apt and wonted; the old Wine being to be preferred before the new, because, though this be more spiritfull and heady, yet the other is more pure and wholesome: He vindicates all things to be, if not highly commendable, yet not justly blameable; and at worst tolerable, because accompanied with so many blessed Advantages of true Faith, with all Piety, Grace, and Vertue; all which are fully set forth, and to be enjoyed with peace, by humble and thankful Christians in the Church of England; where every one may be as good as they can for their hearts, if they be not wanting to themselves: Nor doth any man lightly despise the Publique Laws, and settled Constitutions, but he that hath a mind to begin greater troubles by his Novelties, then those inconveniencies can amount to, which he seems so offended at; which if not bad, that is, not against Faith and Holiness, are better, with the Churches Peace, then better things, brought in with Perturbation and Reproach to Church and State, as Saint Austin long ago observed, judging an old suite, that is casie and comely, to be better, though plain, then a new one that is finer, but less fit.

And here, after this Phoenix of Learning and Grace, of Prudence and Eloquence, had collected this Fair Pile of his Ecclesiastical Polity, and furnished it with all Curiousities of Humane and Divine, Ancient and Modern Wisdom, himself expired amidst his great Undertakings, to the impotent joy of his Antagonists; who finding themselves worried, and sorely wounded, between the joints of their Armour, Popular Inventions, and Ambitious Objections, by this Great Archer, in his Five first Books, which he lived to publish; yet received some comfort in this, that they escaped the shot of his last Three, which he never published, and which they hoped, he had never finished; or if he did compleat them, they found (as is by some imagined) some Artifice so long to smother and conceal them from the Publique, till they had play'd such an After-game, as they thought was onely able to confute Mr. Hooker, and to blot out by the Sword, the impressions of his pen.

Mr. Hooker's death, before he had finished, at least published all his intended Books.

But

But Providence in time, hath not onely confuted those mens projects and confidences, but also brought forth those esteemed *Abortives*, the three last Books, with such *lineaments* of their Fathers Vertue and Vigor on them, that they may be easily and justly owned for *genuine*; although (perhaps) they had not the last politure of their Parents hands: Their strength shews them to be a *legitimate Progeny*, however they may seem to want *something* of that *beauty* and *lustre* which always attended Mr. Hookers consummations.

The design  
and sum of  
the sixth  
book.

In the first of these, which is the *sixth Book*, He makes *Nehustan* of the *Brazen Serpent*, and grinds to powder the golden Calf or Teraphim of the *Disciplinarian Project*, as to the claim of Power of Ordination and Jurisdiction in *Presbyters* apart from *Bishops*, yea against them; much more that silly Idol which was set up first in *Lay-Elders*, and afterwards licked to some more plausible shape of *Independency*, or *Congregational power*, as to Church affairs. These *Presbyterian presumptuous* and popular *Novelties*, he notably refutes; as did, after him, Mr. *Clumbald*, in an excellent Tract of his, the loss of which I have oft deplored in vain, when I saw it vilely embezzled by some of the *Scotish Assembly*, to whom it was imparted by a person, who had greater confidence of some mens honesty, then ever his experience did make good.

The design  
of Mr. Hookers  
seventh  
book.

His *seventh Book* notably vindicates *Ecclesiastical Government and Jurisdiction*, as settled by the *Catholick custom* of this, and all *ancient Churches*; also by the *Laws of this Kingdom*, in *Bishops* or *Prelates*, either *Metropolitan* or *Diocesan*: Evidently proving by the *Canons of Councils*, by the known *Laws of this Realm*, by the *Scripture grounds*, right *Reason*, and true *proportions* of all *Polity* and good *Government*; also by long and happy *experience*, that the *interest of Episcopacy* is the *true interest*, as of the *Church of Christ in general*, so specially of this *Church and Kingdom*, and all *Estates* herein.

The interest  
of Episcopacy,  
is the  
true interest  
of all Estates  
in England  
1. Of the Po-  
pularity.  
2. Of the  
Clergy.

1. Of the *common People*, who must be governed in *Religion*, as well as *Civil* concerns, being prone, like water, in both respects, to dangerous *Extravagancies*: Nor can they be governed by *Ministers* either their *inferiors* or *equals*; but by such whose *Learning*, *Age*, *Prudence*, and legal *Authority* derived from the *Prince*, worthily sets them in a deserved and meet *Superiority*, as *Judges* over them, both able and *Venerable*.

2. *Episcopacy* or *Prelacy*, is the *true interest* of all the learned and sober *Clergy*; who have the most *safety*, *reputation*, *honor*, *satisfaction* and *tranquillity*, when they are in *causes Ecclesiastical*, under the *protection* and *cognizance*, or *jurisdiction* of their *Fathers* and *Brethren*, who have most regard for them, as being of the same *Calling* and *Profession*; whose very *corrections* of them, are fullest of *compassion* for them; and study their good in *charity*, when they are forced to use some necessary *severity* to them.

3 Of the  
Gentry.

3. It is the *true interest* of the *English Gentry*, or *lesser Nobility*, who are too *knowing*, and too *high-spirited*, to be curbed by, and concluded under the *discipline* and *decrees* of every *Parochial Minister*; who may have competent gifts for a *Preacher*, but not *gravity* sufficient for a *Governor*; there being as great a distance between a *Preacher* and a *Ruler*, as between a *Pleader* and a *Judge*: There is a vast difference between making a *Sermon*, and giving a *Sentence*.

4 Of the No-  
bility.

4. *Episcopacy* best suits with the *interest* of the *grand nobility* in *England*, whose *honor* is best preserved by the *eminency* and *proportion* of *venerable* and *prudent Bishops*, paying all due respects to them; as it would be greatly *diminished* and *abused* by the *pertness* and *insolency* of every petty *Presbyter*, and their popular adherents, who think it *honor enough* to make the best *Nobleman* in the *Parish*, one of their *lay-Elders*, or a member of their pitiful *Congregations*; thereby rending him off from that duty he owes to, and communion he ought in *honor* and *conscience* to keep with the *Church of England*, yea the *Catholick Church*, rather than any select and *schismatical party* whatsoever.

5. Of Kings.

5. It is the *interest* of *Majestie* and *Sovereignty* in our *Kings* and *Princes*, as to that *Dominion* they justly have, and that *influence* they must maintain and exercise over all degrees of their *Subjects*; whom they can never govern as to *Civil subjection*, unless they have a *religious eye* to, and hand over their *souls* and *consciences*, as well as their *bodies* and *estates*; no more then the *wheels* of the *Warre* will move orderly,

without the spring be right set; or the ship steer well; unless the rudders be discreetly hung and handled: Not onely the open practices of subjects, but their opinions are to be under such coercion, as may best keep them within the bonds of truth and obedience to God and man. Due inspections and regulations of Religion, are the greatest securings of Loyalty; and no Profession teacheth and urgeth greater subjection to Princes, then the Christian and Reformed doth, specially where Bishops are servants to Christ and Kings; nor are any men so fit to receive and use this Ecclesiastical inspection and authority as Bishops who can best take account, as of people, so of Ministers doctrines and examples, and may best give account of them to Sovereign Magistrates; so much truth and weight was there in King James his Prophetick maxime, *No Bishop, no King*; both Presbytery and Independency being the cloud and Eclipse of Kingly Majestie, as Episcopacy is a great lustre and radiance of it.

6. Sad experience tells us, that Episcopacy is beyond all doubt or dispute (now) the true interest of this Churches Honor, Peace and Happines, which never flourished so much as under Bishops; nor was ever so shaken, abused, deformed and desolated, as when Presbyterian and popular Novelities were brought in by violence, to the subversion of Monarchy, no less then Episcopacy.

6. Of this Church of England.

7. Episcopacy rightly managed, is manifested to be the great Interest of Gods glory, and our Saviours honor, as they have by precepts and examples constituted a visible Church, regular Flock, and orderly Family in this world, distinguished by Institutions and Mysteries of Religion proper to Christians; who yet must not be as rude and disorderly rabbles, occasionally huddled together; but as becometh the Wisdom of the God of Order and Peace, and the Household of faith, with such due subordinations under Fathers and Pastors, Stewards and Overseers; or Bishops over them, as sorts with the Majestie of our God, the pristine examples of his wisdom among the Jews, and the Sovereignty also of our Saviour, who is the chief Lord, King, Captain, and Bishop of the Church; nothing being more dissonant from Christianity, in its ends and rules, in its holy Order and Beauty, then levelling spirits, and such popular projects as tend to nothing but Faction and Schism, to Anarchy and Confusion; which events; this Wiseman Mr. Hooker foresaw, and foretold, as we have seen unhappily fulfilled: Nor was ever Episcopacy more advanced, then by being so much depressed; the woful want of it shewing how useful, yea necessary it is for the well-being of this Church and Kingdom, as the late excellent King oft in vain Remonstrated to those deaf Adders, who refused to be charmed, till they had destroyed both his Sacred Person, and all Kingly Majestie, with this Church, and venerable Episcopacy; whose Offices and Revenues (both of Church and Crown) those gentle and modest Deformers, either as Presbyters or People, made no scruple to usurp, enjoy and exercise; fancying themselves at once both Kings and Priests, till they appeared either fools, or knaves, or both, being once unfortunate, and confuted not more by the frowns of Providence, then by their own confusions.

7. Episcopacy Gods Interest, as he is the God of Order and Peace.

In the eighth Book, Mr. Hooker asserts by Scripture and Reason, Laws of God and man, the Supremacy of Sovereign Princes, such as the Kings of England are by Law, as to all Supreme and executive power Ecclesiastical, or Civil jurisdiction in Church and State, both against all Papal claim and usurpation, which was the old terriculament of Christian Kings and Emperors; also against all popular and Presbyterian invasions; who possessed with the same spirit of ambition (as unbecoming Christian people and Preachers, as Prelates) have found out new notions, phrales and machinations, at once to cheat the Christian and incautious world; also to ruine flourishing Churches and Kingdoms, with their Kings and Bishops, under pretence of setting up the Throne, Kingdom, Discipline and Government of Jesus Christ; which must be first moulded in these mens odde fancies, and then managed by their rude hands, as great Masters forsooth in our Israel, and sole Dictators of all Laws and Government both in Church and State, if they can but any way get power into their hands, answerable to the pride and ambition of their hearts; who like fishes, onely live by providence, and swim down the stream of success, but presently expire, when once these fail, and they are cast on dry ground.

The sum and design of the eighth book.



Mr. Hookers  
design de-  
clared: by  
himself.

The Venerable Author of these eight Books, had formerly given the world an account of his design in each of them: Of which, five have many year been extant in publicque; the last three were thought to have been never finished, and to be sure, they have been for many ages suppressed; which are now come to light, after our late long troubles (as some buried Statues, and hidden Monuments are oft discovered by Earthquakes:) Such as they are, it is thought meet to present them to the Readers, each of them is by learned Criticks judged to be genuine, or Authentick, though possibly not so compleat and exact as the curious Author intended: The seventh book, by comparing the writing of it with other indisputable Papers, or known Manuscripts of Mr. Hookers, is undoubtedly his own hand throughout: The eighth is written by another hand (as a Copy) but interlined in many places with Mr. Hookers own characters, as owned by him.

The genui-  
ness of the  
three last  
books.

The best and surest test of the genuineness or legitimacy of these three now added Books, will be the weight, or learned solidity of the matter; also the grave, but eloquent and potent manner of handling each subject, there being nothing in Mr. Hookers Writings either trivial, or plebeian and vulgar: Nor is it easie to emaculate or counterfeits either his stile, method, or notions: This only may be suspected (as is said) that in some places he had not put too his last politiking, or consummating hand; yet as in the rougher bevvn parts of a well figured Statue, one may see in them the grandeur of the design, and majesty of the lineaments, even through the unpoliter skin which yet hangs as a mist or cloud over them.

The grand,  
useful  
subjects  
handled in  
the three  
added books

To be sure, the subjects he undertook in these three last Books are very noble, and deserved to be amply handled, as indeed they are: Nor is it to be doubted, but they will, by Gods blessing, contribute much to the restoring and establishing of that Ecclesiastical Order, ancient Polity, meet Jurisdiction, and necessary Peace, which is truly Christian, and which was in the way of Episcopacy, most primitive and Catholick in this, and all famous Churches, until the affected novelties, or fatal necessities of latter times tempted some Christians and Churches to vary from all Antiquity; which the piety and prudence of the Church of England never yet did, as judging such innovations neither just, nor safe, nor expedient, for its honor and happiness, nor yet for Gods glory, or the repute of the Christian and Reformed Religion; whose aim ever was, and is, to recover and restore the grateful forms of venerable and decayed Antiquity, but not to reproach or utterly ruine them, under pretence of pairing off some accretions or superfluities, which time possibly had brought upon the Beauty and Order of Christs Church, which is always adorned with modesty and humility, no less then veracity and innocency: Nor may it, without great uncharitableness, be suspected of the Spouse of Christ, the Church Catholick, that either it omitted or falsified any point of saving Doctrine; or that it degenerated and failed in so great a concern of Order, Peace, and Charity, as this of Church Government, which it had received (by way of Episcopal Precedency) from the Apostles; and so ever retained it both in judgement and practice, by as clear a use, and exemplary a constancy, as it did observe either in the Canon of the Scripture, or the Baptism of Infants, or the observation of the Lords day; whose Precepts are not so precise or punctually evident in Scripture, as their practice is in the Churches use, agreeable to the general tenor and analogy of the Scripture; and not to be derced by any but sawcy and Phanatick fancies, who had rather run their heads against this Pillar and ground of Truth, the Churches undoubted veracity and constancy, then fairly read those evident Characters which are to be seen in the Doctrine it ever maintained, and in the practice which it had constantly used: Nor doth any thing so baffle the most impudent and canting novelty, as the universal prejudice of Antiquity, which certainly was as faithful a Keeper of the meaning and minde of God in Scripture, as of the Letter, or Books in which it was written.

Mr. Hookers  
trials, or mo-  
ral exercises.

Having thus given some account of Mr. Hookers Works, as to the studying, composing and writing part of his life; my second undertaking is to set forth his Asceticks, or Athleticks, his (as it were) agonies or sufferings; at least the exercises and foils of his other excellent gifts and graces; for his Moral and Christian Vertues, were answerable to his intellectual endowments; the whole man was raised to a very great height; not his head lofty, and his heart debased, as high hills, whose tops are raised up to heaven, but their foundations are in the valleys;

are in the valleys; or as ricketly bodies with great heads, and weak limbs: But as *Moses* his hands, when they were lifted up, so were his actions and his sufferings too, both exercises and exaltations of his great abilities.

And here I cannot but observe from the *trials* and *temptations* which adventured to attack this learned and godly person, that no goodness is so *innocent*, no, virtue so *unspotted*, no piety so venerable, but they shall finde some *envy* to malign, and some enmity to molest them, as they did Mr. *Hooker*; after his Life and labours came to be most conspicuous.

It was indeed a matter, not of displeasure and regret so much as of just rejoycing, to see those publique *Antipathies* and *Batteries*, which like waves of the Sea, more importuned the peace and honor of the Church of England, that they did fall upon so *firm a Rock*, so solid and *invincible a Defence*; whose Learning was equal; yea exceeding the best of its Opponents; whose unblameable life was inferior to none of them; his *Intellectuals* as sublime, his *Morals* as pure, his *Spirituals* as Divine, and *Politicals*, as more *prudent*, so more *obedient*; that in attacking Mr. *Hooker*, they met with their *match* in all, and their Superior in many things; they not onely encountered great Learning, but they dashed themselves against a profound and solid judgement; they affronted Gravity, they opposed Wisdom, and sought to shake or discompose a most orderly and harmonious soul; which they found by their sad experience to their *cost*, and too late repented, that they had provoked such a *Giant* as he was to undertake the cause of this Church; which if he had lived to finish and set forth in his own accurate form, certainly no man had led a more ample *Triumph*, or had seen more Conquerors and *Captives* to follow his *Triumphant Pen*; some joyfully partaking in his Victory over their own Prejudices and errors; others unable to resist the strength of his reason, continued *Prisoners* to their own Passions and parties, rather then have their share in that rational and ingenuous freedom which he proposed to them.

Mr. *Hooker* compared with his Antagonists.

In this publique and long contest, which he maintained, like some of *Dauids Worthies*, against whole *Armies and Legions of Opposites*, his purpose and happiness was to assert the Church of England, both in its Constitution, and Legal Execution; as to Ecclesiastical Laws and Canons, Orders and Offices, together with its *Discipline and Government*; that in the main of matter and form, end and use, they were very Christian and commendable, pious and prudent; nothing in them justly *scandalous* or blameable, much less dangerous or *damnable*; yea, that upon the whole view and design, things were settled with very great charity and discretion, considering the proportions of those men, and times, and things, from which *Reformation* first began, and through which it had been with some vicissitudes carried on, before it came to so far and full a *consistency*: In all which, some lesser things were not onely tolerable and allowable, but so far useful and desirable, as they contributed much to a publique closing of *Fractions*, or at least hindered greater *Ruptures*, *Schismes* and *Dissensions*, in matters of greater weight.

The piety, prudence, &c. charity of the first Reformers vindicated.

It was fit at first to condescend somewhat to the use of such things, in themselves not evil, nor yet morally good; not for the necessity or Sanctity of them, but onely for the long use and custom of them among the people; who would not have had the just Reformation, in the grand *Points and Essentials* of it, so much in esteem and veneration, if they had without any Reason or Religion, been forced to forgo all those decent Rites, and innocent Ceremonies, to which they had been long accustomed; without which, as a good face without hair on its head, the *Reformed Religion* would have appeared bald and uncomely, though it might have Health, and good Symmetry.

After all things had been duly scanned, judiciously approved, and legally settled, by the Wisdom of Sovereign *Princes*, *Parliaments*, and *Convocations*; after they had been highly applauded by Learned and Godly men both at home and abroad; yea, after they had for some years been blessed of God, and prospered with all Temporal and Spiritual Blessings, with Peace, Plenty, and Piety,

The mischief of alteration where things are once well settled.

he then justly and fully concludes against the itch of all *Innovations*; that there no *Moral* or *Political* necessity could be alledged, for daily unsettling and altering of things so once well settled, meerly under the colours and clamours of some petty *Reformation* in things of *Outward Form, Circumstance, or Ceremonies*; or in some Words, Phrases, and Expressions; where the change required, was not from any thing *absolutely evil*, or precisely forbidden of God; nor yet to any thing *positively good*, as punctually commanded or required by his Holy Word; but onely from that which seemed not so good, to that which seemed better in some private mens apprehensions; and these not onely the fewer for number, but far inferior in all eminency, either *Civil* or *Ecclesiastical*: Which imaginary amendment of things that were judged to be good, and settled as most convenient, by Publique, Supreme, and Authoritative Wisdom, cannot in Reason or Religion be a sufficient motive to mutation, nor any way counterpoise the danger of such easie alterations; which do not onely very much diminish the Majesty of any Government, but weaken the Authority, shake the Foundation, and expose the very Legislative power to every pragmatick spirit, and fanciful noveller; cutting every moneth, or week, or day those banks, which long experience and use had raised and preserved, purposely to keep out those inundations which press upon all settled States and Churches, from those Springs of novelizing, which do rise in most mens inventions; and which by self love and admiration are encreased, as Rivulets, in their progress to those fountains; which first seek to break in by pious importunities, weeping over corruption of Church and State, as *Ishmael* did over the captivity, until they get such advantages, as may give not onely colour, but countenance to their ambitious threats and insolencies, which march under the Banner of Religion and Reformation, undecerned by vulgar eyes, until the mischiefs in the bottom of these Reformations, discover themselves to be be far worse then any thing, for the amendment of which they are so cruelly eager and importune.

Of these publique Agonies which exercised Mr. Hookers minde and pen so long, and so happily, his Works will give the best and amplest account; there the Reader will see what Weapons Offensive and Defensive, either *Scriptural* or *Rational* he used; what strength he collected and employed; what Auxiliary Forces from ancient Authorities he made use of; what skill and vigilancy he applied in all parts; with what courage and constancy he kept his ground, or station, against all opposition; defending, though it were but a field of *Lentils*, as *Shamab*, one of *David's* Worthies did, 2 Sam. 23. 11. against many hundreds of the *Philistines*; when not the profit or value of the things (being but a few mutable *Rites, outward Forms, and Ceremonies*) were so considerable, but the Authority of the Law, the Majesty of Government, also the Safety, Sanctity, and Unity of the Church; together with that *Loyal Duty*, Courage and Constancy which he, as a Christian member of the Church, no less then a Subject of his Prince did owe to the honour of his Sovereign, also to the Churches, and to his Countreys Peace, yea more then these, to his Religion, God and Saviour: To all which, these men will never be faithful in great things, who are not so in small; for from the presumption to cut off the skirt, or lap of the Churches Garment, men easily rise to higher insolencies: Such as were opposite to Ceremonies, at last destroyed Liturgies, Episcopacy, Kings and Bishops, Church and Kingdom.

The joynt cause therefore of all Interests Civil and Sacred, was resolutely undertaken, and valiantly maintained by this excellent Person, who had as much cool and sober valour as any man living; nor giving way to the Churches Enemies, *Perturbers, Calumniators*, no not for an hour; nor enriching them with one *shoalatchet*: And this he did with as much more justifiable rigor and pertinacy, then those men, on the other side, who made such popular pretensions of strictness, that not one hoof must be left in Egypt; that all must be after the pattern in the Mount; that Christ, as a Son, was more faithful then *Moses*, and so had preficed every pin of the Evangelical Tabernacle; every punctillio and circumstance in Religion: Hence they drive amain against all things of indifferencies, against any imposed form, or outward ceremonies for Order, Uniformity, and Decency, so saving Religion from



from all the excrescencies of superstition (as they called all that was not of Sacred Institution) till they had brought Reformation to be not onely *undecent*, and *deformed*, but *rude* and *ridiculous*; expecting that this Tree of Publique and Solemn Devotion should bear better fruits, when it was quite *peeled of its bark*, and *stripped of its leaves*; when nothing should be left either for defence or decency, for Reverence or Solemnity, which is a kinde of *sensible Sanctity*, in our outward or bodily Worship of God.

In which to be negligent or *rude*, *slovenly* or *unmannerly*, *antick* or *fanatick*, is a sort of *prophaness*: Here private affectations are not onely a degree of folly, but madness, since both Reason and Religion command us by common dictates in all mankind, *vereri numen*, outwardly to reverence the Divine Glory in his Sanctuaries, and to conform to the publique customs not contrary to Gods Word: Nor is the simplicity of the Gospel here to be pleaded in such a sense as some men intend, which is to run all things of outward Administration, and social Profession, to a kinde of Bacchinal riot, and rustick confusion: when the Simplicity of the Gospel is meant onely of such a sincere, unmixed, and uncorrupted way of worshipping God, as neither adds nor detracts ought in point of necessary duties, or of the integral and essential points of Religion; which must ever be punctually commanded by the Word of God, and founded upon a special Divine Institution, without any additional of the same kinde and degree, or that are expressly contrary to the Word of God, as that is of worshipping the true God by any way of erroneous imagination, or Image-Adoration, which is prone to debase the Majesty of the Divine Nature; and that Spirituality which ought to be in all our Devotions, as the very life and soul of them, without which the outward formality, with never so much pomp and ceremony, is but a dead carcass, not onely unacceptable, but an Abominable Sacrifice to the Living God.

Besides all these, which were *publique Contests* (in which he did *ad seipsum & imperium*) quit himself like a man, and came out more then Conqueror, in the judgement of all that were impartial, and able Spectators (that is, diligent Readers of his Books of Ecclesiastical Polity) the good man had other notable tryals, more personal and private, which fell between him and one Mr. Travers at the Temple (one of the Inns of Court so called) not onely upon the general distance of their parties, as conform, or not, to the Church of England; for which each of them there stood as Sentinel or Standard-bearer; but from a kinde of Natural Antipathy of their spirits and tempers: Both magnetical, but differing as much as the North and South points of the Loadstone, or Terrella: So that when they came to stand in the same Point, or Pulpit, they easily grew to a kinde of Jostling or Duel, even to an emulation and envy; if not in their Persons, yet in their opinions and Partisans.

Mr. Hooker was there settled by the care of the Archbishop Whigist, and the Authority of the Queen, to preach in the forenoon as Master or Guardian of the Temple; Mr. Travers was popularly chosen by the Society, to be Lecturer in the afternoon; a man of esteemed piety and good learning, but warping to the Disciplinary party, or Non-conformity, wherewith many Lawyers and other Gentlemen were then leavened; not so much out of judgement and conscience, as out of a secret kinde of envy and Rivalry, which had always been nourished by many of that long Robe, or practitioners of the common Law, against the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction and Church Government, hoping that the stream of their gain and practice would run stronger to drive their mills, if all causes were wholly diverted from the channell of the Episcopal Courts, or Ecclesiastical Jurisdictions, to their Bars.

Here Mr. Hooker did not so much summon up his courage and valour, as exercise his candor and patience: Though there was no compare between the amplitude of their Learning, and latitude of their real abilities; yet Mr. Hooker meekly suffered himself to be eclipsed and undervalued in comparison of Mr. Travers: If the paucity of vulgar hearers when Mr. Hooker preached, and the frequency or crowd when Mr. Travers, were the competent Judge and discrimination of their worth, Mr. Hookers Sermons were as some rougher coyn, good gold, and full weight, but not of so fair and smooth a stamp to vulgar eyes and hands as Mr. Travers.

The one had more of Geometrical, the other of Arithmetical proportions: They were as musical Harmonies, which are made up, some by Unisons, others by deeper

The contests between Mr. Hooker and Mr. Travers at the Temple.

Mr. Hookers meekness

Their different veins in preaching.

Antiphonie

*Antiphonies* or correspondencies of sounds, that are *Disapsons* to the other: Mr. Travers was a more plausible and profitable Preacher to vulgar Auditors, as well as more popular; having much more of the *Oratorian* decoy, a pleasing voice, a pathetic pronounciation, and an insinuating fashionior gesture, to captivate his Auditors, by his agreeable presence, vigorous speech, and grateful activity: Nor were his Texts and matter usually ill chosen, or impertinently or dully handled, upon practical heads and Common-places of Divinity. Both had honest hearts, and good heads: Mr. Hooker was more profound, and the other more fluent: Different gifts they had from the same Spirit, for several uses of the Church, to the same end of Gods glory, and souls good, though in different ways of Ministrations.

Mr. Hooker was a deeper, but silter stream; running, as more slowly and quietly, so with some obscurity and dulness to common Auditors; so confident of the sacred power and efficacy of the matter he delivered, that he thought it needed no great setting off: This made him so far from any life in his looks, gestures or pronounciations, that he preached like a living, but scarce moving statue: His eyes stedfastly fixed on the same place from the beginning to the end of his Sermons; his body unmoved, his tone much to an Unisone, and very unemphatick; so variously doth God distribute his gifts, not lading all in one bottom.

Mr. Travers had the broader sails, the fairer wasteloaths, and larger streams: Mr. Hooker had the ampler bold, the truer Compass, the richer lading, and the firmer rudder. Both were good ships, and well built, though of different moulds; and both might make good voyages, arriving at last to the same fair Haven of Heaven.

But (as Paul and Silas, in their earthly pilgrimage) took several voyages: The face of Mr. Hooker was toward Jerusalem, the Church of England; Mr. Travers was as if he came from, or would go to Samaria, Geneva, Amsterdam or Edinburgh: At last the contention grew so sharp, and the Scholastick fowls so hot, that this fire from the Temple brake out to more publique flames; so far, as to engage many persons both in City and Countrey, yea in the Queens Court and Council: Some were for Paul, others for Apollos. Their persons were not so much at odds, nor drew Disciples after them, as the cause which either of them had espoused, and were now publicly engaged for as chief Champions: This drew Spectators, Abettors and Admirers of each mans person, parts, opinions and practices, according as mens mindes being touched or pointed by their affections, prejudices and interests did incline them.

Their different Tenents as to the Church of Rome.

In one point they were most openly Diametrous, Mr. Hooker affirming and proving the Church of Rome to be, though not a pure, sound and perfect Church, yet a true one, in which the necessary and fundamental means of salvation are preserved, but much diseased and obscured by superstitious Superstructures, to the great danger of peoples souls and detriment, as well as dishonor of Christian Religion, in its holy Institutions, Morals and Mysteries. Mr. Travers (on the other side) earnestly contended against the Church of Rome, as no Church of Christ, but wholly a Synagogue of Satan, and the seat of Antichrist, denying salvation to all those that held communion with her: Thus charity in the one, and zeal in the other (both Christian and commendable Graces) carried them further from each other: The first thought that the abuse of humane Superstition, did not null or vacate the use and vertue of Divine Institutions; that no mens usurpations upon any Churches, can preclude Gods right and property to them, while his Gospel and Sacraments are in any kinde among them: The policies and corruptions of the Roman Court, did much overlay, but not quite smother to death, the Truth and Church of Christ which was among them; as gold may be among much dross, which the great Refiner at last would so distinguish and separate, as not to destroy one with the other, but save those Roman Christians, whose profession brought them to true faith in Jesus Christ, to repentance from sin, and holy obedience to the Gospel, notwithstanding that in many things, by reason of prejudice and education, they were ignorant of, and so enemies to some truths professed in the Reformed Churches.

But Mr. Travers was for no quarter to be given to the Romanists, condemning one and all, the simple and the malicious, the sincere and the hypocritical; breaking at once all the bruised reeds, quenching the smoking flax, which may be in many of the plain and simpler hearted-Papists, who wilfully detain no truth in unrighteousness,

ness, but believe, love and obey those truths of the Gospel which are there set forth, after their way and fashion; and may not in charity be thought wholly to lose their enlightning, converting, sanctifying and saving efficacy, especially when the power of Gods Spirit may supply Humane defects and infirmities in humble and honest hearts.

This one Capital Controversie, drew after it a long tail of all Controversies between the Reformed and Roman parties. Mr. Hookers milde temper (as mens constitutions have great influence over their Religions, Opinions, and Consciences) studied by all safe condescensions to invite to union, and to heal those great and justly deplored breaches in the Christian and Western World; the accommodation or close of which, many learned men have endeavoured. Mr. Travers being of a more hot and choleric complexion, was for fire to come down from Heaven and destroy them all: The blessed God, whose equal and just hand holds the Balance of the Sanctuary without any varying, weighing impartially all mens Affections, Actions and Opinions, knows how to sever the charity of the one, and the zeal of the other, from their personal infirmities: These his mercy will pardon, and the other his bounty will reward.

When the conflagration grew too flaming and publique (agitated by the breath of men of quality on either side) both of them were brought before the Queen and Council, who sought to take up the controversie, and allay that (aquaria) transport, to which either might be carried, if not beyond truth (which commonly lies in the midst between the extreams of mens passions and disputes) yet beyond the peace of the Church, and that charity which is due to the Publique, to which all disputes and opinions, yea all gifts and graces must vail, and come under the lee; except onely those which are constitutive of a Church, which are not very many, and of which few Christian Churches in the world (I believe) are, or ever were wholly destitute: Each hath enough of sovereign Medicines to cure the maladies of their souls, if they would on all hands, Bishops, Ministers and People, use discreet Applications, and not trouble themselves too much with Superstructures and Impertinencies: Nor is it improbable, but whereever there is such means of Grace offered, as for neglect of it, men will be damned; so there is also so much, by the right use of which, men may be saved.

At last prudent Applications and time (*magnus rerum Domitor*) the great tamer of all our juvenile confidences, heights and heats of spirit (which makes us always impatient to be worsted, and ambitious to have the victory and dominion over all men, rather then our selves) cooled the calentures on both sides; chiefly by parting the Antagonists, and placing them in several stations: Mr. Hooker was by his worthy and deserving Patron Archbishop Whitgifts means, removed to another place of less envy, and more privacy in Kent, being loth to have so excellent a light too much wasted, by its standing too long in the blaze and wind: At distance they grew nearer to each other in their mutual good esteem and affections; each of them, as occasion offered, professing an high value of the other.

There was no gift or grace more eminent in Mr. Hooker, then that Mosaicke work of a meek and smooth temper, free from the roughness of rancor and malice: Though he were shaken by disputes, and much agitated by peevish controversies, yet like a vial of clear water, he discovered no soil of uncharitableness at the bottom; which testimony all his Writings do verifie, being as a two-edged sword very bright and weighty, good mettall, and sharp-edged, doing its work without any bluntness or raggedness; yet without any ponit or pungency, by way of personal reflexions, or Satyrick bitterness: He writes as intent to the cause and subject matter, not to the quality or infirmity of the person; keeping to that Golden saying in his Preface, *There will come a time when three words uttered with Charity and Meekness, will receive a far more blessed reward, then Three Thousand Volumes Written with Disdainful Sharpness of Wit.*

And no less calm, after the quick Paroxysms of some juvenile and popular passions were breathed out and allayed by Grace and Experience, was Mr. Travers towards Mr. Hooker: Though they misunderstood each other in lesser matters, yet they corresponded in the main of sound Doctrine, and Holy life; like generous Rivals, they honored and loved what they saw good in one another; what seemed otherways, they either pardoned, excused, or in charity supplied. Hence that very worthy



speech of Mr. Travers, when being asked what he thought of some vile assertion cast upon Mr. Hooker? he answered, *In truth I take Mr. Hooker to be a very holy man.*

A vile and horrible plot against Mr. Hooker's honor.

As indeed he was in word and deed; yet wanted there not a Devil so impudent, as not daring to tempt him, yet dared to hamper him, as it were, with that sin, from which no man was more severely free, *unspotted, and unsuspected.* Some well advised men of former years have told me, that it was thought by some to have been a plot and practice laid by some of Mr. Hookers and the Church of England's more cowardly Enemies, who were wont to bark against all in their *scurrilous Pamphlets*, thus by thus blasting Mr. Hookers reputation, to discredit the glory of his excellent Writings, with which the wiser and better world was then so greatly and justly taken.

Hence (they say) a design was laid (as of old against the great *Athanasius*) that he should be assaulted by an impudent Woman, as he was diverting in the fields near London: Her presence and speech was presently seconded by a man as base as her self, who came in as Mr. Hooker was talking with the woman, and challenged her for his wife: Together they threaten the good man, to accuse him of whatever *shameless Villany* could invent, to scare his pious and thus surprized simplicity, that so he might be wrought upon to redeem his reputation and honor, by such moneys as they now demanded of him.

He (good man) amazed at this unwonted and most unwelcome encounter, and finding that it amounted no higher then his purse, with much blushing for their *shameless demands and demeanor*, and with a most innocent simplicity, gives them what money he had about him, that he might be rid of them at any rate: They unsatisfied with that small pittance he gave them, insolently demanded more: They renew and encrease their threatnings; he willing by any means to get free of these *Hornets*, promised them the sum they demanded, appoints them to come to his lodging, and there made good his word, hoping at once to silence them, and to be quit of their further importunity.

These Wretches finding the facility and fear of this Holy man to render him so malleable, rather then he would fall under such vile and desperate calumnies, frequent his lodging once in ten days continually, draining as Leeches, what money he had, and more then he could well spare; yet he gently parted with it, that he might conceal and conquer, if possible, they Villany. After these evil spirits had for some moneths haunted him, by chance, or rather by good Providence, there comes to his Chamber while one or both of these Imps were there, a noble Friend of Mr. Hookers, Sir Edwin Sands (one of the sons of that famous Archbishop of York, who was so happy in the learning and good fortunes of all his sons: ) This Knight seeing so inauspicious Attendants with the good man, like Satan standing at the right hand of Joshua the High Priest, demanded of him when they were gone, what unsuitable society these were whom he met in his Chamber, who looked so impudently and ugly, one as a Bawd, the other as a Pander.

Mr. Hooker very mildly replied, with some sadness and dejection, beyond his ordinary serenity, That they were poor people, who came to him for some relief. The committing looks of the Varlets, and the manner of Mr. Hookers answer, occasioned the more inquisitive curiosity in his Noble Friend, who was jealous of some cheat or imposture put upon the innocent simplicity of Mr. Hooker, who had more of the Dove then Serpent; replying therefore with some quickness upon him; he desired a more exact account of that riddle, which seemed to be in his relieving persons, who had so little to invite charity in their very meen and presence: At last, after some faint reserves, Mr. Hooker was won freely to tell him the concealed, but costly Tragedy of his first encounter; what captivity, as to his fame and fears, he had been in; what use, or abuse rather, these Miscreants and Monsters had made of his civil and enforced Charity, which had impoverished his goodness, to enrich their wickedness.

Sir Edwin Sands with infinite indignation and disdain, hearing of this mystic of Iniquity, resolves speedily to disincubate the good man of such evil Spirits; he makes an appointment so, that the next time one or both of the Harpies came, he might be sent for: Which was done, and two Constables (as Exorcists) brought with him; who

How Mr. Hooker was freed from that injury and indignity in which he was captivated.

who, without much ado, meeting with those *Comrades*, seize on them both, carry them to the next *Justice*, cause them to be examined apart, finde them in so grossly and contradictions, that they were both sent to the *Purgatory of Bridewell*. One of them impatient of so uneasy a lodging and penance, confesseth all their execrable design and practice. At last, these *Vipers* which had so long seized on the good mans hand, fell off without any further harm to him, save the drawing some money from him, and some little whisperings of his enemies, when they had got that report by the end, which the more ingenuous were ashamed to hear of, and abhorred to believe.

Others were wholly defeated, as to their hopes of gaining some repute to their worsted cause, by the disrepute of such a person, whom all the learned and sober World looked now upon with so much Veneration, as one that had an unquestioned conquest over both *Papists* and *Catharists*, having battered the pretended Conformity of the Church of Rome, as to their novel Errors and Traditions, while he vindicated the Conformity of the Church of England, both with the Word of God, and the primitive Churches examples.

This strange Narrative I was loth to omit (whereof Mr. Fuller gives some little obscure touch) but I have long since in my youth heard it at large from persons of credit: If I fail in some circumstances of it, yet for the substance it is that which all agree to, That the Devil had a prank to play upon this excellent Person, but he laid his scene so unsly, and had such unlikely Allors, that he lost his design; nor did any other evil befall Mr. Hookers innocency, then what is prone to light on those whose simplicity may invite Temptation, but their sanctity fortifies them against all evil impressions: He was so good, that he knew not how to resist evil but by well-doing; and chose rather to suffer silently, then rashly to hazard his good name by any more brisk vindication of himself, or open contestation with so odious and impudent a Devil: Against the assaults of which, no defence is so sure in point of Conscience, as that of Joseph, the fear of sinning against God; and nothing so great a compurgation for a mans reputation, as the constancy of his former unspotted conversation, no man easily degenerating to so great sins, who hath long kept at distance from them: And however such *Flesh-flies* sent by *Belzebub*, may be sometime suffered to appear in the Temple, and to light on the Sacrifices of God (chaste and unspotted souls) yet they are never permitted to fly-blow, taint and infect them so as to pollute their Consciences, or much deface their credit; God in time pleading their cause by ways of Providence not ordinary, making their Righteousness to shine forth as the Sun out of mists and clouds, with the greater lustre: Nor is there any Defensive so firm against the assaults of good mens honor, as the integrity of their mindes and manners before God.

The impudence of the Devils temptations.

*Vivendum est recte, cum propter plurima, tum hoc  
Ut discas linguas contemnere mancipiorum.*

As the fruits of Vertue are many, fair and sweet to the Conscience, so the very leaves of it, as to credit, are both a great shelter and ornament.

Other more private or personal accounts of Mr. Hookers own observations and experiences, I have none to offer to the World; having never gained any such materials of his more retired life from any man, and least of all from his own pen: His native modesty and humility not permitting him to record any thing of himself, lest he should seem to glory, either in his abilities or infirmities; not but that I think it would be much to the advance of Gods glory, and the good of posterity, if (as in all other Arts and Sciences, the notable experiments of learned men give great advantages) in this practical part of private Piety, eminent Persons (such as Mr. Hooker was) would leave the World so much of their Pictures, as might well consist with the modest gravity, yea severity of Christian Vertues and Graces, which are not bound wholly to hide and veil their beauties, for fear of affectation or vain-glory; but let their light so shine before men, that they may have cause to glorifie their heavenly Father; which was the design of that excellent Father S. Augustine, who hath enriched the World with those fair glasses of his Confessions, Retractions and Soliloquies, which give us as it were a prospect into the very inside of so Learned, Holy,

The want of Mr. Hookers private materials.

and Devout a man; who after various agitations of body and soul, where he almost made shipwreck of both, he was happily reduced by Gods grace, from wantonness both Carnal and Spiritual, from Manichean opinions, and sensual pleasures, after many Conflicts, to embrace a most holy and strict life, as a good Christian, and a most excellent Bishop.

Certainly (as *Pancirolla* observes in Art and Nature, many things in the greater world of excellent use, are lost and buried in oblivion, for want of such particular Records as might best preserve them: So the works of God in his gracious and particular dispensations to the lesser world, mens persons, as to their souls and bodies, many things might (if registred by wise Observators of themselves or others) be added to the Treasury of Gods glory, and the stock of others improvement: After the rare pattern of *Marcus Aurelius*, who opens his breast to all Spectators, that they might see by his Writings, what his Principles were as to Piety, Vertue, Gratitude, and Honor toward God and Man; also what his conscientious reflections were upon the review of his actions and experiences, in so great a sphere of life and liberty, as that was of the Roman Empire: In which he exceeded all that went before or after him; not so much in the latitude and tranquillity of his Empire, as in that happy and absolute Dominion his Reason and Natural Religion kept above his Senses, Passions, and Affections.

Nor have there been wanting great examples of Learned and Pious men in this kinde; who (as *Franciscus Junius*) have been the Historians of their own lives, being best able to give a true and impartial account of things, free from vain-glory and envy, being best acquainted with the pulse of their own hearts, and events of their lives: Doubtless, in so rich a mine as Mr. Hooker, was besides the works of a publique interest and proportion with which he hath blessed the Church of England, there were many other gems and varieties wherewith he might have enriched the World.

But I must not repine at modest and humble mens self-concealments; nor is it fit to be curiously inquisitive after them, where they thought best to be reserved, it being a part of incivility unlimited, to follow any man to his closet: Onely this I cannot but occasionally note, that if *Astrological* observations made of the Stars and Planets in their several Aspects and Motions, are worthy of so Learned mens waking hours, diligent eyes, and accurate pens (such as were *Ptolomy*, *Alphonso*, *Tiebohrabe*, *Kepler*, *Briggs*, and others) doubtless there might be no less useful observations made and communicated to the World, of the various Aspects and Correspondencies between Gods Spirit and our own; provided they be taken, not by fanastick Astrologers, who take every Blazing-star, or Meteore for a fixed Light in the Firmament, or Heaven of the soul; but by godly, wise, and serious persons, who judge of heavenly motions, not by occasional Apparitions, but by habitual or constant holy dispositions, consonant to the clearest lights of Precepts and Promises in the Word of God.

3 OF Mr.  
Hookers pre-  
ferments in  
the Church  
of England,

But I apply my self to the third Head I proposed in writing Mr. Hookers Life; which is, To take a short view of his Preferments in the Church, where he deserved so well. Here the shadow of this Pyramide was not proportionable to his Dimensions and Height; either for his abilities or eminent Services and Merits.

The steps of his preferments were but few and easie, never to any great height: He moved oft indeed, but was not much promoted at last: Not that he wanted either desert, or friends both able and willing, who knew to value and reward his worth; but they chose (as it seems) rather to make use of his abilities in ways more suitable to them, then to put him beyond that Sphere, to which they saw his modest genius most disposed him; who was more devoted to a useful and laborious latency, then to a troublesome and envied eminency: His Ambition was rather to do good things, then enjoy great: He was so far from affecting Honor, and then cumulating Plurality of Livings, and adding to them Ecclesiastical Dignities, beyond what any one or two men can with good conscience discharge or enjoy, that I finde he contented himself, as with one living at a time, and one or two Prebendaries at most, so with the onely degree of Mr. of Arts; for so all his subscriptions run, not so much as Bachelor in Divinity, that I can find; I am sure not Doctor in any faculty, though well learned in all that became a great Scholar and good Divine.



Nor can I here charge the age in which he lived of *Envy* or *Ingratitude* to him (though this be frequent, especially in times when pragmatick and partial activity, makes a prey of Ecclesiastical Dignities and Preferments, still crowding out those that are the most meritorious, modest, and consciencious;) but I will impute the mediocrity of his advancements, to the aptitude he had rather for teaching than governing, and for writing than ruling: To be sure, it is a great part of Publick Wisdom, so to employ and prefer men, as they are adapted to dutie; not to put *Saul's* Armour on those shoulders which are less fit to bear or manage them: Every Bird flies best with its own feathers, and in its own sphere.

His first *Publick* rise was (as I have touch'd) to be Fellow of *Corpus Christi* Colledge in *Oxford*; a preferment that seems very desirable to young Masters of Art, and is much to their advantage, if they remove not too soon, and if they seriously improve their time and talents; and lastly, if they stay not over-long, till they have contracted a morose and supercilious habit of manners, fancying that to be an Empire, and settled condition, which is indeed but a kinde of Apprentiship, or preparation for more publick and grand employments, which render Learning and Scholars both more sociable and useful.

On this narrow pedestal, or basis of a Fellowship, stood this living Statue for some seven years, till the uneasiness of his small maintenance, and his willingness to go out to the wider World, invited him to accept the offer of a small Living called *Buscomb*, in the West; thence Anno 1584. he was removed to *Drayton Beauchamp* in *Lincolnshire*, no very great Benefice; Anno 1592. he had the Dignities of a *Prebendary* in *Salisbury*, and the *Subdeanry* bestowed on him; and by the Queen he was preferred to be *Master of the Temple*; that is, the publick Preacher in that great *Auditory*, which requires an excellent Preacher, and where he may well deserve an honorable maintenance; hence Anno 1594. he was removed to his last station, at *Bishopshorn* in *Kent*, and was made also *Prebend of Canterbury*, by the favour of the Archbishop *Whitgift*, whose valiant and able second he was in that *Consist*; which he so notably maintained against the *Disciplinarian* Faction, or the unruly *Non-conformists*.

This was the period of Mr. Hooker's promotion, much below indeed his merit, but adequate, it seems, to the reticements of his temper, and most suitable to the policies of those times, where Church Governors were to be rather active than contemplative spirits. And from this something rising, but not very high ground, did this excellent person take his ascent and rise to Heaven, the only preferment worthy of him.

4 Mr. Hooker's death.

After he had finished his course with joy, because with all good Conscience, fighting a good fight, both for the Faith and Peace of this Reformed Church, wasted not by age, so much as much study; dying with great comfort at his Parsonage in *Kent*, about fifty year old, in the year of our Lord 1599. says Mr. *Cambden*, in Anno 1603. says his Monument; so uncertain are the Chronological calculations of his Birth, Life, and Death, always living in a single life with all sanctity and severity; not onely unmarried, but unspotted; and more venerable for his chastity, then his celibacy.

I cannot finde upon search any Will he made; which makes me believe he made none; but while he lived was his own Executor, distributing his charity as occasion offered; and not deterring it, till by death it was turned to necessity, as good wines sometimes soure to Vinegar, for want of timely spending: like ill debtors, who never pay their debts, till the Bailly Arrests, and hales them to prison. I presume he had not much to give; onely his excellent Library was his Treasury, Armoury, and best Household-stuff, nor can I finde how that was disposed of: Other Furniture it is like he had, but very plain and little, as *S. Austin*, when he dyed, having like a good Husband, put his superfluity to usury, as soon as it came in, trusting God with repayment of what he credited to the poor, whose onely hand (not writing, but receiving) he had for the receipt, acknowledgement, and security of what he gave: Nor did it ill become Mr. Hooker thus to live, and thus to dye, with less incumbrance and care, having neither wife, nor childe, nor any kindred, whose eyes had failed for his charity till his death; he rather prevented them, and as he could spare it, spent it, not in Epicurism and Luxury, but in such a frugal

decency,

decency as best became him, his relations, his neighbours, and the poor: To these last, he thought he owed, and so paid more then to himself. His diet, as his apparel, plain, but decent: His entertainments hospitable, but Philosophical, yea Theological: His recreation, as to expensiveness, none; for he took pleasure in nothing so much as that by which he profited most, in study or discourse: He lived daily as in the *Confiner of Heaven*, and next door to *Death*, which is the porch of *Eternity*: He never had the levity of youth, much less the lubricity, being grave and good betimes; nor did he grow morose, or tetrical, or covetous, or ambitious, or proud with years, though crowned with the garlands of Applause, and the laurels of great Learning, yea with the fruits of noble and excellent Works: His humble soul was as a fruitful field, nothing elevated, when most enriched; or as the heavenly lights, satisfied with shining to others.

His Funerals.

His Funerals were solemnized with a kinde of *Victorious sorrow*, and *Triumphant grief*, by the frequency of many persons of Honor and Learning, besides the common people, who esteemed Mr. Hooker as *αἰὲν ἀθάνατος*, a common blessing or public good to all the Vicinity and Countrey; being accessible to all, ready to communicate any Counsel, Comfort, or Charity in his power: Persons of higher quality esteemed him as a *Tutelary Angel*; Divines, as an *Oracle* among them; all admired his Learning, more his Humility, and most of all his *Charity*: These at once to counterpoise the grief and bitterness of his loss, gloried in the works he had written, and the excellent example he had given to all Ministers, the more gifts and Learning they have, to be more humble and peaceable; while they also mourned unfeignedly for his immature departure, and deplored the publique privation of so useful a Person: Who was Religious, without affectation; Wise, without any notable mixture of folly: Grave, without any scorn or brow; Good, without any ostentation; Learned, without any extravagancy; Judiciously Conformable to the Church of *England*, without any either formality or restiveness; and loyal to his Sovereign, without any ambition or reservation.

He was interred in the Chancel of *Bishopshourn*, where a fair *Marble* and *Alabaster Monument*, no way violated or deformed in all our late years of confusion, such reverence even the Enemies of the Church of *England* had for Mr. Hooker's name and shrine; this I say, was long after in *Anno* 1634. erected to his deserving memory, with that *Effigies* and *Epitaph* you see in the Front of the Book, by Sir *William Cowper* of *Ratling-court* in the County of *Kent*, Knight and Baronet; whose pious gratitude thought nothing more worthy of his own honor, and the others virtue, then to express a thankful *Veneration* toward that Person, whom God had made his *Spiritual Father*, a means of his *Regeneration* and *Conversion* to Christ, by that Ministry of the Gospel, which Mr. Hooker dispensed in so still a voice and silent gesture, but with potent demonstrations of Scripture and Reason, which are the greatest virtue and efficaciousness of a Preacher, whose meer *Stentorian* noise, and *Theatrick* gesticulations in a Pulpit, serve more to amuse and scare, or to decoy or loundel the gaping, sleeping, or frightened people, then much to edifie, inform or amend them; the sweet and secret incubations, or hatchings of the blessed Spirit to the life of grace, being made on the souls of men, not by culinary and passionate heats, which scorch and dry; but by such heavenly and gentle influences, as carry a sweet temperament of light and warmth together, like the Suns beams in the Spring time: This one great instance sufficiently confutes that vulgar prejudice which many have against some calmer Ministers, as that they could never profit by their preaching, because they use not that vociferation and earnestness which others do, while they bait themselves, rather then pursue their Texts; as if mens hearts could never burn within them, till their ears do glow with a vehement noise, and a tearing kinde of Oratory; which many times like hail more then rain, makes a great rattling, but comes from a cold Region, and neither moistens nor enters. The surest way of profiting by any Preacher, is to weigh the Authority by which he preaches, and the matter which he delivers, by the Balance of the Sanctuary, right Reason, the Laws of the Land, and the Sacred Scriptures, as the Noble *Bereans* did when *S. Paul* preached to them; and not to be taken with any meer pomp or artifice of speech and pronuntiation, which no men have more accurate and affected, then

then those who like *Mountebanks* and *Grobianes*; set a popular pace; and are least in good earnest; whose interest it is, like *Herbicides* to hide the impurities of their bodies, by the flushness of their feathers; not to compensate the inward defect of real abilities by such pretty *pageants*; whereas the spiritual and moral goodness of the heart, depends wholly upon that divine illumination; which first duly informs the understanding, and so moves the Will from a content on the flesh, to a desire, love and delight in that good, which is thus aptly, agreeably conveyed to the rational soul. It is but a vulgar fallacy in some Ministers and People, to delight in that drink which runs out more to froth than good liquor; filling their minds with the windiness of empty notions, and airy opinions, rather than with any sanctity and solidity of saving wisdom; which grows out from one holy root, and is seldom either rightly plucked, or duly planted, but by such Preachers as have solid judgements, honest hearts, and humble spirits; which carried on by competent Ministerial Abilities, will do more at the years end, than all the *travellers* and *triflers* which some Ministers affect; as modest and frequent Showers do more advance the fruitfulness and growth of all things; than those violent storms which are not brought forth but with much wind, thunder and lightning: Ministers of Christ, as Ambassadors, must not be sheepish and discourteous, or discomposed in doing their Embassy; nor yet may they appear Thraconick and impudent, as if they had forgot not onely themselves, but the Majesty of their Master: the sanctity of their service, and that reverence they owe to the Church of Christ, met in his name and presence, whom they are soberly to serve, not rudely to affront.

Long before his Tomb or Inscription were made, there were some Elegant Epitaphs made and scattered, as flowers upon his Fragrant Heave: That of Corpus Christi Colledge I may not omit, which was sent to Sir William Comper, as the joynt testimony of their just sense of his worth, and their loss.

Honor done  
to Mr. Hooker's  
memory.

*Celeste labantis Atlas unicus,  
Et veritatis grande propugnaculum,  
Hic Magnus ille, Hookerus, hic magnus jacet:  
Integritatemq; & vitam piam  
Scientiamq; quanta novini data est,  
Atq; cunctis pectus incoctum bonis;  
Non marmor istud referat, non fardus lapis;  
Libri loquuntur, & volumen nobile,  
Authoris immortalis Monumentum sui:  
Quo Nummi vexata turpiter sacra,  
Ritusq; nullo jure spretos vindicat.  
Et, quæ volebat Schisma dirui, suo  
Veneranda Divum sana sustentat stylo;  
Qui sacra sic defendit, & Tempia omnia,  
Templis meretur ipse Monumentum omnibus.*

The sense of which lines, a little varied, Sir William Comper thus presented with a fair Monument, as an honorary of gratitude to his deceased and justly admired Friend, yea his Spiritual Father.

1 Cor. 4. 19. In Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the Gospel.

Though nothing can be spoke worthy his fame,  
Or the remembrance of that precious Name  
Judicium Hooker: Though this cost be spent  
On him, that hath a lasting Monument  
In his own Books; yet ought we to express,  
If not his worth, yet our respectfulness.  
Church Ceremonies he maintained; then why  
Without all Ceremony should he dye?

Was



Was it because his Life and Death should be  
 Both equal patterns of Humility?  
 Or that perhaps this onely glorious one  
 Was above all to ask, Why he had none?  
 Yet he that lay so long obscurely low,  
 Doth now prefer'd, to greater Honors go:  
 Ambitious men, learn hence to be more wise,  
 Humility is the true way to rise:  
 And God in me this Lesson did inspire,  
 To bid this humbleman, *Friend sit up bigger.*

WILLIAM CDWPER.

I have met also with another Paper, made I suppose, soon after his Death, as appears by the *Poetry*; which I will venture to the Readers candor, because what is wanting in the Elegancy of the Verse, is made up in the veracity of the matter.

The Character of Mr. Richard Hooker.

**T**He Painted Whore and Naked Matron be  
 Dislik'd, both Rome and her quite contrary:  
 He strove for Tythes, and Ceremonies too,  
 That so Christs Spouse might warm and decent go:  
 He gave her power, not to do what she pleas'd,  
 But took away the Sword, and left the Keys.  
 When brain-sick men-ruled to either hand,  
 He gave his judgement, bade them upright stand:  
 Having got out of Romes Pollution,  
 Crossing the way they now were posting on  
 Into a new extreme; he bade them stay,  
 And shew'd between each ditch the safest way.  
 He did Democracy and misrule hate,  
 And lov'd the Order both of Church and State.  
 If he attain what's aim'd at by his quill,  
 Kings shall be Kings, and Bishops, Bishops still.  
 He was nor Prince nor Bishop, yet did write,  
 Not to uphold his Fortunes, but their right:  
 Go read his Book; it will thee, if thou art  
 True Protestant, confirm; if not, convert.

These few collections I have made; probably many other private pens highly devoted to Mr. Hookers praises, and affected with his death, were then exercised in such like *Encomiastical Elegies*; all which the stream of Time hath carried out of sight. Publique *Threnodies* from either University, I never heard of, as to this subject, who deserved much more than many of those whom the sick and flattering *Muses* sometime sought to Deifie, living and dead; stooping so low (in our latter times) as to bring spices and sweet odours to the putid Carcasses, and worse Consciences of the most impudent Traitors, and flagitious Regicides in the world; yet these mens rotten names must (forsooth) be embalmed by the joynt tears of our degenerated Universities, which deserve to be waht with new ones; for to praise men of Blood, Hypocrisie and Cruelty, when dead, is as much to adopt the guilt of their sins, as to bid them *Godspeed* when living: Nothing is a more abject and insolent way of flattery, then to set the body of *Vertue*, which is Honor and Commendation, upon the Devils sclave; or to put the impress and matter of praise upon the Banner of *Schism* and *Sedition*.

The many  
 just Encomi-  
 ums of him.

It were endless to enumerate the many other high commendations given by men of eminent Learning and Piety to Mr. Hooker, when ever they made publique mention of him, or his works; counting it a kinde of *Sacriledge* to be silent of his merits, or to rob his good name of that fragraney which was in it, and reputation  
 due

due to it. Therefore I thought it a needless curiosity to muster up that cloud of witness, which have all either dropped down some Epithets and Titles of Honor, or showered larger Paragraphs, and whole Panegyrics upon Mr. Hooker. I will content my self with onely two at present, which are at hand, and under my eye.

One is Mr. *Cambden*, a Learned, Eloquent, and grave Historian of our own, in his *Annales* 42 of Q. *Eliz. Anno Dom. 1599*. This year, saith he, Mr. Richard Hooker rendered his soul to God: A Divine to be imitated for his Modesty, Temperance, Meekness, and other Vertues; famous for his manifold commendations in Learning, as his Books of Ecclesiastical Polity, set forth in English, and worthy to be turned into Latine, do abundantly testifie.

Mr. *Cambden*'s testimony of him.

The next is the late Learned and Eloquent, both Preacher and Professor in Divinity, Dr. Richard Holdsworth, a Confessor and Martyr in the late Persecution, who thus writes in his *Leſſ. 14*. *Hookerus magnus ille mysta, quem pro sanctissimo & modestissimo viro nostraq; doctrina conscia habendum esse, & inter nos Pontificii liberrime fateri non aspernantur.* The very Papists owned Mr. Hooker that profound Divine, to be one of many, the most Learned, Holy, and Modest of those that have asserted the Church of England, and Reformed Religion.

Dr. *Holdsworth*'s testimony.

But it is superfluous to cumulate commendations upon those whom none can disparage, without discovering their Ignorance, Envy, or Malice: As in nature the Sun and other things of known, useful, and publique excellencies, are (like Paragon Jewels) their own Heralds and Commentaries, though all tongues should be silent; so is it in some persons, the conspicuity of whose Authentick worth is such, that nothing can Eclipse it: And of this first three of men, of (Christians, of Divines, of Writers and of Livers, was this famous Mr. Hooker, a man of great modesty, a man of great piety, a man of great learning, who thought it very ingrate and impudent, rashly to disparage or desert the Religion chosen by his King and Countrey; especially when upon tryal he saw it to piouſly intent, and wholly conform (for the main) in all Faith, Mysteries, Morals, and Evangelicals, to the Word of God, and the Primitive Churches: He thought it became not onely Christian Charity, but common Modesty and humanity, for sons candidly to interpret the meaning of their Mother the Church, and thankfully to accept with the right hand, what was so wisely offered by her just Authority: not to be too much morose or curious, or censorious or critical, or severe and magisterial in lesser matters of Circumſtance and Ceremony; the publique use and Arbitrement of which depends not on private mens fancies, but on the publique Prudence in Church and State: He did not think any morality or bond lay upon Governors or Lawgivers, to have always that which may be, or seems to some men best in its kinde to language and words, or Rites and modes, or forms and methods of Religion; but what is most expedient to times and places, to peoples capacities, customs, and other political proportions: That as there is no true piety without Christianity, nor Christianity without charity; so no charity without such humble, tender, and equanimous submissions to that Authority in Church and State (in such small, outward Regulations) which doth liberally furnish all Christians with those great things of God, which pertain to salvation: That it is very uningenuous, and rudely ingrate for sons, or servants, or guests, that are liberally treated with all things wholesome, decent and necessary, to quarrel with the dress of things, and separate from the entertainment, because every dish and garnish is not of their own contrivance and minted in their fancies.

His Judgement was as searching and serene, as any mans, his conscience as pure and strict in things that had any tincture of sin, that is, were opposite to Law or Gospel; but he had a juster latitude of Christian liberty in general, then others had, and a stricter sense of his obedience to Ecclesiastical and Civil Laws, in their limitations of Christian liberty; not in its general nature, but in its regular exercise and use of particulars; he did with more candor both enjoy this liberty himself in this Church, and allow it to others both Christians and Churches, either in their private or personal, or their politick and social communities; what he judged free and indifferent in its nature, as to any precedent, moral, or divine necessity imposing, that he thought himself bound to use and observe, when it was once restrained, and enjoined in some particular and prudential instance by lawful Authority: Not as if the nature of things was changed, but because the use of them was lawfully limited for publique Order, Decency and Solemnity.

He

The meddler  
he kept.

He was happy to keep the mean between the extremes then *pregnant* in England, and distinguished by *Recusancy* and *Non-conformity*, afterwards by *Papists* and *Puritans*: He avoided *superstition* on either hand; neither calling that evil which was good, nor that good which was evil: He abhorred *Prophaness*, *Superstition* and *Schism*; the first as *poysoning*, the second as *infecting*, the third as *rending* a Church; all killing, if not cured by *seasonable applications*.

He was happy in his *undertaking*, happier in the rare *management* of it, and had been with the whole Church *most happy* in the event, or effect, and design rather of his learned labours, if he had met with no men but such as were *only intent* to conquer, or to be *conquered* with truth; not *addicted* to endless *janglings*, and *pertinacious* either to parties, or *prepossessioned* opinions: If his *Antagonists* had been all *masters* of so much candor, generosity and justice as *Cecilius* the Heathen owned, after his *smart conference* with *Octavius* a Christian; when being convicted in his judgement, and yielding to the *Empire of Truth*, which is a beam of Gods Omnipotent Wisdom, he thus with great *Elegancy* and *Ingenuity* concludes (in *Minutius Felix*) *Vicimus & ita, ut improbe usurpo victoriam; nam ut ille (Octavius) mei victor est, ita ego erroris triumphator*; which is, and ought to be the *Epitaph* of every good Christian, who entering the lists of *Religious Disputation*, must not look to the interest of his *reputation* or party, but to the love of truth, the satisfaction of conscience, the peace of the Church, and the glory of God; and be more delighted to see himself *subdued* to all these, then to obtain an *impious* and *fallacious* victory: Which holy end I believe was the sole bias and sway of Mr. Hooker in these and other *his writings*, and so I wish it may of all his Readers.

Conclusion.

What now remains, but after the example of the late *Judicium*, *Pious*, and ever-glorious King and Martyr *Charles* the first, to recommend (as *His Majesty* now dying did to his dear and Orphan Children) these excellent Labours of Mr. Richard Hooker, to the diligent reading of all Learned and Conscientious men, Ministers especially, when they are come to that *maturity* of judgement, as to be able to bear the weight of his Reasonings, and the *ampleness* of his style (for *minde*s that are yet but feeble, or *grissy* and *gelly*, will hardly read them with pleasure, or reap the profit to be had by them (as tender stomachs must not be charged with *stronger meats*, till they have firmer digestion;) yet when they come to be fit for these perplexed, yet profitable studies, they will finde in Mr. Hookers Works a *Treasury* and an *Armory*; wherewith to *enrich* and defend themselves, and the Church of England, according to that station in which they are placed: For want of which skilful and faithful Assessor, she hath lately been so *assaulted*, *spoiled* and *despised* by ignorant and insolent Enemies. When these excellent Books shall obtain their deserved place in *mens heads* and *hearts*, instead of *factions*, *frothy*, *seditions* and *senseless Pamphlets*, which are the shame and *poysen* of this Church and Kingdom, I shall have no cause to repent of the pains, yea *pleasure* I have taken in giving the World this renewed view of Mr. Richard Hooker, and his now completed Works: Which while they remain in the *English World*, and are understood, the Church cannot want a sufficient *Antidote* against any *Factionous Infusions*, until the sins of a degenerate, idle, *supercilious* and *impertinent* Clergy, added (as *Pelion* to *Ossea*) to *debaucheries* of other people (which will grow like weed in neglected gardens) shall give fire again to those *Conflagrations* which our most merciful God, our gracious King, and our late wise Parliaments have thus far *retinguished*: Nothing but the Clergies *Impudence* or *Impiety*, turning Grace into *Wantonness*, and miraculous Restorations to *ingratitude* *Apollasies*, can give opportunity and power to *factious spirits* again to turn their *Plowshares* into *swords*, and their *pruning hooks* into *pikes*: These Sects cannot be strong, but by our weakness; nor *armed*, but by our *nakedness*; by *stripping* our selves of Gods *protection*, the *Laws* *defences*, and the love of good men; which will all fail us, if we fail to do our duty in those ways of *Piety*, *Prudence*, *Industry* and *Charity*, which are expected of us as *Bishops* and *Presbyters*, both by God and man: Neither losing friends by *negligence* in the main concerns of holiness and peace, nor multiplying enemies by *causticities*, *exasperations* and *extravagancies*: Both which Rocks are best avoided, if on all hands we follow the counsel and example of this Humble, Learned, Industrious and Charitable Mr. Hooker, one of the Honors of our English Nation, and Glories of our Reformed Church.





T O  
The most Reverend Father in God, my  
very good Lord, the Lord Arch-Bishop of *Canterbury*  
His Grace, *Primate* and *Metropolitan* of  
all ENGLAND.



OST Reverend in Christ, the long continued, and more then ordinary favour, which hitherto your Grace hath bin pleased to shew towards me, may justly claim at my hands some thankful acknowledgments thereof. In which consideration, as also for that I embrace willingly the ancient received course, and conveniency of that Discipline, which teacheth inferiour degrees, and Order in the Church of God, to submit their writings to the same Authority, from which their allowable dealings whatsoever, in such affairs, must receive approbation, I nothing fear but that your accustomed clemency will take in good worth the offer of these my simple and mean labours, bestowed for the necessary justification of laws heretofore made questionable, because, as I take it, they were not perfectly understood. For surely, I cannot find any great cause of just complaint, that good Laws have so much been wanting unto us, as we to them. To seek reformation of civil laws is a commendable endeavor, but for us the more necessary is a speedy redress of our selves. We have on all sides lost much of our fervency towards God; and therefore concerning our own degenerated ways, we have reason to exhort with S. Gregory, *quis in vobis, Let us return again unto that which we sometimes were*: but touching the exchange of Laws in practice with Laws in device, which, they say, are better for the state of the Church, if they might take place, the farther we examine them, the greater cause we find to conclude *minus in eis, although we continue the same we are, the harm is not great*. These fervent reprehenders of things established by publique authority, are always confident and bold spirited men. But their confidence for the most part riseth from too much credit given to their own wits, for which cause they are seldome free from errors. The errors which we seek to reform in this kind of men, are such as both received at your own hands their first wound, and from that time to this present, have been proceeded in with that moderation, which useth by patience

## *The Epistle Dedicatory.*

to suppress boldness, and to make them conquer that suffer. Wherein considering the nature and kind of these controversies, the dangerous sequels whereunto they were likely to grow, and how many ways we have been thereby taught wisdom, I may boldly aver concerning the first, that as the weightiest conflicts the Church hath had, were those which touched the head, the Person of our Saviour Christ; and the next of importance; those questions, which are at this day between us and the Church of *Rome*, about the actions of the body of the Church of God; so these which have lastly sprung up for Complements, rites and ceremonies of Church actions, are in truth for the greatest part such silly things, that very easiness doth make them hard to be disputed of in serious manner. Which also may seem to be the cause, why divers of the Reverend Prelacy, and other most judicious men, have especially bestowed their pains about the matter of jurisdiction. Notwithstanding led by your Graces example, my self have thought it convenient to wade through the whole cause, following that method, which searcheth the truth by the causes of truth. Now, if any marvaile, how a thing in it self so weak, could import any great danger, they must consider not so much how small the spark is that lieth up, as how apt things about it are to take fire. Bodies politique, being subject as much as natural, to dissolution, by divers means; there are undoubtedly more estates overthrown through diseases bred within themselves, then through violence from abroad, because our manner is always to cast a doubtful and a more suspicious eye towards that, over which we know we have least power; and therefore, the fear of external dangers, causeth forces at home to be the more united; it is to all sorts a kind of bridle, it maketh vertuous minds watchful, it holdeth contrary dispositions in suspence, and it setteth those wits on work in better things which could be else employed in worse; whereas on the other side, domestical evils, for that we think we can master them at all times, are often permitted to run on forward, till it be too late to recal them. In the mean while the Common-wealth is not onely through unsoundness so far impaired, as those evils chance to prevaile; but farther also through opposition arising between the unsound parts and the sound, where each endeavoureth to draw evermore contrary ways, till destruction in the end bring the whole to ruine. To reckon up how many causes there are, by force whereof divisions may grow in a Common-wealth, is not here necessary. Such as rise from variety in matter of Religion, are not onely the farthest spread, because in Religion all men presume themselves interested alike; but they are also for the most part hotlier prosecuted and pursued then other strifes, for as much as coldness, which in other contentions may be thought to proceed from moderation, is not in these so favourably construed. The part which in this present quarrel striveth against the current and stream of Laws, was a long while nothing feared, the wisest contented not to call to mind how errors have their effect many times not proportioned to that little appearance of reason vvhhereupon they vould seem built, but rather to the vehement affection or fancy vvhich is cast towards them, and proceedeth from other causes. For there are divers motives, drawing men to favour mightily those opinions, vvherein their perswasions are but vveakly settled: and if the passions of the mind be strong, they easily sophisticate the understanding, they make it apt to believe upon every slender vvarrant, and to imagine infallible truth, where

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

where scarce any probable shew appeareth. Thus were those poor seduced creatures *Hacquet* and his other two adherents, whom I can neither speak nor think of but with much commiseration and pity, thus were they trained by fair ways first, accompting their own extraordinary love to his discipline, a token of Gods more then ordinary love towards them; from hence they grew to a strong conceit, that God which had moved them to love his Discipline, more then the common sort of men did, might have a purpose by their means to bring a wonderful work to pass, beyond all mens expectation, for the advancement of the throne of discipline by some tragical execution, with the particularities whereof it was not safe for their friends to be made acquainted, of whom they did therefore but covertly demand what they thought of extraordinary motions of the spirit in these days, and withall request to be commended unto God by their Prayers, whatsoever should be undertaken by men of God, in meer zeal to his glory, and the good of his distressed Church. With this unusual and strange course they went on forward, till God, in whose heaviest worldly judgments, I nothing doubt, but that there may ly hidden mercy, gave them over to their own inventions, and left them made in the end an example for head-strong and inconsiderate zeal, no less fearful then *Achitophel*, for proud and irreligious wisdom. If a spark of error have thus far prevailed, falling even where the wood was green, and farthest off, to all mens thinking, from any inclination unto furious attempts, must not the peril thereof be greater in men whose minds are of themselves as dry fewel, apt before-hand unto tumults, seditions and broyls? But by this we see in a cause of Religion, to how desperate adventures men will strain themselves for relief of their own part, having law and authority against them. Furthermore, let not any man think, that in such divisions, either part can free it self from inconveniencies, sustained not onely through a kind of Truce, which vertue on both sides doth make with vice, during war between truth and error; but also in that there are hereby so fit occasions ministred for men to purchase to themselves wel-willers by the colour, under which they oftentimes prosecute quarrels of envy or inveterate malice, and especially because contentions were as yet never able to prevent two evils, the one a mutual exchange of unseemly and unjust disgraces, offered by men whose tongues and passions are out of rule; the other, a common hazard of both, to be made a prey by such as study how to work upon all occurrents, with most advantage in private. I deny not therefore, but that our Antagonists in these controversies, may peradventure have met with some, not unlike to *Ithacium*, who mightily beading himself by all means against the heresie of *Priscilian*, (the hatred of which one evil was all the vertue he had) became so wise in the end, that every man, careful of virtuous conversations, studious of Scripture, and given unto any abstinence in diet, was set down in his Kalender for suspected *Priscilianists*, for whom it should be expedient to approve their soundness of faith by a more licentious and loose behaviour. Such Proctors and Patrons the truth might spare. Yet is not their grossness so intolerable, as on the contrary side, the scurrilous and more then Satyirical immodesty of *Martinisme*, the first published schedules whereof, being brought to the hands of a grave and a very Honorable Knight, with signification given, that the Book would refresh his spirits, he took it, saw what the Title was, read

Sulp. Seret.  
Epi. hist.  
Eccel.



## The Epistle Dedicatory.

over an unfavoury sentence or two, and delivered back the Libel with this answer; *I am sorry you are of the mind to be solaced with these sports, and sorrier you have herein thought mine affection to be like your own.* But as these sores on all hands lie open, so the deepest wounds of the Church of God have been more softly and closely given. It being perceived that the plot of Discipline did not only bend it self to reform ceremonies, but seek farther to erect a popular authority of Elders, and to take away Episcopall jurisdiction, together with all other Ornaments and means, whereby any difference or inequality is upheld in the Ecclesiastical order; towards this destructive part, they have found many helping hands; divers although peradventure not willing to be yoked with Elderships, yet contented (for what intent God doth know) to uphold opposition against Bishops; not without greater hurt to the course of their whole proceedings in the business of God and her Majesties service, then otherwise much more weighty adversaries had been able by their own power to have brought to pass. Men are naturally better contented to have their commendable actions suppress, then the contrary much divulged. And because the wits of the multitude are such, that many things they cannot lay hold on at once, but being possesst with some notable either dislike or liking of any one thing whatsoever, sundry other in the mean time may escape them unperceived; therefore if men desirous to have their vertues noted, do in this respect grieve at the fame of others, whose glory obscureth and darkneth theirs, it cannot be chosen, but that when the ears of the people are thus continually beaten with exclamations against abuses in the Church, these tunes come alwayes most acceptable to them, whose odious and corrupt dealings in secular affairs, both pass by that mean the more covertly, and whatsoever happen do also the least feel that scourge of vulgar imputation, which notwithstanding they most deserve. All this considered, as becometh, the sequel of duty on our part is only that which our Lord and Saviour requireth, harmless discretion, the wisdom of Serpents tempered with the innocent meekness of Doves. For this world will teach them wisdom that have capacity to apprehend it. Our wisdom in this case must be such, as doth not propose to it self *in illis* our own particular, the partial and immoderate desire whereof poisoneth whersoever it taketh place: but the scope and mark which we are to aim at, is *in vobis* the publique and common good of all, for the easier procurement whereof our diligence must search out all helps and furtherances of direction, which Scriptures, Counsels, Fathers, Histories, the laws and practices of all Churches, the mutual conference of all mens collections and observations may afford; our industry must even anatomize every particle of that body, which we are to uphold sound; and because, be it never so true which we teach the world to believe, yet if once their affections begin to be alienated, a small thing perswadeth them to change their opinions it becometh that we vigilantly note and prevent by all means those evils, whereby the hearts of men are lost, which evils for the most part being personal, do arm in such sort the Adversaries of God and his Church against us, that if through our too much neglect and security the same should run on, soon might we feel our estate brought to those lamentable termes, whereof this hard and heavy sentence was by one of the ancients uttered upon like occasions, *Dolens dico, gement denuncio, sacerdotium quod apud nos intus cecidit, foris*  
*din*

---

## The Epistle Dedicatory.

---

*diu stare non poterit.* But the gracious providence of Almighty God hath, I trust, put these thornes of contradiction in our sides, lest that should steal upon the Church in a slumber, which now, I doubt not, but through his assistance may be turned away from us, bending thereunto our selves with constancy, constancy in labour to do all men good, constancy in prayer unto God for all men, Her especially, whose sacred power, matched with incomparable goodness of nature, hath hitherto been Gods most happy instrument, by him miraculously kept for works of so miraculous preservation and safety unto others; that as, *By the Sword of God and Gedeon*, was sometime the cry of the people of *Israel*, so it might deservedly be at this day the joyful song of innumerable multitudes, yea the Emblem of some Estates and Dominions in the world, and (which must be eternally confest even with tears of thankfulness) the true inscription, stile or title of all Churches as yet standing within this Realm, *By the goodness of Almighty God and his servant Elizabeth we are.* That God, who is able to Jud. 7. 302 make mortality immortal, give her such future continuance as may be no less glorious unto all posterity, then the days of her regiment past have been happy unto our selves; and for his most dear annointed s sake, grant them all prosperity, whose labours, cares and counsels, unfainedly are referred to her endless welfare, through his unspeakable mercy, unto whom we all owe everlasting praise. In which desire I will here rest, humbly beseeching your Grace, to pardon my great boldness, and God to multiply his blessings upon them that fear his name.

Your Graces in all duty,

*Richard Hooker.*

---

**T O**

vanilla, 1000

1000

1000





A  
P R E F A C E.

To them that seek (as they term it) the  
Reformation of Laws and Orders *Ecclesiastical*, in  
the Church of *England*.



Though for no other cause, yet for this, that posterity may know, we have not loosely through silence permitted things to pass away as in a dream, there shall be for mens information extant thus much concerning the present state of the Church of God established amongst us, and their careful endeavour which would have upheld the same. At your hands, beloved in our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ (for in him the love which we bear unto all that would but seem to be born of him, it is not the Sea of your gall and bitterness that shall ever drown) I have no great cause to look for other then the self-same portion and lot, which your manner hath been hitherto to lay on them that concur not in Opinion and Sentence with you. But our hope is, that the God of peace shall (notwithstanding mans nature, too impatient of contumelious malediction) enable us quietly, and even gladly to suffer all things, for that work sake which we covet to performe. The wonderful zeal and fervour wherewith ye have withstood the received orders of this Church, was the first thing which caused me to enter into consideration, whether (as all your published Books and Writings peremptorily maintain) every Christian man fearing God, stand bound to joyn with you for the furtherance of that which ye term the *Lords Discipline*. Wherein I must plainly confesse unto you, that before I examined your sundry declarations in that behalf, it could not settle in my head to think, but that undoubtedly such numbers of otherwise right well affected and most religiously enclined minds, had some marvelous reasonable inducements which led them with

The cause and  
reason of  
handling these  
things: and  
what might be  
wished in  
them, for  
whose sakes  
so much  
paine is taken

## THE PREFACE.

so great earnestness that way, But when once, as neer as my slender ability would serve, I had with travel and care performed that part of the Apostles advice and counsel in such cases, whereby he willeth to *try all things*; and was come at the length so far, that there remained only the other clause to be satisfied, wherein he concludeth, that *what good is must be held*: there was in my poor understanding no remedy but to set down this as my final resolute perswasion; Surely the present form of Church Government which the Laws of this Land have established, is such, as no Law of God, nor reason of man hath hitherto been alleadged of force sufficient to prove they do ill, who to the uttermost of their power withstand the alteration thereof: Contrariwise; The other which instead of it we are required to accept, is onely by error and misconception named the ordinance of Jesus Christ, no one proof as yet brought forth, whereby it may clearly appear to be so in very deed. The explication of which two things I have here thought good to offer into your own hands: heartily beseeching you even by the meekness of Jesus Christ, whom I trust ye love; that, as ye tender the peace and quietness of this Church, if there be in you that gracious humility which hath ever been the Crown and glory of a Christianly disposed mind; if your own souls, hearts and consciences, (the sound integrity whereof can but hardly stand with the refusal of truth in personal respects) be, as I doubt not but they are, things most dear and precious unto you, Let not the faith which ye have in our Lord Jesus Christ, be blemished with partialities, regard not who it is which speaketh, but weigh only what is spoken. Think not that ye read the words of one, who bendeth himself as an adversary against the truth, which ye have already imbraced but the words of one who desireth even to imbrace together with you the self same truth, if it be the truth; and for that cause (for no other, God he knoweth) hath undertaken the burthensome labour of this painful kind of conference. For the playner access whereunto, let it be lawful for me to rip up the very bottom how and by whom your discipline was planted, at such time as this age we live in began to make first trial thereof.

Jan. 1. 1.

The first establishment of new Discipline by Mr. Calvin's industry, in the Church of Geneva; and the beginning of strife about it: amongst ourselves.

2. A Founder it had, whom, for mine own part, I think incomparably the wisest man that ever the French Church did enjoy, since the hour it enjoyed him. His bringing up was in the studie of the civil Law. Divine knowledge he gathered not by hearing or reading so much, as by teaching others. For though thousands were debtors to him, as touching knowledge in that kind; yet he to none but onely to God, the Author of that most blessed Fountain the book of Life, and of the admirable dexterity of wit, together with the helps of other learning which were his guides: till being occasioned to leave France, he fell at the length upon Geneva. Which City, the Bishop and Clergy thereof had a little before (as some affirm) forsaken, being of likelihood frightened with the peoples sudden attempt for abolishment of Popish Religion: the event of which enterprize they thought it not safe for themselves to wait for in that place. At the coming of Calvin thither, the forme of their civil Regiment was popular, as it continueth at this day: neither King nor Duke nor Nobleman of any authority or power over them, but officers chosen by the people out of themselves, to order all things with publique consent. For spiritual Government, they had no Laws at all agreed upon, but did what the Pastors of their souls by perswasion could win them unto. Calvin being admitted one of their Preachers and a Divinity-Reader amongst them, considered how dangerous it was that the whole estate of that Church should hang still

## THE PREFACE.

still on so slender a thread, as the liking of an ignorant multitude is, if it have power to change whatsoever it self listeth. Wherefore taking unto him two of the other Ministers, for more countenance of the action, (albeit the rest were all against it) they moved, and in the end perswaded with much ado, the people to bind themselves by solemn Oath, first, never to admit the Papacy amongst them again; and secondly, to live in obedience unto such orders concerning the exercise of their Religion, and the forme of their Ecclesiastical Government as those their true and faithful Ministers of Gods Word had agreeably to Scripture set down for that end and purpose. When these things began to be put in ure, the people also (what causes moving them thereunto, themselves best know) began to repent them of that they had done, and irefully to champ upon the bit they had taken into their mouthes, the rather for that they grew by means of this innovation into dislike with some Churches near about them, the benefit of whose good friendship their state could not well lack: It was the manner of those times, (whether through mens desire to enjoy alone the glory of their own enterprises, or else because the quickness of their occasions required present dispatch,) so it was, that every particular Church did that within it self, which some few of their own thought good, by whom the rest were all directed. Such number of Churches then being, though free within themselves, yet small, common conference before-hand might have eased them of much after trouble. But a great inconvenience it bred, that every later indeavoured to be certain degrees more removed from conformity with the Church of *Rome* then the rest before had been; whereupon grew marvelous great dissimilitudes, and by reason thereof, jealousies, heart-burnings, jars, and discords amongst them. Which notwithstanding might have easily been prevented, if the orders which each Church did think fit and convenient for it self, had not so peremptorily been established under that high commanding form, which rendered them unto the people, as things everlastingly required by the law of that Lord of Lords, against whose statutes there is no exception to be taken. For by this mean it came to pass, that one Church could not but accuse and condemn another of disobedience to the will of Christ, in those things where manifest difference was between them: whereas the self same orders allowed, but yet established in more vary and suspensive manner, as being to stand in force till God should give the opportunity of some general conference what might be best for every of them afterwards to do; this, I say, had both prevented all occasions of just dislike which others might take, and reserved a greater liberty unto the Authors themselves of entering into farther consultation afterwards. Which though never so necessary, they could not easily now admit, without some fear of derogation from their credit: and therefore that which once they had done, they became for ever after resolute to maintain. *Calvin* therefore and the other two his Associates, stilly refusing to administer the Holy Communion to such as would not quietly without contradiction and murmur submit themselves unto the orders which their solemn Oath had bound them to obey, were in that quarrel banished the Town. A few years after (such was the levity of that people) the places of one or two of their Ministers being fallen voyd, they were not before so willing to be rid of their learned Pastor, as now importunate to obtain him again from them who had given him entertainment, and which were loth to



## THE PREFACE.

Epist. Cal. 24.

Luc. 29. 1 7.

part with him; had not unresistable earnestness been used. One of the Town-Ministers that saw in what manner the people were bent for the revocation of *Calvine*, gave him notice of their affection in this sort. *The Senate of two hundred being assembled, they all crave Calvine. The next day a general Convocation; They cry in like sort again all: We will have Calvin that good and learned man Christs Minister. This, saith he, when I understood, I could not choose but praise God, nor was I able to judge otherwise, then that this was the Lords doing, and that it was marvelous in our eyes, And that the stone which the builders refused, was now made the head of the Corner.* The other two whom they had thrown out (together with *Calvin*) they were content should enjoy their exile. Many causes might lead them to be more desirous of him. First, his yielding unto them in one thing, might haply put them in hope, that time would breed the like easiness of condescending further unto them. For in his absence he had perswaded them, with whom he was able to prevaile, that albeit himself did better like of common bread to be used in the Eucharist, yet the other they rather should accept, then cause any trouble in the Church about it. Again, they saw that the name of *Calvin* waxed every day greater abroad, and that together with his fame their infamy was spread, who had so rashly and childishly ejected him. Besides, it was not unlikely but that his credit in the World, might many ways stand the poor Town in great stead: as the truth is, their Ministers forreign estimation hitherto hath been the best stake in their hedge. But whatsoever secret respects were likely to move them, for contenting of their minds, *Calvin* returned (as it had been another *Tully*) to his old Home. He ripely considered how gross a thing it were for men of his quality, wise and grave men, to live with such a multitude, and to be Tenants at will under them, as their Ministers, both himself and others, had been. For the remedy of which inconvenience, he gave them plainly to understand, that if he did become their Teacher again, they must be content to admit a compleat form of Discipline, which both they and also their Pastors should now be solemnly sworn to observe for ever after. Of which discipline the main and principal parts were these: A standing Ecclesiastical Court to be established: perpetual Judges in that Court to be their Ministers, others of the people annually chosen (twice so many in number as they) to be Judges together with them in the same Court: these two sorts to have the care of all mens manners, power of determining of all kind of Ecclesiastical causes, and authority to convent, to control, to punish, as far as with Excommunication, whomsoever they should think worthy, none either small or great excepted. This device, I see not, how the wisest at that time living could have bettered, if we duly consider what the present state of *Geneva* did then require. For their Bishop and his Clergy being (as it is said) departed from them by Moon-light, or however, being departed; to choose in his room any other Bishop, had been a thing altogether impossible. And for their Ministers to seek, that themselves alone might have coercive power over the whole Church, would perhaps have been hardly construed at that time. But when so frank an offer was made, that for every one Minister there should be two of the People to sit and give voice in the Ecclesiastical Consistory, what inconvenience could they easily find which themselves might not be able always to remedy? Howbeit (as ever more the simpler sort are even when they see no apparent cause, jealous not with,

## THE PREFACE.

withstanding over the secret intents and purposes of wiser men) this proposition of his did somewhat trouble them. Of the Ministers themselves which had stayed behind in the City when *Calvin* was gone, some, upon knowledge of the peoples earnest intent to recal him to his place again, had before-hand written their Letters of submission, and assured him of their allegiance for ever after, if it should like him to harken unto that publique suit. But yet misdoubting what might happen, if this Discipline did go forward, they objected against it the example of other reformed Churches, living quietly and orderly without it. Some of the chiefest place and countenance amongst the Laity professed with greater stomach their judgments, that such a Discipline was little better then Popish Tyranny, disguised and tendered unto them under a new form. This sort, it may be, had some fear that the filling up of the seats in the Consistory, with so great a number of Lay-men, was but to please the minds of the people, to the end they might think their own sway somewhat, but when things came to tryal of practice, their Pastors learning would be at all times of force to over-perswade simple men, who knowing the time of their own Presidentship to be but short, would always stand in fear of their Ministers perpetual authority. And among the Ministers themselves, one being so far in estimation above the rest, the voices of the rest were likely to be given for the most part respectively with a kind of secret dependency and aw: so that in shew a marvelous indifferently composed Senate Ecclesiastical was to govern, but in effect one onely man should, as the spirit and soul of the residue, do all in all. But what did these vain surmises boot? Brought they were now to so straight an issue, that of two things they must chuse one; Namely, whether they would to their endless disgrace, with ridiculous lightness dismiss him, whose restitution they had in so impotent manner desired, or else condescend unto that demand, wherein he was resolute either to have it, or to leave them. They thought it better to be somewhat hardly yoked at home, then for ever abroad discredited. Wherefore in the end those Orders were on all sides assented unto, with no less alacrity of mind, then Cities unable to hold out longer are wont to shew when they take conditions such as liketh him to offer them which hath them in the narrow streights of advantage. Not many years overpassed, before these twice-sworn men adventured to give their last and hottest assault to the Fortres of the same Discipline, childishly granting by common consent of their whole Senate, and that under their Town Seal, a relaxation to one *Bertelier* whom the Eldership had Excommunicated; further also decreeing, with strange absurdity, that to the same Senate it should belong to give final judgment in matter of excommunication, and to absolve whom it pleased them; clean contrary to their own former deeds and Oathes. The report of which decree being forthwith brought unto *Calvin*; Before (saith he) *this Decree take place, either my blood or banishment shall sign it.* Again, two days before the Communion should be celebrated, this speech was publicquely to like effect, *Kill me, if ever this hand do reach forth the things that are holy, to them whom the Church hath judged despisers.* Whereupon, for fear of tumult, the fore-named *Bertelier* was by his friends advised for that time not to use the liberty granted him by the Senate, nor to present himself in the Church till they saw somewhat further what would ensue. After the Communion quietly ministred, and some likelihood of peaceable ending of these troubles without

## THE PREFACE.

out any more ado, that very day in the after-noon, besides all mens expectation, concluding his ordinary Sermon, he telleth them, that because he neither had learned nor taught to strive with such as are in authority, therefore (saith he) *the case so standing as now it doth, let me use these words of the Apostle unto you, I commend you unto God and the Word of his grace, and so bid them heartily Adieu.* It sometimes commeth to pass, that the readiest way which a wise man hath to conquer, is to fly. This voluntary and unexpected mention of sudden departure, caused presently the Senate (for according to their wonted manner they still continued onely constant in unconstancy) to gather themselves together, and for a time to suspend their own Decree, leaving things to proceed as before, till they had heard the judgment of four *Helvetian* Cities concerning the matter which was in strife. This to have done at the first before they gave assent unto any order, had shewed some wit and discretion in them: but now to do it, was as much as to say in effect, that they would play their parts on a Stage; *Calvin* therefore dispatcheth with all expedition his letters unto some principal Pastor in every of those Cities, craving earnestly at their hands, to respect this cause as a thing whereupon the whole state of Religion and Piety in that Church did so much depend; that God and all good men were now inevitably certaine to be trampled under foot, unless those four Cities by their good means might be brought to give sentence with the Ministers of *Geneva*, when the cause should be brought before them: yea, so to give it, that two things it might effectually containe; the one an absolute approbation of the Discipline of *Geneva*, as consonant unto the Word of God, without any cautions, qualifications, ifs, or ands; the other an earnest admonition not to innovate or change the same. His vehement request herein as touching both points was satisfied. For albeit the said *Helvetian* Churches did never as yet observe that Discipline, nevertheless the Senate of *Geneva* having required their judgment concerning these three questions: First, *After what manner, by Gods commandement, according to the Scripture and unspotted Religion, Excommunication is to be exercised*: Secondly, *Whether it may not be exercised some other way then by the Consistory*: Thirdly, *What the use of their Churches was to do in this case*: Answer was returned from the said Churches, *That they had heard already of those Consistorial Laws, and did acknowledge them to be godly Ordinances*, drawing towards the prescript of the Word of God, for which cause they did not think it Good for the Church of *Geneva*, by innovation to change the same, but rather to keep them as they were. Which answer, although not answering unto the former demands, but respecting what Master *Calvin* had judged requisite for them to answer, was notwithstanding accepted without any further replie: in as much as they plainly saw that when stomack doth strive with wit, the match is not equal. And so the heat of their former contentions began to slake. The present inhabitants of *Geneva*, I hope, will not take it in evil part, that the faultiness of their people heretofore, is by us so far forth laid open, as their own learned Guides and Pastors have thought necessary to discover it unto the world. For out of their Books and Writings it is that I have collected this whole narrative, to the end it might appear in what sort amongst them that discipline was planted, for which so much contention is raised amongst our selves. The reasons which moved *Calvin* herein to be so earnest, was, as *Beza* himself testifieth, *For that he saw how needful these bridles were to be*



## THE PREFACE.

put in the jaws of that City. That which by wisdom he saw to be requisite for that people, was by as great wisdom compassed. But wise men are men, and the truth is truth. That which *Calvin* did for establishment of his Discipline, seemeth more commendable, then that which he taught for the countenance of it established. Nature worketh in us all a love to our own Counsels. The contradiction of others is a fan to inflame that love. Our love set on fire to maintain that which once we have done, sharpeneth the wit to dispute, to argue, and by all men to reason for it. Wherefore a marvel it were if a man of so great capacity, having such incitements to make him desirous of all kind of furtherances unto his cause, could espy in the whole Scripture of God nothing which might breed at the least a probable opinion of likelihood, that divine authority it self was the same way somewhat inclinable. And all which the wit even of *Calvin* was able from thence to draw, by sifting the very utmost sentence and syllable, is no more then that certain speeches there are, which to him did seem to intimate, that all Christian Churches ought to have their Elderships indued with power of Excommunication, and that a part of those Elderships every where should be chosen out from amongst the Laytie after that form which himself had framed *Geneva* unto. But what argument are ye able to shew, whereby it was ever proved by *Calvin*, that any one sentence of Scripture doth necessarily inforce these things, or the rest wherein your opinion concurrerth with his against the Orders of your own Church? We should be injurious unto vertue it self, if we did derogate from them whom their industry hath made great. Two things of principal moment there are which have deservedly procured him honour throughout the World: the one his exceeding pains in composing the institution of Christian Religion; the other, his no less industrious travails for exposition of holy Scripture according unto the same Institutions. In which two things whatsoever they were that after him bestowed their labour, he gained the advantage of prejudice against them, if they gain-said; and of glory above them, if they consented. His Writings, published after the question about that Discipline was once begun, omit not any the least occasion of extolling the use and singular necessity thereof. Of what account the Master of sentences was in the Church of *Rome*, the same and more amongst the Preachers of reformed Churches *Calvin* had purchased: so that the perfectest Divines were judged they which were skilfullest in *Calvin's* Writings. His books almost the very Canon to judge both Doctrine and Discipline by; *French* Churches, both under others abroad, and at home in their own Countrey, all cast according unto that mold which *Calvin* had made. The Church of *Scotland* in erecting the fabrick of their reformation, took the self-same pattern. Till at length the Discipline which was at the first so weak, that without the staff of their approbation who were not subject unto it themselves it had not brought others under subjection, began now to challenge universal obedience, and to enter into open conflict with those very Churches which in desperate extremity had been believers of it. To one of those Churches which lived in most peaceable sort, and abounded as well with men for their learning in other professions singular, as also with Divines whose equals were not elsewhere to be found, a Church ordered by *Gualters* disciple, and not by that which *Geneva* adoreth: unto this Church of *Heidelberg*, there cometh one who craving leave to dispute publicly, defendeth with open disdain of their

Quod eam  
urbem vide-  
ret omnino his  
sentis indi-  
gere.

## THE PREFACE.

their government, that to a Minister with his Eldership power is given by the Law of God to excommunicate whomsoever, yea even Kings and Princes themselves. Here were the seeds sown of that controversie which sprang up between *Beza* and *Erastus* about the matter of Excommunication, whether their ought to be in al Churches an Eldership having power to Excommunicate, and a part of that Eldership to be of necessity certain chosen out from amongst the Layty for that purpose. In which disputation they have, as to me it seemeth, divided very equally the truth between them; *Beza* most truly maintaining the necessity of Excommunication; *Erastus* as truly the non-necessity of Lay-elders to be Ministers thereof. Amongst ourselves, there was in King *Edwards* days some question moved by reason of a few mens scrupulosity touching certaine things. And beyond Seas, of them which fled in the days of Queen *Mary*, some contenting themselves abroad with the use of their own Service-book, at home authorized before their departure out of the Realm; others liking better the common Prayer Book of the Church of *Geneva* translated, those smaller contentions before begun were by this mean somewhat increased. Under the happy reign of her Majesty which now is, the greatest matter a while contended for, was the wearing of the Cap and Surplefs, till there came Admonitions directed unto the High Court of Parliament, by men who concealing their names, thought it glory enough to discover their minds and affections, which now were universally bent even against all the Orders and Laws wherein this Church is found unconformable to the plat-forme of *Geneva*. Concerning the Defender of which Admonitions, all that I mean to say is but this: *There will come a time when three words uttered with charity and meekness, shall receive a far more blessed reward, then three thousand Volumes written with disdainful sharpness of wit.* But the manner of mens writings must not alienate our hearts from the truth, if it appear they have the truth: as the followers of the same defender do think he hath, and in that perswasion they follow him, no otherwise then himself doth *Calvin*, *Beza*, and others, with the like perswasion that they in this case had the truth. We being as fully perswaded otherwise, it resteth that some kind of trial be used to find out which part is in error.

By what means so many of the people are trained into the liking of that Discipline.  
1 Cor. 14. 11  
and 14.  
1. Cor. 12. 5.  
Acts 17. 14.

Rom 14. 5.

3. The first mean whereby Nature teacheth men to judge good from evil, as well in Laws as in other things, is the force of their own discretion. Hereunto therefore *S Paul* referreth oftentimes his own speech to be considered of by them that heard him, *I speak as to them which have understanding, judge ye what I say.* Again afterward, *Judge in yourselves, is it comly that a woman pray uncovered?* The exercise of this kind of judgment our Saviour requireth in the Jews. In them of *Berea* the Scripture commendeth it. Finally, whatsoever we do, if our own secret judgement consent not unto it as fit and good to be done, the doing of it to us is sin, although the thing it self be allowable. *S. Pauls* rule therefore general is, *Let every man in his own mind be fully perswaded of that thing which he either alloweth or doth.* Some things are so familiar and plain, that Truth from Falshood, and good from evil is most easily discerned in them, even by men of no deep capacity. And of that nature, for the most part, are things absolutely unto all mens Salvation necessary, either to be held or denied, either to be done or avoided. For which cause *S. Augustine* acknowledgeth that they are not onely set down, but also plainly set down in Scripture: so that he vvhich heareth or readeth, may without any great difficulty

## THE PREFACE.

difficulty understand. Other things also there are belonging) though in a lower degree of importance (unto the office of Christian men: which because they are more obscure, more intricate and hard to be judged of; therefore God hath appointed some to spend their whole time principally in the study of things divine, to the end that in these more doubtful cases, their understanding might be a light to direct others. *If the understanding power or faculty of the soul be* (saith the grand Physitian) *like unto bodily sight, not of equal sharpness in all; what can be more convenient, then that, even as the dark-sighted man is directed by the cleer about things visible, so likewise in matters of deeper discourse the wise in heart doth shew the simple where his way lyeth.* In our doubtful cases of Law, what man is there who seeth not how requisite it is, that Professors of skill in that faculty be our Directors? So it is in all other kinds of knowledge. And even in this kind likewise the Lord hath himself appointed, *that the Priests lips should preserve knowledge, and that other men should seek truth at his mouth,* because *he is the messenger of the Lord of Hosts.* Gregory Nazianzen, offended at the peoples too great presumption in controlling the judgement of them to whom in such cases they should have rather submitted their own, seeketh by earnest intreaty to stay them within their bounds: Presume not ye that are sheepe, to make your selves guides of them that should guide you, neither seek ye to overslip the sold which they about you have pitched. It sufficeth for your part, if ye can well frame your selves to be ordered. Take not upon you to judge your selves, nor to make them subject to your laws who should be a law to you, for God is not a God of sedition and confusion, but of order and of peace. But ye will say, that if the guides of the people be blind, the common sort of men must not close up their own eyes and be led by the conduct of such; if the Priest be partial in the Law, the flock must not therefore depart from the ways of sincere truth, and in simplicity yield to be followers of him for his place sake and office over them. Which thing though in it self most true, is in your defence notwithstanding weak: because the matter, wherein ye think that ye see and imagine that your ways are sincere, is of far deeper consideration then any one amongst five hundred of you conceiveth. Let the vulgar sort among you know, that there is not the least branch of the cause wherein they are so resolute, but to the trial of it a great deal more appertaiiaeth then their conceit doth reach unto. I write not this in disgrace of the simplest that way given; but I would gladly they knew the nature of that cause wherein they think themselves througly instructed and are not; by means whereof they dayly run themselves, without feeling their own hazzard, upon the dint of the Apostles sentence against evil speakers, as touching things wherein they are ignorant. If it be granted a thing unlawful for private men, not called unto publique consultation, to dispute which is the best State of civil Policy (with a desire of bringing in some other kind then that under which they already live, for of such disputes I take it his meaning was;) if it be a thing confest, that of such questions they cannot determine without rashness, in as much as a great part of them consisteth in speciall circumstances, and for one kind as many reasons may be brought as for another; is there any reason in the World, why they should better judge what kind of Regiment Ecclesiasticall is the fittest? For in the civil State more insight, and in those affairs more experience a great deal must needs be granted them; then in this they can possibly have. When they which write

Galen, de opt. docen. Gen.

Mat. 2. 7.

Greg. Nazian. Orat. qua se ex. ulat.

Matth. 10. 14.

Mal. 2. 9.

Jude ver. 10.  
1 Pet. 2. 13.

Calvin. Instit. lib. 4. cap. 20. sect. 8.



## THE PREFACE.

The Author of  
the Petition  
directed to her  
Majesty, P. 3.

in defence of your Discipline, and commend it unto the Highest, not in the least cunning manner, are forced notwithstanding to acknowledg, that *with whom the Truth is they know not*, they are not certain, what certaintie or knowledge can the multitude have thereof? Weigh what doth move the common sort so much to favour this innovation, and it shall soon appear unto you, that the force of particular reasons which for your severall opinions are alleaged, is a thing whereof the multitude never did, nor could so consider as to be therewith wholly carried; but certain generall inducements are used to make saleable your Cause in gross; and when once men have cast a fancie towards it, any slight declaration of specialties will serve to lead forward mens inclinable and prepared mindes. The method of winning the peoples affection unto a generall liking of the Cause (for soye term it) hath been this. First, in the hearing of the multitude, the faults especially of higher callings are ripped up with marvellous exceeding severitie and sharpness of reproof; which being oftentimes done, begetteth a great good opinion of integritie, zeal and holiness, to such constant Reproovers of sin, as by likelihood would never be so much offended at that which is evil, unless themselves were singularly good. The next thing hereunto is to impute all faults and corruptions wherewith the world aboundeth, unto the kind of Ecclesiastical Government established. Wherein, as before by reprovng faults, they purchased unto themselves with the multitude a name to be vertuous; so by finding out this kind of cause, they obtaine to be judged wise above others: whereas in truth unto the form even of Jewish Government, which the Lord himself (they all confesse) did establish, with like shew of reason they might impute those faults which the Prophets condemne in the Governors of that common-wealth; as to the English kind of Regiment Ecclesiastical (whereof also God himself though in another sort is Author) the stains and blemishes found in our State; which springing from the root of humane fralitie and corruption, not only are, but have been always more or less, yea, and (for any thing we know to the contrarie) will be till the worlds end complained of, what forme of Government soever take place. Having gotten thus much sway in the hearts of men, a third step is to propose their own forme of Church-Government, as the only soveraigne remedie of all evils; and to adorn it with all the glorious titles that may be. And the nature, as of men that have sick bodies, so likewise of the people in the crazedness of their minds posselt with dislike and discontentment at things present, is to imagine that any thing (the vertue whereof they hear commended) would help them; but that most, which they least have tried. The fourth degree of inducements, is by fashioning the very notions and conceits of mens minds in such sort, that when they read the Scripture, they may think that everie thing soundeth towards the advancement of that Discipline, and to the utter disgrace of the contrarie. *Pythagoras*, by bringing up his Schollars in speculative knowledge of numbers, made their conceits therein so strong, that when they came to the contemplation of things natural, they imagined that in every particular thing they even beheld as it were with their eyes, how the elements of number gave essence and being to the workes of Nature: A thing in reason impossible, which notwithstanding through their misfashioned preconceit, appeared unto them no less certain, then if Nature had written it in the very foreheads of all the creatures of God. When they of the *Family of Love* have

## THE PREFACE.

have it once in their heads, that Christ doth not signifie any one person, but a quality whereof many are partakers; that to be raised is nothing else but to be regenerated or indued with the said quality; and that when separation of them which have it from them which have it not, is here made, this is judgment; how plainly do they imagine that the Scripture every where speaketh in the favour of that Sect? And assuredly, the very cause which maketh the simple and ignorant to think they even see how the Word of God runneth currantly on your side, is, that their minds are forestalled and their conceits perverted beforehand, by being taught that an Elder doth signifie a Lay-man, admitted onely to the office of Rule or Government in the Church; a Doctor, one which may onely teach, and neither Preach nor administer the Sacraments; a Deacon, one which hath charge of the Almes-box, and of nothing else: that the Scepter, the Rod, the Throne and Kingdom of Christ, are a form of Regiment, onely by Pastors, Elders, Doctors and Deacons: that by mystical resemblance Mount *Sion* and *Jerusalem* are the Churches which admit, *Samaria* and *Babylon* the Churches which oppugne the said form of Regiment. And in like sort they are taught to apply all things spoken of repairing the walls and decayed parts of the City and Temple of God by *Esdra*s, *Nehemias*, and the rest: as if purposely the Holy Ghost had therein meant to fore-signifie, what the Authors of admonitions to the Parliament, of supplications to the Councel, of petitions to her Majesty, and of such other like Writs, should either do or suffer in behalf of this their cause. From hence they proceed to an higher point, which is the perswading of men credulous and over-capable of such pleasing errors, that it is the special illumination of the Holy Ghost, whereby they discern those things in the Word, which others reading yet discern them not. *Dearely beloved saith S. John, Give not credit unto every spirit.* There are but two ways whereby the spirit leadeth men into all truth: the one extraordinary, the other common: the one belonging but unto some few, the other extending it self unto all that are of God; the one that which we call by a special divine excellency, *Revelation*; the other, *Reason*. If the spirit by such revelation have discovered unto them the secrets of that Discipline out of Scripture, they must profess themselves to be all (even men, women, and children) Prophets. Or if reason be the hand which the Spirit hath led them by, for as much as perswasions grounded upon reason, are either weaker or stronger, according to the force of those reasons whereupon the same are grounded, they must every of them from the greatest to the least, be able for every severall Article to shew some special reason as strong as their perswasion therein is earnest. Otherwise how can it be, but that some other sinews there are from wh ch that overplus of strength in perswasion doth arise? Most sure it is, that when mens affections do frame their opinions, they are in defence of error more earnest a great deal, then (for the most part) sound Beleivers in the maintenance of Truth, apprehended according to the nature of that evidence which Scripture yieldeth: which being in some things plain, as in the principles of Christian Doctrine; in some things, as in these matters of Discipline, more dark and doubtful, frameth correspondently that inward assent which Gods most gracious Spirit worketh by it as by his effectual instrument. It is not therefore the fervent earnestness of their perswasion, but the soundness of those reasons whereupon the same is built, which must declare their opinions in these things to have been wrought by the

1 John 4. 1.

2 Thes. 2. 11.

Holy Ghost, and not by the *fraud* of that evil Spirit which even in his illusions strong. After that the phancie of the common sort hath once thorowly apprehended the Spirit to be author of their perswasions concerning Discipline, then is instilled into their hearts; that the same Spirit leading men into this opinion, doth thereby seal them to be Gods Children; and that as the state of the times now standeth, the most special token to know them that are Gods owne from others, is an earnest affection that way. This hath bred high terms of separation between such and the rest of the World; whereby the one sort are named the Brethren, The Godly; and so forth; the other, Worldlings, Time-servers, Pleasers of men, not of God, with such like: From hence they are easily drawn on to think it exceeding necessary, for fear of quenching that good Spirit, to use all means whereby the same may be both strengthened in themselves, and made manifest unto others. This maketh them diligent hearers of such as are known that way to incline; this maketh them eager to take and seek all occasions of secret conference with such; this maketh them glad to use such as Counsellors and Directors in all their dealings which are of weight, as Contracts, Testaments, and the like; this maketh them, through an unwearable desire of receiving instruction from the Masters of that companie, to cast off the care of those verie affaires which do most concern their estate, and to think that then they are like unto *Mary*, commendable for making choyce of the better part. Finally, this is it which maketh them willing to charge yea oftentimes even to over-charge themselves, for such mens sustenance and releif, lest their zeal to the cause should any way be unwitnessed. For what is it which poor beguiled souls will not doe through so powerfull incitements? In which respect it is also noted, that most labour hath been bestowed to winne and retain towards this cause them whose judgements are commonly weakest by reason of their sex. And although not women *loaden with sins*, as the Apostle *S. Paul* speaketh, but (as we verily esteem of them for the most part) women propense and inclinable to holiness, be otherwise edified in good things, rather then carried a way as captives into any kind of sin and evil, by such as enter into their houses with purpose to plant their a zeal and a love to wards this kind of Discipline: yet some occasion is hereby ministred for men to think, that if the cause which is thus furthred, did gaine by the soundness of proof whereupon it doth build it self, it would not most busily endeavour to prevail, where least abilitie of judgement is: and therefore that this so eminent industry in making Profelytes, more of that sex then of the other, groweth for that they are deemed apter to serve as instruments and helps in the cause. Apter they are through the eagerness of their affection, that maketh them which way soever they take, diligent in drawing their husbands, children, servants, friends and allies the same way: apter through that natural inclination unto pitie, which breedeth in them a greater readines then in men, to be bountifull towards their Preachers whn suffer want; apter through sundrie opportunities which they especially have, to procure encouragements for their brethren; finally, apter through a singular delight which they take in giving very large and particular intelligence how all neer about them stand affected as concerning the same cause. But be they women or be they men, if once they have tasted of that cup, let any of contrarie opinion open his mouth to perswade them, they close



## THE PREFACE.

up their eares, his reasons they weigh not, all is answered with rehearſal of the words of John, *We are of God, he that knoweth God, heareth us*; as for the reſt, ye are of the world, for this worlds pomp and vanitie it is that ye ſpeak, and the world whole ye are, heareth you: Which cloke ſitteth no leſs fit on the back of their cauſe, then of *Anabaptiſts*, when dignity, authority and honor of Gods Magiſtrates is upheld againſt them. Shew theſe eagerly-affected men their inability to judge of ſuch matters; their answer is, *God hath choſen the ſimple*. Convince them of folly, and that ſo plainly, that very children upbraid them with it; they have their bucklers of like defence. *Chriſts own Apoſtle was accounted mad*; *The beſt men evermore by the ſentence of the world have been judged to be out of their right mindes*. When inſtruction doth them no good, let them feel but the leaſt degree of moſt merciful tempered ſeverity; they faſten on the head of the Lords Vicegerents here on earth, whatſoever they any where finde uttered againſt the cruelty of blood-thirſtie men; and to themſelves they draw all the ſentences which Scripture hath in the favour of innocencie persecuted for the truth: yea they are of their due and deſerved ſufferings no leſs proud, then thoſe ancient diſturbers, to whom *S. Auguſtine* writeth, ſaying: *Martyrs rightly ſo named are they, not which ſuffer for their diſorder, and for ungodly breach they have made of Chriſtian unity; but which for righteousneſſes ſake are persecuted*. For *Agar* alſo ſuffered perſecution at the hands of *Sara*; wherein, ſhe which did impoſe was holy, and ſhe unrighteous which did bear the burthen. In like ſort, with the theeves was the Lord himſelf crucified, but they who were matcht in the pain which they ſuffered, were in the cauſe of their ſufferings diſ-joynd. If that muſt needs be the true Church which doth endure perſecution, and not that which perſecuteth, let them aſke of the Apoſtle what Church *Sara* did repreſent, when ſhe held her Maid in affliction. For even our Mother which is free, the heavenly *Ieruſalem*, that is to ſay, the true Church of God, was, as he doth affirme, pre-figured in that verie Woman by whom the Bondmaid was ſo ſharply handled. Although, if all things be thoroughly ſkanned, ſhe did in truth more perſecute *Sara* by proud reſiſtance, then *Sara* her, by ſeveritie of puniſhment. Theſe are the pathes wherein ye have walked that are of the ordinarie ſort of men; theſe are the very ſteps ye have troden, and the manifeſt degrees whereby ye are of your guides and directors trained up in that School: a cuſtome of inuring your eares with reproof of faults eſpecially in your Governors; and uſe to attribute thoſe faults to the kind of ſpiritual regiment under which we live; boldneſſe in warranting the force of their diſcipline for the cure of all ſuch evils; a ſlight of framing your conceits to imagine that Scripture every where favoureth that diſcipline; perſwaſion that the cauſe, why ye find it in Scripture is the illumination of the Spirit, that the ſame Spirit is a Seal unto you of your neerneſſe unto God; that ye are by all meanes to nourish and witneſſe it in your ſelves, and to ſtrengthen on every ſide your minds againſt whatſoever might be of force to withdraw you from it.

4. Wherefore to come unto you whoſe judgement is a lantern of direction for all the reſt, you that frame thus the peoples hearts, not altogether (as I willingly perſwade my ſelf) of a politique intent or purpoſe, but your ſelves being firſt over borne with the weight of greater mens judgements: on your ſhoulders is laid the burthen of upholding the cauſe by argument. For which purpoſe ſentences out of the word of God alleage the divers: but

What hath  
cauled ſo many  
of the leaſt  
needer ſort to  
approve the  
ſame diſcipline

fo

## THE PREFACE.

so, that when the same are discusst, thus it always in a manner falleth out, that what things by vertue thereof ye urge, upon us as altogether necessary, are found to be thence collected onely by poor and marvelous slight conjectures. I need not give instance in any one sentence so alleadged, for that I think the instance in any alleadged otherwise a thing not easie to be given. A very strange thing sure it were, that such a Discipline as ye speak of should be taught by Christ and his Apostles in the Word of God, and no Church ever have found it out, nor received it till this present time; contrariwise, the government against which ye bend your selves, be observed every where throughout all generations and ages of the Christian World, no Church ever perceiving the Word of God to be against it. We require you to find out but one Church upon the face of the whole Earth, that hath been ordered by your Discipline, or hath not been ordered by ours, that is to say, by Episcopal regiment, sithence the time that the blessed Apostles were here conversant. Many things out of antiquity ye bring, as if the purest times of the Church had observed the self-same orders which you require; and as though your desire were, that the Churches of old should be patterns for us to follow, and even glasses wherein we might see the practice of that which by you is gathered out of Scripture. But the truth is, ye mean nothing less. All this is done for fashion sake onely; for ye complain of it as of an injury, that men should be willed to seek for examples and patterns of government in any of those times that have been before. Ye plainly hold, that from the very Apostles times till this present age wherein your selves imagine ye have found out a right pattern of sound discipline, there never was any time safe to be followed. Which thing ye thus indeavour to prove. Out of *Egesippus* ye say that *Eusebius* writeth, how although as long as the Apostles lived the Church did remain a pure Virgin, yet after the death of the Apostles, and after they were once gone whom God vouchsafed to make Hearers of the Divine Wisdom with their own ears, the placing of wicked errors began to come into the Church. *Clement* also in a Certain place; to confirm that there was corruption of Doctrine immediately after the Apostles times, alleadgeth the Proverb, that *there are few sons like their Fathers*. *Socrates* saith of the Church of *Rome* and *Alexandria*, the most famous Churches in the Apostles times, that about the year 430. the *Roman* and *Alexandrian* Bishops leaving the sacred function, were degenerate to a secular rule or Dominion. Hereupon ye conclude, that it is not safe to fetch our Government from any other then the Apostles times. Wherein by the way it may be noted, that in proposing the Apostles times as a pattern for the Church to follow, though the desire of you all be one, the drift and purpose of you all is not one. The chiefest thing which Lay-reformers yawn for, is, that the Clergy may through conformity in state and condition be Apostolical, poor as the Apostles of Christ were poor. In which one circumstance if they imagine so great perfection, they must think that Church which hath such store of mendicant Fryers, a Church in that respect most happy. Were it for the glory of God, and the good of his Church indeed, that the Clergy should be left even as bare as the Apostles when they had neither staff nor scrip; that God, which should lay upon them the condition of his Apostles, would I hope, endue them with the self-same affection which was in that holy Apostle, whose words concerning his own right-vertuous contentment of heart, *As well how to want, as how to abound,*

T. C. l. 1. p. 97

Euseb. 3. l. 32.

Lib. Strom.  
Somewhat af-  
ter the begin-  
ning.  
Lib. 7. cap. 11

Phil. 4. 12.

## THE PREFACE.

abound, are a most fit Episcopal emprise. The Church of Christ is a body mystical. A body cannot stand, unless the parts thereof be proportionable. Let it therefore be required on both parts, at the hands of the Clergy, to be in meannesse of state like the Apostles; at the hands of the Laytie, to be as they were who lived under the Apostles: and in this reformation there will be, though little wisdom, yet some indifferency. But your reformation which are of the Clergy (if yet it displease you not that I should say ye are of the Clergy) seemeth to aim at a broader mark. Ye think that he which will perfectly reform, must bring the form of Church-Discipline unto the state which then it was at. A thing neither possible, nor certain, nor absolutely convenient. Concerning the first, what was used in the Apostles times, the Scripture fully declareth not; so that making their times the Rule and Canon of Church-polity, ye make a rule which being not possible to be fully known, is as impossible to be kept. Again, sith the later even of the Apostles own times, had that which in the former was not thought upon; in this general proposing of the Apostles times, there is no certainty which should be followed, especially seeing that ye give us great cause to doubt how far ye allow those times. For albeit the lover of Antichristian building were not, ye say, as then set up, yet the foundations thereof were secretly and under the ground laid in the Apostles times: so that all other times ye plainly reject, and the Apostles own times ye approve with marvelous great suspicion, leaving it intricate and doubtful wherein we are to keep our selves unto the pattern of their times. Thirdly, whereas it is the error of the common multitude, to consider only what hath been of old, and if the same were well, to see whether still it continue; if not, to condemne that presently which is, and never to search upon what ground or consideration the change might grow: such rudeness cannot be in you so well born with, whom learning and judgement hath enabled much more soundly to discern how far the times of the Church, and the orders thereof may alter without offence. True it is (a) the ancients, the better ceremonies of Religion are; howbeit, not absolutely true, and without exception, but true onely so far-forth as those different ages do agree in the state of those things, for which at the first those rites, orders, and Ceremonies, were instituted. In the Apostles times that was harmeles, which being now revived would be scandalous; as their (b) *obscura sancta*. Those (c) Feasts of charity, which being instituted by the Apostles, were retained in the Church long after, are not now thought any where needful. What man is there of understanding, unto whom it is not manifest, how the way of providing for the Clergy by Tithes, the device of Almes-houses for the poor, the sorting out of the people into their severall Parishes, together with sundry other things which the Apostles times could not have, (being now established) are much more convenient and fit for the Church of Christ, then if the same should be taken away for conformities sake with the ancientest and first times? The orders therefore which were observed in the Apostles times, are not to be urged

*Antiquitas  
ceremoniarum  
sanctis tantum  
sanctitatis tri-*

*lucra conferebat. quantum adfrueretur utilitati. Arn. p. 7. de  
b Rom. 14. 14. a Cor. 13. 12. 1 Thes. 5. 15. 1 Pet. 5. 14.  
In their meetings to serve God, their manner was in the  
end to salute one another with a kiss, using these words,  
Peace be with you. For which cause, Tertul. doth call it  
signum orationis, the seal of Prayer, l. de Ora.  
c. 1. p. 1. l. 1. v. 12. Concerning which feasts, S. Chrys.  
saic. "satis diebus mensas faciebant communes, et peralla sy-  
maxi post sacramentorum communione inebant convivium, divi-  
ritim quidem cibos offerentibus, pauperibus autem et qui nihil ha-  
bebant esurientes, in 1 Cor. 11. Hom. 2. 1. Of the same  
feasts in like sort, Tertul. Cornu nostrum de nomine vas ovem sui  
offendit, Vocatur enim, a' sa' va; id quod est vas Græcorum di-  
lectio. Quamvis quoque sanctus vas esset, lucrum est pietatis no-  
mine sacre sumptum Apolog. c. 39.*



## THE PREFACE.

urged as a rule universally, either sufficient or necessary. If they be, nevertheless on your part it still remaineth to be better proved, that the form of Discipline which ye intitle Apostolical, was in the Apostles time exercised. For of this very thing ye fail even touching that which ye make most account of, as being matter of substance in Discipline. I mean the power of your Lay-elders, and the difference of your Doctors from the Pastors in all Churches. So that in sum, we may be bold to conclude, that besides these last times, which for insolency, pride, and egregious contempt of all good order are the worst, there are none wherein ye can truly affirm, that the compleat form of your Discipline, or the substance thereof was practized. The evidence therefore of Antiquity failing you, ye fly to the judgments of such Learned men; as seem by their writings, to be of opinion that all Christian Churches should receive your Discipline, and abandon ours. Wherein, as ye heap up the names of a number of men not unworthy to be had in honour; so there are a number whom when ye mention, although it serve ye to purpose with the ignorant and vulgar sort, who measure by tale and not by weight, yet surely they who know what quality and value the men are of, will think ye draw very neer the dregs. But were they all of as great account as the best and chiefest amongst them, with us notwithstanding neither are they, neither ought they to be of such reckoning that their opinion or conjecture should cause the Laws of the Church of *England* to give place. Much less when they neither do all agree in that opinion, and of them which are at agreement, the most part through a courteous inducement, have followed one man as their Guide, finally, that one therein not unlikely to have swerved. If any chance to say it is probable that in the Apostles times there were Lay-elders, or not to dislike the continuance of them in the Church; or to affirm that Bishops at the first were a name, but not a power distinct from Presbyters; or to speak any thing in praise of those Churches which are without Episcopal Regiment; or to reprove the fault of such as abuse that calling; all these ye register for men, perswaded as you are, that every Christian Church standeth bound by the Law of God to put down Bishops, and in their rooms to erect an Eldership so authorized as you would have it for the Government of each Parish. Deceived greatly they are therefore, who think that all they whose names are cited amongst the Favourers of this cause, are on any such verdict agreed. Yet touching some material points of your Discipline, a kind of agreement we grant there is amongst many Divines of Reformed Churches abroad. For first, to do as the Church of *Geneva* did, the Learned in some other Churches must needs be the more willing, who having used in like manner not the slow and tedious help of proceeding by publique authority, but the peoples more quick endeavour for alteration, in such an exigent I see not well how they could have stayed to deliberate about any other Regiment then that which already was devised to their hands, that which in like case had been taken, that which was easiest to be established without delay, that which was likeliest to content the people by reason of some kind of sway which it giveth them. When therefore the example of one Church was thus at the first almost through a kind of constraint or necessity followed by many, their concurrence in perswasion about some material points belonging to the same polity is not strange. For we are not to marvel greatly, if they which have all done the same thing, do easily imbrace the same opinion as concerning their own doings.

Besides,

## THE PREFACE.

Besides, mark, I beseech you, that which *Galen* in matter of Philosophie noteth; for the like falleth out even in questions of higher knowledge. It fareth many times with mens opinions, as with rumors and reports. That which credible persons telleth, is easily thought probable by such as are well perswaded of him. But if two, or three, or four, agree all in the same tale, they judge it then to be out of Controversie, and so are many times overtaken, for want of due consideration, either some common cause leading them all into error or one mans oversight deceiving many through their too much credulitie and easiness of believe. Though ten persons be brought to give testimonie in any cause, yet if the knowledge they have of the thing whereunto they come as witnesses, appear to have grown from some one amongst them, and to have spread it self from hand to hand, they all are in force but as one testimonie. Nor is it otherwise here, where the Daughter Churches do speak their Mothers Dialect; here where so many sing one Song, by reason that he is the Guide of the Quire, concerning whose deserved authoritie, amongst even the gravest Divines, we have already spoken at large. Will ye ask what should move those many Learned to be followers of one mans judgement, no necessity of Argument forcing them thereunto? Your demand is answered by yourselves. Loth ye are to think that they whom ye judge to have attained asound knowledge in all points of Doctrine as any since the Apostles time, should mistake in Discipline. Such is naturally our affection: that whom in great things we mightily admire; in them we are not perswaded willingly that any thing should be amiss. The reason wherof is, for that as dead Flyes putrifie the ointment of the Apothecaries, so a little Folly him that is in estimation for wisdom. This in every profession hath too much authorized the judgement of a few. This with *Germans* hath caused *Luther*, and with many other Churches *Calvin*, to prevail in all things. Yet are we not able to define, whether the Wisdom of that God (who setteth before us in Holy Scripture so many admirable patterns of Vertue, and no one of them without somewhat noted wherein they were culpable; to the end that to him alone it might always be acknowledged, *Thou only art Holy, thou only art Just*) might not permit those worthy Vessels of his Glory to be in some things blemished with the stain of humaine frailtie, even for this cause, lest we should esteeme of any man above that which becometh.

*Galen. Claf. 1.  
lib. De cujusq;  
anim. peccat.  
notitia atque  
medicis.*

*Petrus O the  
Q. M. Pag. 14.*

*Eccles. 10. 1.*

5. Notwithstanding, as though ye were able to say a great deal more then hitherto your Books have revealed to the World, earnest Challeng-ers ye are of trial by some publike Disputation. Wherein if the thing ye crave be no more then only leave to dispute openly about those matters that are in question, the Schools in Universities (for any thing I know) are open unto you: they have their yearly Acts and Commencements, besides other Disputations both ordinarie and upon occasion, wherein the severall parts of our own Ecclesiasticall Discipline are often times offered unto that kind of Examination; the learnedest of you have been of late years noted seldom or never absent from thence at the time of those greater assemblies; and the favour of proposing therein convenient whatsoever ye can object (which thing my self have known them to grant of Scholasticall courtesie unto Strangers) neither hath (as I think) nor never will (I presume) be denied you. If your Suit be to have some great extraordinarie conference, in expectation whereof the

*Their calling  
for trial by  
Disputation.*

## THE PREFACE.

Laws that already are should sleep and have no power over you, till in the hearing of thousands ye all did acknowledg your error, and renounce the further prosecution of your cause; haply, they whose authority is required unto the satisfying of your demand, do think it both dangerous to admit such concurrence of divided minds, and unmeet that Laws which being once solemnly established are to exact obedience of all men, and to constrain thereunto, should so far stoop, as to hold themselves in suspense from taking any effect upon you, till some disputer can perswade you to be obedient. A Law is the deed of the whole body politique, whereof if ye judge your selves to be any part, then is the Law even your deed also. And were it reason in things of this quality, to give men audience, pleading for the overthrow of that which their own very deed hath ratified? Laws that have been approved, may be (no man doubted) again repealed, and to that end also disputed against, by the Authors thereof themselves. But this is when the whole doth deliberate what laws each part shall observe, and not when a part refuseth the Laws which the whole hath orderly agreed upon. Notwithstanding, for as much as the cause we maintain is (God be thanked) such as needeth not to shun any trial, might it please them on whose approbation the matter dependeth, to condescend so far unto you in this behalf, I wish heartily that proof were made even by solemn conference in orderly and quiet sort, whether you would your selves be satisfied, or else could by satisfying others, draw them to your peace. Provided alway, first, in as much as ye go about to destroy a thing which is in force; and to draw in that which hath not as yet been received; to impose on us that which we think not our selves bound unto, and to overthrow those things whereof we are possessed; that therefore ye are not to claim in any conference, other then the Plaintiffs or opponents part which must consist altogether in proof and confirmation of two things: the one, that our Orders by you condemned we ought to abolish; the other, that yours we are bound to accept in the stead thereof. Secondly, because the questions in Controversie between us are many, if once we descend unto particulars; that for the easier and more orderly proceeding therein, the most general be first discussed, nor any question left off, nor in each question the prosecution of any one Argument given over and another taken in hand, till the issue whereunto by replys and answers both parts are come, be collected, read and acknowledged as well on the one side as on the other, to be the plain conclusion which they are grown unto. Thirdly, for avoiding of the manifold inconveniences whereunto ordinary and extemporal Disputes are subject, as also because if ye should singly dispute one by one as every mans own wit did best serve, it might be conceived by the rest, that haply some other would have done more, the chiefest of you do all agree in this action, that whom ye shall then chose your speaker, by him that which is publicly brought into disputation be acknowledged by all your consents not to be his allegation but yours, such as ye all are agreed upon, and have required him to deliver in all your names: the true copie whereof being taken by a Notary, that a reasonable time be allowed for return of answer unto you in the like form. Fourthly, whereas a number of conferences have been had in other causes with the less effectual success by reason of partial and untrue reports, published afterwards unto the World; that to prevent this evil, there be at the first a solemn Declaration made



## THE PREFACE.

on both parts of their agreement to have that very Book and no other set abroad, wherein their present authorized Notaries do write those things fully and onely, which being Written and there read, are by their own open testimony acknowledged to be their own. Other circumstances hereunto belonging, whether for the choice of time, place, and language, or for prevention of impertinent and needless speech, or to any end and purpose else, they may be thought on when occasion serveth. In this sort to broach my private conceit for the ordering of a publique action, I should be loth, (albeit I do it not otherwise then under correction of them whose gravity and wisdom ought in such cases to over-rule) but that so venturous boldness I see is a thing novv general, and am thereby of good hope that vvhhere all men are licenced to offend, no man vvill shew himself a sharp Accuser.

6. What successe God may give unto any such kind of Conference or Disputation, vve cannot tell. But of this vve are right sure, that Nature, Scripture, and experience it self, have all taught the World to seek for the ending of contentions, by submitting it self unto some judicial and definitive sentence, vvhereunto neither part that contendeth may under any pretence or colour refuse to stand, this must needs be effectual and strong. As for other means without this, they seldome prevail. I would therefore know whether for the ending of the irksome strifes, wherein you and your fellows do stand thus formally divided against the authorized guides of this Church, and the rest of the people subject unto their charge, whether, I say, ye be contented to refer your cause to any other higher judgement then your own; or else intend to persist and proceed as ye have begun, till your selves can be perswaded to condemne your selves. If your determination be this, we can be but sorry that ye should deserve to be reckoned with such, of whom God himself pronounceth, *The way of peace they have not known.* Ways of peaceable conclusion there are but these two certain: the one, a sentence of judicial decision given by authority thereto appointed within our selves; the other the like kind of sentence given by a more universal authority. The former of which two ways God himself in the law prescribeth, and his spirit it was which directed the very first Christian Churches in the world to use the latter. The ordinance of God in the Law was this. *If there arise a matter too hard for the judgement between blood and blood, between plea, &c. then shalt thou arise, and go up unto the place which the Lord thy God shall choose, and thou shalt come unto the Priests of the Levites, and unto the Judge that shall be in those days, and ask, and they shall shew thee the sentence of judgement, and thou shalt do according to that thing which they of that place which the Lord hath chosen shew thee; and thou shalt observe to do according to all that they informe thee; according to the Law which they shall teach thee, and according to the judgement which they shall tell thee shalt thou do, thou shalt not decline from the thing which they shall shew thee, to the right hand, nor to the left. And that man that will do presumptuously, not hearkning unto the Priest (that standeth before the Lord thy God to Minister there) or unto the Judge, that man shall dye, and thou shalt take away evil from Israel.* When there grew in the Church of Christ a question, *Whether the Gentiles beleiving might be saved, although they were not Circumcised after the manner of Moses, nor did observe the rest of those legal Rites and Ceremonies wherunto the Jews*

No end of contention, without submission of both parts unto some definitive sentence.

Rom. 3. 17.

Deut. 17. 9.

Acts 15.

## THE PREFACE.

*were bound* : After great dissention and disputation about it, their conclusion in the end was to have it determined by sentence at *Jerusalem* : which was accordingly done in a Council there assembled for the same purpose. Are ye able to alleage any just and sufficient cause wherefore absolutely ye should not condescend in this Controversie, to have your judgments over-ruled by some such definitive sentence, whether it fall out to be given with or against you, that so these tedious contentions may cease ? Ye will perhaps make answer, that being perswaded already as touching the truth of your cause, ye are not to harken unto any sentence, no not though Angels should define otherwise, as the blessed Apostles own example teacheth : again, that Men, yea Councils, may erre ; and that unless the judgment given do satisfie your minds, unless it be such as ye can by no further argument oppugne, in a word, unless you perceive and acknowledge it your selves consonant with Gods Word, to stand unto it not allowing it, were to sin against your own consciences. But consider, I beseech you, first, as touching the Apostle, how that wherein he was so resolute and peremptory, our Lord Jesus Christ made manifest unto him, even by intuitive Revelation, wherein there was no possibility of error : That which you are perswaded of, ye have it no otherwise then by your own onely probable collection ; and therefore such bold asseverations as in him were admirable, should in your mouths but argue rashness. God was not ignorant that the Priests and Judges, whose sentence in matters of Controversie he ordained should stand, both might and oftentimes would be deceived in their judgement. Howbeit, better it was in the eye of his understanding, that sometime an erroneous sentence definitive should prevaile, till the same authority perceiving such oversight, might afterwards correct or reverse it, then that strifes should have respite to grow, and not come speedily unto some end. Neither wish we that men should do any thing which in their hearts they are perswaded they ought not to do, but this perswasion ought (we say) to be fully settled in their hearts, that in litigious and controverted causes of such quality, the will of God is to have them to do whatsoever the sentence of judicial and final decision shall determine, yea, though it seem in their private opinion to swerve utterly from that which is right : as no doubt many times the sentence amongst the Jews did seem unto one part or other contending ; and yet in this case God did then allow them to do that which in their private judgement it seemed (yea and perhaps truly seemed) that the Law did disallow. For if God be not the Author of confusion, but of peace ; then can he not be the Author of our refusal, but of our contentment, to stand unto some definitive sentences without which almost impossible it is, that either we should avoid confusion, or ever hope to attain peace. To small purpose had the Council of *Jerusalem* been assembled, if once their determination being set down, men might afterwards have defended their former opinions. When therefore they had given their definitive sentence, all controversie was at an end. Things were disputed before they came to be determined ; men afterwards were not to dispute any longer, but to obey. The sentence of judgment finished their strife, which their disputes before judgement could not do. This was ground sufficient for any reasonable mans conscience to build the duty of obedience upon, whatsoever his own opinion were as touching

## THE PREFACE.

touching the matter before in question. So full of wilfulness and self-liking is our nature, that without some definitive sentence, which being given may stand, and a necessity of silence on both sides afterward imposed; small hope there is that strifes thus far prosecuted, will in short time quickly end. Now it were in vain to ask you whether ye could be content that the sentence of any Court already erected, should be so far authorized as that among the Jews established by God himself, for the determining of all Controversies: *That man which will do presumptuously, not hearkning unto the Priest that standeth before the Lord to minister there, nor unto the Judge, let him die;* Ye have given us already to understand what your opinion is in part concerning her sacred Majesties Court of high Commission, the nature whereof is the same with that amongst the Jews albeit the power be not so great. The other way haply may like you better, because Master Beza in his last Book save one written about these matters, professeth himself to be now wearie of such combats and encounters, whether by word or writing, in as much as he findeth that Controversies thereby are made but Brawls; and therefore wisheth *that in some common lawfull assembly of Churches, all these strifes may at once be decided.* Shall there be then in the meanwhile no doings? Yea. There are the weightier matters of the Law, *judgement and mercie and fidelitie.* These things we ought to do; and these things, while we contend about less, we leave undone. Happier are they, whom the Lord, when he cometh, shall find doing in these things, then disputing about Doctors, Elders and Deacons. Or if there be no remedy but somewhat needs ye must do which may tend to the setting forward of your Discipline; do that which wisemen, who think some Statute of the Realme more fit to be repealed then to stand in force, are accustomed to do before they come to Parliament where the place of enacting is; that is to say, spend the time in re-examining more duly your cause, and in more thoroughly considering of that which ye labour to overthrow. As for the Orders which are established, sith equitie and reason, the Law of nature, God and man, do all favour that which is in being, till orderly judgement of decision be given against it, it is but Iustice to exact of you, and perverseness in you it should be to denie thereunto your willing obedience. Not that I judge it a thing allowable for men to observe those Laws, which in their hearts they are stedfastly perswaded to be against the Law of God: but your perswasion in this case ye are all bound for the time to suspend, and in otherwise doing, ye offend against God, by troubling his Church without any just or necessary cause. Be it that there are some reasons inducing you to think hardly of our laws: Are those reasons demonstrative, are they necessary, or but meer probabilities only? An argument necessary and demonstrative is such, as being proposed unto any man and understood, the mind cannot choose but inwardly assent. Any one such reason dischargeth I grant the conscience, and setteth it at full libertie. For the publike approbation given by the body of this whole Church unto those things which are established, doth make it but probable that they are good: and therefore unto a necessary proof that they are not good, it must give place. But if the skilfullest amongst you can shew that all the Books ye have hitherto written be able to afford any one argument of this nature, let the instance be given. As for probabilities, what thing was there ever set down so agreeable with sound reason, but some probable

*Præf. tract. de  
Excom. &  
Presby.*

*Mat. 23. 23.*



## THE PREFACE.

T.C. 1.3. p.171

probable they against it might be made? is it meet that vvhhen publike-ly things are received and have taken place, general obedience thereunto shall cease to be exacted, in case this or that private person led vvvith some probable conceit, should make open protestation, *Peter or John disallow them, and pronounce them naught?* In vvhich case your answer vvill be, that concerning the Lawvs of our Church, they are not onely condemned in the opinion of a *private man*, but of *thousands*, yea and even of *those amongst which diuers are in publique charge and authority*. As though vvhhen publike consent of the vvhole hath established any thing, every mans judgement being thereunto compared vvhere not private, how-soeuer his calling be to some kind of publike charge. So that of peace and quietness there is not any vvay possible unless the probable voice of every intiresociety or body politique, over-rule all private of like nature in the same body. Which thing effectually proveth, that God being Author of peace and not of confusion in the Church, must needs be Author of those mens peaceable resolutions vvho concerning these things have determined vvith themselves to think and do as the Church they are of decreeth, till they see necessary cause enforcing them to the contrary.

The matter  
contained in  
these eight  
Books,

7. Nor is mine own intent any other in these several books of discourse, then to make it appear unto you; that for the Ecclesiastical Laws of this Land, we are led by great reason to observe them and ye by no necessity bound to impugn them. It is no part of my secret meaning to draw you hereby into hatred, or to set upon the face of this cause any fairer gloss then the naked truth doth afford: but my whole endeavour is to resolve the conscience, and to shew as neer as I can what in the controversie the heart is to think, if it will follow the light of sound and sincere judgement, without either cloud of prejudice or mist of passionate affection. Wherefore seeing that Laws Ordinances in particular, whether and such as we observe, or such as your selves would have established, when the mind doth sift and examine them, it must needs have often recourse to a number of doubts and questions about the nature, kinds, and qualities of Laws in general, whereof unless it be thoroughly informed, there will appear no certainty to stay our perswasion upon: I have for that cause set down in the first place an Introduction on both sides needful to be considered: Declaring therein what Law is, how different kinds of Laws there are, and what force they are of according unto each kind. This done, because ye suppose the Laws for which ye strive are found in Scripture, but those not against which we strive; and upon this surmise are drawn to hold it as the very main pillar of your whole cause, that *Scripture ought to be the onely rule of all our actions*, and consequently that the Church-orders which we observe being not commanded in Scripture, are offensive and displeasing unto God: I have spent the second book in sifting of this point, which standeth with you for the first and chiefest principle whereon ye build. Whereunto the next in degree is, that as God will have always a Church upon earth while the World doth continue, and that Church stand in need of Government, of which Government it behoveth himself to be both the Author and Teacher: So it cannot stand with duty, that man should ever presume in any wise to change and alter the same; and therefore, *that in scripture there must of necessity be found some particular form of Ecclesiastical Polity, the Laws whereof admit not any kind of alteration.*

The

## THE PREFACE.

The first three Books being thus ended, the fourth proceedeth froth the general grounds and foundations of your cause; unto your general accusations against us, as having in the Orders of our Church (for so you pretend) *corrupted the right form of Church-polity with manifold Popish rites and Ceremonies, which certain reformed Churches have banished from amongst them, and have thereby given us such example as (you think) we ought to follow.* This your assertion hath herein drawn us to make search; whether these be just exceptions against the customes of our Church, when ye plead that they are the same which the Church of Rome hath, or that they are not the same which some other Reformed Churches have devised. Of those four Books which remain, and are bestowed about the specialities of that cause which lyeth in Controversie, the first examineth the causes by you alledged; wherefore the publique duties of Christian Religion, as our Prayers, our Sacraments and the rest, should not be ordered in such sort as with us they are; nor that power whereby the persons of men are consecrated unto the Ministry, be disposed of in such manner as the Laws of this Church do allow. The second and third are concerning the power of Jurisdiction: the one, whether Lay-men, such as your governing Elders are; ought in all Congregations for ever to be invested with that power; the other, whether Bishops may have that power over other Pastors, and therewithal that honour which with us they have. And because besides the power of Order which all consecrated persons have, and the power of Jurisdiction which neither they all, nor they onely have, there is a third power, a power of Ecclesiasticall Dominion, communicable, as we think, unto persons not Ecclesiasticall, and most fit to be restrained unto the Prince our Sovereign Commander over the whole body politique. The eight Book we have allotted unto this question, and have sifted therein your objections against those preeminences Royal which thereunto appertain. Thus have I laid before you the brief of these my Travailes, and presented under your view the limmes of that cause litigious between us: the whole intire body whereof being thus compact, it shall be no troublesome thing for any man to find each particular Controversies resting place, and the coherence it hath with those things, either on which it dependeth or which depend on it.

8. The case so standing therefore my brethren, as it doth, the wisdom of Governours ye must not blame, in that they further also forecasting the manifold strange and dangerous innovations, which are more then likely to follow, if your Discipline should take place, have for that cause thought it hitherto a part of their duty to withstand your endeavours that way: the rather, for that they have seen already some small beginnings of the fruits thereof, in them, who concurring with you in judgement about the necessity of that Discipline, have adventured without more ado, to separate themselves from the rest of the Church, and to put your speculations in execution. These mens hastines the warier sorts of you doth not commend, ye wish they had held themselves longer in, and not so dangerously flown abroad before the feathers of the cause had been grown; their error with merciful termes ye reprove, naming them in great commiseration of mind, your *poor brethren*. They on the contrary side more bitterly accuse you as their *false Brethren*, and against you they plead, saying: From your breasts it is; that we have sucked those things, which when ye delivered unto us, ye termed that heavenly,

How just cause there is to fear the manifold dangerous events likely to ensue upon this intended reformation, if it did take place.

1 Pet. 2. 12

sincere,

## THE PREFACE.

Psal 54. 12.

Pref. against  
D. Baner.

sincere, and wholesome milk of Gods Word, howsoever ye now abhor as poyson that which the vertue thereof hath wrought and brought forth in us. Ye sometime our companions, guides, and familiars, with whom we have had most sweet consultations, are now become our professed adversaries, because we think the Statute-Congregations in *England* to be no true Christian Churches; because we have severed our selves from them, and because without their leave or licence that are in Civil Authority, we have secretly framed our own Churches according to the platform of the Word of God. For of that point between you and us there is no controversie. Alas, what would ye have us to do? at such time as ye were content to accept us in the number of your own, your teaching we heard, we read your Writings: and though we would yet able we are not to forget with what zeal ye have ever profest, that in the English Congregations (for so many of them as be ordered according unto their own Laws,) the very publique Service of God is fraught, as touching matter, with heaps of intolerable pollutions, and as concerning form, borrowed from the Shop of Antichrist; hateful both ways in the eyes of the most Holy: the kind of their Government by Bishops and Archbishops, Antichristian, that Discipline which Christ hath essentially tied, that is to say, so united unto his Church, that we cannot account it really to be his Church which hath not in it the same Discipline, that very Discipline no less there despised, then in the highest throne of Antichrist; all such parts of the Word as do any way concern that Discipline, no less unsoundly taught and interpreted by all authorized English Pastors, then by Antichrists factors themselves; at Baptisme Crossing, at the Supper of the Lord kneeling, at both a number of other the most notorious badges of Antichristian recognisance usual. Being moved with these and the like your effectual discourses, whereunto we gave most attentive ear, till they entred even into our souls, and were as fire within our bosoms; we thought we might hereof be bold to conclude, that sith no such Antichristian Synagogue may be accounted a true Church of Christ, ye by accusing all Congregations ordered according to the Laws of *England* as Antichristian, did mean to condemn those Congregations, as not being any of them worthy the name of a true Christian Church. Ye tell us now it is not your meaning. But what meant your often threatnings of them, who professing themselves the Inhabitants of mount *Sion*, were too loth to depart wholly as they should out of *Babylon*? Whereat our hearts being fearfully troubled, we durst not, we durst not continue longer so neer her confines, lest her plagues might suddenly overtake us, before we did cease to be partakers with her sins; for so we could not not chuse but acknowledge with grief that we were, when they doing evil we by our presence in their assemblies seemed to like thereof, or at least wise not so earnestly to dislike, as became men heartily zealous of Gods glory. For adventuring to erect the Discipline of Christ without the leave of the Christian Magistrate, haply ye may condemn us as fools, in that we hazard thereby our estates and persons, further then you which are that way more wise think necessary; but of any offence or sin therein committed against God, with what conscience can you accuse us, when your own positions are, that the things we observe should every of them be dearer unto us then ten thousand lives; that they are the peremptory Commandements of God; that no mortal

man



## THE PREFACE.

man can dispence with them, and that the Magistrate grievously sinneth in not constraining thereunto? Will ye blame any man for doing that of his own accord, which all men should be compelled to do that are not willing of themselves? When God commandeth, shall we answer that we will obey, if so be *Cæsar* will grant us leave? Is Discipline an Ecclesiastical matter or a civil? If an Ecclesiastical, it must of necessity belong to the duty of the Minister. And the Minister (ye say) holdeth all his Authority of doing whatsoever belongeth unto the spiritual charge of the House of God, even immediately from God himself, without dependency upon any Magistrate. Whereupon it followeth, as we suppose, that the hearts of the people being willing to be under the Scepter of Christ, the Minister of God, into whose hands the Lord himself hath put that Scepter, is without all excuse, if thereby he guide them not. Nor do we find that hitherto greatly ye have disliked those Churches abroad where the people with direction of their godly Ministers, have even against the will of the Magistrate brought in either the Doctrine or Discipline of Jesus Christ. For which cause we must now think the very same thing of you, which our Saviour did sometime utter concerning falsehearted Scribes and Pharisees, *They say and do not.* Thus the foolish *Barrowist* deriveth his schisme by way of conclusion, as to him it seemeth, directly and plainly out of your principles. Him therefore we leave to be satisfied by you from whom he hath sprung. And if such by your own acknowledgement be persons dangerous, although as yet the alterations which they have made are of small and tender growth; the changes likely to insue throughout all states and vocations within this Land, in case your desire should take place, must be thought upon. First concerning the supreme power of the highest, they are no small prerogatives, which now thereunto belonging the form of your discipline will constrain it to resigne, as in the last book of this Treatise we have shewed at large. Again it may justly be feared, whether our English Nobility, when the matter came in trial, would contentedly suffer themselves to be always at the call, and to stand to the sentence of a number of mean persons, assisted with the presence of their poor Teacher, a man (as sometimes it happeneth) though better able to speak, yet little or no whit apter to judge then the rest; from whom be their dealing never so absurd (unless it be by way of complaint to a Synod) no appeal may be made unto any one of higher power, inasmuch as the order of your Discipline admitteth no standing in equality of Courts, no spiritual Judge to have any ordinary superior on earth, but as many Supremacies as there are Parishes and several Congregations. Neither is it altogether without cause that so many do fear the overthrow of all learning, as a threatned sequele of this your intended Discipline. For if the *worlds preservation* depend upon the multitude of the wise; and of that sort the number hereafter be not likely to wax over-great, when (that wherewith the son of *Syrach* professeth himself at the heart grieved) *men of understanding* are already so little set by: how should their minds, whom the love of so precious a Jewel fillet with secret jealousie even in regard of the least things which may any way hinder the flourishing estate thereof, chuse but misdoubt lest this Discipline, which always you match with Divine doctrine as her natural and true sister, be found unto all kinds of knowledge a stepmother;

Mat. 23. 3.

Sap. 1. 14.

Ecc. 16. 17.

## THE PREFACE.

seeing that the greatest worldly hopes, which are proposed unto the chiefest kind of learning, ye seek utterly to extirpate as weeds; and have grounded your platform on such propositions, as do after a sort undermine those most renowned habitations, where, through the goodness of Almighty God, all commendable Arts and Sciences are with exceeding great industry hitherto (and so may they for ever continue) studied, proceeded in, and professed. To charge you as purposely bent to the overthrow of that wherein so many of you have attained no small perfection, were injurious. Onely therefore I wish that your selves did well consider how opposite certain of your positions are unto the state of Collegiate societies, whereon the two Universities consist. Those degrees which their statutes bind them to take, are by your Law taken away, your selves who have sought them ye so excuse, as that ye would have men to think ye judge them not allowable, but tolerable onely, and to be born with, for some help which ye find in them unto the furtherance of your purposes, till the corrupt estate of the Church may be better reformed. Your Laws forbidding Ecclesiastical persons utterly the exercise of Civil power, must needs deprive the Heads and Masters in the same Colledges of all such authority as now they exercise, either at home, by punishing the faults of those, who not as children to their parents by the law of Nature, but altogether by civil authority are subject unto them, or abroad, by keeping Courts amongst their Tenants. Your laws making permanent inequality amongst Ministers, a thing repugnant to the Word of God, enforce those Colledges, the Seniors whereof are all or any part of them Ministers under the government of a Master in the same vocation, to choose, as oft as they meet together, a new President. For if so ye judge it necessary to do in Synods, for the avoiding of permanent inequality amongst Ministers, the same cause must needs even in these Collegiate assemblies enforce the like. Except peradventure ye mean to avoid all such absurdities, by dissolving those corporations, and by bringing the Universities unto the forme of the School of Geneva. Which thing men the rather are inclined to look for, in as much as the Ministry, whereinto their founders with singular providence have by the same Statutes appointed them necessarily to enter at a certain time, your Laws bind them much more necessarily to forbear, till some Parish abroad call for them. Your opinion concerning the Law Civil is, that the knowledge thereof might be spared, as a thing which this Land doth not need. Professors in that kind being few, ye are the bolder to spurn at them, and not to dissemble your minds as concerning their removal: in whose studies although my self have not much been conversant, nevertheless exceeding great cause I see there is to wish that thereunto more encouragement were given, as well for the singular treasures of wisdom therein contained, as also for the great use we have thereof both in decision of certain kinds of causes arising dayly within our selves, and especially for commerce with Nations abroad, whereunto that knowledge is most requisite. Thereasons wherewith ye would perswade that Scripture is the onely rule to frame all our actions by, are in every respect as effectual for proof that the same is the onely Law whereby to determine all our Civil controversies. And then what doth let, but that as those men may have their desire; who frankly broach it already that the work of Reformation will never be perfect, till the Law of Jesus Christ be received

*Humb. Motion  
to the L. L. p. 50*

# THE PREFACE.

ved alone; so Pleaders and Councillors may bring their Books of common-Law, and bestow them as the Students of curious and needlesarts did theirs in the Apostles time? I leave them to scan how far those words of yours may reach, wherein ye declare that whereas now many Houses lye wast through inordinate suits of Law, *This one thing will shew the excellency of Discipline for the wealth of the Realm, and quiet of Subjects, that the Church is to censure such a partie who is apparently troublesome and contentious, and without Reasonable Cause upon a meer will and stomack doth vex and molest his Brother, and trouble the Country.* For mine own part I do not see but that it might very well agree with your own principles, if your discipline were fully planted, even to send out your Writs of Surcease unto all Courts of England besides, for the most things handled in them. A great deal further I might proceed and descend lower. But for as much as against all these and the like difficultys, your answer is, That we ought to search what things are consonant to Gods will, not which be most for our own ease; and therefore that your Discipline, being (for such is your error) the absolute commandment of Almighty God it must be received, although the World by receiving it should be clean turned upside-down; herein lieth the greatest danger of all. For whereas the name of Divine Authority is used to countenance these things, which are not the Commandements of God, but your own erroneous collections; on him ye must father whatsoever ye shall afterwards be led, either to do in withstanding the Adversaries of your cause, or to think in maintenance of your doings. And what this may be God doth know. In such kinds of error, the mind once imagining it self to seek the execution of Gods will, laboureth forth with to remove both things and persons, which any way hinder it from taking place; and in such cases if any strange or new thing seem requisite to be done, a strange and new opinion concerning the lawfulness thereof, is withal received and broached under countenance of divine authority. One example herein may serve for many, to shew that false opinions touching the will of God to have things done, are wont to bring forth mighty and violent practices against the hinderances of them; and those practices new opinions more pernicious then the first, yea, most extremely sometimes opposite to that which the first did seem to intend. Where the people took upon them the reformation of the Church by casting out Popish superstition, they having received from their Pastors a general instruction that whatsoever the heavenly Father hath not planted, must be rooted out, proceeded in some forrein places so far, that down went oratories and the very Temples of God themselves. For as they chanced to take the compass of their Commission stricter or larger, so their dealings were accordingly more or less moderate. Amongst others there sprang up presently one kind of men, with whose zeal and forwardness the rest being compared, were thought to be marvellous cold and dull. These grounding themselves on Rules more general; that whatsoever the Law of Christ commandeth not, thereof Antichrist is the author; and that whatsoever Antichrist or his adherents did in the world, the true professors of Christ are to undo, found out many things more then others had done, the extirpation whereof was in their conceit as necessary as of any thing before removed. Hereupon they secretly made their doleful complaints every where as they went, that albeig the world did begin to profess some dislike of that which was

A. 19. 19.

Humb. Met.  
Pag. 74.

Count: rpl.  
Pag. 108.

Mat. 15. 13.

Guy de Brès  
con r. l'erreur  
des Anabaptistes,  
Pag. 4.



# THE PREFACE.

Page 5.

Page 16.  
P. 112, 119.

P. 116. 1. 0.

P. 114.  
Inke 6. 11.

P. 117.

P. 4.

10. 11. 34.

P. 32.

P. 37.

evil in the kingdome of Darknes, yet fruits worthy of a true repentance were not seen; and that if men did repent as they ought, they must endeavour to purge the truth of all manner of evil, to the end there might follow a new World afterward, wherein righteousness onely should dwell. Private repentance they said must appear by every mans fashioning his own life contrary unto the custome and order of this present World, both in greater things and in less. To this purpose they had always in their mouthes those greater things, Charity, Faith, the true fear of God, the Cross, the mortification of the flesh. All their exhortations were to set light of the things in this World, to account riches and honours vanity, and in token thereof not onely to seek neither, but if men were possessors of both, even to cast away the one and resigne the other, that all men might see their unfained conversion unto Christ. They were sollicitors of men to fasts, to often meditations of heavenly things, and as it were conferences in secret with God by prayers, not framed according to the frozen manner of the World, but expressing such fervent desires as might even force God to harken unto them. Where they found men in diet, attire, furniture of House, or any other way observers of civility and decent order, such they reprove as being carnally and earthly minded. Every word otherwise then severely and sadly uttered, seemed to pierce like a sword thorow them. If any man were pleasant, their manner was presently with sighes to repeat those words of our Saviour Christ, *Wo be to you which now laugh, for ye shall lament.* So great was their delight to be always in trouble, that such as did quietly lead their lives, they judged of all other men to be in most dangerous case. They so much affected to cross the ordinary custome in every thing, that when other mens use was to put on better attire, they would be sure to shew themselves openly abroad in worse: the ordinary names of the days in the Week they thought it a kind of prophaneſs to use, and therefore accustomed themselves to make no other distinctions then by numbers, The First, Second, Third day. From this they proceed unto publique Reformation, first Ecclesiastical, and then Civil. Touching the former, they boldly avouched, that themselves onely had the Truth, which thing upon peril of their lives they would at all times defend; and that since the Apostles lived, the same was never before in all points sincerely taught. Wherefore that things might again be brought to that ancient integrity which *Jesus Christ* by his word requireth, they began to contrioll the Ministers of the Gospel for attributing so much force and Vertue unto the Scriptures of God read, whereas the truth was, that when the Word is said to engender Faith in the heart, and to convert the soul of man, or to work any such spirituall divine effects, these speeches are not thereunto appliable as it is read or Preached, but but as it is ingrafted in us by the power of the Holy Ghost opening the eyes of our understanding, and so revealing the mysteries of God, according to that which *Jeremy* promised before should be, saying, *I will put my Law in their inward parts, and I will write it in their hearts.* The Book of God they notwithstanding for the most part so admired, that other disputation against their opinions then onely by allegation of Scripture they would not hear; besides it, they thought no other Writings in the World should be studied; in so much as one of their great Prophets exhorting them to cast away all respects unto humane Writings, so far

to

## THE PREFACE.

to his motion they condescended, that as many as had any Books save the holy Bible in their custody, they brought and set them publicly on fire. When they and their Bibles were alone together, what strange phantastical opinion soever at any time entred into their heads, their use was to think the spirit taught it them. Their phrenses concerning our Saviours incarnation, the state of souls departed, and such like, are things needless to be rehearsed. And for as much as they were of the same Suit with those of whom the Apostle speaketh, saying, *They are still learning, but never attain to the knowledge of truth*, it was no marvail to see them every day broach some new thing, not heard of before. Which restless levity they did interpret to be their growing to spiritual perfection, and a proceeding from faith to faith. The differences amongst them grew by this mean in a manner infinite, so that scarcely was there found any one of them, the forge of whose brain was not possesst with some speciall mystery. Whereupon although their mutual contentions were most fiercely prosecuted amongst themselves, yet when they came to defend the cause common to them all against the Adversaries of their faction, they had ways to lick one another whole, the sounder in his own perswasion, excusing *The dear Brethren*, which were not so far enlightned, and professing a charitable hope of the mercy of God towards them, notwithstanding their swarving from him in some things. Their own Ministers they highly magnified, as men whose Vocation was from God: the rest their manner was to terme disdainfully *Scribes* and *Pharises*, to account their calling an humane Creature, and to detain the people as much as might be from hearing them. As touching Sacraments, Baptisme administred in the Church of *Rome*, They Judged to be but an execrable Mockery and no Baptisme; both because the Ministers thereof in the Papacy are wicked Idolaters, lewd Persons, Theeves and Murderers, cursed Creatures, ignorant Beasts; and also for that to baptize is a proper action belonging unto none but the Church of Christ, whereas *Rome* is Antichrists Synagogue. The custome of using God-fathers and God-mothers at Christnings they scorned. Baptisme of Infants, although confessed by themselves to have been continued even sithence the very Apostles own times, yet they altogether condemned: partly, because sundry errors are of no less antiquity; and partly, for that there is no Commandement in the Gospel of Christ, which saith, *Baptise Infants*; but he contrariwise in saying, *Go Preach and Baptize*, doth appoint that the Minister of Baptisme shall in that action first administer Doctrine, and then Baptisme, as also in saying, *Whosoever doth beleieve and is baptised*, he appointeth that the party to whom Baptisme is administred shall first beleieve; and then be baptized; to the end that beleiving may go before this Sacrament in the receiver, no otherwise then preaching in the Giver, sith equal in both, the Law of Christ declareth not onely what things are required, but also in what order they are required. The Eucharist they received (pretending our Lord and Saviours example) after Supper; and for avoyding all those impieties which have been groundd upon the mysticall words of Christ, *This is my body*, *This is my blood*, they thought it not safe to mention either body or blood in that Sacrament, but rather to abrogate both, and to use no words but these, *Take, eat, declare the death of our Lord: Drink, shew forth our Lords death*. In Rites and Ceremonies

## THE PREFACE.

nies their profession was hatred of all conformity with the Church of Rome : for which cause they would rather indure any torment then observe the solemn festivals which others did, in as much as Antichrist (they said) was the first inveter of them. The pretended end of their civil reformation, was that Christ might have dominion over all, that all Crowns and Scepters might be thrown down at his feet, that no other might raigh over Christian men but he ; no Regiment keep them in aw but his Discipline ; amongst them no Sword at all be carried besides his, the Sword of spiritual Excommunication. For this cause they laboured with all their might in over-turning the seats of Magistracy, because Christ hath said, *Kings of Nations* ; in abolishing the execution of Justice, because Christ hath said, *Resist not evil* ; in forbidding Oaths the necessary means of judicial tryal, because Christ hath said, *Swear not at all* : finally, in bringing in community of goods, because Christ by his Apostles hath given the World such example to the end that men might excel one another, not in wealth the Pillar of secular authority, but in vertue. These men at the first were onely pittied in their error, and not much withstood by any ; the great Humility, Zeal, and Devotion, which appeared to be in them, was in all mens opinion a pledge of their harmless meaning. The hardest that men of sound understanding conceived of them, was but this, *O quam honesta voluntate miseri errant ? With how good a meaning these poor souls do evil* : Luther made request unto Frederick Duke of Saxonie, that within his Dominion they might be favourably dealt with and spared, for that (their error exempted) they seemed otherwise right good men. By means of which merciful toleration they gathered strength, much more then was safe for the State of the Common-wealth wherein they lived. They had their secret corner-meetings and assemblies in the night, the people flocked unto them by thousands. The means whereby they both allured and retayned so great multitudes, were most effectual ; first, a wonderful shew of zeal towards God, wherewith they seemed to be even rapt in every thing they spake : secondly, an hatred of sin, and a singular love of integrity, which men did think to be much more then ordinary in them, by reason of the custome which they had to fill the eares of the people with Invectives against their authorized Guides as well spiritual as Civil : Thirdly the bountiful relief wherewith they eased the broken estate of such needy Creatures, as were in that respect the more apt to be drawn away : Fourthly, a tender compassion which they were thought to take upon the miseries of the common sort, over whose heads their manner was even to poure down showres of tears in complaining that no respect was had unto them, that their goods were devoured by wicked Cormorants, their persons had in contempt, all liberty both Temporal and Spiritual taken from them ; that it was high time for God now to hear their grones, and to send them deliverance : Lastly, a cunning slight which they had to stroke and smooth up the minds of their Followers, as well by appropriating unto them all the favourable Titles, the good words, and the gracious promises in Scripture, as also by casting the contrary always on the heads of such as were severed from that retinue. Whereupon, the peoples common acclamation unto such deceivers was: These are verily the men of God, these are his true and sin-

cero

P. 84.  
P. 849.

P. 40.

*Laflant, de lu-*  
*lit. lib. 5. ca. 19*  
p. 6.

P. 420.

P. 55.

P. 6.  
P. 7.

P. 7.



## THE PREFACE.

cere Prophets. If any such prophet or man of God did suffer by order of Law condign and deserved punishment; were it for Felony, Rebellion, Murder, or what else: the people (so strangely were their hearts enchanted) as though blessed St. *Stephen* had been again Martyred, did lament that God took away his most dear servants from them. In all these things being p. 27. fully perswaded, that what they did, it was Obedience to the will of God, and that all men should do the like; there remayned after speculation, practice, whereby the whole World thereunto (if it were possible) might be framed. This they saw could not be done, but with mighty opposition and resistance: against which to strengthen themselves, they secretly entred into a League of Association: And peradventure considering, that although they were many, yet long Wars would in time wast them out; they began to think whether it might not be that God would have them do for their speedy and mighty increase, the same which sometime Gods own chosen people, the people of *Israel* did. Glad and fain they were to have it so: which very desire was it self apt to breed both an opinion of possibility, and a willingness to gather Arguments of likelihood that so God himself would have it. Nothing more cleer unto their seeming, then that a new *Jerusalem* being often spoken of in Scripture, they undoubtedly were themselves that new *Jerusalem*, and the old did by way of a certain figurative resemblance signifie what they should both be and do. Here they drew in a Sea of matter, by amplifying all things unto their own Company, which are any where spoken concerning divine favours and benefits bestowed upon the old Common-wealth of *Israel*; concluding, that as *Israel* was delivered out of *Egypt*, so they spiritually out of the *Egypt* of this Worlds servile thralldom unto Sin and Superstition; as *Israel* was to root out the Idolatrous Nations, and to plant instead of them a people which feared God; so the same Lords good will and pleasure was now, that these new *Israelites* should under the conduct of other *Josuaes*, *Sampsons* and *Gedeons*, performe a work no less miraculous in casting cut violently the wicked from the Earth, and establishing the Kingdome of Christ with perfect liberty: and therefore as the cause why the Children of *Israel* took unto one man many Wives, might be, lest the casualties of War should any way hinder the promise of God concerning their multitude from taking effect in them; so it was not unlike that for the necessary propagation of Christs Kingdom under the Gospel, the Lord was content to allow as much. Now whatsoever they did in such sort collect out of Scripture, when they came to justifie or perswade it unto others, all was the heavenly fathers appointment, his commandement, his will and charge. Which thing is the very point, in regard whereof I have gathered this declaration. For my purpose herein is to shew that when the minds of men are once erroneiously perswaded, that it is the will of God to have those things done which they Fancy; their opinions are as Thorns in their sides, never suffering them to take rest till they have brought their speculations into practice: the lets and impediments of which practice their restless desire and study to remove, leadeth them every day forth by the hand into other more dangerous opinions, sometimes quite and clean contrary to their first pretended meanings: so as what will grow out of such errors as go masked under the cloke of divine authority, impossible it is, that ever the wit of man should imagine, till time have brought forth the fruits of them: for which

## THE PREFACE.

P. 41.

Mat. 5. 5.

Exod. 17. 2.

Mart. in his 3.  
Libel, p. 28.

Demonstr. in  
the Pref.

which cause it behoveth Wisdom to fear the sequels thereof, even beyond all apparent cause of fear. These men, in whose mouths at the first, sounded nothing but onely mortification of the flesh, were come at the length to think they might lawfully have their six or seven Wives a piece: they which at the first thought Judgement and Justice it self to be merciless cruelty; accompted at the length their own hands sanctified with being imbrued in Christian blood: they who at the first were wont to beat down all Dominion, and to urge against poor Constables, *Kings of Nations*; had at the length both Consels and Kings of their own erection amongst themselves: finally, they which could not brook at the first that any man should seek, no not by law, the recovery of goods injuriously taken or with-held from him, were grown at the last to think they could not offer unto God more acceptable sacrifice, then by turning their Adversaries clean out of house and home, and by enriching themselves with all kind of spoile and pillage; which thing being laid to their charge, they had in a readinesse their answer, that now the time was come, when according to our Saviours promise, *The meek ones must inherit the earth*, and that their title hereunto was the same which the righteous *Israelites* had unto the goods of the wicked *Egyptians*. Wherefore sith the World hath had in these men so fresh experience, how dangerous such active errors are, it must not offend you though touching the sequel of your present misperswasions much more be doubted, then your own intents and purposes do haply aim at. And yet your words already are somewhat, when ye affirm that your Pastors, Doctors, Elders and Deacons, ought to be in this Church of *England*, *Whether her Majesty and our State will or no*, when for the animating of your confederates, ye publish the musters which ye have made of your own Bands, and proclaim them to amount to I know not how many thousands; when ye threaten, that sith neither your suits to the Parliament, nor supplications to our convocation-house, neither your defences by Writing, nor challenges of Disputation in behalf of that cause are able to prevaile, we must blame our selves, if to bring in discipline some such means hereafter be used as shall cause all our hearts to ake. *That things doubtful are to be consigned in the better part*, is a principle not safe to be followed in matters concerning the publique State of a Common weal. But howsoever these and the like speeches be accounted as arrows idely shot at random, without either eye had to any mark, or regard to their lighting place: hath not your longing desire for the practice of your Discipline, brought the matter already unto this demurrer amongst you, whether the people and their godly Pastors that way affected, ought not to make separation from the rest, and to begin the exercise of Discipline without Licence of Civil Powers, which Licence they have sought for, and are not heard? Upon which question, as ye have now devided your selves, the warier sort of you taking the one part, and the forwarder in zeal the other; so in case these earnest Ones should prevail, what other sequel can any wise man imagine but this, that having first resolved that attempts for Discipline without Superiors are lawful, it will follow in the next place to be disputed what may be attempted against Superiors, which will not have the Scepter of that Discipline to rule over them? Yea even by you which have stayed your selves from running head-long with the other sort, somewhat notwithstanding there hath been done without the

## THE PREFACE.

the leave or liking of your lawful Superiors, for the exercise of a part of your Discipline amongst the Clergy thereunto addicted. And lest examination of principal parties therein should bring those things to light, which might hinder and let your proceedings; behold for a bar against that impediment, one Opinion ye have newly added unto the rest even upon this occasion, an Opinion to exempt you from taking Oaths, which may turn to the molestation of your Brethren in that cause. The next Neighbour Opinion whereunto, when occasion requireth, may follow for Dispensation with Oaths already taken; if they afterwards be found to import a necessity of detecting ought which may bring such good men into trouble or damage, whatsoever the cause be. O merciful God, what mans wit is there able to sound the depth of those dangerous fearful evils, whereinto our weak and impotent nature is inclinable to sink it self, rather then to shew an acknowledgement of error in that which once we have unadvisedly taken upon us to defend, against the stream as it were of a contrary publique resolution; Wherefore if we any thing respect their error, who being perswaded even as ye are have gone further upon that perswasion then ye allow, if vve regard the present Stage of the highest Governour placed over us, if the quality and disposition of our Nobles, if the orders and Lawvs of our famous Universities, if the profession of the Civil, or the practice of the Common Law amongst us, if the mischiefs vvhereinto even before our eys so many others have fallen head-long from no less plausible and fair beginnings then yours are; there is in every of these considerations most just cause to fear, lest our hastines to embrace a thing of so perilous consequence, should cause Posterity to feel those evils, vvwhich as yet are more easie for us to prevent, then they vvould be for them foremedy.

9. The best and safest way for you therefore my dear Brethren is, to call your deeds past to a new reckoning, to re-examine the cause ye have taken in hand, and to try it even point by point, argument by argument, with all the diligent exactness ye can; to lay aside the gall of that bitterness wherein your minds have hitherto over-abounded, and with meekness to search the truth. Think ye are men, deem it not impossible for you to erre: sift impartially your own hearts, whether it be force of reason, or vehemency of affection, which hath bred, and still doth feed these opinions in you. If Truth do any where manifest it self, seek not to smother it with glozing Delusion, acknowledge the greatness thereof, and think it your best Victory when the same doth prevaile over you.

That ye have been earnest in speaking or writing, again and again the contrary way, should be no blemish or discredit at all unto you. Amongst so many so huge Volumes, as the infinite paines of St. *Augustine* have brought forth, what one hath gotten him greater love, commendation and honour, then the book wherein he carefully collected his own oversights, and sincerely condemneth them? Many speeches there are of *Jobs*, whereby his Wisdom and other Vertues may appear: but the glory of an Ingenuous mind he hath purchased by these words onely, Behold, I will lay mine hand on my mouth; I have spoken once, yet will I not therefore maintain Argument; yea twice, howbeit for that cause further I will not proceed. Far more comfort it were for us (so small is the joy we take in these strifes) to labour under the same yoke, as men that look for the

The conclusion of all.

Iob. 49. 37.

same



## THE PREFACE.

same eternal reward of their Labours, to be injoyed with you in bands of indissolvable love and amity, to live as if our persons being many, our souls were but one, rather in such dismembred sort to spend our few and wretched days in a tedious prosecution of wearisome contentions: the end whereof, if they have not some speedy end, will be heavy even on both sides. Brought already we are even to that estate which *Gregory Nazianzen* mournfully describeth, saying,

*Greg. Naz. in  
Apol.*

*My mind leadeth me (sith there is no remedy) to flie and to convey my self into some corner out of sight, where I may scape from this cloudie tempest of maliciouſness, whereby all parts are entred into a deadly war amongst themselves, and that little remnant of love which was, is now consumed to nothing. The onely godlinesse we glory in, is to find out somewhat whereby we may judge others to be ungodly. Each others faults we observe, as matter of exprobration, and not of grief. By these mean we are grown hateful in the eyes of the Heathens themselves; and (which woundeth us the more deeply) able we are not to deny but that we have deserved their hatred. With the better sort of our own, our fame and credit is cleane lost. The less we are to marvel if they judge wisely of us, who although we did well, would hardly allow thereof. On our backs they also build that are lewd, and what we object one against another, the same they use to the utter scorn and disgrace of us all. This we have gained by our mutuall home-dissentions. This we are worthily rewarded with, which are more forward to strive, then becommeth men of vertuous and mild disposition. But our trust in the Almighty is, that with us contentions are at now at the highest stote, and that the day will come (for what cause of despaire is there?) when the passions of former enmity being allayed, we shall with ten times redoubled tokens of our unfained reconciled love, shew our selves each towards other the same, which *Joseph* and the brethren of *Joseph* were at the time of their enter-viue in *Egypt*. Our comfortable expectation and most thirsty desire whereof what man soever amongst you shall any way help to satisfie, (as we truly hope there is no one amongst you but some way or other will) the blessings of the God of Peace both in this World and in the World to come, be upon him more then the stars of the Firmament in number.*



## What things are handled in the Books Following.

**T**He first Book, concerning Laws in General.

*The second, Of the use of Divine Law contained in Scripture, whether that be the onely Law which ought to serve for our direction in all things without exception.*

*The third, Of Laws concerning Ecclesiastical Polity: whether the form thereof be in Scripture so set down, that no addition or change is lawful.*

*The fourth, Of general exceptions taken against the Laws of our Polity, as being Popish and banished out of certain Reformed Churches.*

*The fifth, Of our Laws that concern the publique religious duties of the Church: and the manner of bestowing that power of order, which inableth men in sundry degrees and callings to execute the same.*

*The*

---

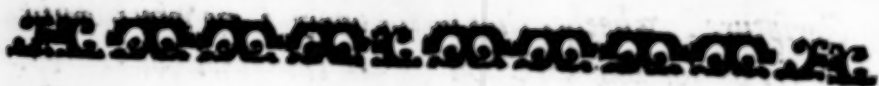
## THE CONTENTS.

---

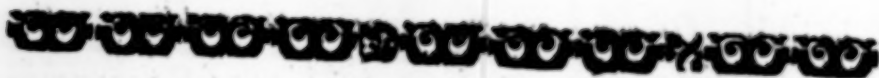
*The sixth, Of the power of Iurisdiction, which therefor-  
med platforme claymeth unto Lay-Elders, with others.*

*The seventh, Of the power of Iurisdiction, and the honor  
which is annexed thereunto in Bishops.*

*The eighth, Of the power of Ecclesiastical Dominion or  
supreme Authority, which with us the highest Governour  
or Prince hath, as well in regard of domestical Iurisdic-  
tions, as of that other forrainly claimed by the Bishop of  
Rome.*



OF





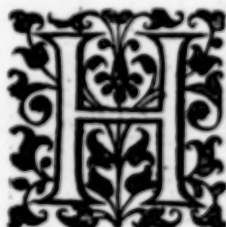
# O F T H E L A W S O F Ecclesiastical Politie.

## *The First Book.*

Concerning Laws, and their severall kinds in general.

### The Matter contained in this First Book.

- 1 **T**He cause of writing this general discourse concerning laws.
- 2 Of that law which God from before the beginning hath set for himself, to do all things by.
- 3 The law which natural agents observe, and their necessary manner of keeping it.
- 4 The law which the Angels of God obey.
- 5 The law whereby man is in his actions directed to the imitation of God.
- 6 Mens first beginning to understand that law.
- 7 Of mans will, which is the first thing that laws of action are made to guide.
- 8 Of the natural finding out of laws by the light of reason to guide the will unto that which is good.
- 9 Of the benefit of keeping that law which reason teacheth.
- 10 How reason doth lead men unto the making of humane laws whereby Politick Societies are governed, and to agreement about laws whereby the fellowship or communion of Independent Societies standeth.
- 11 Wherefore God hath by Scripture further made known such supernatural laws as do serve for mens direction.
- 12 The cause why so many natural or rational laws are set down in holy Scripture.
- 13 The benefit of having divine laws written.
- 14 The sufficiency of Scripture unto the end for which it was instituted.
- 15 Of laws positive contained in Scripture; the mutability of certain of them, and the general use of Scripture.
- 16 A conclusion, shewing how all this belongeth to the cause in question.



**H**E that goeth about to perswade a multitude, that they are not so well governed as they ought to be, shall never want attentive and favourable hearers; because they know the manifold defects whereunto every kind of regiment is subject; but the secret lets and difficulties, which in publique proceeding are innumerable and inevitable, they have not ordinarily the judgment to consider. And because such as openly reprove supposed disorders of state are taken for principal friends to the common benefit of all, and for men that carry singular freedom of mind; under this fair and plausible colour whatsoever they utter, passeth for good and current. That which wanteth in the waight of their speech, is supplied by the aptness of mens minds

The cause of writing this general discourse.

to accept and believe it. Whereas on the other side, if we maintaine things that are established, we have not onely to strive with a number of heavy prejudices deeply rooted in the hearts of men, who think that herein we serve the time, and speak in favor of the present state, because thereby we either hold or seek preferment; but also to bear such exceptions as minds so averted before-hand, usually take against that which they are loth should be poured into them. Albeit therefore much of that we are to speak in this present cause, may seem to a number perhaps tedious, perhaps obscure, dark, and intricate, (for many talk of the truth, which never founded the depth from whence it springeth; and therefore when they are led thereunto, they are soon weary, as men drawn from those beaten paths wherewith they have been inured: ) yet this may not so far prevail, as to cut off that which the matter it self requireth, howsoever the nice humor of some be therewith pleased or no. They unto whom we shall seem tedious, are in no wise injured by us, because it is in their own hands to spare that labour which they are not willing to indure. And if any complain of obscurity, they must consider, that in these matters it cometh not otherwise to pass, then in sundry the works both of art and also of nature, where that which hath greatest force in the very things we see, is notwithstanding it self often times not seen. The stateliness of houses, the goodliness of trees, when we behold them delighteth the eye; but that foundation which beareth up the one, that root which Ministreth unto the other nourishment and life, is in the bosome of the earth concealed; and if there be occasion at an time to search into it, such labour is then more necessary then pleasant, both to them which undertake it, and for the lookers on. In like manner, the use & benefit of good laws, all that live under them may enjoy with delight and comfort, albeit the grounds and first original causes from whence they have sprung be unknown, as to the greatest part of men they are. But when they who withdraw their obedience, pretend that the laws which they should obey are corrupt and vicious; for better examination of their quality, it becometh the very foundation and root, the highest well spring and fountain of them to be discovered. Which because we are not oftentimes accustomed to do, when we do it, the paynes we take are more needful a great deal then acceptable, and the matters which we handle seem by reason of newness, (till the mind grow better acquainted with them) dark, intricate, and unfamiliar. For as much help whereof as may be in this case, I have endeavoured thorowout the body of this whole discourse, that every former part might give strength unto all that follow, and every latter bring some light unto all before. So that if the judgments of men do but hold themselves in suspence as touching these first more general meditations, till in order they have perused the rest that ensue: what may seem dark at the first, will afterwards be found more plain, even as the latter particular decisions will appear I doubt not more strong, when the other have been read before. The Laws of the Church, whereby for so many Ages together we have been guided in the exercise of Christian Religion, and the service of the true God, our Rites, Customs, and Orders of Ecclesiastical Government, are called in question; we are accused as men that will not have Christ Jesus to rule over them: but have wilfully cast his statutes behind their backs, hating to be reformed and made subject unto the Scepter of his Discipline. Behold therefore we offer the laws whereby we live, unto the general trial and judgment of the whole world; heartily beseeching Almighty God, whom we desire to serve according to his own will, that both we and others (all kind of partial affection being clean laid aside) may have eyes to see, and hearts to imbrace the things that in his sight are most acceptable. And because the point about which we strive is the quality of our laws, our first entrance hereinto cannot better be made, then with consideration of the nature of law in general, and of that law which giveth life unto all the rest which are commendable, just, and good, namely the law whereby the Eternal himself doth work. Proceeding from hence to the law, first of Nature, then of Scripture, we shall have the easier access unto those things which come after to be debated, concerning the particular cause and question which we have in hand.

Of that Law  
which God  
from before  
the beginning  
hath set for  
himself to do  
all things by.

2. All things that are, have some operations not violent or casual. Neither doth any thing ever begin to exercise the same, without some fore-conceived end for which it worketh. And the end which it worketh for, is not obtained, unless the work be also fit to obtain it by; for unto every end, every operation will not serve.

That

That which doth assign unto each thing the kind, that which doth moderate the force and power, that which doth appoint the form and measure of working, the same we term a *Law*. So that no certain end could ever be attained, unless the actions whereby it is attained were regular, that is to say, made suitable, fit, and correspondent unto their end, by some Canon, Rule or Law: Which thing doth first take place in the works even of God himself. All things therefore do work after a sort according to Law: all other things according to a Law, whereof some Superiour unto whom they are subject is Author; onely the works and operations of God, have him both their worker, and for the Law whereby they are wrought. The being of God, is a kind of Law to his working: for that perfection which God is, giveth perfection to that he doth. Those natural, necessary, and internal operations of God, the generation of the Son, the proceeding of the Spirit, are without the compass of my present intent: which is to touch only such operations as have their beginning and being by a voluntary purpose, wherewith God hath eternally decreed when and how they should be; Which eternal decree is that we term an eternal Law. Dangerous it were for the feeble brain of man to wade far into the doings of the most High; whom although to know be life, and joy to make mention of his Name; yet our foundest knowledg is, to know that we know him not as indeed he is, neither can know him; and our safest eloquence concerning him is our silence, when we confess without confession, that his glory is inexplicable, his greatness above our capacity and reach. He is above, and we upon earth; therefore it behoveth our words to be wary and few. Our God is one, or rather very *Oneness*, and meer unity, having nothing but it self in it self, and not consisting (as all things do besides God) of many things. In which essential unity of God, a Trinity personal nevertheless subsisteth, after a manner far exceeding the possibility of mans conceit. The works which outwardly are of God, they are in such sort of him being one, that each person hath in them somewhat peculiar and proper. For being three, and they all subsisting in the essence of one deity, from the Father, by the Son, through the Spirit, all things are. That which the Son doth hear of the Father, and which the Spirit doth receive of the Father and the Son, the same we have at the hands of the Spirit, as being the last, and therefore the nearest unto us in order, although in power the same with the second and the first. The wise and learned amongst the very Heathens themselves have all acknowledged some first cause, whereupon originally the being of all things dependeth. Neither have they otherwise spoken of that cause than as an Agent, which knowing *what* and *why* it worketh, observeth in working a most exact *Order* or *Law*. Thus much is signified by that which *Homer* mentioneth, (a) *Διὸς δ' ἰταλότης κόσμος*. Thus much acknowledged by *Mercurius Trismegist*. (b) *Τὸ πρῶτον αἰῶνος ἰσχυρὸν ἰδμεν ὅτι ἐστὶν ἀλόγιστον*. Thus much confessed by *Anaxagoras* and *Plato*, terming the maker of the world an *Intellectual* worker. Finally the Stoicks, although imagining the first cause of all things to be fire, held nevertheless that the same fire having art, did (c) *ὁ δὲ καθ' ἑαυτὸν ἐν νόμῳ κτίσας*. They all confess therefore in the working of that first cause, that *Counsel* is used, *Reason* followed, a *Way* observed, that is to say, constant *Order* and *Law* is kept, whereof it self must needs be author unto it self. Otherwise it should have some worthier and higher to direct it, and so could not it self be the first, being the first it can have no other then it self to be the author of that Law which it willingly worketh by. God therefore is a Law both to himself, and to all other things besides. To himself he is a Law in all those things whereof our Saviour speaks, saying, *My Father worketh ab yet, so I. God worketh nothing without cause*. All those things which are done by him, have some end for which they are done: and the end for which they are done, is a reason of his will to do them. His will had not inclined to create woman, but that he saw it could not be well if she were not created, *Non est bonum, It is not good man should be alone*; therefore let us make an helper for him. That and nothing else is done by God, which to leave undone were not so good. If therefore it be demanded, why God having power and ability infinite, the effects notwithstanding of that power are all so limited as we see they are: the reason here of is, the end which he hath proposed, and the Law whereby his wisdom hath stinted the effects of his power in such sort, that it doth not work infinitely, but correspondently unto that end for which it worketh, even all things, *ex ordine*, in most decent and comely sort, all things in *measure*, *number*, and *weight*. The general end of Gods externall working, is the exercise of his

John 16. 13. 14  
15.

(a) Jupiters  
counsel was  
accomplished.

(b) The creator  
made the  
whole world  
not with hands  
but by reason.  
Stob. in eclog.  
phys.

(c) Proceeded by  
a certain and  
a set way in  
the making of  
the world.  
John 5. 17.

Gen. 1. 13.



Sapi. 9. 1.  
Sapi. 11. 17.

Ephes. 1. 7.  
Phil. 4. 19.  
Col. 3. 2.  
Prov. 16. 4.

Ephes. 1. 17.

1. Cor. 11. 33.

Prov. 3. 13.

Rom. 11. 36.  
Boet. lib. 4. de  
consol. Philof.

2 Tim. 1. 13.  
Heb. 6. 17.

The law which  
natural agents  
have given  
them to ob-  
serve, and  
their necessity  
manner of  
keeping it.

most glorious and most abundant vertue. Which abundance doth shew it self in variety, and for that cause this variety is oftentimes in Scripture express by the name of riches. *The Lord hath made all things for his own sake.* Not that any thing is made to be beneficial to him, but all things for him to shew beneficence and grace in them. The particular drift of every act proceeding externally from God, we are not able to discern, and therefore cannot alwayes give the proper and certain reason of his works. Howbeit undoubtedly, a proper and certain reason there is of every finite work of God, in as much as there is a law imposed upon it, which if there were not, it should be infinite even as the Worker himself is. They erre therefore who think that of the will of God to do this or that, there is no reason besides his will. Many times no reason known to us; but that there is no reason thereof, I judge it most unreasonable to imagine, in as much as he worketh all things, *et quod vult facit, et quod vult non facit*, not onely according to his own will, but *the counsell of his own will.* And whatsoever is donewith counsel or wise resolution, hath of necessity some reason why it should be done, albeit that reason be to us in some things so secret, that it forceth the wit of man to stand, as the blessed Apostle himself doth, amazed thereat, *O the depth of the riches, both of the wisdom and knowledge of God! How unsearchable are his judgments, &c.* That Law eternal which God himself hath made to himself, and thereby worketh all things whereof he is the cause and Author, that law in the admirable frame whereof shineth with most perfect beauty the countenance of that wisdom which hath testified concerning her self, *The Lord possessed me in the beginning of his way, even before his works of old I was set up;* that Law which hath been the Pattern to make, and is the Card to guide the World by; that Law which hath been of God, & with God everlastingly; that Law the Author and Observer whereof is one onely God, to be blessed for ever; how should either Men or Angels be able perfectly to behold? The Book of this Law we are neither able nor worthy to open and look into. That little thereof which we darkly apprehend, we admire; the rest, with religious ignorance, we humbly and meekly adore. Seeing therefore that according to this Law he worketh, *of whom, through whom, and for whom are all things;* although there seem unto us confusion and disorder in the affairs of this present world; *Tamen quoniam bonus mundum rector temperat, recte fieri cuncta ne dubites,* Let no man doubt but that every thing is well done, because the World is ruled by so good a Guide as transgresseth not his own Law, then which, nothing can be more absolute, perfect, and just. The Law whereby he worketh, is eternal, and therefore can have no shew or colour of mutability: for which cause, a part of that Law being opened in the promises which God hath made (because his promises are nothing else but declarations what God will do for the good of men) touching those promises the Apostle hath witnessed, that God may as possibly deny himself, and not be God, as fail to perform them. And concerning the counsel of God, he termeth it likewise a thing *unchangeable*; the counsel of God, and that Law of God whereof now we speak being one. Nor is the freedom of the will of God any whit abated, let or hindered by means of this; because the imposition of this Law upon himself, is his own free and voluntary act. This Law therefore we may name eternal, being *that order which God before all Ages hath set down with himself, for himself to do all things by.*

3. I am not ignorant, that by *Law Eternal*, the Learned for the most part do understand the order, not which God hath eternally purposed himself in all his works to observe, but rather that which with himself he hath set down as expedient to be kept by all his creatures, according to the several conditions wherewith he hath endued them. They who thus are accustomed to speak, apply the name of *Law* unto that onely rule of working which Superiour Authority imposeth; whereas we somewhat more enlarging the sense thereforeof, term any kinde of Rule or Canon whereby actions are framed, a Law. Now that Law, which as it is laid up in the bosom of God, they call *Eternal*, receiveth according unto the different kinde of things which are subject unto it, different and sundry kinde of names. That part of it which ordereth natural Agents, we call usually *Natures Law*: that which Angels do clearly behold, and without any swerving observe, is a Law *Celestial* and heavenly: the Law of *Reason*, that which bindeth creatures reasonable in this World, and with which by reason they may most plainly perceive themselves bound; that which bindeth them, and is not known but by special revelation from God, *Divine Law*: *Humane Law*, that

that which out of the Law either of Reason or of God, men probably gathering to be expedient, they make it a law. All things therefore, which are as they ought to be, are conformed unto this *second Law Eternal*; and even those things which to this *Eternal Law* are not conformable, are notwithstanding in some sort ordered by the *first Eternal Law*. For what good or evil is there under the Sun, what action correspondent or repugnant unto the Law which God hath imposed upon his creatures, but in or upon it God doth work according to the Law which himself hath eternally purposed to keep; that is to say, the *first Law Eternal*? So that a twofold Law *Eter-*

nal being thus made, it is not hard to conceive how they both take place in all things. Wherefore to come to the Law of Nature, albeit thereby we sometimes mean that manner of working which God hath set for each created thing to keep: yet for as much as those things are termed most properly natural Agents, which keep the Law of their kinde unwittingly, as the Heavens and Elements of the World, which can do no otherwise then they do; and for as much as we give unto intellectual natures the name of *voluntary Agents*, that so we may distinguish them from the other, expedient it will be, that we sever the Law of Nature observed by the one, from that which the other

\* Idcirco quod in rebus creatis fit, est materia legis eter-  
nae. *Th. 1. 2. q. 13. art. 4. 5. 6.* Nullo modo aliquid legi-  
bus summi creatoris ordinationique subrahatur, à quo per  
universitatis admittitur. *Aug. de Creat. Dei, lib. 19. c. 21.*  
*Immo & peccatum, quatenus à Deo iussu permissum, cadit in*  
*legem æternam. Etiam legi æterna subijciuntur peccatum; qua-*  
*tenus voluntaria legi in ingressu peccati quoddam incommo-  
dum animæ inferit, iuxta illud Augustini, Iussu Domini, & sic est,*  
*ut peccata sua sibi sit deinde animus inordinatus. Confess. lib.*  
*1. cap. 18. Nec male scholastici, Quemadmodum iniquitas*  
*videmus res naturales contingentes, hoc ipso quod à fine*  
*particulari suo, atque ad id à lege æternæ exorbitant, in can-*  
*onem legum æternam incidere, quatenus consequuntur ali-*  
*um finem à lege etiam æternæ ipsi in casu particulari con-*  
*stitutum: sic verisimile est homines etiam cum peccant &*  
*deficiunt à lege æternæ ut peccipientes, reincidente in ordi-*  
*nem æternæ legis ut punientis.*

is tied unto. Touching the former, their strict keeping of one Tenure, Statute, and Law is spoken of by all, but hath in it more then men have at yet attained to know, or perhaps ever shall attain, seeing the travel of wading herein is given of God to the sons of men, that perceiving how much the least thing in the world hath in it, more then the wisest are able to reach unto, they may by this means learn humility. *Moses*, in describing the work of Creation, attributeth speech unto God; *God said, Let there be light: let there be a firmament: let the waters under the heavens be gathered together into one place: let the earth bring forth: let there be lights in the firmament of heaven.* Was this onely the intent of *Moses*, to signify the infinite greatness of Gods Power, by the easiness of his accomplishing such effects, without travel, pain, or labour? Surely it seemeth that *Moses* had herein, besides this, a further purpose, namely, first, to teach that God did not work as a necessary, but a voluntary Agent, intending before-hand, and decreeing with himself, that which did outwardly proceed from him. Secondly, to shew that God did then institute a Law natural to be observed by creatures; and therefore according to the manner of Laws, the Institution thereof is described, as being established by solemn injunction. His commanding those things to be which are, and to be in such sort as they are, to keep that tenure and course which they do, importeth the establishment of Natures Law. This worlds first Creation, and the preservation since of things created, what is it, but onely so far forth a manifestation by execution, what the eternal Law of God is concerning things natural? And as it cometh to pass in a Kingdom rightly ordered, that after a Law is once published, it presently takes effect far and wide, all States framing themselves thereunto; even so let us think it fareth in the natural course of the world: Since the time that God did first proclaim the Edicts of his law upon it, Heaven and earth have hearkned unto his voice, and their labour hath been to do his will: *He made a law for the Rain, He gave his decree unto the Sea, that the Waters should not pass his commandment.* Now, if nature should intermit her course, and leave altogether, though it were but for a while, the observation of her own Laws; those principal and Mother Elements of the World, whereof all things in this lower world are made, should lose the qualities which now they have; if the frame of that Heavenly Arch erected over our heads should loosen and dissolve it self; if Celestial Spheres should forget their wonted motions, and by irregular volubility turn themselves any way as it might happen; if the Prince of the Lights of Heaven, which now as a Gyant doth run his unwearied course, should, as it were, through a languishing faintness, begin to stand, and to rest himself; if the Moon should wander from her beaten way, the times and seasons of the year blende themselves, by disordered and

*Psal. 19. 5.*







This is intima-  
ted wherefor-  
ever we finde  
them termed  
the sons of  
G. d. as Job 1.  
2. and 38. 7.  
2 Pet. 1. 4.  
Ep. lud. 7. 6.  
Psal. 148. 2.  
Luk. 1. 3.  
Mat. 25. 13.  
Psal. 148. 2.  
Heb. 1. 13.  
Apoc. 12. 9.

ble love, arising from the visible apprehension of the purity, glory, and beauty of God, invisible, saving onely unto Spirits that are pure: secondly, adoration, grounded upon the evidence of the greatness of God, on whom they see how all things depend: thirdly, imitation, bred by the presence of his exemplary goodness, who ceaseth not before them daily to fill Heaven and Earth with the rich treasures of most free and undeserved grace. Of Angels, we are not to consider onely what they are, and do, in regard of their own being, but that also which concerneth them as they are linked into a kinde of corporation amongst themselves, and of society or fellowship with men. Consider Angels each of them severally in himself, and their Law is that which the Prophet *David* mentioneth, *All ye his Angels praise him*. Consider the Angels of God associated, and their Law is that which disposeth them as an *Army*, one in order and degree above another. Consider finally the Angels, as having with us that communion which the Apostle to the *Hebrews* noteth, and in regard whereof, Angels have not disdained to profess themselves our *fellow-servants*: From hence there springeth up a third Law, which bindeth them to works of ministerial employment. Every of which their several functions, are by them performed with joy. A part of the Angels of God notwithstanding (we know) have fallen, and that their fall hath been through the voluntary breach of that Law, which did require at their hands continuance in the exercise of their high and admirable vertue. Impossible it was, that ever their will should change or encline to remit any part of their duty, without some object having force to avert their conceit from God, and to draw it another way; and that before they attained that high perfection of bliss, wherein now the elect Angels are without possibility of falling. Of any thing more then of God, they could not by any means like, as long as whatsoever they knew besides God, they apprehended it not in it self, without dependency upon God; because so long God must needs seem infinitely better then any thing which they so could apprehend. Things beneath them, could not in such sort be presented unto their eyes, but that therein they must needs see always how those things did depend on God. It seemeth therefore that there was no other way for Angels to sin, but by reflex of their understanding upon themselves; when being held with admiration of their own sublimity and honour, the memory of their subordination unto God, and their dependency on him was drowned in this conceit, whereupon their adoration, love, and imitation of God, could not choose but be also interrupted. The fall of Angels therefore was pride. Since their fall, their practices have been the clean contrary unto those before mentioned: For being dispersed, some in the ayre, some on the earth, some in the water, some amongst the minerals, dens and caves, that are under the earth; they have by all means laboured to effect an universal rebellion against the laws, and as far as in them lieth, utter destruction of the works of God. These wicked spirits the Heathens honoured instead of Gods, both generally under the name of *Dii inferi*, Gods infernal; and particularly, some in Oracles, some in Idols, some as household Gods, some as Nymphs; in a word, no foul and wicked spirit, which was not one way or other honoured of men as God, till such time as light appeared in the World, and dissolved the works of the Devil. Thus much therefore may suffice for Angels, the next unto whom in degree are men.

John 8. 44.  
1 Pet. 5. 8.  
Apoc. 9. 11.  
Gen. 1. 15.  
1 Chro. 21. 1.  
Job 4. 7. & 2. 5.  
John 13. 2.  
Acts 1. 3.  
Apoc. 20. 8.

The law where-  
by man is in  
his actions di-  
rected to the  
imitation of  
God.

Hebra. 7. 2.  
carnu. 1. 1. 1.  
Arist. 1. 2. 1.  
lib. 1. 2. 1.

5. God alone excepted, vvhich actually and everlastingly is vvhathsoever he may be, and vvhich cannot hereafter be that vvhich novv he is not; all other things besides are somevvhat in possibility, vvhich as yet they are not in act. And for this cause, there is in all things an appetite or desire, whereby they incline to something which they may be; and when they are it, they shall be perfecter then now they are. All which perfections are contained under the general name of *Goodness*. And because there is not in the vvhorld any thing vvhereby another may not some vvay be made the perfecter, therefore all things that are, are good. Again, sith there can be no goodness desired, vvhich proceedeth not from God himself, as from the Supreme cause of all things; and every effect doth after a sort contain, at least vvise resemble the cause from vvvhich it proceedeth; all things in the vvhorld are said, in some sort, to seek the highest, and to cover more or less the participation of God himself. Yet this doth novvhere so much appear, as it doth in man, because there are so many kindes of perfections vvhich man seeketh. The first degree of goodness, is that general perfection vvhich all things do seek, in desiring the continuance of their being.





Ramus.

know, not greatly regard) there would undoubtedly be almost as great difference in maturity of judgement between men therewith inured, and that which now men are, as between men that are now and Innocents. Which speech, if any condemn, as being over Hyperbolical, let them consider but this one thing. No Art is at the first finding out so perfect, as industry may after make it: Yet the very first man, that to any purpose knew the way we speak of, and followed it, hath alone thereby performed more very neer in all parts of natural knowledge, then sithence in any one part thereof, the whole World besides hath done. In the poverty of that other new-devised aid, two things there are notwithstanding singular. Of marvellous quick dispatch it is, and doth shew them that have it, as much almost in three days, as if it had dwelt threescore years with them. Again, because the curiosity of mans wit doth many times with peril wade farther in the search of things, then were convenient: the same is thereby restrained unto such generalities, as everywhere offering themselves, are apparant unto men of the weakest conceit that need be. So as following the Rules and Precepts thereof, we may finde it to be an Art, which teacheth the way of speedy Discourse, and restraineth the minde of man, that it may not vvax over-vvise. Education and Instruction are the means, the one by use, the other by Precept, to make our natural faculty of reason, both the better and the sooner able to judge rightly between Truth and Errour, good and evil. But at vvhat time a man may be said to have attained so far forth the use of reason, as sufficeth to make him capable of those Laws, whereby he is then bound to guide his actions; this is a great deal more easie for common sense to discern, then for any man by Skill and Learning to determine; even as it is not in Philosophers, vvho best knovv the nature both of Fire and Gold, to teach vvhat degree of the one vvill serve to purifie the other, so vvell as the Artizan (vvho doth this by fire) discerneth by sense, vvhen the fire hath that degree of heat vvich sufficeth for his purpose.

Of mans will,  
which is the  
thing that  
laws of action  
are made to  
guide.  
Ephes. 4. 23.

Sa. 12.

Mat. 6. 1.

Deut. 30. 19.

7. By reason man attaineth unto the knowvledge of things that are, and are not sensible; it resteth therefore, that vve search hovv man attaineth unto the knowvledge of such things unsensible, as are to be knovvn that they may be done. Seeing then that nothing can move, unless there be some end, the desire vvhereof provoketh unto motion; hovv should that divine povver of the Soul, that *Spirit of our minde*, as the Apostle termeth it, ever stir it self unto action, unless it have also the like spur? The end for vvich vve are moved to vvork, is sometimes the goodnesse vvich vve conceive of the very vvorking it self, vvithout any further respect at all; and the cause that procureth action, is the meer desire of action, no other good besides being thereby intended. Of certain turbulent vvits it is said, *Illis quiesca movere magna merces videbatur*. They thought the very disturbance of things established, an hire sufficient to set them on vvork. Sometimes that vvich vve do is referred to a further end, vvithout the desire vvhereof, vve vvould leave the same undone, as in their actions that gave Alms, to purchase thereby the praise of men. Man in perfection of nature, being made according to the likeness of his Maker, resembleth him also in the manner of vvorking; so that vvhatsoever vve vvork as men, the same vve do vvittingly vvork, and freely; neither are vve according to the manner of natural agents any way so tied, but that it is in our povver to leave the things we do undone. The good which either is gotten by doing, or which consisteth in the very doing it self, causeth not action, unless apprehending it as good, we so like and desire it. That we do unto any such end, the same we choofe and prefer before the leaving of it undone. Choice there is not, unless the thing vvich vve take, be so in our povver, that vve might have refused and left it. If fire consume the stubble, it chooseth not so to do, because the nature thereof is such, that it can do no other. To choofe, is to vvill one thing before another; and to vvill, is to bend our souls to the having or doing of that vvich they see to be good: Goodnesse is seen vvith the eye of the understanding; and the light of that eye, is Reason: So that tvo principal fountains there are of humane action, *Knowledge* and *Will*; vvich vvill in things tending tovvards any end, is termed *Choice*. Concerning Knowledge; Behold, saith, *Moses, I have set before you this day good and evil, life and death*. Concerning Will, he addeth immediately *Choose life*; that is to say, the things that tend unto life, them choofe. But of one thing vve must have special care, as being a matter of no small moment; and that is, hovv the vvill properly and strictly taken, as it

is of things vvhich are referred unto the end that man desireth, differeth greatly from that inferiour natural desire vvhich we call appetite. The object of appetite is, vvhatsoeuer sensible good may be vvhished for; the object of vwill is, that good vvhich reason doth lead us to seek. Affections, as joy, and grief, and fear, and anger, vvvith such like, being as it were the sundry fashions and forms of appetite, can neither rise at the conceit of a thing indifferent, nor yet choose but rise at the sight of some things. Wherefore it is not altogether in our povver, vvhether vve vwill be stirred vvvith affections or no: vvhence actions vvhich issue from the disposition of the vwill, are in the povver thereof to be performed or stayed. Finally, appetite is the vills Solicitor, and the vwill is appetite: Controuler; vvhich vve covet according to the one, by the other we often reject: neither is any other desire termed properly will, but that where reason and understanding, or the shew of reason, prescribeth the thing desired. It may be therefore a question, Whether those operations of men are to be counted voluntary, wherein that good which is sensible provoketh appetite, and appetite causeth action, reason being never called to counsel; as when we eat or drink, or betake our selves unto rest, and such like. The truth is, that such actions in men having attained to the use of reason, are voluntary. For as the authority of higher powers, hath force even in those things which are done without their privacy, and are of so mean reckoning, that to acquaint them therewith it needeth not: in like sort, voluntarily we are said to do that also, which the will if it listed, might hinder from being done, although about the doing thereof, we do not expressly use our reason or understanding, and so immediately apply our wills thereunto. In cases therefore of such facility, the Will doth yield her assent, as it were with a kinde of silence, by not dissenting; in which respect, her force is not so apparent as in expresse Mandates or Prohibitions, especially upon advice and consultation going before. Where understanding therefore needeth in those things, Reason is the Director of mans Will, by discovering in action what is good. For the Laws of Well-doing, are the Dictates of right Reason. Children which are not as yet come unto those years whereat they may have; again, Innocents, which are excluded by natural defect from ever having: Thirdly, mad men, which for the present cannot possibly have the use of right reason to guide themselves, have for their guide the Reason that guideth other men, which are Tutors over them, to seek and to procure their good for them. In the rest, there is that light of Reason, whereby good may be known from evil, and which discovering the same rightly, is termed right. The Will notwithstanding doth not incline to have or do that which Reason teacheth to be good, unless the same do also teach it to be possible. For albeit the appetite, being more general, may wish any thing which seemeth good, be it never so impossible: yet for such things, the reasonable Will of man doth never seek. Let Reason teach impossibility in any thing, and the Will of man doth let it go; a thing impossible it doth not affect, the impossibility thereof being manifest. There is in the Will of man naturally that freedom, whereby it is apt to take or refuse any particular object whatsoever, being presented unto it. Whereupon it followeth, that there is no particular object so good, but it may have the shew of some difficult or unpleasant quality annexed to it; in respect whereof, the will may shrink and decline it: contrariwise (for so things are blended) there is no particular evil which hath not some appearance of goodness whereby to insinuate it self. For evil, as evil, cannot be desired: if that be desired which is evil, the cause is the goodness which is, or seemeth to be joyned with it. Goodness doth not move by being, but by being apparent; and therefore many things are neglected, which are most precious, onely because the value of them lieth hid. Sensible goodness is most apparent, neerer, and present; which causeth the appetite to be therewith strongly provoked. Now pursuit and refusal in the Will do follow, the one the affirmation, the other the negation of goodness; which the understanding apprehendeth, grounding it self upon sense, unless some higher reason do chance to teach the contrary. And if reason have taught it rightly to be good, yet not so apparently that the minde receiveth it with utter impossibility of being otherwise: still there is place left for the Will to take or leave. Whereas therefore, amongst so many things as are to be done, there are so few, the goodness whereof reason in such sort doth or easily can discover, we are not to marvel at the choice of evil, even then when the contrary is probably known. Hereby it cometh to pass, that custom inuring the minde by long practice,

and

and so leaving there a sensible impression, prevaieth more then reasonable perswasion what way soever. Reason therefore may rightly discern the thing which is good, and yet the Will of man not incline it self thereunto, as oft as the prejudice of sensible experience doth overway. Nor let any man think that this doth make any thing for the just excuse of iniquity; For there was never sin committed, wherein a less good was not preferred before a greater, and that wilfully; which cannot be done without the singular disgrace of nature, and the utter disturbance of that Divine Order, whereby the preheminance of chiefest acceptation, is by the best things worthily challenged. There is not that good which concerneth us, but it hath evidence enough for it self, if reason were diligent to search it out. Through neglect thereof, abused we are with the shew of that which is not; sometimes the subtilty of Satan enveigling us, as it did (a) Eve; sometimes the hastiness of our wills preventing the more considerate advice of sound reason, as in the (b) Apostles, when they no sooner saw what they liked not, but they forthwith were delirious of fire from Heaven; sometimes the very custom of evil making the heart obdurate against whatsoever instructions to the contrary, as in them over whom our Savior spake weeping, (c) O Jerusalem, how often, and thou wouldst not? still therefore that wherewith we stand blameable, and can no way excuse it, is, in doing evil, we prefer a less good before a greater, the greatness whereof is by reason investigable, and may be known. The search of knowledge is a thing painful; and the painfulness of knowledge, is that which maketh the will so hardly inclinable thereunto. The root hereof, divine malediction; whereby the (d) instruments being weakned, wherewithal the soul (especially in reasoning) doth work, it preferreth rest in ignorance, before wearisome labour to know. For a spur of diligence therefore, we have a natural thirst after knowledge ingrafted in us. But by reason of that original weakness in the instruments, without which the understanding part is not able in this world by discourse to work, the very conceit of painfulness is as a bridle to stay us. For which cause the Apostle, who knew right well, that the weariness of the flesh is an heavy clog to the will, striketh mightily upon this Key, *Awake thou that sleepest, cast off all which presseth down; watch, labour, strive to go forward, and to grow in knowledge.*

(a) 2 Cor. 11. 3.

(b) Luke 9. 51.

(c) Mat. 23. 37.

(d) 1 Pet. 2. 11.

A corruptible

body is heavy

unto the soul,

and the earthly

Mansion keepeth

down the

minde that is

full of cares.

And hardly

can we discern

the things that

are upon

earth, and with

great labour

finde we out

the things

which are before

us.

Who can then

seek out the

things that are

in Heaven?

Ephes. 1. 14.

Heb. 12. 1, 2.

1 Cor. 13. 12.

Prov. 2. 4.

Luke 12. 24.

Of the natural

way of finding

out Laws by

reason, to

guide the will

unto that

which is good.

8. Wherefore to return to our former intent, of discovering the natural way, whereby Rules have been found out concerning that goodness wherewith the will of man ought to be moved in humane actions; as every thing naturally and necessarily doth desire the utmost good and greatest perfection whereof nature hath made it capable, even so man. Our felicity therefore being the object and accomplishment of our desire, we cannot chuse but wish and covet it. All particular things which are subject unto action, the will doth so far forth incline unto, as reason judgeth them the better for us, and consequently the more available to our blis. If reason err, we fall into evil, and are so far forth deprived of the general perfection we seek. Seeing therefore that for the framing of mens actions, the knowledge of good from evil is necessary, it onely resteth that we search how this may be had. Nether must we suppose that there needeth one rule to know the good, and another the evil by. For he that knoweth what is straight, doth even thereby discern what is crooked, because the absence of straightness in bodies capable thereof is crookedness. Goodness in actions is like unto straightness; wherefore that which is done well, we term right. For as the straight way is most acceptable to him that travelleth, because by it he cometh soonest to his journey's end: so in action, that which doth lie the evenest between us and the end we desire, must needs be the fittest for our use. Besides which fitness for use, there is also in rectitude, beauty; as contrariwise in obliquity, deformity. And that which is good in the actions of men, doth not onely delight as profitable, but as amiable also. In which consideration, the Grecians most divinely have given to the active perfection of men, a name expressing both beauty and goodness, because goodness in ordinary speech is for the most part applied onely to that which is beneficial. But we in the name of Goodness do here imply both. And of discerning goodness, there are but these two ways; the one the knowledge of the causes whereby it is made such; the other the observation of those signs and tokens, which being annexed always unto goodness, argue that where they are found, there also goodness is, although we know not the cause by force whereof it is there. The former of these, is the most sure and infallible way, but so hard, that all shun it, and had rather

ἡ ἀρετὴ καὶ

ἡ καλότης

καὶ ἡ ἀγαθότης

καὶ ἡ εὐαγγελία

καὶ ἡ ἀρετὴ

καὶ ἡ καλότης

καὶ ἡ ἀγαθότης

καὶ ἡ εὐαγγελία

καὶ ἡ ἀρετὴ

καὶ ἡ καλότης

καὶ ἡ ἀγαθότης

καὶ ἡ εὐαγγελία



rather walk as men do in the dark by hap hazard, then tread so long and intricate Mazes for knowledge sake. As therefore Phylitians are many times forced to leave such Methods of curing as themselves know to be the fittest, and being over-ruled by their Patients impatience, are fain to try the best they can, in taking that way of cure, which the cured will yield unto: in like sort, considering how the case doth stand with this present age full of tongue, and weak of brain, behold we yield to the stream thereof; into the causes of goodness we will not make any curious or deep inquiry; to touch them now and then it shall be sufficient, when they are so near at hand that easily they may be conceived without any far removed discourse: that way we are contented to prove, which being the worse in it self, is notwithstanding now by reason of common imbecillity the fitter and likelier to be brookt. Signes and tokens to know good by, are of sundry kinds: some more certaine, and some less. The most certain token of evident goodness is, if the general perswasion of all men do so account it. And therefore a common received error is never utterly overthrowen, till such times as we go from signes unto causes, and shew some manifest root or fountain thereof common unto all, whereby it may clearly appear how it hath come to pass that so many have been over-seen. In which case surmises and slight probabilities will not serve; because the universal consent of men is the perfectest and strongest in this kind, which comprehendeth onely the signes and tokens of goodness. Things casual do varie; and that which a man doth but chance to think well of, cannot still have the like hap. Wherefore although we know not the cause, yet thus much we may know, that some necessary cause there is, whensoever the judgements of all men generally or for the most part run one and the same way, especially in matters of natural discourse. For of things necessarily and naturally done, there is no more affirmed but this, (a) *They keep either always or for the most part one Tenure.* The general and perpetual voyce of men is as the sentence of God himself. (b) For that which all men have at all times learned, Nature her self must needs have taught; and God being the Author of nature, her voice is but his instrument. By her from him we receive whatsoever in such sort we learn. Infinite duties there are, the goodness whereof is by this rule sufficiently manifested, although we had no other warrant besides to approve them. The Apostle St. Paul having speech concerning the Heathen, saith of them, (c) *They are a Law unto themselves.* His meaning is, that by force of the light of reason, wherewith God illuminateth every one which commeth into the world, men being enabled to know Truth from falshood, and good from evil, do thereby learn in many things what the will of God is, which will himself not revealing by any extraordinary means unto them, but they by natural discourse attaining the knowledge thereof, seem the makers of those Laws which indeed are his, and they but onely the finders of them out. A Law therefore generally taken, is a directive rule unto goodness of operation. The rule of divine operations outward, is the definitive appointment of Gods own wisdom set down within himself. The rule of natural agents that work by simple necessity, is the determination of the Wisdom of God, known to God himself the principal director of them, but not unto them that are directed to execute the same. The rule of natural agents which work after a sort of their own accord, as the beasts do, is the judgment of common sense or fancie concerning the sensible goodnes of those objects wherewith they are moved. The rule of ghostly or immaterial natures, as spirits and Angels, is their intuitive intellectual judgment concerning the amiable beauty and high goodness of that object which with unspeakable joy and delight doth set them on work. The rule of voluntary agents on earth, is the sentence that reason giveth concerning the goodness of those things which they are to do. And the sentences which reason giveth, are some more, some less general, before it come to define in particular actions what is good. The main principles of reason are in themselves apparent. For to make nothing evident of it self unto mans understanding, were to take away all possibility of knowing any thing. And herein that of Theophrastus is true, *They that seek a reason of all things, do utterly overthrow reason.* In every kind of knowled some such grounds there are, as that being proposed, the mind doth presently embrace them as free from all possibility of error, cleer and manifest without proof. In which kind, axiomes or principles more general are such as this, *That the greater good is to be chosen before the less.* If therefore it should be demanded, what reason there is why the will of man which doth necessarily shun harm, and covet whatsoever

Non potest  
error contingere  
ubi omnes idem  
opina tur.

In a Polit.

Quicquid in  
omnibus indivi.  
duis animis spec.  
ei cum uniter  
habet, id causam  
communem ha.  
beat oportet, qua  
est eorum indivi.  
duorum spec.  
& natura. Idem

Quod a tota ali.  
qua specie fit, u.  
niversalis parti.  
cularisque natu.  
ra fit. Inspecu.  
F. e. in de Christ.

Relig.  
Si proficere cu.  
pis. primo firme  
id verum puta  
quod sana mens  
omni un homi.  
num attestatur.

Contra in com.  
pend. cap. 1.

Non licet natu.  
rale un versale.

que hominum  
iudicium falsum

vanumque ex.  
istimare. Tel. 1.

O p. in 1. di.  
xerit, v. in 1. v. in 1.

causam. 6. di. 1.

causam. 6. di. 1.

causam. 6. di. 1.

causam. 6. di. 1.

causam. 6. di. 1.

Δεν τὸν ζῶ-  
ντα τὸν ἀν-  
θρώπου λόγον  
τὸν Θεόν. in Met.

2 Cor. 4. 17.

Matth. 16. 26.

\* Arist. Polit. 1.  
cap. 5.

200 δὲ τὸ θεῶν  
δυνάμεις ἀνθρώ-  
πων. Plat. in  
Theat.

60 τὸ γὰρ  
θεῶν δυνάμεις τὸ  
αὐτὸν πᾶσι  
τὸ ἀρχὴ πᾶ-  
σι. in Metaph.  
lib. 1. cap. 2.

c. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
x. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.

is why the will of man, which doth necessarily shun harm, and covet whatsoever is pleafant and sweet, should be commanded to count the pleasures of sin, gall, and notwithstanding the bitter accidents wherewith vertuous actions are compast, yet still to rejoyce and delight in them; surely this could never stand with reason: but that wisdom thus prescribing, groundeth her Laws upon an infallible rule of comparison, which is, that small difficulties, when exceeing great good is sure to insue; and on the other side momentany benefits, when the hurt which they draw after them is unspeakable, are not at all to be respected. This rule is the ground whereupon the Wisdom of the Apostle buildeth a Law, injoyning patience unto himself, *The present lightness of our affliction worketh unto us even with abundance upon abundance an eternal weight of glory, while we look not on the things which are seen, but on the things which are not seen. For the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal.* Therefore Christianity to be embraced, whatsoever calamities in those times it was accompanied withal. Upon the same ground our Saviour proveth the Law most reasonable, that doth forbid those crimes which men for gains sake fall into. For a man to win the world, if it be with the loss of his soul, what benefit or good is it? Axiomes less general, yet so manifest that they need no farther proof, are such as these, *God to be worshiped, Parents to be honored, Others to be used by us as we our selves would by them.* Such things, as soon as they are alleaged, all men acknowledge to be good; they require no proof or farther discourse to be assured of their goodness. Notwithstanding whatsoever such principle there is, it was at the first found out by discourse, and drawn from out of the very bowels of heaven and earth. For we are to note, that things in the World are to us discernable, not only so far forth as serveth for our vital preservation, but further also in a two-fold higher respect. For first if all other uses were utterly taken away; yet the mind of man being by nature speculative and delighted with contemplation in it self, they were to be known even for meer knowledge and understandings sake. Yea further besides this, the knowledge of every the least thing in the world, hath in it a second peculiar benefit unto us, in as much as it serveth to minister Rules, Canons, and Laws for men to direct those actions by, which we properly terme humane. This did the very Heathens themselves obscurely insinuate, by making *Themis* which we call *Justice* or *Right*, to be the Daughter of heaven and earth. We know things either as they are in themselves, or as they are in mutual relation one to another. The knowledge of that which man is in reference unto himself, and other things in relation unto man, I may justly term the Mother of all those principles, which are as it were edicts, statutes, and decrees in that law of nature, whereby humane actions are framed. First therefore having observed that the best things where they are not hindred, do still produce the best operations; (for which cause where many things are to concur unto one effect, the best is in all congruity of reason to guide the residue, that it prevailing most the work principally done by it may have greatest perfection:) when hereupon we come to observe in our selves, of what excellency our souls are in comparison of our bodies, and the diviner part in relation unto the baser of our souls; seeing that all these concur in producing humane actions, it cannot be well unless the chiefest do command and direct the rest. The soul then ought to conduct the body, and the spirit of our minds the soul. This is therefore the first Law, whereby the highest power of the mind requireth general obedience at the hands of all the rest concurring with it unto action. Touching the several grand Mandates, which being imposed by the understanding facultie of the mind, must be obeyed by the will of man, they are by the same method found out, whether they import our duty towards God or towards man. Touching the one, I may not here stand to open, by what degrees of discourse the minds even of meer natural men, have attained to know, not only that there is a God, but also what power, force, wisdom and other properties that God hath, and how all things depend on him. This being therefore presupposed, from that known relation which God hath unto us (a) as unto children, and unto all good things as unto effects, whereof himself is the (b) principal cause, these axiomes and Laws natural concerning our duty have arisen; (c) *That in all things we go about, his aid is by Prayer to be craved,* (d) *That he cannot have sufficient honor done unto him, but the uttermost of that we can do to honor him we must;* which is in effect the same that we read, (e) *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.* Which Law our Saviour doth terme the (f) *First and the great*

great Commandment. Touching the next, which as our Saviour addeth, is like unto this (he meaneth in amplitude and largeness, in as much as it is the root out of which all laws of duty to men-ward have grown, as out of the former all offices of Religion towards God) the like natural inducement hath brought men to know, that it is their duty no less to love others than themselves. For seeing those things which are equal, must needs all have one measure: if I cannot but wish to receive all good, even as much at every mans hand, as any man can wish unto his own soul, how should I look to have any part of my desire herein satisfied, unless my self be careful to satisfy the like desire, which is undoubtedly in other men, we all being of one and the same nature? To have any thing offered them repugnant to this desire, must needs in all respects grieve them as much as me: So that if I do harm, I must look to suffer; there being no reason that others should shew greater measure of love to me, then they have by me shewed unto them. My desire therefore to be loved of my equals in nature as much as possible may be, imposeth upon me a natural duty of bearing to them-ward fully the like affection. From which relation of equality between our selves, and them that are as our selves, what several rules and canons natural reason hath drawn for direction of life, no man is ignorant; as namely, <sup>a</sup> *That because we would take no harm, we must therefore do none; that sith we would not be in any thing extremely dealt with, we must our selves avoid all extremity in our dealings; that from all violence and wrong we are utterly to abstain, with such like; which further to wade in would be tedious, and to our present purpose not altogether so necessary, seeing that on these two general heads already mentioned, all other specialties are dependent. Wherefore the natural measure whereby to judge our doings, is the sentence of reason, determining and setting down what is good to be done. Which sentence is either mandatory, shewing what must be done; or else permissive, declaring onely what may be done; or thirdly admonitory, opening what is the most convenient for us to do. The first taketh place, where the comparison doth stand altogether between doing and not doing of one thing, which in it self is absolutely good or evil; as it had been for Joseph to yield, or not to yield, to the impotent desire of his leud Mistris, the one evil, the other good simply. The second is, when of divers things evil, all being not evitable, we are permitted to take one; which one, saving onely in case of so great urgency, were not otherwise to be taken; as in the matter of divorce amongst the Jews. The last, wheu of divers things good, one is principal and most eminent; as in their act who sold their possessions and laid the price at the Apostles feet, which possessions they might have retained unto themselves without sin; again, in the Apostle St. Pauls own choite, to maintain himself by his own labour, whereas in living by the Churches maintenance, as others did, there had been no offence committed. In goodness therefore there is a latitude or extent, whereby it cometh to pass, that even of good actions, some are better then other some; whereas otherwise one man could not excel another, but all should be either absolutely good, as hitting jump that indivisible point or center wherein goodness consisteth; or else missing it, they should be excluded out of the number of well-doers. Degrees of well-doing there could be none, except perhaps in the seldomness and oftteness of doing well. But the nature of goodness being thus ample, a Law is properly that which reason in such sort defineth to be good, that it must be done. And the Law of Reason or Humane Nature is that, which men by discourse of natural reason have rightly found out themselves to be all for ever bound unto in their actions. Laws of Reason have these marks to be known by. Such as keep them, resemble most lively in their voluntary actions, that very manner of working which Nature her self doth necessarily observe in the course of the whole world. The works of Nature are all behoveful, beautiful, without superfluity or defect; even so theirs, if they be so framed according to that which the Law of Reason teacheth. Secondly, those laws are invetigable by reason, without the help of revelation supernatural and divine. Finally, in such sort they are invetigable, that the knowledge of them is general, the world hath always been acquainted with them, according to that which one in Sophocles observeth concerning a branch of this Law, *It is no childe of two days, or yesterdays birth, but hath been no man knoweth how long sithence.* It is not agreed upon by one, or two, or few, but by all; which we may not so understand, as if every particular man in the whole world did know and confesse whatsoever the Law of Reason doth contain; but this Law*

*Quod quis in se approbat, in alio reprobat, non possit. in arenam C. de inof. test. Quod quisque jurat in aium statuerit, ipsum quoque eodem uti debet. I. quod quisq. Ab om. i. penitus iniuria atque vi abstinendum. l. i. sect. i. quod vi, aut clam. Mat. 22. 40. On these two Commandments hang the whole law. Gen. 30. 9. Mark 10. 4. Acts 4. 17. and 5. 4. 1 Thess. 3.*

*Οὐ γὰρ τῶν  
πενήκοντος  
ἀνδρῶν ὁ λόγος  
ἐστὶν ἡμεῶν  
ἀλλὰ τοῦ Θεοῦ  
καὶ τοῦ Χριστοῦ  
τοῦ υἱοῦ τοῦ Θεοῦ  
καὶ τοῦ Πνεύματος  
τοῦ ἁγίου.*



is such, that being proposed, no man can reject it as unreasonable and unjust. Again, there is nothing in it, but any man (having natural perfection of wit, and ripeness of judgement) may by labour and travel finde out. And to conclude, the general principles thereof are such, as it is not easie to finde men ignorant of them. Law rational therefore, which men commonly use to call the Law of Nature, meaning thereby the Law which humane Nature knoweth it self in reason universally bound unto, which also for that cause may be termed most sely, the Law of Reason: This Law, I say, comprehendeth all those things, which men by the light of their natural understanding evidently know, or at leastwise may know, to be befeeming or unbecfeeming, vertuous or vicious, good or evil for them to do. Now, although it be true, which some have said, that whatsoever is done amiss, the Law of Nature and Reason thereby is transgressed, because even those offences which are by their special qualities breaches of supernatural Laws, do also, for that they are generally evil, violate in general that principle of Reason, which willethe universally to flie from evil: yet do we not therefore so far extend the law of Reason, as to contain in it all manner laws whereunto reasona<sup>le</sup> creatures are bound, but (as hath been shewed) we restrain it to those onely duties, which all men by force of natural wit either do, or might understand to be such duties as concern all men. Certain half-making men there are (as St. Augustine notet.) who neither altogether asleep in folly, nor yet iborowly awake in the light of true understanding, have thought that there is not at all any thing just and righteous in it self; but look wherewith Nations are inured, the same they take to be right and just. Whereupon their Conclusion is, That seeing each sort of people hath a different kinde of right from other; and that which is right of it own nature, must be everywhere one and the same; therefore in it self there is nothing right. These good folk (saith he, that I may not trouble their wits with rehearsal of too many things.) have not looked so far into the world as to perceive, that, Do as thou wouldst be done unto, is a sentence which all Nations under Heaven are agreed upon. Refer this sentence to the love of God, and it extinguisht all hainous crimes: refer it to the love of thy Neighbour, and all grievous wrongs it banisht out of the world. Wherefore, as touching the Law of Reason, this was (it seemeth) St. Augustines judgement; namely, that there are in it some things which stand as Principles universally agreed upon; and that out of those Principles, which are in themselves evident, the greatest moral duties we owe towards God or Man, may without any great difficulty be concluded. If then it be here demanded, by what means it should come to pass (the greatest part of the Law moral being so easie for all men to know) that so many thousands of men notwithstanding have been ignorant, even of principal moral duties, not imagining the breach of them to be sin: I deny not, but lend and wicked custom, beginning perhaps at the first amongst few, afterwards spreading into greater multitudes, and so continuing from time to time, may be of force even in plain things, to smother the light of natural understanding, because men will not bend their wits to examine, whether things wherewith they have been accustomed, be good or evil. For examples sake, that grosser kinde of Heathenish Idolatry, whereby they worshipped the very works of their own hands, was an absurdity to reason so palpable, that the Prophet David comparing Idols and Idolaters together, maketh almost no oddes between them, but the one in a manner, as much without wit & sense as the other, They that make them are like unto them, and so are all that trust in them. That wherein an Idolater doth seem so absurd and foolish, is by the Wiseman thus exprest, He is not ashamed to speak unto that which hath no life; He calleth on him that is weak, for health; He prayeth for life unto him, which is dead; Of him, which hath no experience, he requirerh help; For his journey he sueth to him, which is notable to go; For gain, and work, & success in his affairs, he seeketh furtherance of him that hath no manner of power: the cause of which senseless stupidity, is afterwards imputed to custom. When a father mourned grievously for his son that was taken away suddenly, he made an image for him that was once dead, whom now he worshipped as a God, ordaining to his servants ceremonies and sacrifices. Thus by process of time this wicked custom prevailed, and was kept as a Law; the authority of Rulers, the ambition of Crafts-men, and such like means, thrusting forward the ignorant, and encreasing their superstition. Unto this which the Wiseman hath spoken, somewhat besides may be added. For whatsoever we have hitherto taught, or shall hereafter, concerning the force of mans natural understanding, this we always desire withall to be understood, that there is no kinde

of

*Th. 1. a. 9. 24.  
art. 3. Omnia  
peccata sunt  
in intellectu  
contra rationem  
& naturam le-  
gem. Aug de  
Civ. Dei, lib.  
2. cap. 1.  
Omne vitium  
naturae nocet. ac  
per hoc contra  
naturam est De  
Doct. Christi.  
lib. 3. cap. 4.*

*Psal. 115. 18.*

*Wisd. 3. 17.*

*Wisd. 14. 11.*

of faculty or power in man, or any other creature, which can rightly perform the functions allotted to it, without perpetual aid and concurrence of that supreme cause of all things. The benefit whereof as oft as we cause God in his justice to withdraw, there can no other thing follow then that which the Apostle noteth, even men indued with the light of Reason to walk notwithstanding in the *vanitie of their mind, having their cogitations darkened, and being strangers from the life of God through the ignorance which is in them, because of the hardness of their hearts.* And this cause is mentioned by the Prophet *Isaiah*, speaking of the ignorance of Idolaters, who see not how the manifest Law of reason condemneth their gross iniquity and sin; they have not in them, saith he, so much wit as to think, *Shall I bow to the Stock of a tree? All Knowledge and understanding is taken from them. For God hath shut their eyes that they cannot see.* That which we say in this cause of Idolatry, serveth for all other things, wherein the like kind of general blindness hath prevailed against the manifest Laws of Reason. Within the compass of which Laws we do not only comprehend whatsoever may be easily known to belong to the duty of all men; but even whatsoever may possibly be known to be of that quality, so that the same be by *necessarie* consequence deduced out of cleer and manifest principles. For if once we descend unto probable collections what is convenient for men, we are then in the Territorie where free and arbitrary determinations, the Territorie where humane Laws take place, which Laws are after to be considered.

9. Now the due observation of this Law which Reason teacheth us, cannot but be effectual unto their great good that observe the same. For we see the whole World and each part thereof so compacted, that as long as each thing performeth onely that work which is natural unto it, it thereby preserveth both other things, and also it self. Contrariwise, let any principal thing, as the Sun, the Moon, any one of the Heavens or Elements, but once cease or fail, or swerve; and who doth not easily conceive that the sequel thereof would be ruine both to it self, and whatsoever dependeth on it? And is it possible that man, being not only the noblest creature in the world, but even a very World in himself, his transgressing the Law of his Nature should draw no manner of harme after it? Yes, *tribulation and anguish unto every soul that doth evil.* Good doth follow unto all things by observing the course of their nature, and on the contrarie side evil by not observing it: but not unto natural Agents that good which we call *Reward*, nor that evil which we properly terme *Punishment*. The reason whereof is, because amongst creatures in this world, onely mans observation of the Law of his nature is *Righteousness*, onely mans transgression *Sin*. And the reason of this is, the difference in his manner of observing or transgressing the Law of his nature. He doth not otherwise then voluntarily the one or the other. What we do against our wills, or constrainedly, we are not properly said to do it; because the motive cause of doing it is not in our selves, but carrieth us; as if the wind should drive a Feather in the Aire, we no whit furthering that whereby we are driven. In such cases therefore the evil which is done, moveth compassion; men are pittied for it, as being rather miserable in such respect then culpable. Some things are likewise done by man, though not through outward force and impulsion, though not against, yet without their will; as in alienation of mind, or any the like inevitable utter absence of wit and judgment. For which cause, no man did ever think the hurtful actions of furious Men and Innocents to be punishable. Again, some things we do neither against nor without, and yet not simply and meerly with our wills; but with our wills in such fort moved, that albeit there be no impossibility but that we might, nevertheless we are not so easily able to do otherwise. In this consideration one evil deed is made more pardonable then another. Finally, that which we do being evil, is not withstanding by so much more pardonable, by how much the exigence of so doing, or the difficultie of doing otherwise is greater; unless this necessity or difficulty have originally risen from our selves. It is no excuse therefore unto him, who being drunk commitreth incest, and allegeth that his wits were not his own; in as much as himself might have chosen whether his wits should by that mean have been taken from him. Now rewards and punishments do always presuppose some thing willingly done well or ill; without which respect though we may sometimes receive good or harme, yet then the one is onely a benefit, and not a reward; the other simply an hurt, not a punishment. From the sundrie dispositions of mans will, which is the root of all his actions, there groweth varietie in the sequele of rewards

Ephes. 4. 17.

Isa. 44. 18, 19.

The benefit of  
keeping that  
law which rea-  
son teacheth.

Voluntate sub-  
lata, omnem a-  
lium parem esse  
i. fœdissimam, c.  
de adul. No-  
nam voluntatem  
plurimam prof. o-  
re purari. Si quis  
in Testament.

Divos, castis ad-  
eunt, pietatem  
adhibent. Qui  
jactis fixis, De-  
ipso, de, erit.  
How Reason  
doth lead men  
unto the mak-  
ing of humane  
laws, whereby  
politique soci-  
eties are gov-  
erned, and to  
agreement ab-  
out Laws,  
whereby the  
fellowship or  
communion of  
independent  
society stand-  
eth.

Ἐστὶ γὰρ ὁ μαρ-  
τυρὸς) π  
απὸ τῆς ἐκείνης  
κτῆ: ὁ δὲ δίκαιος  
καὶ ἀδίκος κτῆ  
μεθ' ἑαυτοῦ καὶ  
τῆς αὐτοῦ ἀδικί-  
ας ἢ μεθ' ἑ-  
αυτοῦ κτῆ.  
Apost. 1. 10. 1.

and punishments, which are by these and the like rules measured : *Take away the will, and all acts are equal : That which we do not and would do, is commonly accepted as done.*

By these and the like rules mens actions are determined of and judged, whether they be in their own nature rewardable or punishable. Rewards and punishments are not received, but at the hands of such as being above us, have power to examine and judge our deeds. How men come to have this authority one over another in external actions, we shall more diligently examine in that which followeth. But for this present, so much all do acknowledge, that sith every mans heart and conscience doth in good or evil; even secretly committed and known to none but it self, either like or disallow it self, and accordingly either rejoyce, very nature exulting as it were in certaine hope of reward, or else grieve as it were in a sence of future punishment; neither of which can in this case be looked for from any other, saving onely from him who discerneth and judgeth the very secrets of all hearts: Therefore he is the onely Rewarder and Revenger of all such actions; although not of such actions onely, but of all whereby the Law of nature is broken, whereof himself is Author. For which cause, the Roman Laws, called the Laws of the twelve Tables, requiring offices of inward affection, which the eye of man cannot reach unto, threaten the neglecters of them with none but divine punishment.

10. That which hitherto we have set down, is (I hope) sufficient to shew their brutishness, which imagine that Religion and Vertue are onely as men will account of them; that we might make as much account, if we would, of the contrarie, without any harme unto our selves, and that in nature they are as indifferent one as the other. We see then how nature it self teacheth Laws and Statutes to live by. The Laws which have been hitherto mentioned, do bind men absolutely, even as they are men, although they have never any settled fellowship, never any solemn agreement amongst themselves what to do or not to do. But forasmuch as we are not by our selves sufficient to furnish our selves with competent store of things needful for such a life as our nature doth desire, a life fit for the dignity of man; Therefore to supply those defects and imperfections which are in us living single and soley by our selves, we are naturally induced to seek communion and fellowship with others. This was the cause of mens uniting themselves at the first in Politique Societies, which Societies could not be without government, nor government without a distinct kind of Law from that which hath been already declared. Two foundations there are which bear up publique Societies; the one, a natural inclination, whereby all men desire sociable life and fellowship; the other, an order expressly or secretly agreed upon, touching the manner of their union in living together. The latter is that which we call the law of a Common-weale, the very soul of a Politique body, the parts whereof are by law animated, held together, and set on work in such actions as the common good requireth. Laws politique, ordained for external order and regiment amongst men, are never framed as they should be, unless presuming the will of man to be inwardly obstinate, rebellious, and averse from all obedience unto the sacred Laws of his nature in a word, unless presuming man to be inregard of his depraved mind, little better then a wild beast, they do accordingly provide notwithstanding so to frame his outward actions, that they be no hindrance unto the common good for which Societies are instituted: unless they do this, they are not perfect. It reflecteth therefore that we consider how nature findeth out such laws of government, as serve to direct even nature depraved to a right end. All men desire in this world to lead an happy life. The life is led most happily, wherein all vertue is exercised without impediment or let. The Apostle in exhorting men to contentment, although they have in this world no more then very bare food and raiment, giveth us thereby to understand, that those are even the lowest of things necessary, that if we should be stripped of all those things without which we might possibly be, yet these must be left; that destitution in these is such an impediment, as till it be removed, suffereth not the mind of man to admit any other care. For this cause first God alligned *Adam* maintenance of Life, and then appointed him a Law to observe. For this cause after men began to grow to a number, the first thing we read they gave themselves unto, was the tilling of the earth, and the feeding of cattle. Having by this mean whereon to live, the principal actions of their life afterward are noted by the exercise of their Religion. True it is, that the Kingdome of God must be the first thing in our purposes and desires.

## Buc

1. Tim 6. 7.

Gen. 1.26.

Gen. 17.

C. 4. 2

G. 16.

Mac. 6. 33.



But in as much as a righteous life presupposeth life, in as much as to live vertuously it is impossible except we live; therefore the first impediment, which naturally we endeavour to remove, is penury and want of things without which we cannot live. Unto life many implements are necessary; mo, if we seek (as all men naturally do) such a life as hath in it joy, comfort, delight, and pleasure. To this end we see how quickly sundry Arts Mechanical were found out in the very prime of the World. As things of greatest necessity are alwayes first provided for, so things of greatest dignity are mozt accounted of by all such as judgerighly. Although therefore Riches be a thing which every man wilheth; yet no man of judgement can esteem it better to be rich, then wise, vertuous, and religious. If we be both or either of these, it is not because we are so born. For into the world we came as empty of the one as of the other, as naked in mind as we are in body. Both which necessities of man had at the first no other help and supplies, then onely domestical; such as that which the Prophet implieth, saying, *Can a mother forget her child?* Such as that which the Apostle mentioneth, saying, *He that careth not for his own is worse then an Infidel*; such as that concerning Abraham, *Abraham will command his sons and his household after him, that they keep the way of the Lord.* But neither that which we learned of our selves, nor that which others teach us can prevail, where wickedness and malice have taken deep root. If therefore when there was but as yet one onely family in the world, no meanes of instruction humane or divine, could prevent effusion of blood: how could it be chosen but that when families were multiplied and increased upon earth, after separation, each providing for it self, envy, strife, contention, and violence, must grow amongst them? For hath not nature furnished man with wit and valour, and as it were with armour, which may be used as well unto extream evil as good? yea, were they not used by the rest of the world unto evil? unto the contrary onely by *Seth, Enoch*, and those few the rest in that line? We all make complaint of the iniquity of our times: not unjustly; for the dayes are evil. But compare them with those times wherein there were no civil societies, with those times wherein there was as yet no manner of Publique regiment established, with those times wherein there were not above eight righteous persons living upon the face of the earth: and we have surely good cause to think that God hath blessed us exceedingly, and hath made us behold mozt happy dayes. To take away all such mutual grievances, injuries and wrongs, there was no way but onely by growing upon composition and agreement amongst themselves, by ordaining some kind of government publique, & by yielding themselves subject therunto; that unto whom they granted authority to rule & govern, by them the peace, tranquillity, & happy estate of the rest might be procured. Men alwayes knew that when force and injury was offered, they might be defenders of themselves; they knew that howsoever men may seek their own commodity, yet if this were done with injury unto others, it was not to be suffered, but by all men and by all good meanes to be withstood; finally, they knew that no man might in reason take upon him to determine his own right, and according to his own determination proceed in maintenance thereof, in as much as every man is towards himself, & them whom he greatly affecteth, partial; and therefore that strifes & troubles would be endles, except they gave their common consent, all to be ordered by some whom they should agree upon: without which consent, there were no reason that one man should take upon him to be Lord or Judge over another; because although there be according to the opinion of some very great and judicious men, a kind of natural right in the Noble, wise, and vertuous, to govern them which are of servile disposition; nevertheless for manifestation of this their right, and mens more peaceable contentment on both sides, the assent of them who are to be governed, seemeth necessary. To Fathers within their private Families, Nature hath given a supreme power, for which cause we see throughout the world, even from the first foundation thereof, all men have ever been taken as Lords and lawful Kings in their own houses. Howbeit over a whole grand multitude, having no such dependency upon any one, and consisting of so many Families as every politique society in the world doth, impossible it is that any should have completelawful power, but by consent of men, or immediate appointment of God, because not having the natural superiority of Fathers, their power must needs be either usurped, and then unlawful; or if lawful, then either granted or consented unto by them over whom they exercise the same, or else given extraordinarily

Cen. 1. 20, 31

12.

Isai 49. 15

1 Tim. 5. 8.

Gen. 18. 19.

Gen. 4. 8.

Gen. 6. 5.

Gen. 5.

1 Pet. 2. 5.

Arist. Pol. lib. 3.

4.



Regiment. We cannot be ignorant how much our obedience unto Laws dependeth upon this point. Let a man, though never so justly, oppose himself unto them that are disordered in their ways, and what one amongst them commonly doth not stomach at such contradiction, storm at reproof, and hate such as would reforme them? Notwithstanding, even they which brook it worst that men should tell them of their duties, when they are told the same by a Law, think very well and reasonably of it. For why? They presume that the Law doth speak with all indifferency, that the Law hath no side respect to their persons, that the Law is as it were an Oracle proceeded from Wisdom and understanding. Howbeit, Laws do not take their constraining force from the qualitie of such as devise them, but from that power which doth give them the strength of Laws. That which we spake before concerning the power of Government, must here be applyed unto the power of making Laws whereby to governe, which power God hath over all; and by the natural Law whereunto he hath made all subject, the lawful power of making Laws, to command whole Politique Societies of men, belongeth to properly unto the same intire Societies, that for any Prince or Potentate, of what kind soever upon earth, to exercise the same of himself, and not either by expresse commission immediately and personally received from God, or else by authority derived at the first from their consent upon whole persons they impose Laws, it is no better then meer Tyranny. Laws they are not therefore which publique approbation hath not made so. But Approbation not onely they give who personally declare their assent by voyce, signe, or act, but also when others do it in their names, by right originally at the least derived from them. As in Parliaments, Councils, and the like Assemblies, although we be not personally our selves present, notwithstanding our assent is by reason of other agents there in our behalf. And what we do by others, no reason but that it should stand as our deed, no less effectually to bind us then if our selves had done it in person. In many things assent is given, they that give it not imagining they do so, because the manner of their assenting is not apparent. As for example, when an absolute Monarch commandeth his subjects that which seemeth good in his own discretion, hath not his edict the force of a law, whether they approve or dislike it? Again, that which hath been received long sithence, and is by custome now established, we keep as a Law which we may not transgress; yet what consent was ever thereunto sought or required at our hands? Of this point therefore we are to note, that sith men naturally have no full and perfect power to command whole politique multitudes of men; therefore utterly without our consent, we could in such sort be at no mans commandement living. And to be commanded we do consent, when that Society whereof we are part, hath at any time before consented, without revoking the same after by the like universal agreement. Wherefore as any mans deed past is good as long as himself continueth: so the act of a publique Society of men done five hundred years sithence, standeth as theirs, who presently are of the same Societies, because Corporations are immortal: we were then alive in our Predecessors, and they in their Successors do live still. Laws therefore humane, of what kind soever, are available by consent. If here it be demanded how it cometh to pass, that this being common unto all Laws which are made, there should be found even in good Laws so great variety as there is: we must note the reason hereof to be, the sundry particular ends, whereunto the different disposition of that Subject or matter for which Laws are provided, causeth them to have especial respect in making Laws. A Law there is mentioned amongst the *Grecians*, whereof *Pistacius* is reported to have been Author: and by that Law it was agreed, that he which being overcome with drink did then strike any man, should suffer punishment double as much as if he had done the same being sober. No man could ever have thought this reasonable, that had intended thereby onely to punish the injury committed, according to the gravity of the fact. For who knoweth not, that harm advisedly done is naturally less pardonable, and therefore worthy of sharper punishment? But for as much as none did so usually this way offend as men in that case, which they wittingly fell into, even because they would be so much the more freely outrageous: it was for their publique good where such disorder was grown, to frame a positive law for remedy thereof accordingly. To this appertain those known laws of making laws; as that Law-makers must have an eye to the place where, and to the men amongst whom; that one kind of laws cannot serve for all kinds of regiment: that where the multitude beareth sway,

*Drift, polit. lib.  
x. cap. ult.*

Laws



laws that shall tend unto the preservation of that state, must make common smaller offices to go by lot, for fear of strife and division likely to arise, by reason that ordinary qualiaities sufficing for discharge of such offices, they could not but by many be desired, and so with danger contended for, and not missed without grudge and discontentment; whereas at an uncertain lot, none can finde themselves grieved on whomsoever it lighteth; contrariwise the greatest, whereof but few are capable, to pass by popular election, that neither the people may envy such as have those honours, in as much as themselves bestow them, and that the chiefest may be kindled with desire to exercise all parts of rare and beneficial vertue; knowing they shall not lose their labour by growing in fame and estimation amongst the people: If the helm of chief Government be in the hands of a few of the wealthiest, that then laws providing for continuance thereof, must make the punishment of contumely and wrong offered unto any of the common sort, sharp and grievous, that so the evil may be prevented, whereby the rich are most likely to bring themselves into hatred with the people, who are not wont to take so great offence when they are excluded from honours and offices, as when their persons are contumeliously troden upon. In other kindes of regiment the like is observed concerning the difference of positive laws, which to be everywhere the same is impossible, and against their nature. Now as the learned in the Laws of this Land observe, that our Statutes sometimes are onely the a firmation or ratification of that which by common Law was held before: So here it is not to be omitted, that generally all Laws humane, which are made for the ordering of politick Societies, be either such as establish some duty, whereunto all men by the Law of Reason did before stand bound; or else such as make that a duty now, which before was none. The one sort we may for distinction sake call *mixedly*, and the other *meerly* humane. That which plain or necessary reason bindeth men unto, may be in sundry considerations expedient to be ratified by Humane Law. For example, if confusion of blood in marriage, the liberty of having many wives at once, or any other the like corrupt and unreasonable custom doth happen to have prevailed far, and to have gotten the upper hand of right reason with the greatest part; so that no way is left to rectifie such foul disorder, without prescribing by law the same things which reason necessarily doth enforce, but it is not perceived that so it doth; or if many be grown unto that which the Apostle did lament in some, concerning whom he writeth, saying, that *Even what things they naturally know, in those very things, as Beasts void of reason, they corrupted themselves*; or if there be no such special accident, yet for as much as the common sort are led by the sway of their sensual desires, and therefore do more shun sin for the sensible evils which follow it amongst men, then for any kinde of sentence which reason doth pronounce against it: This very thing is cause sufficient why duties belonging unto each kind of vertue, albeit the Law of Reason teach them, should notwithstanding be prescribed even by Humane Law. Which Law in this case we term *mixt*, because the matter whereunto it bindeth, is the same which reason necessarily doth require at our hands, and from the Law of Reason it differeth in the manner of binding onely. For whereas men before stood bound in conscience to do as the Law of Reason teacheth; they are now by vertue of Humane Law become constrainable, and if they outwardly transgress, punishable. As for Laws which are *meerly* humane, the matter of them is any thing which reason doth but probably teach to be fit and convenient; so that till such time as Law hath passed amongst men about it, of it self it bindeth no man. One example whereof may be this; Lands are by Humane Law in some places, after the owners decease, divided unto all his children; in some, all descendeth to the eldest son. If the Law of Reason did necessarily require but the one of these two to be done, they which by law have received the other, should be subject to that heavy sentence, which denounceth against all that decree wicked, unjust, and unreasonable things, *woe*. Whereas now, which soever be received, there is no law of reason transgressed; because there is probable reason why either of them may be expedient, and for either of them more then probable reason there is not to be found. Laws, whether mixtly, or meerly humane, are made by politick Societies: some, onely as those Societies are civilly united; some, as they are spiritually joyned, and make such a body as we call the Church. Of Laws humane in this latter kinde, we are to speak in the third Book following. Let it therefore suffice, thus far to have

Standf. 171f.  
to the Pleas of  
the Crown.

Epist. ad v. 10.  
"Οι πολλοὶ ἀ-  
γνοῦν μὴδὲ  
ἀπονοῦν τὴν  
ἐν τῷ νόμῳ  
ἀρετὴν καὶ  
ἀριστ. Eth. lib.  
10. cap. 10.

lib. 10. 1.

have touched the force wherewith Almighty God hath graciously endued our nature, and thereby enabled the same to finde out both those Laws which all men generally are for ever bound to observe, and also such as are most fit for their behoof who lead their lives in any ordered state of Government. Now besides that Law which simply concerneth men, as men, and that which belongeth unto them as they are men linked with others in some form of Politique Society, there is a third kinde of Law which toucheth all such severall bodies Politique, so far forth as one of them hath publique commerce with another. And this third is the *Law of Nations*. Between men and beasts there is no possibility of sociable communion; because the well-spring of that communion is a natural delight which man hath to transfuse from himself into others, and to receive from others into himself, especially those things wherein the excellency of this kinde doth most consist. The chiefest instrument of humane communion therefore is speech, because thereby we impart mutually one to another the conceits of our reasonable understanding. And for that cause, seeing beasts are not hereof capable, forasmuch as with them we can use no such conference, they being in degree, although above other creatures on earth to whom Nature hath denied sense, yet lower then to be sociable companions of man, to whom Nature hath given reason; it is of *Adam* said, that amongst the beasts, *He found not for himself any meet companions*. Civil society doth more content the nature of man, then any private kinde of solitary living; because in society, this good of mutual participation is so much larger then otherwise. Herewith notwithstanding we are not satisfied, but we covet (if it might be) to have a kinde of society and fellowship even with all mankind. Which thing *Socrates* intending to signifie, professed himself a Citizen, not of this or that Commonwealth, but of the world. And an effect of that very natural desire in us, (a manifest token that we wish after a sort an universal fellowship with all men) appeareth by the wonderful delight men have, some to visit forreign Countreys, some to discover Nations not heard of in former Ages; we all to know the affairs and dealings of other people, yea, to be in league of amity with them: and this not onely for trafficks sake, or to the end that when many are confederated, each may make other the more strong; but for such cause also, as moved the *Queen of Sheba* to visit *Solomon*; and in a word, because Nature doth presume, that how many men there are in the world, so many Gods, as it were, there are, or at leastwise such they should be towards men. Touching Laws which are to serve men in this behalf; even as those Laws of reason, which (man retaining his original integrity) had been sufficient to direct each particular person in all his affairs and duties, are not sufficient, but require the access of other laws, now that man and his off-spring are grown thus corrupt and sinful; again, as those laws of Polity and Regiment, which would have served men living in publique society together with that harmless disposition which then they should have had, are not able now to serve, when mens iniquity is so hardly restrained within any tolerable bounds: in like manner, the national laws of natural commerce between societies of that former and better quality might have been other then now, when Nations are so prone to offer violence, injury and wrong. Hereupon hath grown in every of these three kinds, that distinction between *Primary* and *Secondary* Laws; the one grounded upon sincere, the other built upon depraved nature. Primary laws of Nations are such as concern embassage, such as belong to the courteous entertainment of Forreigners and Strangers, such as serve for commodious traffick, and the like. Secondary laws in the same kinde, are such as this present unquiet world is most familiarly acquainted with; I mean laws of Arms; which yet are much better known then kept. But what matter the law of Nations doth contain, I omit to search. The strength and vertue of that law is such, that no particular nation can lawfully prejudice the same by any their severall laws and ordinances, more then a man by his private resolutions the law of the whole Commonwealth or State wherein he liveth. For as civil law being the act of a whole body Politique, doth therefore over-rule each severall part of the same body: so there is no reason that any one Commonwealth of it self, should to the prejudice of another, annihilate that whereupon the whole world hath agreed. For which cause, the *Lacedemonians* forbidding all access of strangers into their coasts, are in that respect both by *Josephus* and *Theodoret* deservedly blamed, as being enemies to that hospitality, which for common humanities sake all the nations on earth should embrace. Now as there is great cause of communion, and consequently of laws for the maintenance

Ar. 2. 1. c. 2.

Gen. 1. 20.

Cic. Tusc. 5. &  
1 de Legib.1 King. 10. 1.  
1 Chron. 1. 1.  
Mat. 13. 42.  
Luke 11. 31.De lib. a contra  
Ap. ion.  
Theod. lib. 9. de  
sanct. Grac.  
affess.

nancé

Ephes. 4.

Acts 15. 27.

1. h. 14. 2.

Wh reſe  
God hath by  
Scripture fur-  
ther made  
known ſuch  
ſupernatural  
laws, as do  
ſerve for men  
d. r. 610.

Gal. 6. 9. He  
that ſoweth to  
the Spirit, ſhall  
of the Spirit  
reſpect ever-  
laſting.

nance of communion amongſt Nations : So among Nations Chriſtian, the like in regard even of Chriſtianity hath been always judged needfull. And in this kinde of correſpondence among Nations, the force of general Councils doth ſtand. For as one and the ſame Law Divine, whereof in the next place we are to ſpeak, is unto all Chriſtian Churches a rule for the chiefſt things, by means whereof they all in that reſpect make one Church, as having all but one Lord, one Faith, and one Baptiſm : ſo the urgent neceſſity of mutual communion for preſervation of our unity in theſe things, as alſo for order in ſome other things convenient to be everywhere uniformly kept, maketh it requiſite that the Church of God here on earth have her laws of ſpiritual commerce between Chriſtian Nations ; laws, by vertue whereof all Churches may enjoy freely the uſe of thoſe reverend religious and ſacred conſultations, which are termed Councils general. A thing whereof Gods own bleſſed Spirit was the Author ; a thing practiſed by the holy Apoſtles themſelves, a thing always afterwards kept and obſerved throughout the world, a thing never otherwiſe then moſt highly eſteemed of, till pride, ambition and tyranny began by factious and vile endeavours, to abuſe that divine invention, unto the furtherance of wicked purpoſes. But as the juſt authority of Civil Courts and Parliaments is not therefore to be aboliſhed, becauſe ſometimes there is cunning uſed to frame them according to the private intents of men over-potent in the Commonwealth : So the grievous abuſe which hath been of Councils, ſhould rather cauſe men to ſtudy how ſo gracious a thing may again be reduced to that firſt perfection, then in regard of ſtains and blemiſhes thence growing, be held for ever in extreme diſgrace. To ſpeak of this matter as the cauſe requireth, would require very long diſcourſe. All I will preſently ſay, is this, Whether it be for the finding out of any thing whereunto divine law bindeth us, but yet in ſuch ſort, that men are not thereof on all ſides reſolved ; or for the ſetting down of ſome uniform judgement to ſtand touching ſuch things, as being neither way matters of neceſſity, are notwithstanding offenſive and ſcandalous, when there is open oppoſition about them ; be it for the ending of ſtrifes touching matters of Chriſtian belief, wherein the one part may ſeem to have probable cauſe of diſſenting from the other ; or be it concerning matters of Politie, order and regiment in the Church ; I nothing doubt but that Chriſtian men ſhould much better frame themſelves to thoſe heavenly precepts, which our Lord and Saviour with ſo great inſtancy gave as concerning peace and unity, if we did all concur in deſire to have the uſe of ancient Councils again renewed, rather then theſe proceedings continued, which either make all contentions endleſs, or bring them to one onely determination, and that of all other the worſt, which is by ſword. It followeth therefore, that a new foundation being laid, we now adjoyn hereunto that which cometh in the next place to be ſpoken of, namely, wherefore God hath himſelf by Scripture, made known ſuch laws as ſerve for direction of men.

11. All things (God onely excepted) beſides the nature which they have in themſelves, receive externally ſome perfection from other things, as hath been ſhewed. In ſo much, as there is in the whole world no one thing great or ſmall, but either in reſpect of knowledge or of uſe, it may unto our perfection add ſomewhat. And whatſoever ſuch perfection there is, which our nature may acquire, the ſame we properly term our good ; our ſovereign good or *bleſſedneſs*, that wherein the higheſt degree of all our perfection conſiſteth, that which being once attained unto, there can reſt nothing further to be deſired, and therefore with it our ſouls are fully content and ſatiſfied, in that they have they rejoyce, and thiſt for no more : wherefore of good things deſired, ſome are ſuch that for themſelves we covet them not, but onely becauſe they ſerve as inſtruments unto that for which we are to ſeek ; of this ſort are riches ; another kinde there is, which altho' we deſire for it ſelf, as health, and vertue, and knowledge ; nevertheless, they are not the laſt mark whereat we aim, but have their further end whereunto they are referred ; ſo as in them we are not ſatiſfied, as having attained the utmoſt we may, but our deſires do ſtill proceed. Theſe things are linked, and as it were chained one to another : we labour to eat, and we eat to live ; and we live to do good, and the good which we do, is as ſeed ſown (a) with reference unto a future harveſt. But we muſt come at length to ſome pauſe. For if every thing were to be deſired for ſome other without any ſtint, there could be no certain end propoſed unto our actions, we ſhould go on we know not whither, yea, whatſoever we do, were in vain, or rather nothing





Tsal. 8.

Comment in  
proum. 2. Me-  
taph.

Phil. 2. 9.

\* Mar. 7. 2. Re-  
joice and be  
glad; for great  
is your reward  
in heaven.

Aug. de doct.

Christ. c. 6 Sum-

ma merces est ut

i. superfruarur.

\* Ambros. con-

tra Sym.

\* Magno &amp; ex-

cellenti ingenio

viri, cum se do-

ctrina penitu-

ded diffem quic

quid la oris po-

sevas impendi

(contemptis om-

nibus &amp; privatis

&amp; publicis alli-

sibus) ad inqui-

renda veritatis

studium contu-

erunt, ex his man-

tes multo esse

preclariorum lu-

minarum divi-

narumq; rerum

inuestigare ac

scire rationem,

quam si ueluti

opions aut cu-

mulandis homo-

nibus inbaver-

Sed neq; adeo i

sunt id quod volebant, &amp; operam simul atq; ind-

stiam perdidit: quia veritas, id est, arcana summi Dei qui se-

cit omnia, ingenio ac propriis cubibus non potest comprehendi. Alioquin nihil inter Deum hominemq; distaret, si consilio &amp; dispositione

illius natus esset: &amp; terne cogitatio assequeretur humane. Quod quia fieri non potuit ut homini per se ipsam ratio divina nota fieret, non

est passus hominem Deum uenisse, sentia requirerentem diuinitatem errare, ac sine ulla laboris effectu vagari per tenebras inextinguibiles. A-

peruit oculos ejus aliquando, &amp; notionem veritatis munus suum fecit, ut ad humanam sapientiam nullum esse monstraret, &amp; erranti ac

vago tam consequenda immortalitatis ostenderet, Laccl. 1. c. 1.

thou shouldest exalt him above the works of thy hands, so far as to make thy self the inheritance of his rest, and the substance of his felicity! Now, if men had not naturally this desire to be happy, how were it possible that all men should have it? All men have. Therefore this desire in man is natural. It is not in our power not to do the same: how should it then be in our power to do it coldly or remissly? So that our desire being natural, is also in that degree of earnestness whereunto nothing can be added. And is it probable that God should frame the hearts of all men so desirous of that which no man may obtain? It is an axiome of nature, that natural desire cannot utterly be frustrate. This desire of ours being natural should be frustrate, if that which may satisfie the same were any thing impossible for man to aspire unto. Man doth seek a tripple perfection; first, a sensual consisting in those things which very life it self requireth, either as necessary supplements, or as beauties and ornaments thereof; then an intellectual, consisting in those things which none underneath man is either capable of, or acquainted with; Lastly, a spiritual and divine, consisting in those things whereunto we tend by supernatural means here, but cannot here attain unto them. They that make the first of these three the scope of their whole life, are said by the Apostle to have no God, but onely their belly, to be earthly-minded men. Unto the second they bend themselves especially, who seek especially to excel in all such knowledge and vertue as doth most commend men. To this branch belongeth the law of moral and civil perfection. That there is somewhat higher then either of these two, no other proof doth need then the very process of mans desire, which being natural should be frustrate, if there were not some farther thing wherein it might rest at the length contented, which in the former it cannot do. For man doth not seem to rest satisfied either with fruition of that wherewith his life is preserved, or with performance of such actions as advance him most deservedly in estimation; but doth further covet, yea oftentimes manifestly pursue with a great sedulity and earnestness, that which cannot stand him in any stead for vital use; that which exceedeth the reach of sense, yea somewhat above capacity of reason, somewhat divine and heavenly, which with hidden exultation it rather surmisseth then conceiveth; somewhat it seeketh, and what that is directly it knoweth not; yet very intente desire thereof doth so incite it, that all other known delights and pleasures are laid aside, they give place to the search of this but only suspected desire. If the soul of man did serve only to give him being in this life, then things appertaining unto this life would content him, as we see they do other creatures: which creatures enjoying what they live by, seek no further, but in this contentation do shew a kinde of acknowledgement, that there is no higher good which doth any way belong unto them. With us it is otherwise. For although the Beauties, Riches, Honors, Sciences, Vertues and perfections of all men living, were in the present possession of one: yet somewhat beyond and above all this there would still be sought and earnestly thirsted for. So that Nature even in this life doth plainly claim and call for a more divine perfection, then either of these two that have been mentioned. This last and highest estate of perfection, whereof we speak, is received of men in the nature of a (a) reward. Rewards do always presuppose such duties performed as are rewardable. Our natural means therefore unto blessedness are our works: nor is it possible that nature should ever find any other way to salvation then only this. But examine the works which we do, and since the foundation of the world what one can say, My ways are pure? Seeing then all flesh is guilty of that for which God hath threatened eternally to punish, what possibility is there this way to be saved? There resteth therefore either no way unto salvation, or if any, then surely a way which is supernatural, a way which could never have entred into the heart of man as much as once to conceive or imagine, if God himself had not revealed it extraordinarily. For which cause we term it the mystery or secret way of salvation. And therefore St. Ambrose in this matter appealeth justly from man to God, (b) *Celi mysterium doceat me Deus qui condidit, non homo qui seipsum ignoravit*; Let God himself that made me, let not man that knows not himself, be my instructor concerning the mystical way to Heaven. (c) *When men of excellent wit (saith Lactantius) had wholly betaken themselves unto study*

after

after farewell bidden unto all kinde as well of private as publique actions, they spared no labour that might be spent in the search of truth; holding it a thing of much more price to seek and to finde out the reason of all affairs, as well Divine as Humane, then to stick fast in the toil of piling up Riches, and gathering together heaps of Honours. Howbeit, they both did fail of their purpose, and got not so much as to quit their charges; because truth, which is the secret of the Lord, whose proper handywork all things are, cannot be compassed with that wit & those senses which are our own. For God and man should be very near neighbours, if mans cogitations were able to take a survey of the counsels and appointments of that Majestie everlasting. Which being utterly impossible, that the eye of man by it self should look into the bosom of Divine Reason; God did not suffer him, being desirous of the light of Wisdom, to stray any longer up and down, and with bootless expence of travel, to wander in darkness that had no passage to get out by. His eyes at length God did open, & bestow upon him the knowledge of the truth by way of donative, to the end that man might both be clearly convicted of folly, and being through error out of the way, have the path that leadeth unto immortality laid plain before him; thus far *Lat. Firmian.* to shew that God himself is the teacher of the truth, whereby is made known the supernatural way of salvation, and law for them to live in that shall be saved. In the natural path of everlasting life, the first beginning is that ability of doing good, which God in the day of mans creation endued him with; from hence obedience unto the will of his Creator, absolute righteousness and integrity in all his actions; and last of all, the justice of God rewarding the worthiness of his deserts with the crown of eternal glory. Had Adam continued in his first estate, this had been the way of life unto him and all his posterity. Wherein I confess notwithstanding, with the wittiest of the School-Divines, that if we speak of strict justice, God could no way have bin bound to requite mans labours in so large & ample maner as humane felicity doth import: inasmuch as the dignity of this exceedeth so far the others value. But be it that God of his great liberality had determined in lieu of mans endeavours to bestow the same, by the rule of that justice which best becometh him, namely, the justice of one that requireth nothing mincingly, but all with pressed, and heaped, & even over-inlarged measure: yet could it never hereupon necessarily be gathered, that such justice should add to the nature of that reward the property of everlasting continuance; such possession of blis, though it should be but for a moment, were an abundant retribution.<sup>a</sup> But we are not now to enter into this consideration, how gracious and bountifull our good God might still appear in so rewarding the sons of men, albeit they should exactly perform whatsoever duty their Nature bindeth them unto. Howsoever God did propose this reward, we that were to be rewarded, must have done that which is required at our hands; we failing in the one, it were innature an impossibility that the other should be looked for. The light of nature is never able to find out any way of obtaining the reward of blis, but by performing exactly the duties and works of righteousness. From salvation therefore and life all flesh being excluded this way, behold how the wisdom of God hath revealed a way mystical & supernatural, a way directing unto the same end of life, by a course which groundeth itself upon the guiltiness of sin, and through sin desert of condemnation and death. For in this way the first thing is the tender compassion of God, respecting us drown'd & swallow'd up in misery; the next is redemption out of the same by the precious death and merit of a mighty Saviour, which hath witnessed of himself, saying, *I am the way*, the way that leadeth us from misery into blis. This supernatural way had God in himself prepared before all worlds. The way of supernatural duty which to us he hath prescribed, our Saviour in the Gospel of *S. John* doth note, terming it by an excellency, The work of God; *b* This is the work of God, that ye believe in him whom he hath sent. Not that God doth require nothing unto happiness at the hands of men, saving onely a naked belief (for hope and charity we may not exclude;) but that without belief all other things are as nothing, and it the ground of those other divine vertues. Concerning faith, the principal object whereof is that eternal verity which hath discovered the treasures of hidden wisdom in *Christ*; concerning hope, the highest object whereof is that everlasting goodness which in *Christ* doth quicken the dead; concerning charity, the final object whereof is that incomprehensible beauty which shineth in the countenance of *Christ* the Son of the living God: concerning these vertues, the first of which beginning here with a weak apprehension of things not seen, endeth with the intuitive vision of God in the world to come; the second beginning here with a trembling expectation of things far removed, and as yet but only heard of, endeth with real and actual fruition of that which no tongue can express;

<sup>a</sup> Scot. lib. 4. sent. d. 8. q. 6. *Loquendo de stricta justitia, Deum nulli nostrum propter quacunque merita est debitor perfectionis reddenda: et in intentione propter inmoderatum excessum illius perfectionis ultra illa merita.*  
*Sed illo quod ex liberalitate sua determinasset meritis contrerre alium tam perfectum tanquam premium tamen quidem justitia qualis tenet eum, scilicet supererogantis in premium tamen non sequitur ex hoc necessarium, quod per illam iustitiam sit edenda perfectio perennis tanquam premium; imo abundans fieret retributio in beatitudine in illis momentis.*  
<sup>b</sup> *John 14. 6.*  
<sup>c</sup> *John 6. 29.*



<sup>a</sup> The cause why so many natural, or rational Laws are set down in holy Scripture.

<sup>b</sup> In naturale est quod in lege & evangelio continetur, pag. 1. d. 1. c. Ioseph. lib.

secundo contra Appio, Locutionis i quomodo non sunt obliuio-

socialitatem reprehendendi, secundum neglectum nuptiarum?

Elensius, de Thebani ob eorum cum masculis plane impudenter & contra naturam;

quem velle & vultu exerceant, ut patet, etiam si legimus miscere, V. de Th

12. qu. 1. 19. 4. 7. 6. Lex naturalis est, ut supra fuit apud Germanos, ut introitum non reputarent peccatum. Aug.

aut quisquis auctor est, lib. de quest. nov. & vet. test. quis nescit quid bone vite conueniat, aut ignoret

quis quid sui fieri non vult, alius minus debet scire? At vero in naturalis lex

evangetica precepta consuetudine delinquunt, tunc oportuit manifestari scriptis, ut Dei iudicium

omnes audiant: non quod penitus obliuio est, sed quia maximae auctoritate ca-

rebat, de gloria si delatur, timor Dei interis non erat, formica: so opera-

tur, circa rem proximi auida erat concupiscentia. Data ergo lex est, ut qui sciebantur auctoritatem haberent, & qua latere coeperant, manifestarentur.

utterly

the third beginning here with a weak inclination of heart towards him unto whom we are not able to approach, endeth with endless union, the mysterie whereof is higher then the reach of the thoughts of men; concerning that faith, hope and charity, without which there can be no salvation, was there ever any mention made saving only in that law which God himself hath from heaven revealed? There is not in the World a syllable muttered with certain truth concerning any of these three, more then hath been supernaturally received from the mouth of the eternal God. Laws therefore concerning these things are supernatural, both in respect of the manner of delivering them, which is divine; and also in regard of the things delivered, which are such as have not in nature any cause from which they flow, but were by the voluntary appointment of God ordained besides the course of Nature, to rectifie Natures obliquity withal.

12. When supernatural duties are necessarily exacted, natural are not rejected as needless: the law of God therefore is, though principally delivered for instruction in the one, yet fraught with precepts of the other also. The Scripture is fraught even with laws of nature, inasmuch that Gratian defining natural right (whereby is meant the right which exacteth those general duties, that concern men naturally, even as they are men) termeth natural right that which the Books of Law and the Gospel do contain. Neither is it vain, that the Scripture aboundeth with so great store of laws in this kind. For they are either such as we of our selves could not easily have found out, & then the benefit is not small, to have them readily set down to our hands; or if they be so clear & manifest, that no man indued with reason can lightly be ignorant of them; yet the Spirit, as it were, borrowing them from the School of Nature, as serving to prove things less manifest, and to induce a perswasion of somewhat which were in it self more hard and dark, unless it should in such sort be cleared, the very applying of them unto cases particular, is not without most singular use and profit many ways for mens instruction. Betimes, be they plain of themselves or obscure, the evidence of Gods own testimony added unto the natural assent of Reason, concerning the certainty of them, doth not a little comfort and confirm the same. Wherefore, inasmuch as our actions are conversant about things beset with many circumstances, which cause men of sundry wits, to be also of sundry judgements concerning that which ought to be done: requisite it cannot but seem the rule of divine law, should herein help our imbecility, that we might the more infallibly understand what is good & what evil. The first principles of the law of nature are easily; hard it were to find men ignorant of them; but concerning the duty which natures law doth require at the hands of men in a number of things particular, so (e) far hath the natural understanding even of sundry whole nations been darkened, that they have not discerned, no, not gross iniquity to be sin. Again, being so prone as we are to fawn upon our selves, and to be ignorant as much as may be of our own deformities, without the feeling sense whereof we are most wretched; even so much the more because not knowing them, we cannot as much as desire to have them taken away: how should our festered sores be cured, but that God hath delivered a law as sharp as the two-edged sword, piercing the very closest and most unfearchable corners of the heart, which the law of nature can hardly, humane laws by no means possibly reach unto? Hereby we know even secret concupiscentie to be sin, and are made fearful to offend, though it be but in a wandering cogitation. Finally, of those things which are for direction of all the parts of our life needful, and not impossible to be discerned by the light of nature it self, are there not many which few mens natural capacity, and some which no mans hath been able to find out? They are, saith S. Augustine, but a few, and they indued with great ripeness of wit and judgment, free from all such affairs as might trouble their meditations, instructed in the sharpest and the subtlest points of learning, who have, & that very hardly, been able to find out but only the immortality of the soul. The resurrection of the flesh, what man did ever at any time dream of, having not heard it otherwise then from the school of nature? whereby it appeareth, how much we are bound to yield unto our Creator, the Father of all mercy, eternal thanks, for that he hath delivered his law unto the world, a law wherein so many things are laid open, clear, and manifest; as a light which otherwise would have bin buried in darkness, not without the hazard, or rather not with the hazard, but with the certain loss of infinite thousands of souls most undoubtedly now saved. We see therefore that our sovereign good is desired naturally, that God the author of that natural desire, had appointed natural means whereby to fulfil it; that man having

utterly disabled his nature unto those means, hath had other revealed from God, and hath received from Heaven a Law to teach him, how that which is desired naturally, must now supernaturally be attained; finally, we see, that because those latter exclude not the former quite and clean as unnecessary, therefore together with such supernatural duties as could not possibly have been otherwise known to the World, the same Law that teacheth them, teacheth also with them such natural duties as could not by Light of Nature easily have been known.

13. \* In the first Age of the World God gave Laws unto our Fathers, and by reason of the number of their days, their memories served in stead of Books; whereof the manifold imperfections and defects being known to God, he mercifully relieved the same, by often putting them in minde of that whereof it behoved them to be specially mindeful. In which respect we see how many times one thing hath been iterated unto sundry even of the best and wisest amongst them. After that the lives of men were shortned, means more durable to preserve the Laws of God from oblivion and corruption grew in use, not without precise direction from God himself. First therefore of *Moses* it is said, that he wrote all the words of God; not by his own private motion and device: for God taketh this act to himself, *I have written*. Furthermore, were not the Prophets following commanded also to do the like? Unto the holy Evangelist *St. John* how often exprels charge is given, *Scribe, write these things*? Concerning the rest of our Lords Disciples, the words of *S. Augustine* are, *Quidquid ille de suis factis & dictis nos legere voluit, hoc scribendum illis tanquam suis manibus imperavit*. Now although we do not deny it to be a matter meerly accidental unto the Law of God to be written; although Writing be not that which addeth authority and strength thereto: finally, though his Laws do require at our hands the same obedience, howsoever they be delivered; his providence notwithstanding, which hath made principal choice of this way to deliver them, who seeth not what cause we have to admire and magnifie? The singular benefit that hath grown unto the World by receiving the Laws of God, even by his own appointment committed unto writing, we are not able to esteem as the value thereof deserveth. When the question therefore is, whether we be now to seek for any revealed Law of God, otherwhere then onely in the sacred Scripture, whether we do now stand bound in the sight of God to yield to Traditions urged by the Church of *Rome*, the same obedience and reverence we do to his written Law, honouring equally, and adoring both as Divine? Our answer is, No. They that so earnestly plead for the authority of Tradition, as if nothing were more safely conveyed, then that which spreadeth it self by report, and descendeth by relation of former generations, unto the ages that succeed, are not all of them (surely a miracle it were if they should be) so simple, as thus to perswade themselves; howsoever, if the simple were so perswaded, they could be content perhaps very well to enjoy the benefit, as they account it, of that common error. What hazard the truth is in when it passeth through the hands of report, how maimed and deformed it becometh; they are not, they cannot possibly be ignorant. Let them that are indeed of this minde, consider but onely that little of things Divine, which the Heathen have in such sort received. How miserable had the state of the Church of God been long ere this, if wanting the sacred Scripture, we had no Record of his Laws but onely the memory of man, receiving the same by report and relation from his Predecessors? By Scripture it hath in the wisdom of God seemed meet to deliver unto the world much but personally expedient to be practised of certain men; many deep and profound points of Doctrine, as being the main original ground whereupon the Precepts of duty depend; many Prophecies, the clear performance whereof might confirm the world in belief of things unseen; many Histories to serve as looking-glases to behold the mercy, the truth, the righteousness of God towards all that faithfully serve, obey and honour him; yea, many intire Meditations of Piety, to be as Paterns and Presidents in cases of like nature; many things needful for explication, many for application unto particular occasions, such as the providence of God from time to time hath taken to have the several Books of his holy Ordinance written. Be it then, that together with the principal necessary Laws of God, there are sundry other things written, whereof we might haply be ignorant, and yet be saved: What? shall we hereupon think them needles? shall we esteem them as riotous branches wherewith we sometimes behold most pleasant Vines over-grown? Surely no more

\* The benefit of having Divine Laws written.

Exod. 17. 14.  
Hol. 8. 12.

Apoc. 1. 11.  
& 1. 13.  
Aug. lib. 1. de  
conf. & 2. 2. 2.  
cap. 12.

I mean those historical matters concerning the ancient state of the first world, the Deluge, the fall of *Noah*, the children of *Isaiah* deliverance out of *Egypt*, the life and doings of *Moses* their Captain, with such like: I'm certain truth whereof delivered in holy scripture, is of the Heathen which had them onely by report, so intermingled with fabulous vanities, that the most which remaineth in them to be seen, is the show of dark and obscure steps, where some part of the truth hath gone.

then we judge our hands or our eyes superfluous, or what part soever, which if our bodies did want, we might notwithstanding any such defect, receive still the compleat being of men. As therefore a compleat man is neither destitute of any part necessary, and hath some parts, whereof though the want could not deprive him of his essence, yet to have them, standeth him in singular stead in respect of the special uses for which they serve: in like sort, all those writings which contain in them the Law of God, all those venerable books of Scripture, all those sacred tomes and volumes of holy Writ, they are with such absolute perfection framed, that in them there neither wanteth any thing, the lack whereof might deprive us of life; nor any thing in such wise aboundeth, that as being superfluous, unfruitful, and altogether needless, we should think it no loss or danger at all, if we did want it.

The sufficiency of Scripture unto the end for which it was instituted. *Utrum cognitio supernaturalis necessaria visioni, sit sufficienter tradita in sacris scripturis?* This question proposed by Scotus, is affirmatively concluded.

14. Although the Scripture of God therefore be stored with infinite variety of matter in all kinds, although it abound with all sorts of laws, yet the principal intent of Scripture is to deliver the laws of duties supernatural. Oftentimes it hath been in very solemn manner disputed, whether all things necessary unto salvation, be necessarily set down in the holy Scriptures or no. If we define that necessary unto salvation, whereby the way to salvation is in any sort made more plain, apparent and easie to be known; then is there no part of true Philosophy, no art of account, no kinde of science, rightly so called, but the Scripture must contain it. If onely those things be necessary, as surely none else are, without the knowledge and practise whereof it is not the will and pleasure of God to make any ordinary grant of salvation; it may be notwithstanding, and oftentimes hath been demanded, how the books of holy Scripture contain in them all necessary things, when of things necessary the very chief is to know what books we are bound to esteem holy; which point is confessed impossible for the Scripture it self to teach. Whereunto we may answer with truth, that there is not in the world any art or science, which proposing unto it self an end (as every one doth some end or other) hath been therefore thought defective, if it have not delivered simply whatsoever is needful to the same end; but all kinds of knowledge have their certain bounds and limits; each of them presupposeth many necessary things learned in other sciences, and known beforehand. He that should take upon him to teach men how to be eloquent in pleading causes, must needs deliver unto them whatsoever precepts are requisite unto that end; otherwise he doth not the thing which he taketh upon him. Seeing then no man can plead eloquently, unless he be able first to speak, it followeth, that ability of speech is in this case a thing most necessary. Notwithstanding every man would think it ridiculous, that he which undertaketh by writing to instruct an Orator, should therefore deliver all the precepts of Grammar: because his profession is to deliver precepts necessary unto eloquent speech; yet so, that they which are to receive them be taught beforehand, so much of that which is thereunto necessary, as comprehendeth the skill of speaking. In like sort, albeit Scripture do profess to contain in it all things which are necessary unto salvation; yet the meaning cannot be simply of all things which are necessary, but all things which are necessary in some certain kinde or form; as all things that are necessary, and either could not at all, or could not easily be known by the light of natural discourse; all things which are necessary to be known that we may be saved, but known with presupposal of knowledge concerning certain principles, whereof it receiveth us already perswaded, and then instructeth us in all the residue that are necessary: In the number of these principles, one is the sacred Authority of Scripture. Being therefore perswaded by other means, that these Scriptures are the Oracles of God, themselves do then teach us the rest, and lay before us all the duties which God requireth at our hands, as necessary unto salvation. Further, there hath been some doubt likewise, whether *containing in Scripture*, do import express setting down in plain terms, or else *comprehending* in such sort, that by reason we may from thence conclude all things which are necessary. Against the former of these two constructions, instance hath sundry ways been given. For our belief in the Trinity, the Co-eternity of the Son of God with his Father, the proceeding of the Spirit from the Father and the Son, the duty of baptizing infants; these, with such other principal points, the necessity whereof is by none denied, are notwithstanding in Scripture nowhere to be found by express literal mention, onely deduced they are out of Scripture by collection. This kinde of comprehension in Scripture



Scripture being therefore received, still there is no doubt how far we are to proceed by collection, before the full and compleat measure of things necessary be made up. For let us not think, that as long as the world doth endure, the wit of man shall be able to found the bottom of that which may be concluded out of the Scripture; especially if things contained by collection do so far extend, as to draw in whatsoever may be at any time out of Scripture but probably and conjecturally surmized. But let necessary collection be made requisite, and we may boldly deny, that of all those things which at this day are with so great necessity urged upon this Church, under the name of Reformed Church Discipline, there is any one which their books hitherto have made manifest to be contained in the Scripture. Let them, if they can, alledge but one properly belonging to their cause, and not common to them and us, and then the deduction thereof out of Scripture to be necessary. It hath been already shewed, how all things necessary unto salvation, in such sort as before we have maintained, must needs be possible for men to know; and that many things are in such sort necessary, the knowledge whereof is by the light of nature impossible to be attained. Whereupon it followeth, that either all flesh is excluded from possibility of salvation, which to think were most barbarous; or else that God hath by supernatural means revealed the way of life so far forth as doth suffice. For this cause God hath so many times and ways spoken to the sons of men. Neither hath he by speech onely, but by writing also instructed and taught his Church. The cause of writing hath been, to the end that things by him revealed unto the world, might have the longer continuance, and the greater certainty of assurance; by how much that which standeth on record, hath in both those respects preeminence above that which passeth from hand to hand, and hath no pens, but the tongues; no book, but the ears of men to record it. The several Books of Scripture having had each some several occasion and particular purpose which caused them to be written, the contents thereof are according to the exigence of that special end whereunto they are intended. Hereupon it groweth, that every Book of holy Scripture doth take out of all kindes of truths, (a) natural, (b) historical, (c) foreign, (d) supernatural, so much as the matter handled requireth. Now forasmuch as there have been reasons alledged sufficient to conclude, that all things necessary unto salvation must be made known, and that God himself hath therefore revealed his will, because otherwise men could not have known so much as is necessary; his surceasing to speak to the world, since the publishing of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and the delivery of the same in writing, is unto us a manifest token that the way of salvation is now sufficiently opened, and that we need no other means for our full instruction, then God hath already furnished us with all. The main drift of the whole New-Testament, is that which Saint John setteth down as the purpose of his own History, *These things are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is Christ the Son of God, and that in believing, ye might have life through his name.* The drift of the Old, that which the Apostle mentioneth to Timothy, *The holy Scriptures are able to make thee wise unto salvation.* So that the general end both of Old and New is one; the difference between them consisting in this, that the Old did make wise by teaching salvation through Christ that should come; the New, by teaching that Christ the Saviour is come; and that Jesus whom the Jews did crucifie, and whom God did raise again from the dead, is he. When the Apostle therefore affirmeth unto Timothy, that the Old was able to make him wise to salvation, it was not his meaning that the Old alone can do this unto us, which live since the publication of the New. For he speaketh with presupposal of the Doctrine of Christ known also to Timothy; and therefore first it is said, *Continuous* *thou in those things which thou hast learned, and art persuaded, knowing of whom thou hast been taught them.* Again, those Scriptures he granteth, were able to make him wise to salvation; but he addeth, *through the faith which is in Christ.* Wherefore without the Doctrine of the New-Testament, teaching that Christ hath wrought the Redemption of the World, which Redemption the Old did foretew he should work; it is not the former alone which can on our behalf perform so much as the Apostle doth avouch, who presupposeth this, when he magnifieth that so highly. And as his words concerning the Books of ancient Scripture, do not take place, but with presupposal of the Gospel of Christ embraced; so our own words also, when we extoll the compleat sufficiency of the

(a) Eph. 1. 9.

(b) 1 Tim. 1. 2.

(c) Tit. 1. 2.

(d) 1 Pet. 1. 4.

John 10. 31.

1 Tim. 3. 15.

1 Tim. 3. 14.

Verf. 15.

the whole intire body of the Scripture, must in like sort be understood with this caution, that the benefit of natures light be not thought excluded as unnecessary, because the necessity of a Diviner light is magnified. There is in Scripture therefore no defect, but that any man, what place or calling soever he hold in the Church of God, may have thereby the light of his natural understanding so perfected, that the one being relieved by the other, there can want no part of needful instruction unto any good work which God himself requireth, be it natural, or supernatural, belonging simply unto men, as men; or unto men, as they are united in whatsoever kinde of Society. It sufficeth therefore, that Nature and Scripture do serve in such full sort, that they both jointly, and not severally either of them, be so compleat, that unto everlasting felicity we need not the knowledge of any thing more then these two may easily furnish our mindes with on all sides: and therefore they which adde traditions as a part of supernatural necessary truth, have not the truth, but are in error: For they onely plead, that whatsoever God revealeth as necessary for all Christian men to do or believe, the same we ought to embrace, whether we have received it by writing or otherwise; which no man denieth; when that which they should confirm, who claim so great reverence unto traditions, is, that the same traditions are necessarily to be acknowledged divine and holy. For we do not reject them onely, because they are not in Scripture, but because they are neither in Scripture, nor can otherwise sufficiently by any reason be proved to be of God. That which is of God, and may be evidently proved to be so, we deny not but it hath in his kinde, although unwritten, yet the self same force and authority with the written Laws of God. It is by ours acknowledged, that the Apostles did in every Church institute and ordain some rites and customs serving for the seemliness of Church regiment, which rites and customs they have not committed unto writing. Those rites and customs being known to be Apostolical, and having the nature of things changeable, were no less to be accounted of in the Church, then other things of the like degree; that is to say, capable in like sort of alteration, although set down in the Apostles writings. For both being known to be Apostolical, it is not the manner of delivering them unto the Church, but the Authour from whom they proceed, which doth give them their force and credit.

Writakers ad-  
versus Bellar-  
min. quest. 6.  
cap. 6.

Of Laws posi-  
tive contained  
in Scripture:  
the mutability  
of certain of  
them, and the  
general use of  
Scripture.

15. Laws being imposed either by each man upon himself, or by a Publique Society upon the particulars thereof; or by all the Nations of men, upon every severall Society; or by the Lord himself, upon any or every of these: there is not amongst these four kinds any one, but containeth sundry both natural and positive laws. Impossible it is, but that they should fall into a number of gross errors, who onely take such Laws for positive, as have been made, or invented of men; and holding this position, hold also, that all positive, and none but positive laws are mutable. Laws natural do always binde; Laws positive not so, but onely after they have been expressely and wittingly imposed. Laws positive there are in every of those kinds before mentioned. As in the first kinde, the promises which we have past unto men, and the vows we have made unto God; for these are Laws which we tie our selves unto, and till we have so tied our selves, they binde us not. Laws positive in the second kinde, are such as the civil constitutions peculiar unto each particular common weal. In the third kinde, the Law of Heraldry in War, is positive: And in the last, all the Judicials which God gave unto the people of Israel to observe. And although no laws but positive be mutable, yet all are not mutable which be positive. Positive laws are either permanent, or else changeable, according as the matter it self is concerning which they were first made. Whether God or man be the maker of them, alteration they so far forth admit, as positive; and either concern men supernaturally, as men, or else as parts of a supernatural Society, which Society we call the Church. To concern men as men supernaturally, is to concern them as duties which belong of necessity to all, and yet could not have been known by any to belong unto them, unless God had opened them himself, in as much as they do not depend upon any natural ground at all out of which they may be deduced, but are appointed of God to supply the defect of those natural ways of salvation, by which we are not now able to attain thereunto. The Church being a supernatural society, doth differ from natural societies in this, that the persons unto whom we associate our selves, in the one, are men, simply considered as men; but they

[illegible]

and



<sup>a</sup> Psal. 119. 98.

<sup>b</sup> Vide Orphici  
Carmiso.

<sup>c</sup> Ωρ γὰρ ὁ  
πῶς ἀπαλείψω  
ταυ, ὡρὶς τοῦ  
ἀσπιδίου, οἷα  
φθαῖναι  
1. b. 10 de Mos.

A conclusion,  
shewing how  
all this belon-  
geth to the  
cause inque-  
stion.

Iam. 1. 17.

Arist. Phys. 1. 1.  
cap. 1.

and shall we neglect the precious benefit of conference with those Oracles of the true and living God, whereof so great store is left to the Church, and whereunto there is so free, so plain, and so easie access for all men? <sup>a</sup> By thy commandments (this was Davids confession unto God) thou hast made me wiser then mine Enemies; again, I have had more understanding then all my Teachers, because thy testimonies are my meditations. What pains would not they have bestowed in the study of these Books, who travelled Sea and Land to gain the treasure of some fews days talk with men, whose wisdom the world did make any reckoning of? <sup>b</sup> That little which some of the Heathens did chance to hear, concerning such matter as the Sacred Scripture plentifully containeth, they did in wonderful sort affect; their speeches, as oft as they make mention thereof, are strange, and such as themselves could not utter as they did other things; but still acknowledged that their wits, which did everywhere else conquer hardness, were with profoundness here over-matched. Wherefore seeing that God hath induced us with sense, to the end that we might perceive such things as this present life doth need; and with reason, lest that which sense cannot reach unto, being both now, and also in regard of a future estate hereafter necessary to be known, should lie obscure: Finally, with the heavenly support of <sup>c</sup> Prophetical Revelation, which doth open those hidden Mysteries which Reason could never have been able to finde out, or to have known the necessity of them unto our everlasting good: Use we the precious gifts of God, unto his glory and honour that gave them, seeking by all means to know what the will of our God is, what righteous before him, in his sight what holy, perfect, and good, that we may truly and faithfully do it.

16. Thus far therefore we have endeavoured in part to open, of what nature and force Laws are, according unto their severall kindes; the Law, which God with himself hath eternally set down to follow in his own works; the Law, which he hath made for his creatures to keep; the Law, of natural and necessary Agents; the Law, which Angels in Heaven obey; the Law, whereunto by the light of Reason, men finde themselves bound, in that they are men; the Law, which they make by composition for multitudes and politique Societies of men to be guided by; the Law, which belongeth unto each Nation; the Law, that concerneth the fellowship of all; and lastly, the Law which God himself hath supernaturally revealed. It might peradventure have been more popular and more plausible to vulgar ears, if this first discourse had been spent in extolling the force of Laws, in shewing the great necessity of them when they are good, and aggravating their offence, by whom publique Laws are injuriously traduced. But forasmuch as with such kinde of matter the passions of men are rather stirred one way or other, then their knowledge any way set forward unto the trial of that whereof there is doubt made; I have therefore turned aside from that beaten path, and chosen, though a less easie, yet a more profitable way, in regard of the end we propose. Lest therefore any man should marvel whereunto all these things tend, the drift and purpose of all is this, even to shew in what manner, a every good and perfect gift, so this very gift of good and perfect Laws is derived from the Father of lights; to teach men a reason why just and reasonable Laws are of so great force, of so great use in the world; and to inform their mindes with some method of reducing the Laws, whereof there is present controversie, unto their first original causes, that so it may be in every particular Ordinance thereby the better discerned, whether the same be reasonable, just and righteous, or no. Is there any thing which can either be thorowly understood, or soundly judged of, till the very first causes and principles from which originally it springeth be made manifest? If all parts of knowledge have been thought by wise men to be then most orderly delivered and proceeded in, when they are drawn to their first original; seeing that our whole question concerneth the quality of Ecclesiastical Laws, let it not seem a labour superfluous, that in the entrance thereunto all these severall kindes of Laws have been considered; inasmuch as they all concur as principles, they all have forcible operations therein, although not all in like apparent and manifest manner: By means whereof it cometh to pass, that the force which they have, is not observed of many. Easier a great deal it is for men by law to be taught what they ought to do, then instructed how to judge as they should do of law; the one being a thing which belongeth generally unto all, the other such as none but the wiser and more judicious sort can

can perform. Yea the wisest are always touching this point the readiest to acknowledge, that soundly to judge of a Law, is the weightiest thing that any man can take upon him. But if we will give judgement of the Laws under which we live, first, let that Law eternal be always before our eyes, as being of principal force and moment to breed in religious minds a dutiful estimation of all Laws, the use and benefit whereof we see; because there can be no doubt but that Laws apparently good, are (as it were) things copied out of the very Tables of that high everlasting Law, even as the Book of that Law hath said concerning itself, *By me Kings reign, and by me Princes decree justice.* Not as if men did behold that Book, and accordingly frame their Laws; but because it worketh in them, because it discovereth, and (as it were) readeth it self to the world by them, when the Laws which they make are righteous. Furthermore, although we perceive not the goodness of Laws made; nevertheless, such things in themselves may have that which we peradventure discern not; should not this breed a fear in our hearts, how we speak or judge in the worse part concerning that, the unadvised disgrace whereof may be no mean dishonour to him, towards whom we profess all submission and awe? Surely there must be very manifest iniquity in Laws, against which we shall be able to justify our contumelious Invectives. The chiefest root whereof, when we use them without cause, is ignorance, how Laws inferior are derived from that supream or highest Law. The first that receive impression from thence, are natural agents. The Law of whose operations might be haply thought the less pertinent, when the question is about Laws for humane actions, but that in those very actions which most spiritually and supernaturally concern men, the Rules and Axiomes of natural operations have their force. What can be more immediate to our salvation, then our persuasion concerning the Law of Christ toward his Church? What greater assurance of love towards his Church, then the knowledge of that mystical Union, whereby the Church is become as near unto Christ, as any one part of his flesh is unto other? That the Church being in such sort his, he must needs protect it; what proof more strong, then if a manifest Law so require, which Law it is not possible for Christ to violate? and what other Law doth the Apostle for this allege, but such as is both common unto Christ with us, and unto us with other things natural, *No man hateth his own flesh, but doth love and cherish it?* The Axiomes of that Law therefore, whereby natural agents are guided, have their use in the moral, yea, even in the spiritual actions of men, and consequently in all Laws belonging unto men howsoever. Neither are the Angels themselves so far severed from us in their kinde and manner of working, but that between the Law of their heavenly operations, and the actions of men in this our state of mortality, such correspondence there is, as maketh it expedient to know in some sort the one, for the others more perfect direction. Would Angels acknowledge themselves Fellow-servants with the Sons of men, but that both having One Lord, there must be some kinde of Law which is one and the same to both, whereunto their obedience being perfecter, is to our weaker both a pattern and a spur? Or would the Apostles, speaking of that which belongeth unto Saints, as they are linked together in the bond of spiritual society, so often make mention how Angels are therewith delighted, if in things publicquely done by the Church we are not somewhat to respect what the Angels of Heaven do? Yea, so far hath the Apostle Saint Paul proceeded, as to signify that even about the outward orders of the Church, which serve but for comeliness, some regard is to be had of Angels; who best like us when we are like unto them in all parts of decent demeanor. So that the Law of Angels we cannot judge altogether impertinent unto the affairs of the Church of God. Our largeness of speech, how men do finde out what things reason bindeth them of necessity to observe, and what it guideth them to chuse in things that are left as arbitrary, the care we have had to declare the different nature of Laws which severally concern all men, from such as belong unto men either civilly or spiritually associated, such as pertain to the fellowship which Nations, or which Christian Nations have among themselves, and in the last place, such as concerning every or any of these God himself hath revealed by his holy word; all serveth but to make manifest, that as the actions of men are of sundry distinct kinds, so the Laws thereof must accordingly be distinguished. There are in men operations, some natural, some rational, some supernatural, some politique, some finally Ecclesiastical. Which if we measure

rist. 1. thic. 10.  
n. xptian op-  
Soc. ut pson-  
Intelligit de le-  
gum qualitate  
judicium!

Prov. 8. 15.

Ephes. 5. 29.

Apo. 9. 10.

1 Pet. 1. 12.  
Ephes. 3. 1.  
1 Tim. 5. 21.

1 Cor. 13. 10.





of mens mindes with the true distinction of Laws and of their severall force, according to the different kind and quality of our actions, it shall not peradventure be amiss to shew in some one example how they all take place. To seek no further; let but that be considered, then which there is not any thing more familiar unto us, our food. What things are food, and what are not, we judge naturally by sense, neither need we any other Law to be our director in that behalf then the self same which is common unto us with beasts. But when we come to consider of food, as of a benefit which God of his bounteous goodness hath provided for all things living; the Law of reason doth here require the duty of thankfulness at our hands, towards him at whose hands we have it. And lest appetite in the use of food, should lead us beyond that which is meet, we owe in this case obedience to that Law of Reason, which teacheth mediocrity in meats and drinks. The same things Divine Law teacheth also, as at large we have shewed it doth all parts of moral duty, whereunto we all of necessity stand bound, in regard of the life to come. But of certain kinds of food the Jews sometime had, and we our selves likewise have a mystical, religious, and supernatural use; they of their Paschal Lamb and Oblations; we of our Bread and Wine in the Eucharist; which use none but Divine Law could institute. Now as we live in Civil society, the state of the Commonwealth wherein we live, both may and doth require certain Laws concerning food; which Laws, saving onely that we are members of the Commonwealth where they are of force, we should not need to respect as rules of action, whereas now in their place and kinde they must be respected and obeyed. Yea, the self-same matter is also a subject wherein sometime Ecclesiastical Laws have place; so that unless we will be Authors of confusion in the Church, our private discretion, which otherwise might guide us a contrary way, must here submit it self to be that way guided, which the publique judgement of the Church hath thought better. In which case that of *Zonaras* concerning fasts may be remembered. *Fastings are good, but let good things be done in good and convenient manner. He that transgresseth in his fasting the orders of the holy Fathers, the positive Laws of the Church of Christ, must be plainly told, that good things do lose the grace of their goodness, when in good sort they are not performed.* And as here mens private fancies must give place to the higher judgement of that Church which is in authority a Mother over them: so the very actions of whole Churches have, in regard of commerce and fellowshipp with other Churches, been subject to Laws concerning food, the contrary unto which Laws had else been thought more convenient for them to observe; as by that order of abstinence from strangled and blood may appear; an order grounded upon that fellowship which the Churches of the Gentiles had with the Jews. Thus we see how even one and the self same thing is under divers considerations conveyed through many Laws, and that to measure by any one kinde of Law all the actions of men, were to confound the admirable order wherein God hath disposed all Laws, each as in nature, so in degree, distinct from other. Wherefore that here we may briefly end, of Law there can be no less acknowledged, then that her seat is the bosom of God, her voyce the harmony of the World; all things in Heaven and Earth do her homage, the very least as feeling her care, and the greatest as not exempted from her power; both Angels, and men, and creatures of what condition soever, though each in different sort and manner, yet all with uniform consent, admiring her as the Mother of their peace and joy.

Ioh: 4.3  
Plal. 145. 17, 16.

Ὅτι ἐὰν τὸ  
καλὸν, ὅταν μὴ  
καλῶς γίνῃ.  
Zonar. in Can.  
Apost. 66.

AGs 15. 21.

# O F T H E L A W S O F Ecclesiastical Politie.

## *The Second B o o k.*

Concerning their First Position who urge Reformation  
in the Church of England.

*Namely, That Scripture is the onely rule of all things  
which in this life may be done by men.*

### The matter contained in this second Book.

1. **A**N Answer to their first proof brought out of Scripture, Prov. 2.9.
2. To their second, 1 Cor. 10.31.
3. To their third, 1 Tim. 4.5.
4. To their fourth. Rom. 14.23.
5. To their proofs out of Fathers, who dispute negatively from the Authority of Holy Scripture.
6. To their proof by the Scriptures custom of disputing from Divine Authority negatively.
7. An examination of their opinion concerning the force of Arguments taken from humane Authority, for the ordering of mens actions and perswasions.
8. A Declaration what the truth is in this matter.



That which in the title hath been proposed for the matter whereof we treat, is onely the Ecclesiastical Law whereby we are governed; So neither is it my purpose to maintain any other thing, then that which therein truth and reason shall approve. For concerning the dealings of men who administer Government, and unto whom the execution of that law belongeth, they have their Judge who sitteth in Heaven, and before whose Tribunal Seat they are accountable for whatsoever abuse or corruption, which (being worthily disliked in this Church) the want either of care or of conscience in them hath bred. We are no Patrons of those things therefore; the best defence whereof is speedy redress and amendment. That which is of God we defend, to the uttermost of that ability which he hath given: that which is otherwise, let it wither even in the root from whence it hath sprung. Wherefore all these abuses being severed and set apart, which rise from the corruption of men, and not from

from the Laws themselves: Come we to those things which in the very whole intire form of our Church-Polity have been (as we perswade our selves) injuriously blamed by them who endeavour to overthrow the same, and instead thereof to establish a much worse; onely through a strong misconceit they have, that the same is grounded on Divine Authority. Now, whether it be that through an earnest longing desire to see things brought to a peaceable end, I do but imagine the matters whereof we contend, to be fewer then indeed they are; or else for that in truth they are fewer when they come to be discusst by reason, then otherwise they seem, when by heat of contention they are divided into many slips, and of every branch an heap is made: surely, as now we have drawn them together, choosung out those things which are requisite to be severally all discusst, and omitting such mean specialities as are likely (without any great labour) to fall afterwards of themselves; I know no cause why either the number or the length of these Controversies should diminish our hope of seeing them end with concord and love on all sides; which of his infinite love and goodness the Father of all peace and unity grant. Unto which scope that our endeavour may the more directly tend, it seemeth fittest that first those things be examined, which are as seeds from whence the rest that ensue have grown. And of such the most general is that, wherewith we are here to make our entrance: a question not moved (I think) anywhere in other Churches, and therefore in ours the more likely to be soon (I trust) determined: the rather for that it hath grown from no other root, then onely a desire to enlargethe necessary use of the Word of God; which desire hath begotten an error enlarging it further then (as we are perswaded) soundness of truth will bear. For whereas God hath left sundry kindes of Laws unto men, and by all those Laws the actions of men are in some sort directed: they hold that one onely Law, the Scripture, must be the rule to direct in all things, even so far as to the *taking up of a Rush or straw*. About which point there should not need any question to grow, and that which is grown might presently end, if they did yield but to these two restraints: the first is, Not to extend the actions whereof they speak, so low as that instance doth import, of taking up a straw, but rather keep themselves at the least within the compass of moral actions, actions which have in them Vice or Vertue: the second, Not to exact at our hands for every action the knowledge of some place of Scripture out of which we stand bound to deduce it, as by divers testimonies they seek to enforce; but rather as the truth is, so to acknowledge, that it sufficeth if such actions be framed according to the Law of Reason; the general Axiomes, Rules and Principles of which Law being so frequent in holy Scripture, there is no let but in that regard, even out of Scripture such duties may be deduced by some kinde of consequence (as by long circuit of deduction it may be that even all truth out of any truth may be concluded) howbeit no man bound in such sort to deduce all his actions out of Scripture, as if either the place be to him unknown whereon they may be concluded, or the reference unto that place not presently considered of, the action shall in that respect be condemned as unlawful. In this we dissent, and this we are presently to examine.

1. In all parts of knowledge rightly so termed, things most general are most strong; Thus it must be, inasmuch as the certainty of our perswasion touching particulars, dependeth altogether upon the credit of those generalities out of which they grow. Albeit therefore every cause admit not such infallible evidence of proof, as leaveth no possibility of doubt or scruple behinde it; yet they who claim the general assent of the whole world unto that which they teach, and do not fear to give very hard and heavy sentence upon as many as refuse to embrace the same, must have special regard that their first foundations and grounds be more then slender probabilities. This whole question which hath been moved about the kinde of Church Regiment, we could not but for our own resolution sake, endeavour to unrip and sift; following therein as near as we might, the conduct of that judicial method which serveth best for invention of truth. By means whereof having found this the head Theorem of all their Discourses, who plead for the change of Ecclesiastical Government in England, namely, *That the Scripture of God is in such sort the rule of humane actions, that simply whatsoever we do, and are not by it directed thereunto, the same is sin*; we hold it for so Solomon saith in the second Chapter of the Proverbs, *My son, if thou receive my words, &c. then thou shalt understand justice, and judgement, and equity, and every good way.*

T. C. 1. 1. p. 55;  
60.

The first pretended proof of the first Position out of Scripture. Prov. 1. 9. T. C. 1. 1. p. 10. I say, that the Word of God containeth whatsoever things can fall into any part of mans life. For so Solomon



necessary that the proofs hereof be weighed: Be they of weight sufficient or otherwise, it is not ours to judge and determine; onely what difficulties there are, which as yet withhold our assent, till we be further and better satisfied, I hope, no indifferent amongst them will scorn or refuse to hear. First, therefore, whereas they alledge; *That Wisdom doth teach men every good way*; and have thereupon inferred, that no way is good in any kinde of action, unless wisdom do by Scripture lead unto it: See they not plainly how they restrain the manifold ways which Wisdom hath to teach men by, unto one onely way of teaching, which is by Scripture? The bounds of Wisdom are large, and within them much is contained. Wisdom was *Adams* Instructor in Paradise: Wisdom educated the Fathers who lived before the Law, with the knowledge of holy things; by the wisdom of the Law of God, *David* attained to excell others in understanding; and *Solomon* likewise to excel *David*, by the self-same wisdom of God, teaching him many things besides the Law. The ways of well-doing are in number even as many, as are the kinds of voluntary actions: so that whatsoever we do in this World, and may do it ill, we shew our selves therein by well-doing to be wise. Now if wisdom did teach men by Scripture not onely all the ways that are right and good in some certain kinde, according to that of *S. Paul*, concerning the use of Scripture; but did simply without any manner of exception, restraint, or distinction, teach every way of doing well: There is no Art but Scripture should teach it, because every Art doth teach the way how to do some thing or other well. To teach men therefore Wisdom professeth, and to teach them every good way: but not every good way by one way of teaching. Whatsoever either men on Earth, or the Angels of Heaven do know, it is as a drop of that unemptiable Fountain of wisdom; which Wisdom hath diversly imparted her treasures unto the World. As her ways are of sundry kinds, so her manner of teaching is not merely one and the same. Some things she openeth by the sacred Books of Scripture; some things by the glorious works of Nature: with some things she inspireth them from above by spiritual influence; with some things she leadeth and traineth them onely by worldly experience and practice. We may not so in any one special kinde admire her, that we disgrace her in any other; but let all her ways be according unto their place and degree adored.

Psal. 119. 95.

*1 Tim. 3. 16. The whole Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable to teach, to improve, to correct, and to instruct in righteousness, that the man of God may be absolute, being good and perfect unto all good works. He meaneth all and only those good works which belong unto us as we are men of God, & which unto salvation are necessary. Or if we understand by men of God, Gods Ministers, there is not required in them an universal skill of every good work or way, but an ability to teach whatsoever men are bound to do that they may be saved. And with this kinde of knowledge the Scripture sufficeth to furnish them as touching matter.*

The second proof out of scripture, *Cor. 10. 3. T. C. 4. p. 26. S. Paul saith, that we be- lieve we eat or drink, or what- soever we do, we must do it to the glory of God: but no man can glorifie God in any thing but by obedience; and there is no obedience but in respect of the command- ment & word of God; there- fore it follow- eth that the word of God directeth a man in all his actions.*

2. That *all things be done to the glory of God*, the blessed Apostle (it is true) exhorteth. The glory of God is the admirable excellency of that Vertue Divine, which being made manifest, causeth Men and Angels to extoll his greatness, and in regard thereof to fear him. By being glorified, it is not meant, that he doth receive any augmentation of glory at our hands; but his Name we glorifie, when we testifie our acknowledgement of his glory. Which albeit we most effectually do by the vertue of obedience; nevertheless it may be perhaps a question, Whether *St. Paul* did mean that we sin as oft as ever we go about any thing, without an expresse intent and purpose to obey God therein. He saith of himself; *I do in all things please all men, seeking not mine own commodity, but rather the good of many, that they may be saved.* Shall it hereupon be thought, that *St. Paul* did not move either hand or foot, but with expresse intent even thereby to further the common salvation of men? We move, we sleep, we take the cup at the hand of our friend, a number of things we oftentimes do, onely to satisfie some natural desire, without present expresse and actual reference unto any Commandment of God. Unto his glory even these things are done which we naturally perform, and not onely that which morally and spiritually we do. For by every effect proceeding from the most concealed instincts of Nature, his power is made manifest. But it doth not therefore follow, that of necessity we shall sin, unless we expressly intend this in every such particular. But be it a thing which requireth no more then onely our general presupposed willingness to please God in all things, or be it a matter wherein we cannot so glorifie the Name of God as we should, without an actual intent to do him in that particular some special obedience; yet for any thing there is in this sentence alledged to the

the contrary, God may be glorified by obedience, and obeyed by performance of his will, and his will be performed with an actual intelligent desire to fulfil that Law which maketh known what his will is, although no special clause or sentence of Scripture bein every such action set before mens eyes to warrant it. For Scripture is not the onely Law whereby God hath opened his will touching all things that may be done; but there are other kinde of Laws which notifie the will of God, as in the former Book hath been proved at large: nor is there any Law of God, whereunto he doth not account our obedience his glory. *Do therefore all things unto the glory of God, (saith the Apostle) be inoffensive both to the Jews and Grecians, and the Church of God; even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own commodity, but manner, that they may be saved.* In the least thing done disobediently towards God, or offensively against the good of men whose benefit we ought to seek for as for our own, we plainly shew that we do not acknowledge God to be such as indeed he is, and consequently that we glorifie him not. This the blessed Apostle teacheth: but doth any Apo<sup>st</sup>le teach, that we cannot glorifie God otherwise then onely in doing what we finde that God in Scripture commandeth us to do? The Churches dispersed a nongit the Heathen in the East part of the World, are by the Apostle S. Peter exhorted, to have their conversation honest amongst the Gentiles, that they which spake evil of them as of evil doers, might by the good works which they should see, glorifie God in the day of visitation. As long as that which Christians did was good, and no way subject to just reproof, their vertuous conversation was a mean to work the Heathens conversion unto Christ. Seeing therefore this had been a thing altogether impossible, but that Infidels themselves did discern, in matters of life and conversation, when Believers did well, and when otherwise; when they glorified their Heavenly Father, and when not: it followeth, that some things wherein God is glorified, may be some other way known then onely by the sacred Scriptures; of which Scripture the Gentiles being utterly ignorant, did notwithstanding judge rightly of the quality of Christian mens actions. Most certain it is, that nothing but onely sin doth dishonour God. So that to glorifie him in all things, is to do nothing whereby the Name of God may be blasphemed; nothing whereby the salvation of Jew or Grecian, or any in the Church of Christ may be let or hindred, nothing whereby his Law is transgressed. But the question is, whether onely Scripture do shew whatsoever God is glorified in.

3. And though meats and drinks be said to be sanctified by the Word of God, and by Prayer: yet neither is this a reason sufficient to prove, that by Scripture we must of necessity be directed, in every light and common thing which is incident unto any part of mans life. Onely it sheweth that unto us the Word, that is to say, the Gospel of Christ, having not delivered any such difference of things clean and unclean, as the Law of Moses did unto the Jews; there is no cause but that we may use indifferently all things, as long as we do not (like Swine) take the benefit of them without a thankful acknowledgement of his liberality and goodness, by whose providence they are enjoyed: and therefore the Apostle gave warning beforehand to take heed of such as should enjoyn to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving, by them which believe and know the Truth. For every creature of God is good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving, because it is sanctified by the Word of God and Prayer. The Gospel, by not making many things unclean, as the Law did, hath sanctified those things generally to all, which particularly each man unto himself must sanctifie by a reverend and holy use: which will hardly be drawn so far as to serve their purpose, who have imagined the Word in such sort to sanctifie all things, that neither food can be tasted, nor rayment put on, nor in the World anything done, but this deed must needs be sin in them which do not first know it appointed unto them by Scripture before they do it.

4. But to come unto that which of all other things in Scripture is most stood upon, that place of S. Paul they say, is of all other most clear, where speaking of those things which are called indifferent, in the end he encludeth, that whatsoever is not of faith, is sin. But faith is not but in respect of the Word of God. Therefore whatsoever is not done by the Word of God, is sin. Whereunto we answer, that albeit the name of faith being properly and strictly taken, it must needs have reference unto some uttered word,

1 Pet. 2. 12.

Rom. 2. 34.

1 Cor. 10. 3.  
Rom. 2. 3.

The third scripture proof, 1 Tim. 4. 5. and that which St. Paul said of meats and drinks, that they are sanctified unto us by the word of God, the same is to be understood of all things else whatsoever we have the use of, 1 Cor. 10. 31.  
1 Tim. 4.

The fourth scripture proof, Rom. 14. 23.  
1 Cor. 10. 31.

Pal. 19. 8.  
Apoc 3. 14.  
2 Cor. 1. 12.

Iohn 10. 37.

Iohn 10. 15.

as the object of belief: nevertheless, sith the ground of credit is the credibility of things credited; and things are made credible, either by the known condition and quality of the utterer, or by the manifest likelihood of Truth which they have in themselves; hereupon it riseth, that whatsoever we are perswaded of, the same we are generally said to believe. In which generality the object of faith may not so narrowly be restrained, as if the same did extend no further then to the onely Scriptures of God. *Though (saith our Saviour) ye believe not me, believe my works, that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and I in him. The other Disciples said unto Thomas, We have seen the Lord; but his answer unto them was, Except I see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into them, I will not believe.* Can there be any thing more plain, then that which by these two sentences appeareth? namely, that there may be a certain belief grounded upon other assurance then Scripture; any thing more clear then that we are said not only to believe the things which we know by anothers relation, but even whatsoever we are certainly perswaded of, whether it be by reason, or by sense?

\* And if any will say, that S. Paul meaneth there a full ~~persuasion~~ <sup>persuasion</sup> and perswasion that that which he doth is well done, I grant it. But from whence can that spring but from faith? how can we perswade and assure our selves that we do well, but whereas we have the word of God for our warrant? T.C. l. 1. c. 37.  
b What also that some even of those Heathen men have taught, that nothing ought to be done, whereof thou doubtest whether it be right or wrong? Whereby it appeareth, that even those which had no knowledge of the Word of God, did see much of the equity of this which the Apostle requireth of a Christian man: and that the chiefest difference is, that where they sent men for the difference of good and evil to the light of reason, in such things the Apostle sendeth them to the School of Christ in his Word, which onely is able through faith to give them assurance and resolution in their doings. T.C. l. 1. p. 60.

Forasmuch therefore as it is granted that S. Paul doth mean nothing else by Faith, but only a full perswasion that that which we do is well done; against which kinde of faith or perswasion as S. Paul doth count it sin to enterprize any thing; so likewise some of the very Heathen have taught, as Tully, That nothing ought to be done whereof thou doubtest whether it be right or wrong; whereby it appeareth that even those which had no knowledge of the Word of God, did see much of the equity of this which the Apostle requireth of a Christian man: I hope we shall not seem altogether unnecessarily to doubt of the soundness

Iohn 10. 21.

of their opinion, who think simply that nothing but onely the Word of God, can give us assurance in any thing we are to do, and resolve us that we do well. For might not the Jewes have been fully perswaded that they did well to think (if they had so thought) that in Christ God the Father was, although the onely ground of this their faith had been the wonderful works they saw him do? Might not, yea, did not Thomas fully in the end perswade himself, that he did well to think that body which now was raised, to be the same which had been crucified? That which gave Thomas this assurance was his sense; Thomas, because thou hast seen, thou believest, saith our Saviour. What Scripture had Tully for his assurance? Yet I nothing doubt, but that they who alledge him, think he did well to set down in writing a thing so consonant unto truth. Finally, we all believe that the Scriptures of God are Sacred, and that they have proceeded from God; our selves we assure that we do right well in so believing. We have for this point a demonstration sound & infallible. But it is not the word of God which doth or can possibly assure us, that we do well to think it his word. For if any one Book of Scripture did give testimony to all; yet still that Scripture which giveth credit to the rest, would require another Scripture to give credit unto it: neither could we ever come unto any pause whereon to rest our assurance this way; so that unless besides Scripture there were something which might assure us that we do well, we could not think we do well, no not in being assured that Scripture is a sacred and holy Rule of well doing. On which determination we might be contented to stay our selves without further proceeding herein, but that we are drawn on into a larger speech by reason of their so great earnestness, who beat more and more upon these last alledged words, as being of all other most pregnant. Whereas therefore they still argue, that *wheresoever faith is wanting, there is sin*; and, *in every action not commanded, faith is wanting*; Ergo, *in every action not commanded, there is sin*: I would demand of them; first, forasmuch as the nature of things indifferent is neither to be commanded nor forbidden, but left free and arbitrary; how there can be any thing indifferent, if for want of faith sin be committed, when any thing not commanded is done? So that of necessity they must adde somewhat, and at leastwise thus set it down: In every action not commanded of God or permitted with approbation, Faith

T.C. l. 2. p. 58.



is wanting, and for want of Faith there is sin. The next thing we are to enquire is, What those things be which God permitteth with approbation, and how we may know them to be so permitted? When there are unto one end sundry means; as for example, for the sustenance of our bodies many kinds of food; many sorts of raiment to cloath our nakedness, and so in other things of like condition: here the end it self being necessary, but not so any one mean thereunto; necessary that our bodies should be both fed and cloathed, howbeit no one kinde of food or raiment necessary; therefore we hold these things free in their own nature and indifferent. The choice is left to our own discretion, except a principal bond of some higher duty remove the indifferency that such things have in themselves. Their indifferency is removed, if either we take away our own liberty, as *Ananias* did, for whom to have *Acts* 5. sold or held his possessions it was indifferent, till his solemn Vow and Promise unto God had strictly bound him one onely way: or if God himself have precisely abridged the same, by restraining us unto, or by barring us from some one or more things of many, which otherwise were in themselves altogether indifferent. Many fashions of Priestly attire there were, whereof *Aaron* and his sons might have had their free choice without sin, but that God expressly tied them unto one. All meats indifferent unto the Jew, were it not that God by name excepted some, as Swines flesh. Impossible therefore it is we should otherwise think, then that what things God doth neither command nor forbid, the same he permitteth with approbation either to be done or left undone. *All things are lawful unto me*, saith the Apostle, speaking as it seemeth, in the person of the Christian Gentile, for maintenance of liberty in things indifferent: whereunto his answer is, that nevertheless, *All things are not expedient*; in things indifferent there is a choice, they are not always equally expedient. Now in things although not commanded of God, yet lawful, because they are permitted, the question is, What light shall shew us the conveniency which one hath above another? For answer, their final determination is, that whereas the *Hieroben* did send men for the difference of good and evil to the light of reason, in such things the Apostle sendeth us to the School of Christ in his word, which onely is able through faith to give us assurance and resolution in our doings. Which word *Onely*, is utterly without possibility of ever being proved. For what if it were true concerning things indifferent, that unless the Word of the Lord had determined of the free use of them, there could have been no lawful use of them at all; which notwithstanding is untrue; because it is not the Scriptures setting down such things as indifferent, but their not setting down as necessary, that doth make them to be indifferent: yet this to our present purpose serveth nothing at all. We enquire not now, Whether any thing be free to be used, which Scripture hath not set down as free? but concerning things known and acknowledged to be indifferent, whether particularly in chusing any one of them before another we sin, if any thing but Scripture direct us into this our choice. When many meats are set before me, all are indifferent, none unlawful; I take one as most convenient. If Scripture require me so to do, then is not the thing indifferent, because I must do what Scripture requireth. They are all indifferent; I might take any, Scripture doth not require me to make any special choice of one: I do notwithstanding make choice of one, my discretion teaching me so to do. A hard case, that hereupon I should be justly condemned of sin. Nor let any man think, that following the judgement of natural discretion in such cases, we can have no assurance that we please God. For to the author and God of our nature, how shall any operation proceeding in natural sort, be in that respect unacceptable? The nature which himself hath given to work by, he cannot but be delighted with, when we exercise the same any way without Commandment of his to the contrary. My desire is to make this cause so manifest, that if it were possible, no doubt or scruple concerning the same, might remain in any mans cogitation. Some truths there are, the verity whereof time doth alter: as it is now true that Christ is risen from the dead; which thing was not true at such time as Christ was living on earth, and had not suffered. It would be known therefore, whether this which they teach concerning the sinful stain of all actions not commanded of God, be a truth that doth now appertain unto us onely, or a perpetual truth, in such sort that from the first beginning of the world, unto the last consummation thereof, it neither hath been, nor can be otherwise. I see not how they can restrain this unto any particular time, how they can think it true now, and not always true, that in every action not commanded there

Job 4. 19.

Arist. el. 1.

August. Ep. 18.

The first assertion endeavoured to be proved by the use of taking arguments negatively from the authority of Scripture: which kinde of disputing is usual in the Fathers.

there is for want of faith sin. Then let them cast back their eyes unto former generations of men, and mark what was done in the prime of the World: *Seth, Enock, Noah, Sem, Abraham, Job*, and the rest that lived before any syllable of the Law of God was written, did they not sin as much as we do in every action not commanded? That which God is unto us by his Sacred Word, the same he was unto them by such like means as *Elipha* in *Job* describeth. If therefore we sin in every action which the Scripture commandeth us not, it followeth that they did the like in all such actions as were not by revelation from Heaven exacted at their hands. Unless God from Heaven did by vision still shew them what to do, they might do nothing; not eat, not drink, not sleep, not move. Yea, but even as in darkness, candle-light may serve to guide mens steps, which to use in the day were madness; so when God had once delivered his Law in writing, it may be, they are of opinion, that it must needs be sin for men to do any thing, which was not there commanded them to do, whatsoever they might do before. Let this be granted, and it shall hereupon plainly ensue, either that the light of Scripture once shining in the world, all other light of nature is therewith in such sort drowned, that now we need it not, neither may we longer use it; or if it stand us in any stead, yet as *Aristotle* speaketh of men whom nature hath framed for the state of servitude, saying, *They have reason so far forth as to conceive when others direct them*, but little or none in directing themselves by themselves; so likewise our natural capacity and judgement must serve us onely for the right understanding of that which the sacred Scripture teacheth. Had the Prophets who succeeded *Moses*, or the blessed Apostles which followed them, been settled in this persuasion, never would they have taken so great pains in gathering together natural Arguments, thereby to teach the faithful their duties. To use unto them any other motive then *Scriptum est, Thus it is written*, had been to teach them other grounds of their actions then Scripture; which I grant, they alledge commonly, but not onely. Onely Scripture they should have alledged, had they been thus persuaded, that so far forth we do sin, as we do any thing otherwise directed then by Scripture. *S. Augustine* was resolute in points of Christianity to credit none, how godly and learned soever he were, unless he confirmed his sentence by the Scripture, or by some reason not contrary to them. Let them therefore with *S. Augustine*, reject and condemn that which is not grounded either on the Scripture, or on some reason not contrary to Scripture, and we are ready to give them our hands in token of friendly consent with them.

5. But against this it may be objected, and is, That the Fathers do nothing more usually in their Books, then draw arguments from the Scripture negatively in reproof that which is evil; *Scriptures teach it not, avoid it therefore*; these disputes with the Fathers are ordinary, neither is it hard to shew that the Prophets themselves have so reasoned. Which Arguments being found and good, it should seem that it cannot be unsound or evil to hold still the same assertion, against which hitherto we have disputed. For if it stand with reason thus to argue, Such a thing is not taught us in Scripture, therefore we may not receive or allow it: how should it seem unreasonable to think, that whatsoever we may lawfully do, the Scripture by commanding it must make it lawful? But how far such arguments do reach, it shall the better appear by considering the matter wherein they have been urged. First therefore this we constantly deny, that of so many testimonies as they are able to produce for the strength of negative arguments, any one doth generally (which is the point in question) condemn either all opinions as false, or all actions as unlawful, which the Scripture teacheth us not. The most that can be collected out of them is onely, that in some case a negative argument taken from Scripture is strong, whereof no man endued with judgement can doubt. But doth the strength of some negative Argument prove this kinde of negative Argument strong, by force whereof all things are denied which Scripture affirmeth not, or all things which Scripture prescribeth not condemned? The question between us is concerning matter of action, what things are lawful or unlawful for men to do. The sentences alledged out of the Fathers, are as peremptory and as large in every respect for matter of opinion, as of action; which argueth that in truth they never meant any otherwise to tie the one then the other unto Scripture, both being thereunto equally tied, as far as each is required in the same kinde of necessity unto Salvation. If therefore it be not unlawful to know, and with full persuasion

perswasion to believe much more then Scripture alone doth teach; if it be against all sense and reason to condemn the knowledge of so many Arts and Sciences as are otherwise learned then in holy Scripture, notwithstanding the manifest speeches of ancient Catholick Fathers which seem to close up within the bosom thereof all manner of good and lawful knowledge: wherefore should these words be thought more effectual, to shew that we may not in deeds and practice, then they are to prove that in speculation and knowledge we ought not to go any further then the Scripture? Which Scripture being given to teach matters of belief no less then of action; the Fathers must need be, and are even as plain against credit, besides the relation, as against practice, without the Injunction of the Scripture. S. Augustine hath said, *Whether it be question of Christ, or whether it be question of his Church, or of what thing soever the question be: I say not, if we, but if an Angel from Heaven shall tell us any thing beside that you have received in the Scripture under the Law and Gospel, let him be accursed.* *Tertulian de pra.* In like sort Tertullian, *We may not give our selves this liberty to bring in any thing of our will, nor choose any thing that other men bring in of their will; we have the Apostles themselves for Authors, which themselves brought nothing of their own will; but the discipline which they received of Christ, they delivered faithfully unto the people; in which place the name of Discipline importeth not as they who alledge it would faine have it construed; but as any man who noteth the circumstance of the place, and the occasion of uttering the words, will easily acknowledge; even the self-same thing it signifieth, which the name of Doctrine doth; as well might the one as the other there have been used.* To help the question further, doth not S. Jerome after the self-same manner dispute, *We believe it not, because we read it not? yea, we ought not so much as to know the things which the Book of the Law containeth not,* saith S. Hilarie. Shall we hereupon then conclude, that we may not take knowledge of, or give credit unto any thing which sense, or experience, or report, or art doth propose, unless we finde the same in Scripture? No, it is too plain that so far to extend their speeches, is to wrest them against their true intent and meaning. To urge any thing upon the Church, requiring thereunto that religious assent of Christian belief, wherewith the words of the holy Prophets are received; to urge any thing as part of that supernatural and celestially revealed truth which God hath taught, and not to shew it in Scripture, this did the ancient Fathers evermore think unlawful, impious, execrable. And thus as their speeches were meant, so by us they must be restrained. As for those alledged words of Cyprian, *The Christian Religion shall finde, that out of this Scripture Rules of all Doctrines have sprung, and that from hence doth spring, and thither doth return whatsoever the Ecclesiastical Discipline doth contain.* Surely this place would never have been brought forth in this cause, if it had been but once read over in the Author himself, out of whom it is cited. For the words are uttered concerning that one principal commandment of Love; in the honour whereof he speaketh after this sort, *Surely this commandment containeth the Law and the Prophets, and in this one word is the abridgement of all the Volumes of Scripture: This Nature, and Reason, and the authority of thy Word, O Lord, doth proclaim; this we have heard out of thy mouth: herein the perfection of all Religion doth consist. This is the first commandment and the last: this being written in the Book of Life, is (as it were) an everlasting lesson both to men and Angels.* Let Christian Religion read this one word, and meditate upon this commandment, and out of this Scripture it shall finde the Rules of all Learning to have sprung, and from hence to have risen, and thither to return, whatsoever the Ecclesiastical Discipline containeth; and that in all things it is vain and bootless which Charity confirmeth not. Was this a sentence (trow you) of so great force to prove that Scripture is the only rule of all the actions of men? Might they not hereby even as well prove, that

Aug. contr. l. iter. 2. c. 6.

Tertul. de pra. advers.

T. C. l. 1. p. 31. Augustine saith, Whether it be question of Christ, or whether it be question of his Church, &c. And lest the answer should restrain the general saying of Augustine unto the Doctrine of the Gospel, so that he would thereby shut out the Discipline; even Tertullian himself, before he was embroiled with the Heretic of Montanus, giveth testimony unto the Discipline in the words, *We may not give our selves,* &c.

Hierom. contra Jovin. N. P. sal. 131.

T. C. lib. 1. p. 3. Let him hear what Cyprian saith, *The Christian Religion (Auh de) shall finde, that, &c. Per hoc mandatum legem completitur et Prophetas, & in hoc verbo omnium Scripturarum volumina coarctantur. Hoc natura, hoc ratio, hoc Dominus, verbi tui clamat auctoritas, hoc ex ore tuo audivimus, hic invenit consummationem omnis Religio. Primum est hoc mandatum & ultimum, hoc in libro vita conscriptum inde scientem & hominibus & Angelis exhibet lectionem. Legat hoc unum verbum & in hoc mandato medietur Christiana Religio, & inveniet ex hac Scriptura omnium doctrinarum regulas emanasse, & hinc missis & huc reversis quicquid Ecclesiastica continet disciplina, & in omnibus irritum esse & frivolum quicquid dissentio non confirmat.*



one Commandment of Scripture is the only rule of all things, and so exclude the rest of the Scripture, as now they do all means besides Scripture? But thus it fareth, when too much desire of contradiction causeth our speeches rather to pass by number, then to stay for weight. Well, but *Tertullian* doth in this case speak yet more plainly: *The Scripture* (saith he) *denieth what it noteth not*: which are indeed the words of *Tertullian*. But what? the Scripture reckoneth up the Kings of Israel, and amongst those Kings, *David*; the Scripture reckoneth up the 'sons of *David*, and amongst those sons, *Solomon*. To prove that amongst the Kings of Israel, there was no *David* but only one; no *Solomon* but one in the sons of *David*, *Tertullians* Argument will fitly prove. For inasmuch as the Scripture did propose to reckon up all; if there were moe, it would have named them. In this case *the Scripture doth deny the thing it noteth not*. Howbeit, I could not but think that man to do me some piece of manifest injury, which would hereby fallen upon me a general opinion, as if I did think the Scripture to deny the very Reign of King *Henry* the Eighth, because it nowhere noteth that any such King did reign. *Tertullians* speech is probable concerning such matter as he there speaketh of. There was, saith *Tertullian*, no second *Lamech*, like to him that had two wives; the Scripture denieth what it noteth not. As therefore it noteth one such to have been in that age of the World; so had there been moe, it would by likelihood as well have noted many as one. What infer we now hereupon? *There was no second Lamech*; the Scripture denieth what it noteth not. Were it consonant unto reason to divorce these two sentences, the former of which doth shew how the latter is restrained, and not marking the former, to conclude by the latter of them, that simply whatsoever any man at this day doth think true, is by the Scripture denied, unless it be there affirmed to be true? I wonder that a case so weak and feeble hath been so much persisted in. But to come unto those their sentences, wherein matters of action are more apparently touched, the name of

*Tertul lib. de Monog.*  
T. C. l. i. p. 31.  
And in another place *Tertullian* saith, that the Scripture denieth that which it noteth not.

T. C. l. i. p. 30. And that indifferent things it is not enough that they be not against the Word, but that they be according to the Word, it may appear by other places, where he saith, that whatsoever pleaseth not the Lord, displeaseth him, and with hurt is received, lib. i. ad uxorem.

*Tertullian* is as before, so here again pretended; who writing unto his wife two Books, and exhorting her in the one to live a widow, in case God before her should take him unto his mercy; and in the other, if she did marry, yet not to joyne herself to an Infidel, as in those times some Widows Christian had done for the advancement of their

estate in this present world; he urgeth very earnestly *S. Pauls* words, *Only in the Lord*: Whereupon he demandeth of them that think they may do the contrary, what Scripture they can shew where God hath dispenced and granted license to do against that which the blessed Apostle so strictly doth enjoyn? And because in defence it might perhaps be replied, Seeing God doth will that couples which are married when both are Infidels, if either party chance to be after converted unto Christianity, this should not make separation between them, as long as the unconverted was willing to retain the other on whom the grace of Christ had shined; wherefore then should that let the making of marriage, which doth not dissolve marriage being made? After great reasons shewed why God doth in Converts being married, allow continuance with Infidels, and yet disallow that the faithful when they are free should enter into bonds of Wedlock with such, concludeth in the end concerning those women that so marry, *They that please not the Lord, do even thereby offend the Lord*; they do even thereby throw themselves into evil; that is to say, while they please him not by marrying in him, they do that whereby they concur his displeasure; they make an offer of themselves into the service of that enemy with whose servants they link themselves in so near a bond. What one syllable is there in all this, prejudicial any way to that we hold? For the words of *Tertullian* as they are by them alledged, are two ways misunderstood; both in the former part, where that is extended generally to all things in the neuter gender, which he speaketh in the feminine gender of womens persons; and in the latter, where, *received with hurt*, is put instead of *wilful incurring that which is evil*. And so in sum, *Tertullian* doth neither mean nor say as is pretended, *Whatsoever pleaseth not the Lord, displeaseth him, and with hurt is received*; but, *Those women that please not the Lord by their kinde of marrying, do even thereby offend the Lord*,

*Quæ Domini non placeant, utique Domini sunt offensa, utique male se inferunt.*

Lord, they do even thereby throw themselves into evil. Somewhat more shew there is in a second place of *Tertullian*, which notwithstanding when we have examined, it will be found as the rest are. The Roman Emperours custom was at certain solemn times to bestow on his Souldiers a donative; which donative they received, wearing garlands upon their heads. There were in the time of the Emperours *Severus* and *Antonius*, many who being Souldiers had been converted unto Christ, and notwithstanding continued still in that Military course of life. In which number, one man there was amongst all the rest, who at such a time coming to the Tribune of the Army to receive his Donative, came but with a Garland in his hand, and not in such sort as others did. The Tribune offended hereat, demandeth what this great singularity would mean. To whom the Souldier, *Christianus sum, I am a Christian*. Many there were so besides him, which yet did otherwise at that time; whereupon grew a question, whether a Christian Souldier might herein do as the unchristian did, and wear as they wore. Many of them, which were very found in Christian belief, did rather commend the zeal of this man, then approve his action. *Tertullian* was at the same time a *Ministrant*, and an enemy unto the Church for condemning that Prophetical Spirit, which *Montanus* and his followers did boast they had received; as if in them Christ had performed his last promise; as if to them he had sent the Spirit that should be their perfecter and final instructor in the mysteries of Christian truth. Which exulceration of mind made him apt to take all occasions of contradiction. Wherefore in honour of that action, and to gall their mindes who did not so much commend it, he wrote his book *de Corona Militis*, not dissembling the stomach wherewith he wrote it. For first the man he commended as one more constant then the rest of his Brethren, *Who presumed*, saith he, *that they might well enough serve two Lords*. Afterwards choler somewhat rising within him, he addeth, *It doth even remain that they should also devise how to rid themselves of his Martyrdom, towards the Prophecies of whose Holy Spirit they have already shewed their disdain. They matter that their good and long peace is now in hazard. I doubt not but some of them send the Scriptures before, trust up bag and baggage, make themselves in a readiness, that they may fly from City to City. For that is the onely point of the Gospel which they are careful not to forget. I know even their Pastors very well what they are, in peace Lyons, Harts in time of trouble and fear. Now these men, saith Tertullian, They must be answered, Where do we finde it written in Scripture, that a Christian man may not wear a Garland? And as mens speeches uttered in heat of distempered affection, have oftentimes much more eagerness then weight; so he that shall mark the proofs alledged, and the answers to things objected in that Book, will now and then perhaps espy the like imbecillity. Such is that argument whereby they that wore on their heads Garlands, are charged as transgressors of Natures Law, and guilty of Sacrilege against God the Lord of Nature, inasmuch as Flowers in such sort worn, can neither be smelt nor seen well by those that wear them: and God made Flowers sweet and beautiful, that being seen and smelt unto, they might so delight. Neither doth *Tertullian* bewray this weakness in striking onely, but also in repelling their strokes with whom he contendeth. They ask, saith he, *What Scripture is there which doth teach that we should not be crowned? And what Scripture is there which doth teach that we should?* For in requiring on the contrary part the ayd of Scripture, they do give sentence beforehand that their part ought also by Scripture to be aided. Which answer is of no great force. There is no necessity, that if I confess I ought not to do that which the Scripture forbiddeth me, I should thereby acknowledge my self bound to do nothing which the Scripture commandeth me not. For many inducements besides Scripture may lead me to that, which if Scripture be against, they all give place, and are of no value; yet otherwise are strong and effectual to persuade. Which thing himself well enough understanding, and being not ignorant that Scripture in many things doth neither*

T. C. l. 2. p. 87. And to come yet neerer, where he disputeth against the wearing of crown or garland (which is indifferent in itself) to those which objecting asked, Where the Scripture saith, that a man might not wear a Crown? He answereth by asking where the Scripture saith that they may wear? And unto them replying that it is permitted, which is not forbidden, he answereth that it is forbidden which is not permitted. Whereby appeareth, that the argument of the Scriptures negatively, holdeth not onely in the Doctrine and Ecclesiastical Discipline, but even in matters arbitrary and variable by the advice of the Church. Where it is not enough that they be not forbidden, unless there be some word which doth permit the use of them: It is not enough that the Scripture speaketh not against them, unless it speak for them; and finally, where it displeaseth the Lord which please him not, we must of necessity have the Word of his mouth to declare his pleasure.

*Tert. de Coron. Milit.*

command

command nor forbid, but use silence; his resolution in fine, is, that in the Church a number of things are strictly observed, whereof no Law of Scripture maketh mention one way or other; that of things once received and confirmed by use, long usage is a Law sufficient; that in civil affairs when there is no other Law, custom it self doth stand for Law; that inasmuch as Law doth stand upon reason, to alledge reason serveth as well as to cite Scripture; that whatsoever is reasonable, the same is lawful, whosoever is Authour of it; that the authority of custom is great; finally, that the custom of Christians was then, and had been a long time, not to wear Garlands; and therefore that undoubtedly they did offend, who presumed to violate such a custom by not observing that thing: the very inveterate observation whereof was a Law sufficient to binde all men to observe it, unless they could shew some higher Law, some Law of Scripture to the contrary. This presupposed, it may stand then very well with strength and soundness of reason, even thus to answer, *Whereas they ask what Scripture forbiddeth them to wear a Garland? we are in this case rather to demand, What Scripture commandeth them? they cannot here alledge, that that is permitted with is not forbidden them: no, that is forbidden them which is not permitted.* For long received custom forbidding them to do as they did (if so be it did forbid them) there was no excuse in the world to justify their act, unless in the Scripture they could shew some Law that did licence them thus to break a received custom. Now whereas in all the Books of *Tertullian* besides, there is not so much found as in that one, to prove not onely that we may do, but that we ought to do sundry things which the Scripture commandeth not; out of that very Book these sentences are brought to make us believe that *Tertullian* was of a clean contrary minde. We cannot therefore hereupon yield, we cannot grant, that hereby is made manifest the argument of Scripture negative to be of force, not onely in doctrine and Ecclesiastical discipline, but even in matters arbitrary. For *Tertullian* doth plainly hold even in that Book, that neither the matter which he entreateth of was arbitrary, but necessary, inasmuch as the received custom of the Church did tie and binde them not to wear Garlands as the Heathens did; yea, and further also he reckoneth up particularly a number of things, whereof he expresly concludeth, *Harum & aliarum ejusmodi disciplinarum si legem expostules Scripturarum, nullam invenies*; which is as much as if he had said in expresse words, Many things there are which concern the discipline of the Church and the duties of men, which to abrogate and take away, the Scriptures negatively urged may not in any case perswade us, but they must be observed, yea although no Scripture be found which requireth any such thing. *Tertullian* therefore undoubtedly doth not in this Book shew himself to be of the same minde with them by whom his name is pretended.

The first assertion  
evident  
vouched to be  
confirmed by  
the Scriptures  
custom of dis-  
puting from  
Divine au-  
thority negative-  
ly, *1 John 1. 7.*  
God is light,

and there is in him no darkness at all. *Hebr. 6. 19.* It is impossible that God should lie. *Numb. 23. 19.* God is not as man, that he should lye. *T. c. l. 2. p. 28.* It is not hard to shew that the Prophets have reasoned negatively. As when in the person of the Lord the Prophet saith, Whereof I have not spoken, *Isa. 19. 3.* And which never entered into my heart, *Isa. 7. 31, 32.* And where he condemneth them, because they have not asked counsel at the mouth of the Lord, *Isa. 30. 21.* And it may be shewed, that the same kind of Argument hath been used in things which are not of the substance of salvation or damnation, and whereof there was no commandment to the contrary (as in the former there was, *Levit. 12. 21.* and *20. 3.* *Deut. 1. 16.*) In *Ioshua* the Children of Israel are charged by the Prophet, that they asked not counsel of the mouth of the Lord, when they entered into Covenant with the *Gibeonites*, *Ioshua 9. 14.* And yet that Covenant was not made contrary unto any Commandment of God. Moreover, we read that when *David* had taken this counsel, to build a Temple unto the Lord, albeit the Lord had revealed before in his Word, that there should be such a standing place, where the Ark of the Covenant and the service should have a certain abiding; and albeit there was no Word of God which forbade *David* to build the Temple; yet the Lord (with commendation of his good affection and zeale he had to the advancement of his glory) concludeth against *David's* resolution to build the Temple, with this Reason, namely, That he had given no Commandment of this who should build it, *1 Chron. 17. 6.*

have



have, for performance of that thing whereunto they tend. Whereupon it followeth, that the end being known whereunto he directeth his speech, the argument negatively is evermore strong and forcible, concerning those things that are apparently requisite unto the same end. As for example, God intending to set down sundry times that which in Angels is most excellent, hath not anywhere spoken so highly of them as he hath of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; therefore they are not in dignity equal unto him. It is the Apostle *S. Pauls* argument. The purpose of God was to teach his people, both unto whom they should offer sacrifice, and what sacrifice was to be offered. To burn their sons in fire unto *Baal* he did not command them, he spake no such thing, neither came it into his minde: therefore this they ought not to have done. Which argument the Prophet *Jeremy* useth more then once, as being so effectual and strong, that although the thing he reproveth were not onely not commanded, but forbidden them, and that expressely; yet the Prophet chooseth rather to charge them with the fault of making a Law unto themselves, than the crime of transgressing a Law which God had made. For when the Lord had once himself precisely set down a form of executing that wherein we are to serve him, the fault appeareth greater to do that which we are not, then not to do that which we are commanded. In this we seem to charge the Law of God with hardness onely, in that with foolishness; in this we shew our selves weak and unapt to be doers of his will, in that we take upon us to be Controllers of his wisdom: in this we fail to perform the thing which God seeth meet, convenient, and good; in that we presume to see what is meet and convenient better then God himself. In those actions therefore, the whole form whereof God hath of purpose set down to be observed, we may not otherwise do then exactly, as he hath prescribed: In such things negative Arguments are strong. Again, with a negative argument *David* is pressed concerning the purpose he had to build a Temple unto the Lord: *Thus saith the Lord, Thou shalt not build me an House to dwell in. Wheresoever I have walked with all Israel, spake I one word to any of the Judges of Israel, whom I commanded to feed my people, saying, Why have ye not built me an house?* The Jews urged with a negative argument touching the aid which they sought at the hands of the King of Egypt; *Wo to those rebellious children (saith the Lord) which walk forth to go down into Egypt, and have not asked counsel at my mouth; to strengthen themselves with the strength of Pharaoh.* Finally, the league of *Joshua* with the Gibeonites is likewise with a negative Argument touched. It was not as it should be: And why? the Lord gave them not that advice: *They sought not counsel at the mouth of the Lord.* By the vertue of which examples, if any man should suppose the force of negative arguments approved, when they are taken from Scripture, in such sort as we in this question are pressed therewith, they greatly deceive themselves. For unto which of all these was it said, that they had done amiss in purposing to do, or in doing any thing at all which the Scripture commanded them not? Our question is, Whether all be in which is done without direction by Scripture, and not whether the Israelites did at any time amiss by following their own mindes, without asking counsel of God. No, it was that peoples singular priviledge, a favour which God vouchsafed them above the rest of the world, that in the affairs of their estate, which were not determinable one way or other by the Scripture, himself gave them extraordinarily direction and counsel, as oft as they sought it at his hands. Thus God did first by speech unto *Moses*; after by *Urim* and *Thummim* unto Priests; lastly, by dreams and visions unto Prophets, from whom in such cases they were to receive the answer of God. Concerning *Joshua* therefore, thus spake the Lord unto *Moses*, saying, *He shall stand before Eleazer the Priest, who shall ask counsel for him by the judgement of Urim before the Lord:* whereof had *Joshua* been mindeful, the fraud of the Gibeonites could not so smoothly have past unpunished til: there was no help. The Jews had Prophets to have resolved them from the mouth of God himself whether Egyptian aids should profit them, yea, or no: but they thought themselves wise enough, and him unworthy to be of their counsel. In this respect therefore was their reproof, though sharp, yet just, albeit there had been no charge precisely given them that they should always take heed of Egypt. But as for *David*, to think that he did evil in determining to build God a Temple, because there was in Scripture no Commandment that he should build it, were very injurious: the purpose of his heart was religious and godly, the act most worthy of honour and re-

Levit 11. 31.

Nu. 3.

Deut. 8. 10.

1 Chron. 17. 6.

Isa. 31. 1.

Joshua. 24.

Num. 27. 21.

noun; neither could Nathan choose but admire his vertuous intent, exhort him to go forward, and beseech God to prosper him therein. But God saw the endless troubles which David should be subject unto, during the whole time of his Regiment, and therefore gave charge to defer so good a work till the days of tranquillity and peace, wherein it might without interruption be performed. David supposed

1 Chron. 17. T.C.L.P. 50. M. Harding reproacheth the Bishop of Salisbury with this kinde of reasoning: unto whom the Bishop answereth, The argument of authority negatively, is taken to be good, whensoever proof is taken of Gods Word; and is used not onely by us, but also by many of the Catholick Fathers. A little after he sheweth the reason why the argument of authority of the Scripture negatively is good; namely, for that the Word of God is perfect. In another place unto M. Harding, casting him in the teeth with negative arguments, he alledgeth places out of Irenaeus, Chrysostome, Leo, which reasoned negatively of the authority of the Scripture. The places which he alledgeth be very full and plain in generality, without any such restraints as the Answerer imagined, as they are there to be seen.

worthiest Divine that Christendom hath bred for the space of some hundreds of years, who being brought up together in one University, it fell out in them which was spoken of two others, \* They learned in the same, that which in contrary Camps they did practice. Of these two the one objecting that with us Arguments taken from authority negatively are over-common; the Bishops answer hereunto is, that this kinde of Argument is thought to be good, whensoever proof is taken of Gods Word; and is used not onely by us, but also by St. Paul, and by many of the Catholick Fathers. St. Paul saith, God said not unto Abraham, In thy seeds all the Nations of the earth shall be blessed; but, In thy seed, which is Christ; and thereof he thought he made a good argument. Likewise, saith Origen, The Bread which the Lord gave unto his Disciples, saying unto them, Take and eat, be deferred not, nor commanded to be reserved till the next day. Such arguments Origen and other learned Fathers thought to stand for good, whatsoever misliking Mr. Harding hath found in them. This kinde of proof is thought to hold in Gods Commandments, for that they be full and perfect: and God hath specially charged us, that we should neither put to them, nor take from them: and therefore it seemeth good unto them that have learned of Christ, Unus est magister vester Christus, and have heard the voice of God the Father from Heaven, Ipsum audite. But unto them that adde to the Word of God what them listeth, and make Gods will subject unto their will, and break Gods Commandments for their own traditions sake, unto them it seemeth not good. Again, the English Apologie alledging the example of the Greeks, how they have neither private Masses, nor mangled Sacraments, nor Purgatories, nor Pardons; it pleaseth Mr. Harding to jest out the matter, to use the help of his wits where strength of truth failed him, and to answer with scoffing at negatives. The Bishops defence in this case, The ancient learned Fathers having to deal with politique Hereticks, that in defence of their errors avouched the judgement of all the old Bishops and Doctors that had been before them, and the general consent of the primitive and whole universal Church, and that with as good regard of truth, and as faithfully as you do now; the better to discover the shameless boldness, and nakedness of their doctrine, were oftentimes likewise forced to use the negative, and so to drive the same Hereticks, as we do you, to prove their affirmatives; which thing to do was never possible. The ancient Father Irenaeus thus stayed himself, as we do, by the negative, Hoc neq; Prophetæ prædicaverunt, neq; Dominus docuit, neq; Apostoli tradiderunt; This thing neither did the Prophets publish, nor our Lord teach, nor the Apostles deliver. By a like negative Chrysostome saith, This tree neither Paul planted, nor Apollos watered, nor God increased. In like sort Leo saith, What needeth it to believe that thing that neither the Law hath taught, nor the Prophets have spoken, nor the Gospel hath preached, nor the Apostles have delivered? And again, How are the new devices brought in that our Fathers never knew? S. Augustine having reckoned up a great number of the Bishops of Rome, by a general negative saith thus, In all this order of succession of Bishops, there is not one Bishop found that was a Donatist. S. Gregory being himself

\* Vell. Patere. Iugurtha ac Marius sub eodem Africano militantes, in iisdem castris d'icere quæ postea in contrariis sacrent. Art. 1. Divis. 29. Gal. 3. Orig. in Levit. Hom. 5.

Matth. 23. Matth. 17.

Defens. par. 1. ed. 15. divis. 1.

Lib. 1. cap.

De incompt. 211. De i. hom. 3. Epist. 9. c. 12.

Epist. 9. cap. 3. Fijl. 165.

Lib. 4. Ep. 32.

himself a Bishop of Rome, and writing against the Title of Universal Bishop, saith thus, None of all my Predecessors ever consented to use this ungodly Title; No Bishop of Rome ever took upon him this name of singularity. By such negatives, Mr. Harding, we reprove the vanity and novelty of your religion; we tell you None of the Catholick ancient, learned, Fathers, either Greek or Latine, ever used either your private Mass or hals Communion, or your barbarous unknown prayers. Paul never planted them, Apollos never watered them, God never encreased them; they are of your selves, they are not of God. In all this there is not a syllable which any way crosseth us. For concerning arguments negative taken from humane authority, they are here proved to be in some cases very strong and forcible. They are not in our estimation idle reproofs, when the Authors of needless innovations are opposed with such negatives, as that of *Leo*, *How are these new devices brought in which our Fathers never knew?* when their grave and reverend Superiours do reckon up unto them, as *Augustine* did unto the *Donatists*, large Catalogues of Fathers, wondred at for their wisdom, piety, and learning, amongst whom for so many ages before us, no one did ever so think of the Churches affairs, as now the world doth begin to be perswaded; surely by us they are not taught to take exception hereat, because such arguments are negative. Much less when the like are taken from the sacred authority of Scripture, if the matter it self do bear them. For in truth the question is not, whether an argument from Scripture negatively, may be good, but whether it be so generally good, that in all actions men may urge it? The Fathers, I grant, do use very general and large terms, even as *Hiero* the King did in speaking of *Archimedes*, *From henceforward whatsoever Archimedes speaketh, it must be beleaved.* His meaning was not that *Archimedes* could simply in nothing be deceived, but that he had in such sort approved his skill, that that he seemed worthy of credit for ever after in matters appertaining unto the science he was skilful in. In speaking thus largely it is presumed, that mens speeches will be taken according to the matter whereof they speak. Let any man therefore that carrieth indifferency of judgement, peruse the Bishops speeches, and consider well of those negatives concerning Scripture, which he produceth out of *Irenaeus*, *Chrysostom*, and *Leo*, which three are chosen from among the residue, because the sentences of the others (even as one of theirs also) do make for defence of negative arguments taken from humane authority, and not from divine onely. They mention no more restraint in the one then in the other: yet I thinke themselves will not hereby judge, that the Fathers took both to be strong without restraint unto any special kind of matter, wherein they held such arguments forcible. Nor doth the Bishop either say or prove any more, then that an argument in some kind of matter may be good, although taken negatively from Scripture.

Their opinion concerning the force of Arguments, taken from humane authority for the ordering of mens actions or perswasions.

7. An earnest desire to draw all things to the determination of bare and naked Scripture, hath caused here much pains to be taken in abating the estimation and credit of man. Which if we labour to maintain as far as truth and reason will bear, let not any thinke we travel about a matter not greatly needful. For the scope of all their pleading against mans authority, is, to overthrow such orders, laws and constitutions in the Church, as depending thereupon, if they should therefore be taken away, would peradventure leave neither face nor memory of Church to continue long in the world, the world especially being such as now it is. That which they have in this case spoken, I would for brevities sake let pass, but that the drift of their speech being so dangerous, their words are not to be neglected. Wherefore to say that simply an Argument taken from mans authority doth hold no way, neither affirmatively nor negatively, is hard. By a mans authority we here understand, the force which his word hath for the assurance of anothers mind that buildeth upon it; as the Apostle somewhat did upon their report of the house of *Cloe*; and the *Samaritans* in a matter of far greater moment upon the report of a simple woman. For so it is said in *S. Johns Gospel*, *Many of the Samaritans of that City beleaved in him for the saying of the woman, which testified, He hath told me all things that ever I did.* The strength of mans authority is affirmatively such,

T. C. L. 95. When the question is of the authority of a man, it holdeth neither affirmatively nor negatively. The reason is, because the infirmity of man can never attain to the perfection of any thing whereby he might speak all things that are to be spoken of it; neither yet be free from error in those things which he speaketh or giveth out. And therefore this argument neither affirmatively nor negatively compelleth the hearer, but only induceth him to some liking or disliking of that for which it is brought, and is rather for an Orator to perswade the simpler sort, then for a disputer to enforce him that is leained.

1 Cor. 1. 11.  
John. 3. 1.



that the weightiest affairs in the world depend thereon. In judgement and justice are not hereupon proceedings grounded? Saith not the Law, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word shall be confirmed? This the law of God would not say, if there were in a mans testimony no force at all to prove any thing. And if it be admitted that in matter of fact there is some credit to be given to the testimony of man, but not in matter of opinion and judgement; we see the contrary both acknowledged, and universally practised also throughout the World. The sentences of wise and expert men were never but highly esteemed. Let the title of a mans right be called in question; are we not bold to relie and build upon the judgement of such as are famous for their skill in the laws of this land? In matter of State, the weight many times of some one mans authority is thought reason sufficient even to sway over whole Nations. And this is not onely with the simple sort; but the learned and wiser we are, the more such arguments in some cases prevail with us. The reason why the simpler sort are moved with authority, is the conscience of their own ignorance; whereby it cometh to pass, that having learned men in admiration, they rather fear to dislike them, then know wherefore they should allow and follow their judgements. Contrariwise with them that are skilful, authority is much more strong and forcible; because they onely are able to discern how just cause there is, why to some mens authority so much should be attributed. For which cause the name of Hippocrates (no doubt) were more effectual to perswade even such men as Galen himself, then to move a silly Empirick. So that the very self-same argument in this kinde, which doth but induce the vulgar sort to like, may constrain the wiser to yield. And therefore not Orators onely with the people, but even the very profoundest Disputers in all faculties have hereby often with the best learned prevailed most. As for arguments taken from humane authority, and that negatively; for example sake, if we should think the assembling of the people of God together by the sound of a Bell, the presenting of Infants at the holy Font, by such as commonly we call their Godfathers, or any other the like received custom to be impious, because some men of whom we think very reverently, have in their books and writings nowhere mentioned or taught that such things should be in the Church; this reasoning were subject unto just reproof; it were but feeble, weak, and unsound. Notwithstanding even negatively an argument from humane authority may be strong; as namely thus: The Chronicles of England mention no more then onely six Kings bearing the name of Edward, since the time of the last Conquest; therefore it cannot be there should be more. So that if the question be of the authority of a mans testimony, we cannot simply avouch, either that affirmatively it doth not any way hold, or that it hath onely force to induce the simpler sort, and not to constrain men of understanding and ripe judgement to yield assent, or that negatively it hath in it no strength at all. For unto every of these the contrary is most plain. Neither doth that which is alledged concerning the infirmity of men, overthrow or disprove this. Men are blinded with ignorance and error; many things may escape them, and in many things they may be deceived; yea, those things which they do know, they may either forget, or upon sundry indirect considerations let pass, and although themselves do not erre, yet may they through malice or vanity, even of purpose deceive others. Howbeit, infinite cases there are wherein all these impediments and lets are so manifestly excluded, that there is no shew or colour whereby any such exception may be taken, but that the testimony of man will stand as a ground of infallible assurance. That there is a City of Rome, that Pius Quintus and Gregory the thirteenth, and others, have been Popes of Rome, I suppose we are certainly enough perswaded. The ground of our perswasion, who never saw the place nor persons beforenamed, can be nothing but mans testimony. Will any man here notwithstanding, alledge those mentioned humane infirmities as reasons, why these things should be mistrusted or doubted of? yea, that which is more, utterly to infringe the force and strength of mans testimony, were to shake the very Fortres of Gods truth. For whatsoever we believe concerning salvation by Christ, although the Scripture be therein the ground of our belief; yet the authority of man is, if we mark it, the key which openeth the door of entrance into the knowledge of the Scripture. The Scripture doth not teach us the things that are of God, unless we did credit men who have taught us that the words of Scripture do signifie those things. Some way therefore, notwithstanding mans infirmity,

firmity, yet his authority may enforce assent. Upon better advice and deliberation so much is perceived, and at the length confessed, that Arguments taken from the authority of men, may not onely so far forth as hath been declared, but further also be of some force in *Humane Sciences*; which force be it never so small, doth shew that they are not utterly naught. But in *Matters Divine* it is still maintained stiffly, that they have no manner force at all. Howbeit, the very self same reason, which causeth to yield that they are of some force in the one, will at the length constrain also to acknowledge that they are not in the other altogether unforcible. For if the natural strength of mans wit may by experience and study attain unto such ripeness in the knowledge of things humane, that men in this respect may presume to build somewhat upon their judgement; what reason have we to think but that even in matters Divine, the like wits furnished with necessary helps, exercised in Scripture with like diligence, and assisted with the grace of Almighty God, may grow unto so much perfection of knowledge, that men shall have just cause, when any thing pertinent unto Faith and Religion is doubted of, the more willingly to encline their mindes towards that which the sentence of so grave, wise, and learned in that faculty shall judge most sound? For the controversie is of the weight of such mens judgements. Let it therefore be suspected, let it be taken as gross, corrupt, repugnant unto the truth, whatsoever concerning things divine above nature shall at any time be spoken as out of the mouthes of meer natural men, which have not the eyes wherewith heavenly things are discerned. For this we contend not. But whom God hath endued with principal gifts to aspire unto knowledge by; whose exercises, labours, and divine studies he hath so blessed, that the World for their great and rare skill that way, hath them in singular admiration; may we reject even their judgement likewise, as being utterly of no moment? For mine own part, I dare not so lightly esteeme of the Church, and of the principal pillars therein. The truth is, that the minde of man desireth evermore to know the truth according to the most infallible certainty which the nature of things can yield. The greatest assurance generally with all men, is that which we have by plain aspect and intuitive beholding. Where we cannot attain unto this; there what appeareth to be true by strong and invincible demonstration, such as wherein it is not by any way possible to be deceived, thereunto the minde doth necessarily assent, neither is it in the choice thereof to do otherwise. And in case these both do fail; then which way greatest probability leadeth, thither the minde doth evermore encline. Scripture with Christian men being received as the Word of God; that for which we have probable, yea, that which we have necessary reason for, yea, that which we see with our eyes, is not thought so sure as that which the Scripture of God teacheth; because we hold that his speech revealeth there what himself seeth, and therefore the strongest proof of all, and the most necessarily assented unto by us (which do thus receive the Scripture) is the Scripture. Now it is not required, nor can be exacted at our hands, that we should yield unto any thing other assent, then such as doth answer the evidence which is to be had of that we assent unto. For which cause even in matters divine, concerning some things we may lawfully doubt and suspend our judgement, enclining neither to one side or other, as namely touching the time of the fall both of man and Angels; of some things we may very well retain an opinion that they are probable and not unlikely to be true, as when we hold that men have their souls rather by creation then propagation, or that the Mother of our Lord lived always in the state of Virginity as well after his birth as before (for of these two, the one, her virginity before, is a thing which of necessity we must believe; the other, her continuance in the same state always, hath more likelihood of truth then the contrary;) finally in all things then are our consciences best resolved, and in most agreeable sort

T.C. 4.1. p. 10. Although that kinde of argument of authority of men is good neither in humane nor divine sciences; yet it hath some small force in humane sciences, forasmuch as naturally, and in that he is a man, he may come to some ripeness of judgement in those sciences, which in divine matters hath no force at all: as of him which naturally, and as he is a man, can no more judge of them then a blinde man of colours; yea, so far is it from drawing credit, if it be barely spoken without reason and testimony of Scripture, that it carrieth also a suspicion of untruth whatsoever proceedeth from him; which the Apostle did well note, when to signifie a thing corruptly spoken, and against the truth, he saith, that it is spoken according to man, *Rom. 1.* He saith not as a wicked and lying man, but simply as a man. And although this corruption be reformed in many, yet for so much as in whom the knowledge of the truth is most advanced, there remaineth both ignorance and disordered affections (whereof either of them turneth him from speaking of the truth) no mans authority, with the Church especially, and those that are called and persuaded of the authority of the Word of God, can bring any assurance unto the conscience.

unto God and Nature settled, when they are so far perswaded as those grounds of perswasion which are to be had will bear. Which thing I do so much the rather set down, for that I see how a number of souls are, for want of right information in this point, oftentimes grievously vexed. When bare and unbuilded conclusions are put into their mindes, they finding not themselves to have thereof any great certainty, imagine that this proceedeth onely from lack of faith, and that the Spirit of God doth not work in them, as it doth in true believers; by this means their hearts are much troubled, they fall into anguish and perplexity: whereas the truth is, that how bold and confident soever we may be in words, when it cometh to the point of trial, such as the evidence is which the truth hath either in it self or through proof, such is the hearts assent thereunto; neither can it be stronger, being grounded as it should be. I grant that proof derived from the authority of mans judgement, is not able to work that assurance which doth grow by a stronger proof; and therefore although ten thousand General Councils would set down one and the same definitive sentence concerning any point of Religion whatsoever, yet one demonstrative reason alledged, or one manifest testimony cited from the moved of God himself to the contrary, could not choose but over-weigh them all; inasmuch as for them to have been deceived, it is not impossible; it is, that demonstrative reason or testimony Divine should deceive. Howbeit, in defect of proof infallible, because the minde doth rather follow probable perswasions, then approve the things

T. C. l. 2. p. 21. Of divers opinions of the Fathers themselves (whereby some have likened them to brute beasts without reason, which suffer themselves to be led by the judgement and authority of others, some have preferred the judgement of one simple rude man alledging reason, unto companies of learned men) I will content myself at this time with two or three sentences. *Irenaeus* saith, Whatsoever is to be shewed in the Scripture, cannot be shewed but out of the Scriptures themselves, lib. 3. cap. 12. *Jerome* saith, No man, be he never so holy or eloquent, hath any authority after the Apostles, in *Psal. 86*. *Augustine* saith, That he will believe none, how godly and learned soever he be, unless he confirm his sentence by the Scriptures, or by some reason not contrary to them, Ep. 18. And in another place, Hear this, the Lord saith; hear not this, *Donatus* saith, *Rogatus* saith, *Vincentius* saith, *Hilarius* saith, *Ambrose* saith, *Augustine* saith, but hearken unto this, the Lord saith, Ep. 8. And again, having to do with an *Arrian*, he affirmeth, that neither he ought to bring forth the Council of *Nice*, nor the other the Council of *Arimini*, thereby to bring prejudice each to other; neither ought the *Arrian* to be holden by the authority of the one, nor himself by the authority of the other, but by the Scriptures which are witnesses proper to neither, but common to both; matter with matter, cause with cause, reason with reason ought to be debated, Cont. Max. *Arrian*. 3. 14. cap. And in another place against *Felix*, the *Donatist*, he saith, Let not these words be heard between us, I say, You say, let us hear this, Thus saith the Lord. And by and by speaking of the Scriptures he saith, There let us seek the Church, there let us try the cause, De unita. Eccles. cap. 3. Hereby it is manifest, that the argument of the authority of man affirmatively is nothing worth.

lief. Companies of learned men, be they never so great and reverend, are to yield unto reason; the weight whereof is no whit prejudiced by the simplicity of his person which doth alledge it, but being found to be sound and good, the bare opinion of men to the contrary, must of necessity stoop and give place. *Irenaeus* writing against *Marcion*, which held one God Authour of the Old Testament, and another of the New; to prove that the Apostles preached the same God which was known before to the Jews, he copiously alledgeth sundry their Sermons and speeches uttered concerning that matter, and recorded in Scripture. And lest any should be wearied with such store of allegations, in the end he concludeth, While we labour for these demonstrations out of Scripture, and do summarily declare the things which many ways have been spoken, be contented quietly to hear, and do not think my speech tedious: Quoniam



niam ostensiones quæ sunt in Scripturis, non possunt ostendi nisi ex ipsis Scripturis, *Because demonstrations that are in Scripture, may not otherwise be shewed, then by citing them out of the Scriptures themselves where they are.* Which words make so little unto the purpose, that they seem, as it were, offended at him which hath called them thus solemnly forth to say nothing. And concerning the verdict of *Jerome*, If no man, be he never so well learned, have after the Apostles any authority to publish new Doctrine as from Heaven, and to require the Worlds assent as unto truth received by Prophetical revelation; doth this prejudice the credit of learned mens judgements in opening that truth, which by being conversant in the Apostles writings, they have themselves from thence learned? *S. Augustine* exhorteth not to hear men, but to hearken what God speaketh. His purpose is not (I think) that we should stop our ears against his own exhortation, and therefore he cannot mean simply that audience should altogether be denied unto men; but either that if men speak one thing, and God himself teach another, then he, not they to be obeyed; or if they both speak the same thing, yet then also mans speech unworthy of hearing, not simply, but in comparison of that which proceedeth from the mouth of God. Yea, but we doubt what the will of God is. Are we in this case forbidden to hear what men of judgement think it to be? If not, then this allegation also might very well have been spared. In that ancient strife which was between the Catholick Fathers and Arrians, Donatists, and others of like perverse and froward disposition, as long as to Fathers or Councils alledged on the one side, the like by the contrary side were imposed, impossible it was that ever the question should by this mean grow unto any issue or end. The Scripture they both believed; the Scripture they knew could not give sentence on both sides; by Scripture the controverſie between them was such as might be determined. In this case what madness was it with such kindes of proofs to nourish their contention, when there were such effectual means to end all controverſie that was between them? Hereby therefore it doth not as yet appear, that an argument of Authority of man affirmatively is in matters Divine nothing worth. Which opinion being once inserted into the mindes of the vulgar sort, what it may grow unto God knoweth. Thus much we see, it hath already made thousands fo headstrong, even in gross and palpable errours, that a man whose capacity will scarce serve him to utter five words in sensible manner, blutheta not in any doubt concerning matter of Scripture to think his own bare *Yea*, as good as the *Nay* of all the wise, grave and learned judgements that are in the whole world. Which insolvency must be repress, or it will be the very bane of Christian Religion. Our Lords Disciples marking what speech he uttered unto them, and at the same time calling to minde a common opinion held by the Scribes, between which opinion and the words of their Master, it seemed unto them that there was some contradiction, which they could not themselves answer with full satisfaction of their own mindes; the doubt they propose to our Saviour, saying, *Why then say the Scribes that Elias must first come?* They knew that the Scribes did erre greatly, and that many ways even in matters of their own profession. They notwithstanding thought the judgement of the very Scribes in matters Divine to be of some value; some probability they thought there was that *Elias* should come, in as much as the Scribes said it. Now no truth can contradict any truth; desirous therefore they were to be taught, how both might stand together; that which they knew could not be false, because Christ spake it; and this which to them did seem true, onely because the Scribes had said it. For the Scripture from whence the Scribes did gather it, was not then in their heads. We do not finde that our Saviour reproved them of error, for thinking the judgement of the Scribes to be worth the objecting, for esteeming it to be of any moment or value in matters concerning God. We cannot therefore be perswaded that the will of God is, we should so far reject the authority of men, as to reckon it nothing. No, it may be a question, whether they that urge us unto this be themselves so perswaded indeed. Men do sometimes bewray that by deeds, which to confess they are hardly drawn. Mark then if this be not general with all men for the most part. When the judgements of learned men are alledged against them; what do they but either elevate their credit, or oppose unto them the judgements of others as learned? Which thing doth argue that all men acknowledge in them some force and weight, for which they are loth the cause they maintain should be so much weakened

weakned as their testimony is available. Again, what reason is there why alledging testimonies as proofs, men give them some title of credit, honour and estimation whom they alledge, unless beforehand it be sufficiently known who they are? what reason hereof but only a common engrafted perswasion, that in some men there may be found such qualities as are able to countervail those exceptions which might be taken against them, and that such mens authority is not lightly to be shaken off? Shall I adde further, that the force of arguments drawn from the Authority of Scripture it self, as Scriptures commonly are alledged, shall (being sifted) be found to depend upon the strength of this so much despised and debased authority of man? Surely it doth, and that oftner then we are aware of. For although Scripture be of God, and therefore the proof which is taken from thence must needs be of all other most invincible; yet this strength it hath not, unless it avouch the self same thing for which it is brought. If there be either undeniable apparence that so it doth, or reason such as cannot deceive, then Scripture-proof (no doubt) in strength and value exceedeth all. But for the most part, even such as are readiest to cite for one thing five hundred sentences of holy Scripture; what warrant have they, that any one of them doth mean the thing for which it is alledged? Is it not their surest ground most commonly, either some probable conjecture of their own, or the judgement of others taking those Scriptures as they do? Which notwithstanding to mean otherwise then they take them, it is not still altogether impossible. So that now and then they ground themselves on humane authority, even when they most pretend Divine. Thus it fareth even clean throughout the whole controverſie about that discipline which is so earnestly urged and laboured for. Scriptures are plentifully alledged to prove that the whole Christian World for ever ought to embrace it. Hereupon men term it, *The Discipline of God*. Howbeit, examine, sift, and resolve their alledged proofs, till you come to the very root from whence they spring, the heart wherein their strength lieth; and it shall clearly appear unto any man of judgement, that the most which can be inferred upon such plenty of Divine Testimonies is only this, That *some things* which they maintain as far as *some men* can *probably conjecture*, do seem to have been out of Scripture not *absurdly* gathered. Is this a warrant sufficient for any mans conscience to build such proceedings upon, as have been, and are put in ure for the establishment of that cause? But to conclude, I would gladly understand how it cometh to pass, that they which so peremptorily do maintain that Humane Authority is nothing worth, are in the cause which they favour so careful to have the common sort of men perswaded, that the wisest, the godliest, and the best learned in all Christendom are that way given, seeing they judge this to make nothing in the World for them? Again, how cometh it to pass, they cannot abide that Authority should be alledged on the other side, if there be no force at all in Authorities on one side or other? Wherefore labour they to strip their Adversaries of such furniture as doth not help? Why take they such needless pains to furnish also their own cause with the like? If it be void and to no purpose that the names of men are so frequent in their Books, what did move them to bring them in, or doth to suffer them there remaining? Ignorant I am not how this is saved, *They do it but after the truth made manifest, first, by reason or by Scripture; they do it not but to controul the enemies of truth, who bear themselves bold upon Humane Authority, making not for them, but against them rather*. Which answers are nothing. For in what place, or upon what consideration soever it be they do it, were it in their own opinion of no force being done, they would undoubtedly refrain to do it.

T.C. 2. 2. If at any time it hapned us to Augustine (as it did against the Donatists and others) to alledge the authority of the ancient Fathers, which had been before him; yet this was not done before he had laid a sure foundation of his cause in the Scriptures, and that also being provoked by the adversaries of the truth who bore themselves high of some Council, or of some man of name that had favoured that part.

A Declaration what the return is in this matter.

8. But to the end it may more plainly appear, what we are to judge of their sentences, and the cause it self wherein they are alledged; first, it may not well be denied, that all actions of men endued with the use of reason, are generally either good or evil. For although it be granted that no action is properly termed good or evil, unless it be voluntary; yet this can be no let to our former assertion, That all actions of men endued with the use of reason, are generally either good or evil; because even those things are done voluntary by us, which other creatures do naturally, inasmuch as we might stay our doing of them if we would. Beasts naturally do take their food and rest, when it offereth it self unto them. If men did so too, and could not do otherwise of themselves, there were no place for any such reproof as that of our Saviour Christ unto his Disciples, *Could ye not watch with me one hour?*

That

That which is voluntarily performed in things tending to the end, if it be well done, must needs be done with deliberate consideration of some reasonable cause, wherefore we rather should do it then not. Whereupon it seemeth, that in such actions onely those are said to be good or evil, which are capable of deliberation: So that many things being hourly done by men, wherein they need not use with themselves any manner of consultation at all, it may perhaps hereby seem that well or ill doing belongeth onely to our weightier affairs, and to those deeds which are of great importance that they require advice. But thus to determine were perillous, and per adventure unsound also. I do rather incline to think, that seeing all the unforced actions of men are voluntary; and all voluntary actions tending to the end have choice; and all choice presupposeth the knowledge of some cause wherefore we make it; where the reasonable cause of such actions so readily offereth it self, that it needeth not be sought for, in those things though we do not deliberate, yet they are of their nature apt to be deliberated on, in regard of the will which may incline either way, and would not any one way bend it self, if there were not some apparent motive to lead it. Deliberation actual we use, when there is no doubt what we should incline our wills unto. Where no doubt is, deliberation is not excluded as impertinent unto the thing, but as needless in regard of the agent, which seeth already what to resolve upon. It hath no apparent absurdity therefore in it to think, that all actions of men endued with the use of reason, are generally either good or evil. Whatsoever is good, the same is also approved of God; and according unto the sundry degrees of goodness, the kinds of Divine approbation are in like sort multiplied. Some things are good, yet in so mean a degree of goodness, that men are onely not disproved nor disallowed of God for them. *No man eateth his own flesh.* If ye do good unto them that do so to you, the very Publicans themselves do as much. They are worse then Infidels that have no care to provide for their own. In actions of this sort, the very light of Nature alone may discover that which is so far forth in the sight of God allowable. Some things in such sort are allowed, that they be also required as necessary unto salvation, by way of direct, immediate and proper necessity final; so that without performance of them we cannot by ordinary course be saved; nor by any means be excluded from life observing them. In actions of this kinde, our chiefest direction is from Scripture; for Nature is no sufficient Teacher what we should do that may attain unto life everlasting. The unsufficiency of the light of Nature, is by the light of Scripture so fully and so perfectly herein supplied, that further light then this hath added, there doth not need unto that end. Finally, some things, although not so required of necessity, that to leave them undone excludeth from salvation, are notwithstanding of so great dignity and acceptance with God, that most ample reward in Heaven is laid up for them. Hereof we have no Commandment either in Nature or Scripture which doth exact them at our hands; yet those motives there are in both, which draw most effectually our mindes unto them: In this kinde there is not the least action, but it doth somewhat make to the accessory augmentation of our blifs. For which cause our Saviour doth plainly witness, that there should not be as much as a cup of cold water bestowed for his sake without reward. Hereupon dependeth whatsoever difference there is between the states of Saints in glory: hither we refer whatsoever belongeth unto the highest perfection of man by way of service towards God: Hereunto that fervour and first love of Christians did bend it self, causing them to sell their possessions, and lay down the price at the blessed Apostles feet. Hereat S. Paul undoubtedly did aim, in so far abridging his own liberty, and exceeding that which the bond of necessary and enjoyned duty tied him unto. Wherefore seeing that in all these several kinds of actions, there can be nothing possibly evil which God approveth; and that he approveth much more then he doth command; and that his very Commandments in some kinde, as namely his Precepts comprehended in the Law of Nature, may be otherwise known then onely by Scripture; and that do to them, howsoever we know them, must needs be acceptable in his sight: let them, with whom we have hitherto disputed, consider well, how it can stand with reason to make this bare mandate of sacred Scripture the onely Rule of all good and evil in the actions of mortal men. The Testimonies of God are true, the Testimonies of God are perfect, the Testimonies of God are all-sufficient unto that end for which they were given. Therefore accordingly we do

Ephes. 5. 19.

Mat. 5. 46.

1 Tim. 5. 8.

Mat. 10. 42.

Acts. 2. 44.

1 Thess. 2. 9.



do receive them, we do not think that in them God hath omitted any thing need-  
ful unto his purpose, and left his intent to be accomplished by our devilings. What  
the Scripture purposeth, the same in all points it doth perform. Howbeit, that here  
we swerve not in judgement, one thing especially we must observe, namely, that  
the absolute perfection of Scripture is seen by relation unto that end whereto it  
tendeth. And even hereby it cometh to pass, that first such as imagine the general  
and main drift of the body of sacred Scripture not to be so large as it is, nor that God  
did thereby intend to deliver, as in truth he doth, a full instruction in all things  
unto salvation necessary, the knowledge whereof man by nature could not otherwise  
in this life attain unto: they are by this very mean induced, either still to look for  
new revelations from Heaven, or else dangerously to adde to the Word of God un-  
certain Tradition, that so the doctrine of mans salvation may be compleat; which  
doctrine we constantly hold in all respects without any such things added to be so  
compleat, that we utterly refuse as much as once to acquaint our selves with any  
thing further. Whatsoever, to make up the doctrine of mans salvation, is added as  
in supply of the Scriptures unsufficiency, we reject it: Scripture purporting this,  
hath perfectly and fully done it. Again, the scope and purpose of God in delivering  
the holy Scripture, such as do take more largely than becometh, they on the contrary  
side racking and stretching it further then by him was meant, are drawn into sundry as  
great inconveniences. They pretending the Scriptures perfection, inter thereupon,  
that in Scripture all things lawful to be done must needs be contained. We count  
those things perfect which want nothing requisite for the end whereto they were in-  
stituted: as therefore God created every part and particle of man exactly perfect, that  
is to say, in all points sufficient unto that use for which he appointed it; so the Scrip-  
ture, yea, every sentence thereof is perfect, and wanteth nothing requisite unto  
that purpose for which God delivered the same. So that if hereupon we conclude,  
that because the Scripture is perfect, therefore all things lawful to be done are com-  
prehended in the Scripture; we may even as well conclude so of every sentence, as  
of the whole sum and body thereof, unless we first of all prove that it was the drift,  
scope and purpose of Almighty God in holy Scripture, to comprize all things which  
man may practise. But admit this, and mark, I beseech you, what would follow. God  
in delivering Scripture to his Church, should cleane have avorogated amongst them the  
Law of Nature; which is an infallible knowledge imprinted in the mindes of all the  
children of men, whereby both general principles for directing of humane actions  
are comprehended, and conclusions derived from them; upon which conclusions grow-  
eth in particularity the choice of good and evil in the daily affairs of this life. Admit  
this, and what shall the Scripture be but a snare and a torment to weak consciences,  
filling them with infinite perplexities, scrupulosities, doubts insoluble, and extreame  
despairs? Not that the Scripture it self doth cause any such thing (for it tendeth to  
the cleane contrary, and the fruit thereof is resolute assurance and certainty in that  
it teacheth:) but the necessities of this life urging men to do that which the light  
of Nature, common discretion, and judgement or it self directeth them unto; on  
the other side, this doctrine teaching them that so to do were to sin against their own  
souls, and that they put forth their hands to iniquity, whatsoever they go about, and  
have not first the sacred Scripture of God for direction; now can it chuse but bring the  
simple a thousand times to their wits end, how can it cause but vex and amaze them?  
For in every action of common life to finde out some sentence clearly and infallibly  
setting before our eyes what we ought to do (seem we in Scripture never so expert)  
would trouble us more then we are aware. In weak and tender mindes we little know  
what misery this strict opinion would breed, besides the stops it would make in the  
whole course of all mens lives and actions. Make all things sin which we do by di-  
rection of Natures light, and by the rule of common discretion without thinking at  
all upon Scripture; admit this Position, and Parents shall cause their children to sin,  
as oft as they cause them to do any thing, before they come to years of capacity and  
be ripe for Knowledge in the Scripture. Admit this, and it shall not be with Mas-  
ters as it was with him in the Gospel; but servants being commanded to go, shall  
stand still, till they have their errand warranted unto them by Scripture. Which  
as it standeth with a Christian duty in some cases, so in common affairs to re-  
quire it, were most unfit. Two opinions therefore there are concerning sufficiency  
of

T. C. lib. 2. p. 9.  
Where this  
doctrine is re-  
ceived of bring-  
ing men to de-  
spair, it hath  
wrong. For  
when doubt-  
ing is the way  
to despair, a-  
gainst which  
this Doctrine  
offereth the  
remedy; it  
must needs be  
that it bring-  
eth comfort  
and joy to the  
conscience of  
man.

Luke 7. v. 8.

of holy Scripture, each extreemly opposit unto the other, and both repugnant unto truth. The Schools of *Rome* teach Scripture to be insufficient, as if, except Traditions were added, it did not contain all revealed and supernatural Truth, which absolutely is necessary for the children of Men in this life to know, that they may in the next be saved. Others justly condemning this opinion, grow likewise unto a dangerous extremity, as if Scripture did not onely contain all things in that kinde necessary, but all things simply, and in such sort, that to do any thing according to any other Law, were not onely unnecessary, but even opposit unto salvation, unlawful and sinful. Whatsoever is spoken of God, or of things appertaining to God, otherwise then as the truth is, though it seem an honour, it is an injury. And as incredible praises given unto men, do oftentimes abate and impair the credit of their deserved commendation; so we must likewise take great heed, lest in attributing unto Scripture more then it can have, the incredibility of that, do cause even those things which indeed it hath most abundantly, to be less reverently esteemed. I therefore leave it to themselves to consider, whether they have in this first point or not over-shot themselves; which, God doth know, is quickly done, even when our meaning is most sincere, as I am verily perswaded theirs in this case was.

---

OF

---

# OF THE L A W S O F Ecclesiastical Politie.

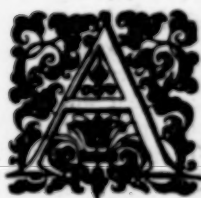
## *The third B o o k.*

*Concerning their second Assertion, That in Scripture  
there must be of necessity contained a form of Church-  
Polity, the Laws whereof may in no wise  
be altered.*

### The matter contained in this third Book.

1. **W**Hat the Church is, and in what respect Laws of Polity are thereunto necessarily requir'd.
2. Whether it be necessary that some particular form of Church-Polity be set down in Scripture, with the things that belong particularly to any such form are not of necessity to salvation.
3. That matters of Church-Polity are different from matters of faith and salvation, and that they themselves so teach which are our reprovers for so teaching.
4. That he who we take not from Scripture any thing, which thereunto with the soundness of truth may be given.
5. Their meaning who first urged against the Polity of the Church of England, that nothing ought to be established in the Church more then is commanded by the Word of God.
6. How great injury men by so thinking should offer unto all the Churches of God.
7. A shift notwithstanding to maintain it, by interpreting Commanded as though it were meant that greater things only ought to be found set down in Scripture particularly, and lesser framed by the general rules of Scripture.
8. Another device to defend the same, by expounding Commanded as if it did signifie grounded in Scripture, and were opposed to things found out by light of natural reason only.
9. How Laws for the Polity of the Church may be made by the advice of men, and how these Laws being not repugnant to the Word of God, are approved in his sight.
10. That neither Gods being the Author of Laws, nor yet his committing of them to Scripture, is any reason sufficient to prove that they admit no addition or change.
11. Whether Christ must needs intend Laws unchangeable altogether, or have forbidden any where to make any other Law then himself did deliver.





Albeit the substance of those controversies whereinto we have begun to wade, be rather of outward things appertaining to the Church of Christ, then of any thing wherein the nature and being of the Church consisteth: yet because the subject or matter which this position concerneth, is *A form of Church-government or Church Polity*, It therefore behoveth us so far forth to consider the nature or the Church, as is requisite for mens more clear and plain understanding, in what respect Laws of Polity or Government are necessary thereunto. That Church of Christ, which we properly term his body mystical, can be but one; neither can that one be sensibly discerned by any man, in as much as the parts thereof are some in Heaven already with Christ, and the rest that are on earth (albeit their natural persons be visible) we do not discern under this propriety whereby they are truly and infallibly of that body. Only our minds by intellectual conceit are able to apprehend, that such a real body there is, a body collective, because it containeth an huge multitude; a body mystical, because the mystery of their conjunction is removed altogether from sense. Whatsoever we read in Scripture, concerning the endless love and the saving mercy, which God sheweth towards his Church, the only proper subject thereof is this Church. Concerning this flock, it is that our Lord and Saviour hath promised, *I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hands.* They who are of this society have such marks and notes of distinction from all others, as are not object unto our sense; only unto God, who seeth their hearts, and understandeth all their secret cogitations, unto him they are clear and manifest. All men knew *Nathaniel* to be an *Israelite*. But our Saviour piercing deeper, giveth further testimony of him then men could have done with such certainty as he did, *Behold indeed an Israelite in whom there is no guile.* If we profess as *Peter* did, that we love the Lord, and profess it in the hearing of men; charity is prone to believe all things, and therefore charitable men are likely to think we do so, as long as they see no proof to the contrary. But that our love is sound and sincere, that it cometh from a pure heart, a good conscience, and faith unfeigned, who can pronounce, saving only the searcher of all mens hearts, who alone intuitively doth know in this kind who are his? And as those everlasting promises of Love, Mercy, and Blessedness, belong to the mystical Church; even so on the other side, when we read of any duty which the Church of God is bound unto, the Church whom this doth concern is a sensible known company. And this visible Church in like sort is but one, continued from the first beginning of the World to the last end. Which company being divided into two moyeties; the one before the other since the coming of Christ, that part which since the coming of Christ, partly hath embraced, and partly shall hereafter embrace the Christian Religion, we term as by a more proper name the Church of Christ. And therefore the Apostle affirmeth plainly of all men Christians, that be they Jew or Gentiles, bond or free, they are all incorporated into one company, they all make but (a) *one body*. The unity of which visible body and Church of Christ, consisteth in that uniformity which all several persons thereunto belonging have, by reason of that *one Lord*, whose Servants they all profess themselves; that *one Faith*, which they all acknowledge, that *one Baptism*, wherewith they are all initiated. The visible Church of Jesus Christ therefore one, in outward profession of those things which supernaturally appertain to the very essence of Christianity, and are necessarily required in every particular Christian man. Let all the use of *Israel* know for certainty, saith *Peter*, that God hath made him both Lord and Christ, even this *Jesus* whom ye have crucified. Christians therefore they are not, which call not him their Master and Lord. And from hence it came, that first at *Antioch*, and afterward throughout the whole world, all that were of the Church visible were called Christians, even amongst the Heathen: which name unto them was precious and glorious; but in the estimation of the rest of the world, even Christ *Jesus* himself was (b) execrable, for whose sake all men were so likewise which

What the Church is, and what respect Laws of Polities are thereunto necessarily required.

1oh. 10. 28.

and 1. 47.

and 21. 15.

1 Tim. 2. 5.

1 Ephes. 2. 16. that he might reconcile both unto God in one body.

Eph. 3. 11. that the Gentiles should be incorporated into the same body.

Vide 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

1 Cor. 12. 13.

Ephes. 4. 15.

Act. 1. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

1. Cor. 12. 13.

Col. 1. 1.

1. Cor. 12. 13.

Vide 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.

tum 1b. Annot. 11. Nemo qui sitisimis pennis afficit quos per fugam innotos tunc Christianos appellabat. Auctor nominis ejus Christus, qui liberio imperante per praemurum Pontium Iulianum supposito affellus est. Nemo in praesentia exitibus superfluo rursus erant peris, non modo per Iulianum originem ejus mal, sed et urbem etiam, quo cum illa undique atria aut pudenda confusant celebrantur.

R

did

Ioh. 15. 3.  
Ioh. 16. 2, 4.

Apoc. 2. 13.  
Tertul. de Vir-  
gin. veland.

Iren. advers.  
her. lib. 1.  
cap. 2. & 4.

Acts 8. 38.  
and 13. 16.  
and 1. 41.

Matt. 13. 47.  
and 13. 48.

Exod. 32.  
Psa. 106. 19, 30.  
2. King. 18. 4.  
1 Cor. 10. 14.

did acknowledge him to be their Lord. This himself did foresee, and therefore armed his Church, to the end they might sustain it without discomfort: *All these things they will do unto you for my names sake; yea the time shall come, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doth God good service. These things I tell you, that when the hour shall come ye may then call to minde how I told you beforehand of them.* But our naming of Jesus Christ the Lord is not enough to prove us Christians, unless we also embrace that faith which Christ hath published unto the world. To shew that the Angel of Pergamus continued in Christianity, behold how the spirit of Christ speaketh, *Thou keepest my name, and hast not denied my faith.* Concerning which Faith, The rule thereof, saith Tertullian, is one alone, immutable, and no way possible to be better framed anew. What rule that is he sheweth by rehearsing those few Articles of Christian belief. And before Tertullian, Ireny; The Church though scattered through the whole world unto the uttermost borders of the earth, hath from the Apostles and their Disciples received belief. The parts of which Belief he also reciteth in substance the very same with Tertullian, and thereupon inferreth, *This faith the Church being spread far and wide preserveth, as if one house did contain them; these things it equally embraceth, as though it had even one soul, one heart, and no more; it publisheth, teacheth, and delivereth these things with uniform consent, as if God had given it but one onely tongue wherewith to speak.* He which amongst the guides of the Church is best able to speak, uttereth no more then this; and lest then this the most simple do not utter, when they make profession of their Faith. Now although we know the Christian Faith, and allow of it, yet in this respect we are but entring; entered we are not into the visible Church, before our admittance by the door of Baptism. Wherefore immediately upon the acknowledgement of Christian faith, the Eunuch (we see) was baptized by Philip, Paul by Ananias, by Peter a huge multitude containing three thousand souls; which being once baptized, were reckoned in the number of souls added to the visible Church. As for those vertues that belong unto moral righteousness and honesty of life, we do not mention them, because they are not proper unto Christian men as they are Christian, but do concern them as they are men. True it is, the want of these vertues excludeth from salvation. So doth much more the absence of inward belief of heart; so doth despair and lack of hope; so emptiness of Christian love and charity. But we speak now of the visible Church, whose children are signed with this mark, *One Lord, one Faith, one Baptism.* In whomsoever these things are, the Church doth acknowledge them for her children; them only she holdeth for Aliens and Strangers, in whom these things are not found. For want of these it is, that Saracens, Jews, and Infidels, are excluded out of the bounds of the Church. Others we may not deny to be of the visible Church, as long as these things are not wanting in them. For apparent it is, that all men are of necessity either Christians or not Christians. If by external profession they be Christians, then are they of the visible Church of Christ: and Christians by external profession they are all, whose mark of recognizance hath in it those things which we have mentioned, yea, although they be impious Idolaters, wicked Hereticks, persons excommunicable, yea, and cast out for notorious improbity. Such withal we deny not to be the Imps and limbs of Satan, even as long as they continue such. It is then possible that the self-same men should belong both to the Synagogue of Satan, and to the Church of Jesus Christ? Unto that Church which is his Mystical Body, not possible; because that body consisteth of none but only true Israelites, true sons of Abraham, true servants and Saints of God. Howbeit of the visible body and Church of Jesus Christ, those may be and oftentimes are, in respect of the main parts of their outward profession; who in regard of their inward disposition of mind, yea of external conversation, yea even of some parts of their very profession, are most worthily both hateful in the sight of God himself, and in the eyes of the sounder part of the visible Church most execrable. Our Saviour therefore compareth the Kingdom of heaven to a Net, whereunto all which cometh, neither is nor seemeth fish; his Church he compareth unto a field, where Tares manifestly known and seen by all men, do grow intermingled with good corn, and even so shall continue till the final consummation of the world. God hath had ever, and ever shall have some Church visible upon the earth. When the people of God worshipped the Calf in the wilderness; when they adored the brazen Serpent; when they served the

the Gods of Nations; when they bowed their knees to *Baal*; when they burnt Incense and offered Sacrifice unto Idols; true it is, the wrath of God was most fiercely inflamed against them, their Prophets justly condemned them, as an adulterous seed and a wicked generation of Miscreants, which had forsaken the living God; and of him were likewise forsaken, in respect of that singular mercy wherewith he kindly and lovingly imbraceth his faithful Children. Howbeit retaining the Law of God, and the Holy Seal of his Covenant, the Sheep of his visible Flock they continued even in the depth of their Disobedience and Rebellion. Wherefore not only amongst them God always had his Church, because he had thousands which never bowed their knees to *Baal*; but whose knees were bowed unto *Baal*, even they were also of the visible Church of God. Nor did the Prophet so complain, as if that Church had been quite and clean extinguished; but he took it as though there had not been remaining in the World any besides himself, that carried a true and an upright heart towards God, with care to serve him according to his holy will. For lack of diligent observing the difference, first, between the Church of God mystical and visible, then between the visible sound and corrupted, sometimes more, sometimes less; the oversights are neither few nor light that have been committed. This deceiveth them, and nothing else, who think that in the time of the first World, the Family of *Noah* did contain all that were of the visible Church of God. From hence it grew and from no other cause in the World, that the *African* Bishops in the Council of Carthage, knowing how the administration of Baptism belongeth only to the Church of Christ, and supposing that Hereticks which were apparently severed from the sound believing Church, could not possibly be of the Church of Jesus Christ; thought it utterly against reason, that Baptism administered by men of corrupt belief, should be accounted as a Sacrament. And therefore in maintenance of Rebaptization, their arguments are built upon the fore-alleaded ground, That Hereticks are not at all any part of the Church of Christ. Our Saviour founded his Church on a Rock, and not upon Heresie; power of Baptizing he gave to his Apostles, unto Hereticks he gave it not: Wherefore they that are without the Church, and oppose themselves against Christ, do but scatter his Sheep and Flock. Without the Church Baptize they cannot. Again, are Hereticks Christians, or are they not? If they be Christians, wherefore remain they not in Gods Church? If they be no Christians, how make they Christians? Or to what purpose shall those words of the Lord serve, He which is not with me, is against me: and, He which gathereth not with me, scattereth? Wherefore evident it is, that upon misbegotten children and the brood of Antichrist, without rebaptization the Holy Ghost cannot descend. But none in this case so earnest as Cyprian; I know no Baptisme but one, and that in the Church only, none without the Church, where he that doth cast out the Devil, hath the Devil: He doth examine about belief, whose lips and words do breath forth as a Canker: The faithless doth offer the Articles of Faith, a wicked creature forgiveth wickedness; in the name of Christ, Antichrist signeth, he which is cursed of God, blesteth; a dead carriage promiseth life, a man unpeacable giveth peace, a Blasphemer calleth upon the name of God, a prophane person doth exercise Priesthood, a Sacrilegious wretch doth prepare the Altar, and in the neck of all these that evil also commeth, the Eucharist a very Bishop of the Devil doth presume to consecrate. All this was true, but not sufficient to prove that Hereticks were in no sort any part of the visible Church of Christ, and consequently their Baptism no Baptisme. This opinion therefore was afterwards both condemned by a better advised Council, and also revoked by the chieftest of the Authors thereof themselves. What is it but only the self-same error and misconception, wherewith others being at this day likewise posselt, they ask us where our Church did lurk, in what Cave of the Earth it slept for so many hundreds of years together before the birth of Martin Luther? As if we were of opinion that Luther did erect a new Church of Christ. No, the Church of Christ which was from the beginning, is, and continueth unto the end. Of which Church all parts have not been always equally sincere and sound. In the days of *Abia* it plainly appeareth, that *Juda* was by many degrees more free from pollution then *Israel*, as that solemn Oration sheweth, wherein he pleadeth for the one against the other in this wise: O *Jerusalem*, and all *Israel*, hear you me; Have ye not driven away the Priests of the Lord, the Sons of Aaron, and the Levites, and have made you Priests like the people of nations? Whosoever commeth to consecrate with a young Bullock and seven Rams, the same

1 Kings 12. 17.  
Isai 57. 3.  
Hak. 1. 4.  
Isai. 66. 15.

Ier. 13. 17.  
1 Kings 19. 8.

Ier. 17. 17.  
1 Kings 19. 8.

Fortunat. in  
Council. Car.  
Mat. 7. 24.  
Mat. 16. 8.  
Mat. 23. 19.

Secundinus in  
eodem Council.  
Mat. 23. 30.

In concilio Ni-  
ceno. Vide Hie-  
ron. dial. advers.  
Luciferia.



may be a Priest of them that are no Gods. But we belong unto the Lord our God, and have not forsaken him; and the Priests the sons of Aaron minister unto the Lord every morning and every evening burn Offerings, and sweet Incense, and the Bread is set in order upon the pure Table, and the Candlestick of gold with be Lamps thereof to burn every evening; for we keep the watch of the Lord our God, but ye have forsaken him. In S. Pauls time the integrity of Rome was famous; Corinth many ways reprov'd; they of Galatia much more out of square. In S. Johns time, Ephesus and Smyrna in far better state then Thyatira and Pergamus were. We hope therefore, that to reform our selves, if at any time we have done amiss, is not to sever our selves from the Church we were of before. In the Church we were, and we are so still. Other difference between our estate before and now, we know none, but only such as we see in Judah, which having sometime been Idolatrous, became afterward more soundly religious, by renouncing Idolatry and Superstition. If Ephraim be joyned to Idols, the counsel of the Prophet is, *Let him alone. If Israel play the Harlot, let not Judah sin.* If it seem evil unto you, saith Joshua, to serve the Lord, chuse you this day whom you will serve; whether the gods whom your Fathers served beyond the flood, or the gods of the Amorites in whose land ye dwell: But I and mine house will serve the Lord. The indisposition therefore of the Church of Rome to reform her self, must be no stay unto us from performing our duty to God; even as desire of retaining conformity with them, could be no excuse if we did not perform that duty. Notwithstanding so far as lawfully we may, we have held and do hold fellowship with them. For even as the Apostle doth say of Israel, that they are in one respect enemies, but in another beloved of God: In like sort with Rome, we dare not communicate concerning sundry her gross and grievous abominations; yet touching those main parts of Christian truth wherein they constantly still persist, we gladly acknowledge them to be of the Family of Jesus Christ; and our hearty prayer unto God Almighty is, that being conjoynd so far forth with them, they may at the length (if it be his will) so yield to frame and reform themselves, that no distraction remain in any thing, but that we all may with one heart and one mouth, glorifie God the Father of our Lord and Saviour, whose Church we are. As there are that make the Church of Rome utterly no Church at all, by reason of so many, so grievous errors in their Doctrines: So we have them amongst us, who under pretence of imagined corruptions in our Discipline, do give even as hard a judgement of the Church of England it self. But whatsoever the one sort or the other teach, we must acknowledge even Hereticks themselves to be though a maimed part, yet a part of the visible Church. If an Infidel should pursue to death an Heretick professing Christianity, onely for Christian profession sake, could we deny unto him the honour of Martyrdom? Yet this honour all men know to be proper unto the Church. Hereticks therefore are not utterly cut off from the visible Church of Christ. If the Fathers do anywhere, as oftentimes they do, make the true visible Church of Christ, and Heretical companies opposite, they are to be construed as separating Hereticks not altogether from the company of Believers, but from the fellowship of sound Believers. For where profess unbelief is, there can be no visible Church of Christ; there may be, where sound belief wanteth. Infidels being clean without the Church, deny directly, and utterly reject the very Principles of Christianity; which Hereticks embrace, and err onely by misconstruction; whereupon their opinions, although repugnant indeed to the Principles of Christian Faith, are notwithstanding by them held otherwise, and maintained as most consonant thereunto. Wherefore being Christians in regard of the general Truth of Christ which they openly profess; yet they are by the Fathers everywhere spoken of, as men clean excluded out of the right believing Church, by reason of their particular Errours, for which all that are of a sound belief must needs condemn them. In this consideration the answer of Calvin unto Farell, concerning the children of Popish Parents doth seem crazed. *Whereas, saith he, you ask our judgement about a matter, whereof there is doubt amongst you, whether Ministers of our order professing the pure Doctrine of the Gospel, may lawfully admit unto Baptism an Infant whose Father is a stranger unto our Churches, and whose Mother hath fallen from us unto the Papacy, so that both the Parents are Popish; thus we have thought good to answer; namely, that it is an absurd thing for us to baptize them which cannot be*

reckoned

Hof. 14. 15.  
& 17.  
Ism. 24. 5.

Rom. 11. 28.

Calvin. Epist.

reckoned members of our body. And sith Papiſts children are ſuch, we ſee not how it ſhould be lawfull to miniſter Baptiſm unto them. Sounder a great deal is the answer of the Ecclesiastical Colledge of Geneva unto Knox, who having ſignified unto them, that himſelf did not think it lawfull to baptize Baſtards, or the children of Idolaters (he meaneth Papiſts) or of perſons Excommunicate, till either the Parents had by repentance ſubmitted themſelves unto the Church, or elſe the children being grown unto the years of underſtanding, ſhould come and ſue for their own Baptiſm: For thus *Epist. 23.* thinking, ſaith he, I am thought to be over ſevere, and that not only by them whoſe are Papiſts; but even in their judgements alſo who think themſelves Maintainers of Truth. *Epist. 31.* Maſter Knox over-ſight herein they controuled. Their Sentence was, Whereſoever the profeſſion of Chriſtianity hath not utterly perished and been extinct, Infants are be- guiled of their right, if the common Seal be denied them. Which conclusion in it ſelf is ſound, although it ſeemeth the ground is but weak whereupon they build it. For the reaſon which they yield of their ſentence is this; The promise which God doth make to the faithfull concerning their Seed, reacheth unto a thouſand Generations; it reſteth not only in the firſt Degree of Deſcent. Infants therefore whoſe great-Grandfathers have been holy and godly, do in that reſpect belong to the body of the Church, although the Fathers and Grandfathers of whom they deſcend, have been Apoſtates: Becauſe the tenure of the Grace of God which did adopt them three hundred years ago and more in their Ancient Predeceſſors, cannot with juſtice be defeated and broken off by their Parents impiety coming between. By which reaſon of theirs, although it ſeem that all the world may be baptized, inasmuch as no man living is a thouſand Deſcents removed from Adam himſelf; yet we mean not at this time either to uphold or to overthrow it: oney their alleagded conclusion we embrace, ſo it be conſtrued in this ſort; That forasmuch as men remain in the viſible Church, till they utterly renounce the profeſſion of Chriſtianity, we may not deny unto Infants their right, by with-holding from them the publick ſign of holy Baptiſm, if they be born where the outward acknowledgement of Chriſtianity is not clea' gone and extinguished. For being in ſuch ſort born, their Parents are within the Church, and therefore their birth doth give them intereſt and right in Baptiſm. Albeit not every error and fault, yet Heresies and Crimes which are not actually repented of and forſaken, exclude quite and clean from that ſalvation, which belongeth unto the Myſtical Body of Chriſt; yea, they alſo make a ſeparation from the ſound viſible Church of Chriſt; altogether from the viſible Church neither the one nor the other doth ſever. As for the act of Excommunication, it neither ſhuteth out from the Myſtical, nor clean from the viſible; but oney from fellowſhip with the viſible in holy Duties. With what congruity then doth the Church of Rome deny, that her Enemies, whom ſhe holdeth always for Hereticks, do at all appertain to the Church of Chriſt; when her own do freely grant, that albeit the Pope (as they ſay) cannot teach Heresie, nor propound Error, he may notwithstanding himſelf worſhip Idols, think amiſs concerning matters of Faith, yea, give himſelf unto acts Diabolical, even being Pope? How exclude they us from being any part of the Church of Chriſt under the colour and pretence of Heresie, when they cannot but grant it poſſible even for him to be as touching his own perſonal perſwaſion Heretical, who in their opinion not oney is of the Church, but holdeth the chiefeſt place of authority over the ſame? But of theſe things we are not now to diſpute. That which already we have ſet down, is for our preſent purpoſe ſufficient. By the Church therefore in this queſtion we underſtand no other than oney the viſible Church. For preſervation of Chriſtianity there is not any thing more needful, then that ſuch as are of the viſible Church, have mutual fellowſhip and ſociety one with another. In which conſideration, as the main body of the Sea being one, yet within divers Precincts hath divers names; ſo the Catholick Church is in like ſort divided into a number of diſtinct Societies, every of which is termed a Church within it ſelf. In this ſenſe the Church is always a viſible Society of men; not an aſſembly, but a Society. For although the name of the Church be given to Chriſtian Aſſemblies, although any number of Chriſtian men congregated may be termed by the name of a Church, yet Aſſemblies properly are rather things that belong to a Church. Men are aſſembled for performance of publick actions; which actions being ended, the Aſſembly diſſolveth it ſelf, and is no longer in being; whereas the Church which was

A.R. 1. 47.

assembled, doth no less continue afterwards than before. *Where but three are, and they of the Laity also, saith Tertullian, yet there is a Church,* that is to say, a Christian assembly. But a Church, as now we are to understand it, is a Society, that is, a number of men belonging unto some Christian fellowship; the place and limits whereof are certain. That wherein they have communion, is the publick exercise of such duties as those mentioned in the Apostles Acts, *Instruction, Breaking of bread and Prayer.* As therefore they that are of the Mystical body of Christ, have those inward Graces and Vertues, whereby they differ from all other which are not of the same body; again, whosoever appertain to the visible Body of the Church, they have also the notes of external Profession, whereby the world knoweth what they are: After the same manner, even the several Societies of Christian men, unto every of which the name of a Church is given, with addition betokening severally, as the Church of Rome, Corinth, Ephesus, England, and so the rest; must be indued with correspondent general properties belonging unto them; as they are publick Christian Societies. And of such properties common unto all Societies Christian, it may not be denied, that one of the very cheifest is Ecclesiastical Polity. Which word I therefore the rather use, because the name of Government, as commonly men understand it in ordinary speech, doth not comprize the largeness of that whereunto in this question it is applied. For when we speak of Government, what doth the greatest part conceive thereby, but only the exercise of superiority peculiar unto Rulers and Guides of others? To our purpose therefore the name of Church-Polity will better serve, because it containeth both Government, and also whatsoever besides belongeth to the ordering of the Church in publick. Neither is any thing in this degree more necessary than Church-Polity, which is a form of ordering publick spiritual affairs of the Church of God.

Whether it be necessary that some particular form of Church-polity be set down in Scripture, such the things that belong particularly unto any such form, are not of necessity to salvation.

*Tertul de Labio m. l. Amuli sunt necessarii, quod Dei non sunt.*  
Rom. 2. 19.  
*Leg. lib. 8. c. 2.*  
*Ille legis inventor discipulator, legislator, civis, ac Regum.*

2. But we must note, that he which affirmeth speech to be necessary amongst all men throughout the World, doth not thereby import that all men must necessarily speak one kind of Language; Even so the necessity of Polity, and Regiment in all Churches may be held, without holding any one certain form to be necessary in them all, nor is it possible that any form of Polity, much less of Polity Ecclesiastical, should be good, unless God himself be author of it. *Those things that are not of God (saith Tertullian) they can have no other then Gods Adversary for their Author.* Be it whatsoever in the Church of God, if it be not of God, we hate it. Of God it must be; either as those things sometimes were, which God supernaturally revealed, and so delivered them unto Moses for Government of the Commonwealth of Israel; or else as those things which men finde out by help of that light, which God hath given them unto that end. The very Law of Nature it self, which no man can deny but God hath instituted, is not of God, unless that be of God, whereof God is the Author as well this latter way as the former. But forasmuch as no form of Church-Polity is thought by them to be lawful, or to be of God, unless God be so the Author of it, that it be also set down in Scripture; they should tell us plainly, whether their meaning be that it must be there set down in whole, or in part. For if wholly, let them shew what one form of Polity ever was so. Their own to be so taken out of Scripture they will not affirm; neither deny they that in part, even this which they so much oppugn is also from thence taken. Again, they should tell us, whether only that be taken out of Scripture, which is actually and particularly there set down; or else that also, which the general Principles and Rules of Scripture potentially contain. The one way they cannot so much as pretend, that all the parties of their own Discipline are in Scripture; and the other way their mouths are stopped, when they would plead against all other forms besides their own; seeing the general Principles are such, as do not particularly prescribe any one, but sundry may equally be consonant unto the general Axiomes of the Scripture. But to give them some larger scope, and not to close them up in these streights: let their allegations be considered, wherewith they earnestly bend themselves against all, which deny it necessary that any one compleat form of Church-Polity should be in Scripture. First therefore, whereas it hath been told them, that matters of Faith, and in general, matters necessary unto salvation, are of a different nature from Ceremonies, Order, and the kind of Church-government; and that the one is necessary to be expressly contained in



in the Word of God, or else manifestly collected out of the same, the other not so; that it is necessary not to receive the one, unless there be something in Scripture for them; the other free, if nothing against them may thence be alledged: although there do not appear any just or reasonable cause to reject or dislike of this: nevertheless, as it is not ealie to speak to the contentation of mindes exulcerated in themselves, but that somewhat there will be always which displeaseth; so herein for two things we are re-proved; the first *misdistinguishing*, because matters of Discipline and Church-Government are (as they say) matters necessary to salvation, and of Faith, whereas we put a difference betwixt the one and the other; our second fault is *injurious dealing* with the Scripture of God, as if it contained onely the principal points of Religion, some rude and unfashioned matter of building the Church, but had left out that which belongeth unto the form and fashion of it; as if there were in the Scripture no more then onely to cover the Churches nakedness, and not Chains, Bracelets, Rings, Jewels to adorn her; sufficient to quench her thirst, to kill her hunger, but not to minister a more liberal, and (as it were) a more delicious and dainty diet. In which case our Apology shall not need to be very long.

Two things misliked; the one, that we distinguish matters of discipline or Church-Government from matters of faith and necessary unto salvation; the other, that we are injurious to the Scripture of God, in abridging the large and rich contents thereof; Their

words are these, You which distinguish between these, and say that matters of faith and necessary unto Salvation, may not be tolerated in the Church, unless they be expressly contained in the Word of God, or manifestly gathered; but that Ceremonies, Order, Discipline, Government in the Church, may not be received against the Word of God, and consequently may be received if there be no word against them, although there be none for them: You (I say) distinguishing or dividing after this sort, do prove your self an evil divider. Although matters of Discipline and kind of Government were not matters necessary to salvation, and of Faith. It is no small injury which you do unto the Word of God to pin it in so narrow room, as that it should be able to direct us but in the principal points of our Religion; or as though the substance of Religion, or some rude and unfashioned matter of building of the Church were uttered in them, and those things were left out that should pertain to the form and fashion of it; or as if there were in the Scriptures onely to cover the Churches nakedness, and not also Chains, and Bracelets, and Rings, and other Jewels to adorn her and fit her out; or that to conclude, there were sufficient to quench her thirst and kill her hunger, but not to minister unto her a more liberal, and (as it were) a more delicious and dainty diet. These things you seem to say when you say that matters necessary to salvation, and of faith, are contained in Scripture, especially, when you oppose these things to Ceremonies, Order, Discipline and Government, T.C. lib. 1. pag. 264.

3. \* The mixture of those things by speech, which by nature are divided, is the Mother of all Errour. To take away therefore that errour which Confusion breedeth, distinction is requisite. Rightly to distinguish, is by conceit of minde to sever things different in Nature, and to discern wherein they differ. So that if we imagine a difference where there is none, because we distinguish where we should not, it may not be denied that we misdistinguish. The one trial whether we do so, yea or no, dependeth upon comparison between our conceit and the nature of things conceived. Touching matters belonging to the Church of Christ this we conceive, that they are not of one suite. Some things are *merely* of faith, which things it doth suffice that that we know and believe: some things not onely to be known, but done because they concern the actions of men. Articles about the Trinity are matters of meer faith, and must be believed. Precepts concerning the works of Charity, are matters of action; which to know, unless they be practised, is not enough. This being so clear to all mens understanding, I somewhat marvel that they especially should think it absurd to oppose *Church-Government*, a plain matter of action, unto matter of faith, who know that themselves divide the Gospel into Doctrine and Discipline. For if matters of Discipline be rightly by them distinguished from matters of Doctrine, why not matters of Government by us as reasonably set against matters of Faith? Do not they under Doctrine comprehend the same which we intend by matters of faith? Do not they under Discipline comprize the Regiment of the Church? When they blame that in us, which themselves follow, they give men great cause to doubt that some other thing then judgement doth guide their speech. What the Church of God standeth bound to know or do, the same in part Nature teacheth. And because Nature can teach them but onely in part, neither so fully as is requisite for mans salvation; nor so easily, as to make the way plain and expedite enough, that many may come to the knowledge of it, and so be saved; therefore in Scripture hath God both collected the most necessary things, that the School of Nature teacheth unto that end; and re-

\* That matters of Discipline are discerned from matters of faith and salvation; and that they themselves so teach which are our Re-provers.

T.C. lib. 1. pa. 1. We offer to shew the Discipline to be a part of the Gospel. And again, pag 5. I speak of the Discipline as of a part of the Gospel. If the Discipline be one part of the Gospel, what other part can they assign but Doctrine, to answer in division to the Discipline?

revealeth

vealeth also whatsoever we neither could with safety be ignorant of, nor at all be instructed in but by supernatural Revelation from him. So that Scripture containing all things that are in this kinde any way needful for the Church, and the principal of the other sort; this is the next thing wherewith we are charged as with an error: we teach that whatsoever is unto salvation termed *necessary* by way of excellency, whatsoever it standeth all men upon to know or do that they may be saved, whatsoever there is whereof it may truly be said, *This not so believe is eternal death and damnation*; or, *This every soule that will live must duly observe*, of which sort the Articles of Christian Faith, and the Sacraments of the Church of Christ are; all such things if Scripture did not comprehend, the Church of God should not be able to measure out the length and breadth of that way wherein for ever she is to walk; Hereticks and Schismatics never ceasing, some to abridge, some to enlarge, all to pervert and obscure the same. But as for those things that are accessary hereunto, those things that so belong to the way of salvation, as to alter them is no otherwise to change that way, then a path is changed by altering onely the uppermost face thereof, which be it laid with gravel, or set with grasse, or paved with stones, remaineth still the same path; in such things because discretion may teach the Church what is convenient, we hold not the Church further tied herein unto Scripture, then that against Scripture nothing be admitted in the Church, lest that path which ought always to be kept even, do thereby come to be over-grown with Brambles and Thorns. If this be unsound, wherein doth the point of unsoundness lie? Is it not that we make some things *necessary*, some things *accessary* and appendant onely? For our Lord and Saviour himself doth make that difference, by terming Judgement, and Mercy, and Fidelity, with other things of like nature, *The greater and weightier matters of the Law*. Is it then in that we account *Ceremonies*; (wherein we do not comprize Sacraments, or any other the like substantial duties in the exercise of Religion, but onely such external Rites as are usually annexed unto Church actions) is it an oversight, that we reckon these things and 'matters of Government in the number of things accessary, not things necessary in such sort as hath been declared? Let them which therefore think us blameable, consider well their own words. Do they not plainly compare

Mitt 23. 23.

\* The Government of the Church of Christ granted by *Fenner* himself to be thought a matter of great moment, yet not of the substance of Religion. Against Doctor *Bridges*, pag. 121. if it be *Fenner* which was the Author of that Book.

the one unto Garments, which cover the body of the Church; the other unto Rings, Bracelets and Jewels that onely adorn it: the one to that Food which the Church doth live by, the other to that which maketh her Diet liberal, dainty, and more delicious? Is dainty fare a thing necessary to the sustenance, or to the cloathing of the body rich Attire? If not, how can they urge the necessity of that which themselves resemble by things not necessary? Or by what construction shall any man living be able to make those comparisons true, holding that distinction untrue, which putteth a difference between things of external Regiment in the Church, and things necessary unto salvation?

That we do not take from Scripture any thing which may be thereunto given with soundness of truth. *Arist. Pol. lib. 1. cap. 3. & Plato in Menex. Arist. lib. 3. de Anima, cap. 5.*

4. Now as it can be to Nature no injury, that of her we say the same which diligent beholders of her works have observed; namely, that she provideth for all living creatures nourishment which may suffice; that she bringeth forth no kinde of creature whereto she is wanting in that which is needful; although we do not so far magnifie her exceeding bounty, as to affirm that she bringeth into the World the sons of men adorned with gorgeous attire, or maketh costly buildings to spring up out of the Earth for them: So I trust that to mention what the Scripture of God leaveth unto the Churches discretion in some things, is not in any thing to impair the honour which the Church of God yieldeth to the sacred Scriptures perfection. Wherein seeing that no more is by us maintained, than onely that Scripture must needs teach the Church whatsoever is in such sort necessary, as hath been set down; and that it is no more disgrace for Scripture to have left a number of other things free to be ordered at the discretion of the Church, then for Nature to have left it unto the wisest man to devise his own attire, and not to look for it as the beasts of the field have theirs. If neither this can import, nor any other proof sufficient be brought forth, that we either will at any time, or ever did affirm the Sacred Scripture to comprehend no more then onely those bare necessities; if we acknowledge that as well for particular

particular application to special occasions, as also in other manifold respects infinite Treasures of Wisdom are over and besides abundantly to be found in the Holy Scripture; yea, that scarcely there is any noble part of knowledge, worthy the minde of man, but from thence it may have some direction and light; yea, that although there be no necessity it should of purpose prescribe any one particular form of Church-Government; yet touching the manner of governing in general, the Precepts that Scripture setteth down are not few, and the Examples many which it propoeth for all Church-Governours, even in particularities to follow; yea, that those things, finally, which are of principal weight in the very particular form of Church-Politie (although not that form which they imagine, but that which we against them uphold) are in the self same Scriptures contained: if all this be willingly granted by us, which are accused to pin the Word of God in so narrow room, as that it should be able to direct us but in principal points of our Religion, or as though the substance of Religion, or some rude or unfashioned matter of building the Church were uttered in them, and those things left out that should pertain to the form and fashion of it; let the cause of the Accused be referred to the Accusers own conscience, and let that judge whether this accusation be deserved where it hath been laid.

5. But so easie it is for every man living to erre, and so hard to wrest from any mans mouth the plain acknowledgement of errour, that what hath been once inconsiderately defended, the same is commonly persisted in, as long as wit by whetting it self is able to finde out any shift, be it never so sleight, whereby to escape out of the hands of present contradiction: So that it cometh herein to pass with men unadvisedly fallen into errour, as with them whose state hath no ground to uphold it, but onely the help which by subtil conveyance they draw out of casual events arising from day to day, till at length they be clean spent. They which first gave out, that *Nothing ought to be established in the Church which is not commanded by the Word of God*, thought this principle plainly warranted by the manifest words of the Law, *I shall put nothing unto the Word which I command you, neither shall ye take ought therefrom, that ye may keep the Commandments of the Lord our God, which I command you*. Wherefore having an eye to a number of Rites and Orders in the Church of England, as marrying with a Ring, Crossing in the one Sacrament, Kneeling at the other, observing of Festival days more then onely that which is called the *Lords Day*, enjoying Abstinence at certain times from some kindes of Meat, Churching of Women after Childe-birth, Degrees taken by Divines in Universities, sundry Church-offices, Dignities, and Callings, for which they found no Commandment in the holy Scripture, they thought by the one onely stroke of that Axiome to have cut them off. But that which they took for an Oracle, being sifted, was repeld. True it is concerning the Word of God, whether it be by misconstruction of the sense, or by falsification of the words, wittingly to endeavour that any thing may seem Divine which is not, or any thing not seem which is, were plainly to abuse and even to falsifie Divine Evidence, which injury offered but unto men, is most worthily counted hainous. Which point I wish they did well observe, with whom nothing is more familiar then to plead in these Causes, *The Law of God, the Word of the Lord*: who notwithstanding when they come to alledge what Word and what Law they mean, their common ordinary practice is, to quote by-speeches in some historical Narration or other, and to urge them as if they were written in most exact form of Law. What is to adde to the Law of God, if this be not? When that which the Word of God doth but deliver historically, we construe without any warrant, as if it were legally meant, and so urge it further then we can prove that it was intended, do we not adde to the Laws of God, and make them in number seem more then they are? It standeth us upon to be careful in this case. For the sentence of God is heavy against them, that wittingly shall presume thus to use the Scripture.

6. But let that which they do hereby intend be granted them; let it once stand as consonant to reason, that because we are forbidden to adde to the Law of God any thing, or to take ought from it, therefore we may not for matters of the Church make any Law more then is already set down in Scriptures: who seeth not what sentence it shall enforce us to give against all Churches in the World, inasmuch as there is not one, but hath had many things established in it, which though the Scripture

Their meaning who first did plead against the Polity of the Church of England, was, ing that, *Nothing ought to be established in the Church, which is not commanded by the word of God*; and what Scripture they thought they might ground this Assertion upon. *Deut. 4. 2. and 10. 34.* Whatsoever I command you take heed you do it: thou shalt put nothing thereto, nor take ought therefrom.

The same assertion we cannot hold, without doing wrong unto all Churches.

did



1. John 13.  
Cena of our Lord  
quo Mat. 23. 12.  
Ibide Canonicis  
regulati.

Acts 1.

\* A Shift to  
maintain what,  
Nothing  
ought to be es-  
tablished in  
the Church,  
which is not  
commanded  
in the Word of  
God: namely,  
that Com-  
mandments  
are of two  
sorts; and that  
all things law-  
ful in the  
Church are  
commanded,  
if not by speci-  
al Precepts,  
yet by general  
Rules in the  
Word.  
1 Cor. 14. 31.  
and 14. 40.  
and 14. 26.  
Rom 14. 5.  
T. C. l. p. 35.

did never command, yet for us to condemn were rashness. Let the Church of God even in the time of our Saviour Christ serve for example unto all the rest. In their Domestical celebration of the Passeever, which Supper they divided (as it were) into two courses; what Scripture did give commandment that between the first and the second, he that was chief should put off the residue of his garments, and keeping on his Feast-robe onely, wash the feet of them that were with him? What Scripture did command them never to lift up their hands unwashit in Prayer unto God, which custom *Aristeus* (be the credit of the Author more or less) sheweth wherefore they did so religiously observe? What Scripture did command the Jews every Festival day to fast till the sixth hour? The custom both mentioned by *Josephus* in the History of his own life, and by the words of *Peter* signified. Tedious it were to rip up all such things, as were in that Church established, yea, by Christ himself, and by his Apostles observed, though not commanded anywhere in Scripture.

7. \* Well, yet a gloss there is to colour that paradox, and notwithstanding all this, still to make it appear in shew not to be altogether unreasonable. And therefore till further reply come, the cause is held by a feeble distinction; that the commandments of God being either general or special, although there be no express word for every thing in specialty, yet there are general commandments for all things, to the end that even such cases as are not in Scripture particularly mentioned, might not be left to any to order at their pleasure, onely with caution that nothing be done against the Word of God: And that for this cause the Apostle hath set down in Scripture four general Rules, requiring such things alone to be received in the Church, as do best and nearest agree with the same Rules, that so all things in the Church may be appointed, not onely *not against*, but *by and according to the Word of God*. The Rules are these, *Nothing scandalous or offensive unto any*, especially unto the Church of God; *All things in order and with seemliness*; *All unto edification*; finally, *All to the glory of God*. Of which kinde how many might be gathered out of the Scripture, if it were necessary to take to much pains? Which Rules they that urge, minding thereby to prove that nothing may be done in the Church but what Scripture commandeth, must needs hold that they tie the Church of Christ no otherwise, then onely because we finde them there set down by the finger of the Holy Ghost. So that unless the Apostle by writing had delivered those Rules to the Church, we should by observing them have sinned, as now by not observing them. In the Church of the Jews it is not granted, that the appointment of the hour for daily Sacrifices; the building of Synagogues throughout the Land to hear the Word of God and to pray in, when they came not up to Jerusalem; the erecting of Pulpits and Chairs to teach in; the order of Burial, the Rites of marriage, with such like, being matters appertaining to the Church, yet are not anywhere prescribed in the Law, but were by the Churches discretion instituted? What then shall we think? Did they hereby adde to the Law, and so displease God by that which they did? None so hardly perswaded of them. Doth their Law deliver unto them the self same general rules of the Apostles, that framing thereby their Orders, they might in that respect cleer themselves from doing amiss? *S. Paul* would then of likelihood have cited them out of the Law, which we see he doth not. The truth is, they are Rules and Canons of that Law which is written in all mens hearts; the Church had for ever no less then now stood bound to observe them, whether the Apostle had mentioned them or no. Seeing therefore those Canons do binde as they are edicts of Nature, which the Jews observing as yet unwritten, and thereby framing such Church-Orders as in their Law were not prescribed, are notwithstanding in that respect unculpable; it followeth, that sundry things may be lawfully done in the Church, so as they be not done against the Scripture, although no Scripture do command them, but the Church onely following the Light of Reason, judge them to be in discretion meet. Secondly, unto our purpose, and for the question in hand, whether the commandments of God in Scripture be general or special, it skilleth not. For if being particularly applied, they have in regard of such particulars a force contraining us to take some one certain thing of many, and to leave the rest; whereby it would come to pass, that any other particular but that one being established, the general Rules themselves in that case would be broken; then is it utterly impossible that God should leave

leave any thing great or small free for the Church to establish or not. Thirdly, if so be they shall grant, as they cannot otherwise do, that these Rules are, no such Laws as require any one particular thing to be done, but serve rather to direct the Church in all things which she doth; so that free and lawful it is to devise any Ceremony, to receive any Order, and to authorize any kind of Regiment, no special commandment being thereby violated; and the same being thought such by them to whom the judgement thereof appertaineth, as that it is not scandalous, but decent, tending unto edification, and setting forth the glory of God; that is to say, agreeable unto the general Rules of the Scripture; this doth them no good in the World for the furtherance of their purpose. That which should make for them, must prove that men ought not to make Laws for Church-Regiment, but onely keep those Laws which in Scripture they finde made. The plain intent of the Book of Ecclesiastical Discipline is to shew, that men may not devise Laws of Church-Government; but are bound for ever to use and execute onely those, which God himself hath already devised and delivered in the Scripture. The self same drift the Admottioners also had, in urging that nothing ought to be done in the Church according unto any Law of mans devising, but all according to that which God in his Word hath commanded. Which not remembering, they gather out of Scripture general Rules to be followed in making Laws; and so in effect they plainly grant, that we our selves may lawfully make Laws for the Church, and are not bound out of Scripture onely to take Laws already made, as they meant who first alledged that principle whereof we speak. One particular plat-form it is, which they respected, and which they laboured thereby to force upon all Churches; whereas these general rules do not let, but that there may well enough be sundry. It is the particular order established in the Church of England, which thereby they did intend to alter, as being not commanded of God; whereas unto those general Rules they know, we do not defend that we may hold any thing unconformable. Obscure it is not what meaning they had, who first gave out that grand Axiome; and according unto that meaning, it doth prevail far and wide with the Favourers of that part. Demand of them, wherefore they conform not themselves unto the Order of our Church? and in every particular their answer for the most part is, *We finde no such thing commanded in the Word.* Whereby they plainly require some special commandment for that which is exacted at their hands; neither are they content to have matters of the Church examined by general Rules and Canons. As therefore in controversies between us and the Church of Rome, that which they practise, is many times even according to the very grossness of that which the vulgar sort conceiveth; when that which they teach to maintain it, is so nice and subtil, that hold can very hardly be taken thereupon; in which cases we should do the Church of God small benefit, by disputing with them according unto the finest points of their dark conveyance, and suffering that sense of their Doctrine to go uncontrolled, wherein by the common sort it is ordinarily received and practised. So considering what disturbance hath grown in the Church among our selves, and how the Authors thereof do commonly build altogether on this as a sure foundation, *Nothing ought to be established in the Church, which in the Word of God is not commanded*; were it reason that we should suffer the same to pass without controlement, in that current meaning whereby everywhere it prevaieth, and stay till some strange construction were made thereof, which no man would lightly have thought on, but being driven thereunto for a shift?

8. The last refuge in maintaining this Position, is thus to construe it, *Nothing ought to be established in the Church, but that which is commanded in the Word of God*; that is to say, All Church-Orders must be grounded upon the Word of God, in such sort grounded upon the Word, not that being found out by some Star, or Light of Reason, or Learning, or other help, they may be received, so they be not against the Word of God; but according at leastwise unto the general Rules of Scripture they must be made. Which is in effect as much as to say, *We know not what to say well in defence of this Position: and therefore lest we should say it is false, there is no remedy but to say that in some sense or other it may be true, if we could tell how.* For that Scholie had need of a very favourable Reader, and a tractable, that should think it plain construction, when to be *commanded in the Word, and grounded*

Another answer in defence of the former assertion, whereby the meaning thereof is opened in this sort. All Church-orders must be commanded in the Word, that is to say, grounded upon the Word, and made according, at the leastwise unto the general Rules of holy Scripture. As for such things as are found out by any star or light of reason, and are in that respect received, so they be not against the Word of God, all such things it holdeth unlawfully received.

*Christ. polit. 1.*

1 Cor. 7.

Apoc. 8. 1.

1 Cor. 14.

Col. 3. 8.

1 Cor. 19.

1 Cor. 2. 5.

grounded upon the Word are made all one. If when a man may live in the state of Matrimony, seeking that good thereby which Nature principally desireth, he make rather choice of a contrary life in regard of S. Pauls judgement; that which he doth is manifestly grounded upon the Word of God, yet not commanded in his Word, because without breach of any commandment he might do otherwise. Secondly, whereas no man in justice and reason can be reprov'd, for those actions which are framed according unto that known will of God, whereby they are to be judged; and the will of God which we are to judge our actions by, no sound Divine in the World ever denied to be in part made manifest even by light of Nature, and not by Scripture alone; if the Church being directed by the former of these two (which God hath given who gave the other, that man might in different sort be guided by them both) if the Church, I say, do approve and establish that which thereby it judgeth meet, and findeth not repugnant to any word or syllable of Holy Scripture, who shall warrant our presumptuous boldness, controlling herein the Church of Christ? But so it is, the name of the Light of Nature is made hateful with men; the *Star of Reason and Learning*, and all other such like helps, beginneth no otherwise to be thought of, then if it were an unlucky Comet, or as if God had so accursed it, that it should never shine or give light in things concerning our duty any way towards him, but be esteemed as that *Star* in the Revelation called *Wormwood*, which being fallen from Heaven, maketh Rivers and Waters in which it falleth, so bitter, that men tasting them dye thereof. A number there are, who think they cannot admire as they ought the power and authority of the Word of God, if in things divine they should attribute any force to mans reason. For which cause they never use reason so willingly as to disgrace reason. Their usual and common discourses are unto this effect: First, *The natural man perceiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him, neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.* Secondly, it is not for nothing that S. Paul giveth charge to beware of *Philosophy*, that is to say, such knowledge as men by Natural Reason attain unto. Thirdly, Consider them that have from time to time opposed themselves against the Gospel of Christ, and most troubled the Church with Heresie. Have they not alwayes been great admirers of Humane Reason? Hath their deep and profound skill in Secular Learning, made them more obedient to the Truth, and not aimed them rather against it? Fourthly, They that fear God will remember how heavy his sentences are in this case; *I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will cast away the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? Where is the Scribe? Where is the Disputer of this World? Hath not God made the wisdom of this World foolishness? Seeing the World by wisdom knew not God; in the wisdom of God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save Believers.* Fifthly, the Word of God in it self is absolute, exact, and perfect. The Word of God is a two-edged sword: as for the weapons of Natural Reason, they are as the Armour of *Saul*, rather cumbersome about the Souldier of Christ, then needfull. They are not of force to do that, which the Apostles of Christ did by the power of the Holy Ghost, *My preaching, therefore saith Paul, hath not been in the enticing speech of mans wisdom, but in plain evidence of the Spirit of power; that your faith might not be in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.* Sixthly, if I believe the Gospel, there needeth no reasoning about it to persuade me: if I do not believe, it must be the Spirit of God, and not the reason of man that shall convert my heart unto him. By these and the like disputes an opinion hath spread it self very far in the world, as if the way to be ripe in faith, were to be raw in wit and judgement; as if Reason were an enemy unto Religion, childish simplicity the mother of Ghostly and Divine Wisdom. The cause why such declamations prevail so greatly, is, for that men suffer themselves in two respects to be deluded; one is, that the wisdom of men being debased, either in comparison with that of God, or in regard of some special thing, exceeding the reach and compass thereof, it seemeth to them (not marking so much) as if simply it were condemned; another, that learning, knowledge, or wisdom falsely so termed, usurping a name whereof they are not worthy, and being under that name controlled, their reproof is by so much the more easily misapplied, and through equivocation wrested against those things whereunto so precious names do properly and of right belong. This duly observed, doth to the former allegations it self make sufficient answer. Howbeit, for all

mens



mens plainer and fuller satisfaction. First, Concerning the inability of reason to search out and to judge of things Divine, if they be such as those properties of God, and those duties of men towards him, which may be conceived by attentive consideration of Heaven and Earth: we know that of meer natural men, the Apostle testifieth, how they *knew both God, and the Law of God*. Other things of God there be, which are neither so found, nor though they be shewed, can ever be approved without the special operation of Gods good grace and Spirit. Of such things sometime spake the Apostle S. Paul, declaring how Christ had called him to be a witness of his death and resurrection from the dead, according to that which the Prophets and Moses had foreshewed. *Festus* a meer natural man, an Inidel, a Roman, one whose ears were unacquainted with such matter, heard him, but could not reach unto that whereof he spake; the suffering and the rising of Christ from the dead, he rejected as idle superstitious fancies, not worth the hearing. The Apostle that knew them by the Spirit, and spake of them with power of the Holy Ghost, seemed in his eyes but learnedly mad. Which example maketh manifest what elsewhere the same Apostle teacheth, namely, that nature hath need of grace, whereunto I hope we are not opposite, by holding that grace hath use of nature. Secondly, Philosophy we are warned to take heed of; not that Philosophy which is true and sound knowledge attained by natural discourse of reason; but that Philosophy which to bolster Heresie or Error, casteth a fraudulent shew of reason upon things which are indeed unreasonable, and by that mean as by a stratageme spoileth the simple, which are not able to withstand such cunning. *Take heed lest any spoile you through Philosophy and vain deceit*. He that exhorteth to beware of an enemies policy, doth not give counsel to be impolitic; but rather to use all prudent foresight and circumspection, lest our simplicity be over-reacht by cunning sleights. The way not to be enveigled by them that are so guileful through skill, is thoroughly to be instructed in that which maketh skilful against guile, and to be armed with that true and sincere Philosophy, which doth teach against that deceitful and vain, which spoileth. Thirdly, But many great Philosophers have been very unsound in belief. And many found in belief have been also great Philosophers. Could secular knowledge bring the one sort unto the love of Christian Faith? Nor Christian faith the other sort out of love with secular knowledge. The harm that Hereticks did, they did it unto such as were unable to discern between sound and deceitful reasoning; and the remedy against it, was ever the skill which the ancient Fathers had to discry and discover such deceit. Insomuch that *Crescensius* the Heretick complained greatly of St. *Augustine*, as being too full of Logical subtilties. Heresie prevaileth onely by a counterfeit shew of reason; whereby notwithstanding it becommeth invincible, unless it be convicted of fraud by manifest remonstrance, clearly true, and unable to be withstood. When therefore the Apostle requireth ability to convict Hereticks, can we think he judgeth it a thing unlawful, and not rather needful to use the principal instrument of their conviction, the light of reason? It may not be denied but that in the Fathers writings, there are sundry sharp invectives against Hereticks, even for their very Philosophical reasonings. The cause whereof *Tertullian* confesseth, not to have been any dislike conceived against the kind of such reasonings, but the end. *We may* (saith he) *even in matters of God, be made carnal*, wiser by reasons drawn from the publick persuasions which are grafted in mens minds, so they be used to further the truth; not to bolster error: so they make with, not against that which God hath determined. For there are some things even known by nature, as the immortality of the soul to many, one God unto all. I will therefore my self also use the sentence of some such as *Plato*, pronouncing every soul immortal. I my self too will use the secret acknowledgment of the community bearing record of the God of gods. But when I hear men alledge, That which is dead is dead: and, While thou art alive, be alive: and, After death an end of all, even of death it self: then will I call to mind both that the heart of the people with God is accounted dust, and that the very wisdom of the World is pronounced folly. If then an Heretick flie also unto such vicious, popular, and secular conceits, my answer unto him shall be, Thou Heretick, avoid the Heathen; although in this ye be one, that ye both belye God; yet thou that dost this under the name of Christ, differest from the Heathen, in that thou seemest to thy self a Christian. Leave him therefore his conceits, seeing that neither will he learn thine. Why dost thou, having sight, trust to a blind guide? thou which hast put on Christ, take raiment of him that is naked?

Tit. 3. 11.

4.

Acts 7. 12.  
Dan. 1. 17.  
1 Kin. 4. 29, 30.  
Acts 22. 3.

Mat. 13. 32.

5

Heb. 4. 12.

If the Apostle have armed thee, why dost thou borrow a strangers shield? Let him rather learn of thee to acknowledge, then thou of him to renounce the resurrection of the flesh. In a word, the Catholick Fathers did good unto all by that knowledge, whereby Hereticks hindering the truth in many, might have furthered therewith themselves, but that obstinately following their own ambitious or otherwise corrupted affections, instead of framing their wills to maintain that which reason taught, they bent their wits to find how reason might seem to teach that which their wills were set to maintain. For which cause the Apostle saith of them justly, that they are for the most part *ἀνομάτοι* men condemned even in and of themselves. For though they be not all perswaded that it is truth which they withstand; yet that to be errour which they uphold, they might undoubtedly the sooner a great deal attain to know, but that their study is more to defend what once they have stood in, than to find out sincerely and simply what truth they ought to persist in for ever. Fourthly, there is in the world no kind of knowledge, whereby any part of truth is seen, but we justly account it precious; yea, that principal truth, in comparison whereof all other knowledge is vile, may receive from it some kind of light, whether it be that Egyptian and Caldean wisdom Mathematrical, wherewith *Moses* and *Daniel* were furnished; or that natural, moral, and civil wisdom wherewith *Salomon* excelled all men; or that rational and oratorical wisdom of the Grecians, which the Apostle *St. Paul* brought from *Tarsus*; or that Judaical, which he learned in *Jerusalem*, sitting at the feet of *Gamaliel*: to detract from the dignity thereof, were to injure even God himself, who being that light which none can approach unto, hath sent out these lights whereof we are capable, even as so many sparkles resembling the bright Fountain from which they rise. But there are that bear the title of wise men, and Scribes, and great Disputers of the World, and are nothing indeed less than what in shew they most appear. These being wholly addicted unto their own wils, use their wit, their learning, and all the wisdom they have, to maintain that which their obstinate hearts are delighted with, esteeming in the frantick errour of their minds, the greatest madness in the world to be wisdom; and the highest wisdom foolishness. Such were both Jews and Grecians which professed, the one sort legal, and the other secular skill, neither indureing to be taught the mystery of Christ: unto the glory of whose most blessed Name, who so study to use both their reason and all other gifts, as well which nature as which grace hath indued them with, let them never doubt but that the same God, who is to destroy and confound utterly that wisdom falsely so named in others, doth make reckoning of them as of true Scribes, Scribes by wisdom instructed to the Kingdom of Heaven, Scribes against that Kingdom hardened in a vain opinion of wisdom, which in the end being proved folly, must needs perish; true understanding, knowledge, judgment, and reason, continuing for evermore. Fifthly, unto the Word of God, being in respect of that end for which God ordained it, perfect, exact, and absolute in it self, we do not add reason as a supplement of any maim or defect therein, but as a necessary instrument, without which we could not reap by the Scriptures perfection, that fruit and benefit which it yieldeth. The Word of God is a two-edged sword, put in the hands of reasonable men; and reason as the weapon that slew *Goliath*, if they be as *David* was that use it. Touching the Apostles, he which gave them from above such power for miraculous confirmation of that which they taught, endued them also with wisdom from above to teach that which they so did confirm. Our Saviour made choice of twelve simple and unlearned men, that the greater their lack of natural wisdom was, the more admirable that might appear which God supernaturally endued them with from heaven. Such therefore as knew the poor and silly estate wherein they had lived, could not but wonder to hear the wisdom of their speech, and be so much the more attentive unto their teaching. They studied for no tongue they spake withall; of themselves they were rude, and knew not so much as how to premeditate; the Spirit gave them speech and eloquent utterance. But because with *S. Paul* it was otherwise then with the rest, in as much as he never conversed with Christ upon earth as they did; and his education had been scholastical altogether, which theirs was not: hereby occasion was taken by certain Malignants, secretly to undermine his great authority in the Church of Christ, as though the Gospel had been taught him by others then by Christ himself, and as if the

the cause of the *Gentiles* conversion and belief through his means, had been the learning and skill which he had by being conversant in their Books; which thing made them so willing to hear him; and him so able to persuade them; whereas the rest of the Apostles prevailed because God was with them, and by miracle from Heaven confirmed his Word in their mouths. They were mighty in *deeds*: As for him, being absent, his writings had some force; in presence, his power not like unto theirs. In sum, concerning his preaching, their very by-word was *Idle speech, empty talk*. His writings full of great words, but in the power of miraculous operations, his presence not like the rest of the Apostles. Hereupon it ariseth that S. Paul was so often driven to make his Apologies. Hereupon it ariseth, that whatsoever time he had spent in the study of Humane Learning, he maketh earnest protestation to them of *Corinth*, that the Gospel which he had preached amongst them, did not by other means prevail with them, then with others the same Gospel taught by the rest of the Apostles of Christ. My preaching, saith he, hath not been in the persuasive speeches of Humane Wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and power, that your faith may not be in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God. What is it which the Apostle doth here deny? Is it denied that his speech amongst them had been persuasive? No; for of him the sacred History plainly testifieth, that for the space of a year and a half he spake in the Synagogue every Sabbath, and persuaded both Jews and Grecians. How then is the speech of men made persuasive? Surely there can be but two ways to bring this to pass, the one Humane, the other Divine. Either S. Paul did only by art and natural industry cause his own speech to be credited; or else God by miracle did authorize it, and so bring credit thereunto, as to the speech of the rest of the Apostles. Of which two, the former he utterly denieth. For why? If the preaching of the rest had been effectual by miracle, his only by force of his own learning; so great inequality between him and the other Apostles in this thing; had been enough to subvert their faith. For might they not with reason have thought, that if he were sent of God as well as they, would God have furnished them and not him, with the power of the Holy Ghost? Might not a great part of them being simply have feared, lest their assent had been cunningly gotten unto his doctrine, rather through the weakness of their own wits, then the certainty of that truth which he had taught them? How unequal had it been, that all believers through the preaching of other Apostles, should have their Faith strongly built upon the evidence of Gods own miraculous approbation, and they whom he had converted, should have their persuasion built only upon his skill and wisdom who persuaded them? As therefore calling from men may authorize us to teach, although it could not authorize him to teach as other Apostles did: so although the wisdom of man had not been sufficient to enable him such a Teacher as the rest of the Apostles were, unless Gods miracles had strengthened both the one and the others Doctrine; yet unto our ability both of teaching and learning the truth of Christ, as we are but meer Christian men, it is not a little which the wisdom of man may add. Sixthly, yea, whatsoever our hearts be to God and to his truth, believe we, or be we as yet faithless, for our conversion or confirmation, the force of natural reason is great. The force whereof unto those effects is nothing without grace. What then? To our purpose it is sufficient, that whosoever doth serve, honour and obey God, whosoever believeth in him; that man would no more do this then innocents and infants do, but for the light of natural reason that shineth in him, and maketh him apt to apprehend those things of God, which being by grace discovered, are effectual to persuade reasonable mindes, and none other, that honour, obedience and credit belong aright unto God. No man cometh unto God to offer him Sacrifice, to pour out Supplications and Prayers before him, or to do him any service, which doth not first believe him both to be, and to be a rewarder of them who in such sort seek unto him. Let men be taught it is either by revelation from Heaven, or by instruction upon earth, by labour, study and meditation, or by the openly secret inspiration of the Holy Ghost; whatsoever the mean be they know it by, if the knowledge thereof were possible without discourse of natural reason, why should none be found capable thereof but only men, nor men till such time as they come unto ripe and full ability to work by reasonable understanding? The whole drift of the Scripture of God, what is it but only to teach *Theologie*? *Theologie*, what is it, but the Science of things Divine? What Science can be attained unto, without the help of natural

2 Cor. 10. 10.

1 Cor. 2. 4.

Acts 18. 4. 17.

6.

Heb. 1. 16.



1 Cor. 10. 15.

A&amp;S 10 12.

discourse and reason? Judge you of that which I speak, saith the Apostle. In vain it were to speak any thing of God, but that by reason men are able somewhat to judge of that they hear, and by discourse to discern how consonant it is to truth. Scripture indeed teacheth things above nature, things which our reason by it self could not reach unto. Yet those things also we believe, knowing by reason that the Scripture is the Word of God. In the presence of *Festus* a Roman, and of King *Agrippa* a Jew, *S. Paul* omitting the one, who neither knew the Jews Religion, nor the Books whereby they were taught it, speaks unto the other of things foretold by *Moses* and the Prophets, and performed in *Jesus Christ*, intending thereby to prove himself so unjustly accused, that unless his judges did condemn both *Moses* and the Prophets, him they could not choose but acquit, who taught only that fulfilled, which they so long since had foretold. His cause was easie to be discerned; what was done, their eyes were witness: what *Moses* and the Prophets did speak, their Books could quickly shew; it was no hard thing for him to compare them, which knew the one and believed the other; King *Agrippa*, believest thou the Prophets? I know thou dost. The question is, how the books of the Prophets came to be credited of King *Agrippa*. For what with him did authorize the Prophets, the like with us doth cause the rest of the Scripture of God to be of credit. Because we maintain, that in Scripture we are taught all things necessary unto Salvation; hereupon very childishly it is by some demanded, What Scripture can teach us the Sacred Authority of the Scripture, upon the knowledge whereof our whole Faith and Salvation dependeth? As though there were any Kind of Science in the world, which leadeth men unto knowledge, without presupposing a number of things already known. No Science doth make known the first Principles whereon it buildeth; but they are always either taken as plain and manifest in themselves, or as proved and granted already, some former knowledge having made them evident. Scripture teacheth all supernaturally revealed truth; without the knowledge whereof Salvation cannot be attained. The main principal whereupon our belief of all things therein contained dependeth, is, That the Scriptures are the Oracles of God himself. This in it self we cannot say is evident. For then all men that hear it, would acknowledge it in heart, as they do when they hear that every whole is more than any part of that whole, because this in it self is evident. The other we know that all do not acknowledge when they hear it. There must be therefore some former knowledge presupposed, which doth herein assure the hearts of all believers. Scripture teacheth us that saving Truth which God hath discovered unto the World by Revelation: and it presumeth us taught otherwise that it self is Divine and Sacred. The question then being, by what means we are taught this: some answer, that to learn it we have no other way then onely Tradition: as namely, that so we believe, because both we from our Predecessours, and they from theirs have so received. But is this enough? That which all mens experience teacheth them, may not in any wise be denied. And by experience we all know, that the first outward Motive leading men to to esteem of the Scripture, is the authority of Gods Church. For when we know the whole Church of God hath that opinion of the Scripture, we judge it even at the first an impudent thing for any man bred and brought up in the Church, to be of a contrary mind without cause. Afterwards the more we bestow our labour in reading or hearing the Mysteries thereof, the more we find that the thing it self doth answer our received opinion concerning it. So that the former inducements prevailing somewhat with us before, do now much more prevaile, when the very thing hath Ministred further Reason. If Infidels or Atheists chance at any time to call it in question, this giveth us occasion to list what reason there is, whereby the testimony of the Church concerning Scripture, and our own perswasion which Scripture it self hath confirmed, may be proved a truth infallible. In which case the ancient fathers being often constrained to shew, what warrant they had so much to rely upon the Scriptures, endeavoured still to maintain the authority of the Books of God, by arguments, such as unbelievers themselves must needs think reasonable, if they judged thereof as they should. Neither is it a thing impossible or greatly hard, even by such kind of proofs so to manifest and clear that point, that no man living shall be able to deny it, without denying some apparent Principle, such as all men acknowledge to be true. Wherefore if I believe the Gospel, yet is reason

son of singular use, for that it confirmeth me in this my belief the more. If I do not as yet believe, nevertheless to bring me into the number of Believers, except reason did somewhat help, and were an instrument which God doth use unto such purposes, what should it boot to dispute with Infidels, or godless persons for their conversion and perswasion in that point? Neither can I think that when grave and learned men do sometime hold, that of this Principle there is no proof but by the testimony of the spirit, which assureth our hearts therein, it is their meaning to exclude utterly all force which any kind of reason may have in that behalf: but I rather incline to interpret such their speeches, as if they had more exprelly set down, that other motives and inducements, be they never so strong and consonant unto reason, are notwithstanding ineffectual of themselves to work faith concerning this Principle, if the special grace of the Holy Ghost concur not to the enlightning of our minds. For otherwise, I doubt not but men of wisdom and judgment will grant, that the Church in this point especially is furnished with reason, to stop the mouths of her impious Adversaries: and that as it were altogether bootless to alledge against them, what the Spirit hath taught us; so likewise that even to our own selves it needeth caution and explication, how the testimony of the Spirit may be discerned, by what means it may be known, lest men think that the Spirit of God doth testify those things which the spirit of Error suggesteth. The operations of the spirit, especially these ordinary which be common unto all true Christian men, are, as we know, things secret and undiscernable even to the very soul where they are, because their nature is of another and an higher kind than that they can be by us perceived in this life. Wherefore albeit the spirit lead us into all truth, and direct us in all goodness; yet because these workings of the Spirit in us are so privy and secret, we therefore stand on a plainer ground, when we gather by reason from the quality of things believed or done, that the Spirit of God hath directed us in both; than if we settle our selves to believe, or to do any certain particular thing, as being moved thereto by the Spirit. But of this enough. To go from the books of Scripture to the sense and meaning thereof, because the Sentences which are by the Apostles recited out of the *Psalms* to prove the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, did not prove it, if so be the Prophet *David* meant them of himself; this Exposition, therefore they plainly disprove, and shew by manifest reason, that of *David* the words of *David* could not possibly be meant. Exclude the use of natural reasoning about the sense of Holy Scripture, concerning the Articles of our Faith, and then that the Scripture doth concern the Articles of our Faith, who can assure us? That which by right exposition buildeth up Christian Faith, being misconstrued breedeth Error: between true and false construction, the difference reason must shew. Can Christian men perform that which *Peter* requireth at their hands? Is it possible they should both believe, and be able without the use of reason, to render a reason of their beliefs, a reason sound and sufficient to answer them that demand it, be they of the same faith with us, or Enemies thereunto? May we cause our faith without reason to appear reasonable in the eyes of men? This being required even of learners in the School of Christ, the duty of their Teachers in the bringing them unto such ripeness, must needs be somewhat more, then only to read the Sentences of Scripture, and then Paraphrastically to scholy them, to vary them with sundry forms of speech, without arguing or disputing about any thing which they contain. This method of teaching may commend it self unto the world by that easiness and facility which is in it: but a law or a pattern it is not, as some do imagin, for all men to follow, that will do good in the Church of Christ. Our Lord and Saviour himself did hope by disputation to do some good, yea by disputation not only of, but against the truth, albeit with purpose for the truth. That Christ should be the Son of *David*, was truth, yet against this truth our Lord in the Gospel objecteth, If Christ be the Son of *David*, how doth *David* call him Lord? There is as yet no way known how to dispute, or to determine of things disputed, without the use of natural reason. If we please to adde unto Christ their Example, who followed him as near in all things as they could, the Sermon of *Paul* and *Barnabas* set down in the *Acts*, where the people would have offered unto them Sacrifice: in that Sermon what is there but only natural reason to disprove their act? *O men, why do ye these things? We are men even subject to the self-same passions with you: we preach unto you to leave these vanities, and to*

Acts 13. 36. &  
cap. 2. 34.

1 Pet. 3. 15.

Mat. 22. 3.

Acts 14. 15.

Acts 15.

turn to the living God, the God that hath not left himself without witness, in that he hath done good to the world, giving rain and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with joy and gladness. Neither did they only use reason in winning such unto a Christian belief as were yet thereto unconverted, but with believers themselves they followed the self-same course. In that great and solemn Assembly of believing Jews, how doth Peter prove that the Gentiles were partakers of the grace of God as well as they, but by reason drawn from those effects, which were apparently known amongst them? *God which knows the hearts hath borne them witness in giving unto them the Holy Ghost as unto you.* The light therefore which the Star of natural reason and wisdom casteth, is too bright to be obscured by the mist of a word or two, uttered to diminish that opinion which justly hath been received concerning the force and vertue thereof, even in matters that touch more nearly the principal duties of men, and the glory of the eternal God. In all which hitherto hath been spoken, touching the force and use of mans reason in things Divine, I must crave that I be not so understood or construed, as if any such thing by vertue thereof could be done without the aid and assistance of Gods most blessed Spirit: The thing we have handled according to the question moved about it: which question is, whether the light of Reason be so pernicious, that in devising laws for the Church; men ought not by it to search what may be fit and convenient. For this cause therefore we have endeavoured to make it appear, how in the nature of reason it self there is no impediment; but that the self-same Spirit, which revealeth the things that God hath set down in his Law, may also be thought to aid and direct men in finding out by the light of reason, what laws are expedient to be made for the guiding of his Church; over and besides them that are in Scripture. Herein therefore we agree with those men, by whom humane laws are defined to be Ordinances which such as have lawful Authority given them for that purpose, do probably draw from the Laws of Nature and God, by discourse of reason, aided with the influence of Divine grace. And for that cause it is not said amiss touching Ecclesiastical Canons, that by *inspiration of the Holy Ghost they have been made, and consecrated by the reverend acceptance of the World.*

*Violatores 27.  
q. 1.*

How laws for the regiment of the Church may be made by the advice of men, following therein the light of reason, & how those laws being not repugnant to the Word of God are approved in his sight.

9. Laws for the Church are not made as they should be, unless the makers follow such direction as they ought to be guided by. Wherein that Scripture standeth not the Church of God in any stead, or serveth nothing at all to direct, but may belet pass as needles to be consulted with, we judge it profane, impious, and irreligious to think. For although it were in vain to make laws which the Scripture hath already made, because what we are already there commanded to do, on our parts there reflecteth nothing but only that it be executed: yet because both in that which we are commanded, it concerneth the duty of the Church by law to provide, that the looseness and slackness of men may not cause the Commandments of God to be unexecuted; and a number of things there are for which the Scripture hath not provided by any law, but left them unto the careful discretion of the Church; we are to search how the Church in these cases may be well directed, to make that provision by laws which is most convenient and fit. And what is, so in these cases, partly Scripture, and partly reason must teach to discern. Scripture comprehending examples and laws; laws some Natural, and some Positive; examples neither are there for all cases which require Laws to be made, and when they are, they can but direct as precedents onely. Natural laws direct in such sort, that in all things we must for ever do according unto them; Positive so, that against them in no case we may do any thing, as long as the will of God is that they should remain in force. Howbeit when Scripture doth yeild us precedents, how far forth they are to be followed; when it giveth Natural laws, what particular order is thereunto most agreeable; when Positive, which way to make laws unrepugnant unto them; yea, though all these should want, yet what kind of Ordinances would be most for that good of the Church which is aimed at, all this must be by reason found out. And therefore *To refuse the* *luminis naturalis ducatum* *ve. conductu* of the light of nature, saith St. Augustine, is not folly alone, but accomplices: *non modo eni* *con* *impie* *ty.* The greatest amongst the School Divines studying how to set down by exact definition the nature of an humane law, (of which nature all the Churches Constitutions are) found not which way better to do it then in these words:

*Luminis naturalis ducatum ve. conductu* of the light of nature, saith St. Augustine, is not folly alone, but accomplices: *non modo eni* *con* *impie* *ty.* The greatest amongst the School Divines studying how to set down by exact definition the nature of an humane law, (of which nature all the Churches Constitutions are) found not which way better to do it then in these words:

Out



Out of the Precepts of the Law of nature, as out of certain common and undemonstrable Principles, many reason doth necessarily proceed unto certain

more particular determinations: which particular determinations being found out according unto the reason of man, they have the names of humane laws, so that such other conditions be therein kept as the making of laws doth require, that is, if they whose authority is thereunto required do establish and publish them as Laws. And the truth is, that all our con-

troversie in this cause concerning the orders of the Church, is, what particulars the Church may appoint. That which doth find them out, is the force of mans reason. That which doth guide and direct his reason, is the first general law of nature, which law of nature, and the moral law of Scripture are in the substance of law all one. But because there are also in Scripture a number of Laws particular and positive, which being in force may not by any law of man be violated, we are in making laws to have thereunto an especial eye. As for example, it might perhaps seem reasonable unto the Church of God, following the general laws concerning the nature of Marriage, to ordain in particular that Coxen Germans shall not marry. Which Law notwithstanding ought not to be received in the Church, if there should be in the Scripture a law particular to the contrary, forbidding utterly the bonds of Marriage to be so far forth abridged. The same Thomas therefore whose definition of humane laws we mentioned before, doth add thereunto this caution concerning the rule and canon whereby to make them: *Humane laws are measures* in respect of men whose actions they must direct; howbeit such measures they are, as have also their higher rules to be measured by, which rules are two, the Law of God, and the law of Nature. So that laws humane must be made according to the general Laws of nature, and without contradiction unto any positive law in Scripture; Otherwise they are ill made. Unto laws thus made & received by a whole Church, they which live within the bosom of that Church must not think it a matter indifferent either to yield or not to yield obedience. Is it a small offence to despise the Church of God? *My son keep thy Fathers commandment,* saith Solomon, *and forget not thy Mothers instruction, bind them both always about thine heart.* It doth not stand with the duty which we ow to our heavenly Father, that to the Ordinances of our Mother the Church we should shew our selves disobedient. Let us not say we keep the Commandments of the one, when we break the Law of the other: for unless we observe both, we obey neither. And what doth let, but that we may observe both, when they are not the one to the other in any sort repugnant? for of such laws onely we speak as being made in form and manner already declared, can have in them no contradiction unto the Laws of Almighty God. Yea, that which is more, the Laws thus made, God himself doth in such sort authorize, that to despise them, is to despise in them him. It is a loose and licentious opinion which the Anabaptists have imbraced, holding that a Christian mans liberty is lost, and the soul which Christ hath redeemed unto himself, injuriously drawn into servitude under the yoke of humane power, if any law be now imposed besides the Gospel of Jesus Christ: in obedience whereunto the Spirit of God, and not the constraint of men is to lead us, according to that of the blessed Apostle, *Such as are led by the Spirit of God are the Sons*

of God, and not such as live in thralldom unto men. Their judgment is therefore that the Church of Christ should admit no Law-makers but the Evangelists. The Author of that which causeth another thing to be, is Author of that thing also which thereby is caused. The light of natural understanding, wit, and reason, is from God; he it is which thereby doth illuminate every man entring into the world. If there proceed from us any thing afterwards corrupt and naught, the mother thereof is our own darkness, neither doth it proceed from any such cause whereof God is the Author. He is the Author of all that we think or do by vertue of that light which himself hath given. And therefore the Laws which the very Heathens did gather to direct their actions by, so far forth as they proceed from the light of nature, God himself doth acknowledge to have proceeded even from himself, and that he was the Writer of them in the Tables of their hearts. How much more then is he the Author of those Laws which have been made by his Saints, endued further with the heavenly grace of his Spirit, and directed as much as might be with such instruction as his sacred

Word

*Tho. Aqu. 1.2. q. 97. ar. 3. Ex preceptis Leg. naturalis, quæ ex quibusdam principiis communibus, et indemonstrabilibus, necesse est quod ratio humana procedat ad aliqua magis particulariter disponenda. Et hæc particulares dispositiones adveniunt secundum rationem humanam, dicuntur leges humane, observatis aliis conditionibus quæ pertinent ad rationem legis.*

1.2 q. 97. ar. 3.

1 Cor. 11. 19.  
Prov. 6. 20.

Rom. 8. 14.

John 1. 9.

Rom. 7. 9.  
and 15.

Word doth yield? Surely if we have unto those laws that dutiful regard which their dignity doth require, it will not greatly need, that we should be exhorted to live in obedience unto them. If they have God himself for their Author, contempt which is offered unto them cannot choose but redound unto him. The safest, and unto God the most acceptable way of framing our lives therefore, is, with all Humility, Lowliness and Singleness of heart to study, which way our willing obedience both unto God and Man may be yielded even to the utmost of that which is due.

That neither Gods being the Author of laws, nor his committing them to Scripture, nor the continuance of the end for which they were instituted is any reason sufficient to prove that they are unchangeable.

Deut. 32. 10.  
and 33. 17.

10. Touching the mutability of Laws that concern the Regiment and Polity of the Church, changed they are, when either altogether abrogated, or in part repealed, or augmented with farther additions. Wherein we are to note, that this question about the changing of Laws, concerneth onely such laws as are positive, and do make that now good or evil by being commanded or forbidden, which otherwise of it self were not imply the one or the other. Unto such laws it is expressly sometimes added, how long they are to continue in force. If this be no where exprest, then have we no light to direct our judgments concerning the changeableness or immutability of them, but by considering the nature and quality of such Laws. The nature of every law must be judged of by the end for which it was made, and by the aptness of things therein prescribed unto the same end. It may so fall out, that the reason why some laws of God were given, is neither opened nor possible to be gathered by the wit of man. As why God should forbid Adam that one tree, there was no way for Adam ever to have certainly understood. And at Adams ignorance of this point Satan took advantage, urging the more securely a false cause, because the true was unto Adam unknown. Why the Jews were forbidden to plow their ground with an Ox and an Ass, why to cloth themselves with mingled attyre of Wooll and Linnen, it was both unto them, and to us it remaineth obscure. Such laws perhaps cannot be abrogated, saving onely by whom they were made: because the intent of them being known unto none but the Author, he alone can judge how long it is requisite they should endure. But if the reason why things were instituted may be known and being known, do appear manifestly to be of perpetual necessity; then are those things also perpetual, unless they cease to be effectual unto that purpose for which they were at first instituted. Because when a thing doth cease to be available unto the end which gave it being, the continuance of it must then of necessity appear superfluous. And of this we cannot be ignorant, how sometimes that hath done great good, which afterwards when time hath changed the ancient course of things, doth grow to be either very hurtful, or not so greatly profitable and necessary. If therefore the end for which a law provideth, be perpetually necessary, and the way whereby it provideth perpetually also most apt, no doubt but that every such law ought for ever to remain unchangeable. Whether God be the Author of Laws, by authorizing that power of men whereby they are made, or by delivering them made immediately from himself, by word onely, or in writing also, or howsoever; notwithstanding the authority of their Maker, the mutability of that end for which they are made, maketh them also changeable. The law of Ceremonies came from God. Moses had commandment to commit it unto the sacred Records of Scripture, where it continueth even unto this very day and hour; in force still as the Jew surmisset, because God himself was Author of it; and for us to abolish what he hath established, were presumption most intolerable. But (that which they in the blindness of their obdurate hearts are not able to discern) sith the end for which that Law was ordained is now fulfilled, past and gone; how should it but cease any longer to be, which hath no longer any cause of being in force as before? That which necessity of some special time doth cause to be enjoined, bindeth no longer then during that time, but doth afterward become free. Which thing is also plain, even by that law which the Apostles assembled at the council of Jerusalem did from thence deliver unto the Church of Christ; the preface whereof to authorize it, was *To the Holy Ghost and to us it hath seemed good*: which stile they did not use as matching themselves in power with the holy Ghost but as testifying the holy Ghost to be the Author, and themselves but only utterers of that decree. This law therefore to have proceeded from God as the Author thereof, no faithful man will deny. It was of God, not onely because God gave them the power whereby they might make laws, but for that it proceeded even from the holy motion and suggestion of that secret divine Spirit, whose sentence they did but onely

*Quod promissum sita tunc esse statim esse cessante necessitate debet esse a posteriori quod arguitur. 1. q. 1.*

*Quod promissum sita tunc esse cessante necessitate debet esse a posteriori quod arguitur. 1. q. 1.*

only pronounce. Notwithstanding, as the law of Ceremonies delivered unto the Jews, so this very law which the Gentiles received from the mouth of the Holy Ghost, is in like respect abrogated by decess of the end for which it was given. But such as do not stick at this point, such as grant that what hath been instituted upon any special cause, needeth not to be observed, that cause ceasing, do notwithstanding herein fail; they judge the laws of God onely by the Author and main end for which they were made, so that for us to change that which he hath established, they hold it execrable pride and presumption, if so be the end and purpose for which God by that mean provideth be permanent. And upon this they ground those ample disputes concerning orders and offices, which being by him appointed for the Government of his Church, if it be necessary always that the Church of Christ be governed, then doth the end for which God provided remain still; and therefore in those means which he by law did establish as being fittest unto that end, for us to alter any thing, is to lift up our selves against God, and as it were to countermand him. Wherein they mark not, that Laws are instruments to rule by, and that instruments are not onely to be framed according unto the general end for which they are provided, but even according unto that very particular which riseth out of the matter whereon they have to work. The end wherefore Laws were made may be permanent, and those Laws nevertheless require some alteration, if there be any unfitness in the means which they prescribe attending unto that end and purpose. As for example, a law that to bridle theft doth punish theeves with a quadruple restitution, hath an end which will continue as long as the world it self continueth. Theft will be always, and will always need to be bridled. But that the mean which this law provideth for that end, namely, the punishment of quadruple restitution, that this will be always sufficient to bridle and restrain that kind of enormity, no man can warrant. Insufficiency of Laws doth sometimes come by want of judgment in the makers. Which cause cannot fall into any law termed properly and immediately divine, as it may and doth into humane laws often. But that which hath been once most sufficient, may wax otherwise by alteration of time and place; that punishment which hath been sometimes forcible to bridle sin, may grow afterwards too weak and feeble. In a word, we plainly perceive by the difference of those three Laws which the Jews received at the hands of God, the moral, ceremonial, and judicial, that if the end for which, and the matter according were unto God maketh his laws, continue always one and the same, his laws also do the like, for which cause the moral law cannot be altered: Secondly, that whether the matter whereon laws are made, continue or continue not, if their end have once ceased, they cease also to be of force; as in the Law ceremonial it fareth. Finally, that albeit that end continue, as in the law of theft specified, as in a great part of those ancient Judicials it doth; yet forasmuch as there is not in all respects the same subject or matter remaining, for which they were first instituted, even this is sufficient cause of change. And therefore laws, though both ordained of God himself, and the end for which they were ordained continuing, may notwithstanding cease, if by alteration of persons or times they be found insufficient to attain unto that end. In which respect why may we not presume, that God doth even call for such change or alteration, as the very condition of things themselves doth make necessary? They which do therefore plead the Authority of the Law-maker, as an argument wherefore it should not be lawful to change that which he hath instituted, and will have this the cause why all the ordinances of our Saviour are immutable; they which urge the wisdom of God as a proof, that whatsoever laws he hath made, they ought to stand, unless himself from Heaven proclaim them disannul, because it is not in man to correct the ordinance of God; may know, if it please them to take notice thereof, that we are far from presuming to think that men can better any thing which God hath done, even as we are from thinking that men should presume to undo some things of men, which God doth know they cannot better. God never ordained any thing that could be bettered. Yet many things he hath, that have been changed, and that for the better. That which succeeded as better now when change is requisite, had been worse, when that which now is changed was instituted. Otherwise God had not then left this to choose that, neither would now reject that to choose this, were it not for some new-grown occasion, making that which hath been better worse. In this case therefore men do not presume to change Gods ordinance, but they yield thereunto, requiring it self

Counterp. p. 8.



We offer to  
show the disci-  
pline to be a  
part of the  
Gospel, and  
therefore to  
have a com-  
mon cause: so  
that in the  
repute of the  
discipline,  
the Gospel re-  
ceives a check.  
And again, I  
speak of the  
discipline as of  
a part of the  
Gospel, and  
therefore nei-  
ther under nor  
above the  
Gospel, but the  
Gospel, &c.  
L. 1. c. 1. To  
develop and  
M. 1. c. 1.  
Sam. 1. 4.  
Acts 15.

self to be changed. Against this it is objected, that to abrogate or innovate the Gospel of Christ if Men or Angels should attempt, it were most hainous and cursed sacrilege. And the Gospel, as they say, containeth not only doctrine instructing men how they should believe, but also precepts concerning the regiment of the Church. Discipline therefore is a part of the Gospel; and God being the Author of the whole Gospel, as well of discipline as of Doctrine, it cannot be but that both of them have a common cause. So that as we are to believe for ever the Articles of Evangelical doctrine, so the precepts of discipline we are in like sort bound for ever to observe. Touching points of Doctrine, as for example, the Unity of God, the Trinity of Persons, Salvation by Christ, the Resurrection of the Body, Life everlasting, the Judgment to come, and such like, they have been since the first hour that there was a Church in the World, and till the last they must be believed. But as for matters of regiment, they are for the most part of another nature. To make new articles of faith and doctrine, no man thinketh it lawful; new laws of government, what Common-wealth or Church is there which maketh not either at one time or another? *The Rule of Faith, faith Tertullian, is but one, and that alone immovable, and impossible to be framed or cast a new.* The law of outward order and polity not so. There is no reason in the world wherefore we should esteem it as necessary always to do, as always to believe the same things; seeing every man knoweth that the matter of faith is constant, the matter contrariwise of actions daily changeable, especially the matter of action belonging unto Church-Polity. Neither can I find that men of soundest judgment have any otherwise taught, then that articles of belief, and things which all men must of necessity do to the end they may be saved, are either expressly set down in Scripture, or else plainly thereby to be gathered. But touching things which belong to discipline and outward polity, the Church hath authority to make Canons, laws and decrees, even as we read that in the Apostles times it did. Which kind of laws (forasmuch as they are not in themselves necessary to salvation) may after they are made be also changed as the difference of times or places shall require. Yea it is not denied I am sure by themselves, that certain things in discipline are of that nature, as they may be varied by times, places, persons, and other the like circumstances. Whereupon I demand, are those changeable points of discipline commanded in the Word of God, or no? If they be not commanded, and yet may be received in the Church, how can their former position stand, condemning all things in the Church which in the Word are not commanded? if they be commanded, and yet may suffer change, how can this latter stand, affirming all things immutable which are commanded of God? Their distinction touching matters of substance and of circumstance, though true, will not serve. For be they great things, or be they small, if God have commanded them in the Gospel, and his commanding them in the Gospel do make them unchangeable, there is no reason we should more change the one then we may the other. If the authority of the Maker do prove unchangeableness in the laws which God hath made; then must all laws which he hath made be necessarily for ever permanent, though they be but of circumstance onely and not of substance. I therefore conclude, that neither Gods being author of Laws for government of his Church, nor his committing them unto Scripture, is any reason sufficient, wherefore all Churches should for ever be bound to keep them without change. But of one thing we are here to give them warning by the way. For whereas in this discourse we have often times profest, that many parts of discipline or Church-Polity are delivered in Scripture, they may perhaps imagine that we are driven to confess their discipline to be delivered in Scripture, and that having no other means to avoid it, we are fain to argue for the changableness of laws ordained even by God himself, as if otherwise theirs of necessity should take place, and that under which we live be abandoned: there is no remedy therefore but to abate this error in them, and directly to let them know, that if they fall into any such conceit, they do but a little flatter their own cause. As for us, we think in no respect so highly of it. Our perswasion is, that no age ever had knowledge of it but only ours; that they which defend it, devised it; that neither Christ nor his Apostles at any time taught it, but the contrary. If therefore we did seek to maintain that which most advantageth our own cause, the very best way for us, and the strongest against them, were to hold even as they do, that in Scripture there must needs be found some particular form of Church-Polity, which God hath instituted and which

which for that very cause belongeth to all Churches, to all times. But with any such partial eye to respect our selves, and by cunning to make those things seem the truest which are the fittest to serve our purpose, is a thing which we neither like nor mean to follow. Wherefore that which we take to be generally true concerning the mutability of laws, the same we have plainly delivered, as being perswaded of nothing more then we are of this, that whether it be in matter of speculation or of practice, no untruth can possibly availe the patron and defender long; and that things most truly are likewise most behovefully spoken.

*a* Disciplina christiana ecclesiastica, & de eius rebus administrande causa constituta, ac propterea et ejus veritate tendenda, & ob eandem causam

*omnium Ecclesiarum communis & omnium temporum, l. 1. de Eccles. Discip. in Anala.*

*b* Εὐαγγέλιον ἡ δὲ ἀληθεύς

*ἡ ἀλήθεια, ἡ μόνον ἀπὸ τοῦ ἰσχυροῦ ἡγεμονίας ἡ, ἀλλὰ ἡ ἀπὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ. Συνεχὲς τὸ ὅτι οὗτος ὁ ἄνθρωπος, ἄνθρωπος. Actus. l. 1. c. 1. c. 1.*

11 This we hold and grant for truth, that those very laws which of their own nature are changeable, be notwithstanding incapable of change, if he which gave them being of authority so to do, forbid absolutely to change them; neither may they admit alteration against the will of such a Law-maker. Albeit therefore we do not find any cause why of right there should be necessarily an immutable form set down in holy Scripture; nevertheless, if indeed there have been at any time a Church-Polity so set down, the change whereof the sacred Scripture doth forbid, surely for men to alter those Laws which God for perpetuity hath established, were presumption most intolerable. To prove therefore that the will of Christ was to establish laws so permanent and immutable that in any sort to alter them cannot but highly offend God, thus they reason. First, If *Moses* being but a servant in the house of God,

Whether Christ have forbidden all change of those laws which are set down in Scripture.

did therein establish laws of government for a perpetuity; laws, which they that were of the household might not alter: shall we admit into our thoughts, that the Son of God hath in providing for this his household declared himself less faithful then *Moses*? *Moses* delivering unto the Jews such laws as were durable, if those be changeable which Christ hath delivered unto us, we are not able to avoid it, but (that which to think were heinous impiety) we of necessity must confess, even the Son of God himself to have been less faithful then *Moses*.

*Hab. 3. 6.* Either that commendation of the Son before the servant is a false testimony, or the Son ordained a permanent government in the Church. If permanent, then not to be changed. What then do they that hold it may be changed at the Magistrates Pleasure, but advise the Magistrate by his positive laws to proclaim that it is his will; that if there shall be a Church within his Dominions, he will maintain and deform the same? *M. M. Pag. 16.* What was as faithful as *Moses*, left as clear instruction for the government of the Church. But Christ was as faithful as *Moses*; ergo. *Demonst. of Disc. cap. 1.*

Which argument shall need no touchstone to try it by, but some other of the like making. *Moses* erected in the Wilderness a Tabernacle, which was moveable from place to place; *Salomon* a sumptuous and stately Temple, which was not moveable; therefore *Salomon* was faithfuller then *Moses*; which no man indued with reason will think. And yet by this reason it doth plainly follow. He that will see how faithful the one or the other was, must compare the things which they both did, unto the charge which God gave each of them. The Apostle in making comparison between our Saviour and *Moses*, attributeth faithfulness unto both, and maketh this difference between them; *Moses* in, but *Christ* over the house of God; *Moses* in that house which was his by charge and commission, though to govern it, yet to govern it as a servant; but *Christ* over this house as being his own intire possession. Our Lord and Saviour doth make protestation, *I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me.* Faithful therefore he was, and concealed not any part of his Fathers will. But did any part of that will require the immutability of Laws concerning Church-Polity? They answer, yea; For else God should less favour us than the Jews. God would not have their Churches guided by any laws but his own. And seeing this did so continue even till Christ; now to ease God of that care, or rather to deprive the Church of his patronage what reason have we? Surely none, to derogate any thing from the ancient love which God hath born to his Church. An Heathen Philosopher there is, who considering how many things beasts have which men have not, how naked in comparison of them, how impotent, and how much less able we are to shift for our selves a long time after we enter into this World, repiningly concluded hereupon, that Nature being a careful Mother for them, is towards us a hard-hearted Stepmother. No, we may not measure the affection of our gracious God towards his

*John 17.*

Either God hath left a prescript form of Government now, or else he is I like enough under the new Testament then under the old. *Demonst. of Disc. cap. 1.*

*Ecclesiast. Dis.*  
*Lb. 1.*

*Rom. 11. 16.*  
*Ephes. 1. 11. 16.*

*Deut. 4. 5.*

*Verse 12. 13. 14.*

*Deut. 5. 22.*

27.

28.

29.

30.

31.

by such differences. For even herein shineth his wisdom, that though the wayes of his providence be many, yet the end which he bringeth all at the length unto, is one and the self-same. But if such kind of reasoning were good, might we not even as directly conclude the very same concerning laws of secular regiment? Their own words are these; *In the ancient Church of the Jews, God did command, and Moses commit unto writing, all things pertinent as well to the Civil as to the Ecclesiastical state.* God gave them laws of civil regiment, and would not permit their Commonwealth to be governed by any other laws than his own. Doth God less regard our temporal estate in this world, or provide for it worse then theirs? To us notwithstanding he hath not as to them delivered any particular form of temporal regiment, unless perhaps we think, as some do, that the grafting of the Gentiles and their incorporating into *Israel*, doth import that we ought to be subject unto the rites and laws of their whole Polity. We see then how weak such disputes are, and how finally they make to this purpose. That Christ did not mean to set down a particular positive Laws for all things in such sort as *Moses* did, the very different manner of delivering the Laws of *Moses* and the Laws of Christ doth plainly shew. *Moses* had commandement to gather the ordinances of God together distinctly, and orderly to set them down according unto their severall kinds; for each publique duty and office, the laws that belong thereto, as appeareth in the books themselves written of purpose for that end. Contrariwise the Laws of Christ we find rather mentioned by occasion in the writings of the Apostles, then any solemn thing directly written to comprehend them in legal sort. Again, the positive laws which *Moses* gave; they were given for the greatest part with restraint to the land of *Jury*; Behold, saith *Moses*, *I have taught you ordinances and Laws as the Lord my God commanded me, that ye should do so even within the land whither ye go to possess it.* Which Laws and Ordinances positive he plainly distinguished afterward from the laws of the two Tables which were moral; *The Lord spake unto you out of the midst of the fire; ye heard the voice of the words, but saw no similitude, only a voice. Then he declared unto you his Covenant which he commanded you to do, the ten Commandements, and wrote them upon two Tables of stone. And the Lord commanded me that same time, that I should teach you ordinances and laws which ye should observe in the land whither ye go to possess it.* The same difference is again set down in the next Chapter following. For rehearsal being made of the ten Commandements, it followeth immediately; *These words the Lord spake unto all your multitude in the Mount out of the midst of the fire, the cloud and the darkness, with a great voice, and added no more, and wrote them upon two Tables of stone, and delivered them unto me.* But concerning other laws, the people give their consent to receive them at the hands of *Moses*; *Go thou nearer, and hear all that the Lord our God saith unto thee, and we will hear it and do it.* The peoples alacrity herein God highly commendeth with most effectual and hearty speech; *I have heard the voice of the words of this people; they have spoken well; O that there were such an heart in them to fear me, and to keep all my Commandements always, that it might go well with them, and with their children for ever!* *Go, say unto them, Return you to your Tents; But stand thou here with me, and I will tell thee all the Commandements and Ordinances and the Laws which thou shalt teach them, that they may do them in the land which I have given them to possess.* From this latter kind the former are plainly distinguished in many things. They were not both at one time delivered, neither both after one sort, nor to one end. The former uttered by the voice of God himself in the hearing of six hundred thousand men; the former written with the finger of God; the former termed by the name of Covenant; the former given to be kept without either mention of time how long, or of that place where. On the other side, the latter given after, and neither written by God himself, nor given unto the whole multitude immediately from God, but unto *Moses*, and from him to them both by word and writing; The latter termed Ceremonies, Judgements, Ordinances, but nowhere Covenants; finally, the observation of the latter restrained unto the Land where God would establish them to inhabit. The Laws positive are not framed without regard had to the place and persons for the which they are made. If therefore Almighty God in framing their Laws, had an eye unto the nature of that people, and to the Countrey where they were to dwell; if these peculiar and proper considerations were respected in the making of their laws, and must be also regarded in the Positive laws of all other Nations besides; then



then seeing that Nations are not all alike, surely the giving of one kind of Politive laws unto one only people, without any liberty to alter them, is but a slender proof, and therefore one kind should in like sort be given to serve everlastingly for all. But that which moſt of all maketh for the clearing of this point, is, that the Jews who had laws ſo particularly determining and ſo fully inſtructing them in all affaires what to do, were notwithstanding continually inured with cauſes exorbitant, and ſuch as their laws had not provided for. And in this point much more is granted us then we ask, namely, that for one thing which we have left to the order of the Church, they had twenty which were undecided by the expreſs Word of God; and that as their Ceremonies and Sacraments were multiplied above ours, even ſo grew the number of thoſe caſes which were not determined by any expreſs word. So that if we may deviſe one law, they by this reaſon might deviſe twenty: and if their deviſing ſo many were not forbidden, ſhall their example prove us forbidden to deviſe as much as one law for the ordering of the Church? We might not deviſe no not one, if their example did prove that our Saviour hath utterly forbidden all alteration of his laws, inasmuch as there can be no law deviſed, but needs it muſt either take away from his, or add thereunto more or leſs, and ſo make ſome kind of alteration. But of this ſo large a grant we are content not to take advantage. Men are oftentimes in a sudden paſſion more liberal, then they would be if they had leiſure to take advice: And therefore ſo bountiful words of courſe and franck ſpeeches we are contented to let paſs, without turning them to advantage with too much rigour. It may be they had rather be liſtened unto, when they commend the Kings of Iſrael which attempted nothing in the government of the Church without the expreſs Word of God; and when they urge that God left nothing in his Word undeſcribed, whether it concerned the Worſhip of God or outward Polity, nothing ſet down, and therefore charged them ſtrictly to keep themſelves unto that, without any alteration. Howbeit ſeeing it cannot be denied, but that many things there did belong unto the courſe of their publique affaires, wherein they had no expreſs word at all to ſhew preciſely what they ſhould do; the difference between their condition and ours in theſe caſes, will bring ſome light unto the truth of this preſent controverſie. Before the ſaſt of the Son of *Shelomith*, there was no law which did appoint any certain puniſhment for Blaſphemers; That wretched creature being therefore apprehended in that impiety, was held in Ward, till the mind of the Lord was known concerning his caſe. The like praſtice is alſo mentioned upon occaſion of a breach of the Sabbath Day. They find a poor ſilly creature gathering ſticks in the Wilderneſs; they bring him unto *Mofes* and *Aaron* and all the Congregation; they lay him in hold, becauſe it was not declared what ſhould be done with him, till God had ſaid unto *Mofes*, *this man ſhall dye the death*. The law required to keep the Sabbath Day: but for the breach of the Sabbath what puniſhment ſhould be inflicted, it did not appoint. Such occaſions as theſe are rare. And for ſuch things as do fall ſcarce one in many ages of men, it did ſuffice to take ſuch order as was requiſite when they fell. But if the caſe were ſuch as being not already determined by Law, were notwithstanding likely oftentimes to come into queſtion, it gave occaſion of adding laws that were not before. Thus it fell out in the caſe of thoſe men polluted, and of the Daughters of *Zelophebad*, whoſe cauſes *Mofes* having brought before the Lord, received laws to ſerve for the like in time to come. The Jews to this end had the Oracle of God, they had the Prophets. And by ſuch means God himſelf inſtructed them from heaven what to do in all things that did greatly concern their ſtate, and were not already ſet down in the law. Shall we then hereupon argue even againſt our own experience and knowledge? Shall we ſeek to perſwade men, that of neceſſity it is with us as it was with them, that becauſe God is ours in all reſpects as much as theirs, therefore either no ſuch way of direction hath been at any time, or if it hath been, it doth ſtill continue in the Church, or if the ſame do not continue, that yet it muſt be at the leaſt ſupplied by ſome ſuch means as pleaſeth us to account of equal force? A more dutiful and religious way for us were to admire the wiſdome of God, which ſhineth in the beautiful variety of all things? but moſt in the manifold and yet harmonious diſſimilitude of thoſe ways, whereby his Church upon Earth is guided from Age to Age throughout all generations of Men. The Jews were neceſſarily to continue till the coming of *Chriſt* in the fleſh, and the gathering of Nations unto him. So much the promiſe

T. 6. l. 1. pag. 35.

Whereas you

ſay that they

(the Jews)

had nothing,

but was deter-

mined by the

law, and we

have many

things under

termined ad

left to the or-

der of the

Church: I will

offer for one

that you ſhall

bring that we

have left to the

order of the

Church, to

ſhew you that

they had twenty

which were

undecided of

by the expreſs

Word of God.

T. C. In the

table of his ſe-

cond Book.

T. C. l. 1. p. 446.

If he will needs

ſeparate the

Worſhip of

God from the

external Poli-

ty; yet as the

Lord ſet forth

the one, ſo he

left nothing

undeſcribed in

the other.

Levit. 24. 17.

Num. 15. 34.

Num. 9.

Num. 17.

Gen. 11. 18.

made unto *Abraham* did import. So much the Prophecie of *Jacob* at the hour of his death did forehew. Upon the safety therefore of their very outward state and condition for so long, the after good of the whole world, and the salvation of all did depend. Unto their so long safety, for two things it was necessary to provide, namely, the preservation of their state against foreign resistance, and the continuance of their peace within themselves. Touching the one, as they received the promise of God to be the Rock of their defence, against which who so did violently rush, should but bruise and batter themselves; so likewise they had his commandment in all their affairs that way, to seek direction and counsel from him. Mens consultations are always perillous. And it falleth out many times that after long deliberation, those things are by their wit even resolved on, which by tryal are found most opposite to publique safety. It is no impossible thing for States, be they never so well established, yet by over-light in some one act or treaty between them and their potent opposites, utterly to cast away themselves for ever. Wherefore lest it should so fall out to them, upon whom so much did depend; they were not permitted to enter into War, nor conclude any league of Peace, nor to wade through any act of moment between them and foreign States, unless the Oracle of God or his Prophets were first consulted with. And lest domestical disturbances should waste them within themselves, because there was nothing unto this purpose more effectual, then if the authority of their Laws and Governours were such, as none might presume to take exception against it, or to shew disobedience unto it, without incurring the hatred and detestation of all men that had any spark of the fear of God; therefore he gave them even their positive laws from Heaven, and as oft as occasion required, chose in like sort Rulers also to lead and govern them. Notwithstanding some desperately impious there were which adventured to try what harm it could bring upon them, if they did attempt to be Authors of Confusion, and to resist both Governors and Laws. Against such Monsters God maintained his own, by fearful execution of extraordinary judgement upon them. By which means it came to pass, that although they were a people infested and mightily hated of all others throughout the World, although by nature hard-hearted, querulous, wrathful, and impatient of rest and quietness, yet was there nothing of force either one way or other to work the ruine and subversion of their State, till the time before mentioned was expired. Thus we see that there was no cause of dissimilitude in these things, between that one onely people before Christ, and the Kingdoms of the World since. And whereas it is further alledged, that albeit in Civil matters and things pertaining to this present life, God hath used a greater particularity with them then amongst us, framing laws according to the quality of that People and Countrey; yet the leaving of us at greater liberty in things civil, is so far from proving the like liberty in things pertaining to the Kingdom of Heaven, that it rather proves a straiter bond. For even as when the Lord would have his favour more appear by temporal blessings of this life towards the people under the Law then towards us, he gave also politick Laws most exactly, whereby they might both most easily come into, and most steadfastly remain in possession of those earthly benefits: even so at this time, wherein he would not have his favour so much esteemed by those outward commodities, it is required, that as his care in prescribing Laws for that purpose hath somewhat fallen, in leaving them to mens consultations, which may be deceived, so his care for conduct and government of the life to come, should (if it were possible) rise, in leaving less to the order of men then in times past. These are but weak and feeble disputes for the inference of that conclusion which is intended. For saving onely in such consideration as hath been shewed, there is no cause wherefore we should think God more desirous to manifest his favour by temporal blessings towards them, then towards us. Godliness had unto them, and it hath also unto us, the promises both of this life and the life to come. That the care of God hath fallen in earthly things, and therefore should rise as much in heavenly; that more is left unto mens consultations in the one, and therefore less must be granted in the other; that God having used a greater particularity with them then with us for matters pertaining unto this life, is to make amends by the more exact delivery of Laws for Government of the life to come; these are proportions, whereof if there be any rule, we must plainly confess that which truth is, we know it not. God which spake unto them by his Prophets, hath unto us spoke by his onely begotten Son; those Mysteries of Grace and Salvation which were but darkly disclosed

disclosed unto them, have unto us more clearly shined. Such differences between them and us the Apostles of Christ have well acquainted us withall. But as for matter belonging to the outward conduct or government of the Church; seeing that even in sense it is manifest, that our Lord and Saviour hath not by positive Laws descended so far into particularities with us, as *Moses* with them; neither doth by extraordinary means, Oracles and Prophets, direct us, as them he did, in those things which rising daily by new occasions, are of necessity to be provided for; doth it not hereupon rather follow, that although not to them, yet to us there should be freedom and liberty granted to make Laws? Yea, but the Apostle *S. Paul* doth fearfully charge *Timothy*, even in the sight of God who quickneth all, and of Christ Jesus who witnessed that famous confession before Pontius Pilate, to keep what was commanded him, safe and sound till the appearance of our Lord Jesus Christ. This doth exclude all liberty of changing the Laws of Christ, whether by abrogation or addition, or howsoever. For in *Timothy* the whole Church of Christ receiveth charge concerning her duty. And that charge is to keep the Apostles commandment: And his commandment did contain the Laws that concerned Church Government: And those Laws he straightly requireth to be observed without breach or blame, till the appearance of our Lord Jesus Christ. In Scripture we grant every mans lesson, to be the common instruction of all men, so far forth as their cases are like, and that religiously to keep the Apostles commandments in whatsoever they may concern us, we all stand bound. But touching that commandment which *Timothy* was charged with, we swerve undoubtedly from the Apostles precise meaning, if we extend it so largely that the arms thereof shall reach unto all things which were commanded him by the Apostle. The very words themselves do restrain themselves unto some special Commandment among many. And therefore it is not said, *Keep the Ordinances, Laws, and Constitutions which thou hast received*; but *Keep that great Commandment, which doth principally concern thee and thy calling*; that commandment which Christ did so often inculcate unto *Peter*; that commandment unto the careful discharge whereof they of *Ephesus* are exhorted, *Attend to your selves, and to all the flock*; where in the Holy Ghost hath placed you Bishops to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased by his own blood; finally, that commandment which unto the same *Timothy* is by the same Apostle even in the same form and manner afterwards again urged, *I charge thee in the sight of God and the Lord Jesus Christ, which will judge the quick and dead at his appearance and in his Kingdom, preach the Word of God*. When *Timothy* was instituted in that Office, then was the credit and trust of this duty committed unto his faithful care. The Doctrine of the Gospel was then given him, as the precious talent or treasure of Jesus Christ; then received he for performance of this duty, the special gift of the Holy Ghost. To keep this commandment immaculate and blameless, was to teach the Gospel of Christ without mixture of corrupt and unsound Doctrine, such as a number even in those times intermingled with the mysteries of Christian Belief. Till the appearance of Christ to keep it so, doth not import the time wherein it should be kept, but rather the time whereunto the final reward for keeping it was reserved: according to that of *S. Paul* concerning himself, *I have kept the faith*; for the residue, there is laid up for me a crown of Righteousness, which the Lord the righteous Judge shall in that Day render unto me. If they that labour in this Harvest should respect but the present fruit of their painful travel, a poor encouragement it were unto them to continue therein all the days of their life. But their reward is great in Heaven; the Crown of Righteousness which shall be given them in that day is honorable. The fruit of their industry then shall they reap with full contentment and satisfaction, but not till then. Wherein the greatness of their reward is abundantly sufficient to countervail the tediousness of their expectation. Wherefore till then they that are in labour must rest in hope. O *Timothy*, keep that which is committed unto thy charge; that great Commandment which thou hast received, keep, till the appearance of our Lord Jesus Christ. In which sense, although we judge the Apostles words to have been uttered; yet hereunto we do not require them to yield, that think any other construction more sound. If therefore it be rejected, and theirs esteemed more probable, which hold that the last words do import perpetual observation of the Apostles Commandment imposed necessarily for ever upon the Militant Church of Christ; let them withall

1 Tim. 6. 14.  
John 18. 37.John 21. 15.  
Acts 20. 28.

1 Tim. 3. 6.

1 Tim. 6. 10.

2 Cor. 13. 8.

1 Tim. 4. 14.

1 Tim. 4. 7.



consider, that then his Commandment cannot so largely be taken, to comprehend whatsoever the Apostle did command *Timothy*. For themselves do not all binde the Church unto some things whereof *Timothy* received charge, and namely unto that Precept concerning the choice of Widows. So as they cannot hereby maintain, that all things positively commanded concerning the affairs of the Church, were commanded for perpetuity. And we do not deny that certain things were commanded to be, though positive, yet perpetual in the Church. They should not therefore urge against us places that seem to forbid change, but rather such as set down some measure of alteration; which measure if we have exceeded, then might they therewith charge us justly: whereas now they themselves both granting, and also using liberty to change, cannot in reason dispute absolutely against all change. Christ delivered no inconvenient or unmeet Laws. Sundry of ours they hold inconvenient. Therefore such Laws they cannot possibly hold to be Christs. Being not his, they must of necessity grant them added unto his. Yet certain of those very Laws so added, they themselves do not judge unlawful; as they plainly confess, both in matter of prescript attire, and of rites appertaining to burial.

T.C. 13. p. 241. My reasons do never conclude the unlawfulness of these ceremonies of Burial, but the inconvenience and inexpedience of them. And in the Table. Of the inconvenience, not of the unlawfulness of Popish apparel and ceremonies in burial. T.C. 41. p. 32. Upon the indefinite speaking of Mr. Calvin, saying, Ceremonies and external discipline, without adding all or some, you go about subtilly to make men believe, that Mr. Calvin had placed the whole external discipline in the power and arbitrement of the Church. For if all external discipline were arbitrary, and in the choice of the Church, Excommunication also, (which is a part of it) might be cast away, which I think you will not say. And in the very next words before, Where you will give us under that ceremonies and external discipline are not prescribed particularly by the Word of God, and therefore left to the order of the Church: you must understand that all external discipline is not left to the orders of the Church, being particularly prescribed in the Scriptures, no more than all ceremonies are left to the order of the Church, or the Sacraments of Baptism, and the Supper of the Lord.

Their own Protections are, that they plead against the inconvenience, not the unlawfulness of Popish Apparel; and against the inconvenience, not the unlawfulness of Ceremonies in burial. Therefore they hold it a thing not unlawful to adde to the Laws of Jesus Christ; and so consequently they yield, that no Law of Christ forbideth addition unto Church Laws. The judgement of Calvin being alledged against them, to whom of all men they attribute most, whereas his words be plain, that for Ceremonies and external Discipline, the Church hath power to make Laws; the answer which hereunto they make, is, that indefinitely the speech is true, and that so it was meant by him, namely, that some things belonging unto External Discipline and Ceremonies, are in the power and arbitrement of the Church; but neither was it meant, neither is it true generally, that all external Discipline, and all Ceremonies are left to the Order of the

Church, in as much as the Sacraments of Baptism and the Supper of the Lord are Ceremonies, which yet the Church may not therefore abrogate. Again, Excommunication is a part of external Discipline; which might also be cast away, if all external Discipline were arbitrary, and in the choice of the Church. By which their answer it doth appear, that touching the names of Ceremony and external Discipline, they gladly would have us so understood, as if we did herein contain a great deal more then we do. The fault which we finde with them, is, that they over much abridge the Church of her power in these things. Whereupon they recharge us, as if in these things we gave the Church a liberty which hath no limits or bounds; as if all things which the name of Discipline containeth, were at the Churches free choice; so that we might either have Church-Governours and Government, or want them; either retain or reject Church Censures as we list. They wonder at us as at men which think it so indifferent what the Church doth in matters of Ceremonies, that it may be feared lest we judge the very Sacraments themselves to be held at the Churches pleasure. No, the name of Ceremonies we do not use in so large a meaning, as to bring Sacraments within the compass and reach thereof; although things belonging unto the outward form and seemly administration of them, are contained in that name, even as we use it. For the name of Ceremonies we use as they themselves do, when they speak after this sort: *The Doctrine and Discipline of the Church, as the weightiest things, ought especially to be looked unto; but the Ceremonies also, as Mint and Cummin, ought not to be neglected.* Besides, in the matter of External Discipline or Regi-

T.C. 13. p. 171.

ment

ment it self, we do not deny but there are some things whereto the Church is bound till the worlds end. So as the question is onely how far the bounds of the Churches liberty do reach. We hold that the power which the Church hath lawfully to make Laws and Orders for it self, doth extend unto sundry things of Ecclesiastical jurisdiction, and such other matters, whereto their opinion is, that the Churches authority and power doth not reach. Whereas therefore in disputing against us about this point, they take their compass a great deal wider then the truth of things can afford, producing reasons and arguments by way of generality, to prove that Christ hath set down all things belonging any way unto the form of ordering his Church, and hath absolutely forbidden change by addition or diminution great or small (for so their manner of disputing is :) we are constrained to make our defence, by shewing that Christ hath not deprived his Church so far of all liberty in making orders and laws for it self, and that they themselves do not think he hath so done. For are they able to shew that all particular customs, rites, and orders of reformed Churches, have been appointed by Christ himself? No; They grant that in matter of circumstance they alter that which they have received; but in things of substance they keep the laws of Christ without change. If we say the same in our own behalf (which surely we may do with a great deal more truth) then must they cancel all that hath been before alledged, and begin to enquire afresh, Whether we retain the Laws that Christ hath delivered concerning matters of substance, yea or no. For our constant perswasion in this point is as theirs, that we have nowhere altered the Laws of Christ, further then in such particulars onely, as have the nature of things changeable according to the difference of times, places, persons, and other the like circumstances. Christ hath commanded prayers to be made, Sacraments be ministred, his Church to be carefully taught and guided. Concerning every of these, somewhat Christ hath commanded which must be kept till the worlds end. On the contrary side, in every of them somewhat there may be added, as the Church shall judge it expedient. So that if they will speak to purpose, all which hitherto hath been disputed of they must give over, and stand upon such particulars onely, as they can shew we have either added or abrogated, otherwise then we ought in the matter of Church Politie. Whatsoever Christ hath commanded for ever to be kept in his Church, the same we take not upon us to abrogate; and whatsoever our laws have thereunto added besides, of such quality we hope it is, as no law of Christ doth any where condemn. Wherefore that all may be laid together, and gathered into a narrow room. First, so far forth as the Church is the Mystical Body of Christ, and his invisible Spouse, it needeth no external Polity. That very part of the Law Divine which teacheth faith and works of righteousness, is it self alone sufficient for the Church of God in that respect. But as the Church is a visible Society and Body-Politique, laws of Polity it cannot want. Secondly, Whereas therefore it cometh in the second place to be inquired, what laws are fittest and best for the Church; they who first embraced that rigorous and strict opinion, which depriveth the Church of liberty to make any kinde of law for her self, inclined (as it should seem) thereunto, for that they imagined all things which the Church doth without commandment of Holy Scripture, subject to that reproof which the Scripture it self useth in certain cases, when Divine Authority ought alone to be followed. Hereupon they thought it enough for the cancelling of any kinde of order whatsoever to say, *The Word of God teacheth it not, it is a device of the brain of man, away with it therefore out of the Church.* S. Augustine was of another minde, who speaking of fasts on the Sunday, saith, *That he which would choose out that day to fast on, should give thereby no small offence to the Church of God, which had received a contrary custom.* For in these things whereof the Scripture appointeth no certainty, the use of the people of God, or the Ordinances of our Fathers, must serve for a Law. In which case if we dispute, and condemn one sort by anothers custom, it will be but matter of endless contention; where, forasmuch as the labour of reasoning shall hardly beat into mens heads any certain or necessary truth, surely it standeth us upon to take heed, lest with the tempest of strife, the brightness of charity and love be darkned. If all things must be commanded of God which may be practised of his Church, I would know what commandment the Gileadites had to erect that altar which is spoken of in the Book of *Joshua*. Did not congruity of reason induce them thereunto, and suffice for defence of their fact? I would know what Commandment

T.C. l. 1 p. 27.  
We deny not but certain things are left to the order of the Church; because they are of the nature of those which are varied by times, places, persons and other circumstances, & so could not at once be set down and established forever.

1.

2.

1a 29. 14.  
Col. 2. 21.

Aug. Epist. 87.

*Judg.* 11. 40.  
*1 John* 10. 30.

*John* 19. 40.

- 1.
- 2.
- 3.
- 4.
- 5.
- 6.
- 7.

the Women of Israel had yearly to mourn and lament in the memory of *Jephthah's* daughter; what commandment the *Jews* had to celebrate their feast of *Dedication* never spoken of in the Law, yet solemnized even by our Saviour himself; what commandment finally they had for the ceremony of odors used about the bodies of the dead, after which custom notwithstanding (sith it was their custom) our Lord was contented that his own most precious body should be intombed. Wherefore to reject all orders of the Church which men have established, is to think worse of the Laws of men in this respect, then either the judgement of wise men alloweth, or the Law of God it self will bear. Howbeit, they which had once taken upon them to condemn all things done in the Church, and not commanded of God to be done, saw it was necessary for them (continuing in defence of this their opinion) to hold that needs there must be in Scripture set down a compleat particular form of Church-Polity, a form prescribing how all the affairs of the Church must be ordered, a form in no respect lawful to be altered by mortal men. For reformation of which oversight and error in them, there were that thought it a part of Christian love and charity to instruct them better, and to open unto them the difference between matters of perpetual necessity to all mens salvation, and matters of Ecclesiastical Polity: the one both fully and plainly taught in holy Scripture; the other not necessary to be in such sort there prescribed; the one not capable of any diminution or augmentation at all by men, the other apt to admit both. Hereupon the Authors of the former opinion were presently seconded by other wittier and better learned, who being loth that the form of Church-Polity which they sought to bring in, should be otherwise then in the highest degree accounted of, took first an exception against the difference between Church-Polity and matters of necessity to salvation. 2. Against the restraint of Scripture, which (they say) receiveth injury at our hands, when we teach that it teacheth not as well matters of Polity as of Faith and Salvation. 3. Constrained hereby we have been therefore, both to maintain that distinction, as a thing not onely true in it self, but by them likewise so acknowledged, though unawares. 4. And to make manifest that from Scripture, we offer not to derogate the least thing that truth thereunto doth claim, inasmuch as by us it is willingly confest, that the Scripture of God is a store-house abounding with inestimable Treasures of wisdom and knowledge in many kindes, over and above things in this one kinde barely necessary; yea, even that matters of Ecclesiastical Polity are not therein omitted, but taught also, albeit not so taught as those other things before mentioned. For so perfectly are those things taught, that nothing ever can need to be added, nothing ever cease to be necessary: These on the contrary side, as being of a far other nature and quality, not so strictly nor everlastingly commanded in Scripture, but that unto the compleat form of Church-Polity much may be requisite which the Scripture teacheth not, and much which it hath taught, become unrequisite, sometime because we need not use it, sometimes also because we cannot. In which respect, for mine own part, although I see that certain Reformed Churches, the Scottish especially and French, have not that which best agreeth with the sacred Scripture, I mean the Government that is by Bishops, inasmuch as both those Churches are fallen under a different kinde of Regiment; which to remedy it, is for the one altogether too late, and too soon for the other, during their present affliction and trouble: This their defect and imperfection I had rather lament in such case then exagitate, considering that men oftentimes without any fault of their own, may be driven to want that kinde of Politie or Regiment which is best; and to content themselves with that, which either the irremediable error of former time, or the necessity of the present hath cast upon them. 5. Now, because that Politie first mentioned, which holdeth it necessary that all things which the Church may lawfully do in her own Regiment be commanded in Holy Scripture, hath by the latter Defenders thereof been greatly qualified; who, though perceiving it to be over-extream, are notwithstanding loth to acknowledge any overlit therein, and therefore labour what they may to salve it by construction; we have for the more perspicuity delivered what was thereby meant at the first. 6. How injurious a thing it were unto all the Churches of God for men to hold it in that meaning. 7. And how unperfect their Interpretations are who so much labour to help it; either by dividing Commandments of Scripture into two kindes, and so defending that



that all things must be commanded, if not in special, yet in general Precepts. 8. Or by taking it as meant that in case the Church do devise any new Order, she ought therein to follow the direction of Scripture onely, and not any Star-light of Mans Reason. 9. Both which evasions being cut off, we have in the next place declared after what sort the Church may lawfully frame to her self Laws of Polity, and in what reckoning such Positive Laws both are with God, and should be with men. 10. Furthermore, because to abridge the liberty of the Church in this behalf, it hath been made a thing very odious, that when God himself hath devised some certain Laws, and committed them to sacred Scripture, man by abrogation, addition, or any way, should presume to alter and change them; it was of necessity to be examined, Whether the authority of God in making, or his care in committing those his Laws unto Scripture, be sufficient argument to prove that God doth in no case allow they should suffer any such kinde of change. 11. The last refuge for proof that Divine Laws of Christian Church-Polity may not be altered, by extinguishment of any old, or addition of new in that kinde, is partly a marvellous strange Discourse, that Christ (unless he would shew himself not so faithful as *Moses*, or not so wise as *Lycurgus* and *Solon*) must needs have set down in Holy Scripture some certain compleat, and unchangeable form of Polity; and partly a coloured shew of some evidence, where change of that sort of Laws may seem expressly forbidden, although in truth nothing less be done. I might have added hereunto their more familiar and popular disputes, as, The Church is a City, yea, the City of the great King, and the life of a City is Polity: The Church is the House of the living God; and what house can there be without some order for the government of it? In the royal house of a Prince there must be Officers for government, such as not any servant in the house but the Prince, whose the house is, shall judge convenient: So the house of God must have orders for the Government of it, such as not any of the Household, but God himself hath appointed. It cannot stand with the love and wisdom of God, to leave such order untaken as is necessary for the due government of his Church. The numbers, degrees, orders, and attire of *Salomons* Servants did shew his wisdom; therefore he which is greater then *Salomon*, hath not failed to leave in his house such orders for government thereof, as may serve to be as a looking-glass for his providence, care, and wisdom to be seen in. That little spark of the light of nature which remaineth in us, may serve us for the affairs of this life; But as in all other matters concerning the Kingdom of Heaven, so principally in this which concerneth the very government of that Kingdom, needful it is we should be taught of God. As long as men are perswaded of any order that it is onely of men, they presume of their own understanding, and they think to devise another not onely as good, but better then that which they have received. By severity of punishment this presumption and curiosity may be restrained. But that cannot work such cheerful obedience as is yielded where the conscience hath respect to God as the Author of Laws and Orders. This was it which countenanced the Laws of *Moses* made concerning outward Polity for the administration of Holy things. The like some Law-givers of the Heathen did pretend, but fallily; yet wisely discerning the use of this perswasion. For the better obedience sake therefore it was expedient, that God should be Author of the Polity of his Church. But to what issue doth all this come? A man would think that they which hold out with such discourses, were of nothing more fully perswaded then of this, that the Scripture hath set down a compleat form of Church-Polity, universal, perpetual, altogether unchangeable. For so it would follow, if the premises were found and strong to such effect as is pretended. Notwithstanding, they which have thus formally maintained argument in defence of the first oversight, are by the very evidence of truth themselves constrained to make this in effect their conclusion, that the Scripture of God hath many things concerning Church-Polity; that of those many, some are of greater weight, some of less; that what hath been urged as touching immutability of laws, it extendeth in truth no further then onely to laws wherein things of greater moment are prescribed. Now those things of greater moment, what are they? Forsooth, *Doctors*, *Pastors*, *Lay-Elders*, *Elderships* compounded of these three; *Synods* consisting of many *Elderships*, *Deacons*, *Women Church-servants*, or *Widows*; free consent of the people unto actions of greatest moment, after they be by Churches or Synods orderly resolved. All this form of Polity (if yet we may term that a form of building, when men have

*Nisi Reip. sua  
statum omnem  
constitueris ma-  
gis tractas ordina-  
ris, singulorum  
munera potesta-  
temq. descrip-  
tis, qua judicio-  
rum foris ratio  
habenda, quomo-  
do civium. Sci-  
enda totis: non  
solum minus Ec-  
clesia Christiana  
providis quam  
Moses olim lu-  
dica, sed quom-  
a Lycargo Solo-  
ne, Num. civi-  
tatis suis pro-  
spectum sit. Lib.  
de Ecclesiast.  
Disc.*

The defence  
of godly Ma-  
nistr. against  
D. Bridges 133.

laid

laid a few rafters together, and those not all of the soundest neither) but howsoever, all *this form* they conclude is prescribed in such sort, that to adde to it any thing as of like importance (for so I think they mean) or to abrogate of it any thing at all, is unlawful. In which resolution if they will firmly and constantly persist, I see not but that concerning the points which hitherto have been disputed of, they must agree that they have molested the Church with needless opposition; and henceforward, as we said before, betake themselves wholly unto the trial of particulars, whether every of those things which they esteem as principal, be either so esteemed of, or at all established for perpetuity in Holy Scripture; and whether any particular thing in our Church-Politic be received other then the Scripture alloweth of, either in greater things or in smaller. The matters wherein Church-Polity is conversant, are the publique religious duties of the Church, as the administration of the Word and Sacraments, Prayers, spiritual Censures, and the like. To these the Church standeth always bound. Laws of Polity, are Laws which appoint in what manner these duties shall be performed. In performance whereof, because all that are of the Church cannot joyntly and equally work, the first thing in Politie required, is, a difference of persons in the Church, without which difference those functions cannot in orderly sort be executed. Hereupon we hold, that Gods Clergy are a state which hath been and will be, as long as there is a Church upon Earth, necessary by the plain Word of God himself; a state whereunto the rest of Gods people must be subject as touching things that appertain to their souls health. For where Polity is, it cannot but appoint some to be Leaders of others, and some to be led by others. *If the blinde lead the blinde, they both perish.* It is with the Clergy, if their persons be respected, even as it is with other men; their quality many times far beneath that which the dignity of their place requireth. Howbeit, according to the order of Polity, they being the *lights of the World*, others (though better and wiser) must that way be subject unto them. Again, forasmuch as where the Clergy are any great multitude, order doth necessarily require that by degrees they be distinguished; we hold, there have ever been, and ever ought to be in such case, at leastwise two sorts of Ecclesiastical persons, the one subordinate unto the other; as to the Apostles in the beginning, and to the Bishops always since, we finde plainly both in Scripture and in all Ecclesiastical Records, other Ministers of the Word and Sacraments, have been. Moreover, it cannot enter into any mans conceit to think it lawful, that every man which listeth, should take upon him change in the Church; and therefore a solemn admittance is of such necessity, that without it there can be no Church-Polity. A number of particularities there are, which make for the more convenient being of these principal and perpetual parts in Ecclesiastical Polity, but yet are not of such constant use and necessity in Gods Church. Of this kinde are, times and places appointed for the exercise of Religion; specialities belonging to the publique solemnity of the Word, the Sacraments and Prayer; the enlargement or abridgement of Functions ministerial depending upon those two principals beforementioned; to conclude, even whatsoever doth by way of formality and circumstance concern any publique action of the Church. Now although that which the Scripture hath of things in the former kinde be for ever permanent; yet in the latter both much of that which the Scripture teacheth is not always needful; and much the Church of God shall always need which the Scripture teacheth not. So as the form of Polity by them set down for perpetuity, is three ways faulty. Faulty in omitting some things which in Scripture are of that nature, as namely the difference that ought to be of Pastors, when they grow to any great multitude; faulty in requiring Doctors, Deacons, Widows, and such like, as things of perpetual necessity by the Law of God, which in truth are nothing less; faulty also in urging some things by Scripture immutable: as their lay-Elders, which the Scripture neither maketh immutable, nor at all teacheth, for any thing either we can yet finde, or they have hitherto been able to prove. But hereof more in the Books that follow. As for those marvellous discourses, whereby they adventure to argue, that God must needs have done the things which they imagine was to be done; I must confess, I have often wondred at their exceeding boldness herein. When the question is, Whether God have delivered in Scripture (as they affirm he hath) a compleat particular immutable form of Church-Politic; why take they that other both presumptuous and superfluous labour, to prove he should have

Luke 6 39.

Mat. 5. 14.

have done it; there being no way in this case to prove the deed of God, saving one-ly by producing that evidence wherewith he hath done it? But if there be no such thing apparent upon record, they do as if one should demand a Legacy by force and vertue of some written Testament, wherein there being no such thing specified, he pleadeth that there it must needs be, and bringeth arguments from the love or good will, which always the Testator bore him, imagining that these or the like proofs will convict a Testament to have that in it, which other men can nowhere by reading finde. In matters which concern the actions of God, the most dutiful way on our part is to search what God hath done, and with meekness to admire that, rather then to dispute what he in congruity of reason ought to do. The ways which he hath whereby to do all things for the greatest good of his Church, are more in number then we can search, other in nature then that we should presume to determine which of many should be the fittest for him to chuse, till such times as we see he hath chosen of many some one; which one we then may boldly conclude to be the fittest, because he hath taken it before the rest. When we do otherwise, surely we exceed our bounds; who and where we are we forget; and therefore needful it is that our pride in such cases be controld, and our disputes beaten back with those demands of the blessed Apostle, *How unsearchable are his judgements, and his ways past finding out? Who hath known the minde of the Lord, or who was his Counsellour?* Rom. 11. 33.

---

Of

---



# OF THE L A W S O F Ecclesiastical Politie.

## *The fourth B O O K.*

*Concerning their third Assertion, That our Form of Church-Politie is corrupted with Popish Orders, Rites, and Ceremonies, banished out of certain Reformed Churches, whose example therein we ought to have followed.*

### The matter contained in this fourth Book.

1. **H**ow great use Ceremonies have in the Church.
2. The first thing they blame in the kinde of our Ceremonies, is, that we have not in them ancient Apostolical simplicity, but a greater pomp and stateliness.
3. The second, that so many of them are the same which the Church of Rome useth; and the Reasons which they bring to prove them for that cause blame-worthy.
4. How when they go about to expound what Popish Ceremonies they mean, they contradict their own Arguments against Popish Ceremonies.
5. An Answer to the Argument, whereby they would prove, that sith we allow the customs of our Fathers to be followed, we therefore may not allow such customs as the Church of Rome hath, because we cannot account of them which are in that Church as of our Fathers.
6. To their Allegation, that the course of Gods own wisdom doth make against our conformity with the Church of Rome in such things.
7. To the example of the eldest Church which they bring for the same purpose.
8. That it is not our best Politie (as they pretend it is) for establishment of sound Religion, to have in these things no agreement with the Church of Rome, being unsound.
9. That neither the Papists upbraiding us as furnished out of their store, nor any hope which in that respect they are said to conceive, doth make any more against our Ceremonies then the former Allegations have done.
10. The grief, which they say, godly Brethren conceive, at such Ceremonies as we have common with the Church of Rome.
11. The third thing, for which they reprove a great part of our Ceremonies, is, for that as we have them from the Church of Rome, so that Church hath them from the Jews.

12. The

12. *The fourth, for that sundry of them have been (they say) abused unto Idolatry, and are by that mean become scandalous.*
13. *The fifth, for that we retain them still, notwithstanding the example of certain Churches reformed before us, which have cast them out.*
14. *A declaration of the proceedings of the Church of England, for the establishment of things as they are.*



Such was the ancient simplicity and softness of spirit, which sometimes prevailed in the World, that they whose words were even as Oracles amongst men, seemed evermore loth to give sentence against any thing publickly received in the Church of God, except it were wonderful apparently evil; for that they did not so much incline to that severity, which delighteth to reprove the least things it seeth amiss; as to that Charity, which is unwilling to behold any thing, that duty bindeth to reprove. The state of this present Age, wherein zeal hath drowned charity; and skill meekness, will not now suffer any man to marvel, whatsoever he shall hear reprov'd, by whomsoever. Those Rites and Ceremonies of the Church therefore, which are the self same now, that they were, when holy and vertuous men maintained them against profane and deriding Adversaries, her own children have at this day in derision. Whether justly or no, it shall then appear, when all things are heard, which they have to alledge against the outward received Orders of this Church. Which inasmuch as themselves do compare unto *Mint and Cummin*, granting them to be no part of those things, which in the matter of Polity are weightier, we hope that for small things their strife will neither be earnest nor long. The lifting of that which is objected against the Orders of the Church in particular, doth not belong unto this place. Here we are to discuss onely those general exceptions, which have been taken at any time against them. First therefore, to the end that their nature and use, whereunto they serve, may plainly appear, and so afterwards their quality the better be discerned; we are to note, that in every grand or main publick duty, which God requireth at the hands of his Church, there is, besides that matter and form wherein the essence thereof consisteth, a certain outward fashion, whereby the same is in decent sort administr'd. The substance of all religious actions is delivered from God himself in few words. For example sake in the Sacraments, *Unto the Element let the Word be added; and they do both make a Sacrament*, saith *S. Augustine*. Baptism is given by the Element of Water, and that prescript form of words, which the Church of Christ doth use; the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ is administr'd in the Elements of Bread and Wine, if those mystical words be added thereunto. But the due and decent form of administring those holy Sacraments, doth require a great deal more. The end which is aimed at in setting down the outward form of all religious actions, is the edification of the Church. Now men are edified, when either their understanding is taught somewhat whereof in such actions it behoveth all men to consider, or when their hearts are moved with any affection suitable thereunto; when their mindes are in any sort stirred up unto that reverence, devotion, attention, and due regard, which in those cases seemeth requisite. Because therefore unto this purpose not onely speech, but sundry sensible means besides have always been thought necessary, and especially those means which being object to the eye, the liveliest and the most apprehensive sense of all other, have in that respect seemed the fittest to make a deep and strong impression; from hence have risen not only a number of Prayers, Readings, Questionings, Exhortings, but even of visible signs also, which being used in performance of holy actions, are undoubtedly most effectual to open such matter, as men when they know and remember carefully, must needs be a great deal the better informed to what effect such duties serve. We must not think but that there is some ground of reason even in nature, whereby it cometh to pass, that no Nation under Heaven either doth or ever did suffer publick actions which are of weight, whether they be Civil and Temporal, or else Spiritual and Sacred, to pass without some visible solemnity: The very strangeness whereof, and difference from that which is common doth

How great use ceremonies have in the Church.

*Mat 23. v. 23.*  
The Doctrine and Discipline of the Church, as the weightiest things, ought especially to be looked unto: but the ceremonies also, as *Mint and Cummin* ought not to be neglected.  
*T. C. l. 3. p. 171.*

Gen. 24. 2.

Ruth. 4. 7.

Exo. 3. 16.

\* Dionys. p. 121.

Tē tūv atōn

lū, iapōv tōi

vōnōv dōvōv

vōvōv, tōi vō

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

vōv, tōi vōvōv

cause Popular eyes to observe and to mark the same. Words, both because they are common, and do not so strongly move the phantasie of man, are for the most part but slightly heard; and therefore with singular wisdom it hath been provided, that the deeds of men which are made in the presence of witnesses, should pass not onely with words, but also with certain sensible actions, the memory whereof is far more easie and durable then the memory of speech can be. The things which so long experience of all Ages hath confirmed and made profitable, let not us presume to condemn as follies and toys, because we sometime know not the cause and reason of them. A wit disposed to scorn whatsoever it doth not conceive, might ask wherefore Abraham should say to his servant, *Put thy hand under my thigh, and swear*: was it not sufficient for his servant to shew the Religion of an Oath, by naming the Lord God of Heaven and Earth, unless that strange ceremony were added? In Contracts, Bargains and Conveyances, a mans word is a token sufficient to express his will. Yet this was the ancient manner in Israel concerning redeeming and exchanging, to establish all things; A man did pluck off his shoe, and gave it to his neighbour; and this was a sure witness in Israel. Amongst the Romans in their making of a Bond-man free, was it not wondrous wherefore so great a do should be made? The Master to present his Slave in some Court, to take him by the hand, and not onely to say in the hearing of the public Magistrate, *I will that this man become free*; but after these solemn words uttered, to strike him on the cheek, to turn him round, the hair of his head to be shaved off, the Magistrate to touch him thrice with a rod, in the end a cap and a white garment to be given him? To what purpose all this circumstance? Among the Hebrews how strange and in outward appearance almost against reason, that he which was minded to make himself a perpetual servant, should not onely testify so much in the presence of the Judge, but for a visible token thereof have also his ear bored thorow with an awl? It were an infinite labour to prosecute these things so far as they might be exemplified both in Civil and Religious actions. For in both they have their necessary use and

force. \* These sensible things which Religion hath allowed, are resemblances framed according to things spiritually understood, whereunto they serve as a band to lead, and a way to direct. And whereas it may peradventure be objected, that to adde to religions duties such rites and ceremonies as are significant, is to institute new Sacraments: sure I am they will not say, that Numa Pompilius did ordain a sacrament; a significant ceremony he did ordain, in commanding the Priests to execute the work of their Divine Service with their hands as far as to the fingers covered; thereby signifying that fidelity must be defended, and that mens right hands are the sacred seat thereof. Again, we are alio to put them in minde, that themselves do not hold all significant ceremonies for sacraments; inasmuch as imposition of hands they deny to be a Sacrament, and yet they give thereunto a forcible signification. For concerning it their words are these, (c) The party ordained by this ceremony, was put in minde of his separation to the work of the Lord, that remembering himself to be taken as it were with the hand of God from amongst others, this might teach him not to account himself now his own, nor to do what himself listeth; but to consider that God hath set him about a work, which if he will discharge and accomplish, he may at the hands of God assure himself of reward and; if otherwise, of revenge. Touching significant Ceremonies some of them are Sacraments, some as Sacraments onely. Sacraments are those, which are signs and tokens of some general promised grace, which always really descendeth from God unto the soul that duly receiveth them: other significant tokens are only as Sacraments, yet no Sacraments. Which is not our distinction, but theirs. For concerning the Apostles imposition of hands, these are their own words, *Magnum signum hoc & quasi Sacramentum usurparunt*; They used this sign as it were a Sacrament.

2. Concerning rites and ceremonies, there may be fault, either in the kinde, or in the number and multitude of them. The first thing blamed about the kinde of ours, is, that in many things we have departed from the ancient simplicity of Christ and his Apostles; we have embraced more outward stateliness, we have those orders in the exercise of Religion, which they who best pleased God, and served him most devoutly, never had. For it is out of doubt, that the first state of things was best, that in the prime of Christian Religion faith was foundest, the Scriptures of God were then best understood by all men, all parts of godliness did then most abound; and therefore it must needs follow, that Customs, Laws, and Ordinances devised since, are not so good for the

Church

The first thing they blame in the kinde of our Ceremonies, is, that we have not in them ancient Apostolical simplicity, but a greater pomp and stateliness. Lib. Ecclesiastical. p. 141.



Church of Christ; but the best way is to cut off later inventions, and to reduce things unto the ancient state wherein at the first they were. Which Rule or Canon we hold to be either uncertain, or at least wise unsufficient, if not both. For in case it be certain, hard it cannot be for the n to shew us, where we shall find it so exactly set down, that we may say without all controverſie, *These were the orders of the Apostles times, these wholly and onely, neither fewer nor more than these*. True it is that many things of this nature be alluded unto, yea many things declared, and many things necessarily collected out of the Apostles writings. But is it necessary that all the orders of the Church which were then in use, should be contained in their books? Surely no. For if the tenor of their writings be well observed, it shall unto any man easily appear, that no more of them are there touched, then were needful to be spoken of sometimes by one occasion, and sometimes by another. Will they allow then of any other Records besides? Well assured I am they are far enough from acknowledging that the Church ought to keep any thing as Apostolical, which is not found in the Apostles writings, in what other Records so ever it be found. And therefore whereas St. *Augustine* affirmeth, that those things which the whole Church of Christ doth hold, may well be thought to be Apostolical, although they be not found written; this his judgment they utterly condemn. I will not here stand in defence of S. *Augustine's* opinion, which is, that such things are indeed Apostolical; but yet with this exception, unless the Decree of some general Council have haply caused them to be received: for of Positive laws and orders received throughout the whole Christian world, S. *Augustine* could imagine no other fountain save these two. But to let pass S. *Augustine*, they who condemn him herein, must needs confess it a very uncertain thing what the orders of the Church were in the Apostles times, seeing the Scriptures do not mention them all, and other Records thereof besides they utterly reject. So that in tying the Church to the orders of the Apostles times, they tie it to a marvelous uncertain rule; unless they require the observation of no orders but onely those which are known to be Apostolical by the Apostles own writings. But then is not this their rule of such sufficiency, that we should use it as a touchstone to try the orders of the Church by for ever? Our end ought always to be the same; our ways and means thereunto not so. The glory of God and the good of his Church was the thing which the Apostles aimed at, and therefore ought to be the mark whereat we also level. But seeing those rites and orders may be at one time more, which at another are less available unto that purpose: what reason is there in these things to urge the state of our onely age, as a pattern for all to follow? It is not, I am sure, their meaning, that we should now assemble our people to serve God in close and secret meetings; or that common Brooks or Rivers should be used for places of Baptism; or that the Eucharist should be ministred after meat; or that the custom of Church-feasting should be renewed: or that all kind of standing provision for the Ministry should be utterly taken away, and their estate made again dependant upon the voluntary devotion of men. In these things they easily perceive how unfit that were for the present, which was for the first Age convenient enough. The faith, zeal, and godliness of former times is worthily had in honour; but doth this prove that the orders of the Church of Christ must be still the self-same with theirs, that nothing may be which was not then, or that nothing which then was may lawfully since have ceased? They who recal the Church unto that which was at the first, must necessarily set bounds and limits unto their speeches. If any thing have been received repugnant unto that which was first delivered, the first things in this case must stand, the last give place unto them. But where difference is without repugnancy, that which hath been can be no prejudice to that which is. Let the state of the people of God when they were in the house of bondage, and their manner of Serving God in a strange land, be compared with that which *Canaan* and *Jerusalem* did afford, and who seeth not what huge difference there was between them? In Egypt, it may be, they were right glad to take some corner of a poor Cottage, and there to serve God upon their knees, peradventure covered in dust and straw sometimes. Neither were they therefore the less accepted of God; but he was with them in all their afflictions, and at the length by working their admirable deliverance, did testify that they served him not in vain. Notwithstanding in the very desert they are no sooner posselt with some little thing of their own, but a Tabernacle is required at their hands. Being planted in the land of *Canaan*, and having *David* to be their

Tom. 7. de bapt. contra Iovinell. lib. 5. cap. 23. t. c. l. a. p. 11. If this judgement of S. *Augustine* be a good judgement & sound; then there be some things commanded of God, which are not in the Scripture: and therefore there is no sufficient Doctrine contained in Scripture, whereby we may be saved. For all the Commandments of God and of the Apostles, are needful for our salvation. V. de Ep. 118.

King, when the Lord had given him rest from all his enemies, it grieved his religious mind to consider the growth of his own estate and dignity, the affairs of religion continuing still in the former manner : Behold, now I dwell in an house of Cedar trees, and the Ark of God remaineth still within Curtains. What he did purpose, it was the pleasure of God that Solomon his son should perform, and perform it in manner suitable unto their present, not their ancient estate and condition. For which cause

1 Sam. 7. 2. 2 Chron. 2. 5. Solomon writeth unto the King of Tyrus : The house which I build is great and wonderful ; for great is our God above all gods. Whereby it clearly appeareth, that the orders of the Church of God may be acceptable unto him, as well being framed suitable to the greatness and dignity of latter, as when they keep the reverend simplicity of ancient times. Such dissimilitude therefore between us and the Apostles of Christ, in the order of some outward things, is no argument of default.

3. Yea, but we have framed our selves to the customes of the Church of Rome, our Orders and Ceremonies are Papistical. It is espied that our Church-founders were not so careful as in this matter they should have been, but contented themselves with such discipline as they took from the Church of Rome. Their error we ought to reform by abolishing all Popish orders. There must be no communion nor fellowships with Papists, neither in Doctrine, Ceremonies, nor Government. It is not enough that we are divided from the Church of Rome by the single wall of Doctrine, retaining as we do part of their Ceremonies, and almost their whole Government : but Government or Ceremonies, or whatsoever it be which is Popish, away with it. This is the thing they require in us, the utter relinquishment of all things Popish. Wherein to the end we may answer them according unto their plain direct meaning, and not take advantage of doubtful speech, whereby controversies grow always endless, their main Position being this, that nothing should be placed in the Church but what God in his word hath commanded, they must of necessity hold all for Popish, which the Church of Rome hath over and besides this. By Popish Orders, Ceremonies, and Government they must therefore mean in every of these so much, as the Church of Rome hath embraced without Commandment of Gods word : so that whatsoever such things we have, if the Church of Rome have it also, it goeth under the name of those things that are Popish, yea, although it be lawful, although agreeable to the Word of God. For so they plainly affirm, saying: *Although the forms and ceremonies which they (the Church of Rome) used were not unlawful, and that they contained nothing which is not agreeable to the Word of God, yet notwithstanding neither the Word of God, nor reason, nor the examples of the eldest Churches both Jewish and Christian, do permit us to use the same form and ceremonies, being neither commanded of God, neither such as there may nor as good as they and rather better be established.* The question therefore is, whether we may follow the Church of Rome in those orders, Rites and ceremonies, wherein we do not think them blamable, or else ought to devise others, and to have no conformity with them, no not as much as in these things? In this sense and construction therefore as they affirm, so we deny, that whatsoever is Popish we ought to abrogate. Their Arguments to prove that generally all Popish Orders and Ceremonies ought to be clean abolished, are in sum these : First, *whereas we allow the judgment of S. Augustine, that touching those things of this kind which are not commanded or forbidden in the Scripture, we are to observe the custome of the people of God, and decrees of our forefathers : how can we retain the customes and constitutions of the Papists in such things, who were neither the people of God nor our forefathers ?* Secondly, *although the forms and ceremonies of the Church of Rome were not unlawful, neither did contain any thing which is not agreeable to the Word of God, yet neither the Word of God, nor the example of the eldest Churches of God, nor reason, do permit us to use the same, they being Hereticks and so neer about us, and their orders being neither commanded of God, nor yet such, but that as good or rather better may be established.* It is against the Word of God, to have conformity with the Church of Rome in such things, as appeareth, in that the wisdom of God hath thought it a good way to keep his people from infection of Idolatry and Superstition by severing them from Idolaters in outward ceremonies, and therefore hath forbidden them to do things which are in themselves very lawful to be done. And further, whereas the Lord was careful to sever them by ceremonies from other Nations, yet was he not so careful to sever them from any, as from the Egyptians amongst whom they lived, and from those Nations which were next neighbours to them, because from them was the greatest fear

Our Orders  
and Ceremo-  
nies blam'd,  
in that so many  
of them are  
the same  
which the  
Church of  
Rome useth.  
Eccles. Discipl.  
fol. 11. T. c. lii.  
1. pag. 13.  
T. C. l. p. 2.  
T. C. l. p. 25.

T. C. lib. 1. p. 111.

T. C. l. p. 30.

T. C. l. p. 117.

*fear of infection.* So that following the course which the wisdom of God doth teach, *it were more safe for us to conform our indifferent ceremonies to the Turke which are far off, then to the Papists which are so near.* Touching the example of the eldest Churches of God, in one council it was decreed, that Christians should not deck their houses with Bay-leaves and green boughs, because the Pagans did use so to do; and that they should not rest from their labours those days that the Pagans did, that they should not keep the first day of every moneth as they did. Another Council decreed that Christians should not celebrate feasts on the birth days of the Martyrs, because it was the manner of the Heathen. O, saith Tertullian, better is the Religion of the Heathen: for they use no solemnity of the Christians, neither the Lords day, neither the Pentecost, and if they knew them, they would have nothing to do with them: for they would be afraid lest they should seem Christians but we are not afraid to be called heathens. The same Tertullian would not have Christians to sit after they had prayed, because the Idolaters did so. Whereby it appeareth, that both of particular men and of Councils, in making or abolishing of ceremonies, heed had been taken that the Christians should not be like the Idolaters, no not in those things which of themselves are most indifferent to be used or not used. The same conformity is not less opposite unto reason, first inasmuch as contraries must be cured by their contraries, and therefore Popery being Antichristianity, is not healed by establishment of orders thereto opposite. The way to bring a drunken man to sobriety, is to carry him as far from excess of drink as may be. To redress a crooked stick, we bend it on the contrary side, as far as it was at the first on that side from whence we draw it: and so it cometh in the end to a middle between both, which is perfect straightness. Utter inconformity thereto with the Church of Rome in these things, is the best and surest policy which the Church can use. While we use their ceremonies, they take occasion to blaspheme, saying that our religion cannot stand by it self, unless it lean upon the staff of their ceremonies. They hereby conceive great hope of having the rest of their Popery in the end, which hope causeth them to be more frozen in their wickedness. Neither is it without cause that they have this hope, considering that which M. Bucer noteth upon the eighteenth of S. Matthew, that where these things have been left, Popery hath returned; but on the other part, in places which have been cleansed of these things, it hath not yet been seen that it hath had any entrance. None make such clamors for these ceremonies, as the Papists, and those whom they suborn; a manifest token how much they triumph and joy in these things. They breed grief of mind in a number that are godly minded, and have Antichristianity in such dereliction, that their minds are Maltreated with the very sight of them in the Church. Such godly brethren we ought not thus to grieve with unprofitable ceremonies, yea, ceremonies wherein there is not only no profit but also danger of great hurt that may grow to the Church by infection, which Popish ceremonies are means to breed. This in effect is the sum and substance of that which they bring by way of opposition against those orders which we have common with the Church of Rome; these are the reasons wherewith they would prove our Ceremonies in that respect worthy of blame.

4. Before we answer unto these things, we are to cut off that, whereunto they from whom these objections proceed, do oftentimes fly for defence and succour, when the force and strength of their Arguments is elided. For the Ceremonies in use amongst us, being in no other respect retained, saving only for that to retain them is to our seeming, good and profitable, yea so profitable and so good, that if we had either simply taken them clean away, or else removed them so as to place in their stead others, we had done worse: the plain and direct way against us herein had been onely to prove, that all such Ceremonies as they require to be abolished, are retained by us with the hurt of the Church, or with less benefit then the abolishment of them would bring. But forasmuch as they saw how hardly they should be able to performe this; they took a more compendious way, traducing the Ceremonies of our Church under the name of being Popish. The cause why this way seemed better unto them, was, for that the name of Popery is more odious then very Paganism amongst diverse of the more simple sort; so whatsoever they hear named Popish, they presently conceive deep hatred against it, imagining there can be

T. C. L. p. 131.

Tom. 2. Braca. 73.

Con. Africa. cap. 27.

*Lib. de Idolat.*  
 He seemeth to mean the feast of Easter day, celebrated in the memory of our Saviours resurrection, and for that cause termed the Lords day.  
*Lib. de Animis.*

T. C. L. p. 138.

T. C. L. p. 139.

T. C. L. p. 180.

That whereas they who blame us in

this behalf, when reason evicteth that all such Ceremonies are not to be abolished, make answer that when they condemn Popish Ceremonies, their meaning is of ceremonies unprofitable, or ceremonies, in stead whereof as good or better may be devised: they cannot hereby get out of the briers, but contradict and gainsay themselves: inasmuch as their usual manner is to prove, that ceremonies uncommanded in the Church of God and yet used in the Church of Rome, are for this very cause unprofitable to us, and not so good as others in their place would be.



nothing contained in that name, but needs it must be exceeding detestable. The ears of the people they have therefore filled with strong clamors. *The Church of England is fraught with Popish Ceremonies: They that favour the cause of reformation, maintain nothing but the sincerity of the Gospel of Jesus Christ: All such as withstand them, fight for the Laws of his sworn enemy, uphold the filthy reliques of Antichrist; and are defenders of that which is Popish.* These are the notes wherewith are drawn from the hearts of the multitude so many sighs; with these tunes their minds are exasperated against the lawful Guides and Governours of their souls; these are the voices that fill them with general discontentment; as though the bosome of the famous Church wherein they live, were more noysome than any dungeon. But when the Authors of so scandalous incantations are examined and called to account, how they can justify such their dealings; when they are urged directly to answer, whether it be lawful for us to use any such Ceremonies as the Church of Rome useth, although the same be not commanded in the Word of God; being driven to see that the use of some such Ceremonies must of necessity be granted lawful, they go about to make us believe that they are just of the same opinion, and that they only think such Ceremonies are not to be used when they are unprofitable, or when as good or beter may be established. Which answer is both idle in regard of us, and also repugnant to themselves. It is, in regard of us, very vain to make this answer, because they know that what Ceremonies we retain common unto the Church of Rome, we therefore retain them, for that we judge them to be profitable, and to be such that others instead of them would be worse. So that when they say that we ought to abrogate such Romish Ceremonies as are unprofitable, or else might have other more profitable in their stead, they trifle and they beat the Air about nothing which toucheth us, unless they mean that we ought to abrogate all Romish Ceremonies, which in their judgment have either no use, or less use than some other might have. But then must they shew some commission, whereby they are authorized to sit as Judges, and we required to take their judgment for good in this case. Otherwise, their sentences will not be greatly regarded, when they oppose their *Me thinketh*, unto the Orders of the Church of England: as in the question about Surplices one of them doth; *If we look to the colour, black methinks is the more decent; if to the form, a garment down to the foot hath a great deal more comeliness in it.* If they think that we ought to prove the Ceremonies commodious which we have retained, they do in this point very greatly deceive themselves. For in all right and equity, that which the Church hath received and held so long for good, that which publique approbation hath ratified, must carry the benefit of presumption with it to be accounted meet and convenient. They which have stood up as yesterday to challenge it of defect, must prove their challenge. If we being defendants do answer, that the Ceremonies in question are godly, comely, decent, profitable for the Church; their reply is childish and unorderedly to say, that we demand the thing in question, and shew the poverty of our cause, the goodness whereof we are fain to beg that our Adversaries would grant. For on our parts this must be the answer, which orderly proceeding doth require. The burden of proving doth rest on them. In them it is frivolous to say, we ought not to use bad Ceremonies of the Church of Rome, and presume all such bad as it pleaseth them to dislike, unless we can persuade them the contrary. Besides, they are herein oppositely also to themselves. For what one thing is so common with them, as to use the custome of the Church of Rome for an argument to prove, that such and such Ceremonies cannot be good and profitable for us; inasmuch as that Church useth them? Which usual kind of disputing, sheweth that they do not disallow onely those Romish Ceremonies which are unprofitable, but count all unprofitable, which are Romish, that is to say, which have been devised by the Church of Rome, or which are used in that Church and not prescribed in the Word of God. For this is the onely limitation which they can use fitable unto their other Positions. And therefore the cause which they yield, why they hold it lawful to retain in *Doctrine* and in *Discipline* some things as good, which yet are common to the Church of Rome, is, for that those good things are perpetual commandements, in whose place no other can come; but Ceremonies are changeable. So that their judgement in truth, is, that whatsoever by the Word of God is not changeable in the Church of Rome, that Churches using is a cause why reformed Churches ought to change it, and not to think it good or profitable. And lest

T.C. lib. 3. p. 171  
What an open  
untruth is it,  
that this is one  
of our princi-  
ples not to be  
lawful to use  
the same cere-  
monies which  
the Papists did,  
when as I have  
both before  
declared the  
contrary, and  
even here  
have expressly  
addd, that  
they are not to  
be used when  
as good or bet-  
ter may be  
established?  
Eccles. discip.  
fol. 120.

T.C. l. 3. p. 175.  
As for your  
ten repeating  
that the cere-  
monies in que-  
stion are god-  
ly, comely, and  
decent: It is  
your old wor-  
d of demanding  
the thing in  
question, and  
an undoubted  
argument of  
your extreme  
poverty.

T.C. l. 3. p. 174.

we seem to farther any thing upon them more than is properly their own, let them read even their own words, where they complain, that *we are thus constrained to be like unto the Papists in any their Ceremonies*; yea they urge that this cause, although it were alone, ought to move them to whom that belongeth, to do them away, *forasmuch as they are their Ceremonies*; and that the B. of Salisbury doth justifie this their complaint. The clause is untrue which they add concerning the B. of Salisbury; but the sentence doth shew, we do them no wrong in setting down the state of the question between us thus: Whether we ought to abolish out of the

Church of England all such orders, rites, and ceremonies, as are established in the Church of Rome, and are not prescribed in the Word of God. For the affirmative whereof we are now to answer such proofs of theirs as have been before alledged.

5. Let the Church of Rome be what it will, let them that are of it be the people of God and our fathers in the Christian faith, or let them be otherwise; hold them for Catholics, or hold them for Hereticks, it is not a thing either one way or another in this present question greatly material. Our conformity with them in such things as have been proposed, is not proved as yet unlawful by all this. S. Augustine hath said, yea and we have allowed his saying, *That the custome of the people of God and the decrees of our forefathers are to be kept, touching those things whereof the Scripture hath neither one way nor other given us any charge*. What then? Doth it here therefore follow, that they, being neither the people of God, nor our forefathers, are for that cause in nothing to be followed? This consequent were good, if to be it were granted, that only the custom of the people of God, and the decrees of our forefathers are in such case to be observed. But then should no other kind of latter laws in the Church be good, which were a groos absurdity to think. S. Augustines speech therefore doth import, that where we have no divine precept, if yet we have the custom of the people of God, or a decree of our forefathers, this is a law and must be kept. Notwithstanding it is not denied, but that we lawfully may observe the positive constitutions of our own Churches, although the same were but yesterday made by our selves alone. Nor is there any thing in this to prove, that the Church of England might not by law receive orders, rites, or customs from the Church of Rome, although they were neither the people of God, nor yet our forefathers. How much less, when we have received from them nothing but that which they did themselves receive from such, as we cannot deny to have been the people of God, yea such as either we must acknowledge for our own forefathers, or else disdain the race of Christ?

6 The rites and orders wherein we follow the Church of Rome, are of no other kind than such as the Church of Geneva it self doth follow them in. We follow the Church of Rome in moe things; yet they in somethings of the same nature about which our present controversie is: so that the difference is not in the kind, but in the number of Rites only, wherein they and we do follow the Church of Rome. The use of Wafer-cakes, the custome of God-fathers and God-mothers in Baptism, are things not commanded nor forbidden in the Scripture, things which have been of old, and are retained in the Church of Rome, even at this very hour. Is conformity with Rome in such things a blemish unto the Church of England, and unto Churches abroad an ornament? Let them, if not for the reverence they ow unto this Church, in the bowels whereof they have received I trust that precious and blessed vigor, which shall quicken them to eternal life; yet at the leastwise for the singular affection which they do bear towards others, take heed now they strike, lest they wound whom they would not. For undoubtedly it cutteth deeper then they are aware of, when they plead that, even such ceremonies of the Church of Rome, as contain in them nothing which is not of it self agreeable to the word of God, ought nevertheless to be abolished, and that neither the Word of God, nor reason, nor the examples of the eldest Churches, do permit the Church of Rome to be therein followed. Hereticks they are, and they are our Neighbours. By us and amongst us, they lead their lives. But what then? therefore is no ceremonie of theirs lawful for us to use? We must yield and will, that none are lawful if God himself be a precedent against the use of any. But how appeareth it that God is so? Hereby, they say, it doth appear, in that God sever-

T. C. L. p. 177. And that this complaint of ours is just, in that we are thus constrained to be like unto the Papists in any their ceremonies; and that this cause only ought to move them to whom that belongeth to do theirs away, forasmuch as they are their ceremonies: the Reader may further see in the Bishop of Salisbury, who brings diverse proofs thereof.

That our following the customs of our fathers to be followed, is no proof that we may not allow some customs which the Church of Rome hath, although we do not account of them as of our fathers.

That the course which the wisdom of God doth teach, maketh not against our conformity with the Church of Rome in such things.

T. C. L. p. 179. & 181.

Levit. 18. 3.

Levit. 19. 27.  
and 19. 19.

Deut. 22. 11.

and 1. 7. &amp;

Levit. 11.

Ephes. 2. 14.

red his people from the heathens, but specially from the Egyptians, and such Nations as were neereſt Neighbours unto them, by forbidding them to do those things, which were in themselves very lawfull to be done, yea very profitable some, and incommodious to be forbore; such things it pleased God to forbid them, onely because those Heathens did them, with whom conformity in the same thing might have bred infection. Thus in shaving, cutting, apparel-wearing, yea in sundry kinds of meats also, Swine's-flesh, Conies, and such like, they were forbidden to do so and so, because the Gentiles did so. And the end why God forbade them such things, was, to sever them, for fear of infection, by a great and an high wall from other Nations, as S. Paul teacheth. The cause of more careful separation from the neereſt Nations, was, the greatness of danger to be especially by them infected. Now, Papiſts are to us as those Nations were unto Israel. Therefore if the wisdom of God be our guide, we cannot allow conformity with them, no not in any such indifferent Ceremony. Our direct answer hereunto is, that for any thing here alledged we may still doubt, whether the Lord in such indifferent Ceremonies as those whereof we dispute, did frame his people of set purpose unto any utter dissimilitude, either with Egyptians, or with any other Nation else. And if God did not forbid them all such indifferent Ceremonies, then our conformity with the Church of Rome in some such is not hitherto as yet disproved, although Papiſts were unto us as those Heathens were unto Israel. After the doings of the Land of Egypt, wherein you dwell, ye shall not do, saith the Lord; and after the manner of the Land of Canaan, whither I will bring you, shall ye not do, neither walk in their Ordinances: Do after my judgements, and keep my ordinances to walk therein: I am the Lord your God. The speech is indefinite, ye shall not be like them: It is not general, ye shall not be like them in any thing, or like unto them in any thing indifferent, or like unto them in any indifferent Ceremony of theirs. Seeing therefore it is not set down how far the bounds of his speech concerning dissimilitude should reach, how can any man assure us, that it extendeth farther then to those things only, wherein the Nations there mentioned were Idolatrous, or did against that which the Law of God commanded? Nay, doth it not seem a thing very probable, that God doth purposely add, Do after my judgements, as giving thereby to understand that his meaning in the former sentence was but to bar similitude in such things as were repugnant to the Ordinances, Laws, and Statutes, which he had given? Egyptians and Canaanites are for example sake named unto them, because the customs of the one they had been, and of the other they should be best acquainted with. But that wherein they might not be like unto either of them, was such peradventure as had been no whit less unlawfull, although those Nations had never been. So that there is no necessity to think that God for fear of infection by reason of nearness, forbade them to be like unto the Canaanites or the Egyptians, in those things which otherwise had been lawfull enough. For I would know what one thing was in those Nations, and is here forbidden, being indifferent it self, yet forbidden only because they used

Levit. 1. 3.

Levit. 19. 17.

Levit. 21. 5.

Deut. 24. 1.

1 Theſ. 4. 13.

Levit. 19. 19.

Deut. 22. 11.

it? In the Laws of Israel we find it written, Ye shall not cut round the corners of your heads, neither shalt thou tear the tufts of thy beard. These things were usual amongst those Nations, and in themselves they are indifferent. But are they indifferent being used as signs of immoderate and hopeles lamentation for the dead? In this sense it is that the law forbiddeth them. For which cause the very next words following are, Ye shall not cut your flesh for the dead, nor make any print of a mark upon you; I am the Lord. The like in Leviticus, where speech is of mourning for the dead, They shall not make bald parts upon their head, nor shave off the locks of their beard, nor make any cutting in their flesh. Again, in Deut. Ye are the Children of the Lord your God; ye shall not cut your selves, nor make you baldness between your eyes for the dead. What is this but in effect the same which the Apostle doth more plainly expreſs, saying, Sorrow not as they do which have no hope? The very light of nature it self was able to see herein a fault; that which those Nations did use, having been also in use with others, the ancient Roman laws do forbid. That shaving therefore and cutting which the Law doth mention, was not a matter in it self indifferent, and forbidden only because it was in use amongst such Idolaters as were Neighbours to the people of God; but to use it had been a crime, though no other people or Nation under heaven should have done it saving only themselves. As for those laws concerning attires, There shall no garment of Linnen and wollen come upon thee; as also those touching food and diet, wherein Swine's-flesh together with sundry other meats are forbidden; the use of these things had been indeed of it self harmles and indifferent:

so



so that hereby it doth appear, how the Law of God forbade in some special consideration, such things as were lawful enough in themselves. But yet even here they likewise fail of that they intend. For it doth not appear that the consideration in regard whereof the Law forbiddeth these things, was because those Nations did use them. Likely enough it is that the *Canaanites* used to feed as well on Sheep as on Swine-flesh; and therefore if the forbidding of the latter had no other reason then dissimilitude with that people, they which of their own heads alledge this for reason, can shew I think some reason more then we are able to find, why the former was not also forbidden. Might there not be some other mystery in this prohibition then they think of? Yes, some other mystery there was in it by all likely-hood. For what reason is there which should but induce, and therefore much less enforce us to think, that care of dissimilitude between the people of God and the Heathen Nations about them, was any more the cause of forbidding them to put on garments of sundry stuff, then of charging them withal not to sow their fields with Melling; or that this was any more the cause of forbidding them to eat Swine-flesh, than of charging them withal not to eat the flesh of *Eagles, Hawks*, and the like; wherefore althought the Church of *Rome* were to us, as to *Israel* the *Egyptians* and *Canaanites* were of old; yet doth it not follow that the wisdom of God without respect doth teach us to erect between us and them a partition wall of difference, in such things indifferent as have been hitherto disputed of.

Deut. 14. 7.  
Levit. 11.

Levit. 19. 19.

Deut. 14.  
Lev. 11.

Eph. 2. 14.

7 Neither is the example of the eldest Churches a whit more available to this purpose. Notwithstanding some fault undoubtedly there is in the very resemblance of Idolaters: Were it not some kind of blemish to be like unto Infidels and Heathens, it would not so usually be objected; men would not think it any advantage in the causes of Religion, to be able therewith justly to charge their Adversaries as they do. Wherefore to the end that it may a little more plainly appear, what force this hath, and how far the same extendeth, we are to note how all men are naturally desirous, that they may seem neither to judge, nor to do amiss, because every error and offence is a stain to the beauty of Nature, for which cause it blusheth thereat, but glorieth in the contrary; from whence it riseth, that they which disgrace or depress the credit of others, do it either in both or in one of these. To have been in either directly by a weak and unperfect rule, argueth imbecillity and imperfection. Men being either led by reason, or by imitation of other mens examples; if their persons be odious whose example we chuse to follow, as namely, if we frame our opinions to that which condemned Hereticks think, or direct our actions according to that which is practised and done by them; it lies as an heavy prejudice against us, unless somewhat mightier then their bare example, did move us to think or do the same things with them. Christian men therefore having besides the common light of all men, so great help of heavenly direction from above, together with the Lamps of so bright examples as the Church of God doth yield, it cannot but worthily seem reproachful for us, to leave both the one and the other, to become Disciples unto the most hateful sort that live, to do as they do, only because we see their example before us, and have a delight to follow it. Thus we may therefore safely conclude, that it is not evil simply to concur with the Heathens either in opinion or action: and that conformity with them is onely then a disgrace, when either we follow them in that they think and do amiss, or follow them generally in that they do, without other reason than only the likeing we have to the pattern of their example: which likeing doth intimate a more universal approbation of them than is allowable. *Faustus* the Manichey therefore objecting against the Jews, that they forsook the Idols of the Gentiles; but their Temples, and Oulations, and Altars, and Priest-hoods & all kind of Ministry of holy things, they exercised even as the Gentiles did, ye more superstitiously a great deal; against the Catholick Christians likewise, that between them and the Heathens there was in many things little difference; *From them* (saith *Faustus*) *ye have learned to hold that one onely God is the Author of all, their sacrifices ye have turned into feasts of charity, their Idols into Martyrs, whom ye honour with the like Religious offices unto theirs; The Ghosts of the dead ye appease with Wine and delicates, the festival days of the Nations ye celebrate together with them, and of their kind of life ye have utterly changed nothing. S. Anstines* defence in behalf of both, is, that touching the matters of action, Jews and Catholick Christians were free from the Gentiles faultiness, even in those things which

That the example of the eldest Churches is not herein against us.

T.C. 4. 1. p. 133  
The Councils although they did not observe themselves always in making of decrees this Rule: yet have kept this consideration continually in making of their laws, that they would have the Christians differ from others in their Ceremonies.

Tam. 6. cont.  
Faust. Manich.  
lib. 20. cap. 4.

T. C. l. 3. p. 133.

Also it was decreed in another Council, that they should not deck their houses with

Bay-leaves and green Boughs, because the Pagans did use so; and that they should not rest from their labour those days that the Pagans did, that they should not keep the first day of every month as they did.

T. C. l. 3. p. 133.

*Tertul.* saith, O such he, better is the Religion of the Heathen: for they use no sole unity of the Christians, neither the Lords day, neither &c. but we are not afraid to be called Heathen. T. C. l. 3. p. 133. But having shewed this in general to be the Policy of God first, and of his people afterwards, to put as much difference as can be commodiously between the people of God and others which are wor, I shall not &c.

which were objected as tokens of their agreement with the Gentiles, and concerning their consent in opinion, they did not hold the same with the Gentiles, because Gentiles had so taught, but because Heaven and Earth had so witnessed the same to be truth, that neither the one sort could err in being fully persuaded thereof, nor the other but erre in case they should not consent with them. In things of their own nature indifferent, if either Councils or particular men have at any time with sound judgment disliked conformity between the Church of God and Infidels, the cause thereof hath been somewhat else then onely affectation of dissimilitude. They saw it necessary so to do, in respect of some special accident, which the Church being not always subject unto, hath not still cause to do the like. For example, in the dangerous days of trial,

wherein there was no way for the truth of Jesus Christ to triumph over infidelity, but through the constancy of his Saints, whom yet a natural desire to save themselves from the flame, might peradventure cause to joyn with Pagans in external customs, too far using the same as a cloak to conceale themselves in, and a mist to darken the eyes of Infidels withal: for remedy hereof those laws it might be were provided, which forbade that Christians should deck their houses with Boughs, as the Pagans did use to do, or rest those Festival days whereon the Pagans rested, or celebrate such feasts as were, though not Heathenish, yet such that the simpler sort of Heathens might be beguiled in so thinking them. As for *Tertullians* judgement concerning the rites and Orders of the Church; no man, having judgment, can be ignorant how just exceptions may be taken against it. His opinion touching the Catholick Church was as indifferent, as touching our Church the opinion of them that favour this pretended reformation is. He judged all them who did not Montanize, to be but carnally minded; he judged them still over-abstractly to fawn upon the Heathens, and to curry favour with Infidels; Which as the Catholick Church did well provide that they might not do indeed, so *Tertullian* over-often through discontentment carped injuriously at them, as though they did it even when they were free from such meaning. But if it were so, that either the judgment of those Councils before alledged, or of *Tertullian* himself against Christians, are in no such consideration to be understood as we have mentioned; if it were so, that men are condemned as well of the one as of the other, only for using the Ceremonies of a Religion contrary unto their own, and that this cause is such as ought to prevail no less with us than with them; shall it not follow, that seeing there is still between our Religion and Paganisme the self-same contrariety, therefore we are still no less rebukeable, if we now deck our houses with Boughs, or send New-years gifts unto our Friends, or feast on those days which the Gentiles then did, or sit after prayer as they were accustomed? For so they infer upon the premises, that as great difference as commodiously may be, there should be in all outward Ceremonies between the people of God, and them which are not his people. Again, they teach as hath been declared, that there is not as great a difference as may be between them, except the one do avoid whatsoever Rites and Ceremonies uncommanded of God the other doth embrace. So that generally they teach, that the very difference of spiritual condition it self between the Servants of Christ and others, requirerh such difference in Ceremonies between them, although the one be never so far disjoyned in time or place from the other. But in case the people of God and Belial do chance to be neighbours; then as the danger of infection is greater, so the same difference they say, is thereby made more necessary. In this respect as the Jews were severed from the Heathen, so most especially from the Heathen nearest them. And in the same respect we, which ought to differ howsoever from the Church of Rome, are now, they say, by reason of our nearness more bound to differ from them in Ceremonies then from Turkey. A strange kind of speech unto Christian ears, and such, as I hope, they themselves do acknowledge unadvisedly uttered. We are not so much to fear infection from Turkey as from Papists. What of that? we must remember that by conforming rather our selves in that respect to Turkey, we should be spreaders of a worse infection into others, then any we are likely to draw from Papists by our conformity with them in ceremonies. If they did hate, as Turkey do, the Christian; or as Canaanites did of old the Jewish Religion even in gross; the circumstance of local nearness in them unto us, might haply inforce in

in us a duty of greater separation from them then from those other metioned. But forasmuch as Papists are much in Christ-neerer unto us then Turks, is there any reasonable man, trow you, but will judge it meeter that our Ceremonies of Christian Religion should be Popish that Turkish, or Heathenish? Especially considering that we were not brought to dwell amongst them (as *Israel* in *Canaan*) having not been of them. For even a very part of them we were. And when God did by his good Spirit put it into our hearts, first, to reform our selves (whence grew our separation) and then by all good means to seek also their reformation; had we not onely cut off their corruptions, but also estranged our selves from them in things indifferent; who seeth not how greatly prejudicial this might have been to so good a cause, and what occasion it had given them to think (to their greater obduration in evil) that through a froward or wanton desire of innovation, we did constrainedly those things, for which conscience was pretended? Howsoever the case doth stand, as *Juda* had been rather to choose conformity in things indifferent with *Israel*, when they were nearest opposites, then with the farthest removed Pagans: So we in like case, much rather with Papists than with *Turks*: I might add further, for more full and complete answer, so much concerning the large odds between the case of the eldest Churches in regard of those Heathens, and ours in respect of the Church of *Rome*, that very Cavillation it self should be satisfied, and have no shift to fly unto.

8. But that no one thing may detain us over-long, I return to their reasons against our conformity with that Church. That extreme dissimilitude which they urge upon us, is now commended as our best and safest policy for establishment of sound Religion. The ground of which politicke Position is, that Evils must be cured by their contraries; and therefore the cure of the Church infected with the poison of Antichristianity, must be done by that which is thereunto as contrary as may be. A medled estate of the orders of Gospel, and the Ceremonies of Popery, is not the best way to banish Popery. We are contrariwise of opinion, that he which will perfectly recover a sick, and restore a diseased body unto health, must not endeavour so much to bring it, to a state of simple contrariety, as of fit proportion in contrariety unto those evils which are to be cured. He that will take away extreme heat, by setting the body in extremity of cold, shall undoubtedly remove the disease, but together with it the diseased too. The first thing therefore in skillful cures, is the knowledge of the part affected; the next is of the evil which doth affect it; the last is not onely of the kind, but also of the measure of contrary things whereby to remove it. They which measure Religion by dislike of the Church of *Rome*, think every man so much the more sound, by how much he can make the corruptions thereof to seem more large. And therefore some there are, namely the *Arrians* in reformed Churches of *Poland*, which imagine the Canker to have eaten so far into the very bones and Marrow of the Church of *Rome*, as if it had not so much as a sound belief; no not concerning God himself, but that the very belief of the Trinity were a part of Antichristian corruption; and that the wonderful providence of God did bring to pass, that the Bishop of the Sea of *Rome* should be famous for his tripple Crown; a sensible mark whereby the world might know him to be that mystical beast spoken of in the Revelation, to be that great and notorious Antichrist in no one respect so much, as in this, that he maintaineth the Doctrine of the Trinity. Wisdom therefore and skill is requisite to know, what parts are found in that Church, and what corrupted. Neither is it to all men apparent which complain of unsound parts, with what kind of unsoundness every such part is possessed. They can say, that in Doctrine, in Discipline, in Prayers, in Sacraments, the Church of *Rome* hath (as it hath indeed) very foul and gross corruptions: the nature whereof notwithstanding because they have not for the most part exact skill and knowledge to discern, they think that amidst many times which is not, and the salve of reformation they mightily call for; but where & what the sores are which need it, as they wot full little, so they think it not greatly material to search; such mens contentment must be wrought by stratagem: the usual method of art is not for them. But with a voice that profess more than ordinary and common knowledg of good from evil, with them that are able to put a difference between things naught, and things indifferent in the Church of *Rome*, we are yet at controversie about the manner of removing that which is naught: whether it may not be perfectly helpt, unless that also which

That it is not our best policy for the establishment of sound Religion, to have in these things no agreement with the Church of *Rome* being unsound.

T. C. L. p. 132. Common reason also doth teach that contraries are cured by their contraries. Now Christianity and Antichristianity, the Gospel and Popery, be contrary: and therefore Antichristianity must be cured, not by it self, but by that which is (as much as may be) contrary unto it.



which is indifferent be cut off with it, so far till no rite or ceremony remain which the Church of *Rome* hath, being not found in the Word of God. If we think this too extreme, they reply, that to draw men from great excess, it is not amiss though we

T. C. l. 1. p. 131. If a man would bring a drunken man to sobriety, the best and nearest way is to carry him as far from his excess in drink as may be: and if a man could not keep a mean, it were better to fault in prescribing less than he should drink, than to fault in giving him more than he ought. As we see, to bring a stick which is crooked to be straight, we do not only bow it so far until it come to be straight, but we bend it so far until we make it to be so crooked on the other side, as it was before of the first side, to this end that at the last it may stand straight, and as it were in the mid way between both the crooks.

use them unto some what less than is competent; and that a crooked stick is not straightened, unless it be bent as far on the clean contrary side, that so it may settle it self at the length in a middle estate of evenness between both. But how can these comparisons stand them in any stead? When they urge us to extreme opposition against the Church of *Rome*, do they mean we should be drawn unto it only for a time, and afterwards return to a mediocrity? or was it the purpose of those reformation

med Churches, which utterly abolished all Popish Ceremonies, to come in the end back again to the middle point of evenness, and moderation? Then have we conceived amiss of their meaning. For we have always thought their opinion to be, that utter inconformity with the Church of *Rome* was not an extremity whereunto we should be drawn for a time, but the very mediocrity it self wherein they meant we should ever continue. Now by these comparisons it seemeth clean contrary, that howsoever they have bent themselves at first to an extreme contrariety against the Romish Church, yet therein they will continue no longer, then only till such time as some more moderate course for establishment of the Church may be concluded. Yea, albeit this were not at the first their intent, yet surely now there is great cause to lead them unto it. They have seen that experience of the former Policy; which may cause the authors of it to hang down their heads. When *Germany* had stricken off that which appeared corrupt in the Doctrine of the Church of *Rome*, but seemed nevertheless in Discipline still to retain therewith very great conformity: *France*, by that rule of policy, which hath been before mentioned, took away the Popish orders which *Germany* did retain. But process of time hath brought more light into the World; whereby men perceiving that they of the Religion in *France* have also retained some orders which were before in the Church of *Rome*, and are not commanded in the Word of God; there hath arisen a sect in England, which following still the very self-same Rule of policy, seeketh to reform even the *French* reformation, and purge out from thence also dregs of Popery. These have not taken as yet such root that they are able to establish any thing. But if they had, what would spring out of their stock, and how far the unquiet wit of man might be carried with rules of such policy, God doth know. The trial which we have lived to see, may somewhat teach us what posterity is to fear. But our Lord, of his infinite mercy, avert whatsoever evil our swervings on the one hand or on the other may threaten unto the state of his Church.

9. That the Church of *Rome* doth hereby take occasion to blaspheme, and to say our Religion is not able to stand of it self, unless it lean upon the staff of their Ceremonies, is not a matter of so great moment, that it did need to be objected, or doth deserve to receive answer. The name of blasphemy in this place, is like the shoe of *Hercules* on a child's foot. If the Church of *Rome* do use any such kind of silly exprobration, it is no such ugly thing to the ear, that we should think the honour and credit of our Religion to receive thereby any great wound. They which hereof make so perillous a matter, do seem to imagine, that we have erected of late a frame of some new Religion; the furniture whereof we should not have borrowed from our Enemies, lest they relieving us, might afterwards laugh and gibe at our poverty: whereas in truth the Ceremonies which we have taken from such as were before us, are not things that belong to this or that sect, but they are the ancient rites and customs of the Church of Christ; whereof our selves being a part, we have the self-same interest in them which our Fathers before us had, from whom the same are descended unto us. Again, in case we had been so much beholden privately unto them, doth the reputation of one Church stand by saying unto another, *I need thee not*? If some should be so vain and impotent, as to mar a benefit with reproachful upbraiding, where at the least they suppose themselves to have bestowed some good turn; yet surely a wise bodies part it were not, to put out his fire, because his fond and foolish Neighbour, from whom he borrowed peradventure wherewith to kindle it, might

That we are not so abolish our Ceremonies either because Papists upbraid us as having taken from them, or for that they are said hereby to conceive, I know not what great hopes.

T. C. l. 3 p. 71. By using of these Ceremonies, the Papists take occasion to blaspheme, saying that our Religion cannot stand by it self, and is it le upon the staff of their Ceremonies.

might haply cast him therewith in the text, saying, Were it not for me thou wouldst freeze, and not be able to heat thy self. As for that other argument derived from the secret affection of Papiſts, with whom our conformity in certain Ceremonies is said to put them in great hope, that their whole Religion in time will have re-entrance; and therefore none are so clamorous amongst us for the observation of these ceremonies, as Papiſts and such as Papiſts suborn to speak for them: whereby it clearly appeareth how much they rejoyce, how much they triumph in these things; our answer hereunto is still the same, that the benefit we have by such ceremonies overweigh even this also. No man which is not exceeding partial can well deny, but that there is most just cause wherefore we should be offended greatly at the Church of Rome. Notwithstanding at such times as we are to deliberate for our selves, the freer our minds are from all disordered affections, the sounder and better is our judgement. When we are in a fretting mood at the Church of Rome, and with that angry disposition enter into any cogitation of the order and rites of our Church; taking particular survey of them, we are sure to have always one eye fixed upon the countenance of our Enemies, and according to the blith or heavy aspect thereof, our other eye sheweth some other suitable token either of dislike or approbation towards our own orders. For the rule of our judgement in such case being onely that of Homer, *This is the thing which our Enemies would have*; what they seem contented with, even for that very cause we reject; and there is nothing but it pleaseth us much the better, if we espie that it gauleth them. Miserable were the state and condition of that Church, the weighty affairs whereof should be ordered by those deliberations wherein such an humour as this were predominant. We have most heartily to thank God therefore, that thay amongst us, to whom the first consultations of causes of this kind fell, were men which aiming at another mark, namely, the glory of God and the good of this his Church, took that which they judged thereunto necessary, not rejecting any good or convenient thing, onely because the Church of Rome might perhaps like it. If we have that which is meet and right, although they be glad, we are not to envy them this their solace; we do not think it a duty of ours, to be in every such thing their tormentors. And whereas it is said, that Poperie for want of this utter extirpation hath in some places taken root and flourished again, but hath not been able to re-establish it self in any place, after provision made against it by utter evacuation of all Romish Ceremonies, and therefore as long as we hold any thing like unto them, we put them in some more hope, than if all weretaken away, as we deny not but this may be true; so being of two evils to chooſe the leſs, we hold it better that the friends and favourers of the Church of Rome, should be in some kind of hope to have a corrupt religion restored, then both we and they conceive just fear, lest under colour of rooting out Poperie, the most effectual means to bear up the state of Religion be removed, and so away made either for Paganisme, or for extreme Barbarisme to enter. If desire of weakning the hope of others should turn us away from the course we have taken; how much more the care of preventing our own fear, with-hold us from that we are urged unto? Especially seeing that our own fear we know, but we are not so certain what hope the Rites and Orders of our Church have bred in the hearts of others. For it is no sufficient Argument therefore to say, that in maintaining and urging these Ceremonies, none are so clamorous as Papiſts, and they whom Papiſts suborn; this speech being more hard to justify than the former, and so their proof more doubtful then the thing it self, which they prove. He that were certain that this is true, must have marked who they be that speak for Ceremonies; he must have noted, who amongst them do speak offeneſt, or is most earnest: he must have been both acquainted thorowly with the Religion of such, and also privy what conferences or compacts are passed in secret between them and others; which kinds of notice are not wont to be vulgar and common. Yet they which allege this, would have it taken as a thing that needeth no proof, a thing which all men know and see. And if so be it were granted them as true, what gain

T. C. L. 3. p. 177.  
To prove the  
Papiſts tri-  
umph and joy  
in these things  
I alledge fur-  
ther that there  
are none  
which make  
such clamors  
for these cere-  
monies, as the  
Papiſts and  
those which  
they suborn.

new 2d. 11. 11.  
Papiſts 11. 11.

T. C. L. 3. p. 179. Thus they conceiving hope of having the rest of their Poperie in the end, it causeth them to be more frozen in their wickedness, &c. For not the cause but the occasions also ought to be taken away, &c. Although let the Reader judge, whether they have cause given to hope, that the tale of Poperie yet remayning, they shall the easier hale in the whole body after: considering also what Master Suer noteth, that where these things have been left, there Poperie have returned: but on the other part, in places which hath been cleansed of these cregs, it hath not been seen that it hath had any entrance.

they

Eccles. diſc. 19.

The grief  
which, they  
say, gould,

Brethren conceive in regard of such Ceremonies as we have common with the Church of Rome. T. 1. l. 3. p. 180. There be numbers which have Antichristianisme in such detestation, that they cannot without grief of mind behold them. And afterward, such godly Brethren are not easily to be grieved, which they seem to be, when they are thus Martyred in their minds for Ceremonies, which (to speak the best of them) are unprofitable.

T. 1. l. 1. p. 171.  
All ought the  
corruptions in  
them shew out  
straight to the  
heart, yet as  
gentle poysons  
they consume  
by little and  
little.

they by it? Sundry of them that be Popish, are eager in maintenance of Ceremonies. Is it so strange a matter to find a good thing furthered by ill men of a sinister intent and purpose, whose forwardness is not therefore a bridle to such as favour the same cause with a better and sincere meaning? They that seek, as they say, the removing of all Popish Orders out of the Church, and reckon the state of Bishops in the number of those orders, do (I doubt not) presume that the cause which they prosecute, is holy. Notwithstanding it is their own ingenuous acknowledgment, that even this very cause which they term so often by an excellency, *The Lords cause, is, gratissima, most acceptable unto some which hope for prey and spoile by it, and that our Age hath store of such, and that such are the very Sellars of Dionysius the famous Atheist.* Now if hereupon we should upbraid them with irreligious, as they do us, with superstitious favours; if we should follow them in their own kind of pleading, and say, that the most clamorous for this pretended reformation, are either Atheists, or else Proctors suborned by Atheists; the answer which herein they would make unto us, let them apply unto themselves, and there an end. For they must not forbid us to presume our cause in defence of our Church-orders to be as good as theirs against them, till the contrary be made manifest to the World.

10. In the mean while sorry we are, that any good and godly mind should be grieved with that which is done. But to remedy their grief, lyeth not so much in us as in themselves. They do not wish to be made glad with the hurt of the Church: and to remove all out of the Church, whereat they shew themselves to be sorrowful, would be, as we are perswaded, hurtful, if not pernicious thereunto. Till they be able to perswade the contrary, they must and will, I doubt not, find out some other good

mean to cheer up themselves. Amongst which means the example of Geneva may serve for one. Have not they the old Popish custome of using God-fathers and God-mothers in Baptisme; the old Popish custome of administering the blessed Sacrament of the holy Eucharist with wafer-cakes? These things the godly there can digest. Wherefore should not the godly here learn to do the like, both in them and in the rest of the like nature? Some further mean peradventure it might be to assuage their grief, if so be they did consider the revenge they take on them, which have been, as they interpret it, the workers of their continuance in so great grief so long. For if the maintenance of Ceremonies be a corrosive to such as oppugne them; undoubtedly to such as maintain them, it can be no great pleasure, when they behold how that which they reverence is oppugned. And therefore they that judge themselves Martyrs, when they are grieved, should think withal what they are whom they grieve. For we are still to put them in mind, that the cause doth make no difference; for that it must be presumed as good at the least on our part as on theirs, till it be in the end decided, who have stood for truth, and who for error. So that till then the most effectual medicine, and withal the most sound, to ease their grief, must not be (in our opinion) the taking away of those things whereat they are grieved, but the altering of that perswasion which they have concerning the same. For this we therefore both pray and labour; the more because we are also perswaded, that it is but conceit in them to think, that those *Romish* Ceremonies, whereof we have hitherto spoken, are like leproous clothes, infectious unto the Church; or like soft and gentle Poysons, the venome whereof being insensibly pernicious, worketh death, and yet is never felt working. Thus they say: but because they say it only, and the World hath not as yet had so great experience of their art, in curing the diseases of the Church, that the bare authority of their word should perswade in a cause so weighty; they may not think much if it be required at their hands to shew; First, by what means so deadly infection can grow from similitude between us and the Church of Rome, in these things indifferent: Secondly, for that it were infinite, if the Church would provide against every such evil as may come to pass, it is not sufficient that they shew possibility of dangerous event, unless there appear some likelihood also of the same to follow in us, except we prevent it. Nor is this enough, unless it be moreover made plain, that there is no good and sufficient way of prevention, but by evacuating



existing clean, and by emptying the Church of every such Rite and Ceremony, as is presently called in question. Till this be done, their good affection towards the safety of the Church is acceptable, but the way they prescribe us to preserve it by, must rest in suspense. And lest hereat they take occasion to turn upon us the speech of the Prophet *Jeremy* used against *Babylon*, *Behold we have done our endeavour to cure the diseases of Babylon*, but she through her wilfulness doth rest uncured: let them consider into what straits the Church might drive it self, in being guided by this their counsel. Their axiome is, that the sound beleiving Church of *Jesus Christ*, may not be like Heretical Churches in any of those indifferent things, which men make choice of, and do not take by prescript appointment of the Word of God. In the word of God the use of Bread is prescribed, as a thing without which the Eucharist may not be celebrated: but as for the kind of bread, it is not denyed to be a thing indifferent. Being indifferent of it self, we are by this axiome of theirs to avoid the use of unleavened Bread in the Sacrament, because such bread the Church of *Rome* being Heretical useth. But doth not the self-same axiome bar us even from leavened Bread also, which the Church of the *Greeks* useth; the opinions whereof are in a number of things the same, for which we condemn the Church of *Rome*; and in some things erroneous, where the Church of *Rome* is acknowledged to be sound: as namely in the Article of the Holy Ghosts proceeding? and lest here they should say that because the Greek Church is farther off, and the Church of *Rome* nearer, we are in that respect rather to use that which the Church of *Rome* useth not; let them imagine a reformed Church in the City of *Venice*, where a Greek Church and Popish both are. And when both these are equally near, let them consider what the third shall do. Without either leavened or unleavened bread, it can have no Sacrament: the word of God doth tye it to neither; and their axiome doth exclude it from both. If this constrain them, as it must, to grant that their axiome is not to take any place, save in those things onely where the Church hath larger scope; it resteth that they search out some stronger reason then they have as yet alleadged; otherwise they constrain not us to think that the Church is tied unto any such rule or axiome, no not then when she hath the widest field to walk in, and the greater store of choice.

11 Against such Ceremonies generally as are the same in the Church of *England* and of *Rome*, we see what hath been hitherto alleadged. Albeit therefore we do not find the one Churches having of such things, to be sufficient cause why the other should not have them: nevertheless in case it may be proved, that amongst the number of Rites and Orders common unto both, there are particulars, the use whereof is utterly unlawful, in regard of some special bad and noysome quality; there is no doubt but we ought to relinquish such Rites and orders, what freedom soever we have to retain the other still. As therefore we have heard their general exception against all those things, which being not commanded in the Word of God, were first received in the Church of *Rome*, and from thence have been derived into ours, so it followeth that now we proceed unto certain kinds of them, as being excepted against, not onely for that they are in the Church of *Rome*, but are besides either *Jewish* or abused unto Idolatry, and so grown scandalous. The Church of *Rome* they say, being ashamed of the simplicity of the Gospel, did almost out of all Religions take what soever had any fair and gorgeous shew, borrowing in that respect from the *Jews* sundry of their abolished Ceremonies. Thus by foolish and ridiculous imitation, all their Massing furniture almost they took from the Law, lest having an Altar and a Priest, they should want Vestments for their Stage; so that whatsoever we have in common with the Church of *Rome*, if the same be of this kind, we ought to remove it. *Constantine the Emperor* speaking of the keeping of the Feast of Easter, saith, That it is an unworthy thing to have any thing common with that most spiteful company of the *Jews*. And a little after he saith, That it is most absurd and against reason, that the *Jews* should vaunt and glory that the *Christians* could not keep those things without their Doctrine. And in another place it is said after this sort; It is convenient so to order the matter, that we have nothing common with that Nation. The Council of *Laodicea*, which was afterward confirmed by the first general Council, decreed that the *Christians* should not take unleavened bread of the *Jews*, nor communicate with their impiety. For the easier manifestation of truth in this point, two things there are which must be considered, namely the causes wherefore the Church should decline from *Jewish* Ceremonies; and how far it ought so to do. One cause is, that the *Jews* were the deadliest and spitefullest Enemies of

1er. 51. 5.

Their exception on against such Ceremonies as we have received from the Church of *Rome*, that Church having taken them from the *Jews*.

*Eccles. disci.* fol. 98. And *T. C. l. 3. p. 187.* Many of these Popish Ceremonies fault by reason of the pomp in them: where they should be agreeable to the simplicity of the Gospel of *Christ* crucified.

*T. C. l. 1. p. 132.* *Engl. B. 3. c. 17.* *Serra. lib. 1. c. 9.* *So. 1. Council.* *Load. Can. 38.*

Christianity that were in the world, and in this respect their Orders so far to be shunned, as we have already set down in handling the matter of Heathenish Ceremonies: For no Enemies being so venomous against Christ as *Jews*, they were of all other most odious, and by that mean least to be used as fit Church patterns for imitation. Another cause is the solemn abrogation of the *Jews* ordinances; which ordinances for us to resume, were to check our Lord himself which hath disannulled them. But how far this second cause doth extend, it is not on all sides fully agreed upon. And touching those things whereunto it reacheth not, although there be small cause wherefore the Church should frame it self to the *Jews* example, in respect of their persons which are most hateful; yet God himself having been the Author of their laws, herein they are (notwithstanding the former consideration) still worthy to be honoured, and to be followed above others, as much as the state of things will bear. Jewish Ordinances had some things natural, and of the perpetuity of those things no man doubteth. That which was positive, we likewise know to have been by the coming of Christ partly necessary not to be kept, and partly indifferent to be kept or not. Of the former kind Circumcision and Sacrifice were. For this point Stephen was accused; and the Evidence which his accusers brought against him in judgement was, *This man ceaseth not to speak blasphemous words against this holy place and the law, for we have heard him say that this Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall change the Ordinances that Moses gave us.* True it is that this Doctrine was then taught, which unbelievers condemning for blasphemy, did therein commit that which they did condemn. The Apostles notwithstanding from whom Stephen had received it, did not so teach the abrogation, nor of those things which were necessarily to cease, but that even the *Jews* being Christians, might for a time continue in them. And therefore in Jerusalem the first Christian Bishop not circumcised was *Mark*, and he not Bishop till the days of *Adrian* the Emperour, after the overthrow of Jerusalem, there having been fifteen Bishops before him which were all of the Circumcision. The Christian *Jews* did think at the first not only themselves, but the Christian Gentiles also bound, and that necessarily, to observe the whole law. There went forth certain of the Sect of *Pharisees* which did believe, and they coming unto Antioch, taught that it was necessary for the Gentiles to be circumcised, and to keep the Law of *Moses*. Whereupon there grew dissention, *Paul* and *Barnabas* disputing against them. The determination of the Council held at Jerusalem concerning this matter, was finally this. Touching the Gentiles which believe, we have written and determined that they observe no such thing; Their protestation by Letters is, *For as much as we have heard that certain which departed from us have troubled you with words, and cumbered your minds, saying, Ye must be circumcised and keep the Law; know, that we gave them no such commandment.* *Paul* therefore continued still teaching the Gentiles, not only that they were not bound to observe the Laws of *Moses*, but that observation of those laws which were necessary to be abrogated, was in them altogether unlawful. In which point his Doctrine was misreported, as though he had every where Preached this, not only concerning the Gentiles, but also touching the *Jews*. Wherefore coming unto *James* and the rest of the Clergie at Jerusalem, they told him plainly of it, saying, *Thou seest, brother, how many thousand Jews they are which believe, and they are all zealous of the law; Now they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are amongst the Gentiles, to forsake Moses, and sayest that they ought not to circumcise their children, neither to live after the customs.* And hereupon they gave him counsel to make it apparent in the eyes of all men, that those flying reports were untrue, and that himself being a Jew, kept the Law, even as they did. In some things therefore we see the Apostles did teach, that there ought not to be conformity between the Christian *Jews* and Gentiles. How many things this law of inconformity did comprehend, there is no need we should stand to examine. This general is true, that the Gentiles were not made conformable unto the *Jews*, in that which was necessary to cease at the coming of Christ. Touching things positive which might either cease or continue as occasion should require, the Apostles tending the zeal of the *Jews*, thought it necessary to bind even the Gentiles for a time to abstain as the *Jews* did, from things offered unto Idols, from blood, from strangled. These Decrees were every where delivered unto the Gentiles to be straightly observed and kept. In the other matters where the Gentiles were free, and the *Jews* in their own opinion still tied the Apostles Doctrine unto the *Jews*, was,

Acts 6. 13, 14.

Vide Niciph. l. 2.  
c. 25. Sulpicius &  
Sever. p. 149. in  
Edit. Plant.

Acts 15.

Acts 21. 25.

Acts 15. 24.

Acts 11.

Acts 15. 28.

Acts 16. 4.

Rom. 14. 20.

was, *Condemn not the Gentile*; unto the Gentile, *Despise not the Jew*: the one sort they warned to take heed that scrupulosity did not make them rigorous; in giving unadvised sentence against their brethren which were free; the other, that they did not become scandalous, by abusing their liberty and freedom to the offence of their weak Brethren which were scrupulous. From hence therefore two conclusions there are, which may evidently be drawn; the first, that whatsoever conformity of positive laws the Apostles did bring in between the Churches of the Jews and Gentiles, it was in those things onely, which might either cease or continue a shorter or longer time, as occasion did most require; the second, that they did not impose upon the Churches of the Gentiles, any part of the Jews Ordinances with bond of necessary and perpetual observation (as we all both by doctrine and practice acknowledge) but onely in respect of the conveniency and fitness for the present state of the Church as then it stood. The words of the Councils Decree concerning the Gentiles are; *It seemed good to the Holy Ghost and to us, to lay upon you no more burthen, saving onely those things of necessity, abstinence from Idol-offerings, from strangled, and blood, and from fornication*. So that in other things positive which the coming of Christ did not necessarily extinguish, the Gentiles were left altogether free. Neither ought it to seem unreasonable, that the Gentiles should necessarily be bound and tied to Jewish Ordinances, so far forth as that decree importeth. For to the Jew, who knew that their difference from other Nations which were Aliens and strangers from God, did especially consist in this, that Gods people had positive Ordinances given to them of God himself; it seemed marvellous hard, that the Christian Gentiles should be incorporated into the same Commonwealth with Gods own chosen people, and be subject to no part of his Statutes, more then onely the Law of Nature, which Heathens count themselves bound unto. It was an opinion constantly received amongst the Jews, that God did deliver to the sons of *Noah* seven Precepts: namely, to live in same form of Regiment under; First, publique Laws; Secondly, to serve and call upon the Name of God: Thirdly, to shun Idolatry: Fourthly, not to suffer effusion of blood: Fifthly, to abhor all unclean knowledge in the flesh: Sixthly, to commit no Rapine: Seventhly, and finally, not to eat of any living Creature whereof the blood was *not* first let out. If therefore the Gentiles would be exempted from the Law of *Moses*, yet it might seem hard they should also cast off even those things positive which were observed before *Moses*, and which were not of the same kinde with Laws that were necessarily to cease. And peradventure hereupon the Council saw it expedient to determine, that the Gentiles should according unto the third, the seventh and the fifth of those Precepts, abstain from things sacrificed unto Idols, from strangled and blood, and from fornication. The rest the Gentiles did of their own accord observe, Nature leading them thereunto. And did not Nature also teach them to abstain from fornication? No doubt it did. Neither can we with reason think, that as that as the former two ore positive; so likewise this, being meant as the Apostle doth otherwise usually understand it. But very Marriage within a number of degrees, being not onely by the Law of *Moses*, but also by the Law of the sons of *Noah* (for so they took it) an unlawful discovery of nakedness; this discovery of nakedness by unlawful Mariages, such as *Moses* in the Law reckoneth up, I think it for mine own part more probable to have been meant in the words of that Canon, then fornication according unto the sense of the Law of Nature. Words must be taken according to the matter whereof they are uttered. The Apostles command to abstain from blood. Construe this according to the Law of Nature, and it will seem that Homicide onely is forbidden. But construe it in reference to the law of the Jews about which the question was, and it shall easily appear to have a clean other sense, and in any mans judgement a truer, when we expound it of eating, and not of shedding blood: So if we speak of fornication, he that knoweth no law but onely the law of Nature, must needs make thereof a narrower construction, then he which measureth the same by a law wherein sundry kindes even of Conjugal Copulation are prohibited as impure, unclean, dishonest. Saint *Paul* himself doth term incestuous Marriage, Fornication. If any do rather think that the Christian Gentiles themselves through the loose and corrupt Custome of those times, took simple Fornication for no sinne, and were in that respect offensive unto believing Jewes which by the Law had been better taught; our proposing of another conjecture, is unto theirs no prejudice. Some thiags therefore we see there were, wherein

*Lib. qui Seders  
Olam inscribi-  
tur.*

א תנין  
ב כרתהש  
ג נא  
ד שכיחות  
ה ידורה  
ו חנה  
ז אהרן

Heb. 13. 4.  
1 Cor. 5. 11.  
Gal. 5. 19.

Levit. 18. 4

1 Cor. 5. 11.



Leo in i. m.  
m. c. s. Sept.  
Ser. 9.

Terul. de pra-  
script. aduers.  
heret.

T. C. L. i. p. 191.  
What an abu-  
sing also is it to  
affirm the  
mangling of  
the Gospels &  
Epistles to  
have been  
brought into  
the Church by  
godly and  
learned men?  
T. C. L. i. p. 216.  
Seeing that  
the Office and  
Function of  
Priests was af-  
ter our Savi-  
our Christs  
Ascension,  
taught and  
ungodly; the  
name whereby  
they were cal-  
led which did  
exercise that  
ungodly Fun-  
ction, cannot  
be otherwise  
taken than in  
the evil part.

the Gentiles were forbidden to be like unto the Jews; some things wherein they were commanded not to be unlike. Again, some things also there were, wherein no Law of God did let, but that they might be either like or unlike; as occasion should require. And unto this purpose Leo saith, *Apostolical Ordinance (beloved) knowing that our Lord Jesus Christ came not into this world to undo the Law, but in such sort distinguished the Myteries of the Old Testament, that certain of them it hath chosen out to benefit Evangelical knowledge withal, and for that purpose appointed that those things which before were Jewish, might now be Christian Customs.* The cause why the Apostles did thus conform the Christians as much as might be, according to the pattern of the Jews, was to rein them in by this mean the more, and to make them cleave the better. The Church of Christ hath had in no one thing so many and so contrary occasions of dealing, as about Judaism; some having thought the whole Jewish Law wicked and damnable in it self; some not condemning it as the former sort absolutely, have notwithstanding judged it either sooner necessary to be abrogated, or further unlawful to be observed then truth can bear; some of scrupulous simplicity urging perpetual and universal observation of the Law of Moses necessary, as the Christian Jews at the first in the Apostles times; some as Hereticks, holding the same no less even after the contrary determination set down by consent of the Church at Jerusalem; finally, some being herein resolute through meer infidelity, and with open profest enmity against Christ, as unbelieving Jews. To controul these disorders of the Law and Prophets, such as Marcionites and Manichees were, the Church in her Liturgies hath intermingled with Readings out of the New Testament, Lessons taken out of the Law and Prophets; whereunto Tertullian alluding, saith of the Church of Christ, *It intermingleth with Evangelical and Apostolical Writings, the Law and the Prophets; and from thence it drinketh in that Faith which with Water it sealeth, clobeth with the Spirit, nourisheth with the Eucharist, with Martyrdom setteth forward.* They would have wondered in those times to hear, that any man being not a Favourer of Heresie, should term this by way of disdain, *mangling of the Gospels and Epistles.* They which honour the Law as an Image of the Wisdom of God himself, are notwithstanding to know that the same had an end in Christ. But what? Was the Law so abolished with Christ, that after his Ascension the Office of Priests became immediately wicked, and the very name hateful, as importing the exercise of an ungodly function? No, as long as the glory of the Temple continued, and till the time of that final desolation was accomplished, the very Christian Jews did continue with their Sacrifices and other parts of Legal Service. That very Law therefore which our Saviour was to abolish, did not so soon become unlawful to be observed as some imagine; nor was it afterward unlawful so far, that the very name of Altar, of Priests, of Sacrifice it self, should be banished out of the World. For though God do now hate Sacrifice, whether it be Heathenish or Jewish, so that we cannot have the same things which they had, but with impiety; yet unless there be some greater let then the onely evacuation of the Law of Moses, the names themselves may (I hope) be retained without sin, in respect of that proportion which things established by our Saviour have unto them, which by him are abrogated. And so through all the writings of the ancient Fathers we see that the words which were, do continue; the onely difference is, that whereas before they had a literal, they now have a metaphorical use, and are as so many notes of remembrance unto us, that what they did signifie in the letter, is accomplished in the truth. And as no man can deprive the Church of this liberty, to use names whereunto the Law was accustomed; so neither are we generally forbidden the use of things which the Law hath, though it neither command us any particulars, as it did the Jews a number; and the weightiest which it did command them, are unto us in the Gospel prohibited. Touching such as through simplicity of error did urge universal and perpetual observation of the Law of Moses at the first, we have spoken already. Against Jewish Hereticks and false Apostles teaching afterwards the self same, S. Paul in every Epistle commonly either disputeth or giveth warning. Jews that were zealous for the Law, but wiccial Infidels in respect of Christianity, and to the name of Jesus Christ most spitefull enemies, did while they flourished no less persecute the Church then Heathens, and after their estate was overthrowen, they were not that way so much to be feared. Howbeit, because they had their Synagogues in every famous City almost throughout the World, and by that means great opportunity to withdraw from the Christian Faith, which to do thy

they spared no labour; this gave the Church occasion to make sundry Laws against them. As in the Council of Laodicea, *The Festival Precepts which Jews or Hereticks use to send must not be received, nor Holy-days solemnized in their company.* Again, *From the Jews men ought not to receive their unleavened bread, nor to communicate with their impieties.* Which Council was afterwards indeed confirmed by the next general Council. But what was the true sense or meaning both of the one and the other? Were Christians here forbidden to communicate in unleavened bread, because the Jews did so, being Enemies of the Church? He which attentively shall weigh the words, will suspect that they rather forbid communion with Jews, then imitation of them: much more, if with these two decrees be compared a third in the Council of Constantinople 3. *Let no man either of the Clergy or Laity eat the unleavened of the Jews, nor enter into any familiarity with them, nor send for them in sickness, nor take physick at their hands, nor as much as go into the Bath with them. If any do otherwise, being a Clergy man, let him be deposed; if being a Lay person, let excommunication be his punishment.* If these Canons were any argument, that they which made them, did utterly condemn similitude between the Christians and Jews, in things indifferent appertaining unto Religion, either because the Jews were enemies unto the Church, or else for that their ceremonies were abrogated; these reasons had been as strong and effectual against their keeping the Feast of Easter on the same day the Jews kept theirs, and not according to the custom of the west Church. For so they did from the first beginning till *Constantine's* time. For in these two things the east and west Churches did interchangeably both confront the Jews, and concur with them: the west Church using unleavened bread, as the Jews in their Passover did, but differing from them in the day whereon they kept the Feast of Easter; contrariwise, the east Church celebrating the Feast of Easter on the same day with the Jews, but not using the same kinde of bread which they did. Now if be so the east Church in using leavened bread had done well, either for that the Jews were enemies to the Church, or because Jewish ceremonies were abrogated, how should we think but that *Victor* the Bishop of Rome, (whom all judicious men do in that behalf disallow) did well to be so vehement and fierce in drawing them to the like dissimilitude for the Feast of Easter? Again, if the west Churches had in either of those two respects affected dissimilitude with the Jews in the Feast of Easter, what reason had they to draw the eastern Church herein unto them, which reason did not enforce them to frame themselves unto it in the ceremony of leavened bread? difference in Rites should breed no controversy between one Church and another; but if controversy be once bred, it must be ended. The Feast of Easter being therefore litigious in the days of *Constantine*, who honored of all other Churches most the Church of Rome, which Church was the Mother from whose breasts he had drawn that food, which gave him nourishment to eternal life; with agreement was necessary, and yet impossible, unless the one part were yielded unto; his desire was, that of the two, the eastern Church should rather yield. And to this end he used sundry persuasive speeches. When *Stephen* the Bishop of Rome going about to shew what the Catholick Church should do, had alledged what the Hereticks themselves did, namely, that they received such as came unto them, and offered not to baptize them anew. *S. Cyprian* being of a contrary mind to him about the matter at that time in question, which was, *Whether Hereticks converted ought to be rebaptized, yea or no*, answered the allegation of Pope *Stephen* with exceeding great stomach, saying, *To this degree of wretchedness the Church of God and Spouse of Christ is now come, that her ways she frameth to the example of Hereticks; that to celebrate the Sacraments which heavenly instruction hath delivered, lights it self doth borrow from darkness, and Christians do that which Antichrists do.* Now albeit *Constantine* have done that to further a better cause, which *Cyprian* did to countenance a worse, namely, the rebaptization of Hereticks; and have taken advantage at the odiousness of the Jews, as *Cyprian* of Hereticks, because the eastern Church kept their Feast of Easter always the fourteenth day of the month as the Jews did, what day of the week soever it fell; or howsoever *Constantine* did take occasion in the handling of that cause to say, *It is unworthy to have any thing common with that spiteful Nation of the Jews; shall every motive argument used in such kinde of conferences, be made a rule for other still to conclude the like by, concerning all things of like nature, when as probable inducements may lead them to the contrary? Let both this and other allegations suitable unto it, cease to bark any longer idly against that truth, the court and passage whereof it is not in them to hinder.*

tenentur irretiti istud festum sanctissimum ageremus. in nostra enim sumus et potestate ut istum more rejecto, verio-  
instituta, quod quidem usq. à prima passionis die habemus recolimus huius festi celebrationem ad posterum seculorum memoriam pro-  
pagamus. Nihil in istis nobis cum Iudeorum turba nominum aliunde maxime.

Their excep-  
tion against such  
Ceremonies  
as have  
been abused  
by the Church  
of Rome, and  
are said in  
that respect to  
be scandalous.

Mat. 18. 6.

1 Pet. 2. 8.

2 Sam. 13. 14.

Rom. 1. 24.

Ezek. 36. 20.

Tertull. lib. de  
virgin. veland.

E. pill. ad i. can-  
drum Hisp.

12. But the weightiest exception, and of all the most worthy to be respected; is against such kinde of ceremonies, as have been so grossly and shamefully abused in the Church of Rome, that where they remain they are scandalous, yea, they cannot choose but be stumbling blocks and grievous causes of offence. Concerning this point therefore we are first to note, what properly it is to be scandalous or offensive. Secondly, what kinde of ceremonies are such; and thirdly, when they are necessarily for remedy thereof to be taken away, and when not. The common conceit of the vulgar sort is, whensoever they see any thing which they mislike and are angry at, to think that every such thing is scandalous, and that themselves in this case are the men concerning whom our Saviour spake in so fearful manner, saying, *Whosoever shall scandalize or offend any one of these little ones which believe in me* [that is, as they construe it, whosoever shall anger the meanest and simplest Artizan which carrieth a good minde, by not removing out of the Church such Rites and Ceremonies as displease him] *better he were drowned in the bottom of the Sea.* But hard were the case of the Church of Christ, if this were to scandalize. Men are scandalized when they are moved, led, and provoked unto sin. At good things evil men may take occasion to do evil; and so Christ himself was a rock of offence in Israel, they taking occasion at his poor estate, and at the ignominy of his Cross, to think him unworthy the name of that great & glorious Messias, whom the Prophets describe in such ample and stately terms. But that which we therefore term offensive, because it inviteth men to offend, and by a dumb kinde of provocation encourageth, moveth, or any way leadeth unto sin, must of necessity be acknowledged actively scandalous. Now some things are so even by their very essence and nature, so that wheresoever they be found, they are not, neither can be without this force of provocation unto evil; of which kinde all examples of sin and wickedness are. Thus David was scandalous, in that bloody act, whereby he caused the enemies of God to be blasphemous: thus the whole state of Israel was scandalous, when their publique disorders caused the Name of God to be ill spoken of amongst the Nations. It is of this kinde that Tertullian meaneth: *Offence or scandal, if I be not deceived, saith he, is when the example not of a good, but of an evil thing, doth set men forward unto sin.* Good things can scandalize none save onely evil mindes: Good things have no scandalizing nature in them. Yet that which is of its own nature, either good, or at least not evil; may by some accident become scandalous at certain times, and in certain places, and to certain men, the open use thereof nevertheless being otherwise without danger. The very nature of some Rites and Ceremonies therefore is scandalous, as it was in a number of those which the Manichees did use, and is in all such as the Law of God doth forbid. Some are offensive onely through the agreement of men to use them unto evil, and not else; as the most of those things indifferent which the Heathens did to the service of their false gods; which another in heart condemning their Idolatry, could not do with them in shew and token of approbation, without being guilty of scandal given. Ceremonies of this kinde are either devised at the first unto evil; as the Eunomian Hereticks in dishonour of the blessed Trinity, brought in the laying on of water but once, to cross the custom of the Church, which in Baptism did it thrice: or else having had a profitable use, they are afterwards interpreted and wrested to the contrary; as those Hereticks which held the Trinity to be three distinct, not persons, but natures, abused the ceremony of three times laying on water in Baptism, unto the strengthening of their Heresie. The element of water in Baptism necessary, once to lay it on or twice is indifferent. For which cause Gregory making mention thereof, saith, *To dive an Infant either thrice or but once in Baptism, can be no way a thing reproveable, seeing that both in three times washing, the Trinity of persons; and in one; the unity of the God-head may be signified.* So that of these two ceremonies, neither being hurtful in it self, both may serve unto good purpose; yet one was devised, and the other converted unto evil. Now whereas in the Church of Rome, certain ceremonies are said to have been shamefully abused unto evil, as the ceremony of crossing at Baptism, of kneeling at the Eucharist, of using Water-cakes, and such like; the question is, whether for remedy of that evil, wherein such ceremonies have been scandalous, and perhaps may be still unto some even amongst ourselves, whom the presence and sight of them may confirm in that former error whereto they served in times past, they are of necessity to be removed. Are these or any other ceremonies we have common with the Church of Rome, scandalous and wicked in their very nature? This no man objecteth. Are any such, as have been



been polluted from their very birth, and instituted even at the first unto that thing which is evil? That which hath been ordained impiously at the first, may wear out that impiety in tract of time; and then what doth let, but that the use thereof may stand without offence? The names of our Moneths and our days, we are not ignorant from whence they came, and with what dishonour unto God they are said to have been devised at the first. What could be spoken against any thing more effectual to stir hatred, then that which sometime the ancient Fathers in this case spake? Yet those very names are at this day in use throughout Christendom, without hurt or scandal to any. Clear and manifest it is, that things devised by Hereticks, yea devised of a very heretical purpose even against Religion, and at their first devising worthy to have been withstood, may in time grow meet to be kept; as that custom, the inventors whereof were the *Enomian* Hereticks. So that customs once established and confirmed by long use, being presently without harm, are not in regard of their corrupt original to be held scandalous. But concerning those our Ceremonies which they reckon for most Popish, they are not able to avouch that any of them was otherwise instituted, than unto good; yea, so used at the first. It followeth then that they all are such as having served to good purpose; were afterwards converted unto the contrary. And first it is not so much as objected against us, that we retain together with them the evil wherewith they have been infected in the Church of *Rome*: I would demand who they are whom we scandalize, by using harmless things unto that good end for which they were first instituted. Among our selves that agree in the approbation of good use, no man will say that one of us is offensive and scandalous unto another. As for the favourers of the Church of *Rome*, they know how far we herein differ and dissent from them; which thing neither we conclude, and they by their publique writings also profess daily how much it grieveth them: so that of them there will not many rise up against us, as witnesses unto the Inditement of scandal, whereby we might be condemned and cast, as having strengthened them in that evil wherewith they pollute themselves in the use of the same Ceremonies. And concerning such as withstand the Church of *England* herein, and hate it because it doth not sufficiently seem to hate *Rome*, they (I hope) are far enough from being by this mean drawn to any kind of Popish error. The multitude therefore of them, unto whom we are scandalous through the use of abused Ceremonies, is not so apparent, that it can justly be said in general of any one sort of men or other, we cause them to offend. If it be so that now or then some few are espied, who having been accustomed heretofore to the rites and Ceremonies of the Church of *Rome*, are not so scourged of their former rust, as to forsake their ancient persuasion which they have had, howsoever they frame themselves to outward obedience of laws & orders; because such may misconster the meaning of our Ceremonies and so take them as though they were in every sort the same they have been, shall this be thought a reason sufficient whereon to conclude, that some Law must necessarily be made to abolish all such ceremonies? They answer, that there is no law of God which doth bind us to retain them. And *S. Paul's* rule is, that in those things from which without hurt we may lawfully abstain, we should frame the usage of our liberty with regard to the weakness and imbecility of our brethren. Wherefore unto them which stood upon their own defence, saying, *All things are lawful unto me*; he replyeth, *But all things are not expedient* in regard of others. All things are clean, all meats are lawful; but evil unto that man that eateth offensively. If for thy meats sake thy brother be grieved, thou walkest no longer according to Charity. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. Dissolve not for foods sake the work of God. We that are strong, must bear the imbecility of the impotent, and not please our selves. It was a weakness in the Christian Jews, and a maym of judgment in them, that they thought the gentiles polluted by the eating of those meats, which themselves were afraid to touch, for fear of transgressing the Law of *Moses*; yea, heret their hearts did so much rise, that the Apostles had just cause to fear, lest they would rather forsake Christianity, then endure any fellowship with such, as made no conscience of that which was unto them abominable. And for this cause

Hom. 11. de Pasch. *Idolatriæ consuetudo in tantum homines occurrerat, ut, Solis, Lunæ, Martis, Mercurii, Jovis, Veneris, Saturni, & diversis elementarum ac Dæmonum appellationibus dies vocarentur & lucitaneorum nomen impulerent.* Beda de ratione temp. c. 4. *Ostavius dies idem, Primus est, ad quem r. dicitur, indeg. r. v. s. u. s. Heliodorus incitat. His nomina à Planetis Gentilis indidit, habere sacerdotes à Sole Spiritum, à Lunæ corpus, à Martis Sanguinem, à Mercurii ingenium & Linguam, à Jove Temperantiam, à Venere Voluptatem, à Saturno Tarditatem, Id. Hist. l. 5. Etymol. c. 30. Dies dicti à Diis, quorum Nomina Romani quibusdam syderibus sacraverunt.*

1 Cor. 6. 12.

Rom. 14.

and 15. 1.

mention

mention is made of destroying the weak by meats, and of dissolving the work of God, which was his Church, a part of the living stones whereof were beleiving Jews. Now those weak brethren before mentioned are said to be as the Jews were, and our Ceremonies which have been abused in the Church of Rome, to be as the scandalous meats from which the Gentiles are exhorted to abstaine in the presence of Jews, for fear of averting them from Christian faith. Therefore as Charity did bind them to refrain from that for their brethrensake, which otherwise was lawfull enough for them; so it blindeth us for our brethrensake likewise to abolish such Ceremonies, although we might lawfully else retain them. But between these two cases there are great odds. For neither are our weak brethren as the *Jews*, nor the Ceremonies which we use as the meats which the Gentiles used. The *Jews* were known to be generally weak in that respect; whereas contrariwise the imbecillity of ours is not common unto so many, that we can take any such certain notice of them. It is a chance if here and there some one be found; and therefore seeing we may presume men commonly otherwise, there is no necessity that our practice should frame it self by that which the Apostle doth prescribe to the Gentiles. Again, their use of meats was not like unto our Ceremonies; that being a matter of private action in common life, where every man was free to order that which himself did; but this a publique constitution for the ordering of the Church: and we are not to look that the Church should change her publique laws and Ordinances, made according to that which is judged ordinarily and commonly fittest for the whole, although it chance that for some particular men the same be found inconvenient, especially when there may be other remedy also against the sores of particular inconveniences. In this case therefore where any private harm doth grow, we are not to reject instruction, as being an unmeet plaister to apply unto it; neither can we say that he which appointeth Teachers for Physicians in this kind of evil, is, as if a man would set one to watch a child all day long lest he should hurt himself with a knife; whereas by taking away the knife from him, the danger is avoided, and the service of the man better employed. For a knife may be taken from a child, without depriving them of the benefit thereof which have years and discretion to use it. But the Ceremonies which Children do abuse, if we remove quite and clean, as it is by some required that we should; then are they not taken from children onely, but from others also; which is as though because Children may perhaps hurt themselves with knives, we should conclude, that therefore the use of knives is to be taken quite and clean from men also. Those particular Ceremonies which they pretend to be so scandalous, we shall in the next book have occasion more thoroughly to sift, where other things also introduced in the publique duties of the Church, whereunto each of these appertaineth, are together with these to be touched, and such reasons to be examined as have at any time been brought either against the one or the other. In the mean while against the conveniency of curing such evils by instruction, strange it is that they should object the multitude of other necessary matters, wherein Preachers may better bestow their time, then in giving men warning not to abuse Ceremonies; a wonder it is that they should object this, which have so many years together troubled the Church with quarrels concerning these things, and are even to this very hour so earnest in them, that if they write or speak publickly but five words, one of them is lightly about the dangerous estate of the Church of England, in respect of abused Ceremonies. How much happier had it been for this whole Church, if they which have raised contention therein about the abuse of Rites and Ceremonies, had considered in due time that there is indeed store of matters fitter and better a great deal for Teachers to spend time and labour in? It is through their importunate and vehement asseverations, more than through any such experience which we have had of our own, that we are enforced to think it possible for one or other now and then, at leastwise in the prime of the Reformation of our Church, to have stumbled at some kind of Ceremonies, wherein for as much as we are contented to take this upon their credit, and to think it may be; sith also they further pretend the same to be so dangerous a snare to their souls, that are at any time taken therein, they must give our Teachers leave for the saving of those souls (be they never so few) to intermingle sometime with other more necessary things admonition concerning these not unnecessary. wherein they should in reason more easily yeild this leave, considering that hereunto we shall not need to use the hundredth part of that time, which themselves think very needfull to bestow in making most bitter Invectives against the Ceremonies of the Church.

Vide Harne.  
rep. l. x. iii. 11.  
§ 28.

T. C. l. 3 p. 173.

T. C. l. 3 p. 177.  
It is no so  
convenient  
that the Mini-  
ster having so  
many necessa-  
ry points to  
bestow his  
time in,  
should be dri-  
ven to spend it  
in giving war-  
ning or not  
abusing them,  
of which (al-  
though they  
were used to  
the best) there  
is profit.

13. But to come to the last point of all, the Church of England is grievously charged with forgetfulness of her duty, which duty had been to frame her self unto the pattern of their example, that went before her in the work of Reformation. For as the Churches of Christ ought to be most unlike the Synagogue of Antichrist in their indifferent Ceremonies; so they ought to be most like one unto another, and for preservation of unity to have as much as possible may be all the same Ceremonies. And therefore S. Paul to establish this order in the Church of Corinth, that they should make their gatherings for the poor upon the first day of the Sabbath (which is our Sunday) alleadgeth this for a reason, that he had so ordained in other Churches. Again, as children of one father, and servants of one family, so all Churches should not only have one diet, in that they have one Word, but also wear as it were one Livery in using the same Ceremonies. Thirdly, this rule did the great Council of Nice follow, when it ordained, that where certain at the Feast of Pentecost did pray kneeling, they should pray standing; the reason whereof is added, which is that one custom ought to be kept throughout all Churches. It is true that the diversity of Ceremonies ought not to cause the Churches to dissent one with another: but yet it maketh most to the avoiding of dissension, that there be amongst them an unity, not only in Doctrine, but also in ceremonies. And therefore our form of service is to be amended, not onely for that it cometh too near that of the Papists, but also because it is so different from that of the reformed Churches. Being asked to what Churches ours should conform it self, and why other Reformed Churches should not as well frame themselves to ours? their answer is, That if there be any Ceremonies which we have better then others, they ought to frame themselves to us: if they have better then we, then we ought to frame our selves to them: if the Ceremonies be alike commodious, the latter Churches should conform themselves to the first, as the younger daughter to the elder. For as S. Paul in the members, where all other things are equal, noteth it for a mark of honour above the rest, that one is called before another to the Gospel: so is it for the same cause amongst the Churches. And in this respect he pincheth the Corinthians, that not being the first which received the Gospel, yet they would have their several manners from other Churches. Moreover where the Ceremonies are alike commodious, the fewer ought to conform themselves unto the more. Forasmuch therefore as all the Churches (so far as they know which plead after this manner) of our confession in Doctrine, agree in the abrogation of divers things which we retain: our Church ought either to shew that they have done evil, or else she is found to be in fault that doth not conform her self in that, which she cannot denie to be well abrogated. In this axiome, that preservation of peace and unity amongst Christian Churches should be by all good means procured, we joyn most willingly and gladly with them. Neither deny we, but that to the avoiding of dissension it availeth much, that there be amongst them an unity as well in Ceremonies as in Doctrine. The only doubt is about the manner of their unity, how far Churches are bound to be uniform in their Ceremonies and what way they ought to take for that purpose. Touching the one, the rule which they have set down, is, that in Ceremonies indifferent all Churches ought to be one of them unto another as like as possibly they may be. Which possibly, we cannot otherwise consider, then that it doth require them to be even as like as they may be, without breaking any positive Ordinance of God. For the Ceremonies whereof we speak, being matter of positive Law, they are indifferent, if God have neither commanded nor forbidden them, but left them unto the Churches discretion; so that if as great uniformity be required as is possible in these things, seeing that the Law of God forbiddeth not any one of them; it followeth, that from the greatest unto the least they must be in every Christian Church the same, except meer impossibility of so having it be the hindrance. To us this opinion seemeth over-extreme and violent: we rather incline to think it a just and reasonable cause for any Church, the state whereof is free and independent, if in these things it differ from other Churches, onely for that it doth not judge it so fit and expedient to be framed therein by the pattern of their example, as to be otherwise framed then they. That of Gregory unto Leander: is a charitable speech and a peaceable: *In una fide nil officis Ecclesia sancta consuendo diversa, Where the Faith of the holy Churches is one, a difference*

Our Ceremonies excepted against, for that some Churches reformed before ours, have cast out those things which we, notwithstanding their example to the contrary, do retain still.

T. 6. l. 1. p. 133.

1 Cor. 16. 1.

can. 20. The Canon of that Council which is here cited, doth provide against kneeling at Prayer on Sundays, or for the day after Easter on any day, and not at the Feast of Pentecost only.

T. C. lib. 1. pag.

182, 183

Rom. 16. 5, 7

1 Cor. 14. 37



Respond ad Me-  
dian.

rence in customes of the Church doth no harme. That of S. Augustine to Cassianus is somewhat particular, and toucheth what kind of ceremonies they are wherein one Church may vary from the example of another without hurt: *Let the faith of the whole Church, how wide soever it hath spread its self, be always one, although the unity of belife be famous for variety of certaine ordinances, whereby that which is rightly beleeved, suffereth no kind of let or impediment.* Calvin goeth further, *As concerning rites in particular, let the sentence of Augustine take place, which leaveth it free unto all Churches to receive their own custome. Yea, sometime it profiteth and is expedient that there be difference, lest men should think that Religion is tyed to outward ceremonies. Always provided that there be not emulation, nor that Churches delighted with novelty, affect to have that which others have not.* They which graunt true that the diversitie of Ceremonies in this kind ought not to cause dissension in Churches, must either acknowledge that they grant in effect nothing by these words; or if any thing bee granted, there must as much be yielded unto, as we affirme against their former strict Assertion. For if Churches be urged by way of duty to take such Ceremonies as they like not of, how can dissension be avoided? will they say that there ought to be no dissension, because such as are urged, ought to like of that whereunto they are urged? If they say this, they say just nothing. For how should any Church like to be urged of duty, by such as have no authority or power over it, unto those things which being indifferent, it is not of duty bound unto them? It is their meaning, that there ought to be no dissension, because that which Churches are not bound unto, no man ought by way of duty to urge upon them? and if any man do, he standeth in the sight both of God and men most justly blameable, as a needlesse Disturber of the Peace of Gods Church, and an Author of Dissension? In saying this, they both condemne their owne practice, when they press the Church of England with so strict a bond of duty in these things, and they overthrow the ground of their practice, which is, that there ought to be in all kinde of Ceremonies uniformity, unless impossibility hinder it. For prooffe whereof it is not enough to alledge what S. Paul did about the matter of collections, or what noblemen do in the Liveries of their Servants, or what the Councell of Nice did for standing in time of Prayer on certain days: because though S. Paul did will them of the Church of Corinth, every man to lay up some-

T. C. l. i. p. 722. And therefore S. Paul, to establish this order in the Church of Corinth, that they should make their gatherings for the Poore upon the first day of the Sabbath, (which is our Sunday) alledgeth this for a reason, that he had so ordained in other Churches.

T. C. l. p. 3113. So that as children of one Father, & servants of one Master, he will have all the Churches, not only have one diet, in that they have one word, but also we are as it were one livery in using the same ceremonies. T. C. l. 3. p. 133. This rule did the great Council of Nice follow, &c. Dic Dominico & per omnem Pentecostem, nec de gemitibus adorare, &c. De Coro. Missis.

what by him upon the Sunday, and to reserve it in store, till himselfe did come thither, to send it unto the Church of Jerusalem for reliefe of the poore there; signifying withall that he had taken the like order with the Churches of Galatia; yet the reason which he yeeldeth of this order taken both in one place and the other, sheweth the least part of his meaning to have been that, whereunto his words are writhed. *Concerning collection for the Saints* (he meaneth them of Jerusalem) *as I have given order to the Church of Galatia, so likewise do ye* (saith the Apostle) *that is, in every first day of the Week let each of you lay aside by himself, and reserve according to that which God hath blessed him with, that when I come, collections be not then to make; and that when I come, whom you shall choose, them I may forthwith send away by Letters, to carry your beneficence unto Jerusalem.* Out of which words, to conclude the duty of uniformitie throughout all Churches in all manner of indifferent Ceremonies, will be very hard, and therefore best to give it over. But perhaps they are by so much the more loth to forsake this argument, for that it hath, though nothing else, yet the name of Scripture, to give it some kinde of countenance more than the pretext of Livery-coats affordeth them. For neither is it any mans duty to cloath all his children, or all his servants with one weed; nor theirs to cloath themselves so, if it were left to their own judgements, as these Ceremonies are left of God to the judgment of the Church. And seeing Churches are rather in this case like divers Families, than like divers servants of one Familie, because every Church, the State whereof is independent upon any other, hath authority to appoint orders for it self in things indifferent; therefore of two we may rather inferre, that as one Familie is not abridged of libertie to be cloathed in Friers Gray, for that another doth wear Clay-Colour; so neither are all Churches bound to the selfsame indifferent Ceremonies which it liketh sundry to use. As for that Canon in the Council of Nice, let them but read it and weigh it well. The ancient use of the Church throughout all

all Christendome, was, for fifty days after Easter (which fifty days were called Pentecost, though most commonly the last day of them which is Whitsunday be so called) in like sort on all the Sundays throughout the whole year their manner was to stand at Prayer: whereupon their meetings unto that purpose on those days, had the names of *Stations* given them. Of which custome *Tertullian* speaketh in this wise: *It is not with us thought fit either to fast on the Lords Day, or to pray kneeling. The same immunitie from fasting and kneeling wee keep all the time which is between the Feasts of Easter and Pentecost.* This being therefore an order generally received in the Church; when some began to be singular and different from all others, and that in a Ceremony which was then judged very convenient for the whole Church even by the whole, those few excepted which break out of the common pale: the Council of *Nice* thought good to enclose them again with the rest, by a law made in this sort: *Because there are certain which will needs kneel at the time of Prayer on the Lords day, and in the fifty days after Easter; the holy Synode judging it meet that a convenient custome be observed throughout all Churches, hath decreed, that standing we make our Prayers to the Lord.* Whereby it plainly appeareth, that in things indifferent, what the whole Church doth think convenient for the whole, the same if any part do wilfully violate, it may be reformed and intayled again by that generall authority whereunto each particular is subject, and that the Spirit of singularity in a few ought to give place unto publick judgement; this doth cleerly enough appear: but not that all Christian Churches are bound in every different Ceremony to be uniform; because where the whole Church hath not tyed the parts unto one and the same thing, they being therein left each to their own choice, may either do, as others do, or else otherwise, without any breach of duty at all. Concerning those indifferent things, wherein it hath been heretofore thought good that all Christian Churches should be uniform, the way which they now conceive to bring this to pass was then never thought on. For till now it hath been judged, that seeing the law of God doth not prescribe all particular Ceremonies which the Church of Christ may use, and so great variety of them as may be found out, it is not possible that the law of nature and reason should direct all Churches unto the same things, each deliberating by it self what is most convenient: the way to establish the same things indifferent throughout them all, must needs be the judgement of some judiciall authority drawn into one only sentence, which may be a rule for every particular to follow. And because such authority over all Churches, is too much to be granted unto any one mortal man; there yet remaineth that which hath been alwayes followed, as the best, the safest, the most sincere and reasonable way; namely the verdict of the whole Church orderly taken, and set down in the assembly of some generall Councell. But to maintain that all Christian Churches ought for unities sake to be uniform in all Ceremonies and then to teach that the way of bringing this to pass must be by mutuall imitation, so that where we have better Ceremonies than others, they shall be bound to follow us, and we them where theirs are better: how should we think it agreeable and consonant unto reason? For sith in things of this nature there is such variety of particular inducements, whereby one Church may be led to think that better, which another Church led by other inducements judgeth to be worse: (For example, the East Church did think it better to keep Easter day after the manner of the Jews, the West Church better to do otherwise; the Greek Church judgeth it worse to use unleavened bread in the Eucharist, the Latine Church leavened: one Church esteemeth it not so good to receive the Eucharist sitting as standing, another Church not so good standing as sitting; there being on the one side probable Motives as well as on the other) unless they adde somewhat else to define more certainly what Ceremonies shall stand for best, in such sort that all Churches in the world shall know them to be the best, and so know them, that there may not remain any question about this point, we are not awhit the nearer for that they have hitherto said. They themselves although resolved in their own judgements what Ceremonies are best, foreseeing that such as they are addicted unto, be not all so cleerly and so incomparably best, but others there are or may be, at leastwise when all things are well considered, as good; knew not which way smoothly to rid their hands of this matter, without providing some more certain rule to be followed for establishment of uniformity in Ceremonies, when there are divers kinds of equall goodness; and therefore in this case they say, that the

T. C. L. 3. p. 183.  
If the Ceremony be alike  
commodious, the later Churches  
should conform themselves to  
the first &c. And again,  
The fewer ought to conform  
themselves unto the more.  
Rom. 16. 5.  
1 Cor. 14. 36.

T. C. L. 3. p. 183.  
Our Church ought either  
to shew that they have done  
evil, or else she is found to  
be in fault that doth not conform  
her self in that which she cannot  
deny to be well abrogated.

A Declaration  
of the proceedings of the  
Church of England, for  
establishment of things as  
they are.

latter Churches & the fewer should conform themselves unto the elder & the more. Hereupon they conclude, that forasmuch as all the Reformed Churches (so far as they know) which are of our confession in Doctrine, have agreed already in the abrogation of divers things which we retain: our Church ought either to shew that they have done evil, or else she is found to be in fault for not conforming her self to those Churches, in that which she cannot deny to be in them well abrogated. For the authority of the first Churches; (and those they account to be the first in this cause which were first reformed) they bring the comparison of younger Daughters conforming themselves in attire to the example of their elder Sisters; wherein there is just as much strength of reason as in the Livery-Coats before mentioned. S. Paul, they say noteth it for a marke of speciall honour, that *Epenetus* was the first man in all Achaia which did imbrace the Christian faith; after the same sort he toucheth it also as a speciall preheminance of *Junius* and *Andronicus*; that in Christianity they were his Ancients? the *Corinthians* he pincheth with this demand; *Hath the Word of God gone out from you, or hath it lighted on you alone?* But what of all this? If any man should think that alacrity and forwardness in good things doth adde nothing unto mens condemnation; the two former speeches of S. Paul might lead him to reforme his judgement. In like sort to take down the stomach of proud conceited men, that glory as though they were able to set all others to schoole, there can be nothing more fit than some such words as the Apostles third sentence doth contain; wherein he teacheth the Church of Corinth to know, that there was no such great odds between them and all the rest of their brethren, that they should think themselves to be Gold, and the rest to be but Copper. He therefore useth speech unto them to this effect: *Men instructed in the knowledge of Jesus Christ there both were before you, and are besides you in the world; ye neither are the Fountain from which first, nor yet the River into which alone the Word hath flowed* But although as *Epenetus* was the first Man in all Achaia, so Corinth had been the first Church in the whole World that received Christ: the Apostle doth not shew that in any kinde of things indifferent whatsoever, this should have made their example a law unto all others. Indeed the example of sundry Churches for approbation of one thing doth sway much; but yet still as having the force of an example only, and not of a law. They are effectually to move any Church unless some greater thing do hinder; but they binde none, no not though they be many; saving only when they are the Major part of a generall Assembly, and then their voices being more in number, must over-sway their judgements who are fewer, because in such cases the greater half is the whole. But as they stand out single each of them by it self, their number can purchase them no such Authority that the rest of the Churches being fewer, should be therefore bound to follow them and to relinquish as good Ceremonies as theirs for theirs. Whereas therefore it is concluded out of these so weak Premises, that the retaining of divers things in the Church of England, which other reformed Churches have cast out, must needs argue that we do not well, unless we can shew that they have done ill; what needed this wrest to draw out from us an accusation of forain Churches? It is not proved as yet, that if they have done well, our duty is to follow them, and to forsake our own course, because it differeth from theirs, although indeed it be as well for us every way, as theirs for them. And if the proofs alledged for confirmation hereof had been found, yet seeing they lead no further than only to shew, that where we can have no better Ceremonies, theirs must be taken; as they cannot with modesty think themselves to have found out absolutely the best which the wit of men may devise; so liking their own somewhat better than other mens, even because they are their own, they must in equity allow us to be like unto them in this affection: which if they do, they ease us of that uncourteous burden, whereby we are charged either to condemn them, or else to follow them. They grant we need not follow them, if our own ways already be better. And if our own be but equall, the law of common indulgence alloweth us to think them at the least half a thought the better, because they are our own; which we may very well do, and never draw any Inditement at all against theirs, but think commendably even of them also.

14 To leave reformed Churches therefore and their actions for him to judge of, in whose sight they are, as they are; and our desire is that they may even in his sight be found such, as we ought to endeavour by all meanes that our own may likewise

be



be: somewhat we are enforced to speak by way of simple Declaration, concerning the proceedings of the Church of England in these affairs, to the end that men whose mindes are free from those partiall constructions, whereby the only name of difference from some other Churches is thought cause sufficient to condemn ours, may the better discern whether that we have done be reasonable, yea or no. The Church of England being to alter her received laws concerning such Orders, Rites, and Ceremonies as had been in former times an hindrance unto Piety and Religious Service of God, was to enter into consideration first, that the change of laws, especially concerning matter of Religion, must be warily proceeded in. Laws, as all other things humane, are many times full of imperfection, and that which is supposed behoveful unto men, proveth oftentimes most pernicious. The wisdom which is learned by tract of time, findeth the laws that have been in former Ages establishd, needful in later to be abrogated. Besides, that which sometime is expedient, doth not always so continue: and the number of needless laws unabolishd, doth weaken the force of them that are necessary. But true which it is, that alteration, though it be from worse to better, hath in it inconveniences, and those weighty: unless it be in such laws as have been made upon speciall occasions, which occasions ceasing, laws of that kind do abrogate themselves. But when we abrogate a law as being ill made, the whole cause for which it was made still remaining: do we not herein revoke our very own deed, and upbraid our selves with folly, yea, all that were makers of it with over-sight and with error? Further, if it be a law which the custome and continual practice of many ages or years hath confirmed in the minds of men, to alter it; must needs be troublesome and scandalous. It amazeth them, it causeth them to stand in doubt, whether any thing be in it self by nature either good or evil, and not all things rather such as men at this or that time agree to account of them, when they behold even those things disproved, disanulld, rejected, which use had made in a manner natural. What have we to induce men unto the willing obedience and observation of laws, but the weight of so many mens judgments, as have with deliberate advice assented thereunto; the weight of that long experience, which the world hath had thereof with consent and good liking? So that to change any such law, must needs with the common sort impair and weaken the force of those grounds, whereby all laws are made effectual. Notwithstanding we do not deny alteration of laws to be sometimes a thing necessary: as when they are unnatural, or impious, or otherwise hurtful unto the publique community of men, and against that good for which humane societies were instituted. When the Apostles of our Lord and Saviour were ordained to alter the laws of Heathenish Religion received throughout the whole world; chosen I grant they were (S. Paul excepted) the rest ignorant, poor simple, un-schooled altogether and un-lettered men: howbeit extraordinarily indued with ghostly wisdom from above before they ever undertook this enterprize, yea, their authority confirmed by miracle, to the end it might plainly appear that they were the Lords Ambassadors, unto whose Sovereign power for all flesh to stoop, for all the Kingdoms of the earth to yeeld themselves willingly conformable in whatsoever should be required, it was their duty. In this case therefore their oppositions in maintenance of publique superstition against Apostolick endeavours, as that they might not condemn the ways of their ancient Predecessors; that they must keep *Religiones traditas*, the rites which from Age to Age had defended, that the Ceremonies of Religion had been ever accounted by so much holier as elder; these and the like allegations in this case were vain and frivolous. Not to stay longer therefore in speech concerning this point, we will conclude that as the change of such laws as have been specified is necessary, so the evidence that they are such must be great. If we have neither voice from heaven that so pronounceth of them; neither sentence of men groundd upon such manifest and clear proof, that they in whose hands it is to alter them, may likewise infallibly even in heart and conscience judge them so; upon necessity to urge alteration, is to trouble and disturb without necessity. As for arbitrary alterations, when laws in themselves not simply bad or unmeet are changed for better and more expedient, if the benefit of that which is newly better devised be but small, with the custome of easines to alter and change is so evil, no doubt but to bear a tolerable fore, is better then to venter on a dangerous remedy. Which being generally thought upon, as a matter that touchd neerly their whole enterprize, whereas change was notwithstanding concluded necessa-

ry, in regard of the great hurt which the Church did receive by a number of things then in use, whereupon a great deal of that which had been, was now to be taken away and removed out of the Church; yet sith there are divers ways of abrogating things established, they saw it best to cut off presently such things, as might in that sort be extinguished without danger, leaving the rest to be abolished by disuse through tract of time. And as this was done for the manner of abrogation; so touching the stint or measure thereof; Rites and Ceremonies, and other external things of like nature being hurtful unto the Church, either in respect of their quality, or in regard of their number; in the former there could be no doubt or difficulty what should be done; their deliberation in the latter was more hard. And therefore inasmuch as they did resolve to remove only such things of that kind as the Church might best spare, retaining the residue; their whole counsel is in this point utterly condemned, as having either proceeded from the blindness of those times, or from negligence, or from desire of honour and glory, or from an erroneous opinion that such things might be tolerated for a while; or if it did proceed (as they which would seem most favourable, are content to think it possible) from a purpose partly the easlier to draw Papists unto the Gospel, by keeping so many orders still the same with theirs, and partly to redeem peace thereby, the breach whereof they might fear would ensue upon more thorow alteration; or howsoever it came to pass, the thing they did is judged evil.

T. C. l. 2. p. 29.  
It may well be,  
their purpose  
was by that  
temper of Po-  
pish Ceremo-  
nies with the  
Gospel, partly  
the easlier to  
draw the Pa-  
pists to the  
Gospel, &c,  
partly to re-  
deem peace  
thereby.

But such is the lot of all that deal in publique affairs, whether of Church or Common-wealth, that which men list to surmise of their doings, being it good or ill, they must beforehand patiently arme their minds to indure. Wherefore to let go private surmises, whereby the thing it self is not made either better or worse; if just and allowable reasons might lead them to do as they did, then are all these censures frustrate. Touching ceremonies harmeles therefore in themselves, and hurtful only in respect of number: was it amisse to decree, that those things which were least needful and newliest come, should be the first that were taken away; as in the abrogating of a number of Saints days, and of other the like customs it appeareth they did, till afterwards the form of common Prayer being perfected, Articles of sound Religion and Discipline agreed upon, Catechismes framed for the needful instruction of youth, Churches purged of things that indeed were burthensome to the people, or to the simple offensive and scandalous, all was brought at the length unto that wherein now we stand? Or was it amisse, that having this way eased the Church as they thought of superfluity, they went on till they had pluckt up even those things also which had taken a great deal stronger and deeper root; those things which to abrogate without constraint of manifest harm thereby arising, had been to alter unnecessarily (in their judgments) the ancient received custome of the whole Church, the universal practice of the people of God; and those very decrees of our Fathers which were not only set down by agreement of general Councils, but had accordingly been put in use, and so continued in use till that very time present? True it is that neither Councils nor customs, be they never so ancient and so general, can let the Church from taking away that thing which is hurtful to be retained. Where things have been instituted, which being convenient and good at the first, do afterward in process of time wax otherwise, we make no doubt but they may be altered, yea though Councils or Customes General have received them. And therefore it is but a needless kind of opposition which they make who thus dispute, *If in those things which are not expressed in the Scripture, that is to be observed of the Church, which is the custome of the people of God and decree of our forefathers; then how can these things at any time be varied, which heretofore have been once ordained in such sort? Whereunto we say, that things so ordained are to be kept, howbeit not necessarily, any longer then till there grow some urgent cause to ordain the contrary. For there is not any Positive Law of men, whether it be general or particular, received by formal express consent, as in Councils; or by secret approbation, as in customs it commeth to pass; but the same may be taken away if occasion serve. Even as we all know, that many things kept generally heretofore, are now in like sort generally unkept and abolished every where. Notwith-*  
standing

T. C. l. 2. p. 33.

T. C. l. 3. p. 30.

standing till such things be abolished, what exception can there be taken against the judgement of S. *Augustine*, who saith, that, Of things harmeles whatsoever there is which the whole Church doth observe throughout the world, to argue for any mans immunity from observing the same, it were a point of most insolent madnes? And surely, odious it must needs have been for one Christian Church, to abolish that which all had received and held for the space of many ages, and that without any detriment unto Religion so manifest and so great, as might in the eyes of unpartial men appear sufficient to cleere them from all blame of rash and inconsiderate proceeding, if in fervor of zeale they had removed such things. Whereas contrariwise so reasonable moderation herein used, hath freed us from being deservedly subject unto that bitter kind of obloquie, whereby as the Church of Rome doth under the colour of love towards those things which be harmeles, maintaine extremely most hurtfull corruptions; so we peradventure might be opbraided, that under colour of hatred towards those things that are corrupt, we are on the other side as extreme, even against most harmeles Ordinances; And as they are obstinate to retain that, which no man of any conscience is able well to defend: so we might be reckoned fierce and violent, to tear away that which if our own mouths did condemn, our consciences would storme and repine thereat. The Romans having banished *Tarquinius* the Proud, and taken a solemn oath that they never would permit any man more to reigne, could not herewith content themselves, or think that tyranny was throughly extinguished, till they had driven one of their Consuls to depart the City, against whom they found not in the world what to object, saving only that his name was *Tarquine*, and that the Common-wealth could not seem to have recovered perfect freedome, as long as a man of so dangerous a name was left remaying. For the Church of England to have done the like, in casting out Papall tyranny and superstition, to have shewed greater willingness of accepting the very Ceremonies of the Turke, Christs professed enemy, than of the most indifferent things which the Church of Rome approveth: to have left not so much as the names which the Church of Rome doth give unto things innocent: to have ejected whatsoever that Church doth make account of, be it never so harmeles in it selfe, and of never so ancient continuance, without any other crime to charge it with, than only that it hath been the hap thereof to be used by the Church of Rome, & not to be commanded in the Word of God: this kind of proceeding might haply have pleased some few men, who having begun such a course themselves, must needs be glad to see their example followed by us. But the Almighty which giveth wisdom, and inspireth with right understanding whomsoever it pleaseth him, he foreseeing that which mans wit had never bin able to reach unto; namely, what Tragedies the attempt of so extream alteration would raise in some parts of the Christian World, did for the endless good of his Church (as we cannot chuse but interpret it) use the bridle of his provident restraining hand, to stay those eager affections in some, and to settle their resolution upon a course more calme and moderate; left as in other most ample and heretofore most flourishing Dominions it hath since falne out, so likewise if in ours it had come to pass, that the adverse part being enraged, and betaking it selfe to such practices as men are commonly wont to embrace, when they behold things brought to desperate extremities, and no hope left to see any other end than only the utter oppression and clean extinguishment of one side; by this mean Christendom flaming in all parts of greatest importance at once, they had all wanted that comfort of mutuall relief, whereby they are now for the time sustained (and not the least by this our Church which they so much impeach) till mutuall combustions, blood-sheds and wastes (because no other inducements will serve) may enforce them through very faintnes, after the experience of so endless miseries, to enter on all sides at the length into some such consultation, as may tend to the best re-establishment of the whole Church of Iesus Christ. To the singular good whereof it cannot but serve as a profitable direction, to teach men what is most likely to prove available, when they shall quietly consider the trial that hath bin thus long had of both kinds of Reformation; as well this moderate kind which the Church of England hath taken, as that other more extream and rigorous, which certain Churches elsewhere have better liked. In the mean while it may be, that suspence of judgement and exercise of charity were safer and seemlier for Christian men, than the hot pursuits of these Controversies, wherein they that are more fervent to dispute, be not alwayes the most able to determin. But who

Aug. Ep. 118.

T. C. l. 17. 131.  
For indeed it  
were more safe  
for us to con-  
forme our in-  
different Ce-  
remonies to  
the Turkes  
which are far  
off, than to the  
Papists which  
are so near.



who are on his side and who against him. our Lord in his good time shall reveal. And sith thus far we have proceeded in opening the things that have been done, let not the principall doers themselves be forgotten. When the ruines of the house of God (that house which consisting of Religious Souls, is most immediately the precious Temple of the Holy Ghost) were become not in his sight alone, but in the eyes of the whole world so exceeding great, that very Superstition began even to feel it self too far grown the first that with us made way to repaire the decayes thereof by beheading Superstition, was King *Henry* the Eighth; the Son and Successor of which famous King, as we know was *Edward* the Saint: in whom (for so by the event we may gather) it pleased God Righteous and Just to let England see, what a blessing sin and iniquitie would not suffer it to enjoy. Howbeit that which the Wiseman hath said concerning *Enoch* (whose dayes were, though many in respect of ours, yet scarce, as three to nine in comparison of theirs with whom he lived) the same to that admirable Child most worthily may be applied, *Though He departed this world soone, yet fulfilled He much time.* But what ensued? That worke, which the own in such sort had begun, and the other so far proceeded in, was in short space so over-thrown, as if almost it had never been: till such time as that God, whose property is to shew his mercies then greatest when they are nearest to be utterly despaired of, caused in the depth of discomfort and darkness a most glorious Star to arise, and on her head settled the Crown, whom himself had kept as as a Lamb from the slaughter of those bloody times, that the experience of his goodness in her own deliverance, might cause her mercifull disposition, to take so much the more delight in saving others, whom the like necessity should press. What in this behalf hath been done towards Nations abroad, the parts of Christendom most afflicted can best testifie. That which especially concerneth our selves in the present matter we treat of, is, the state of reformed Religion, a thing at Her coming to the Crown, even raised as it were by miracle from the dead; a thing which we so little hoped to see, that even they which beheld it done, scarcely beleaved their own senses at the first beholding. Yet being then brought to pass, thus many years it hath continued standing by no other wordly mean but that one only hand which erected it, that hand, which as no kind of imminent danger could cause at the first to with-hold it self, so neither have the practises, so many, so bloody, following since, been ever able to make weary. Nor can we say in this case so justly, that *Aaron* and *Hur*, the Ecclesiasticall and Civill States have sustained the hand which did lift it self to Heaven for them; as that Heaven it self hath by this hand sustained them, no aid or help having therunto been ministred for performance of the work of reformation, other than such kind of help or aid as the Angel in the Prophet *Zacharie* speaketh of, saying *Neither by an Army nor strength, but by my Spirit, saith the Lord of Hosts.* Which grace and favour of Divine assistance having not in one thing or two shewed it self, nor for some few days or yeers appeared, but in such sort so long continued, our manifold sins and traigressions striving to the contrary; what can we lesse thereupon conclude, than that God would at least wise by tract of time teach the World, that the thing which he blesteth, defendeth, keepeeth so strangely, cannot chuse but be of him? Wherefore if any refuse to beleieve us disputing for the verity of Religion established, let them beleive God himself thus miraculously working for it, and wish life even for ever and ever unto that Glorious and Sacred Instrument whereby he worketh.

# OF THE LAWES OF Ecclesiastical Politie.

## The FIFTH BOOK.

Of their fourth Assertion, *That touching the several Publique Duties of Christian Religion, there is amongst us much Superstition retained in them; and concerning Persons, which for performance of those Duties are endued with the Power of Ecclesiastical Order, our Laws and Proceedings according therunto, are many ways herein also corrupted.*

The Matter contained in this Fifth Book.

- 1 **T** *True Religion is the root of all true virtues, and the stay of all well-ordered Common-wealths.*
- 2 *The most extreme opposite to True Religion is affected Atheisme.*
- 3 *Of Superstition, and the root thereof, either misguided zeal, or ignorant fear of Divine glory.*
- 4 *Of the redress of Superstition in Gods Church, and concerning the question of this Book.*
- 5 *Four general Propositions demanding that which may reasonably be granted concerning matters of outward form in the exercise of true Religion. And fifthly, Of a Rule not safe nor reasonable in these cases.*
- 6 *The first Proposition touching judgment, what things are convenient in the outward publique ordering of Church affairs.*
- 7 *The second Proposition.*
- 8 *The third Proposition.*
- 9 *The fourth Proposition.*
- 10 *The Rule of mens private Spirits, not safe in these cases to be followed.*
- 11 *Places for the publique service of God.*
- 12 *The solemnity of erecting Churches, condemned; the hallowing and dedicating of them, scorned by the Adversary.*
- 13 *Of the names, whereby we distinguish our Churches.*
- 14 *Of the fashion of our Churches.*
- 15 *The sumptuousness of Churches*
- 16 *What holiness and vertue we ascribe to the Church, more than other places.*
- 17 *Their pretence that would have Churches utterly razed.*
- 18 *Of Publique Teaching or Preaching, and the first kinde thereof, Catechizing.*
- 19 *Of Preaching, by reading publicly the Books of holy Scripture, and concerning supposed Heresies in those Translations of Scripture, which we allow to be read; as also of the choice which we make in reading.*
- 20 *Of Preaching by the publique reading of other profitable instructions; and concerning books Apocryphal.*
- 21 *Of Preaching by Sermons, and whether Sermons be the only ordinary way of Teaching, whereby men are brought to the saving knowledge of Gods Truth.*
- 22 *What they attribute to Sermons only, and what we to reading also.*
- 23 *Of Prayer.*
- 24 *Of Publique Prayer.*
- 25 *Of the Form of Common Prayer.*
- 26 *Of them which like not to have any Set Form of Common Prayer.*
- 27 *Of them, who allowing a Set Form of Prayer, yet allow not ours.*
- 28 *The Form of our Liturgie too near the Papists, too far different from that of other Reformed Churches, as they pretend.*
- 29 *Attire belonging to the Service of God.*
- 30 *Of gesture in Praying, and of different places chosen to that purpose.*
- 31 *Easiness of Praying after our Forms.*
- 32 *The length of our Service.*
- 33 *In stead of such Prayers as the Primitive Churches have used, and those that be Reformed now use, we have (they say) divers short cuts or shreadings, rather wishes than prayers.*
- 34 *Lessons*

- 34 Lessons intermingled with our Prayers.
- 35 The number of our prayers for earthly things, and our oft rehearsing of the Lords Prayer.
- 36 The peoples saying after the Minister.
- 37 Our manner of reading the Psalms otherwise than the rest of the Scripture.
- 38 Of Musick with Psalms.
- 39 Of singing or saying Psalms, and other parts of Common Prayer, wherein the people and the Minister answer one another by course.
- 40 Of Magnificat, Benedictus, and Nunc Dimittis.
- 41 Of the Litany.
- 42 Of Athanasius Creed, and Gloria Patri.
- 43 Our want of particular Thanksgiving.
- 44 In some things the matter of our Prayer, as they affirm, is unsound.
- 45 When thou hadst overcome the sharpness of death, thou didst open the Kingdom of heaven unto all Believers.
- 46 Touching Prayer for deliverance from sudden death.
- 47 Prayer for those things which we for our unworthiness dare not ask; God, for the worthiness of his Son, would vouchsafe to grant.
- 48 Prayer to be evermore delivered from all adversity.
- 49 Prayer that all men may finde mercy, and of the will of God, that all men might be saved.
- 50 Of the name, the Author, and the force of Sacraments, which force consisteth in this, that God hath ordained them as means, to make us partakers of him in Christ, and of life through Christ.
- 51 That God is in Christ by the personal Incarnation of the Son, who is very God.
- 52 The mis-interpretations which Heresie hath made; of the manner how God and Man are united in one Christ.
- 53 That by the union of the one, with the other nature in Christ, there groweth neither gain nor loss of essential properties to either.
- 54 What Christ hath obtained according to the flesh, by the union of his flesh with Deity.
- 55 Of the personal presence of Christ every where, and in what sense it may be granted he is every where present according to the flesh.
- 56 The union or mutual participation, which is between Christ and the Church of Christ, in this present World.
- 57 The necessity of Sacraments unto the participation of Christ.
- 58 The substance of Baptisme, the rites or solemnities thereunto belonging, and that the substance thereof being kept, other things in Baptisme may give place to necessity.
- 59 The ground in Scripture, whereupon a necessity of outward Baptisme hath been built.
- 60 What kind of necessity in outward Baptisme hath been gathered by the words of our Saviour Christ, and what the true necessity thereof indeed is.
- 61 What things in Baptisme have been dispensed with by the Fathers, respecting necessity.
- 62 Whether Baptisme by Women, be true Baptisme, good, and effectual, to them that receive it.
- 63 Of Interrogatories in Baptisme, touching faith, and the purpose of a Christian life.
- 64 Interrogatories proposed unto Infants in Baptisme, and answered, as in their names by God fathers.
- 65 Of the Cross in Baptisme.
- 66 Of Confirmation after Baptisme.
- 67 Of the Sacrament of the body and blood of Christ.
- 68 Of faults noted in the forme of administering that holy Sacrament.
- 69 Of Festival dayes, and the natural causes of their convenient Institution.
- 70 The manner of celebrating Festival Dayes.
- 71 Exceptions against our keeping of other Festival Dayes, besides the Sabbath.
- 72 Of Dayes appointed, as well for ordinary as for extraordinary Fasts in the Church of God.
- 73 The celebration of Matrimony.
- 74 The Churching of Women.
- 75 The rites of Burial.
- 76 Of the nature of that Ministry, which serveth for performance of divine duties in the Church of God, and how happiness, not eternal only, but also temporal, doth depend upon it.
- 77 Of power given unto men, to execute that heavenly office, of the gift of the holy Ghost in Ordination; and whether conveniently the power of order may be sought or sued for.
- 78 Of degrees, whereby the power of order is distinguished, and concerning the attire of Ministers.
- 79 Of Oblations, Foundations, Endowments, Tithes, all intended for perpetuity of Religion, which purpose being chiefly fulfilled by the Clergies certain and sufficient maintenance, must needs by alienation of Church-livings be made frustrate.
- 80 Of Ordinations lawful without title, and without any popular election precedent, but in no case without regard of due information what their quality is that enter into holy Orders.
- 81 Of the Learning that should be in Ministers, their Residence and the number of their Livings.





confidence to be afflicted by his hand? For proof whereof, let but the Acts of the ancient Jews be indifferently weighed, from whose magnanimity, in causes of most extream hazard, those strange and unwonted resolutions have grown, which for all circumstances, no people under the roof of heaven did ever hitherto match. And that which did always animate them, was their meere Religion. Without which, if so be it were possible that all other ornaments of minde might be had in their full perfection, nevertheless, the minde that should possess them, divorced from piety, could be but a spectacle of consideration; even as that body is, which adorned with sundry other admirable beauties, wanteth eye-sight, the chiefest grace that Nature hath in that kinde to bestow. They which commend so much the felicity of that innocent world, wherein it is said, that men of their own accord did embrace fidelity and honesty, not for fear of the Magistrate, or because revenge was before their eyes, if at any time they should do otherwise, but that which held the people in awe, was the shame of ill doing, the love of equity, and right it self, a bar against all oppressions which greatness of power causeth; they which describe unto us any such estate of happiness amongst men, though they speak not of Religion, do notwithstanding declare that which is in truth her only working. For if Religion did possess sincerely and sufficiently the hearts of all men, there would need no other restraint from evil. This doth not only give life and perfection to all endeavours wherewith it concurrerth; but what event soever ensues, it breedeth, if not joy and gladness alwaies, yet alwaies patience, satisfaction, and reasonable contentment of minde. Whereupon it hath been set down as an axiome of good experience, that all things religiously taken in hand, are prosperously ended; because whether men in the end have that which Religion did allow them to desire, or that which it teacheth them contentedly to suffer, they are in neither event unfortunate. But lest any man should here conceive, that is greatly skillesh not of what sort our Religion be, in as much as Heathens, Turks, and Infidels, ascribe to Religion a great part of the same effects, which our selves ascribe hereunto, they having ours in the same detestation that we theirs: it shall be require to observe well, how far forth there may be agreement in the effects of different Religions. First, by the bitter strife which riseth oftentimes from small differences in this behalf, and is by so much alwaies greater, as the matter is of more importance; we see a general agreement in the secret opinion of men, that every man ought to embrace the Religion which is true, and to shun, as hateful, whatsoever dissenteth from it, but that most, which doth farthest dissent. The generality of which perswasion argueth, that God hath imprinted it by nature, to the end it might be a spur to our industry, in searching and maintaining the Religion, from which as to swerve in the least points, is error; so the capital enemies thereof God hateth as his deadly foes, aliens, and without repentance, children of endless perdition. Such therefore, touching mans immortal state after this life, are not likely to reap benefit by their Religion, but to look for the clean contrary, in regard of so important contrariety between it and the true Religion. Nevertheless, in as much as the errors of the most seduced this way have been mixed with some truths, we are not to marvel, that although the one did turn to their endless woe and confusion, yet the other had many notable effects, as touching the affairs of this present life. There were in these quarters of the world, sixteen hundred years ago, certain speculative men, whose authority disposed the whole Religion of those times. By their means it became a received opinion, that the souls of men departing this life, do flit out of one body into some other. Which opinion, though false, yet entwined with a true, that the souls of men do never perish, abated the fear of death in them which were so resolved, and gave them courage unto all adventures. The Romans had a vain superstitious custome, in most of their enterprises, to conjecture before hand of the event, by certain tokens which they noted in Birds, or in the Intrails of Beasts, or by other the like frivolous divinations. From whence notwithstanding as oft as they could receive any signe, which they took to be favourable, it gave them such hope, as if their gods had made them more then half a promise of prosperous success. Which many times was the greatest cause that they did prevail, especially being

being men of their own natural inclination, hopeful and strongly conceited, whatsoever they took in hand. But could their fond superstition have furthered so great attempts, without the mixture of a true perswasion, concerning the unresistible force of Divine power? Upon the wilful violation of oaths, execrable blasphemies, and like contempts, offered by Deriders of Religion, even unto false gods, fearful tokens of Divine revenge have been known to follow. Which occurrents the devouter sort did take for manifest Arguments, that the gods whom they worshipped, were of power to reward such as sought unto them, and would plague those that feared them not. In this they erred. For (as the *Wise man* rightly *Wisd. 14. 13.* noteth concerning such) it was not the power of them by whom they swore, but the vengeance of them that sinned, which punished the offences of the ungodly. It was their hurt untruly to attribute so great power unto false gods. Yet the right conceit which they had, that to perjury vengeance is due, was not without good effect, as touching the course of their lives, who feared the wilful violation of oaths in that respect. And whereas we read so many of them so much commended, some for their milde and merciful disposition, some for their vertuous severity, some for integrity of life, all these were the fruits of true and infallible principles delivered unto us in the Word of God, as the axiomes of our Religion, which being imprinted by the God of Nature in their hearts also, and taking better root in some than in most others, grew, though not from, yet with and amidst the heaps of manifold repugnant errors, which errors of corrupt Religion had also their futable effects in the lives of the self same parties. Without all controversie the purer and perfecter our Religion is, the worthier effects it hath in them who stedfastly and sincerely embrace it, in others not. They that love the Religion which they profess, may have failed in choise, but yet they are sure to reap what benefit the same is able to afford; whereas the best and soundest professed by them that bear it not the like affection, yeildeth them, retaining it in that sort, no benefit. *David* was a man after God's own heart, so termed, because his affection was hearty towards God. B:holding the like disposition in them which lived under him, it was his prayer to Almighty God, *"O keep this for ever in the purpose and thoughts of the heart of this people."* But when, after that *David* had ended his days in peace, they who succeeded him in place, for the most part followed him not in quality, when their Kings (some few excepted) to better their worldly estate (as they thought) left their own and their peoples ghottly condition uncared for, by woful experience they both did learn, that to forsake the true God of heaven, is to fall into all such evils upon the face of the earth, as men either destitute of grace divine may commit, or unprotected from above endure. Seeing therefore it doth thus appear, that the safety of all estates dependeth upon Religion; that Religion unfainedly loved, perfecteth mens abilities unto all kinds of vertuous services in the Common-wealth; that mens desire in general is to hold no Religion but the true; and that whatsoever good effects do grow out of their Religion, who embrace instead of the true, a false, the roots thereof are certain sparks of the light of truth intermingled with the darkness of error, because no Religion can wholly and only consist of untruths, we have reason to think that all true vertues are to honour true Religion as their parent, and all well ordered Common-weals to love her as their chiefest stay.

2. They of whom God is altogether unapprehended, are but few in number, and for grossness of wit such, that they hardly and scarcely seem to hold the place of humane being. These we should judge to be of all others most miserable, but that a wretched sort there are, on whom, whereas nature hath bestowed riper capacity, their evil disposition seriously goeth about therewith to apprehend God, as being not God. Whereby it cometh to pass, that of these two sorts of men, both godless, the one having utterly no knowledge of God, the other study how to perfwade themselves that there is no such thing to be known. The Fountain and Well-spring of which impiety, is a resolved purpose of minde to reap in this world what sensual profit or pleasure soever the world yeildeth. and not to be barred from any whatsoever means available thereunto. And that this is the very radical cause of their Atheisme, no man (I think) will doubt, which considereth what pains they take to destroy those principall spurs and motives unto all Verrue, the

The most extreme opposite to true Religion, is effectual Atheism.

Such things they imagine, and go astray, because their own wickedness hath blinded them.

*Ἐστὶ δὲ ἡ κακία ὁ δαίμων ἀνὴρ ἀρχαῖος. Ἀριστ. crea- Ethic. l. 6. c. 5.*



creation of the World, the providence of God, the resurrection of the Dead, the joyes of the Kingdom of Heaven, and the endless paines of the wicked, yea above all things, the authority of the Scripture, because on these points it evermore beareth, and the Soules immortality, which granted, draweth easily after it the rest, as a voluntary train. Is it not wonderfull, that base desires should so extinguish in men the sense of their own excellency, as to make them willing that their souls should be like to the souls of beasts, mortall and corruptible with their bodies? till some admirable or unusual accident happen (as it hath in some) to work the beginning of a better alteration in their mindes; disputation about the knowledge of God with such kinde of persons commonly prevaieth little. For how should the brightness of wisdom shine, where the windows of the soul are of a very set purpose closed? True Religion hath many things in it, the only mention whereof galeth and troubleth their mindes. Being therefore loth, that enquiry into such matters should breed a perswasion in the end contrary unto that they embrace, it is their endeavour to banish, as much as in them lyeth, quite and clean from their cogitation whatsoever may sound that way. But it cometh many times to pass (which is their torment) that the thing they shun doth follow them; truth, as it were, ever obtruding it self into their knowledge, and not permitting them to be so ignorant as they would be. Whereupon, inasmuch as the nature of man is unwilling to continue, doing that wherein it shall alwaies condemn it self, they continuing still obstinate, to follow the course which they have begun, are driven to devise all the shifts that wit can invent for the smothering of this light, all that may but with any the least show of possibility stay their mindes from thinking that true, which they heartily wish were false, but cannot think it so, without some scruple and fear of the contrary. Now because that judicious learning, for which we commend most worthily the ancient Sages of the World, doth not in this case serve the turn, these trenchermasters (for such the most of them be) frame to themselves a way more pleasant, a new method they have of turning things that are serious into mockerie, an Art of Contradiction by way of scorn, a learning wherewith we were a long sithence forewarned, that the miserable times whereinto we are fallen should abound. This they study, this, they practise, this they grace with a wanton superfluity of wit, too much insulting over the patience of more virtuously disposed mindes. For towards these so forlorn creatures we are (it must be confest) too patient. In zeal to the glory of God, *Babylon* hath exceeded *Sion*. We want that decree of *Nabuchodonosor*, the fury of this wicked brood hath the reins too much at liberty, their tongues walk at large, the spit-venom of their poisoned hearts breaketh out to the annoyance of others, what their untamed lust suggesteth, the same their licentious mouths do carry where set abroad. With our contentions their irreligious humour also is much strengthened. Nothing pleaseth them better, than these manifold oppositions about the matter of Religion, as well for that they have hereby the more opportunity to learn on one side how another may be oppugned, and so to weaken the credit of all unto themselves; as also because by their hot pursuit of lower controversies amongst men professing religion, and agreeing in the principal foundations thereof, they conceive hope that about the higher principles themselves time will cause altercation to grow. For which purpose, when they see occasion, they stick not sometime in other mens persons, yea, sometime without any vizard at all, directly to try, what the most religious are able to say in defence of the highest points whereupon all Religion dependeth. Now for the most part it so falleth out touching things which generally are received, that although in themselves they be most certain, yet because men presume them granted of all, we are hardliest able to bring such proof of their certainty as may satisfie gain-sayers, when suddenly and besides expectation they require the same at our hands. Which imprecation and unreadiness when they finde in us, they turn it to the soothing up of themselves in that cursed phantasie, whereby they would faine believe that the hearty devotion of such as indeed fear God, is nothing else but a kinde of harmless error, bred and confirmed in them by the sleights of wiser men. For a politique use of Religion they see there is, and by it they would also gather that Religion it self is a meer politique device, forged purposely to serve for that use.

o *Susar. ver. 9.*  
They turned  
away their  
minde, and cast  
down their eyes,  
that they might  
not see heaven  
nor remember  
just judgments.

p *Hac est sum-*  
*ma delicti, nulle*  
*agnoscere quem*  
*ignorare non*  
*possit. Cyp. de*  
*Idol. vanit.*

q 2 *Per. 3. 24.*  
*Jud. ver. 18.*

r *Don. 3. 29.*

use. Men fearing God are thereby a great deal more effectually than by positive Laws restrain'd from doing evil, in as much as those Laws have no farther power than over our outward actions only, whereas unto mens inward cogitations, unto the privie intents and motions of their hearts, religion serveth for a bridle. What more savage, wilde, and cruel than man, if he see himself able either by fraud to over-reach, or by power to over-bear the Laws whereunto he should be subject? Wherefore in so great boldness to offend, it becometh that the world should be held in awe, not by a vain surmise, but a true apprehension of somewhat, which no man may think himself able to withstand: This is the politique use of Religion. In which respect there are of these wise malignants, some who have vouchsafed it their marvellous favourable countenance and speech, very gravely affirming, that Religion honoured, addeth greatness; and contemned, bringeth ruine unto Common-weals; That Princes and States which will continue, are above all things to uphold the reverend regard of Religion, and to provide for the same by all means in the making of their Laws. But when they should define what means are best for that purpose, behold, they extol the wisdom of Paganisme, they give it out as a mystical precept of great importance, that Princes, and such as are under them in most authority or credit with the people, should take all occasions of rare events, and, from what cause soever the same do proceed, yet wrest them to the strengthening of their Religion, and not make it nice for so good a purpose to use, if need be, plain forgeries. Thus while they study how to bring to pass that Religion may seem but a matter made, they lose themselves in the very maze of their own discourses, as if reason did even purposely forsake them, who of purpose forsake God the Author thereof: For surely a strange kinde of madness it is, that those men, who though they be void of piety, yet, because they have wit, cannot chuse but know, that treachery, guile, and deceit, are things which may for a while, but do not use long to go unespied, should teach that the greatest honour to a State is perpetuity; and grant, that alterations in the Service of God, for that they impair the credit of Religion, are therefore perillous in Common-weals, which have no continuance longer than Religion hath all reverence done unto it, and withal acknowledge (for so they do) that when people began to espy the falshood of Oracles, whereupon all Gentilisme was built, their hearts were utterly averted from it; and notwithstanding counsel, Princes, in sober earnest for the strengthening of their states, to maintain Religion, and for the maintenance of Religion not to make choice of that which is true, but to authorize that they make choice of by those false and fraudulent means, which in the end must needs overthrow it. Such are the counsels of men godless, when they would shew themselves politique devisers, able to create God in man by Art.

3. Wherefore to let go this execrable crue, and to come to extremities on the contrary hand, two affections there are, the forces whereof, as they bear the greater or lesser sway in mans heart, frame accordingly to the stamp and character of his Religion, the one zeal, the other fear. Zeal, unless it be rightly guided, when it endeavoureth most busily to please God, forceth upon him those unseasonable offices which please him not. For which cause, if they who this way swerve be compared with such sincere sound and discreet as *Abraham* was in matter of Religion, the service of the one, is like unto flattery; the other like the faithful sedulity of 'friend-ship. Zeal, except it be ordered aright, when it bendeth it self unto conflict with all things, either in deed, or but imagined to be opposite unto Religion, useth the razor many times with such eagerness, that the very life of Religion it self is thereby hazarded, through hatred of tares the corn in the field of God is pluck'd up. So that Zeal needeth both ways a sober guide. Fear on the other side, if it have not the light of true understanding concerning God, wherewith to be moderated, breedeth likewise superstition. It is therefore dangerous that in things divine, we should work too much upon the spur either of zeal or fear. Fear is a good Solicitor to Devotion. Howbeit, sith fear in this kinde doth grow from an apprehension of Deity endued with irresistible power to hurt, and is of all affections (anger excepted) the unaptest to admit any conference with reason, for which cause the Wise man doth say of fear, that it is a betrayer of the forces of reasonable understanding, therefore except men know before-hand what manner of service pleaseth

*a Vos scelera  
admissa puni-  
tis, apud nos  
cogitare peccare  
est; vos confici-  
timus, nos eti-  
am conscientiam  
salam, sine  
qua esse non  
possumus. Minu.  
Fel. in Octav.  
Summum prae-  
dium regni est  
justitia ob oper-  
tas tumultus &  
religio ob oc-  
cultos Carda.  
de Sapient. li. 3.*

Of superstition  
and the root  
thereof, either  
misguided zeal,  
or ignorant fear  
of divine glory.

*Chron. 20. 7.  
Abraham thy  
friend.*

*u Wisd. 17. 1.*

eth

eth God, while they are fearful, they try all things which fancy offereth. Many there are who never think on God, but when they are in extremity of fear: and then because, what to think, or what to do they are uncertain, perplexity not suffering them to be idle; they think and do, as it were in a phrensie, they know not what. Superstition neither knoweth the right kinde, nor observeth the due measure of actions belonging to the service of God, but is alwaies joyned with a wrong opinion touching things divine. Superstition is, when things are either abhorred or observed, with a zealous or fearfull, but erroneous relation to God. By means whereof, the superstitious do sometimes serve; though the true God, yet with needles offices, and defraud him of duties necessary, sometime load others than him with such honours as properly are his. The one their oversight, who mis in the choice of that wherewith they are affected; the other theirs, who fail in the election of him towards whom they shew their devotion: this the crime of Idolatry; that, the fault of voluntary, either nicenes or superfluity in Religion. The Christian world it self being divided into two grand parts, it appeareth by the general view of both, that with matter of heresie the West hath been often and much troubled; but the East part never quiet, till the deluge of misery, wherein now they are, overwhelmed them. The chiefeft cause whereof doth seem to have lyen in the restless wits of the Grecians, evermore proud of their own curious and subtle inventions, which when at any time they had contrived, the great facility of their Language served them readily to make all things fair and plausible to mens understanding. Those grand heretical impieties therefore, which most high'y and immediately touched God and the glorious Trinity, were all in a manner the monsters of the East. The West bred fewer a great deal, and those commonly of a lower nature, such as more nearly and directly concerned rather men than God, the Latines being alwaies to capital heresies less inclined, yet unto gross superstition more. Superstition, such as that of the

▪ Mark 7.9.

Pharisees, was, by whom divine things indeed were left, because other things were more divinely esteemed of than reason would; the superstition that riseth voluntarily, and by degrees, which is hardly discerned, minglet it self with the rites even of very divine service done to the only true God, must be considered of, as a creeping and inroaching evil; an evil, the first beginnings whereof are commonly harmless, so that it proveth only then to be an evil, when some farther accident doth grow unto it, or it self come unto farther growth. For in the Church of God sometimes it cometh to pass, as in over-battle grounds, the fertile disposition whereof is good; yet because it exceedeth due proportion, it bringeth forth abundantly, through too much rankness, things less profitable, whereby, that which principally it should yield, being either prevented in place, or defrauded of nourishment, faileth. This (if so large a discourse were necessary) might be exemplified even by heaps of rites and customes, now superstitious in the greatest part of the Christian world, which in their first original beginnings, when the strength of virtuous, devout or charitable affection bloomed them, no man could justly have condemned as evil.

Of the redress  
of superstition  
in God's  
Church, and  
concerning the  
question of this  
Book.

4. But howsoever superstition doth grow, that wherein unsounder times have done amiss, the better ages ensuing must rectifie, as they may. I now come therefore to those accusations brought against us by pretenders of Reformation; the first in the rank whereof is such, that if so be the Church of England did at this day therewith as justly deserve to be touched as they in this cause have imagined it doth, rather would I exhort all sorts to seek pardon even with tears at the hands of God, than meditate words of defence for our doings, to the end that men might think favourably of them. For as the case of this world, especially now, doth stand, what other stay or succour have we to lean unto, save the testimony of our conscience, and the comfort we take in this, that we serve the living God (as near as our wits can reach unto the knowledge thereof) even according to his own will, and do therefore trust that his mercy shall be our safeguard against those enraged powers abroad, which principally in that respect are become our enemies? But, sith no man can do ill with a good conscience, the consolation which we herein seem to finde, is but a meer deceitfull pleasing of our selves in error, which at the length must needs turn to our greater grief, if that which we do to please God most, be for the manifold defects thereof offensive unto him. For so it is judged, our Prayers, our Sacraments,

our



our Fasts, our times and places of Publick meeting together for the worship and service of God; our Marriages, our Burials, our Functions, Elections and Ordinations Ecclesiastical; almost whatsoever we do in the exercise of our Religion according to lawes for that purpose established, all things are some way or other thought faulty, all things stained with superstition. Now although it may be, the wiser sort of men are not greatly moved hereat, considering how subject the very best things have been alwaies unto cavil, when wits possessed either with disdain or dislike thereof, have set them up as their mark to shoot at: safe notwithstanding it were not therefore to neglect the danger which from hence may grow, and that especially in regard of them, who desiring to serve God as they ought, but being not so skillfull as in every point to unwind themselves where the snates of glosing speech do lie to intangle them, are in minde not a litt'e troubled, when they hear so bitter invectives against that which this Church hath taught them to reverence as holy, to approve as lawfull, and to observe as behovefull, for the exercise of Christian duty. It seemeth therefore, at least for their sakes, very meet, that such as blame us in this behalf, be directly answered, and they which follow us, informed plainly of the reasons of that we do. On both sides the end intended between us, is to have Lawes and Ordinances, such as may rightly serve to abolish superstition, and to establish the service of God with all things thereunto appertaining, in some perfect form. There is an inward reasonable, and there is a solemn outward serviceable worship, <sup>a Rom. 12.1.</sup> belonging unto God. Of the former kinde are all kinde of virtuous Duties, that each man in reason and conscience to God-ward oweth. <sup>b Luke 1.23.</sup> Solemn and serviceable worship we name for distinction sake, whatsoever belongeth to the Church or publick society of God by way of external adoration. It is the later of these two, whereupon our present question groweth. Again, this later being ordered, partly, and as touching principal matters, by none but precepts divine onely; partly, and as concerning things of inferior regard, by Ordinances as well humane as divine, about the substance of Religion, wherein Gods onely Law must be kept, there is here no controversie; the crime now intended against us is, that our Lawes have not ordered inferior things as becometh, and that our customs are either superstitious, or otherwise amiss, whether we expect the exercise of publick duties in Religion, or the functions of persons authorized thereunto.

5. It is with teachers of Mathematical Sciences usual, for us in this present question necessary, to lay down first certain reasonable demands, which in most particulars following are to serve as principles whereby to work, and therefore must be before hand considered. The men whom we labour to inform in the truth, perceive that to proceed is requisite. For to this end they also propose, touching customes and rites indifferent, their general axioms, some of them subject unto just exceptions, and as we think, more meet by them to be farther considered, then assented unto by us. As that, *In outward things belonging to the Service of God, reformed Churches ought by all means to shun conformity with the Church of Rome; that, The first reformed should be a pattern whereunto all that come after ought to conform themselves; that, Sound religion may not use the things, which being not commanded of God, have been either devised or abused unto superstition.* These and the rest of the same consort we have in the Book going before examined. Other Canons they allege, and rules not unworthy of approbation; as, *That in all such things the glory of God and the edification or ghostly good of his people must be sought; that nothing should be undecently or unorderly done.* But forasmuch as all the difficulty is in discerning what things do glorifie God, and edifie his Church, what not; when we should think them decent and fir, when otherwise: because these rules being too general, come not near enough unto the matter which we have in hand; and the former principles being nearer the purpose, are too far from truth, we must propose unto all men certain petitions incident and very material in causes of this nature, such as no man of moderate judgment hath cause to think unjust or unreasonable.

Four general Propositions demanding that which may reasonably be granted concerning matters of outward form in the exercise of true Religion. And finally, of a Rule not safe nor reasonable in these cases.

6. The first thing therefore which is of force to cause approbation with good

The first Proposition touching judgment, Church Affairs

what things are convenient in the outward publick ordering of

Consci-

conscience towards such customs or rites, as publickly are establish'd, is, when there ariseth from the due consideration of those customs and rites in themselves apparent reason, although not alwaies to prove them better than any other that might possibly be devised, (for who did ever require this in mans ordinances?) yet content to shew their conveniency and fitness, in regard of the use for which they should serve. Now touching the nature of religious Services, and the manner of their due performance, thus much generally we know to be most clear, that whereas the greatness and dignity of all manner of actions is measured by the worthiness of the subject from which they proceed, and of the object whereabout they are conversant, we must of necessity in both respects acknowledge, that this present world affordeth not any thing comparable unto the publick duties of Religion. For if the best things have the perfectest and best operations, it will follow, that seeing man is the worthiest creature upon earth, and every society of men more worthy than any man, and of societies that most excellent which we call the Church; there can be in this world no work performed equal to the exercise of true Religion, the proper operation of the Church of God. Again, forasmuch as Religion worketh upon him, who in his self and power is infinite, as we ought we account not of it, unless we esteeme it even according to that very height of excellency which our hearts conceive, when Divine sublimity it self is rightly considered. In the powers and

a John. 4. 24.

Wild. 6. 10.

1 Chron. 29. 17

2 Chron. 2. 5

3 Chron. 2. 5

4 Chron. 2. 5

5 Chron. 2. 5

6 Chron. 2. 5

7 Chron. 2. 5

8 Chron. 2. 5

9 Chron. 2. 5

10 Chron. 2. 5

11 Chron. 2. 5

12 Chron. 2. 5

13 Chron. 2. 5

14 Chron. 2. 5

15 Chron. 2. 5

16 Chron. 2. 5

17 Chron. 2. 5

18 Chron. 2. 5

19 Chron. 2. 5

20 Chron. 2. 5

21 Chron. 2. 5

22 Chron. 2. 5

23 Chron. 2. 5

24 Chron. 2. 5

25 Chron. 2. 5

26 Chron. 2. 5

27 Chron. 2. 5

28 Chron. 2. 5

29 Chron. 2. 5

30 Chron. 2. 5

31 Chron. 2. 5

32 Chron. 2. 5

33 Chron. 2. 5

34 Chron. 2. 5

35 Chron. 2. 5

36 Chron. 2. 5

37 Chron. 2. 5

38 Chron. 2. 5

39 Chron. 2. 5

40 Chron. 2. 5

41 Chron. 2. 5

42 Chron. 2. 5

43 Chron. 2. 5

44 Chron. 2. 5

45 Chron. 2. 5

46 Chron. 2. 5

47 Chron. 2. 5

48 Chron. 2. 5

49 Chron. 2. 5

50 Chron. 2. 5

51 Chron. 2. 5

52 Chron. 2. 5

53 Chron. 2. 5

54 Chron. 2. 5

55 Chron. 2. 5

56 Chron. 2. 5

57 Chron. 2. 5

58 Chron. 2. 5

59 Chron. 2. 5

60 Chron. 2. 5

61 Chron. 2. 5

62 Chron. 2. 5

63 Chron. 2. 5

64 Chron. 2. 5

65 Chron. 2. 5

66 Chron. 2. 5

67 Chron. 2. 5

68 Chron. 2. 5

69 Chron. 2. 5

70 Chron. 2. 5

71 Chron. 2. 5

72 Chron. 2. 5

73 Chron. 2. 5

74 Chron. 2. 5

75 Chron. 2. 5

76 Chron. 2. 5

77 Chron. 2. 5

78 Chron. 2. 5

79 Chron. 2. 5

80 Chron. 2. 5

81 Chron. 2. 5

82 Chron. 2. 5

83 Chron. 2. 5

84 Chron. 2. 5

85 Chron. 2. 5

86 Chron. 2. 5

87 Chron. 2. 5

88 Chron. 2. 5

89 Chron. 2. 5

90 Chron. 2. 5

91 Chron. 2. 5

92 Chron. 2. 5

93 Chron. 2. 5

94 Chron. 2. 5

95 Chron. 2. 5

96 Chron. 2. 5

97 Chron. 2. 5

98 Chron. 2. 5

99 Chron. 2. 5

100 Chron. 2. 5

101 Chron. 2. 5

102 Chron. 2. 5

103 Chron. 2. 5

104 Chron. 2. 5

105 Chron. 2. 5

106 Chron. 2. 5

107 Chron. 2. 5

108 Chron. 2. 5

109 Chron. 2. 5

110 Chron. 2. 5

111 Chron. 2. 5

112 Chron. 2. 5

113 Chron. 2. 5

114 Chron. 2. 5

115 Chron. 2. 5

116 Chron. 2. 5

117 Chron. 2. 5

118 Chron. 2. 5

119 Chron. 2. 5

120 Chron. 2. 5

121 Chron. 2. 5

122 Chron. 2. 5

123 Chron. 2. 5

124 Chron. 2. 5

125 Chron. 2. 5

126 Chron. 2. 5

127 Chron. 2. 5

128 Chron. 2. 5

129 Chron. 2. 5

130 Chron. 2. 5

131 Chron. 2. 5

132 Chron. 2. 5

133 Chron. 2. 5

134 Chron. 2. 5

135 Chron. 2. 5

136 Chron. 2. 5

137 Chron. 2. 5

138 Chron. 2. 5

139 Chron. 2. 5

140 Chron. 2. 5

141 Chron. 2. 5

142 Chron. 2. 5

143 Chron. 2. 5

144 Chron. 2. 5

145 Chron. 2. 5

146 Chron. 2. 5

147 Chron. 2. 5

148 Chron. 2. 5

149 Chron. 2. 5

150 Chron. 2. 5

151 Chron. 2. 5

152 Chron. 2. 5

153 Chron. 2. 5

154 Chron. 2. 5

155 Chron. 2. 5

156 Chron. 2. 5

157 Chron. 2. 5

158 Chron. 2. 5

159 Chron. 2. 5

160 Chron. 2. 5

161 Chron. 2. 5

162 Chron. 2. 5

163 Chron. 2. 5

164 Chron. 2. 5

165 Chron. 2. 5

166 Chron. 2. 5

167 Chron. 2. 5

168 Chron. 2. 5

169 Chron. 2. 5

170 Chron. 2. 5

171 Chron. 2. 5

172 Chron. 2. 5

173 Chron. 2. 5

174 Chron. 2. 5

175 Chron. 2. 5

176 Chron. 2. 5

177 Chron. 2. 5

178 Chron. 2. 5

179 Chron. 2. 5

180 Chron. 2. 5

181 Chron. 2. 5

182 Chron. 2. 5

183 Chron. 2. 5

184 Chron. 2. 5

185 Chron. 2. 5

186 Chron. 2. 5

187 Chron. 2. 5

188 Chron. 2. 5

189 Chron. 2. 5

190 Chron. 2. 5

191 Chron. 2. 5

192 Chron. 2. 5

193 Chron. 2. 5

194 Chron. 2. 5

195 Chron. 2. 5

196 Chron. 2. 5

197 Chron. 2. 5

198 Chron. 2. 5

199 Chron. 2. 5

200 Chron. 2. 5

201 Chron. 2. 5

202 Chron. 2. 5

203 Chron. 2. 5

204 Chron. 2. 5

205 Chron. 2. 5

206 Chron. 2. 5

207 Chron. 2. 5

208 Chron. 2. 5

209 Chron. 2. 5

210 Chron. 2. 5

211 Chron. 2. 5

212 Chron. 2. 5

213 Chron. 2. 5

214 Chron. 2. 5

215 Chron. 2. 5

216 Chron. 2. 5

217 Chron. 2. 5

218 Chron. 2. 5

219 Chron. 2. 5

220 Chron. 2. 5

221 Chron. 2. 5

222 Chron. 2. 5

223 Chron. 2. 5

224 Chron. 2. 5

225 Chron. 2. 5

226 Chron. 2. 5

227 Chron. 2. 5

228 Chron. 2. 5

229 Chron. 2. 5

230 Chron. 2. 5

231 Chron. 2. 5

232 Chron. 2. 5

233 Chron. 2. 5

234 Chron. 2. 5

235 Chron. 2. 5

236 Chron. 2. 5

237 Chron. 2. 5

238 Chron. 2. 5

239 Chron. 2. 5

240 Chron. 2. 5

241 Chron. 2. 5

242 Chron. 2. 5

243 Chron. 2. 5

244 Chron. 2. 5

245 Chron. 2. 5

246 Chron. 2. 5

247 Chron. 2. 5</

ness of God having furnished man with two chief instruments, both necessary for this life, hands to execute, and a mind to devise great things; the one is not profitable longer than the vigour of youth doth strengthen it, nor the other greatly, till age and experience have brought it to perfection. In whom therefore time hath not perfected knowledge, such must be contented to follow them in whom it hath. For this cause none is more attentively heard, than they whose speeches are as *David's* were, *I have been young and now am old*; much I have seen and observed in the world. Sharp and subtile discourses of wit procure many times very great applause, but being laid in the ballance with that which the habit of sound experience plainly delivereth, they are over-weighed. God may endue men extraordinarily with understanding as it pleaseth him: but let no man presuming thereupon neglect the instructions, or despise the ordinances of his elders, sith he, whose gift wisdom is, hath said, *Aske thy Father, and he will shew thee, thine Ancients, and they shall tell thee*. It is therefore the voyce both of God and Nature, not of learning only, that especially in matters of action and policy, *The sentences and judgements of men experienced, aged and wise, yea though they speak without any proof or demonstration, are no less to be hearkned unto, than as being demonstrations in themselves, because such mens long observation is as an eye, wherewith they presently and plainly behold those principles which sway over all actions*. Whereby we are taught both the cause wherefore wise mens judgements should be credited, and the mean how to use their judgements to the increase of our own wisdom. That which sheweth them to be wise, is the gathering of principles out of their own particular experiments. And the framing of our particular experiments according to the rule of their principles, shall make us such as they are. If therefore, even at the first, so great account should be made of wise mens counsels touching things that are publikely done, as time shall adde thereunto continuance and approbation of succeeding ages, their credit and authority must needs be greater. They which do nothing but that which men of account did before them, are although they do amiss, yet the less faulty, because they are not the Authours of harme. And doing well, their actions are freed from prejudice and novelty. To the best and wisest, while they live, the world is continually a froward opposite, a curious observer of their defects and imperfections, their vertues it afterwards as much admireth. And for this cause, many times that which most deserveth approbation, would hardly be able to find favour, if they which propose it, were not content to profess themselves therein Scholars and Followers of the Ancient. For the world will not endure to hear that we are wiser than any have been which went before. In which consideration there is cause why we should be slow and unwilling to change, without very urgent necessity, the ancient Ordinances, Rites, and long approved Customes of our venerable Predecessors. The love of things ancient doth argue stayedness; but levity and want of experience maketh apt unto innovations. That which Wisdom did first begin, and hath been with good men long continued, challengeth allowance of them that succeed, although it plead for it self nothing. That which is new, it promise not much, doth fear condemnation before tryal, till tryal, no man doth acquit or trust it, what good soever it pretend and promise. So that in this kind there are few things known to be good, till such time as they grow to be ancient. The vain pretence of those glorious names, where they could not be with any truth, neither in reason ought to have been so much alledged, hath wrought such a prejudice against them in the minds of the common sort, as if they had utterly no force at all, whereas (especially for these observances which concern our present question) Antiquity, Custome, and Consent in the Church of God, making with that which Law doth establish, are themselves most sufficient reasons to uphold the same, unless some notable publick inconvenience enforce the contrary. For a small thing in the eye of Law is as nothing. We are therefore bold to make our second petition this, that in things the firmets whereof is not of it self apparent, nor easie to be made sufficiently manifest unto all, yet the judgement of antiquity concurring with that which is received, may induce the n to think it not unfit, who are not able to alledge any known weighty inconvenience which it hath, or to take any strong exception against.



The third Proposition:

ἡ μὲν ὁρμή-  
σις αὐτῆς τῆς  
ποινῆς ὅπου  
ἀποστρέφεται  
Phil. pag. 35.

T. C. lib. 3.  
pag. 171.

m Eccles. 4: 9.  
n Basil. Ep. 68.  
d. 3. c. qua cōtra.  
Turpis est om-  
nis pars uni-  
verso suo non  
congruens.  
o K. Ismael in  
Cap. Patr.  
p Cassian. de in-  
carn. lib. 1. c. 6.

8. All things cannot be of ancient continuance, which are expedient and need-  
ful for the ordering of spiritual affairs: but the Church being a body which dieth  
not, hath alwayes power, as occasion requireth, no less to ordain that which never  
was, than to ratifie what hath been before. To prescribe the order of doing in all  
things, is a peculiar prerogative which *Wisdom* hath as Queen or Sovereign Com-  
mandress over other vertues. This in every several mans actions of common life  
appertaineth unto *Morall*; in publick and polittick secular affairs unto *Civil* wisdom.  
In like manner, to devise any certain form for the outward administration of pub-  
lick duties in the Service of God, or things belonging thereunto, and to find out the  
most convenient for that use, is a point of *Wisdom Ecclesiastical*. It is not for a  
man which doth know, or should know what order is, and what peaceable govern-  
ment requireth, to ask, *why we should hang our judgement upon the Churches sleeve,*  
and *why in matters of order more than in matters of doctrine.* The Church hath autho-  
rity to establish that for an order at one time, which at another time it may abolish,  
and in both do well. But that which in doctrine the Church doth now deliver right-  
ly as a truth, no man will say that it may hereafter recall, and as rightly avouch the  
contrary. Lawes touching matter of order are changeable, by the power of the  
Church; Articles concerning doctrine not so. We read often in the writings of  
Catholick and Holy men touching matters of doctrine, *This we believe, this we hold,*  
*this the Prophets and Evangelists have declared, this the Apostles have delivered, this*  
*Martyrs have sealed with their blood, and confessed in the midst of torments, to this*  
*we cleave, as to the anchor of our souls, against this, though an Angel from heaven*  
*should preach unto us, we would not believe.* But did we ever in any of them read  
touching matters of meer comeliness, order, and decency, neither commanded nor  
prohibited by any Prophet, any Evangelist, any Apostle, *Although the Church*  
*wherein we live do ordain them, to be kept, although they be never so generally observed,*  
*though all the Churches in the world should command them, though Angels from hea-*  
*ven should require our subjection thereunto.* I would hold him accursed that doth obey?  
Be it in matter of the one kind or of the other, what Scripture doth plainly deli-  
ver, to that the first place both of credit and obedience is due; the next whereunto  
is whatsoever any man can necessarily conclude by force of reason; after these the  
voice of the Church succeedeth. That which the Church by her Ecclesiastical Au-  
thority shall probably think and define to be true or good, must in congruity of rea-  
son over-rule all other inferiour judgements whatsoever. To them which ask why  
we thus hang our judgement on the Churches sleeve, I answer with Solomon, Because  
two are better than one. Yea simply (saith *n Basil*) and universally, whether it be in  
works of Nature, or of voluntary choyce and counsel, I see not any thing done as it  
should be, if it be wrought by an agent singling it selfe from consorts. The Jewes have  
a sentence of good advice, *Take not upon thee to be a Judge alone, there is no sole*  
*Judge but one only; say not to others, Receive my sentence, when their authority is*  
*above thine.* The bare consent of the whole Church should it self in these things  
stop their mouths, who living under it, dare presume to bark against it. *There is* (saith  
*p Cassianus*) *no place of audience left for them, by whom obedience is not yielded to that*  
*which all have agreed upon.* Might we not think it more than wonderful, that Na-  
ture should in all communities appoint a predominant judgement to sway and over-  
rule in so many things; or that God himself should allow so much authority and  
power unto every poor family, for the ordering of all which are in it; and the City  
of the living God, which is his Church, be able neither to command, nor yet to  
forbid any thing, which the meanest shall in that respect, and for her sole authorities  
like be bound to obey? We cannot hide or dissemble that evil, the grievous incon-  
venience whereof we feel. Our dislike of them, by whom too much heretofore  
hath been attributed unto the Church, is grown to an error on the contrary hand,  
so that now from the Church of God too much is derogated. By which removal of  
one extremity with another, the world seeking to procure a remedy, hath purchased  
a meer exchange of the evil which before was felt. Suppose we that the Sacred  
Word of God can at their hands receive due honour, by whose incitement the holy  
Ordinances of the Church endure every where open contempt? No, it is not pos-  
sible they should observe as they ought the one, who from the other withdraw un-  
necessarily

necessarily their own, or their brethrens obedience. Surely the Church of God in this business is neither of capacity, I trust, so weak, nor so unstrengthened, I know, with authority from above, but that her lawes may exact obedience at the hands of her own children, and injoin gain-sayers silence, giving them roundly to understand, that where our duty is submission, weak oppositions betoken pride. We therefore crave thirdly to have it granted, that where neither the evidence of any Law Divine, nor the strength of any invincible argument otherwise found out by the light of reason, nor any notable publique inconvenience doth make against that which our own Lawes Ecclesiasticall have, although but newly instituted, for the ordering of these affairs, the very authority of the Church it self, at the least in such cases, may give so much credit to her own Lawes, as to make their sentence as touching fitness and conveniency weightier than any bare or naked conceit to the contrary; especially in them who can owe no less than child-like obedience to her that hath more than motherly power.

9. There are ancient Ordinances, Lawes which on all sides are allowed to be just and good, yea Divine and Apostolique Constitutions, which the Church, it may be, doth not always keep, nor always justly deserve blame in that respect. For in evils that cannot be removed, without the manifest danger of greater to succeed in their rooms, wisdom (of necessity) must give place to necessity. All it can do in those cases, is to devise, how that, which must be endured, may be mitigated, and the inconveniencies thereof countervailed as near as may be; that when the best things are not possible, the best may be made of those that are. Nature, than which there is nothing more constant, nothing more uniform in all her ways, doth notwithstanding stay her hand, yea and change her course, when that which God by creation did command, he doth at any time by necessity countermand. It hath therefore pleased himself sometime to unloose the very tongues even of dumb creatures, and to teach them to plead this in their own defence, lest the cruelty of man should persist to afflict them for not keeping their wounted course, when some invincible impediment hath hindered. If we leave nature, and look into art, the workman hath in his heart a purpose, he carrieth in mind the whole form which his work should have, there wanteth not in him skill and desire to bring his labour to effect, onely the matter which he hath to work on is unframable. This necessity excuseth him, so that nothing is derogated from his credit, although much of his works perfection be found wanting. Touching actions of common life, there is not any defence more favourably heard than theirs, who allege sincerely for themselves, that they did as necessity constrained them. For when the mind is rightly ordered and affected as it should be, in case some external impediment crossing well-advised desires, shall potently draw men to leave what they principally wish, and to take a course which they would not, if their choice were free; what necessity forceth men unto, the same in this case it maintaineth, as long as nothing is committed simply in it self evil, nothing absolutely sinfull or wicked, nothing repugnant to that immutable Law, whereby, whatsoever is condemned as evil, can never any way be made good. The casting away of things profitable for the sustenance of mans life, is an unthankfull abuse of the fruits of Gods good providence towards mankind. Which consideration for all that did not hinder <sup>b</sup> S. Paul from throwing corn into the Sea, when care of saving mens lives made it necessary, to loose that which else had been better saved. Neither was this to do evil, to the end that good might come of it. For of two such evils, being not both evitable, the choice of the less is not evil. And evils must be in our constructions judged inevitable, if there be no apparent ordinary way to avoid them; because where counsel and advice bear rule, of Gods extraordinary power, without extraordinary warrant we cannot presume. In Civil affairs to declare what sway necessity hath ever been accustomed to bear, were labour infinite. The laws of all States and Kingdoms in the world have scarcely of any thing more common use. Should then only the Church shew it self inhumane and stern, absolutely urge in a rigorous observation of spiritual ordinances, without relaxation or exception, what necessity soever happen? We know the contrary practise to have been commended by him, upon the warrant of whose judgment, the Church most of all delighted with merciful & moderate courses, doth the offer condescend unto like

The fourth Proposition,

Numb. 22. 28.

<sup>a</sup> Necessitas quicquid coegit defendit. Senec. Controv. lib. 9.

<sup>b</sup> Acts 27. 28.

<sup>c</sup> Luc. 6. 4.

a *Causa necessi-  
tatis utilita-  
tis aequiparan-  
tar in iure.*

*Ab. Panor. ad  
c. ut super. nu.  
15. de reb. Ec-  
cles. non alien.*

b *Ἐν τοῖς ἀν-  
τις ἀρχαῖς  
ἀγῶνι, ὅτι μὴ  
καθόλου κερ-  
τεῖται ἡ σὺν-  
ῆσι μίσητος  
ἀλλ' ἀντιθέτου,  
ὅτι γὰρ τὰ  
κατ' ἕνα καὶ  
ἀντιθέτου. Ἀρισ-  
τοτ. ἠ. 1. 6. 7.*

equity, permitting in cases of necessity that, which otherwise it disalloweth and for-  
biddeth. Cases of necessity being sometime but urgent, sometime extream, the conside-  
ration of a publick utility is by very good advice judged at the least equivalent with  
the easier kind of necessity. Now that which causeth numbers to storme against some  
necessary tolerations, which they should rather let pass with silence, considering that  
in Po itie as well Ecclesiastical as Civil, there are and will be always evils, which no  
art of man can cure, breaches and leaks more than mans wit hath hands to stop; that  
which maketh odious unto them many things, wherein notwithstanding the truth is,  
that very just regard hath been had of the publick good; that which in a great part  
of the weightiest causes belonging to this present controversie, hath insinared the  
judgments both of sundry good, and of some well learned men, is the manifest truth  
of certain general principles, wherupon the Ordinances that serve for usual practise in  
the Church of God are grounded. Which principles men knowing to be most sound,  
and that the ordinary practise accordingly framed is good, whatsoever is over and  
besides that ordinary, the same they judge repugnant to those true principles. The  
cause of which error is ignorance, what restraints and limitations all such principles  
have, in regard of so manifold varieties, as the *b* matter whereunto they are appli-  
able, doth commonly afford. These varieties are not known but by much experience,  
from whence to draw the true bounds of all principles, to discern how far forth they  
take effect, to see where and why they fail, to apprehend by what degrees and means  
they lead to the practise of things in show, though not indeed repugnant and con-  
trary one to another, requireth more sharpness of wit, more intricate circutations of  
discourse, more industry and depth of judgement than common ability doth yield.  
So that general Rules, till their limits be fully known (especially in matter of pub-  
lick and Ecclesiasticall affairs) are, by reason of the manifold secret exceptions  
which lie hidden in them, no other to the eye of mans understanding, than cloudy  
mists cast before the eye of common sense. They that walk in darkness know not  
whither they go. And even as little is their certainty, whose opinions generalities  
only do guid. With gross and popular capacities, nothing doth more prevail, than  
unlimited generalities, because of their plainness at the first sight; nothing less  
with men of exact judgement, because such Rules are not safe to be trusted over-  
far. General Lawes are like general Rules of Physick, according whereunto, as  
no wise man will desire himself to be cured, if there be joined with his disease some  
special accident, in regard whereof that whereby others in the same infirmity, but  
without the like accident, recover health, would be to him either hurtfull, or at the  
least unprofitable: So we must not, under a colourable commendation of holy  
Ordinances in the Church, and of reasonable causes whereupon they have been  
grounded for the common good, imagine that all mens cases ought to have one  
measure. Not without singular wisdom therefore it hath been provided, that as  
the ordinary course of common affaires is disposed of by general Lawes, so like-  
wise mens rarer incident necessities and utilities should be with special equity con-  
sidered. From hence it is, that so many privileges, immunities, exceptions,  
and dispensations have been always with great equity and reason granted, not to  
turn the edge of Justice, or to make void at certaine times, and in certaine men  
through meer voluntary grace or benevolence, that which continually and univer-  
sally should be of force (as some understand it) but in very truth to practise ge-  
neral Lawes according to their right meaning. We see in contracts and other deal-  
ings which daily pass between man and man, that, to the utter undoing of some,  
many things by strictness of Law may be done, which equity and honest meaning  
forbiddeth. Not that the Law is unjust, but imperfect; nor equity against, but  
above the Law; binding mens consciences in things which Lawe cannot  
reach unto. Will any man say, that the vertue of private equitie is oppo-  
site and repugnant to that Lawe, the silence whereof it supplieth in all such  
private dealing? No more is publique equity against the Lawe of publique  
affaires, albeit the one permit unto some in special Considerations, that  
which the other agreeably with general Rules of Justice doth in generall sort  
forbid. For, sith all good Lawes are the voices of right reason, which is the  
instrument wherewith God will have the world guided, and impossible it is  
that



that right should withstand right; it must follow that principles and rules of Justice, be they never so generally uttered, do no less effectually intend, than if they did plainly express an exception of all particulars, wherein their literal practise might any way prejudice equity; and because it is natural unto all men to wish their own extraordinary benefit, when they think they have reasonable inducements so to do; and no man can be presumed a competent judge what equity doth require in his own case, the likeliest mean whereby the wit of man can provide, that he which useth the benefit of any special benignity above the common course of others, may enjoy it with good conscience, and not against the true purpose of Laws, which in outward shew are contrary, must needs be to arme with authority some fit both for quality and place to administer that, which in every such particular shall appear agreeable with equity: wherein, as it cannot be denied, but that sometimes the practise of such Jurisdiction may swerve through error even in the very best, and for other respects, where less integrity is. So the watchfullest observers of inconveniences that way growing, and the readiest to urge them in disgrace of authorized proceedings, do very well know, that the disposition of these things resteth not now in the hands of Popes, who live in no worldly awe or subjection, but is committed to them whom Law may at all times bridle, and superiour power controll; yea to them also in such sort, that Law it self hath set down to what persons, in what causes, with what circumstances, a most every faculty or favour shall be granted, leaving in a manner nothing unto them, more than only to deliver what is already given by Law. Which maketh it by many degrees less reasonable; that under pretence of inconveniences so easily stopped; if any did grow, and so well prevented, that none may, men should be altogether barred of the liberty that Law with equity and reason granteth. These things therefore considered, we lastly require that it may not seem hard, if in cases of necessity, or for common utilities sake, certain profitable ordinances sometimes be released, rather than all men alwayes, strictly bound to the general rigor thereof.

10. Now where the word of God leaveth the Church to make choyce of her own Ordinances, if against those things which have been received with great reason, or against that which the ancient practise of the Church hath continued time out of mind, or against such Ordinances as the power and authority of that Church under which we live hath in it self devised, for the publique good, or against the discretion of the Church in mitigating sometimes with favourable equity, that rigour which otherwise the literal generality of Ecclesiastical Lawes hath judged to be more convenient and meet, if against all this it should be free for men to raprove, to disgrace, to reject at their own liberty what they see done and practised according to order set down, if in so great variety of ways, as the wit of man is easily able to find out towards any purpose, and in so great liking as all men especially have unto those inventions, whereby some one shall seem to have been more enlightened from above than many thousands, the Church did give every man licence to so low what himself imagineth that *Gods Spirit doth reveal* unto him, or what he supposeth that God is likely to have revealed to some special person, whose vertues deserve to be highly esteemed, what other effect could hereupon ensue, but the utter confusion of his Church, under pretence of being taught, led, and guided by his Spirit? the gifts and graces whereof do so naturally all tend unto common peace, that where such singularity is, they whose hearts it possesseth, ought to suspect it the more, in as much as if it did come of God, and should for that cause prevail with others, the same God which revealeth it to them, would also give them power of confirming it unto others, either with miraculous operation, or with strong and invincible remonstrancy of sound reason, such as whereby it might appear that God would indeed have all mens judgements give place unto it; whereas now the error and unsufficiency of their Arguments doth make it on the contrary side against them a strong presumption, that God hath not moved their hearts to think such things, as he hath not enabled them to prove. And so from Rules of general Direction it resteth, that now we descend to a more distinct explication of particulars, wherein those Rules have their special efficacy.

The rule of mens private spirits not safe in these cases to be followed.

11. Solemne Duties of publique service to bee done unto God, must have

Places for the  
publique service  
of God.

a Gen. 3. 8.  
b Gen. 4. 3.  
c Gen. 13. 4.  
d 22. 1.  
e 21. 33.  
f Exod. 16.  
g Deut. 12. 5.  
h 1 Chron. 3. 1.  
i 1 Chron. 6. 7.  
Psal. 132. 5.

have their places set and prepared in such sort, as becometh actions of that regard. Adam even during the space of his small continuance in *Paradise*, had <sup>a</sup> where to present himself before the Lord. Adams sons had out of *Paradise* in like sort <sup>b</sup> whither to bring their sacrifices. The Patriarchs used <sup>c</sup> Altars, and <sup>d</sup> Mountains, and <sup>e</sup> groves, to the self same purpose. In the vast wilderness when the people of God had themselves no settled habitation, yet a moveable <sup>f</sup> Tabernacle they were commanded of God to make. The like charge was given them against the time they should come to settle themselves in the land which had been promised unto their fathers, <sup>g</sup> *Ye shall seek that place which the Lord your God shall chuse*. When God had chosen *Jerusalem*, and in *Jerusalem* Mount <sup>h</sup> *Moria*, there to have his standing habitation made, it was in the chiefeft of <sup>i</sup> *Dauids* desires to have performed so good a work. His grief was no less, that he could not have the honour to build God a Temple, than their anger is at this day, who bite asunder their own tongues with very wrath, that they have not as yet the power to pull down the Temples which they never built, and to level them with the ground. It was no mean thing which he purposed. To perform a work so majestickall and stately was no small charge. Therefore, <sup>k</sup> he incited all men unto bountifull contribution, and procured towards it with all his power, gold, silver, briss, iron, wood, precious stones, in great abundance. Yea moreover, <sup>l</sup> *because I have* (saith David) *a joy in the house of my God, I have of mine own gold and silver, besides all that I have prepared for the house of the Sanctuary, given to the house of my God three thousand Talents of Gold, even the Gold of Ophir, seven thousand Talents of fined silver*. After the overthrow of this first House of God, a second was in stead thereof erected, but with so great odds, that <sup>m</sup> they wept which had seen the former, and beheld how much this later came behind it, the beauty whereof notwithstanding was such, that even this was also the wonder of the whole world. Besides which Temple, there were both in other parts of the Land, and even in *Jerusalem*, by process of time, no small number of Synagogues for men to resort unto. Our Saviour himself, and after him the Apostles frequented both the one and the other. The Church of Christ which was in *Jerusalem*, and held that profession which had not the publique allowance and countenance of Authority, could not so long use the exercise of Christian Religion but in <sup>n</sup> private only. So that as Jews they had access to the Temple and Synagogues, where God was served after the custom of the Law, but for that which they did as Christians, they were of necessity forced elsewhere to assemble themselves. And as God gave increase to his Church, they sought out both there and abroad for that purpose not the fittest (for so the times would not suffer them to do) but the safest places they could. In process of time somewhiles by sufferance, somewhiles by special leave and favour, they began to erect to themselves Oratories, not in any sumptuous or stately manner, which neither was possible by reason of the poor estate of the Church, and had been perilous in regard of the worlds envie towards them. At length, when it pleased God to raise up Kings and Emperours favouring sincerely the Christian truth, that which the Church before either could not, or durst not do, was with all alacrity performed. Temples were in all places erected, No cost was spared, nothing judged too dear which that way should be spent. The whole world did seem to exult, that it had occasion of pouring out gifts to so blessed a purpose. That cheerful devotion which *David* this way did exceedingly delight to behold, and <sup>o</sup> wish that the same in the Jewish people might be perpetual, was then in Christian people every where to be seen. Their actions till this day always accustomed to be spoken of with great honour, are now called openly into question. They and as many as have been followers of their example in that thing; we especially that worship God, either in Temples which their hands made, or which other men sithence have framed by the like pattern, are in that respect charged no less than with the sin of Idolatry. Our Churches in the foam of that good Spirit, which directeth such fiery tongues, they term spitefully the Temples of *Baal*, are idle Synagogues, abominable styes.

12. Wherein the first thing which moveth them thus to cast up their poison, is certain solemnities usual at the first erection of Churches. Now although the same should be blame-worthy, yet this age (chanks be to God) hath reasonably well forborn to incur the danger of any such blame.

1c

The solemnity  
of erecting  
Churches con-  
demned by Bar.  
p. 130. The fol-  
lowing & dedi-  
cating of them  
scorned p. 141.

n AB. 1. 19.  
o 2. 1.  
p 2. 46.

1c

k 1 Chron. 15. 9.  
l 1 Chron. 29. 3.  
m Eze. 3. 11.  
n Agg. 2. 4.  
o 1 Chron. 29. 17. 18.

It cannot be laid to many mens charge at this day living, either that they have been so curious, as to trouble Bishops with placing the first stone in the Churches they built, or so scrupulous, as after the erection of them, to make any great ado for their dedication. In which kind notwithstanding as we do neither allow unmeer, nor purpose the stiff defence of any unnecessary custome <sup>a</sup> heretofore received: So we know no reason wherefore Churches should be the worse, if at the first erecting of them, at the making of them publique, at the time when they are delivered, as it were, into Gods own possession, and when the use whereunto they shall ever serve is established, Ceremonies fit to betoken such intents, and to accompany such actions be usual, as <sup>b</sup> in the purest times they have been. When <sup>c</sup> *Constantine* had finished an house for the service of God at *Jerusalem*, the dedication he judged a matter not unworthy, about the solemn performance whereof, the greatest part of the Bishops in Christendom should meet together. Which thing they did at the Emperours motion, each most willingly setting forth that action to their power, some with Orations, some with Sermons, some with the sacrifice of Prayers unto God for the peace of the world, for the Churches safety, for the Emperours and his childrens good. <sup>d</sup> By *Athanasius* the like is recorded concerning a Bishop of *Alexandria*; in a work of the like devout magnificence. So that whether Emperours or Bishops in those days were Church-founders, the solemn dedication of Churches they thought not to be a work in it self either vaine, or superstitious. Can we judge it a thing seemly for any man to go about the building of an house to the God of Heaven with no other appearance, than if his end were to rear up a kitchen, or a parlour for his own use? Or when a work of such nature is finished, remaineth there nothing but presently to use it, and so an end? It becometh that the place where God shall be served by the whole Church, be a publick place, for the avoiding of privy Conventicles, which covered with pretence of Religion, may serve unto dangerous practises. Yea, though such assemblies be had indeed for Religions sake, hurtfull nevertheless they may easily prove, as well in regard of their fitness to serve the turn of Heretiques, and such as privily will soonest adventure to insill their poyson into mens minds; as also for the occasion, which thereby is given to malicious persons, both of suspecting, and of traducing with more colourable shew those actions, which in themselves being holy, should be so ordered, that no man might properly otherwise think of them. Which considerations have by so much the greater waight, for that of these inconveniencies the Church heretofore had so plain experience, when Christian men were driven to use secret meetings, because the liberty of publick places was not granted them. There are which hold, that the presence of a Christian multitude, and the duties of Religion performed amongst them, do make the place of their Assembly publique, even as the presence of the King and his Retinue maketh any mans house a Court. But this I take to be an error, in as much as the onely thing which maketh any place publique, is the publique assignement thereof unto such duties. As for the multitude there assembled, or the duties which they perform, it doth not appear how either should be of force to infuse any such prerogative. Nor doth the solemn dedication of Churches serve onely to make them publique, but further also to surrender up that right which otherwise their founders might have in them, and to make God himself their owner. For which cause at the Erection and Consecration as well of the <sup>e</sup> *Tabernacle*, as of <sup>f</sup> the *Temple*, it pleased the Almighty to give a manifest signe that he took possession of both. Finally, <sup>g</sup> it notifieth in solemn manner the holy and religious use whereunto it is intended such houses shall be put. <sup>h</sup> These things the wisdom of *Solomon* did not account superfluous. He knew how easily that which was meant should be holy and sacred, might be drawn from the use whereunto it was first provided; he knew how bold men are to take even from God himself; how hardly that house would be kept from impious profanation, he knew; and right wisely therefore endeavoured by such solemnities to leave in the minds of men that <sup>i</sup> impression, which might somewhat restrain their boldness, and nourish a reverend affection towards the house of God. For which cause when the first house was destroyed, and a new in the stead thereof erected by the children of *Israel* after their return from captivity, they kept the <sup>j</sup> dedication even of this house also with joy.

<sup>a</sup> Durand. rational. lib. 1. cap. 6. de consecr. d. 1. c. tabernaculum. Greg. Mag. lib. 10. epist. 11. c. 116. 7. epist. 71. c. 1. 8. ep. 63. <sup>b</sup> Eusebius. *Εκκλησιαστικη* *Ιστορια* *Βιβλ. 10. κεφ. 13.* *καὶ καλῶς ἔχον· μᾶλλον δὲ τὰ νῦν τῶν μᾶλλον δὲ ἱερατικῶν.* *Καὶ τὸ τοῦ ἁγίου πνεύματος ἔκστασις ἡ ἐν αὐτῷ πνεύματι ἡ αὐτῶν ἡμερῶν ἱερατικῶν ἡ ἐκ τῶν χρόνων γινώσκοντες καὶ τὰς καλὰς ἐκείνων.* <sup>c</sup> Vide Euseb. de vita Constant. lib. 4. cap. 41. 43. 44. 45. <sup>d</sup> Athanasius. *Apologia Constantium.* <sup>e</sup> Exod. 40. 34. <sup>f</sup> Reg. 8. 11. <sup>g</sup> Exod. 49. <sup>h</sup> Reg. 8. <sup>i</sup> Levit. 16. 2. The place named holy. <sup>j</sup> Exod. 6. 16.



<sup>a</sup> *Math. 23. 13.* The <sup>a</sup> argument which our Saviour useth against Prophaners of the Temple, he taketh from the use whereunto it was with solemnity consecrated. And as the Prophet *Jeremy* forbiddeth the carrying of <sup>b</sup> burdens on the Sabbath, because that was a Sanctified day: So because the Temple was a place sanctified, our Lord would not suffer, no <sup>c</sup> nor the carriage of a vessel through the Temple: These two Commandements therefore are in the Law conjoynd, <sup>d</sup> *Ye shall keep my Sabbaths, and reverence my Sanctuary.* Out of those the Apostles words, *Have ye not houses to eat and drink?* albeit Temples, such as now, were not then erected for the exercise of Christian Religion, <sup>e</sup> it hath been nevertheless not absurdly conceived, that he teacheth what difference should be made between house and house; that what is fit for the dwelling place of God, and what for mans habitation he sheweth; requireth that Christian men at their own home take common food, and in the house of the Lord none but that food which is heavenly; he instructeth them, that as in the one place they use to refresh their bodies, so they may in the other learn to seek the nourishment of their souls; and as there they sustain temporal life, so here they would learn to make provision for eternal: Christ could not suffer that the Temple should serve for a place of Mart, nor the Apostle of Christ, that the Church should be made an Inne. When therefore we sanctifie or hallow Churches, that which we do, is only to testify that we make them places of publick resort, that we invest God himself with them, that we sever them from common uses. In which action, other solemnities than such as are decent and fit for that purpose we approve none. Indeed we condemn not all as unmeet, the like whereunto have been either devised or used haply amongst Idolaters. For why should conformity with them in matter of opinion be lawful, when they think that which is true, if in action, when they do that which is meet, it be not lawful to be like unto them? Are we to forsake any true opinion, because Idolaters have maintained it? or to shun any requisite action, only because we have in the practise thereof been prevented by Idolaters. It is no impossible thing, but that sometimes they may judge as rightly what is decent about external affairs of God, as in greater things what is true. Not therefore whatsoever Idolaters have either thought or done, but let whatsoever they have either thought or done idolatrously, be so far forth abhorred. For of that which is good even in evil things, God is Author.

Of the names 13. Touching the names of Angels and Saints, whereby the most of our Churches whereby we distinguish our Churches. <sup>g</sup> From *Kuene* <sup>h</sup> *Kyr*, and by adding letters of aspiration, *Chyrch*. <sup>i</sup> *V. Soc. l. 1. c. 6.* <sup>j</sup> *Eu. lib. 4. c. 30.* <sup>k</sup> *Hist. Trip. l. 4. cap. 12.* <sup>l</sup> *V. Aug. l. 8. de civ. Dei, c. 27. l. 22. cap. 10. Epi. 49. ad Dec. gra.* The duty which Christian men performed in keeping Festival dedications. <sup>m</sup> *S. Basil termeth λατρεία?* <sup>n</sup> *Deu* acknowledging the same to have been withall <sup>o</sup> *τιμὴν εἰς τὸ μαρτυρεῖν.* <sup>p</sup> *Basil. in P. J. 114.* <sup>q</sup> *13.* Touching the names of Angels and Saints, whereby the most of our Churches are called; as the custome of so naming them is very ancient, so neither was the cause thereof at the first, nor is the use and continuance with us at this present hurtful. That Churches were consecrated unto none but the Lord only, the very general name it self doth sufficiently shew, in as much as by plain grammatical construction, <sup>r</sup> *Church* doth signifie no other thing than *the Lords House*. And because the multitude, as of persons, so of things particular causeth variety of proper names to be devised for distinction sake, Founders of Churches did herein that which best liked their own conceit at the present time; yet each intending, that as oft as those Buildings came to be mentioned, the name should put men in mind of some memorable thing or person. Thus therefore it cometh to pass, that all Churches have had their names, <sup>s</sup> some as memorials of peace, some of wisdom, some in memory of the Trinity it self; some of Christ under sundry titles; of the blessed Virgin not of a few, many of one Apostle, Saint, or Martyr, many of all. In which respect their commendable purpose being not of every one understood, they have been in later ages construed as though they had superstitiously meant, either that those places which were denominated of Angels and Saints, should serve for the worship of so glorious creatures, or else those glorified creatures for defence, protection, and patronage of such places. A thing which the Ancients do utterly disclaim. <sup>t</sup> To them saith Saint *Augustine*, we appoint no Churches, because they are not to us as Gods. Again, *The Nations to their Gods erected Temples, we not Temples unto our Martyrs as unto Gods, but memorials as unto dead men, whose spirits with God are still living.* Divers considerations there are, for which Christian Churches might first take their names of Saints: as either because by the Ministry of Saints it pleased God there to shew some rare effect of his power; or else in regard of death, which those Saints having suffered for the testimony of Jesus Christ,

Christ, did thereby make the places where they dyed venerable; or thirdly, for that it liked good and vertuous men to give such occasion of mentioning them often, to the end that the naming of their persons might cause enquiry to be made, and meditation to be had of their vertues. Wherefore seeing that we cannot justly account it superstition, to give unto Churches those fore-rehearsed names, as memorials either of holy persons or things, if it be plain that their Founders did with such meaning name them, shall not we in otherwise taking them, offer them injury? Or if it be obscure or uncertain what they meant, yet this construction being more favourable, charity (I hope) constraineth no man which standeth doubtful of their minds, to lean to the hardest and worst interpretation that their words can carry. Yea, although it were cleer, that they all (for the error of some is manifest in this behalf) had therein a superstitious intent, wherefore should their fault prejudice us, (who as all men know) do use but by way of meer distinction the names which they of superstition gave? In the use of those names whereby we distinguish both dayes and moneths, are we culpable of superstition, because they were, who first invented them? The signe <sup>k</sup> *Cassor* and *Pollux* superstitiously given unto that ship wherein the Apostle sailed, polluteeth not the Evangelists pen, who thereby doth but distinguish that ship from others. If to *Daniel* there had been given no other name, but only <sup>l</sup> *Belisbazzar*, given him in honour of the Babylonian Idol *Belis*, should their Idolatry, which were authors of that name, cleave unto every man which had so teamed him by way of personal difference only? Were it not to satisfie the minds of the simpler sort of men, these nice curiosities are not worthy the labour which we bestow to answer them.

k *Ad. 28. 11.*

l *Dan. 4. 5.*

*Vide Scal. de emendat. temp. lib. 6. pag. 377.*

14. The like unto this is a fancy, which they have against the fashion of our Churches, as being framed according to the pattern of the Jewish Temple. A fault no less grievous, if so be it were true, than if some King should build his mansion house by the model of *Solomons* Palace. So far-forth as our Churches and their Temple have one end, what should letr, but that they may lawfully have one form? The Temple was for Sacrifice, and therefore had rooms to that purpose, such as ours have none. Our Churches are places provided, that the people might there assemble themselves in due and decent manner, according to their severall degrees and orders. Which thing being common unto us with Jews, we have in this respect our Churches divided by certain partitions, although not so many in number as theirs. They had their severall for Heathen Nations, their severall for the people of their own Nation, their severall for men, their severall for women, their severall for their Priests, and for the high Priest alone their severall. There being in ours for local distinction between the Clergy and the rest (which yet we do not with any great strictness or curiosity observe neither) but one partition, the cause whereof at the first (as it seemeth) was, that as many as were capable of the holy mysteries, might there assemble themselves, and no other creep in amongst them; this is now made a matter so hainous, as if our Religion thereby were become plain Judaisme, and as though we retained a most holy place, whereinto there might not any but the high Priest alone enter, according to the custome of the Jewes:

Of the fashion of the Churches.

15. Some it highly displeaseth, that so great expences this way are employed: The sumptuousness of such magnificence (they think) is but only a proud ambitious desire to be spoken of far and wide. Suppose we that God himself delighted to dwell sumptuously, or taketh pleasure in chargeable pomp? No, then was the Lord most acceptably served, when his Temples were rooms borrowed within the houses of poor men. This was suitable unto the nakedness of *Jesus Christ* and the simplicity of his Gospel. What thoughts or cogitations they had which were Authors of those things, the use and benefit whereof hath descended unto our selves, as we do not know, so we need not search. It cometh (we grant) many times to pass, that the works of men being the same, their drifts and purposes therein are divers. The charge of *Herod* about the Temple of God was ambitious, yet *Solomons* vertuous, *Constantines* holy. But howsoever their hearts are disposed by whom any such thing is done in the World, shall we think that it baneth the work which they leave behind them, or taketh away from others the use and benefit thereof? Touching God himself, hath he any where revealed, that it is his delight to dwell beggerly? and that he taketh no pleasure

The sumptuousness of Churches.

\* Εἴς τὸν τὸ μέ-  
 γα καλὸν ἵ-  
 μιον \* ὅς γάρ  
 τοῦτε ἡ δει-  
 κία δαυμασ-  
 Αἰσθ. Εἰβ. 1. 4.  
 ε. 1. τὰ ἀισθη-  
 σαι καλὰ ὅς γάρ  
 πον καλὸν εἰ-  
 κόνος. Philo.  
 Jul.  
 a Felix the sa-  
 vi imperia u  
 quaster consti-  
 catum sacrum  
 uasorum pretia.  
 En inquit qua-  
 libet uasi mi-  
 nistratio Ma-  
 ria filio.  
 Theodor. hist.  
 Eccles. 1. 3. c. 12.  
 b Eccles. 3. 3. 4.  
 c Agge 1. 5. 10.  
 d M. nat. Val.  
 in Ollav.

e Euseb. lib. 8.  
 cap. 1.

f Euseb. lib. 8.  
 cap. 2.

g Euseb. lib. 10.  
 cap. 1.

h 1 Chron. 28. 14

i 1 Chron. 2. 5.

pleasure to be worshipped, saving onely in poor Cottages? Even then was the Lord as acceptably honoured of his people as ever, when the stateliest places and things in the whole World were sought out to adorn his Temple. This is most \* suitable, decent, and fit for the greatness of Jesus Christ, for the sublimity of his Gospel, except we think of Christ and his Gospel as \* the Officers of Julian did. As therefore the son of Syrach giveth verdict concerning those things, which God hath wrought, *A man need not say this is worse than that, this more acceptable to God, that left, for in their season they are all worthy praise*: the like we may also conclude, as touching these two so contrary ways of providing in meane or in costlier sort for the honour of Almighty God, *A man need not say this is worse than that, this more acceptable to God, that left, for with him they are in their season both allowable*; the one, when the state of the Church is poor, the other, when God hath enriched it with plenty. When they, which had seen the beauty of the first Temple, built by Solomon in the days of his great prosperity and peace, beheld how far it excelled the second, which had not builders of like ability, the tears of their grieved eyes the Prophets \* endeavoured with comforts to wipe away. Whereas if the House of God were by so much the more perfect, by how much the glory thereof is less, they should have done better to rejoyce than weep, their Prophets better to reprove than comfort. It being objected against the Church in the times of universal persecution, that her Service done to God was not solemnly performed in Temples fit for the honour of Divine Majesty, their most convenient answer was, that *The best Temples which we can dedicate to God, are our sanctified souls and bodies*. Whereby it plainly appeareth, how the Fathers, when they were upbraided with that defect, comforted themselves with the meditation of Gods most gracious and merciful nature, who did not therefore the less accept of their hearty affection and zeal rather, than took any great delight, or imagined any high perfection in such their want of externa Ornaments, which when they wanted, the cause was their only lack of ability; ability serving, they wanted them not. Before the \* Emperour Constantines time, under Severus, Gordian, Philip, and Galienus, the state of Christian affairs being tolerable, the former buildings which were but of mean and small estate contented them not, spacious and ample Churches they erected throughout every City. No envy was able to be their hinderance, no practise of Satan or fraud of men available against their proceedings herein, while they continued as yet worthy to feel the aid of the arme of God extended over them for their safety. These Churches Dioclesian \* caused by solemn Edict to be afterwards overthrown. Maximinus with like authority giving leave to erect them, the hearts of all men were even wrapt with divine joy, to see those places, which tyrannous impiety had laid waste, recovered, as it were out of mortal calamity, Churches \* reared up to an height immeasurable, and adorned with far more beauty in their resplendence than their Founders before had given them. Whereby we see how most Christian minds stood then affected, we see how joyful they were to behold the unspacious stateliness of Houses built unto Gods glory. If we should, over and besides this, alledge the care which was had, that all things about the Tabernacle or Moses might be as beautiful, gorgeous, and rich, as Art could make them, or what travel and cost was bestowed, that the goodliness of the Temple might be a spectacle of admiration to all the world; this they will say was figurative, and served by Gods appointment but for a time, to shadow out the true everlasting glory of a more divine Sanctuary, whereinto Christ being long since entered, it seemeth that all those curious exornations should rather cease. Which thing we also our selves would grant, if the use thereof had been meerly and only mytical. But such the Prophet David doth mention a natural conveniency which such kind of bounteous expences have, as well for that we do thereby give unto God a testimony of our \* cheerful affection, which thinketh nothing too dear to be bestowed about the furniture of his Service, as also because it serveth to the world for a witness of his \* Almightriness, whom we outwardly honour with the chiefest of outward things, as being of all things himself incomparably the greatest. Besides, were it not also strange, if God should have made such store of glorious creatures on earth, and leave them all to be consumed in secular vanity, allowing none but



but the better sort to be employed in his own service? To let forth the Majesty of Kings his Vicegerents in this world, the most gorgeous and rare treasures which the world hath, are procured. We think, <sup>a</sup>belike, that he will accept what the meanest of them would disdain. If there be great care to build and beautifie these corruptible Sanctuaries, little or none, that the living Temples of the Holy Ghost, the dearly redeemed Souls of the people of God may be edified; huge expences upon Timber and Stone, but towards the relief of the poor small devotion; Cost this way infinite, and in the mean while Charity cold; we have in such case just occasion to make complaint as <sup>c</sup>Saint Jerom did, *The walls of the Church there are snow contented to build, and to underfet it with goodly pillars, the marbles are polished, the roofs shine with gold; the Altar hath precious stones to adorn it; and of Christs Ministers no choyce at all.* The same Jerom both in that place and <sup>d</sup>elsewhere debaseth with like intent the glory of such magnificence (a thing whereunto mens affections in those times needed no spurre) thereby to extoll the necessary sometimes of charity and almes, sometimes of other the most principal duties belonging unto Christian men, which duties were neither so highly esteemed as they ought, and being compared with that in question, the directest sentence we can give of them both, as unto me it seemeth, is this; *God who requireth the one as necessary, accepteth the other also as being an honourable work.*

16. Our opinion concerning the force and vertue which such places have, is, I trust, without any blemish or itain of Heresie. Churches receive, as every thing else, their chief perfection from the end whereunto they serve. Which end being the publick worship of God, they are, in this consideration, houses of greater dignity, than any provided for meaner purposes. For which cause they seem after a sort even to mourn, as being injured and defrauded of their right, when places not sanctified as they are, prevent them *unnecessarily* in that preheminance and honour. Whereby also it doth come pass, that the Service of God hath not then it self such perfection of grace and comelinesse, as when the dignity of place which it wisheth for doth concur. Again, albeit the true worship of God be to God in it self acceptable, who respecteth not so much in what place, as with what affection he is served; and therefore *Moses* in the midst of the Sea, *Job* on the dunghill, *Ezekias* in bed, *Jeremy* in mire, *Jonas* in the Whale, *Daniel* in the Den, the Children in the Furnace, the Thief on the Cross, *Peter* and *Paul* in Prison, calling unto God, were heard; as <sup>e</sup>*S. Basil* noteth: manifest notwithstanding it is, that the very majesty and holiness of the place where God is worshipped, hath *in regard of us* <sup>f</sup>great vertue, force and efficacy, for that it serveth as a sensible help to stirre up devotion, and *in that respect*, no doubt, *bettereth* even our holiest and best actions in this kind. As therefore we every where exhort all men to worship God, even so, for performance of this Service by the people of God assembled, we think not any place so good as the Church, neither any exhortation so fit as that of *David*, <sup>g</sup>*O Psal. 96. 9.* *worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness.*

17. For of our Churches thus it becometh us to esteem, howsoever others rapt with the pang of a furious zeal, do pour out against them devout blasphemies, crying, <sup>h</sup>*Down with them, down with them, even to the very ground; For to Idolatry they have been abused. And the places where Idols have been worshipped, are by the Law of God devote to utter destruction.* For execution of which Law, the <sup>i</sup>*Kings* that were Godly, as *Asa*, *Jehosaphat*, *Ezekias*, *Josia*, destroyed all the high places, Altars and Groves, which had been erected in *Juda* and *Israel*. He that said, *Thou shalt have no other gods before my face*, hath likewise said, *Thou shalt utterly deface and destroy all these Synagogues and places where such Idols have been worshipped.* This Law containeth the temporal punishment which God hath set down, and will that men execute, for the breach of the other Law. They which spare them therefore, do but reserve, as the Hypocrite *Saul* did, execrable things, to worship God withall. The truth is, that as no man serveth God, and loveth him not; so neither can any man sincerely love God, and not extreemly abhorre that sin, which is the highest degree of treason against the supream Guide and Monarch of the whole world, with whose divine authority and power it investeth others. By means whereof the state of Idolaters is two ways miserable. First, In that which they worship

<sup>a</sup> Math. 6. 29.

<sup>b</sup> Malac. 1. 8.

<sup>c</sup> Ad Nepolian. de vita cleric.

<sup>d</sup> Ad Demetr. Epist. 12. ad Gaudentium.

<sup>e</sup> What Holiness and Vertue we ascribe to the Church, more than other places.

<sup>f</sup> Exhort. ad Bapt. et penitent.

<sup>g</sup> O Psal. 96. 9.

<sup>h</sup> Their pretence that would have Churches utterly razed.

<sup>i</sup> Psal. 137. 7.

<sup>j</sup> Deut. 12. 2.

<sup>k</sup> 2 Chron. 17. 5.

<sup>l</sup> 2 Chron. 29.

<sup>m</sup> 2 Chron. 3.

a *Isa. 41. 24.* worship they find no succour; and secondly, at his hands whom they ought to serve, there is no other thing to be looked for, but the effects of most just displeasure, the withdrawing of grace; dereliction in this world, and in the world to come confusion. *Paul & Barnabas*, when Infidels admiring their virtues, went about to sacrifice unto them, rent their garments in token of horror, and as frightened persons, ran crying thorow the press of the people, *O men, wherefore do ye these things?* They knew the force of that dreadful curse whereunto Idolatry maketh subject. Nor is there cause why the guilty sustaining the same, should grudge or complain of injustice. For whatsoever evil befallerh in that respect, themselves have made themselves worthy to suffer it. As for those things either *wherein*, or *elie wherewith* superstition worketh, polluted they are by such *abuse*, and deprived of that dignity which their nature delighteth in. For there is nothing which doth not grieve, and as it were, even loath it self, whensoever iniquity causeth it to serve unto vile purposes. Idolatry therefore maketh, whatsoever it toucheth, the worse. Howbeit sith creatures which have no understanding can shew no will; and where no will is, there is no sin; and only that which sinneth is subject to punishment; which way should any creature be punishable by the Law of God? There may be cause sometime to abolish, or to extinguish them. But surely never by way of punishment to the things themselves. Yea farther, howsoever the Law of *Moses* did punish Idolaters, we find not that God hath appointed for us any definite or certain temporal judgment, which the Christian Magistrate is of necessity for ever bound to execute upon offenders in that kind, much less upon things that way abused as meet instruments. For what God did command touching *Canaan*, the same concerneth not us any otherwise than only as a fearful pattern of his just displeasure and wrath against sinfull Nations. It teacheth us how God thought good to plague and afflict them, it doth not appoint in what form and manner we ought to punish the sin of Idolatry in all others. Unless they will say, that because the Israelites were commanded to make no covenant with the people of that Land, therefore Leagues and Truces made between superstitious persons, and such as serve God aright, are unlawful altogether; or because God commanded the Israelites to smite the inhabitants of *Canaan*, and to root them out, that therefore reformed Churches are bound to put all others to the edge of the sword. Now whereas *h* Commandment was also given to destroy all places where the *Canaanites* had served their gods, and not to convert any of them to the honour of the true God: this precept had reference unto a special intent and purpose, which was that there should be but one only place in the whole Land, whereunto the people might bring such offerings, gifts, and sacrifices, as their *Levitical* Law did require. By which Law, severe charge was given them in that respect, not to convert *shofa* places to the worship of the living God, where Nations before them had served Idols. *i* But to seek the place which the Lord their God should chuse out of their tribes. Besides, it is reason we should likewise consider how great a difference there is between their proceedings, who erect a new Common-wealth, which is to have neither people nor Law, neither Regiment nor Religion the same that was, and theirs who only reform a decayed estate, by reducing it to that perfection from which it hath swarved. In this case we are to retain as much, in the other as little of former things as we may. Sith therefore examples have not generally the force of Lawes which all men ought to keep, but of counsels only and persuasions not amiss to be followed by them whose case is the like, surely where cases are so unlike as theirs and ours, I see not how that which they did, should induce, much less any way enforce us to the same practise, especially considering that groves and hill-altars were, while they did remain, both dangerous in regard of the secret access, which people superstitiously given, might have always thereunto with ease, neither could they remaining serve with any fitness unto better purpose, whereas our Temples (their former abuse being by order of Law removed) are not only free from such peril, but withall so conveniently framed for the people of God to serve, and honour him therein; that no man beholding them, can chuse but think it exceeding great pity they they shoud be ever any otherwise employed. Yea but the cattel of *Amalek* (you will say) were *fit* for sacrifice; and this was the very conceit which sometime deceived *Saul*. It was so. Nor do I any thing doubt, but that *Saul* upon this conceit might

might even lawfully have offered to God those reserved spoils, had not the Lord in that particular case given special charge to the contrary. As therefore notwithstanding the commandment of *Israel* to destroy Cananites, Idolaters may be converted and live: so the Temples which have served Idolatry as Instruments, may be sanctified again and continue, albeit, to *Israel* commandment have been given that they should destroy all Idolatrous places in their land; and to the good Kings of *Israel* commendation for fulfilling, to the evil for disobeying the same commandment, sometimes punishment, always sharp and severe reproof hath even from the Lord himself befallen. Thus much it may suffice to have written in defence of those Christian Oratories, the overthrow and ruine whereof is desired, not now by Infidels, Pagans, or Turks, but by a special refined Sect of Christian Believers; pretending themselves exceedingly grieved at our Solemnities in erecting Churches, at the names which we suffer them to hold, at their forme and fashion, at the stateliness of them and costliness, at the opinion which we have of them, and at the manifold superstitious abuses whereunto they have been put.

18. Places of publick resort being thus provided for, our repair thither is especially for mutual conference, and as it were commerce to be had between God and us. Because therefore want of the knowledge of God is the cause of all iniquity amongst men, as contrariwise, the ground of all our happiness, and the seed of whatsoever perfect vertue groweth from us, is a right opinion touching things divine, this kind of knowledge we may justly set down for the first and chiefest thing which God imparteth unto his people, and our duty of receiving this at his merciful hands, for the first of those religious Offices wherewith we publickly honour him on earth. For the instruction therefore of all sorts of men to eternal life, it is necessary, that the sacred and saving truth of God be openly published unto them. Which open publication of heavenly mysteries, is by an excellency termed *preaching*. For otherwise there is not any thing publickly notified, but we may in that respect, rightly and properly say it is *preached*. So that when the school of God doth use it as a word of Art, we are b Luc. 8. 39: accordingly to understand it with restraint to such special matter as that school is accustomed to publish. We find not in the world any people that hath lived altogether without Religion. And yet this duty of Religion, which provideth that publickly all sorts of men may be instructed in the fear of God, is to the Church of God, and hath been always so peculiar, that none of the Heathens, how curious soever in searching out all kinds of outward Ceremonies like to ours, could ever once so much as endeavour to resemble herein the Churches care for the endless good of her Children. Ways of teaching there have been sundry always usual in Gods Church. For the first introduction of youth, to the knowledge of God, the Jews even till this day have their Catechismes. With Religion it fareth as with Catech. called other Sciences, the first delivery of the Elements thereof must, for like consideration, be framed according to the weak and slender capacity of young beginners: unto which manner of teaching Principles in Christianity, the Apostle in the sixth to the *Hebrews* is himself understood to allude. For this cause therefore, as a Decalogue of *Moses* declareth summarily those things which we ought to do; the Prayer of our Lord whatsoever we should request or desire: so either by the Apostles, or at the least-wise out of their writings, we have the substance of Christian Belief compendiously drawn into few and short Articles, to the end that the weakness of no mans wit might either hinder altogether the knowledge, or excuse the utter ignorance of needful things.

Such

Of publick teaching, or preaching, and the first kind thereof, Catechizing.  
a Contraria fortis in quibus dominus sibi invicem opponantur secundum exercitia et desideria et opiniones omnia procedunt ex ignorantia: sicut enim ex privatione sui usus vocatur ubique et latitur. Scientia veritatis tollit hominum inimicitiam et odium. Hoc promissum sancta Theologia dicitur, Habebitis agnam cum lupo. Et assignat rationem, repleta est terra sapientia Domini. Molis odii est in Mer. Hennebuch. lib. 3. c. 12.

a Incipientibus breviter ac simpliciter tradi precepta magis convenit. Aut enim difficultate institutionis tam numerosa atque perplexa detererri solent, aut eo tempore quo praecepta agenda ingenua atque indulgentia quadam curricula sunt offerentium verum tractatu atteruntur. Fab. proem. l. 1. Incipientibus nobis exponere jura populi Romani, ita videntur posse tradi commodissime si primo levi ac simplici via, post deinde diligentissima atque exactissima interpretatione singula tradantur. Alioqui si statim ab initio rudem albus et infirmum animum studiosi multitudinis ac varietate rerum oneraverimus duorum alterum, aut desertorem studiosum officinam, aut cum magno labore ejus, saepe etiam cum dissensu (qua plerumque juvenes avertit) ferimus ad id perducimus ad quod leviter via ductus, sine magno labore et sine ulla dissensu maturius perducere potuisset. I. de iur. Imper. l. 1. tit. 1. f. Vide Ruff. in Symb.



g Tert. de po-  
nitent. An ali-  
quod est iudicium  
Christus? Ali-  
us audientibus?  
Audientes op-  
tate iudicium  
nem non pro-  
mere oportet.  
cap. 18. Audientibus quisque regulam fidei,  
Catechumenus dicitur. Catechumenus namque Auditor interpretatur.

Of Preaching,  
by reading  
publicly the  
Books of holy  
Scripture, and  
concerning  
supposed un-  
truths in those  
translations of  
Scripture which  
we allow to be  
read, as also of  
the choice  
which we  
make in  
reading.  
b AR 15. 21.

Such as were trained up in the Elements, and were so made fit to be afterward by Baptism received into the Church, the Fathers usually in their Writings do term <sup>h</sup> *Hearers*, as having no farther communion or fellowship with the Church, than only this, that they were admitted to hear the Principles of Christian Faith made plain unto them. Catechizing may be in Schools, it may be in private Families. But when we make it a kind of Preaching, we mean always the publick performance thereof in the open hearing of men, because things are preached not in that they are taught, but in that they are published.

Cyprian. Epist. 17. lib. 3. *Audientibus vigilantia vestra non desit.* Rupert. de divin. offic. lib. 4. cap. 18. *Audientibus quisque regulam fidei, Catechumenus dicitur. Catechumenus namque Auditor interpretatur.*

19. *Moses* and the Prophets, Christ and his Apostles were in their times all Preachers of Gods Truth; some by word, some by writing, some by both. This they did partly as faithful *Witnesses*, making meer relation what God himself had revealed unto them; and partly as careful *Expounders*, Teachers, Periwaders thereof. The Church in like case *Preacheth* still, first publishing by way of *Testimony* or relation, the truth which from them she hath received, even in such sort as it was received, *written in the sacred volumes of Scripture*: secondly, by way of *explication*, discovering the mysteries which lie hid therein. The Church as a witness, preacheth his meer revealed Truth, by reading publicly the Sacred Scripture. So that a second kind of preaching is the reading of holy Writ. For thus we may the boldier speak, being strengthened <sup>h</sup> with the example of so reverend a Prelate as saith, that *Moses* from the time of ancient generations and ages long since past, had amongst the Cities of the very Gentiles them that preached him, *in that he was read every Sabbath day*. For so of necessity it must be meant, in as much as we know, that the Jews have always had their weekly readings of the *Law of Moses*; but that they always had in like manner their weekly *Sermons upon some part of the Law of Moses*, we no where find. Howbeit still we must here remember, that the Church, by her publick reading of the Book of God, preacheth only *as a witness*. Now the principal thing required in a witness is fidelity. Wherefore as we cannot excuse that Church, which either through corrupt translations of Scripture, delivereth instead of divine Speeches, any thing repugnant unto that which God speaketh; or, through falsified additions, proposeth that to the people of God as Scripture, which is in truth no Scripture: So the blame, which in both these respects hath been laid upon the Church of *England*, is surely altogether without cause. Touching Translations of Holy Scripture, albeit we may not disallow of their painful travels herein, who strictly have tied themselves to the very original letter, yet the judgement of the Church as we see by the practise of all Nations, *Greeks, Latines, Persians, Syrians, Ethiopians, Arabians*, hath been ever, that the fittest for publick audience are such, as following a middle course between the rigor of literal Translators, and the liberty of Paraphrasts, do with greatest shortness and plainness deliver the meaning of the Holy Ghost. Which being a labour of so great difficulty, the exact performance thereof we may rather wish than look for. So that, except between the words of translation and the mind of Scripture it self, there be *Contradiction*, every little difference should not seem an intolerable blemish necessarily to be spunged out. Whereas therefore the <sup>h</sup> Prophet *David* in a certain Psalm doth say concerning *Moses* and *Aaron*, that they were obedient to the word of God, and in the self-same place our allowed Translation saith, they were not obedient, we are for this cause challenged as manifest gain-sayers of Scripture, even in that which we read for Scripture unto the people. But for as much as words are resemblances of that which the mind of the speaker conceiveth, and conceits are images representing that which is spoken of, it followeth that they who will judge of words, should have recourse to the things themselves from whence they rise. In setting down that miracle, at the sight whereof *Peter* fell down astonished before the feet of Jesus, and cried, *Depart, Lord, I am a sinner*, the <sup>h</sup> Evangelist *St. Luke* saith, the store of the fish which they took was such, that the net they took it in *brake*, and the Ships which they loaded therewith sunk; <sup>h</sup> *St. John* recording the like miracle, saith, that albeit the fishes in number were so many, yet the net with

with so great a waight was not broken. Suppose they had written both of one miracle. Although there be in their words a manifest shew of jar; yet none, if we look upon the difference of matter, with regard whereunto they might both have spoken even of one miracle, the very same which they spake of divers, the one intending thereby to signifie that the greatness of the burden exceeded the natural ability of the instruments which they had to bear it; the other, that the weaknes thereof was supported by a supernatural and miraculous addition of strength. The Nets, as touching themselves *brake*, but through the power of God they held. Are not the words of the <sup>a</sup> Prophet *Micheas* touching *Bethleem*, Thou *Bethleem* the least? And doth not the very <sup>b</sup> Evangelist translate these words, Thou *Bethleem* not the least? the one regarding the quantity of the place, the other the dignity. *Micheas* attributeth unto it smallness, in respect of circuit; *Matthew* greatness, in regard of honour and estimation, by being the native soyle of our Lord and Saviour Christ. Sith therefore speeches, which gain-say one another; must of necessity be applied both unto one and the self-same subject; sith they must also the one affirm, the other deny the same thing: what necessity of contradiction can there be between the letter of the Prophet *David* and our authorized translation thereof, if he understanding *Moses* and *Aaron* do say, *They were not disobedient*; we applying our speech to *Pharo* and the *Egyptians*, do say of them, *They were not obedient*? Or (which the matter it self will easily enough likewise suffer) if the *Egyptians* being meant by both, it be said that *they* in regard of their offer to let go the people, when they saw the fearfull darkness, *disobeyed* not the Word of the Lord; and yet that they *did not obey* his Word, in as much as the sheep and cattel at the self-same time they with-held. Of both Translations the better, I willingly acknowledge, that which cometh nearer to the very letter of the original verity: yet so, that the other may likewise safely enough be read, without any peril at all of gain-saying, as much as the least jot or syllable of Gods most sacred and precious truth. Which truth as in this we do not violate, so neither is the same gain-sayed or cross, no not in those very preambles placed before certain readings, wherein the steps of the Latin Service-book have been somewhat too nearly followed. As when we say, Christ spake <sup>c</sup> to his Disciples, that which the Gospel declareth he spake unto the *Pharisees*. For doth the Gospel affirm he spake to the *Pharisees only*? doth it mean that they, and besides them, no man else was at that time spoken unto by our Saviour Christ? If not, then is there in this diversity no contrariety. I suppose it somewhat probable, that St. *John* and St. *Matthew*, which have recorded those Sermons, heard them, and being hearers, did think themselves as well respected as the *Pharisees* in that which their Lord and Master taught, concerning the Pastoral care he had over his own flock, and his offer of grace made to the whole World, which things are the matter whereof he treateth in those Sermons. Wherefore as yet there is nothing found, wherein we read for the Word of God that which may be condemned as repugnant unto his Word. Furthermore somewhat they are displeased, in that we follow not the method of reading which in their judgement is most commendable, the method used in some forraign Churches, where Scriptures are read before the time of divine Service, and without either choyce or time appointed by any determinate order. Nevertheless, till such time as they shall vouchsafe us some just and sufficient reason to the contrary, we must by their patience, if not allowance, retain the ancient received cuttome which we now observe. For with us the reading of Scripture in the Church is a part of our Church Liturgie, a special portion of the Service which we do to God, and not an exercise to spend the time when one doth wait for anothers coming, til the assembly of them that shall afterward worship him be compleat. Wherefore as the form of our public service is not voluntary, so neither are the parts thereof uncertain, but they are all set down in such order, and with such choyce, as hath in the wisdom of the Church seemed best to concur as well with the special occasions, as with the general purpose which we have to glorifie God.

20. Other publique readings there are of Books and Writings not Canonical, whereby the Church doth also preach, or openly make known the Doctrine of vertuous conversation; whereupon, besides those things, in regard whereof we

<sup>a</sup> *Math.* 5. 2.  
<sup>b</sup> *Math.* 2. 6.  
<sup>c</sup> *Exod.* 10. 34.  
<sup>d</sup> The Gospel on the second Sunday after Easter, and on the twentieth after Trinity.  
<sup>e</sup> *Iohn* 10. 11.  
<sup>f</sup> *Math.* 22. 1.  
<sup>g</sup> *T.C.* 1. 2. 381.  
Although it be very convenient which is used in some Churches, where before preaching time the Church assembled hath the Scriptures read; yet neither is this, nor any other order of bare public reading in the Church necessary had.  
<sup>h</sup> *Aug. de Civ. Dei.* lib. 22. c. 8.  
<sup>i</sup> *Falso plantio scripturarum sancta ecclesia divina solennia.*  
That for several times several pieces of Scripture were read as parts of the Service of the Greek Church the Fathers thereof in their sundry Homilies and other Writings do all testifie the like order in the Syrian Churches, is clear by the very inscriptions of Chapters throughout their translation of the New Testament. See the Edition at Vienna, Paris and Antwerp.

Of preaching by the publique reading of other profitable instructions; and Books Apocryphal.

are thought to read the Scriptures of God amiss, it is thought amiss, that we read in our Churches any thing at all besides the Scriptures. To exclude the reading of any such profitable instruction, as the Church hath devised for the better understanding of Scripture, or for the easier trayning up of the people in holiness and righteousness of

a T. C. l. 1. pag. 196. Neither the Homilies nor the Apocrypha are at all to be read in the Church. Wherein first it is good to consider the order which the Lord kept with his people in times past, when he commanded *Exod. 30. 39.* that no vessel, nor no instrument, either besome or flesh-hook, or pan, should once come into the Temple, but those only which are sanctified and set apart for that use. And in the Book of *Numbers* he will have no other Trumpets blown to call the people together, but those only which were set apart for that purpose. *Numb. 10. 2.*

\* T. C. l. 8. p. 197. Besides this, the Politie of the Church of God in times past is to be followed, &c. b *AHs 13. 15.* *AHs 15. 21.* c *Justin. Apol. 2.* *Origen. Hom. 1. super Exod. & in Judic.* d *Council. Laod. cap. 59.*

e *Council. Varsen. 2.*

f *Council. Colon. par. 2.*

g *Ex. 30. 35. 32.*

h *Exod. 40. 15.*

i *Numb. 10. 2.*

k *Exod. 27. 3.*

l *Ex. 26. 27. 28.*

m *T. C. l. 1. p. 197.*

n *AHs 15. 21.*

o *AHs 13. 15.*

p *T. C. l. 1. p. 197.*

q *Idem p. 198.*

r *Idem p. 198.*

s *Idem p. 198.*

t *Idem p. 198.*

u *Idem p. 198.*

v *Idem p. 198.*

w *Idem p. 198.*

x *Idem p. 198.*

y *Idem p. 198.*

z *Idem p. 198.*

aa *Idem p. 198.*

ab *Idem p. 198.*

ac *Idem p. 198.*

ad *Idem p. 198.*

ae *Idem p. 198.*

af *Idem p. 198.*

ag *Idem p. 198.*

ah *Idem p. 198.*

ai *Idem p. 198.*

aj *Idem p. 198.*

ak *Idem p. 198.*

al *Idem p. 198.*

am *Idem p. 198.*

an *Idem p. 198.*

ao *Idem p. 198.*

ap *Idem p. 198.*

aq *Idem p. 198.*

ar *Idem p. 198.*

as *Idem p. 198.*

at *Idem p. 198.*

au *Idem p. 198.*

av *Idem p. 198.*

aw *Idem p. 198.*

ax *Idem p. 198.*

ay *Idem p. 198.*

az *Idem p. 198.*

most ancient and best Councils forbidde any thing to bee read in Churches, saving Canonically Scripture onely; that when \* other things were afterwards permitted<sup>f</sup> fault was found with it, it succeeded but ill, the Bible it self was thereby in time quite and clean thrust out. Which arguments, if they be only brought in token of the Authors good-will and meaning towards the cause which they would set forward, must accordingly be accepted of by them, who already are perswaded the same way. But if their drift and purpose be to perswade others, it would be demanded, by what rule the legall *hallowing* of besomes and flesh-hooks must needs exclude all other readings in the Church save Scripture. Things sanctified were thereby in such sort appropriated unto God, as that they might never afterwards again be made common. For which cause, the Lord, to signe and mark them as his own, appointed oyl of holy oymntment, the like whereunto it was not lawfull to make for ordinary and daily uses. Thus the anoynting of *Aaron* and his sons tyed them to the Office of the Priest-hood for ever; the anoynting not of those silver Trumpets (which <sup>1</sup> *Moses* as well for secular as sacred uses was commanded to make, not to sanctifie) but the unction of the <sup>2</sup> *Tabernacle*, the Table, the Laver, the Altar of God, withall the instruments appertaining thereunto, this made them for ever holy unto him, in whose service they were employed. But what of this? Doth it hereupon follow, that all things now in the Church, from the greatest to the least, are unholy, which the Lord hath not himself precisely instituted? For so <sup>1</sup> those rudiments, they say, do import. Then is there nothing holy, which the Church by her authority hath appointed, and consequently all positive Ordinances that ever were made by Ecclesiastical power, touching spiritual affairs, are prophane, they are unholy. I would not wish them to undertake a work so desperate as to prove, that for the peoples instruction no kind of reading is good, but only that which the Jews devised under *Antiochus*, although even that be also mistaken. For according to <sup>2</sup> *Elis* as the Levite (out of whom it doth seem borrowed) the thing which *Antiochus* forbade, was the publique reading of the Law, and not *Sermons* upon the Law. Neither did the Jews read a portion of the Prophets, together with the Law, to serve for an interpretation thereof, because *Sermons* were not permitted them; But instead of the Law, which they might not read openly, they read of the Prophets that, which in likeness of matter came nearest to each Section of their Law. Whereupon, when afterwards the liberty of reading the <sup>3</sup> *Law* was restored, the self same Custome<sup>o</sup> as touching the Prophets did continue still. If neither the Jewes have used publickly to read their Paraphrases, <sup>4</sup> nor the Primitive Church of *Laodicea*, that nothing should be read in the Church but the Canonical Books of the old and new Testament. Afterwards, as corruptions grew in the Church, the reading of Homilies and of Martyrs lives was permitted. But besides the evil success thereof, that use and custom was controled, as may appear by the Council of *Colen*. albeit otherwise Popish. The bringing in of Homilies and Martyrs live, hath thrust the Bible clean out of the Church, or into a corner.

for



for a longe time any other Writings than Scripture, except the cause of their not doing it, were some Law of God, or reason forbidding them to do that which we do, why shou'd the latter ages of the Church be deprived of the Liberty the former had? Are we bound while the world standeth, to put nothing in practice, but only that which was at the very first? Concerning the Council of *Laodicea*, as it forbiddeth the reading of those things which are not Canonical, so it maketh some things not Canonical which are. Their judgement in this we may not, and in that we need not follow. We have by thus many years experience found, that exceeding great good, not incumbered with any notable inconvenience, hath grown by the custome which we now observe. As for the harm whereof judicious men have complained in former times; it came not of this, that other things were read besides the Scripture, but that so evil choyse was made. With us there is never any time bestowed in divine Service, without the reading of a great part of the holy Scripture, which we account a thing most necessary. We dare not admit any such form of Liturgie, as either appointeth no Scripture at all, or very little to be read in the Church. And therefore the thrusting of the Bible out of the House of God, is rather there to be feared, where men esteeme it a matter so indifferent, whether the same be by solemn appointment read publickly, or not read, the bare text excepted, which the Preacher happily chuseth out to expound. But let us here consider what the Practice of our Fathers before us hath been, and how far forth the same may be followed. We find, that in ancient times there was publickly read first the Scripture, as namely, something out of the Books of the <sup>4</sup> Prophets of God, which were of old, something out of the Apostles writings; and lastly out of the holy <sup>1</sup> Evangelists, some things which touched the person of our Lord Jesus Christ himself. The cause of their reading first the old Testament, then the new, and always somewhat out of both, is most likely to have been that which *Justin Martyr* and *Saint August.* observe in comparing the two Testaments. <sup>2</sup> *The Apostles* (saith the one) *bath taught us as themselves did learn, first the Precepts of the Law, and then the Gospels.* For what else is the Law, but the Gospel foretold? What other the Gospel than the Law fulfilled? In like sort the other, <sup>3</sup> *What the old Testament hath, the very same the new containeth, but that which lieth there as under a shadow, is here brought forth into the open Sun.* Things there prefigured, are here performed. Again, in the old Testament there is a close comprehension of the new, in the new an open discovery of the old. To be short, the method of their publick readings either purposely did tend, or at the leastwise doth fitly serve, <sup>4</sup> *That from smaller things the mind of the hearers may go forward to the knowledge of greater, and by degrees climb up from the lowest to the highest things.* Now besides the Scripture, the Books which they called *Ecclesiastical*, were thought not unworthy sometime to be brought into publick audience, and with that name they entituled the Books which we term *Apocryphal*. Under the self-same name they also comprised certain, no otherwise annexed unto the new, than the former to the old Testament, as a Book of *Hermes*, Epistles of *Clement*, and the like. According therefore to the Phrase of Antiquity, these we may term the new, and the other the old Ecclesiastical Books or Writings. For we being directed by a sentence (I suppose) of *Saint Jerom*, who saith, that *All writings not Canonical are Apocryphal*, use not now the title *Apocryphal*, as the rest of the Fathers ordinarily have done, whose custome is so to name for the most part only, such as might not publickly be read or divulged. *Ruffinus* therefore having rehearsed the self-same Books of Canonical Scripture, which with us are held to be alone Canonical, addeth immediately by way of caution, <sup>5</sup> *We must know that other Books there are also, which our fore-fathers have used to name not Canonical.*

The Apoca-

b T. G. l. 2. p. 381. It is untrue, that *simple reading* is necessary in the Church. A number of Churches which have no such order of *simple reading*, cannot be in this point charged with breach of Gods Commandment, which they might be if *simple reading* were necessary. [By *simple reading* he meaneth the custom of bare reading more than the Preacher at the same time expoundeth unto the people.] c *Coimus ad divinarum litterarum commemorationem.* Tertul. Apol. p. 692. d *Judaicarum Historiarum libri traditi sunt ab Apostolis legendi in Ecclesijs.* Orig. in loc. Hom. 15. e *Πάσης γὰρ αἰῶνος ὁ ἀρχιεπίσκοπος ἐπὶ τὸ ἀντὶ συνάξεως, ἵνα καὶ τὰ ἀποστολικὰ κείμενα ᾖ ἀποστόλων, ὡς τὰ ἐγγράμματα ᾖ Περὶ τοῦ ἀποστόλου.* Justin. Apol. 2. pag. 162. *Fallum est ut ista die Dominica Prophetica lectio jam lecta, ante altare ad. stant, qui lectionem S. Pauli proferret, beatissimus Antistes Ambrosius, &c.* Sulpit. Sever. lib. 3. de vita S. Mart. f Vide Concil. Vase 2. habitum An. Dom. 444. in Concil. 2. p. 19. Item Synod. Laod. cap. 16. Cyr. lib. 2. epist. 5. & lib. 4. epist. 5. Amb. l. 1. Offic. ca. 2. & Epist. 75. & lib. de Helia atque je junio. cap. 20.

g Just. quæst. 101.

h August. quæst. 33. in Num.

i Walse Strab. de rebus Ecclesiast. cap. 22.

k Hieron. in Prolog. Galest.

l Ruffinus in Symbol. Apost. apud Cyr.

call, but Ecclesiastical books, as the book of Wudour, ecclesiasticus, Tobie, Judith, the Maccabees in the old Testament; in the new, the book of Hermes, and such others: All which Books and Writings they willed to be read in Churches, but not to be alleged, as if their authority did bind us to build upon them our Faith. Other writings they named Apocryphal, which they would not have read in Churches. These things delivered unto us from the Fathers, we have in this place thought good to set down. So far, *Ruffinus*. He which considereth notwithstanding what store of false and forged

*a* Vide *Gelas.*  
in decret. 10.

*c* Concil. 1. p. 462.

*b* Circa An.

Dom. 366.

*c* Concil. Car-

thag. 3. cap. 47.

Præter scriptu-

ras Canonicas

nihil in Eccle-

sia legatur sub

nomine divinarum

scripturarum.

Circa An.

Dom. 401.

*d* *Confl. Velen.*

2. habitum, An.

Dom. 444 10.

*Concil. 2. p. 19.*

*si presbyter ali-*

*qua infirmitate*

*prohibente per*

*scriptum non po-*

*tueris predica-*

*re sanctorum*

*patrum homilia*

*à Diaconibus*

*recitentur.*

*c* Concil. Car-

thag. 3. Can. 13.

*et Greg.*

*Turon. de gloria*

*mart. ca. 86. et*

*Hier. epist. ad*

*Cyrol. Magn.*

*i* *Gelas. circa*

*an. Do. 492. 10*

*Concil. 1. p. 461.*

*g* Concil. Colo-

nien. celebrat.

*an. Dom. 1536.*

*part. 2. cap. 6.*

*Adleb. Can. 10.*

*cor. theol. lib. 11*

*Vis. de trad.*

*disc. lib. 5.*

*h* in errorum

barathrum fa-

ciliter ruunt,

qui conceptus

proprios patrum

defectionibus

anteponunt, c.

unde relig. do.

in Extra.

*i* Hier. præfat.

ad libros Sa-

lom. Aug. de

præd. sanct. l. 1.

c. 14. Præfat.

gloss. ord. et

Lyr. ad præl.

Hieron. in Tob.

Writings, dangerous unto Christian belief, and yet bearing <sup>a</sup> glorious inscriptions, began soon upon the Apostles times to be admitted into the Church, and to be honoured as if they had been indeed Apostolique, shall easily perceive what cause the Provincial Synod of <sup>b</sup> *Laodicea* might have as then to prevent, especially the danger of books made newly Ecclesiastical, and for fear of the fraud of Hereticks, to provide, that such publique readings might be altogether taken out of Canonical Scripture. Which Ordinance respecting, but that abuse that grew through the intermingling of lessons humane with sacred, at such time as the one both affected the credit, and usurped the name of the other (as by the Canon of <sup>c</sup> a later Councell providing remedy for the self same evil, and yet allowing the old Ecclesiastical Books to be read, it doth more plainly and clearly appear) neither can be construed, nor should be urged utterly to prejudice our use of those old Ecclesiastical Writings; much less of Homilies, which were a third kind of readings usual in former times, a most commendable institution as well then <sup>d</sup> to supply the casual, as now the necessary defect of Sermons.

In the heat of general persecution whereunto Christian Belief was subject, upon the first promulgation thereof throughout the World, it much confirmed the courage and constancy of weaker mindees, when publique relation was made unto them, after what manner God had been glorified through the sufferings of Martyrs, famous amongst them for holiness during life, and at the time of their death admirable in all mens eyes, through miraculous evidence of grace divine assisting them from above. For which cause the vertues of some being thought expedient to be annually had in remembrance above the rest, this brought in <sup>e</sup> a fourth kind of publique reading, whereby the lives of such Saints and Martyrs had at the time of their yearly memorials solemn recognition in the Church of

God. The fond imitation of which laudible custome being in latter ages resumed, when there was neither the like cause to do as the Fathers before had done; nor any care, conscience, or wit, in such as undertook to perform that work, some brainless men have by great labour and travel brought to pass, that the Church is now ashamed of nothing more than of Saints. If therefore Pope <sup>f</sup> *Gelasius* did so long since see those defects of judgement even then, for which the reading of the Acts of Martyrs should be, and was at that time forborn in the Church of *Rome*; we are not to marvel, that afterwards Legends being grown in a manner to be nothing else but heaps of frivolous and scandalous vanities, they have been even with disdain thrown out, the <sup>g</sup> very nests which bred them abhorring them. We are not therefore to except onely Scripture, and to make confused y

a l the residue of one sute, as if they, who abolish Legends, could not without incongruity retain in the Church either Homilies, or those old Ecclesiastical Books: Which books in case my self did think, as some others do, safer and better to be left publicly unread; nevertheless as in other things of like nature, even so in this, <sup>h</sup> my private judgement I should be loth to oppose against the force of their reverend authority, who rather considering the divine excellency of some things in all, and of all things in certain of those *Apocrypha* which we publicly read, have thought it better to let them stand as a list or marginal border unto the old Testament, and, though with divine, yet as humane compositions to grant at the least unto certain of them publique audience in the house of God. For in as much as the due estimation of heavenly truth dependeth wholly upon the known and approved authority of those famous Oracles of God, it greatly becometh the Church to have alwayes most especial care, lest through confused mixture at any time humane usurp the room and title of divine writings. Wherefore albeit for the peoples <sup>i</sup> more plain instruction (as the ancient use hath been) we read in our Churches certain Books besides the Scripture, yet as the Scripture we read them

not

not. All men know our professed opinion touching the difference whereby we sever them from the Scripture. And if any where it be suspected that some one or other will haply mistake a thing so manifest in every mans eye, there is no lett, but that as often as those Books are read, and need so requireth, the stile of their difference may expressly be mentioned, to barre even all possibility of error. It being then known, that we hold not the *Apocrypha* for sacred (as we doe the holy Scripture) but for humane compositions, the subject whereof are sundry divine matters; let there be reason shewed, why to read any part of them publicly, it should be unlawful or hurtful unto the Church of God. I hear it said, that *many* T. G. lib. 2. things in them are very frivolous, and unworthy of publique audience; yea, many pag. 400 401. contrary, plainly contrary to the holy Scripture. Which hitherto is neither sufficiently proved by him who saith it, and if the proofs thereof were strong; yet the very allegation it self is weak. Let us therefore suppose (for I will not demand to what purpose it is, that against our custom of reading Books not Canonical, they bring exceptions of matter in those Books which we never use to read) suppose (I say) that what faults soever they have observed throughout the passages of all those Books, the same in every respect were such as neither could be construed, nor ought to be censured otherwise, than even as themselves pretend: Yet as men, through too much hast, oftentimes forget the errand whereabout they should go, so here it appeareth, that an eager desire to rake together whatsoever might prejudice or any way hinder the credit of Apocryphal Books, hath caused the Collectors Pen so to run as it were on wheels, that the minde which should guide it, had no leisure to think, whether that which might haply serve to withhold from giving them the Authority which belongeth unto sacred Scripture, and to cut them off from the Canon, would as effectually serve to shut them altogether out of the Church, and to withdraw from granting unto them that publique use, wherein they are onely held as profitable for instruction. Is it not acknowledged, that those Books are *Holy*, that they are *Ecclesiastical* and *Sacred*, that to term them *Divine*, as being for their excellency next unto them which are properly so termed, is no way to honour them above desert; yea, even that the whole Church of Christ, as well as the first as *subseque* hath most worthily approved their fitness for the publique informations of life and manners: Is not thus much, I say, acknowledged, and that by them, who notwithstanding receive not the same for any part of Canonical Scripture, by them who deny not but that they are *faulty*, by them who are ready enough to give instances, wherein they seem to contain matter scarce agreeable with holy Scripture? So little doth such their supposed faultiness in moderate mens judgement inforce the removal of them out of the House of God; that still they are judged to retain worthily those very Titles of Commendation; than which, there cannot greater be given to Writings, the Authors whereof are Men. As in truth, if the Scripture it self, ascribing to the persons of men righteousness in regard of their manifold vertues, may not rightly be construed, as though it did thereby clear them and make them quite free from faults, no reason we should judge it absurd to commend their Writings as reverend, holy, and sound, wherein there are so many singular perfections, onely for that the exquisite wits of some few peradventure are able dispersedly here and there to find now a word and then a sentence, which may be more probably suspected than easily cleared of error by us which have but conjectural knowledge of their meaning. Against immodest Invetives therefore whereby they are charged as being fraught with *outrageous Metaphys.* *lies*, we doubt not but their more allowable censure will prevail, who without so *Schoolp. art. 34.* passionate terms of disgrace; do note a difference great enough between Apocryphal and other writings, a difference such as *Josephus* and *Epiphanius* observe: *App. lib. 1.* the one declaring, that amongst the Jews, Books written after the days of *Alexander*, were not of equal credit with them which had gone before, in as much as the Jews since that time had not the like exact succession of Prophets; the other acknowledging that they are *profitable*, although denying them to be *divine*, in such construction and sense as the Scripture it self is so termed. With what intent they were first published, those words of the *Nephew of Jesus* do plainly enough signify, *After that my Grand-Father Jesus had given himselfe to the Eccles.*

*lib. 1. c. 5.*

*c The Libell of*  
*outrageous Metaphys.*  
*d Joseph. cont.*  
*App. lib. 1.*  
*e Epiph. in An-*  
*tyrois. xpioti-*  
*μοι μὴ εἶσι*  
*καὶ ἀφ' αὐτοῦ*  
*ἀλλ' εἰς ἀπὸ-*  
*κρίαν ἑστῶν καὶ*  
*ἀναστροφῶν.*  
*f Epist. ad lib.*



reading of the Law and the Prophets, and other Books of our Fathers, and had gotten therein sufficient judgement, he purposed also to write something pertaining to Learning and Wisdom, to the intent, that they which were desirous to learn, and would give themselves to these things, might profit much more in living according to the Law. Their end in writing, and ours in reading them, is the same. The Books of *Judith, Tobie, Baruch, Wisdom, and Ecclesiasticus*, we read, as serving most unto that end. The rest we leave unto men in private. Neither can it be reasonably thought, because upon certain solemn occasions, some Lessons are chosen out of those Books, and of Scripture it self some Chapters not appointed to be read at all, that we thereby do offer disgrace to the Word of God, or lift up the Writings of men above it. For in such choice we do not think, but that *fineness* of speech may be more respected than *worthiness*. If in that which we use to read, there happen by the way any Clause, Sentence, or Speech, that soundeth towards error, should the mixture of a little dross constrain the Church to deprive her self of so much Gold, rather than learn how by art and judgement to make separation of the one from the other? To this effect very fitly, from the counsel that *S. Jerome* giveth *Lata*, of taking heed how she read the *Apocrypha*, as also by the help of other learned mens judgements delivered in like case, we may take direction. But surely, the arguments that should bind us not to read them, or any part of them publicly at all, must be stronger than as yet we have heard any.

Of preaching  
by Sermons &  
whether Ser-  
mons be the  
only ordinary  
way of Teach-  
ing, whereby  
men are  
brought to the  
saving know-  
ledge of Gods  
Truth.

21. We marvelle the less that our reading of Books not Canonical is so much impugned, when so little is attributed unto the reading of Canonical Scripture it self; that now it hath grown to be a question, whether the *Word of God* be any ordinary mean to save the souls of men, in that it is either privately studied, or publicly read, and so made known, or else only as the same is *preached*, that is to say, explained by lively voice, and applied to the peoples use, as the speaker in his *Wisdom* thinketh meet. For this alone is it which they use to call *Preaching*. The publick reading of the *Apocrypha* they condemn altogether as a thing effectual unto evil, the bare reading in like sort of whatsoever, yea even of Scriptures themselves, they mislike, as a thing *unprofitable* to do that good, which we are perswaded may grow by it. Our desire is in this present controversie, as in the rest, not to be carried up and down with the waves of uncertain arguments, but rather positively to lead on the minds of the simpler sort by plain and easie degrees, till the very nature of the thing it self do make manifest what is truth. First therefore, because whatsoever is spoken concerning the efficacy or necessity of Gods Word, the same they tie and restrain only unto *Sermons*, howbeit not *Sermons* read neither (for such they also abhorre in the Church) but *Sermons* without book, *Sermons* which spend their life in their birth, and may have publick audience but once: For this cause, to avoid ambiguities, wherewith they often intangle themselves, not marking what doth agree to the Word of God in it self, and what in regard of outward accidents which may befall it, we are to know that the Word of God is his heavenly Truth, touching matters of eternal life revealed and uttered unto Men, unto Prophets and Apostles by immediate Divine Inspiration, from them to us by their Books and Writings. We therefore have no *Word of God* but the Scripture. Apostolick Sermons were unto such as heard them, his Word, even as properly as to us their Writings are. Howbeit not so our own Sermons, the expositions which our discourse of wit doth gather and minister out of the Word of God. For which cause, in this present question we are, when we name the *Word of God*, alwayes to mean the *Scripture only*. The end of the Word of God is to save, and therefore we term it the *Word of Life*. The way for all men to be saved, is by the knowledge of that truth which the Word hath taught. And sith eternal Life is a thing of it self communicable unto all, it behooveth that the Word of God, the necessary meane thereunto, be so likewise. Wherefore the Word of Life hath been alwayes a Treasure, though precious, yet easie, as well to attain, as to find, lest any man desirous of life should perish through the difficulty of the way. To this end the Word of God no otherwise serveth, than only in the nature of a doctrinal Instrument. It saveth, because it maketh *wise to salvation*. Wherefore the ignorant it saveth not, they which live by the Word, must know it. And being it self the Instru-  
ment

ment which God hath purposely framed, thereby to work the knowledge of salvation in the hearts of men, what cause is there wherefore it should not of it self be acknowledged a most apt and a likely meane, to leave an apprehension of things divine in our understanding, and in the mind an assent thereunto? For touching the one, sith God, who knoweth and discloseth best the rich treasures of his own wisdom, hath by delivering his Word, made choice of the Scriptures, as the most effectual means, whereby those treasures might be imparted unto the world, it followeth, that to mans understanding the Scripture must needs be even of it self intended as a full and perfect discovery, sufficient to imprint in us the lively character of all things necessarily required for the attainment of eternal Life. And concerning our assent to the Mysteries of heavenly Truth, seeing that the Word of God, for the Authors sake, hath credit with all that confesse it (as we all do) to be his Word, every Proposition of holy Scripture, every Sentence being to us a principle; if the principles of all kinds of knowledge else have that vertue in themselves, whereby they are able to procure our assent unto such conclusions, as the industry of right discourse doth gather from them, we have no reason to think the principles of that Truth, which tendeth unto mans everlasting happiness, less forcible than any other, when we know that of all other they are for their certainty the most infallible. But as every thing of price, so this doth require travel. We bring not the knowledge of God with us into the world. And the less our own opportunity or ability is that way, the more we need the help of other mens Judgements, to be our direction herein. Nor doth any man ever believe, into whom the doctrine of belief is not instilled by instruction, some way received at the first from others. Wherein whatsoever fit means there are to notify the Mysteries of the Word of God, whether publicly (which we call *Preaching*) or in private howsoever, the Word by every such means even ordinarily doth save, and not only by being delivered unto men in Sermons. Sermons are not the only preaching which doth save Souls. For concerning the use and sense of this word *Preaching*, which they shut up in so close a Prison, although more than enough have already been spoken, to redeem the liberty thereof, yet because they insit so much, and so proudly insult thereon, we must a little inure their ears with hearing, how others whom they more regard, are in this case accustomed to use the self-same language with us, whose manner of speech they deride. <sup>a</sup> Justin Martyr doubteth not to tell the Grecians, that even in certain of their *Writings* the very Judgement to come is preached; nor the <sup>b</sup> Council of *Vann* to insinuate, that Presbyters, absent through infirmity from their Churches, might be said to preach by those Deputies, who in their stead did but read *Homilies*; nor the <sup>c</sup> Council of *Toledo*, to call the usual publick reading of the *Gospels* in the Church, preaching; nor <sup>d</sup> others, long before these our days to write, that by him who but readeth a *Lesson* in the solemn Assembly as part of Divine Service, the very Office of Preaching is so far-forth executed. Such kind of speeches were then familiar, those phrases seemed not to them absurd, they would have marvelled to hear the <sup>e</sup> out-cries which we do, because we think, that the Apostles *in writing*, and others *in reading* to the Church those Books which the Apostles wrote, are neither untruly nor unhitly said to *preach*. For although mens *Tongues* and their *Pens* differ, yet to one and the self-same general, if not particular effect, they may both serve. It is no good argument, St. Paul could not *write with his Tongue*, therefore neither could he *preach with his pen*. For preaching is a general end whereunto writing and speaking do both serve. Men speak not with the instruments of writing, neither write with the instruments of speech, and yet things recorded with the one, and uttered with the other, may be <sup>f</sup> preached well enough with both. By their patience therefore be it spoken, the Apostles preached as well when they wrote as when they spake the Gospel of Christ, and our usual publick reading of the Word of God for the peoples instruction, is *preaching*. Nor about words would we ever contend, were not their purpose in so restraining the same, injurious to Gods most sacred Word and Spirit. It is on both sides confest, that the Word of God outwardly administered (his <sup>g</sup> Spirit inwardly concurring therewith) converteth, edifieth, and saveth Souls. Now where-  
as the external administration of his Word is as well by reading barely the Scrip-  
ture,

<sup>a</sup> *Paranot. ad*  
*Gen. p. 17.*  
<sup>b</sup> *Council. Pa-*  
*ren. 2. c. 2.*  
<sup>c</sup> *Council. Tol. 4.*  
*cap. 11.*  
<sup>d</sup> *Rupert. de*  
*Divin. Offic.*  
*lib. 1. c. 12, 13.*  
<sup>e</sup> *Ibid. de Eccles.*  
*Offic. 1. c. 10.*  
<sup>f</sup> *The Libel of*  
*Schools. part. 11.*  
*T. G. lib. 2.*  
*Pag. 388.*  
<sup>g</sup> *Saint Pauls*  
*writing is no*  
*more preach-*  
*ing, than his*  
*pen or his hand*  
*is his Tongue:*  
*seeing they*  
*cannot be the*  
*same, which*  
*cannot be*  
*made by the*  
*same Instru-*  
*ments.*  
<sup>h</sup> *Evangelio*  
*manu & scrip-*  
*tione. Raimo. de*  
*Rom. Eccles.*  
*Idolola. traf. ad*  
*Co. Effect.*  
<sup>i</sup> *John 6. 46.*  
*Mat. 16. 17.*  
<sup>j</sup> *2 Cor. 4. 6.*  
<sup>k</sup> *1 Cor. 12. 3.*  
<sup>l</sup> *Acts 16. 14.*

ture, as by explaining the same when Sermons thereon be made, in the one they deny, that the finger of God hath *ordinarily* certain *principal operations*, which we most stedfastly hold and believe that it hath in both.

What they attribute to Sermons only, and what we to Reading also.

22. So worthy a part of Divine Service we should greatly wrong, if we did not esteem Preaching as the blessed Ordinance of God, Sermons as Keyes to the Kingdom of Heaven, as Wings to the Soul, as Spurrers to the good Affections of Man, unto the sound and healthy as Food, as Physick unto diseased minds. Wherefore how highly soever it may please them with words of truth to extoll Sermons, they shall not herein offend us. We seek not to derogate from any thing which they can justly esteem, but our desire is to uphold the just estimation of that, from which it seemeth unto us they derogate more than becometh them. That which offendeth us, is, first the great disgrace which they offer unto our *Customs* of bare reading the Word of God, and to his gracious Spirit, the *principal* vertue whereof thereby manifesting it self, for the endless good of mens Souls, even the vertue which it hath to *convert*, to *edify*, to *save* Souls; this they mightily strive to obscure: and secondly, the shifts wherewith they maintain their opinion of Sermons, whereunto while they labour to appropriate the *saving* power of the Holy Ghost, they separate from all *apparent* hope of life and salvation, thousands whom the goodness of Almighty God doth not exclude. Touching therefore the use of Scripture even in that it is openly read, and the inestimable good which the Church of God by that very mean hath reaped; there was, we may very well think, some cause, which

a 1 Thess. 5. 27.  
Coloss. 4. 16.

moved the Apostle Saint *Paul* to require, that those things which any one Churches affairs gave particular occasion to write, might for the instruction of all be published, and that by *reading*. 1. When the very having of the Books of God was a matter of no small charge and difficulty, in as much as they could not be had otherwise than only in written Copies, it was the necessity not of preaching things agreeable with the Word, but of reading the Word it self at large to the people, which caused Churches throughout the world to have publick care, that the sacred Oracles of God being procured by common charge, might with great sedulity be kept both intire and sincere. If then we admire the providence of God in the same continuance of Scripture, notwithstanding the violent endeavours of Infidels to abolish, and the fraudulent of Hereticks always to deprave the same, shall we set light by that custome of reading, from whence so precious a benefit hath grown? 2. The voice and testimony of the Church acknowledging Scripture to be the Law of the living God, is for the truth and certainty thereof no mean evidence. For if with reason we may presume upon things which a few mens depositions do testifie, suppose we that the minds of men are not both at their first access to the School of Christ exceedingly moved, yea and for ever afterwards also confirmed much when they consider the main consent of all the Churches in the whole World witnessing the sacred authority of Scriptures, ever since the first publication thereof, even till this present day and hour? And that they all have always so testified, I see not how we should possibly with a proof more palpable, than this manifest received and every-where continued custome of reading them publickly as the Scriptures. The reading therefore of the Word of God, as the use hath ever been, in open audience, is the plainest evidence we have of the Churches assent and acknowledgement that it is his Word. 3. A further commodity this custome hath, which is, to furnish the very *simplest* and *rudest* sort with such infallible *Axiomes* and *Precepts* of sacred Truth, delivered even in the *very letter* of the Law of God, as may serve them for *Rules* whereby to judge the better all other *doctrines* and instructions which they hear. For which end and purpose, I see not how the Scripture could be possibly made familiar unto all, unless far more should be read in the peoples hearing, than by a Sermon can be opened. For whereas in a manner the whole Book of God is by reading every year published, a small part thereof, in comparison of the whole, may hold very well the readiest Interpreter of Scripture occupied many years. 4. Besides, wherefore should any man think, but that reading it self is one of the *ordinary* means, whereby it pleaseth God of his gracious goodness to instill that celestial Verity, which being *but so* received is nevertheless effectual to *save* souls? Thus much therefore we ascribe to the reading

b 1 John 5. 39.  
1 J. 8. 20.



Of the Word of God, as the manner is in our Churches. And because it were odious, if they on their part should altogether despise the same, they yield that reading may *set forward*, but not begin the work of salvation; that Faith may be *nourished* therewith, but not bred; that <sup>a</sup>herein mens attention to the Scriptures, and their speculation of the creatures of God have like efficacy, both being of power to *augment*, but neither to effect belief without Sermons; that if <sup>b</sup>any believe by reading alone, we are to account it a miracle, an *extraordinary* work of God. Wherein that which they grant, we gladly accept at their hands, and wish that patiently they would examine how little cause they have to deny that which as yet they grant not. The <sup>c</sup>Scripture witnesseth, that when the Book of the Law of God had been sometime missing, and was after found, the King, which heard it but only read, tare his clothes, and with tears confessed, *Great is the wrath of the Lord upon us, because our Fathers have not kept his Word, so do after all things which are written in this Book.* This doth argue, that by bare reading (for of Sermons at that time there is no mention) true repentance may be wrought in the hearts of such as fear God, and yet incur his displeasure, the deserved effect whereof is eternal death. So that their repentance (although it be not their first entrance) is notwithstanding the first step of their re-entrance into life, and may be in them wrought by the Word only read unto them. Besides, it seemeth that God would have no man stand in doubt, but that the reading of Scripture is effectual, as well to *lay even the first foundation*, as to adde degrees of farther perfection in the fear of God. And therefore the <sup>d</sup>Law saith, Thou shalt read this Law before all Israel, that men, women and children may hear, yea, even that their children, which as yet *have not known* it, may hear it, and by hearing it so read, may *learn to fear* the Lord. Our Lord and Saviour was himself of opinion, that they which would not be drawn to amendment of life by the testimony which *Moses* and the Prophets have given, concerning the miseries that follow sinners after death, were not likely to be persuaded by other means, although God from the very dead should have raised them up Preachers. Many hear the Books of God, and believe them not. Howbeit, their unbelief in that case we may not impute unto any weakness or insufficiency in the meane which is used towards them, but to the wilful bent of their obstinate hearts against it. With minds obdurate nothing prevaileth. As well they that preach, as they that read unto such, shall still have cause to complain with the Prophets which were of old, *Who will give credit unto our Teaching?* But with whom ordinary means will prevail, surely the power of the Word of God, even without the help of Interpreters in Gods Church, worketh mightily, not unto their confirmation alone which are converted, but also to their conversion which are not. It shall not boot them who derogate from reading, to excuse it, when they see no other remedy, as if their intent were only to deny, that *Aliens* and Strangers from the Family of God are won, or that belief doth use to be wrought at the first in them, without Sermons. For they know it is our custome of simple reading, *not for conversion of Infidels* estranged from the House of God, but for *instruction of men baptised*, bred and brought up in the bosom of the Church, which they despise as a thing uneffectual to save such Souls. In such they imagine that God hath no ordinary meane to work Faith without Sermons. The reason, why no man can attain belief by the bare contemplation of Heaven and Earth, is, for that they neither are sufficient to give us as much as the least spark of Light concerning the very principal Mysteries of our Faith; and whatsoever we may learn by them, the same we can only attain to know, according to the manner of natural Sciences, which meer discourse of Wit and Reason findeth out, whereas the things which we properly believe, be only such, as are received upon the credit of Divine Testimony. Seeing therefore, that he which considereth the creatures of God, findeth therein both these defects, and neither the one nor the other in Scriptures, because he that readeth unto us the Scriptures, delivereth all the Mysteries of Faith, and not any thing amongst them all more than the mouth of the Lord doth warrant: It followeth in those two respects, that our consideration of Creatures and attention unto Scriptures are not in themselves, and without Sermons, things of like disability to breed or begin Faith. Small cause also there is, why any man should greatly

<sup>a</sup> T. C. lib. 2.

<sup>b</sup> Pag. 376-377.

<sup>c</sup> 394.

<sup>d</sup> Pag. 78.

<sup>e</sup> Pag. 383.

<sup>f</sup> 2 Obv. 34. 18

<sup>g</sup> 2 Obv. 34. 2.

<sup>h</sup> Deu. 31. 13.

<sup>i</sup> Luke 10. 19.

ly wonder as at an extraordinary work, if without Sermons, Reading be found to effect thus much. For I would know by some special instance, what one Article of Christian Faith, or what duty required necessarily unto all mens salvation there is, which the very reading of the Word of God is not apt to notify. Effects are miraculous and strange, when they grow by unlikely means. But did we ever hear it accounted for a wonder, that he which doth read, should believe and live according to the will of Almighty God? <sup>a</sup> Reading doth convey to the mind that Truth, without addition or diminution, which Scripture hath derived from the Holy Ghost.

<sup>a</sup> Exod. 24. 7. <sup>b</sup> John 20. 31. And the end of all Scripture is the same which <sup>b</sup> St. John proposeth in the writing of that most Divine Gospel, namely, *Faith*, and through *Faith Salvation*. Yea, all Scripture is to this effect <sup>c</sup> *in it self* available, as they which wrote it were persuaded; unless we suppose, that the Evangelist, or others, in speaking of their own intent to instruct and to save by writing, had a secret conceit which they never opened to any, a conceit that no man in the World should ever be that way the better for any Sentence by them written, till such time as the same might chance to be preached upon, or alledged at the least in a Sermon. Otherwise, if he which writeth, do that which is forceable in it self, how should he which readeth, be thought to do that which in it self is of no force to work belief, and to save Believers? Now, although we have very just cause to stand in some jealousy and fear, lest by thus overvaluing their Sermons, they make the price and estimation of Scripture, otherwise notified, to fall: Nevertheless, so impatient they are, that being but requested to let us know what causes they leave for mens encouragement to attend to the reading of the Scripture, if Sermons only be the power of God to save every one which believeth; that which we move for our better learning and instructions sake, turneth unto anger and choler in them, they grow altogether out of quietness with it, they answer fumingly, that they are <sup>d</sup> *ashamed to defile their Pens with making answer to such idle questions*: Yet in this their mood they cast forth somewhat, wherewith under pain of greater displeasure we must rest contented. They tell us, the profit of reading is singular, in that it serveth for a preparative unto Sermons; it helpeth prettily towards the nourishment of Faith, which Sermons have once ingendred; it is some stay to his mind which readeth the Scripture, when he findeth the same things there which are taught in Sermons, and thereby perceiveth how God doth concur in opinion with the Preacher; besides, it keepeth Sermons in memory, and doth in that respect, although not feed the soul of man, yet help the retentive force of that stomach of the mind, which receiveth ghostly food at the Preachers hand. But the principal cause of *writing* the Gospel was, *that it might be preached* upon or interpreted by publick Ministers, apt and authorized thereunto. Is it credible, that a superstitious conceit (for it is no better) concerning Sermons, should in such sort both darken their eyes, and yet sharpen their wits with all, that the only true and weighty cause why Scripture was written, the cause which in Scripture is so often mentioned, the cause which all men have ever till this present day acknowledged, this they should clean exclude; as being no cause at all, and load us with so great store of strange concealed causes, which did never see light till now? In which number the rest must needs be of moment, when the very chiefeft cause of committing the Sacred Word of God unto Books, is surmized to have been, lest the Preacher should want a Text whereupon to schoolie. Men of Learning hold it for a slip in judgement, when offer is made to demonstrate that as proper to one thing, which reason findeth common unto moe. Whereas therefore they take from all kinds of teaching that which they attribute to Sermons, it had been their part to yield directly some strong reason, why between *Sermons alone* and *Faith* there should be *ordinariness* that coherence which causes have with their usual effects, why a Christian mans belief should so naturally grow from Sermons, and not possibly from any other kind of teaching. In belief there being but these two operations, *Apprehension* and *Assent*, do only Sermons cause belief; in that no other way is able to explain the mysteries of God, that the mind may rightly apprehend or conceive them as behoveth? We all know, that many things are believed, although they be intricate, obscure, and dark, although they exceed the reach and capacity of our wits, yea although in this World they be no way

way possible to be understood. Many things believed are likewise so plain, that every common person may therein be unto himself a sufficient Expounder. Finally, to explain even those things which need and admit explication, many other usual ways there are besides Sermons. Therefore Sermons are not the only ordinary means whereby we first come to apprehend the mysteries of God. Is it in regard then of Sermons only, that apprehending the Gospel of Christ we yield thereunto our unfained assent as to a thing infallibly true? They which rightly consider after what sort the heart of man hereunto is framed, must of necessity acknowledge, that who so assenteth to the words of eternal life, doth it in regard of his *authority* whose words they are. This is in mans conversion unto God το ἰδαι ἡ ἀρχὴ τῆς σωτηρίας, the first step whereat his race towards Heaven beginneth. Unless therefore, clean contrary to our own experience, we shall think it a miracle if any man acknowledge the divine authority of the Scripture, till some Sermon have persuaded him thereunto, and that otherwise neither conversation in the bosom of the Church, nor religious Education, nor the reading of learned mens Books, nor Information received by conference, nor whatsoever pain and diligence in hearing, studying, meditating day and night on the Law, is so far blest of God as to work this effect in any man, how would they have us to grant, that faith doth not come but only by *hearing Sermons*? <sup>a</sup> Fain they would have us to believe the Apostle S. Paul himself to be the Author of this their paradox, only because he said, that it pleaseth God by the <sup>b</sup> foolishness of preaching, to save them which believe; and again, <sup>c</sup> How shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? How shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? How shall they hear without a Preacher? How shall men preach except they be sent? To answer therefore both allegations at once, the very substance of that they contain is in few but this. Life and salvation God will have offered unto all; his will is that *Gentiles* should be saved as well as *Jews*. Salvation belongeth unto none but such as call upon the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ. Which Nations as yet unconverted neither do nor possibly can do till they believe. What they are to believe, impossible it is they should know till they hear it. Their hearing requireth our preaching unto them. <sup>d</sup> Tertullian, to draw even *Pagans* themselves unto Christian Belief, willett the Books of the old Testament to be searched, which were at that time in *Ptolomies* Library. And if men did not list to travell so far, though it were for their endles good, he addeth, that in *Rome* and other places the *Jews* had Synagogues, whereunto every one which would might resort, that this kind of liberty they purchased by payment of a standing tribute, that there they did openly <sup>e</sup> read the Scriptures; and whosoever will hear, (saith Tertullian) he shall find God; whosoever will study to know, shall be also fain to believe. But sith there is no likelihood that ever voluntarily they will seek instruction at our hands, it remaineth that unless we will suffer them to perish, salvation it self must seek them, it becometh God to send them Preachers as he did his elect Apostles throughout the World. There is a knowledge which God hath always revealed unto them in the works of Nature. This they honour and esteem highly as profound wisdom; howbeit this wisdom saveth them not. That which must save Believers, is the knowledge of the Cross of Christ, the only subject of all our preaching. And in their eyes what doth this seem as yet but folly? It pleaseth God by the foolishness of preaching to save. These words declare how admirable force those Myteries have, which the World doth deride as follies, they shew that the foolishness of the Cross of Christ is the wisdom of true believers; they concern the object of our faith, the matter preached of and believed in by Christian men. This we know that the Grecians or Gentiles did account foolishness; but that they ever did think it a fond or unlikely way to seek mens conversion by Sermons, we have not heard. Manifest therefore it is, that the Apostles applying the name of foolishness in such sort as they did, must needs, by the foolishness of preaching, mean the Doctrine of Christ, which we learn that we may be saved, but that Sermons are the only manner of teaching, whereby it pleaseth our Lord to save, he could not mean. In like sort, where the same Apostle proverb, that as well the sending of the Apostles, as their preaching to the Gentiles, was necessary, dare we affirm it was ever his meaning, that unto their Salvation, who even from their tender

a T. C. lib. 2. pag. 375.

b 1 Cor. 1. 21.

c Rom. 10. 14.

d Apologes. cap.

18. in fine.

e This they did

in a tongue

which to all

learned men

amongst the

Hearkens, and

to a great part

of the simplest

was familiarly

known: as ap-

peareth by a

supplication

offered unto

the Emperour

Justinian,

wherein the

Jews make re-

quest that it

might be law-

ful for them to

read the Greek

Translation of

the 70 Inter-

preters in their

Synagogues,

as their custom

before had been.

Authent. 146.

Col. 10. incipit.

Equum sanc.

f The Apostle

useth the word

ἀφροσύνη and

not ἀνεύρεσις.



der infancy never knew any other Faith or Religion than only Christian, *no kind of teaching* can be available, *saving that*, which was so needful for the first universal conversion of Gentiles hating Christianity; neither the *sending* of any sort allowable in the one case, except only of such as had been in the other also most fit and worthy Instruments? *Belief in all sorts* doth come by hearkning and attending to the Word of Life. Which Word sometime proposeth and preacheth it self to the hearer; sometime they deliver it, whom privately zeal and pious moveth to be Instructors of others by conference; sometime of them it is taught, whom the Church hath called to the publick, either reading thereof, or interpreting. All these tend unto one effect, neither doth that which *S. Paul* or other Apostles teach, concerning the necessity of *such teaching* as theirs was, or of *sending such* as they were, for *that purpose unto the Gentiles*, prejudice the efficacy of *any other way* of publick instruction, or inforce the utter disability of any other mens Vocation thought requisite in this Church for the saving of souls, where means more effectual are wanting. Their only proper and direct proof of the thing in question had been to shew, in what sort, and how far mans Salvation doth necessarily depend upon the knowledge of the Word of God; what conditions, properties, and qualities there are, whereby Sermons are distinguished from other kinds of administering the Word unto that purpose; and what special property or quality that is, which being no where found but in Sermons, maketh them effectual to save souls, and leaveth all other Doctrinal means besides destitute of vital efficacy. These pertinent Instructions, whereby they might satisfie us, and obtain the cause it self for which they contend, these things which only would serve they leave, (and which needeth not) sometime they trouble themselves with fretting at the ignorance of such as withstand them in their opinion; sometime they<sup>a</sup> fall upon their poor Brethren which can but read, and against them they are bitterly eloquent. If we alledge what the Scriptures themselves do usually speak for the saving force of the Word of God, not with restraint to any one certain kind of delivery, but howsoever the same shall chance to be made known, yet by one trick or other they always<sup>b</sup> restrain it unto Sermons. Our Lord and Saviour hath said, *Search the Scriptures, in them ye think to have eternal life*. But they tell us, he spake to the Jews, which Jews before *had heard his Sermons*; and that peradventure it was his mind they should search, not by reading, nor by hearing them read, but by attending, whensoever the Scriptures should happen to be alledged in Sermons. Furthermore, having received Apostolick Doctrine, <sup>d</sup> the Apostle Saint Paul hath taught us to esteem the same as the supreme Rule, whereby all other doctrines must for ever be examined. Yea, but in as much as the Apostle doth there speak of *that he had preached*, he flatly maketh (as they strangely affirm) *his preachings* or Sermons the Rule, whereby to examine all. And then, I beseech you, what Rule have we thereby to judge or examine any? For, if Sermons must be our rule, because the Apostles Sermons were so to their hearers; then, sith we are not as they were, hearers of the Apostles Sermons, it resteth that either the Sermons which we hear should be our rule, or (that being absurd) there will (which yet hath greater absurdity) no rule at all be remaining for trial, what doctrines now are corrupt, what consonant with heavenly truth. Again, let<sup>c</sup> the same Apostle acknowledge all Scripture profitable to teach, to improve, to correct, to instruct in righteousness. Still notwithstanding we erre, if hereby we presume to gather, that Scripture read, will avail unto any one of all these uses; they teach us the meaning of the words to be, that so much the Scripture can do, if the Minister that way apply it in his Sermons, otherwise not. Finally, they never hear sentence which mentioneth the Word or Scripture, but forthwith their Glosses upon it are, the Word preached, the Scripture explained or delivered unto us in Sermons. Sermons they evermore understand to be that Word of God, which alone hath vital operation, the dangerous sequel of which construction I wish they did more attentively weigh. For sith, speech is the very Image, whereby the mind and soul of the speaker conveyeth it self into the bosom of him which heareth, we cannot chuse but see great reason, wherefore the Word that proceedeth from God, who is himself very truth and life, should be (as the Apostle to the *Hebrews* noteth) lively and mighty in operation, sharper than any two-edged sword. Now, if in this and the like places we did conceive, that our

OWN

<sup>a</sup> T. C. lib. 2.

pag. 373.

This tale of Readers.

The Bishops more than beggerly Presents.

Those Rascall Ministers.

<sup>b</sup> T. C. lib. 2. p. 37.<sup>c</sup> John 5. 39.<sup>d</sup> Gal. 1. 9.<sup>e</sup> 1 Tim. 3. 16.<sup>f</sup> Heb. 4. 12.

own Sermons are that strong and forcible Word, should we not hereby impart even the most peculiar glorie of the Word of God, unto that which is not his word? For, touching our Sermons, that which giveth them their very being, is the wit of man; and therefore they oftentimes accordingly taste too much of that over-corrupt fountain from which they come. In our speech of most holy things, our most frail affections many times are bewrayed. Wherefore, when we read or recite the Scripture, we then deliver to the people properly the Word of God. As for our Sermons, be they never so sound and perfect, his Word they are not, as the Sermons of the Prophets were; no, they are but ambiguously termed his, because his Word is commonly the subject whereof they treat, and must be the rule whereby they are framed. Notwithstanding, by these and the like shifts they derive unto Sermons alone; whatsoever is generally spoken concerning the Word. Again, what seemeth to have been uttered concerning Sermons, and their efficacy or necessity, *in regard of divine matter*, and must consequently be verified in sundry other kinds of teaching, if *the matter* be the same in all, their use is to fasten every such speech unto that one only manner of teaching, which is by Sermons, that still Sermons may be all in all. Thus, because Solomon declareth that the people decay or *perish* for want of knowledge, where <sup>T. C. lib. 2. pag. 381.</sup> *no prophesying* at all is, they gather that the hope of life and salvation is cut off, where Preachers are not which <sup>Prov. 29. 18.</sup> *prophesy by Sermons*, how many soever they be in number that read daily the Word of God, and deliver, though in other sort, the self-same matter which Sermons do. The people which have no way to come to the knowledge of God, *no prophesying*, no teaching, perish. But that they should of necessity perish, where any one way of knowledge lacketh, is more then the words of Solomon import. Another usual point of their art in this present question, is to make very large and plentiful discourses, how Christ is by Sermons <sup>T. C. lib. 2. pag. 379.</sup> *lifted up higher*, and made more <sup>2 Cor. 2. 16.</sup> *apparent to the eye of Faith*; how the <sup>1 Tim. 2. 15.</sup> *savour of the Word* is more <sup>Mat. 16. 19.</sup> *sweet* being brayed, and more able to nourish being divided by preaching, then by onely reading proposed; how Sermons are the keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, and do open the Scriptures, which being but read, remain *in comparison* still clasped; how God <sup>1 Cor. 3. 6.</sup> *giveth richer increase of grace to the ground that is planted and watered by preaching*, then by bare and simple reading. Out of which premises declaring how attainment unto life is easier where Sermons are, they conclude an <sup>T. C. lib. 2. pag. 380.</sup> *impossibility* thereof where Sermons are not. Alcimus the Sophister hath many arguments, to prove that voluntary and extemporal far excelleth premeditated speech. The like No salvation wherunto, & in part the same, are brought by them, who commend Sermons, as being <sup>to be looked for, where no Preaching is.</sup> (which all men, I think, will acknowledge) sundry *peculiar and proper vertues*, such as no other way of teaching hath. Aptnes to follow particular occasions presently growing, to put life into words by countenance, voice and gesture, to prevail mightily in the sudden affections of men, this Sermons may challenge. Wherin notwithstanding so eminent properties whereof Lessons are happily destitute, yet Lessons being free from some inconveniences, whereunto Sermons are more subject, they may in this respect no less take, then in other they must give the hand which betokeneth preeminence. For there is nothing which is not some way excell'd, even by that which it doth excel. Sermons therefore and Lessons may each excel other in some respects, without any prejudice unto either, as touching that vital force which they both have in the work of our salvation. To which effect when we have endeavoured as much as in us doth lie, to find out the strongest causes, wherefore they should imagine that reading is it self so unavailable, the most we can learn at their hands, is, that Sermons are <sup>T. C. lib. 2. pag. 396.</sup> *the Ordinance of God*; the Scriptures *dark*, and the labour of reading *easy*. First, therefore as we know that God doth aide with grace, and by his special providence evermore bless with happy success those things which himself appointeth; so his Church, we perswade our selves, he hath not in such sort given over to a reprobate sence, that whatsoever it deviseth for the good of the souls of men, the same he doth still accurse and make frustrate. Or if he always did defeat the Ordinances of his Church, <sup>Dan. 31. 13.</sup> *is not reading the Ordinance of God*? Wherefore then should we think that the force of his secret grace is accustomed to bless the labour of dividing his Word, according unto each mans private discretion in publike Sermons, and to withdraw it self from concurring with the publike delivery thereof by such selected portions of Scripture, as the whole Church hath solemnly appointed to be read for the peoples good, either by ordinary course, or otherwise, according to the exigence of

a De Eccles.  
offic. lib. 1. c. 10.  
b Psal. 1. 2.  
c Psal. 119. 16.  
d Aug. in Ps.  
66.  
e Cyprian lib. 2.  
Epist. 5. Lector.  
personar. verba  
sublimia,  
Evangelium  
Christi legis  
fratribus con-  
spicitur, cum  
gaudio frater-  
nitatis auditur.  
f Psal. 119. 33. 35

special occasions? Reading (saith <sup>a</sup> *Isidore*) is to the hearers no small edifying. To them whose delight and meditation is in the Law, seeing that happiness and bliss be-  
longeth, it is not in us to deny them the benefit of heavenly grace. And I hope we  
may presume; that a rare thing it is not in the Church of God, even for that very  
Word which is read to be both presently their <sup>c</sup> joy, and afterwards their study that  
hear it. <sup>d</sup> Saint *Augustin* speaking of devout men, noteth, how they daily frequented  
the Church, how attentive ear they gave unto the Lessons and Chapters read, how  
careful they were to remember the same, and to muse thereupon by themselves.  
<sup>e</sup> St. *Cyprian* observeth, that reading was not without effect in the hearts of men.  
Their joy and alacrity was to him an argument, that there is in this Ordinance a  
blessing, such as ordinarily doth accompany the administration of the Word of life. It  
were much if there should be such a difference between the hearing of Sermons  
preached and of Lessons read in the Church, that he which presenteth himself at the  
one, and maketh his Prayer with the Prophet <sup>f</sup> *David*, *Teach me, O Lord, the way of*  
*thy Statutes*; *direct me in the path of thy Commandments* might have the ground of  
usual experience whereupon to build his hope of prevailing with God, and obtaining  
the grace he seeketh; they contrariwise not so, who crave the like assistance of his Spi-  
rit, when they give ear to the reading of the other. In this therefore preaching and  
reading are equal, that both are approved as his Ordinances, both assisted with his  
grace. And if his grace do assist them both to the nourishment of Faith already bred,  
we cannot without some very manifest cause yeilded, imagine that in breeding or  
begetting Faith, his grace doth cleave to the one, and utterly forsake the other.  
Touching <sup>g</sup> *hardness*, which is the second pretended impediment, as against Homilies  
being plain and popular instructions, it is no bar, so neither doth it infringe the ef-  
ficacy, no not of Scriptures, although but read. The force of reading, how small soever  
they would have it, must of necessity be granted sufficient to notify that which is  
plain or easie to be understood. And of things necessary to all mens salvation, we  
have been hitherto accustomed to hold (especially since the publishing of the Gos-  
pel of Jesus Christ, whereby the simplest having now a Key unto knowledge, which the  
<sup>h</sup> *Eunuch* in the *Acts* did want, our children may of themselves by reading under-  
stand that, which he without an Interpreter could not) they are in Scripture plain  
and easie to be understood. As for those things which at the first are obscure and dai-  
ly, when memory hath laid them up for a time, judgement afterwards growing ex-  
plaineth them. Scripture therefore is not *so hard*, but that the *only reading* thereof  
may give life unto willing hearers. The easie performance of which holy labour, is in  
like sort a very cold objection, to prejudice the vertue thereof. For what though an  
*Infidel*; yea, though a *child* may be able to read; there is no doubt, but the meanest  
and worst amongst the people under the Law, had been as able as the Priests them-  
selves were to offer Sacrifice. Did this make Sacrifice of no effect unto that purpose  
for which it was instituted? In Religion some duties are not commended so much by  
the hardness of their execution, as by the worthiness and dignity of that acceptance  
wherein they are held with God. We admire the goodness of God in nature, when  
we consider how he hath provided that things most needfull to preserve this life,  
should be most prompt and easie for all living creatures to come by. Is it not as evi-  
dent a sign of his wonderful providence over us, when that food of eternal life, upon  
the *water want* wherof our endless death and destruction necessarily ensueth, is prepa-  
red and always set in such a readiness, that those very means than which nothing is  
more easie may suffice to procure the same? Surely, if we perish, it is not the lack of  
Scribes and learned Expounders that can be our just excuse. The Word which sa-  
veth our souls is near us, we need for knowledge but <sup>i</sup> to read and live. The man  
which readeth the Word of God, the Word it self doth pronounce blessed, if he also  
observe the same. Now all these things being well considered, it shall be no intricate  
matter for any man to judge with indifferency on which part the good of the Church  
is most conveniently fought; whether on ours, whose opinion is such as hath been  
shewed, or else on <sup>k</sup> theirs, who leaving no ordinary way of salvation for them unto  
whom the Word of God is but only read, do seldom name them but with great dis-  
dain and contempt who execute that service in the Church of Christ. By means  
whereof it hath come to pass, that Churches, which cannot enjoy the benefit of usual  
Preaching, are judged, as it were even forsaken of God, forlorne, and without either  
hope or comfort: Contrariwise, those places which every day for the most part are

g T. C. l. 2. p.  
383. 384. 392.

h Acts. 8. 31.

i Apoc. 1. 3.

k T. C. l. 2. p.  
363. p. 373.



at Sermons as the flowing Sea, do both by their emptiness at times of reading, and by other apparent tokens shew to the voice of the living God, this way sounding in the ears of men a great deal less reverence then were meet. But if no other evil were known to grow thereby, who can choose but think them cruel which do hear them so boldly teach, that <sup>a</sup> if God (as to him there is nothing impossible) do happily save any such as continue where they have all other means of instruction, but are not taught by continual preaching, yet this is miraculous, and more then the fitness of so poor instruments can give any man cause to hope for; that <sup>b</sup> Sacraments are not effectual to salvation, except men be instructed by *preaching before* they be made partakers of them; yea, that both <sup>c</sup> Sacraments and Prayers also, where Sermons are not, *Do not only not feed, but are ordinarily to further condemnation?* What mans heart doth not rise at the mention of these things? It is true that the weakness of our wits and the dulness of our affections do make us for the most part, even as our Lords own Disciples were for a certain time, hard and slow to believe what is written. For help whereof expositions and exhortations are needful, and that in the most effectual manner. The principal Churches throughout the Land, and no small part of the rest being in this respect by the goodness of God so abundantly provided for, they which want the like furtherance unto knowledge, wherewith it were greatly to be desired that they also did abound, are yet, we hope, not left in so extreme destitution, that justly any man should think the ordinary means of eternal life taken from them because their teaching is in publique for the most part but by reading. For which cause amongst whom there are not those helps that others have to set them forward in the way of life, such to dishearten with fearful sentences, as though their salvation could hardly be hoped for, is not in our understanding so consonant with Christian Charity. We hold it safer a great deal and better to give them <sup>d</sup> encouragement; to put them in mind that it is not the deepness of their knowledge, but the singleness of their belief which God accepteth; that they which <sup>e</sup> hunger and thirst after righteousness, shall be satisfied; that no <sup>f</sup> imbecility of means can prejudice the truth of the promise of God herein; that the weaker their helps are, the more their need is to sharpen the edge of their own <sup>g</sup> industry; and that <sup>h</sup> painfulness by feasible means shall be able to gain that, which in the plenty of more forcible instruments is through sloth and negligence lost. As for the men, with whom we have thus far taken pains to confer, about the force of the Word of God, either read by itself or opened in Sermons; their speeches concerning both the one and the other are in truth such, as might give us very just cause to think, that the reckoning is not great which they make of either. For howsoever they have been driven to devise some odd kind of blind uses, whereunto they may answer that reading doth serve, yet the reading of the Word of God in publique more then their Preachers bare Text, who will not judge that they deem needless, when if we chance at any time to term it necessary as being a thing which God himself did institute amongst the Jewes for purposes that touch as well us as them; a thing which the Apostles commend under the old and ordain under the New Testament; a thing whereof the Church of God hath ever since the first beginning reaped singular Commodity; a thing which without exceeding great detriment no Church can omit? they only are the men that ever were heard of, by whom this hath been crost and gain-said, they only the men which have given their peremptory sentence to the contrary, <sup>i</sup> *It is untrue that simple reading is necessary in the Church.* And why untrue? *Because although it be very convenient which is used in some Churches, where before preaching time the Church assembled hath the Scriptures read in such order, that the whole Canon thereof is oftentimes in one year run thorough: yet a number of Churches which have no such order of simple reading, cannot be in this point charged with breach of Gods Commandment, which they might be if simple reading were necessary.* A poor, a cold and an hungry caviel. Shall we therefore to please them change the Word *Necessary*, and say that it hath been a commendable order, a custom very expedient, or an ordinance most (profitable whereby they know right well that we mean exceedingly behoofull) to read the Word of God at large in the Church, whether it be as our manner is, or as theirs is whom they prefer before us? It is not this that will content or satisfy their minds.

They have againe it a marvellous deep and profound axiome, <sup>j</sup> *That Two things*

to one and the same end cannot but very improperly be said most profitable. And therefore if preaching be most profitable to mans salvation, then is not reading; if reading be, then preaching is not. Are they resolved then at the leastwise, if preaching be the onely ordinary mean whereby it pleaseth God to save our souls, what kind of preaching is it which doth save? Understand they how or in what respect there is that force and vertue in preaching? We have reason wherefore to make these demands, for that although their pens run all upon *Preaching and Sermons*, yet when themselves do practise that whereof they write, they change their Dialect, and those words they shun, as if there were in them some secret sting. It is not their phrase to say they *preach*, or to give to their own instructions and exhortations the name of *Sermons*; the paine they take themselves in this kind is either *opening* or *Lecturing*, or *Reading*, or *Exercising*, but in no case *preaching*.<sup>a</sup> And in this present question they also warily protest that what they ascribe to the vertue of preaching, they still mean it of good preaching: Now one of them saith that a good Sermon<sup>b</sup> must expound and apply a large portion of the Text of Scripture at one time.

<sup>a</sup> T. C. lib. 2.

pag. 385.

<sup>b</sup> Complaint  
of the Commu-  
naltie.

<sup>c</sup> Doct. Summ.

Printer pag. 21.

<sup>d</sup> T. C. lib. 2.

pag. 385.

Another giveth us to understand, that sound preaching<sup>c</sup> is not to do as one did at London. who spent most of his time in invectives against good men, and told his audience how the Magistrate should have an eye to such as troubled the peace of the Church. The<sup>d</sup> best of them hold it for no good preaching, when a man endeavour-eth to make a glorious shew of eloquence and learning, rather then to apply himself to the capacity of the simple. But let them shape us out a good Preacher by what pattern soever pleaseth them best, let them exclude and inclose whom they will with their definitions, we are not desirous to enter into any contention with them about this, or to abate the conceit they have of their own ways, so that when once we are agreed what Sermons shall currantly pass for good, we may at length understand from them what that is in a good Sermon which doth make it the Word of life unto such as hear. If substance of matter, evidence of things, strength and validity of arguments and proofs, or if any other vertue else which words and sentences may contain, of all this what is there in the best Sermons being uttered, which they loose by being read? But they utterly deny that the reading either of Scriptures, or Homilies and Sermons can ever by the ordinary grace of God save any soul. So that although we had all the Sermons word for word which *James, Paul, Peter*, and the rest of the Apostles made, some one of which Sermons was of power to convert thousands of the hearers unto Christian faith; yea although we had all the instructions, exhortations, consolations which came from the gracious lips of our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and should read them ten thousand times over, to faith and salvation. No man could hereby hope to attain. Whereupon it must of necessity follow, that the vigour and vital efficacy of Sermons doth grow from certain accidents which are not in them but in their Maker; his vertue, his gesture, his countenance, his zeal, the motion of his body, and the inflection of his voice, who first uttereth them as his own, is that which giveth them the form, the nature, the very essence of instruments available to eternal life. If they like neither that nor this, what remaineth but that their final conclusion be, *Sermons we know are the only ordinary means to salvation, but why or how we cannot tell*? Wherefore to end this tedious controversie, wherein the too great importunity of our over eager Adversaries hath constrained us much longer to dwell, then the barrenness of so poor a cause could have seemed at the first likely either to require or to admit, if they which without partialities and passions are accustomed to weigh all things, and accordingly to give their sentence, shall here sit down to receive our Audit, and to cast up the whole reckoning on both sides, the summe which truth amounteth unto will appear to be but this, that as medicines provided of nature, and applied by art for the benefit of bodily health, take effect sometime under and sometime above the natural proportion of their vertue, according as the mind and fancy of the patient doth more or less concur with them: So whether we barely read unto men the Scriptures of God; or by Homilies concerning matter of belief and conversation seek to lay before them the duties which they owe unto God and man; whether we deliver them Books to read and consider of in private at their own best leisure, or call them to the hearing of Sermons publickly in the house of God; albeit every of these & the like unto these means do

do truly and daily effect that in the hearts of men for which they are each and all meant, yet the operation which they have in common being most sensible and most generally noted in one kind above the rest, that one hath in some mens opinions drowned altogether the rest, and injuriously brought to pass that they have been thought not less effectual than the other, but without the other uneffectual to save souls. Whereas the cause why Sermons only are observed to prevail so much while all means else seem to sleep and do nothing, is in truth but that singular affection and attention which the people sheweth every where towards the one, & their cold disposition to the other, the reason hereof being partly the art which our Adversaries use for the credit of their Sermons, to bring men out of conceit with all other teaching besides; partly, a custom which men have to let those things carelessly pass by their ears which they have oftentimes heard before, or know they may hear again whenever it pleaseth themselves; partly, the special advantages which Sermons naturally have to procure attention, both in that they come always new, and because by the hearer it is still presumed that if they be let slip for the present, what good soever they contain is lost, and that without all hope of recovery. This is the true cause of oddes between Sermons and other kinds of wholesome instruction. As for the difference which hath been hitherto so much defended on the contrary side, making Sermons the only ordinary means unto faith and eternal life, sith this hath neither evidence of Truth, nor proof sufficient to give it warrant, a cause of such quality may with far better grace and conveniency ask that pardon which common humanity doth easily grant, then claim in challenging manner that assent which is as unwilling when reason guideth it to be yielded where it is not, as withheld where it is apparently due. All which notwithstanding, as we could greatly wish that the rigor of this their opinion were alayed and mitigated so because we hold it the part of religious ingenuity to honour vertue in whomsoever; therefore it is our most hearty desire, and shall be always our Prayer unto Almighty God, that in the self-same fervent zeal wherewith they seem to effect the good of the Souls of men, and to thirst after nothing more then that all men might by all means be directed in the way of life, both they and we may constantly persist to the Worlds end. For in this we are not their Adversaries, though they in the other hitherto have been ours.

13. Between the Throne of God in Heaven, and his Church upon earth here militant, if it be so that Angels have their continual intercourse, where should we find the same more verified then in those two ghostly Exercises, the one *Doctrine*, the other *Prayer*? For what is the Assembling of the Church to learn, but the receiving of Angels descended from above? What to pray, but the sending of Angels upward? His Heavenly Inspirations, and our holy desires are as so many Angels of intercourse and commerce between God and us. As teaching bringeth us to know that God is our supream truth; so prayer testifieth that we acknowledge him our sovereign good. Besides, sith on God as the most high all inferior causes in the world are dependant, and the higher any cause is, the more it covereth so impart vertue unto things beneath it, how should any kind of service we do or can do, find greater acceptance then Prayer, which sheweth our concurrence with him, in desiring that wherewith his very nature doth most delight? Is not the name of Prayer usual to signifie even all the service that ever we do unto God? And that for no other cause, as I suppose, but to shew that there is in Religion no acceptable duty which devout invocation of the name of God doth not either presuppose or infer. <sup>a</sup> *Ofs.* 14. 3. Prayers are those <sup>a</sup> calves of mens lips; those most gracious and sweet <sup>b</sup> odours; <sup>b</sup> *Roch.* 5. 3. those rich presents and gifts, which being <sup>c</sup> carryed up into Heaven, do best testifie <sup>c</sup> *Acts* 10. 4. our dutifull affection, and are, for the purchasing of all favour at the hands of God, the most undoubted means we can use. On others what more easily, and yet what more fruitfully bestowed then our Prayers? If we give counsell, they are the simpler on'y that need it; if almes the poorer only are relieved; but by Prayer we do good to a l. And whereas every other duty besides is but to shew it self as time and opportunity require, for this <sup>d</sup> all times are convenient: when we are not able to do <sup>d</sup> *Rom.* 1. 9. any other thing for mens behoof, when through maliciousness or unkindness they <sup>e</sup> vouchsafe not to accept any other good at our hands, Prayer is that which we <sup>e</sup> *1 Thes.* 5. 17. always have in our power to bestow, and they never in theirs to refuse. Wherefore God <sup>f</sup> *Luke* 18. 1.



<sup>a</sup> 1 Sam. 12. 23 forbid, saith <sup>a</sup> *Samuel*, speaking unto a most unthankful people, a people weary of the benefit of his most vertuous government over them, God forbid that I should sin against the Lord, and cease to pray for you. It is the first thing wherewith a righteous life beginneth, and the last wherewith it doth end. The knowledg is small which we have on earth concerning things that are done in Heaven. Notwithstanding thus much we know even of Saints in Heaven that they pray. And therefore Prayer being a work common to the Church as well Triumphant as Militant, a work common unto men with Angels, what should we think, but that so much of our lives is celestial and divine as we spend in the exercise of Prayer? for which cause we see that the most comfortable <sup>a</sup> visitations, which God hath sent men from above, have taken especially the times of Prayer as their most natural opportunities.

<sup>a</sup> Dan. 9. 20.  
<sup>a</sup> Acts 10. 13.

Of publique  
Prayer.

<sup>b</sup> Psal. 55. 18.  
<sup>b</sup> Dan. 9. 3.  
<sup>b</sup> Acts 10. 9.

<sup>c</sup> Mat. 18. 20.  
<sup>c</sup> 2 Cor. 1. 11.

<sup>c</sup> Jonah 4. 11.

<sup>f</sup> Apolog. 1. 39:  
Ambros. lib. de  
Poen. Multi  
minimi dum  
congregantur  
unanimis sunt  
magni & mul-  
torum preces  
impossibile est  
contemni.

<sup>g</sup> Psal. 12. 1.  
<sup>h</sup> Kai au'n h  
me'sau' h m  
h'xoua tous  
sympou'rtas  
dyad'et'isa  
wou'p' laur'is.

<sup>i</sup> Psal. 16. 12.  
34. 18.  
<sup>i</sup> Psal. 30. 4-96. 5.

<sup>k</sup> Psal. 27. 4-47.  
4. 84. 1.

Of the form of  
Common-  
Prayer.

<sup>l</sup> Matth. 6. 5, 6.

24. This holy and religious duty of service towards God concerneth us one way in that we are men, and another way in that we are joined as parts to that visible mytticall body which is his Church. As men, we are at our own <sup>b</sup> choice, both for time, and place, and form, according to the exigence of our own occasions in private: But the service, which we do as members of a publique body, is publique, and for that cause must needs be accounted by so much worthier than the other, as a whole society of such condition exceedeth the worth of any one. In which consideration unto Christian Assemblies, there are <sup>c</sup> most special promises made. <sup>d</sup> S. Paul, though likely to prevail with God as much as any one, did notwithstanding think it much more, both for Gods glory and his own good, if Prayers might be made and thanks yielded in his behalf by a number of men. The <sup>e</sup> Prince and people of Nineveh assembling themselves as a main army of Suppliants, it was not in the power of God to withstand them. I speak no otherwise concerning the force of publique Prayer in the Church of God, then before me <sup>f</sup> *Tertullian* hath done, *We come by Troops to the place of Assembly, that being banded as it were together, we may be supplicants enough to beseege God with our Prayers. These forces are unto him acceptable.* When we publickly make our Prayers it cannot be but that we do it with much more comfort than in private, for that the things we ask publickly are approved as needful and good in the judgement of all, we hear them sought for and desired with common consent. Again, thus much help and furtherance is more yielded in that if so be our zeal and devotion to God-ward be slack, <sup>g</sup> the alacrity and fervor of others serveth as a present spur. <sup>h</sup> *For even Prayer it self (saith St. Basil) when it hath not the consort of many voices to strengthen, it is not it self.* Finally, the good which we do by publique Prayer, is more than in private can be done, for that besides the benefit which here is no less procured to our selves, the whole Church is much bettered by our good example, and consequently whereas secret neglect of our duty in this kind is but only our own hurt, one mans contempt of the Common Prayer of the Church of God may be and oftentimes is most hurtfull unto many. In which considerations the <sup>i</sup> Prophet David so often voweth unto God the sacrifice of Praise and Thanksgiving in the Congregation; so earnestly exhorteth others to sing praises unto the Lord in his Courts, in his Sanctuary, before the memorial of his holiness, and so much complaineth of his own uncomfortable exile, wherein although he sustained many most grievous indignities, and endured the want of sundry both pleasures and honours before enjoyed, yet as if <sup>k</sup> this one were his only grief and the rest not felt, his speeches are all of the heavenly benefit of publique assemblies, and the happiness, of such as had free access thereunto.

25. A great part of the cause, wherefore religious minds are so inflamed with the love of publique devotion, is that vertue, force and efficacy, which by experience they find that the very form and reverend solemnity of Common Prayer duly ordered hath, to help that imbecility and weakness in us, by means whereof we are otherwise of our selves the less apt to perform unto God so heavenly a service, with such affection of heart, and disposition in the powers of our souls as is requisite. To this end therefore all things hereunto appertaining, have been ever thought convenient to be done with the most solemnity and majesty that the wisest could devise, It is not with publique as with private Prayer. In this <sup>l</sup> rather secretesse is commanded than outward shew, whereas that being the publique act of a whole society,

society,

ciety, requireth accordingly more care to be had of external appearance. The very assembling of men therefore unto this service hath been ever solemn. And concerning the place of assembly, although it serve for other uses as well as this, yet seeing that our Lord himself hath to this as to the chiefest of all other plainly sanctified his own Temple, by entitling it *the house of Prayer*, what preheminance of dignity soever hath been either by the Ordinance, or through the special favour and providence of God annexed unto his Sanctuary, the principal cause thereof must needs be in regard of *Common Prayer*. For the honour and furtherance whereof, if it be as the gravest of the ancient Fathers seriously were perswaded, and do oftentimes plainly teach, affirming that the house of Prayer is a Court, beautified with the presence of celestial powers, that there we stand, we pray, we sound forth Hymnes unto God, having his Angels intermingled as our Associates; and that with reference hereunto the Apostle doth require so great care to be had of decency for the Angels sake; how can we come to the house of Prayer, and not be moved with the very glory of the place it self, so to frame our affections praying, as doth best beseech them, whose sutes the Almighty doth there sit to hear, and his Angels attend to further? When this was ingrafted in the minds of men, there needed no penal Statutes to draw them unto publick Prayer. The warning sound was no sooner heard, but the Churches were presently filled, the pavements covered with bodies prostrate, and washt with their tears of devout joy. And as the place of publick Prayer is a circumstance in the outward forme thereof, which hath moment to help devotion; so the person much more with whom the people of God do joyne themselves in this action, as with him that standeth and speaketh in the presence of God for them. The authority of his place, the fervour of his zeal, the piety and gravity of his whole behaviour, must needs exceedingly both grace and set forward the service he doth. The authority of his calling is a furtherance, because if God have so far received him into favour, as to impose upon him by the hands of men that office of blessing the people in his Name, and making intercession to him in theirs, which Office he hath sanctified with his own most gracious promise, and ratified that promise by manifest actual performance thereof, when others before in like place have done the same, is not his very ordination a seal, as it were to us, that the self same divine love which hath chosen the instrument to work with, will by that instrument effect the thing whereto he ordained it, in blessing his people, and accepting the Prayers which his servant offereth up unto God for them? It was in this respect a comfortable title which the ancients used to give unto Gods Ministers, terming them usually *Gods most beloved*, which were ordained to procure by their Prayers his love and favour towards all. Again, if there be not zeal and fervency in him which proposeth for the rest those sutes and supplications, which they by their joyful acclamations must ratifie; if he praise not God with all his might; if he pour not out his soul in Prayer; if he take not their causes to heart, or speak not as *Moses*, *Daniel*, and *Ezra*, did for their people; how should there be but in them frozen coldness, when his affections seem benumbed from whom theirs should take fire? Vertue and godliness of life are required at the hands of the Minister of God, not only in that he is to teach and instruct the people, who for the most part are rather led away by the ill example, then directed aright by the wholesome instruction of them, whose life swarveth from the rule of their own doctrine; but also much more in regard of this other part of his function; whether we respect the weakness of the people, apt to loath and abhorre the Sanctuary, when they which perform the service thereof are such as the sonnes of *Heli* were; or else consider the inclination of God himself, who requireth the lifting up of pure hands in prayers, and hath given the World plainly to understand, that the wicked, although they cry, shall not be heard. They are no fit Supplicants to seek his mercy in the behalf of others, whose own un-repentend sins provoke his just indignation. Let thy Priests therefore, O Lord, be ever more clothed with righteousness, that thy Saints may thereby with more devotion rejoyce and sing. But of all helps for due performance of this Service, the greatest is that very set and standing order it self, which framed, with common advice, hath both for matter and form prescribed whatsoever is herein publicly done. No doubt, from God it hath

a Mat. 21. 13.

b Chrys. Hom. 15. ad Hebra. & 24 in Ali.

c 1 Cor. 11. 10.

d Psal. 96. 6. Power and beauty are in his Sanctuary.

e Ad domos statim Dominicas currimus corpora bruii sternimus mixis cum fletu gaudis, supplicamus. Salvin de Prov. l. 7.

f Num. 6. 23; g 1 Chro. 30. 27

h Cod. l. 1. tit. 3. de Epi. & Cler. 43. & 44. sep.

i 1 Tim. 2. 8. John 9. 31. Jer. 11. 11. Ezech. 2. 12.

k Psal. 132. 9.

hath proceeded, and by us it must be acknowledged a work of his singular care and providence, that the Church hath evermore held a prescript form of Common Prayer, although not in all things every where the same, yet for the most part retaining still the same analogie. So that if the Liturgies of all ancient Churches throughout the World be compared amongst themselves, it may be easily perceived they had all one original mould, and that the publick Prayers of the people of God in Churches thoroughly settled, did never use to be voluntary Dictates, proceeding from any mans extemporal wit. To him which considereth the grievous and scandalous inconveniencies, wherunto they make themselves daily subject, with whom any blind and secret corner is judged a fit house of Common Prayer; the manifold confusions which they fall into, where every mans private spirit and gift (as they term it) is the only Bishop that ordaineth him to this Ministry; the infinite deformities whereby through endless and senseless effusions of indigested Prayers, they oftentimes disgrace in most unsufferable manner, the worthiest part of Christian duty towards God, who herein are subject to no certain order, but pray both what and how they list; to him, I say, which weigheth duly all these things the reasons cannot be obscure, why God doth in publick Prayer so much respect the solemnity of places, where the authority and calling of persons by whom, and the precise appointment even with what words or sentences his Name should be called on amongst his people.

a : Chra. 6. 10.  
b Joel 2. 17.  
c : Chra. 29. 30.

Of them  
which like not  
to have any  
set forme of  
Common  
Prayer.

d Num. 6. 13.

26. No man hath hitherto been so impious, as plainly and directly to condemn Prayer. The best stratageme that Satan hath, who knoweth his Kingdom to be no one way more shaken, than by the publick devout Prayers of Gods Church, is by traducing the form and manner of them, to bring them into contempt, and so to shake the force of all mens devotion towards them. From this, and from no other forge, hath proceeded a strange conceit, that to serve God with any set form of Common Prayer, is superstitious. As though God himself did not frame to his Priests the very speech, wherewith they were charged to bless the people; or as if our Lord, even of purpose to prevent this fancy of extemporal and voluntary Prayers, had not left us of his own framing one, which might both remain as a part of the Church Liturgy, and serve as a pattern whereby to frame all other Prayers with efficacy, yet without superfluity of words. If Prayers were no otherwise accepted of God, then being conceived always new, according to the exigence of present occasions; if it be right to judge him by our own bellies, and to imagine that he doth loath to have the self-same supplications often iterated, even as we do to be every day fed without alteration or change of diet; if Prayers be actions which ought to waite away themselves in the making; if being made to remain that they may be resumed and used again as Prayers, they be but instruments of Superstition; surely, we cannot excuse *Moses*, who gave such occasion of scandal to the World, by not being contented to praise the Name of Almighty God, according to the usual naked simplicity of Gods Spirit, for that admirable victory given them against *Pharaoh*, unless so dangerous a precedent were left for the casting of Prayers into certain Poetical moulds, and for the framing of Prayers which might be repeated often, although they never had again the same occasions which brought them forth at the first. For that very Hymne of *Moses* grew afterwards to be a part of the ordinary Jewish Liturgy; not only that, but sundry other sentence invented. Their books of Common Prayer contained partly Hymns taken out of the Holy Scripture, partly Benedictions, Thanksgivings, Supplications, penned by such as have been, from time to time, The Governours of that Synagogue. These they sorted into their several times and places, some to begin the Service of God with, and some to end, some to go before, and some to follow, and some to be interlaced between the divine Readings of the Law and Prophets. Unto their custom of finishing the Pasche with certain Psalmes, there is not any thing more probable, then that the holy Evangelist doth evidently alude, saying, That after the Cup delivered by our Saviour unto his Apostles, they sang, and went forth to the Mount of Olives. As the Jews had their Songs of *Moses*, and *David*, and the rest, so the Church of Christ from the very beginning hath both used the same, and besides them other also of like nature, the Song of the Virgin *Mary*, the Song of

e Mat. 26. 30.  
having sung the  
Psalmes which  
were usual at  
that Fast, those  
Psalmes which  
the Jews call  
the great Hal-  
leluja, begin-  
ning at the  
113. and con-  
tinuing to the  
end of the 118.  
See Paul. Bur-  
ges in Ps. 113  
Edit. 1. and  
Scal. de emen-  
dat. tempo.

*Zachary,*



*Zachary*, the Song of *Simeon*, such Hymnes as the Apostle doth often speak of, saying, *I will pray and sing with the Spirit*, Again, *In Psalmes, Hymnes, and Songs, making melody unto the Lord, and that heartily*. Hymnes and Psalmes are such kinds of Prayer as are not wont to be conceived upon a sudden; but are framed by Meditation before hand, or else by propheticall illumination are inspired, as at that time it appeareth they were, when God by extraordinary gifts of the Spirit, enabled men to all parts or service necessary for the edifying of his Church.

27. Now, albeit the admonitioners did seem at the first to allow no prescript form of prayer at all, but thought it the best that their Minister should always be left at liberty to pray, as his own discretion did serve, yet because this opinion upon better advice they afterwards retracted, their defender and his Associates have sithence proposed to the World a form, such as themselves like, and to shew their dislike of ours, have taken against it those exceptions, which, whosoever doth measure by number, must needs be greatly out of love with a thing that hath so many faults; whosoever by weight, cannot chuse but esteem very highly of that, wherein the wit of so scrupulous Adversaries hath not hitherto observed any defect which themselves can seriously think to be of moment. Gross Errors and manifest Impiety they grant we have taken away. Yet many things in it they say are amiss, many instances they give of things in our Common Prayer, not agreeable as they pretend with the Word of God. It hath in their eye too great affinity with the form of the Church of *Rome*; it differeth too much from that which Churches elsewhere reformed allow and observe; our Attire disgraceth it; it is not orderly read nor gestured as becometh; it requireth nothing to be done, which a Child may not lawfully do; it hath a number of short cuts or shreddings, which may be better called wittes than Prayers; it intermingleth Prayings and Readings in such manner, as if Supplicants should use in proposing their Sutes unto mortal Princes, all the World would judge them mad; it is too long, and by that meane abridgeth preaching; it appointeth the people to say after the Minister, it spendeth time in singing and reading the *Psalmes* by course, from side to side; it useth the Lords Prayer too oft, the Songs of *Magnificas*, *Benedictus*, and *Nunc Dimittis* it might very well spare; it hath the *Litany*, the Creed of *Athanasius*, and *Gloria Patri*; which are superfluous; it craveth earthly things too much; for deliverance from those evils against which we pray, it giveth no thanks: some things it asketh unseasonably when they need not to be prayed for, as deliverance from Thunder and Tempest when no danger is nigh, some in too abject and diffident manner, as that God would give us that which we for our unworthiness dare not ask; some which ought not to be desired, as the deliverance from sudden death, riddance from all adversity, and the extent of saving mercy towards all men. These and such like are the imperfections, whereby our form of Common Prayer is thought to swerve from the Word of God. A great favourer of that part, but yet (his error that way excepted) a learned, a painful, a right vertuous and a good man did not fear sometime to undertake, against Popish Detractors, the general maintenance and defence of our whole Church Service, as having in it nothing repugnant to the Word of God. And even they which would file away most from the largeness of that offer, do notwithstanding in more sparing terms acknowledge little less. For when those opposite judgements which never are wont to contrive things doubtful to the better, those very tongues which are always prone to aggravate whatsoever hath but the least shew whereby it may be suspected to favour of, or to sound towards any evil, do by their own voluntary sentence cleerly free us from gross Errors, and from manifest Impiety herein; who would not judge us to be discharged of all blame, which are confess to have no great fault, even by their very word and testimony, in whose eyes no fault of ours hath ever hitherto been accustomed to seem small? Nevertheless, what they seem to offer us with the one hand, the same with the other they pull back again. They grant we erre not in palpable manner, we are not openly and notoriously impious, yet Errors we have, which the sharpest insight of their wisest men do espie, there is hidden impiety, which the profounder sort are able enough to disclose. Their skilful ears perceive certain harsh and unpleasant discords in the sound of our Common Prayer, such as the Rules of Divine Harmony, such as the Laws of God cannot bear.

28. Touch-

Of them who allowing a set forme of Prayer, yet allow not ours.

T. C. L. p. 131 afterwards pag. 131. Whereas M. Doctor affirmeth that there can be nothing shewed in the whole Book which is not agreeable unto the Word of God: I am very loth, &c. Notwithstanding, my duty of defending the truth and love which I have first towards God, and then towards my Country, constraineth me being thus provoked, to speake a few words more particularly of the forme of Prayer, that when the blessings thereof do appear, it may please the Queens Majesty, and her Honourable Council, with those of the Parliament, &c.

The forme of  
our Liturgie  
too neer the  
Papists, too  
farre different  
from that of  
other reformed  
Churches, as  
they pretend.

a T.C.I. 1. p. 135  
b A Book of  
the forme of  
Common  
Prayer tendered to the Par-  
liament, pag. 46.

c Pag. 22.  
d 24.

Attire belong-  
ing to the Ser-  
vice of God.  
T.C.I. 1. p. 71.  
We think the  
Surplice espe-  
cially unmeet  
for a Minister  
of the Gospel  
to wear, pag. 75.  
It is easily seen  
by Solomon Ec-  
cles. 8. 9. that to  
wear a white  
Garment was  
greatly esteem-  
ed in the East  
parts, and was  
ordinary to  
those that were  
in any estima-  
tion, as black  
with us, and  
therefore was

no several Apparell for the Ministers to execute their Ministry in. e Hieron. 44. Ezech. f Hiero. Aliter. Pelag. lib. 3. c. 9.  
g T.C.I. 1. p. 77. By a white garment, is meant a comely Apparell, and not ill vely.

28. Touching our Conformity with the Church of *Rome*, as alio of the diffe-  
rence between some Reformed Churches and ours, that which generally hath been  
already answered, may serve for answer to that exception, which in these two re-  
spects they take particularly against the form of our Common Prayer. To say,  
that in nothing they may be followed, which are of the Church of *Rome*, were vi-  
olent and extrem. Some things they do, in that they are men, in that they are  
wise men, and Christian men some things, some things in that they are mis-  
led and blinded with Errour. As far as they follow Reason and Truth, we fear not  
to tread the self-same steps wherein they have gone, and to be their Followers.  
Where *Rome* keepeth that which is ancienter and better; others whom we much  
more affect leaving it for newer, and changing it for worse, we had rather follow  
the perfections of them whom we like not, than in defects resemble them whom  
we love. For although they profess they agree with us touching <sup>a</sup> a prescript forme  
of Prayer to be used in the Church, yet in that very form which they say, is <sup>b</sup> agree-  
able to Gods Word, and the use of Reformed Churches, they have by special protesta-  
tion declared, that their meaning is not it shall be prescribed as a thing whereunto  
they will tie their Minister. *It shall not (they say) be necessary for the Minister daily  
to repeat all these things before mentioned, but beginning with some like confession, to  
proceed to the Sermon, which ended, he either useth the Prayer for all states before  
mentioned, or prayeth as the Spirit of God shall move his heart.* Herein there-  
fore we hold it much better with the Church of *Rome* to appoint a prescript forme  
which every man shall be bound to observe, than with them to set down a kind of  
direction, a forme for men to use if they list, or otherwise to change as pleaseth  
themselves. Furthermore, the Church of *Rome* hath rightly also considered, that  
publick Prayer is a duty intire in it self, a duty requisite to be performed, much  
oftner than Sermons can possibly be made. For which cause, as they, so we have  
likewise a publick form how to serve God both Morning and Evening, whether Ser-  
mons may be had or no. On the contrary side, their form of Reformed Prayer  
sheweth only what shall be done <sup>c</sup> upon the dayes appointed for the preaching of the  
Word; with what words the Minister shall begin, <sup>d</sup> when the hour appointed for  
Sermon is come; what shall be said or sung before Sermon, and what after. So that  
according to this form of theirs, it must stand for a Rule, *No Sermon, No Service.*  
Which oversight, occasioned the French spitefully to term Religion in that sort ex-  
ercised, a meer Preach. Sundry other more particular defects there are, which I  
willingly forbear to rehearse, in consideration whereof, we cannot be induced to  
preferre their Reformed form of Prayer before our own, what Church soever we  
resemble therein.

29. The Attire which the Minister of God is by order to use at times of Divine  
Service, being but a matter of meer formality, yet such as for comeliness sake hath  
hitherto been judged by the wiser sort of men not unnecessary to concur with  
other sensible notes, betokening the different kind or quality of persons and acti-  
ons whereto it is tyed, as we think not our selves the holier, because we use it, so  
neither should they with whom no such thing is in use, think us therefore unholy,  
because we submit our selves unto that, which in a matter so indifferent the wisdom  
of Authority and Law have thought comely. To solemn actions of Royalty and  
Justice, their suitable Ornaments are a beauty. Are they on y in Religion a stain?  
Divine Religion, saith Saint Jerome (he speaketh of the Priestly attire of the Law)  
*bath one kind of habit wherein to minister before the Lord, another for ordinary uses  
belonging unto common life.* Pelagius having carped at the curious neatness of mens  
apparel in those days, and through the sowreness of his disposition spoken some-  
what too hardly thereof, affirming, that the glory of Clothes and Ornaments was a  
thing contrary to God and godliness; S. Jerome whose custome is not to pardon over-  
easily his Adversaries, if any where they chance to trip, presseth him as thereby ma-  
king all sorts of men in the world Gods enemies. *Is it enmity with God (saith he) if I  
wear my Coat somewhat handsome? If a Bishop, a Priest, Deacon, and the rest of the  
Ecclesiastical Order come to administer the usual Sacrifice in a white Garment, are*

they

they hereby Gods Adversaries? *Clark, Monks, Widows, Virgins, take heed, it is dangerous for you to be otherwise seen than in foul and ragged clothes. Nor so speak any thing of Secular men, which are proclaimed to have war with God as oft as ever they put on precious and shining clothes.* By which words of *Jerome* we may take it at the least for a probable collection, that his meaning was to draw *Palagius* into hatred, as condemning by so general a speech even the nearness of that very Garment it self, wherein the Clergy did then use to administer publicly the holy Sacrament of Christs most blessed Body and Blood. For that they did then use some such Ornament, the words of *Chrysostome* give plain testimony, who speaking to the Clergy of *Antioch*, telleth them that if they did suffer notorious Malefactors to come to the Table of our Lord and not put them by, it would be as heavily revenged upon them, as if themselves had shed his blood, that for this purpose God had called them to the rooms which they held in the Church of Christ, that this they should reckon was their dignity, this their safety, this their whole Crown and Glory; and therefore this they should carefully intend, and not when the Sacrament is administered, imagine themselves called only to walk up and down in a white and shining Garment. Now, whereas these speeches of *Jerome* and *Chrysostome* do seem plainly to allude unto such Ministerial Garments as were then in use, to this they answer, that by *Jerome* nothing can be gathered, but only that the Ministers came to Church in handsome holiday apparel, and that himself did not think them bound by the Law of God to go like Slaves; but the Weed which we mean he defendeth not; that *Chrysostome* meaneth indeed the same which we defend, but seemeth rather to reprehend than to allow it as we do. Which answer wringeth out of *Jerome* and *Chrysostome* that which their words will not gladly yield. They both speak of the same persons, namely, the Clergy; and of their Weed at the same time when they administer the blessed Sacrament; and of the self-same kind of Weed, a white Garment, so far as we have wit to conceive; and for any thing we are able to see, their manner of speech is not such as doth argue either the thing it self to be different whereof they speak, or their judgements concerning it different; although the one do only maintain it against *Palagius*, as a thing not therefore unlawful, because it was fair or handsome, and the other make it a matter of small commendation in it self, if they which wear it, do nothing else but are the Robes which their place requireth. The honesty, dignity, and estimation of white apparel in the Eastern part of the World, is a token of greater fitness for this Sacred use, wherein it were not convenient that any thing basely thought of should be suffered. Notwithstanding, I am not bent to stand stiffly upon these probabilities, that in *Jeromes* and *Chrysostomes* time any such attire was made several to this purpose. Yet surely the words of *Solomon* are very impertinent to prove it an Ornament, therefore not several for the Ministers to execute their Ministry in, because men of credit and estimation wore their ordinary apparel white. For we know that when *Solomon* wrote those words, the several apparel for the Ministers of the Law, to execute their Ministry in was such. The Wise man which feared God from his heart, and honoured the Service that was done unto him, could not mention so much as the Garments of holiness, but with effectual signification of most singular reverence and love. Were it not better that the love which men bear to God, should make the least things that are impoyed in his Service amiable, than that their over-scrupulous dislike of so mean a thing as a Vestment, should from the very service of God withdraw their hearts and affections? I term it rather a mean thing, a thing not much to be respected, because even they so account now of it, whose first Disputations against it were such, as if Religion had scarcely any thing of greater weight. Their allegations were then, that if a man were assured to gain a thousand by doing that which may offend any one Brother, or be unto him a cause of falling, he ought not to do it; that this Popish apparel the Sacrifice especially hath been by Papists abominably abused; that it hath been a mark and a very Sacrament of abomination; that remaining it serveth as a Monument of Idolatry, and not only edifieth not, but as a dangerous and scandalous Ceremony, doth exceeding much harm to them of whose good we are commanded to have regard, that it causeth men to perish, and make ship-wreck of conscience, for so themselves profess they mean, when they lay the weak are offended herewith, that it hardeneth Papists, hindreth the weak from profiting in the knowledge of the Gospel, grieveth godly minds, and giveth

a Chrysost. ad  
popul. Antioch.  
T. 3. Epist. 10.

b Act. 1. a. 4. 5.  
It is the same, Chrysostom maketh mention of a white garment but not in commendation of it, but rather to the contrary: for he sheweth that the dignity of their Ministry was in taking heed that none unworthy were admitted to the Lords Supper, not in going about the Church with a white Garment.

c Eccles. 45. 7.

d T. C. 1. p. 79.

71.  
71.

T. C. 1. 2. p. 403.  
lib 1 p. 73.  
Page 73.  
Page 76.  
Lib. 1. p. 403.



Lib. 1. 76.  
Page 81.

2 Esq 30. 22.

b Exod. 28. 2.  
c Exod. 39. 27.  
d Psal. 149. 2.  
Apoc. 15. 6.  
Mat. 16. 5.

2 T. C. 1. 1. p. 74.  
2 T. C. 1. 2. p. 250.  
Index 1. 3. c. 2. 1.  
3 p. 262. p. 263.

Lib. 3. p. 263.

Page 263.

giveth them occasion to think hardly of their Ministers; that if the Magistrate may command, or the Church appoint Rites and Ceremonies, yet seeing our abstinence from things in their own nature indifferent, if the weak Brother should be offended, is a flat Commandment of the Holy Ghost, which no Authority either of Church or Commonwealth can make void, therefore neither may the one nor the other lawfully ordain this Ceremony, which hath great incommmodity and no profit, great offence and needful; that by the Law it should have been burnt and consumed with fire as a thing infected with Leprosie; that the Example of *Exechias* beating to powder the brazen Serpent, and of *Paul* abrogating those abused Feasts of Charity, inforceth upon us the duty of abolishing altogether a thing which hath been and is so offensive; Finally, that God by his Prophet hath given an express Commandment, which in this case toucheth us, no less then of old it did the Jews, *Ye shall pollute the covering of the Images of silver, and the rich ornament of your Images of gold, and cast them away as a stained ragge, thou shalt say unto it, Get thee hence.* These and such like were their first Discourses, touching that Church Attire, which with us for the most part is usual in publick Prayer; our Ecclesiastical Laws so appointing, as well because it hath been of reasonable continuance, and by special choice was taken out of the number of those holy Garments, which (over and besides their mystical reference) served for <sup>b</sup> comeliness under the Law, and is in the number of those Ceremonies, which may with choice and discretion be used to that purpose in the Church of Christ; as also for that it sutureth so fitly with that lightsome affection of <sup>d</sup> joy, wherein God delighteth when his Saints praise him; and so lively resembleth the glory of the Saints in Heaven, together with the beauty wherein Angels have appeared unto men, that they which are to appear for men in the presence of God, as Angels, if they were left to their own choice, and would chuse any, could not easily devise a Garment of more decency for such a Service. As for those fore-rehearsed vehement allegations against it, shall we give them credit, when the very Authors from whom they come, confess they believe not their own sayings? For when once they began to perceive how many, both of them in the two Universities, and of others, who abroad having Ecclesiastical charge, do favour mightily their cause, and by all means set it forward, might by persisting in the extremity of that opinion hazard greatly their own estates, and so weaken that part which their places do now give them much opportunity to strengthen, they asked counsel as it seemeth from some abroad, who wisely considered, that the body is of far more worth than the raiment. Whereupon for fear of dangerous inconveniences, is hath been thought good to adde, <sup>e</sup> that sometimes authority must and may with good conscience be obeyed, even where Commandment is not given upon good ground; that the duty of preaching is one of the absolute Commandments of God, and therefore ought not to be forsaken, for the bare inconvenience of a thing which in the own nature is indifferent; that one of the foulest spots in the Surplice, is the offence which it giveth in occasioning the weak to fall, and the wicked to be confirmed in their wickedness, yet hereby there is no unlawfulness proved, but only an inconveniency, that such things should be established, howbeit no such inconveniency neither, as may not be born with; that when God doth flitly command us to abstain from things in their own Nature indifferent, if they offend our weak brethren, his meaning is not we should obey his Commandment herein, unless we may do it, and not leave undone that which the Lord hath absolutely commanded. Alwayes provided, that whosoever will enjoy the benefit of this Dispensation, to wear a scandalous Badge of Idolatry, rather than forsake his Pastoral charge, do (as occasion serveth) teach nevertheless (till the incommmodity of the thing it self, admonish the weak Brethren, that they be not, and pray unto God so to strengthen them that they may not be offended thereat. So that whereas before, they which had authority to institute Rites and Ceremonies, were denyed to have power to institute this, it is now confest, that this they may also lawfully, but not so conveniently appoint; they did well before, and as they ought, who had it in utter detestation and hatred as a thing abominable; they now do well, which think it may be both borne and used with a very good conscience; before, he which by wearing it were sure to win thousands unto Christ, ought not to do it if there were but one which might be offended; now, though it be with the offence of thousands, yet it may be done rather than that should be given over, whereby notwith-

notwithstanding we are not certain we shall gain one; the Examples of *Ezechias* and of *Paul*, the Charge which was given to the Jews by *Esay*, the strict Apostolical prohibition of things indifferent, whensoever they may be scandalous, were before so forcible Laws against our Ecclesiastical Attire, as neither Church nor Commonwealth could possibly make void, which now one of far less authority than either, hath found how to frustrate by dispensing with the breach of inferiour Commandments, to the end that the greater may be kept. But it booteth them not, thus to soder up a broken Cause, whereof their first and last discourses will fall asunder, do what they can. Let them ingenuously confess that their Invectives were too bitter, their Arguments too weak, the matter not so dangerous as they did imagine. If those alledged testimonies of Scripture did indeed concern the matter to such effect as was pretended, that w<sup>th</sup> they should infer were unlawfulness, because they were cired as Prohibitions of that thing which indeed they concern. If they prove not our Attire unlawfull, because in truth they concern it not, it followeth that they prove not any thing against it, and consequently, not so much as uncomeliness or inconvenience. Unless therefore they be able throughly to resolve themselves, that there is no one Sentence in all the Scriptures of God, which doth controul the wearing of it in such manner, and to such purpose as the Church of *England* alloweth; unless they can fully rest and settle their minds in this most sound perswasion, that they are not to make themselves the only competent Judges of decency in these cases, and to despise the solemn judgment of the whole Church, preferring before it their own conceit, grounded only upon uncertain suspicions and fears, whereof if there were at the first some probable cause, when things were but raw and tender, yet now very tract of time hath it self worn that out also; unless, I say, thus resolved in mind they hold their Pastoral charge with the comfort of a good Conscience, no way grudging at that which they do, or doing that which they think themselves bound of duty to reprove, how should it possibly help or further them in their course, to take such occasions as they say are requisite to be taken, and in pensive manner to tell their Audience; "*Brethren, our hearts desire is, that we might enjoy the full liberty of the Gospel, as in other reformed Churches they do else-where, upon whom the heavy hand of Authority hath imposed no grievous burthen. But such is the misery of these our days, that so great happiness we cannot look to attain unto: Were it so, that the equity of the Law of Moses could prevail; or the zeal of Ezechias be found in the hearts of those Guides and Governours under whom we live; or the voice of Gods own Prophets be duly heard; or the Example of the Apostles of Christ be followed, yea or their Precepts be answered with full and perfect obedience, these abominable rags, polluted garments, marks and Sacraments of Idolatry, which Power as you see constraineth us to wear, and conscience to abhor, had long ere this day been removed both out of sight and out of memory. But as now things stand, behold to what narrow streights we are driven; On the one side we fear the words of our Saviour Christ, Woe be to them by whom scandal and offence cometh: on the other side, at the Apostles speech, we cannot but quake and tremble, If I preach not the Gospel, woe be unto me. Being thus hardly beset, we see not any other remedy, but to hazard your Souls the one way, that we may the other way endeavour to save them. Touching the offence of the weak therefore, we must adventure it. If they perish, they perish. Our Pastoral charge is Gods absolute commandment. Rather then that shall be taken from us, we are resolved to take this filth, and so put it on; although we judge it to be so unfit and inconvenient, that as oft as ever we pray or preach so arrayed before you, we do as much as in us lieth, to cast away your souls that are weak minded, and to bring you unto endless perdition. But we beseech you, Brethren, have care of your own safety, take heed to your steps, that ye be not taken in those snares which we lay before you. And our Prayer in your behalf to Almighty God is, that the poison which we offer you, may never have the power to do you harm. Advice and counsell is best sought for at their hands, which either have no part at all in the cause whereof they instruct; or else are so far engaged, that themselves are to bear the greatest adventure in the success of their own counsels, The one of which two considerations maketh men the less respective, and the other the more circumspect. Those good and learned men which gave the first direction to this course, had reason to wish that their own proceedings at home might be favoured abroad also, and that the good affection of such as inclined towards them might be kept alive. But*

if themselves had gone under those sails which they require to be hoisted up, if they had been themselves to execute their own Theory in this Church, I doubt not but easily they would have seen, being nearer at hand, that the way was not good which they took of advising men, first, to wear the apparel, that thereby they might be free to continue their preaching, and then, of requiring them so to preach as they might be sure they could not continue, except they imagine that Laws which permit them not to do as they would, will endure them to speak as they list, even against that which themselves do by constraint of Laws; they would have easily seen that our people being accustomed to think evermore that thing evil which is publicly under any pretence reprov'd, and the men themselves worse which reprove it and use it too, it should be to little purpose for them to salve the wound, by making protestations in disgrace of their own actions, with plain acknowledgement that they are scandalous, or by using fair intreaty with the weak Brethren; they would easily have seen how with us it cannot be endured, to hear a man openly profess that he putteth fire to his Neighbours house, but yet to halloweth the same with Prayer, that he hopeth it shall not burn. It had been therefore perhaps safer and better for ours to have observed<sup>a</sup> St. Basil's advice, both in this and in all things of like nature. *Let him which approveth not his Governours Ordinances, either plainly (but privately always) shew his dislike if he have λόγος ἱκανός, strong and invincible reason against them, according to the true will and meaning of Scripture, or else let him quietly with silence do that which is enjoyed.* Obedience with profit unwillingness to obey, is no better than manifest disobedience.

<sup>a</sup> Basil. Affect. respons. ad inser. 47.

Of gesture in praying, and of different places chosen to that purpose.  
T.C. 4.1. p. 134.

30 Having thus disputed, whether the Surplice be a fit garment to be used in the service of God, the next question whereinto we are drawn, is, whether it be a thing allowable or no, that the Minister should say Service in the Chancel, or turn his face at any time from the people, or before Service ended remove from the place where it was begun? By them which trouble us with these doubts, we would more willingly be resolv'd of a greater doubt; whether it be not a kind of taking Gods Name in vain, to debase Religion with such frivolous disputes, a fit to bestow time and labour about them? Things of so mean regard and quality, although necessary to be ordered, are notwithstanding very unfavoury when they come to be disputed of; because disputation presupposeth some difficulty in the matter which is argued, whereas in things of this nature they must be either very simple or very froward, who need to be taught by disputation what is meet. When we make profession of our Faith, we stand; when we acknowledg our sins, or seek unto God for favour, we fall down, because the gesture of constancy becometh us best in the one, in the other the behaviour of humility. Some parts of our Liturgy consist in the reading of the word of God, and the proclaiming of his Law, that the people may thereby learn what their duties are towards him; some consist in words of praise and thanksgiving, whereby we acknowledge unto God what his blessings are towards us; some are such as albeit they serve to singular good purpose, even when there is no Communion administred; nevertheless, being devised at the first for that purpose, are at the Table of the Lord for that cause also commonly read; some are uttered as from the people, some as with them unto God, some as from God unto them, all as before his sight, whom we fear, and whose presence to offend with any the least unseemliness, we would be surely as loath as they, who most reprehend or deride that we do.

<sup>b</sup> T.C. 4.1. p. 203

Now, because the Gospels which are weekly read, do all historically declare something which our Lord Jesus Christ himself either spake, did, or suffered in his own person, it hath been the custom of Christian men then especially in token of the greater reverence to stand, to utter certain words of acclamation, and at the name of Jesus to bow. Which harmless Ceremonies, as there is no man constrained to use; so we know no reason wherefore any man should yet imagine it an unsufferable evil. It sheweth a reverend regard to the Son of God above other Messengers, although speaking as from God also. And against Infidels, Jews, Arrians, who derogate from the honour of Jesus Christ, such ceremonies are most profitable. <sup>c</sup> As for any erroneous estimation, advancing the Son above the Father and the holy Ghost, seeing that the truth of his equality with them, is a mystery so hard for the wits of mortal men to rise unto, of all Heresies, that which may give him superiority above them, is least to be feared. But to let go this as a matter scarce worth the speaking of, whereas if fault be in these things any where justly found, Law hath referred the whole

<sup>c</sup> Mark 12. 6.

<sup>d</sup> T.C. 4.1. p. 217

dis-



disposition and redress thereof to the Ordinary of the place; \*they which elsewhere \* T.C.I.1.p.74: complain, that disgrace and injury is offered even to the meanest Parish Minister, when the Magistrate appointeth him what to wear, & leaveth not so small a matter as that to his own discretion, being presumed a man discreet, & trusted with the care of the peoples souls, do think the gravest Prelates in the Land no competent Judges, to discern and appoint where it is fit for the Minister to stand, or which way convenient to look praying. From their Ordinary therefore they appeal to themselves, finding great fault that we neither reform the thing against the which they have so long since given sentence, nor yet make answer unto that they bring, which is, that St. Luke declaring, how Peter stood up in the midst of the Disciples, did thereby deliver an *unchangeable* rule, that *whatsoever* is done in the Church, *ought to be done* in the midst of the Church, and therefore not Baptism to be admitted in one place, Marriage solemnized in another, the Supper of the Lord received in a third, in a fourth Sermons, in a fifth Prayers to be made; that the custom which we use is Levitical, absurd, and such as hindreth the understanding of the People; that if it be meet for the Minister, at some time to look towards the people, if the body of the Church be a fit place for some part of Divine Service, it must needs follow that whensoever his face is turned any other way, or any thing done any other where, it hath absurdity. *All these reasons*, they say, have been brought, and were hitherto never answered; besides a number of merriments and jests unanswered likewise, wherewith they have pleasantly moved much laughter at our manner of serving God. Such is their evil hap to play upon dull-spirited men. We are still persuaded that a bare denial is answer sufficient to things which meer fancy objecteth; and that the best Apologie to words of scorn and petulancy, is *Isaacks* Apologie to his brother *Ismael*, the Apologie which patience and silence maketh. Our answer therefore to their reasons, is no; to their scoffs, nothing.

31. When they object that our Book requireth <sup>4</sup> nothing to be done, which a child may not doe as lawfully and as well as that man wherewith the Book contenteth *it self*, is it their meaning that the Service of God ought to be a matter of great difficulty, a labour which requireth great learning and deep skill, or else that the Book containing it should teach what men are fit to attend upon it, and forbid other men unlearned or children to be admitted thereunto? In setting down the form of Common Prayer, there was no need that the Book should mention either the learning of a fit, or the unfitness of an ignorant Minister, more than that he which describeth the manner how to pitch a field, should speak of moderation & sobriety in diet. And concerning the duty it self, although the hardness thereof be not such as needeth such Art, yet surely they seem to be very far carried besides themselves, to whom the dignity of publike Prayer doth not discover somewhat more fitness in men of gravity and ripe discretion, than in children of *ten years of age*, for the decent discharge & performance of that office. It cannot be that they who speak thus, should thus judge. At the board and in private it very well becometh childrens innocency to pray, and their Elders to say, *Amen*. Which being a part of their vertuous education, serveth greatly both to nourish in them the fear of God, and to put us in continual remembrance of that powerful grace which openeth the mouths of Infants to sound his praise. But publike Prayer, the service of God in the solemn Assembly of Saints, is a work though easie, yet withal so weighty and of such respect, that the great facility thereof is but a slender argument to prove, it may be as well and as lawfully committed to children as to men of years, howsoever their ability of learning be but only to do that in decent order wherewith the Book contenteth it self. The Book requireth but orderly reading. As in truth, what should any prescript form of Prayer framed to the Ministers hand require, but onely so to be read as behooveth? We know that there are in the world certain voluntary Overseers of all books, whose censure in this respect would fall as sharp on us as it hath done on many others, if delivering but a form of Prayer, we should either express or include any thing, more than doth properly concern Prayer. The Ministers greatness or meanness of knowledge to do other things, his aptness or insufficiency otherwise than by reading to instruct the Flock, standeth in this place as a stranger, with whom our form of Common Prayer hath nothing to do. Wherein their exception against easiness, as if that did nourish ignorance, proceedeth altogether of a needless jealousy. I have of-

b Acts 1. 15.  
c T.C.I.1.p.134  
lib. 3. pag. 187.

Easiness of praying after our form.  
d T.C.I.1.p.133  
e L. 3. p. 184.  
Another fault in the whole Service or Liturgy of England, is, for that it maintained an unpreaching Ministry in requiring nothing to be done by the Minister which a child of ten years old cannot do as well, and as lawfully, as that man wherewith the Book contenteth it self.

ten heard it inquired of by many, how it might be brought to pass that the Church should every where have able Preachers to instruct the people; what impediments there are to hinder it, and which were the speediest way to remove them. In which consultations the multitude of Parishes, the Paucity of Schools, the manifold discouragements which are offered unto mens inclinations that way, the penury of the Ecclesiastical estate, the irrecoverable loss of so many Livings of principal value, clean taken away from the Church long since by being appropriated, the daily bruises that Spiritual promotions use to take by often falling, the want of somewhat in certain statutes which concern the state of the Church, the too great facility of many Bishops, the stony hardness of too many Patrons hearts not roused with any feeling in this case: such things oftentimes are debated, and much thought upon by them that enter into discourse concerning any defect of knowledge in the Clergie. But whosoever be found guilty, the Communion Book hath surely deserved least to be called in question for this fault. If all the Clergie were as learned as themselves are that most complain of ignorance in others, yet our Book of Prayer might remain the same; and remaining the same it is, I see not how it can be a let unto any mans skill in preaching. Which thing we acknowledge to be Gods good gift, howbeit no such necessary element, that every act of Religion should be thought imperfect and lame, wherein there is not somewhat exacted that none can discharge but an able Preacher.

The length of  
our Service.

T. C. I. i. p. 133.

lib. 3. p. 184.

Aug. Ep. 121.

a Luk. 6. 12.

32. Two faults there are, which our Lord and Saviour himself especially reprov'd in Prayer; the one, when ostentation did cause it to be open; the other, when superstition made it long. As therefore prayers the one way are faulty, not whensoever they be openly made, but when Hypocrisie is the cause of open praying: so the length of Prayer is likewise a fault, howbeit not simply, but where error and superstition causeth more than convenient repetition or continuation of speech to be used. It is not, as some do imagine, (saith St. *Augustine*) that long praying is that fault of much speaking in prayer which our Saviour did reprove; for then would not he himself in prayer have continued whole nights.

Use in prayer no vain superfluity of words, as the Heathens do, for they imagine that their much speaking will cause them to be heard: whereas in truth the thing which God doth regard is, how vertuous their minds are, and not how copious their tongues in prayer; how well they think, and not how long they talk, who come to present their supplications before him. Notwithstanding for as much as in publike prayer we are not only to consider what is needful in respect of God, but there is also in men that which we must regard; we somewhat the rather incline to length, lest over-quick dispatch of a duty so important should give the world occasion to deem, that the thing it self is but little accounted of, wherein but little time is bestowed. Length thereof is a thing which the gravity and weight of such actions doth require. Beside, this benefit also it hath, that they whom earnest lets and impediments do often hinder from being partakers of the whole, have yet through the length of Divine Service, opportunity left them, at the least, for access unto some reasonable part thereof. Again, it should be considered, how it doth come to pass that we are so long. For if that very service of God in the Jewish Synagogues, which our Lord did approve and sanctifie with the presence of his own person, had so large portions of the Law and Prophets, together with so many Prayers and Psalms read day by day, as equal in a manner the length of ours, and yet in that respect was never thought to deserve blame, is it now an offence that the like measure of time is bestowed in the like manner? Peradventure the Church hath not now the leisure which it had then, or else those things whereupon so much time was then well spent, have since that lost their dignity and worth. If the reading of the Law, the Prophets and Psalms, be a part of the Service of God, as needful under Christ as before, and the adding of the New Testament, as profitable as the ordaining of the Old to be read; if therewith instead of Jewish Prayers it be also for the good of the Church to annex that variety which the Apostle doth commend; seeing that the time which we spend is no more than the orderly performance of these things necessarily requireth, why are we thought to exceed in length; words, be they never so few, are too many when they benefit not the Hearer. But he which speaketh

b 1 Tim. 3. 1.

speaketh no more than edifieth, is undeliveredly reprehended for much speaking. That as *the Devil under colour of long Prayer drive preaching out of the Church* heretofore; so we in appointing so long Prayers and Readings, whereby the less can be spent in preaching, maintain an unpreaching Ministry, is neither advisedly nor truly spoken. They reprove long Prayer, and yet acknowledge it to be in it self a thing commendable. For so it must needs be, if the Devil have used it as a colour to hide his malicious practises. When malice would work that which is evil, and in working avoyd the suspicion of an evil intent; the colour wherewith it overcasth it self, is always a fair and plausible pretence of seeking to further that which is good. So that if we both retain that good which Satan hath pretended to seek, and avoyd the evil which his purpose was to effect, have we not better prevented his malice, than if, as he hath under colour of long prayer, driven preaching out of the Church, so we should take the quartet of Sermons in hand, and revenge their cause by requital, thrusting Prayer in a manner out of doors under colour of long preaching? In case our Prayers being made at their full length, did necessarily inforce Sermons to be the shorter, yet neither were this to uphold and maintain an unpreaching Ministerie, unless we shall say that those ancient Fathers, *Chrysostom, Augustine, Leo*, and the rest, whose Homilies in that consideration were shorter for the most part than our Sermons are, did then not preach when their speeches were not long. The necessity of shortness causeth men to cut off impertinent Discourses, and to comprize much matter in few words. But neither doth it maintain inability, nor at all prevent opportunity of preaching, as long as a competent time is granted for that purpose. *An hour and a half is*, they say, in reformed Churches ordinarily thought reasonable, for their whole Liturgy or Service. Do we then continue as *Exa* did in reading the Law from morning till midday? or as the Apostle *St. Paul* did in Prayer and preaching, till men through weariness be taken up dead at our feet? The huge length wherof they make such complaint, is but this, that if our whole form of Prayer be read, and besides an hour allowed for a Sermon, we spend ordinarily in both more time than they do by half an hour. Which half hour being such a matter, as the age of some, and infirmity of other some are not able to bear; if we have any sense of the common imbecility; if any care to preserve mens wits from being brokeh with the very bent of so long attention, if any love or desire to provide that things most holy be not with hazard of mens souls abhorred and loathed, this half hours tediousness must be remedied, and that onely by cutting off the greatest part of our Common Prayer. For no other remedy will serve to help so dangerous an inconvenience.

33. The Brethren in *Aegypt* (saith *St. Augustine, Epist. 121.*) are reported to have many Prayers; but every of them very short, as if they were Darts thrown out with a kind of sudden quickness, lest that vigilant and erect attention of mind, which in Prayer is very necessary, should be wasted or dulled through continuance, if their Prayers were few and long. But that which *St. Augustine* doth allow, they condemn. Those Prayers whereunto devout minds have added a piercing kind of brevity; as we I in that respect which we have already mentioned, as also thereby the better to express that quick and speedy expedition, wherewith ardent affections, the very wings of Prayer, are delighted to present our suites in Heaven, even sooner than our tongues can devise to utter them; they in their mood of contradiction spare not openly to deride, and that with so base terms as do very ill beseech men of their gravity. Such speeches are scandalous, they savour not of God in him that useth them, and unto virtuously disposed minds they are grievous corrosives. Our case were miserable, if that wherewith we most endeavour to please God, were in his sight so vile and despicable, as mens disdainful speech would make it.

34. Again, for as much as effectual Prayer is joined with a vehement intention of the inferiour powers of the soul, which cannot therein long continue without paine, it hath been therefore thought good so by turns to interpose still somewhat for the higher part of the mind, the understanding to work upon, that both being kept in continual exercise with variety, neither might feel any great wearinesse, and yet each be a spur to other. For Prayer killeth our desire to behold God by speculation; and the minde delighted



with that contemplative sight of God, taketh every where new inflammations to pray, the riches of the Myſteries of heavenly Wiſdom continually ſtirring up in us correſpondent deſires towards them. So that he which prayeth in due ſort, is thereby made the more attentive to hear, and he which heareth, the more earneſt to pray, for the time which we beſtow as well in the one as the other. But for what cauſe

\* We have no ſuch forms in Scripture as that we ſhould pray in two or three lines, and then after having read a while ſome other thing, come and pray as much more, and ſo the 20. or the 30. time, with pauses between. If a man ſhould come to a Prince and having very many things to demand, after he had demanded one thing, would ſtay a long time, and then demand another, and ſo the third, the Prince might well think that either he came to ask before he knew what he had need of, or that he had forgotten ſome piece of his Suit, or that he were diſtracted in his underſtanding, or ſome other like cauſe of the diſorder of his Supplication. *T. C. l. 1. p. 138.* This kind of reaſon the Prophet in the matter of Sacrifices doth uſe. *T. C. l. 3. p. 210.*

ſoever we do it, this intermingling of Leſſons with Prayers is \* in their taſt a thing as unſavorie, and as unſeemly in their ſight, as if the like ſhould be done in Sutes and Supplications before ſome mighty Prince of the World. Our ſpeech to worldly Superiours we frame in ſuch ſort as ſerveth beſt to inform and perſwade the minds of them, who otherwiſe neither could nor would greatly regard our neceſſities: Whereas, becauſe we know that God is indeed a King, but a great King; who underſtandeth all things beſorehand, which no other King beſides doth, a King which needeth not to be informed what we lack, a King readier to grant than we to make our requests; therefore in Prayer we do not ſo much reſpect what Precepts Art delivereth touching the method of perſwaſive utterance in the preſence of great men, as what doth moſt avail to our

own edification in piety and godly zeal. If they on the contrary ſide do think that the ſame rules of decency which ſerve for things done unto terrene Powers, ſhould univerſally decide what is fit in the ſervice of God, if it be their meaning to hold it for a maxime, that the Church muſt deliver her publique Supplications unto God in no other form of ſpeech than ſuch as were decent, if ſure ſhould be made to the great Turk, or ſome other Monarch, let them apply their own rule unto their own form of Common-Prayer. Suppose that the people of a whole Town with ſome choſen man before them did continually twice or thrice in a week reſort to their King, and every time they come, firſt acknowledg themſelves guilty of rebellions and treaſons, then ſing a Song, after that explain ſome Statute of the Land to the ſtanders by, and therein ſpend at the leaſt an hour, this done, turn themſelves again to the King and for every ſort of his Subjects crave ſomewhat of him, at the length ſing him another Song, and ſo take their leave: Might not the King well think, that either they knew not what they would have, or elſe that they were diſtracted in mind, or ſome other ſuch like cauſe of the diſorder of their Supplication? This form of ſuing unto Kings were abſurd. This form of Praying unto God they allow. When God was ſerved with Legal Sacrifices, ſuch was the miſerable and wretched diſpoſition of ſome mens minds, that the beſt of every thing they had being culled out for themſelves, if there were in their flocks any poor ſtarved or diſeaſed thing not worth the keeping, they thought it good enough for the Altar of God, pretending (as wiſe hypocrites do when they rob God to enrich themſelves) that the fatneſs of Calves doth benefit him nothing, to us the beſt things are moſt profitable, to him all as one if the mind of the Offerer be good, which is the only thing he reſpecteth. In reproof of which their

a Μὴν τιμῆς τὰ δῶρα, τὰ δὲ ἑαυτοῦ τιμῆς. Καὶ γὰρ τὸ δῶρον ἐστὶν ἀντιμισθία τοῦ δόσις αὐτῶν τοῦ δῶτος. Αὐτοὶ οὖν ἵνα τιμωρὶς ᾖ τοῦ δόσιος. Καὶ γὰρ ἡ τιμὴ ἐστὶν οὐκ ἐν τῷ δώρῳ, ἀλλ' ἐν τῷ δόσι. Αὐτοὶ οὖν ἵνα τιμωρὶς ᾖ τοῦ δόσιος. *Anti-Rhet. lib. 1. cap. 5.*

devout fraud, the Prophet *Malachy* alledgeth, that gifts are offered unto God not as \* ſupplies of his want indeed, but yet as teſtimonies of that affection wherewith we acknowledge and honour his greatneſs. For which cauſe, ſith the greater they are whom we honour, the more regard we have to the quality and choiſe of thoſe preſents which we bring them for honours ſake, it muſt needs follow, that if

we dare not diſgrace our worldly Superiours with offering unto them ſuch reſuſe as we bring unto God himſelf, we ſhew plainly that our acknowledgement of his Greatneſs is but fained, in heart we fear him not ſo much as we dread them. <sup>b</sup> If ye offer the blind for ſacrifice, is it not evil? Offer it now unto thy Prince; Will he be content or accept thy perſon, ſaith the Lord of Hoſts? Curſed be the Deceiver which hath in his flock a Male, and having made a Vow, ſacrificeth unto the Lord a corrupt thing: For I am a great King ſaith the Lord of Hoſts. Should we hereupon frame a Rule, that what ſort of ſpeech or behaviour ſoever is fit for Sutes in a Princes

Court,

b Mal. 1.8.14.

Court, the same and no other becometh us in our Prayers to Almighty God?

35. But in vain we labour to persuade them that any thing can take away the tediousness of Prayer, except it be brought to the very same both measure and forme which themselves assigne. Whatsoever therefore our Liturgy hath more than theirs, under one devised pretence or other they cut it off. We have of Prayers for earthly things in their opinion too great a number; so oft to rehearse the Lords Prayer in so small a time, as they think a loss of time, the peoples praying after the

Minister, they say, both wasteth time, and also maketh an unpleasant sound; the *Psalmes*, they would not have to be made (as they are) a part of our Common Prayer, not to be sung or said by turns, nor such Musick to be used with them; those Evangelical *Hymns* they allow not to stand in our Liturgy; the *Litany*, the *Cry of Athanasius*, the *Sentence of Glory*, where-with we use to conclude *Psalmes*, these things they cancell, as having been instituted in regard of occasions peculiar to the times of old, and as being therefore now superfluous. Touching Prayers for things earthly, we ought not to think that the Church hath set down so many of them without cause. They peradventure, which find this fault, are of the same affection with *Solomon*, so that if God should offer to grant them whatsoever they ask, they would neither crave riches, nor length of dayes, nor yet victory over their Enemies, but only an understanding heart, for which cause themselves having Eagles wings, are offended to see others flye so near the ground. But the tender kindness of the Church of God is very well becometh, to help the weaker sort which are by so great oddes more in number, although some few of the perfecter and stronger may be therewith for a time displeased. Ignorant we are not, that of such as resorted to our Saviour Christ being present on earth, there came not any unto him with better success for the benefit of their souls everlasting happiness, than they whose bodily necessities gave them the first occasion to seek relief, where they saw willingness and ability of doing every way good unto all. The graces of the Spirit are much more precious than worldly benefits; our ghostly evils of greater importance than any harm which the body feeleth. Therefore our desires to heaven-ward should both in measure and number no less exceed, than their glorious Object doth every way excell in value. These things are true and plain in the eye of a perfect judgement. But yet it must be withal considered, that the greatest part of the world are they which be farthest from perfection. Such being better able by sense to discern the wants of this present life, than by spiritual capacity to apprehend things above sense, which tend to their happiness in the world to come, are in that respect the more apt to apply their minds even with hearty affection and zeal at the least unto those branches of publick prayer, wherein their own particular is moved. And by this mean there stealeth upon them a double benefit; first, because that good affection, which things of smaller account have once set on work, is by so much the more easily raised higher; and secondly, in that the very custome of seeking so particular aid and relief at the hands of God, doth by a secret contradiction withdraw them from endeavouring to help themselves by those wicked shifts, which they know can never have his allowance, whose assistance their prayer seeketh. These multiplied petitions of worldly things in prayer have therefore, besides their direct use, a Service whereby the Church underhand, through a kind of heavenly fraud, taketh therewith the souls of men as with certain baits. If then their calculation be true (for so they reckon) that a full third of our prayers be allotted unto earthly benefits, for which our Saviour in his last forme hath appointed but one petition amongst seven, the difference is without any great disagreement; we respecting what men are, and doing that which is meet in regard of the common imperfection, our Lord contrariwise proposing the most

I can make no Geometrical and exact measure, but verily I believe there shall be found more than a third part of the Prayers, which are not *Psalmes* and Texts of Scripture, spent in praying for, and praying against the commodities and inconveniences of this life, which is contrary to all the Arguments or Contents of the Prayers of the Church set down in the Scriptures, add especially of our Saviour Christs Prayer, by the which ours ought to be directed. T.G. lib. 1. p. 136. What a reason is this, we must repeat the Lords Prayer oftentimes, therefore oftentimes in halfe an houre, and one in the neck of another? Our Saviour Christ doth not there give a prescripte Forme of Prayer wherewith to be bindeth us; but giveth us a Rule and Square to frame all our Prayers by. I know it is necessary to Pray, and Pray often. I know also that in a few words it is impossible for any man to frame so pithy a Prayer, and I confess that the Church doth well in concluding their prayers with the Lords Prayer: But I stand upon this, that there is no necessity laid upon us to use these very words and no more. T.G. l. 1. p. 119.

absolute

a *Promissa legiti-  
ma oratio-  
ne, quæ funda-  
mento acciden-  
tium in est de-  
sideriorum, in  
est superflua-  
di excessum  
petitionum. Toti-  
tus de Orat.*

b *Luke 11. 1*

c *Cyprian Orat.  
Dom.*

absolute proportion that can be in mens desires, the very highest mark whereat we are able to aime. For which cause also our custome is both to place it in the front of our prayers as a Guide, and to adde it in the end of some principal limbs or parts, as a complement which fully perfecteth whatsoever may be defective in the rest. Twice we rehearse it ordinarily, and oftner as occasion requirerh more solemnity or length in the forme of Divine Service, nor mistrusting, till these new curiosities sprang up, that ever any man would think our labour herein mis-spent, the time wastfully consumed, and the office it self made worse, by so repeating that which otherwise would more hardly be made familiar to the simpler sort; for the good of whose Souls there is not in Christian Religion any thing of like continual use and force throughout every hour and moment of their whole lives. I mean not only because prayer, but because this very prayer is of such efficacy and necessity: for that our Saviour did but set men a bare example how to contrive or devise prayers of their own, and no way binde them to use this, is no doubt an Error. *John* the *Baptists* Disciples, which had been always brought up in the bosom of Gods Church from the time of their first Infancy, till they came to the School of *John*, were not so brutish, that they could be ignorant how to call upon the Name of God, but of their Master they had received a forme of Prayer amongst themselves, which forme none did use saving his Disciples, so that by it as by a mark of special difference they were known from others. And of this the Apostles having taken notice, they request that as *John* had taught his, so Christ would likewise teach them to pray. *Tertullian* and *S. Augustin* do for that cause terme it, *Oratorium legitimum*, the Prayer which Christs own Law hath tyed his Church to use in the same prescript forme of words wherewith he himself did deliver it, and therefore what part of the World soever we fall into; if Christian Religion have been there received, the ordinary use of this very Prayer hath with equal continuance accompanied the same, as one of the principal and most material duties of honour done to Jesus Christ. Seeing that we have (saith *S. Cyprian*) an Advocate with the Father for our sins, when we that have sinned come to seek for pardon, let us alledge unto God the words which our Advocate hath taught. For sith his promise is our plain warrant, that in his Name what we ask we shall receive, must we not needs much the rather obtain that for which we sue, if not only his Name do countenance, but also his speech present our requests? Though men should speak with the tongues of Angels, yet words so pleasing to the ears of God, as those which the Son of God himself hath composed, were not possible for men to frame. He therefore which made us to live, hath also taught us to pray, to the end that speaking unto the Father in the Sonnes own prescript form without scholy or glofs of ours, we may be sure that we utter nothing which God will either disallow or deny. Other Prayers we use many besides this, and this oftner than any other; although not tyed so to do by any Commandement of Scripture, yet moved with such considerations as have been before set down: the causeless dislike whereof which others have conceived, is no sufficient reason for us, as much as once to forbear in any place: a thing which uttered with true devotion and zeal of heart, affordeth to God himself that glory, that aid to the weakest sort of men, to the most perfect, that solid comfort which is unspeakable.

The peoples saying after the Minister. Another fault is, that all the people are appointed in divers places to say after the Minister, whereby not only the time is unprofitably wasted, and a

confused noise of the people (one speaking after another) caused, but an Opinion breed in their heads that those only be their Prayers which they pronounce with their own mouths after the Minister, otherwise than the order which is left to the Church doth bear. *1 Cor. 14. 16.* and otherwise than *Justin Martyr* sheweth the custome of the Church to have been in his time. *T. C. lib. 2. pag. 139. and Lib. 3. pag. 212, 213.*

But



BUT surely with so good reason it standeth in those two places, that otherwise to order it were not in all respects so well. Could there be any thing devised better, than that we all at our first access unto God by Prayer, should acknowledge meekly our sins, and that not only in heart, but with tongue, all which are present being made eare-witnesses, even of every mans distinct and deliberate assent unto each particular branch of a common Indictment drawn against our selves? How were it possible, that the Church should any way else with such ease and certainty provide, that none of her Children may as *Adam* dissemble that wretchedness, the penitent confession whereof is so necessary a Preamble, especially to Common Prayer? In like manner, if the Church did ever devise a thing fit and convenient, what more than this, that when together we have all received those Heavenly Mysteries wherein Christ imparteth himself unto us, and giveth visible testification of our blessed Communion with him, we should in hatred of all Heresies, Factions and Schismes, the Pastor as a Leader, the people as willing followers of him step by step, declare openly our selves united as Brethren in one, \* by offering up with all our hearts and tongues that most effectual Supplication, wherein he unto whom we offer it, hath himself not only comprehended all our necessities, but in such sort also framed every Petition, as might most naturally serve for many, and doth though not alwayes require, yet alwayes import a multitude of speakers together? For which cause Communicants have ever used it, and we at that time by the form of our very utterance do shew we use it; yea, every word and syllable of it, as Communicants. In the rest we observe that custome whereunto <sup>b</sup> S. Paul alludeth, and whereof the Fathers of the Church in their Writings make often mention, to shew indefinitely what was done, but not universally to binde for ever all Prayers unto one only fashion of utterance. The reasons which we have alledged, induce us to think it still a *goodwork*, which they in their pensive care for the well bestowing of time account *waste*. As for unpleasantness of sound, if it happen, the good of mens Souls doth either deceive our ears that we note it not, or arme them with patience to endure it. We are not so nice as to cast away a sharp Knife, because the edge of it may sometimes grate. And such subtle opinions as few but Utopians are likely to fall into, we in this Climate do not greatly fear.

37. The complaint which they make about Psalms and Hymns, might as well be over-past without any answer, as it is without any cause brought forth. But our desire is to content them if it may be, and to yield them a just reason even of the least things wherein undeservedly they have but as much as dreamed or suspected that we do amiss. They seem sometimes so to speak, as if it greatly offended them, that such Hymns and Psalms as are Scripture, should in Common Prayer be otherwise used than the rest of the Scripture is wont; sometime displeased they are at the artificial Musick which we adde unto Psalms of this kind or of any other nature else; sometime the plainest and the most intelligible rehearsal of them yet they favour not, because it is done by Interlocution, and with a mutual return of Sentences from side to side. They are not ignorant what difference there is between other parts of Scripture and Psalms: The choice and flower of \* all things profitable in other Books, the Psalms do both more briefly contain, and more movingly also express, by reason of that Poetical Forme wherewith they are written. The ancients when they speak of the Book of Psalms, use so fall into large Discourses, shewing how this part above the rest doth of purpose set forth and celebrate all the considerations and operations which belong to God; it magnifieth the holy meditations and actions of divine men, it is of things heavenly an universal declaration, working in them whose hearts God inspireth with the due consideration thereof, an habit or disposition of mind whereby they are made fit Vessels both for receipt and for delivery of whatsoever spiritual perfection. What is there necessary for man to know which the Psalms are not able to teach? They are to beginners an ease and familiar Introduction; a mighty augmentation of all vertue and knowledge in such as are entered before, a strong confirmation to the most perfect amongst others. Heroical Magnanimity, exquisite Justice, grave Moderation, exact Wisdom, Repentance unfained, unwearied Patience, the Mysteries of God, the Sufferings of Christ,

<sup>a</sup> Τὴν γὰρ οὐκ  
ἐχθρὸν ἡσίο-  
σαι δὲνασαι  
μὴ οὐ μὴαν  
ἀποῖνα πρε-  
διδὼ τὴν πο-  
ρῶν. Βασιλ.  
Πρὸς. in Psal.

<sup>b</sup> 1 Cor. 14. 16.

Our manner  
of reading the  
Psalms other-  
wise than the  
rest of the  
Scripture.  
They have al-  
ways the same  
profit to be  
studied in, to  
be read, and  
preached upon,  
which other  
Scriptures  
have, and this  
above the rest,  
that they are  
to be sung.  
But to make  
daily Prayers  
of them hand-  
over-head, or  
otherwise than  
the present  
estate wherein  
we be doth  
agree with the  
matter contain-  
ed in them, is  
an abusing of  
them.

T. C. I. 3. p. 206. \* ἡ ἀρετὴ καὶ ἡ σοφία καὶ ἡ ἀντιβολία. Dionys. Hierar. Eccles. c. 3.

the

the Terrors of Wrath, the Comforts of Grace, the Works of Providence over this World, and the promised Joyes of that World which is to come, all good necessarily to be either known, or done, or had, this one Celestial Fountain yieldeth. Let there be any grief or disease incident to the soul of man, any wound or sickness named, for which there is not in this Treasure-house a present comfortable remedy at all times ready to be found. Hereof it is that we cover to make the Psalms especially familiar unto all. This is the very cause why we iterate the Psalms oftner than any other part of Scripture besides, the cause wherefore we inure the people together with their Minister, and not the Minister alone, to read them as other parts of Scripture he doth.

Of Musick  
with Psalms.

38. Touching Musical Harmony, whether by Instrument or by Voyce, it being but of high and low in sounds a due proportionable disposition, such notwithstanding is the force thereof, and so pleasing effects it hath in that very part of man which is most divine, that some have been thereby induced to think that the soul it self by nature is, or hath in it harmony. A thing which delighteth all Ages and becometh all States; a thing as seasonable in grief as in joy; as decent being added unto actions of greatest weight and solemnity, as being used when men most sequester themselves from action. The reason hereof is an admirable facility which Musick hath to expresse and represent to the mind, more inwardly than any other sensible mean, the very standing, rising, and falling, the very steps and inflections every way, the turns and varieties of all passions whereunto the mind is subject: yea, so to imitate them, that whether it resemble unto us the same state wherein our minds already are, or a clean contrary, we are not more contentedly by the one confirmed, than changed and led away by the other. In Harmony the very Image and Character even of Vertue and Vice is perceived, the mind delighted with their Resemblances, and brought, by having them often iterated, into a love of the things themselves. For which cause there is nothing more contagious and pestilent than some kinds of Harmony; than some nothing more strong and potent unto good. And that there is such a difference of one kind from another, we need no proof but our own experience, in as much as we are at the hearing of some more inclined unto sorrow and heaviness: of some more mollified and softened in mind; one kind apter to stay and settle us, another to move and stir our affections; there is that draweth to a marvellous grave and sober mediocrity, there is also that carrieth as it were into extasies, filling the mind with an heavenly joy, and for the time, in a manner, severing it from the body. So that although we lay altogether aside the consideration of Dirty or Matter, the very harmony of sounds being framed in due sort, and carried from the ear to the spiritual faculties of our souls, is by a native puissance and efficacy greatly available to bring to a perfect temper whatsoever is there troubled, apt as well to quicken the spirits, as to allay that which is too eager, sovereign against melancholy and despair, forcible to draw forth tears of devotion, if the mind be such as can yield them, able both to move and to moderate all affections. The Prophet *David* having therefore singular knowledge not in Poetry alone but in Musick also, judged them both to be things most necessary for the House of God, left behind him to that purpose a number of divinely indited Poems, and was farther the Author of adding unto Poetry melody in publick prayer, melody both vocal and instrumental for the raising up of mens hearts, and the sweetning of their affections towards God. In which considerations the Church of Christ doth likewise at this present day retain it as an ornament to Gods service, and an help to our own devotion. They which under pretence of the Law Ceremonial abrogated require the abrogation of instrumental Musick, approving nevertheless the use of vocal melody to remain, must shew some reason wherefore the one should be thought a Legal Ceremony, and not the other. In Church-Musick curiosity and ostentation of Art, wanton, or light, or unsutable harmony, such as only pleaseth the ear, and doth not naturally serve to the very kind and degree of those impressions which the matter that goeth with it leaveth, or is apt to leave in mens minds, doth rather blemish and disgrace that we do, than adde either beauty or furtherance unto it. On the other side these faults prevented, the force and efficacy of the thing it self, when it drowneth not utterly, but fitly suiteth with mar-

ter altogether sounding to the praise of God, is in truth most admirable, and doth much edifie, if not the understanding, because it teacheth not, yet surely the Affection, because therein it worketh much. They must have hearts very dry and tough, from whom the melody of Psalms doth not sometime draw that wherein a mind religiously affected delighteth. Be it as *Rabanus Maurus* observeth, that at the first the Church in this exercise was more simple and plain than we are, that their singing was little more than only a melodious kind of pronunciation, that the custom which we now use was not instituted so much for their cause which are spiritual, as to the end that into grosser and heavier minds whom bare words do not easily move, the sweetness of melody might make some entrance for good things. Saint *Basil* himself acknowledging as much, did not think that from such inventions the least jot of estimation and credit thereby should be derogated: <sup>a</sup> For (saith he) whereas the Holy Spirit saw that mankind is unto virtue hardly drawn, and that righteousness is the least accounted of, by reason of the proneness of our affections to that which delighteth, it pleased the wisdom of the same Spirit to borrow from melody that pleasure, which mingled with Heavenly mysteries, causeth the smoothness and softness of that which toucheth the ear, to convey as it were by stealth the treasure of good things into mans mind. To this purpose were those harmonious tunes of Psalms devised for us, that they which are either in years but young, or touching perfection of verue as yet not grown to ripeness, might, when they think they sing, learn. O the wise conceits of that Heavenly Teacher, which hath by his skill found out a way, that doing those things wherein we delight, we may also learn that whereby we profit!

39 And if the Prophet *David* did think that the very meeting of men together, and their accompanying one another to the House of God, should make the bond of their love insoluble, and tie them in a league of inviolable amity, *Psalms* 54. 14. how much more may we judge it reasonable to hope, that the like effects may grow in each of the people towards other, in them all towards their Pastor, and in their Pastor towards every of them, between whom there daily and interchangeably pass in the hearing of God himself, and in the presence of his Holy Angels, so many Heavenly Acclamations, Exultations, Provocations, Petitions, Songs of comfort, Psalms of praise and thanksgiving, in all which particulars, as when the Pastor maketh their suits, and they with one voice testify a general assent thereunto; or when he joyfully beginneth, and they with like alacrity follow, dividing between them the sentences wherewith they strive which shall much shew his own, and stir up others zeal to the glory of that God whose name they magnifie; or when he proposeth unto God their necessities, and they their own requests for relief in every of them; or when he lifteth up his voice like a trumpeter, to proclaim unto them the Laws of God, they adjoining, though not as *Israel* did, by way of generality a cheerful promise, <sup>b</sup> *Alb Exod.* 19.8. that the Lord hath commanded we will do, yet that which God doth no less approve, that which favoureth more of meekness, that which testifieth rather a feeling knowledge of our common imbecility, unto the several branches thereof, several, lowly, and humble requests for grace at the merciful hands of God, to perform the thing which is commanded; or when they with reciprocally each others ghostly happiness; or when he by exhortation raiseth them up, and they by protestation of their readiness declare, he speaketh not in vain unto them; these interlocutory formes of speech what are they but most effectual, partly testifications, and partly inflammations of all piety? When and how this custom of singing by course came up in the Church, it is not certainly known: <sup>c</sup> *Socrates* maketh *Iguentius* the Bishop of *Antioch* in *Syria* the first beginner thereof, even under the Apostles themselves. *Eccles.* 1.6.2.8.

<sup>a</sup> Ἐπειδὴ γὰρ ὁ θεὸς τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἅγιον συσχεῖται πρὸς ἀρετὴν τὸ γὰρ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου; καὶ διὰ τὸ πρὸς ἡδονὴν ἐκτρέφεσθαι τὸ ὄρεσι βίῃ καταμιλῶντας ἡμᾶς, τὸ ποιῆσαι τὸ ἐκ τῆς μελωδίας τερπνὴν τοῖς δόγμασιν ἐκκατμήσειν ἵνα τῇ προσῶν καὶ λόγῳ τῆς ἀκοῆς τὸ ἐκ τοῦ λόγου ἀφίλου λαμβανόμενος ὑποδεχόμεθα. Διὰ τὸ τὰ ἐναρμόνια ταῦτα μέλη τοῦ σώματος ἡμῶν ἐκτρέφονται, ἵνα οἱ παῖδες τοῦ ἡγεῖται καὶ ἡλικίας οἱ νεώτεροι τὸ ἅγιον πνεῦμα μελωδῶσι τὸ δὲ ἀληθὲς τὰς ψυχὰς ἐκκαταύωσιν. ὁ τῆς σοφίας ἐπιτολὴ τὸ διδάσκειν ἡμᾶς τὰ ἀδελφὰ καὶ τὰ ἀδελφὰ μακάριον μηχανώμενοι. *Basil.* in *Ps.*

Of singing or  
aying Psalms  
and other  
parts of Com-  
mon Prayer,  
wherein the

people and Minister answer one another by course. For the singing of Psalms by course and side after side, although it be very ancient, yet it is not commendable, and so much the more to be suspected, for that the Devil hath gone about to get it so great authority, partly by deriving it from *Iguentius* time, and partly in making the world believe that this came from Heaven, and that the Angels were heard to sing after this sort. Which as it is a meer fable, so is it confuted by Historiographers, whereof some ascribe the beginning of this to *Damasus*, some other unto *Flavianus* and *Dionysius*. *T. C. lib. 1. p. 103.*

<sup>b</sup> *Alb Exod.* 19.8.  
24.3.  
<sup>c</sup> *Deut.* 5. 27.  
26.17.  
*Job.* 24. 16.

But



<sup>a</sup> Theod. lib. 2. But against *Socrates* they set the authority of *Theodoret*, who draweth the original of it from *Amioch*, as *Socrates* doth; howbeit ascribing the invention to others, *Flavian* and *Diodore*, men which constantly stood in defence of the Apostolick Faith, against the Bishop of that Church, *Leontius*, a favourer of the *Arrians*. Against both *Socrates* and *Theodoret*, <sup>b</sup> *Platina* is brought as a witness, to testify that *Damasus* Bishop of *Rome* began it in his time. Of the Latine Church it may be true which *Platina* saith. And therefore the eldest of that Church which maketh any mention thereof, is <sup>c</sup> *Saint Ambrose*, Bishop of *Millan* at the same time when *Damasus* was of *Rome*. Amongst the Grecians <sup>d</sup> *Saint Basil* having brought it into his Church before they of *Neocæsarea* used it, *Sabellius* the Heretick and *Marcellus* took occasion thereat to incense the Churches against him, as being an Author of new devices in the Service of God. Whereupon, to avoid the opinion of novelty and singularity, he alledged for that which he himself did, the example of the Churches of *Egypt*, *Lybia*, *Thebes*, *Palestina*, *Tharabians*, *Phenicians*, *Syrians*, *Mesopotamians*, and in a manner all that revered the custome of singing of Psalms together. If the *Syrians* had it then before *Basil*, *Amioch* the Mother-Church of those parts must needs have used it before *Basil*, and consequently before *Damasus*. The question is then how long before, and whether so long that *Ignatius*, or as ancient as *Ignatius*, may be probably thought the first Inventors. *Ignatius* mulierum, vir-  
tutis in *Trajan's* days suffered Martyrdom. And <sup>e</sup> of the Churches in *Pontus* and *Bithynia*, to *Trajan* the Emperour his own Vicegerent there affirmeth, that the only crime he knew of them, was, they used to meet together at a certain day, and to praise Christ with Hymnes as a God, *secum invicem*, one to another amongst themselves. Which for any thing we know to the contrary, might be the self-same forme which *Philo Judæus* expresseth, declaring how the *Essens* were accustomed with Hymnes and Psalms to honour God, sometime all exalting their voices together in one, and sometime one part answering another, wherein, as he thought, they swerved not much from the pattern of *Moses* and <sup>f</sup> *Miriam*. Whether *Ignatius* did at any time hear the Angels praising God after that sort, or no, what matter is it? If *Ignatius* did not, yet one which must be with us of greater authority did. <sup>g</sup> *I saw the Lord* (saith the Prophet *Esaie*) *on an high Throne, The Seraphims stood upon it*, one cryed to another, saying, *Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord God of Hosts, the whole world is full of his glory*. But whosoever were the Author, Whatsoever the Time, whensoever the Example of beginning this custome in the Church of Christ, sith we are wont to suspect things only before tryal, and afterwards either to approve them as good, or if we find them evil, accordingly to judge of them, their counsel must needs seem very unseasonable, who advise men now to suspect that wherewith the World hath had, by their own account, twelve hundred years acquaintance, and upwards, enough to take away suspicion and jealousy. Men know by this time, if ever they will know, whether it be good or evil which hath been so long retained. As for the Devil, which way it should greatly benefit him to have this manner of singing Psalms accounted an invention of *Ignatius*, or an imitation of the Angels of Heaven we do not well understand. But we very well see in them who thus plead, a wonderful celerity of discourse. For perceiving at the first but only some cause of suspicion, and fear lest it should be evil, they are presently in one and the self-same breath resolved, that <sup>h</sup> *what beginning soever it had, there is no possibility it should be good*. The potent arguments which did thus suddenly break in upon them and overcome them, are, first, that it is not unlawful for the people all joyntly to praise God in singing of Psalms: secondly, that they are not any where forbidden by the Law of God to sing every Verse of the whole Psalm, both with heart and voice quite and clean throughout: thirdly, that it cannot be understood what is sung after our manner. Of which three, for as much as lawfulness to sing one way proveth not another way inconvenient, the former two are true allegations, but they lack strength to accomplish their desire; the third

<sup>b</sup> *Plat: in vita Damasi.*

<sup>c</sup> *Bene mari ple-  
runque compa-  
ratur Ecclesia,  
qua primo in-  
gredienti po-  
puli agmine to-  
ris vestibulis  
undat vomis;  
deinde in ora-  
tione totum ple-  
be tanquam  
undis resistenti-  
bus stridet, tum  
responsoribus  
Psalmorum,  
cantu virorum,  
mulierum, vir-  
tutis parvulo-  
rum consensu  
undarum fragor  
resultat.*

<sup>d</sup> *Hexam. l. 2. c. 5.*

<sup>e</sup> *Basil. Epi. 63.*

<sup>f</sup> *Psalm. lxxviii.*

<sup>g</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>h</sup> *Exod. 15. 1. 2.*

<sup>i</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>j</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>k</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>l</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>m</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>n</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>o</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>p</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>q</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>r</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>s</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>t</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>u</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>v</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>w</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>x</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>y</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>z</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>aa</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ab</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ac</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ad</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ae</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>af</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ag</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ah</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ai</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>aj</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ak</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>al</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>am</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>an</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ao</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ap</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>aq</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ar</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>as</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>at</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>au</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>av</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>aw</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ax</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ay</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>az</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ba</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bb</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bc</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bd</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>be</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bf</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bg</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bh</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bi</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bj</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bk</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bl</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bm</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bn</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bo</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bp</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bq</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>br</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bs</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bt</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bu</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bv</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bw</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bx</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>by</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>bz</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ca</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cb</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cc</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cd</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ce</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cf</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cg</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ch</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ci</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cj</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ck</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cl</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cm</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cn</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>co</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cp</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cq</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cr</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cs</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ct</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cu</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cv</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cw</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cx</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cy</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>cz</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>da</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>db</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dc</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dd</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>de</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>df</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dg</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dh</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>di</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dj</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dk</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dl</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dm</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dn</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>do</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dp</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dq</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dr</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ds</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dt</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>du</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dv</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dw</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dx</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dy</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>dz</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ea</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>eb</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ec</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ed</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ee</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ef</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>eg</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>eh</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ei</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ej</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ek</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>el</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>em</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>en</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>eo</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ep</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>eq</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>er</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>es</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>et</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>eu</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ev</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ew</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ex</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ey</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ez</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fa</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fb</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fc</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fd</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fe</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ff</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fg</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fh</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fi</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fj</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fk</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fl</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fm</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fn</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fo</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fp</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fq</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fr</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fs</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ft</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fu</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fv</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fw</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fx</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fy</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>fz</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ga</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>gb</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>gc</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>gd</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>ge</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>gf</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>gg</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>gh</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

<sup>gi</sup> *Isai. 6. 3.*

so strong that it might perswade, if the truth thereof were not doubtful. And shall this inforce us to banish a thing which all Christian Churches in the World have received, a thing which so many ages have held; a thing which the most approved Councils and Laws have so oftentimes ratified; a thing which was never found to have any inconvenience in it; a thing which always heretofore the best men and wisest Governours of Gods people did think they could never commend enough; a thing which as *Basil* was perswaded, did both strengthen the Meditation of those holy words which were uttered in that sort, and serve also to make attentive, and to raise up the hearts of men; a thing whereunto Gods people of old did resort with hope and thirst, that thereby especially their souls might be edified; a thing which filleth the mind with comfort and heavenly delight, stirreth up flagrant desires and affections correspondent unto that which the words contain, allayeth all kind of base and earthly cogitations, banisheth and driveth away those evil secret suggestions which our invincible Enemy is always apt to minister, watreth the heart to the end it may fructifie, maketh the vertuous in trouble full of magnanimity and courage, serveth as a most approved remedy against all doleful and heavy accidents which befall men in this present life: To conclude, so fitly accordeth with the Apostles own exhortation, *Speak to your selves in Psalms and Hymns, and Spiritual Songs, making melody, and singing to the Lord in your hearts*; that surely there is more cause to fear lest the want thereof be a mayme, than the use a blemish to the Service of God. It is not our meaning, that what we attribute unto the Psalms should be thought to depend altogether on that only form of singing or reading them by course, as with us the manner is; but the end of our speech is to shew, that because the Fathers of the Church, with whom the self-same custome was so many ages ago in use, have uttered all these things concerning the fruit which the Church of God did then reap, observing that another form, it may be justly avouched that we our selves retaining it, and besides it also the other more newly and not unfruitfully devised, do neither want that good which the later intention can afford, nor lose any thing of that for which the Ancients so oft and so highly commend the former. Let novelty therefore in this give over endless contradictions, and let ancient custome prevail.

40. We have already given cause sufficient for the great conveniency and use of reading the Psalms oftner than other Scriptures. Of reading or singing likewise *Magnificat*, *Benedictum*, and *Nunc dimittis*, oftner than the rest of the Psalms, the causes are no whit less reasonable; so that if the one may very well monethly, the other may as well even daily be iterated. They are Songs which concern us so much more than the Songs of *David*, as the Gospel toucheth us more than the Law, the New Testament than the Old. And if the Psalms for the excellency of their use, deserve to be oftner repeated than they are, but that the multitude of them permiteth not any oftner repetition, what disorder is it if these few Evangelical Hymns which are in no respect less worthy, and may be by reason of their paucity imprinted with much more ease in all mens memories, be for that cause every day rehearsed? In our own behalf it is convenient and orderly enough, that both they and we make day by day prayers and supplications the very same; why not as fit and convenient to magnifie the Name of God day by day with certain the very self-same Psalms of praise and thanksgiving? Either let them not allow the one, or else cease to reprove the other. For the ancient received use of intermingling Hymns and Psalms with divine readings, enough hath been written. And if any may fitly serve unto that purpose, how should it better have been devised, than that a competent number of the Old being first read, these of the New should succeed in the place where now they are set? In which place notwithstanding there is joyned with *Benedictus* the hundredth Psalm; with *Magnificat*, the ninety eight, the sixty seventh with *Nunc dimittis*, and in every of them the choice left free for the Minister to use indifferently the one or the other. Seeing therefore they pretend no quarrel at other Psalms, which are in like manner appointed also to be daily read, why do these so much offend and displease their taste? They are the first gratulations wherewith our Lord and Saviour was joyfully received at his entrance into the world, by such as in their hearts, arms, and very bowels embraced him; being propheticall discoveries of

Ephes. 5. 19.

Of *Magnificat*, *Benedictum*, and *Nunc dimittis*.

These thanksgivings were made by occasion of certain particular benefits, and are used for ordinary Prayers, than the *Ave Maria*. So that both for this cause and the other before alledged of the Psalms, it is not convenient to make ordinary prayers of them. T.C. 1. 3. p. 108.

Christ already present, whose future coming the other Psalms did but fore-signifie; they are against the obstinate incredulity of the Jews, the most luculent testimonies that Christian Religion hath; yea the only sacred Hymns they are that Christianity hath peculiar unto it self, the other being Songs too of praise and thanksgiving, but Songs wherewith as we serve God, so the Jew likewise. And whereas they tell us these Songs were fit for that purpose, when *Simen* and *Zachary*, and the blessed *Virgin* uttered them, but cannot so be to us which have not received like benefit; should they not remember how expressly *Ezechias* amongst many other good things is commended for this also, \* that the praises of God were through his appointment daily set forth, by using in publique divine Service the Songs of *David* and *Asaph* unto that very end? Either there wanted wise men to give *Ezechias* advice, and to inform him of that which in his case was as true as it is in ours, namely that without some inconvenience and disorder he could not appoint those Psalms to be used as ordinary Prayers, seeing that although they were Songs of thanksgiving, such as *David* and *Asaph* had special occasion to use, yet not so the whole Church and people afterwards, whom like occasions did not befall: or else *Ezechias* was perswaded as we are, that the praises of God in the mouths of his Saints, are not so restrained to their own particular, but that others may both conveniently and fruitfully use them, first, because the myssical communion of all faithfull men is such as maketh every one to be interessed in those precious blessings, which any one of them receiveth at Gods hands: Secondly, because when any thing is spoken to extol the goodness of God, whose mercy endureth for ever, albeit the very particular occasion whereupon it riseth do come no more, yet the Fountain continuing the same, and yeilding other new effects which are but only in some sort proportionable, a small resemblance between the benefits which we and others have received may serve to make the same words of praise and thanksgiving fit, though not equally in all circumstances fit for both; a cleer demonstration whereof we have in all the Ancient Fathers Commentaries and Meditations upon the Psalms: last of all, because even when there is not as much as the shew of any resemblance, nevertheless by often using their words in such manner, our minds are daily more and more inured with their affections.

Of the Lety. 41 The publique estate of the Church of God amongst the Jews hath had many rare and extraordinary Occurrents, which also were occasions of sundry \* open solemnities and offices, whereby the people did

We pray for the avoiding of those dangers which are nothing near us; as from Lightning and Thundring in the midst of Winter, from Storm and Tempest when the weather is most fair and the Seas most calm. It is true that upon some urgent calamity a prayer may, and ought to be framed, which may beg either the commodity, for want whereof the Church is in distress, or the turning away of that mischief which either approacheth, or is already upon it; but to make those prayers which are for the present time and danger, ordinary and daily prayers, I cannot hitherto see any, either Scripture, or example of the Primitive Church. And here for the simp's sake I will set down after what sort this abuse crept into the Church. There was one *Mamercus* Bishop of *Vienna*, which in the time of great Earthquakes, which were in *France*, instituted certain supplications, which the *Grecians* (and we of them) call the Lety. which concerned that matter: there is no doubt, but as other discommodities rose in other Countries, they likewise had prayers accordingly. Now Pope *Gregory* either made himself, or gathered the Supplications that were made against the calamities of every Country, and made of them a great Lety or Supplication, as *Platina* calleth it, and gave it to be used in all Churches: which thing albeit all Churches might do for the time; in respect of the ease of the calamity which the Churches suffered, yet there is no cause why it should be perpetual that was ordained but for a time; and why all Lands should pray to be delivered from the incommodities that some Land hath been troubled with. T.C.L. p. 127. a Exod. 15. 30. b 1. 10. 20. 1 Sam. 6. 2. c 1 Chr. 13. 5. d 1 Chr. 20. 3. Joel 2. 15. b Tertul. lib. 2. ad ux. c Tertul. And.

with general consent make shew of correspondent affection towards God. The like duties appear usual in the ancient Church of Christ, by that which *Tertullian* speaketh of Christian women matching themselves with Infidels. She cannot content the Lord with performance of his discipline, that hath at her side a Vassal whom Satan hath made his vice-agent to cross whatsoever the faithful should do. If her presence be required at the time of Station or standing prayer, he chargeth her at no time but that to be with him in his bath; if a fasting day come, he hath on that day a banquet to make; if there be cause for the Church to go forth in solemn Procession, his whole family have such business come upon them that no one can be spared. These Processions, as it seemeth, were first begun for the interring of holy Martyrs, and the visiting of those places where they were interred. Which thing the name it self applied by *Heathens* unto the office of Exequies, and partly the speeches of some of the ancients delivered con-

cerning



cerning <sup>a</sup> Christian Processions, partly also the very dross which superstition thereunto added, I mean, the Custom of invoking Saints in Processions heretofore usual, do strongly insinuate. And as things invented to one purpose are by use easily converted to <sup>b</sup> more, it grew, that Supplications, with this solemnity for the appeasing of Gods wrath, and the averting of publike evils, were of the Greek Church termed <sup>c</sup> *Litanies* *Rogations* of the Latine. To the people of *Vienna* (*Mamercus* being their Bishop above 450 years after Christ) there befell many things, the suddenness and strangeness whereof so amazed the hearts of all men, that the City they began to forsake as a place which Heaven did threaten with imminent ruine. It seemed not the person of so grave a Prelate to be either utterly without counsel, as the rest were, or in a common perplexity to shew himself alone secure. Wherefore as many as remained, he earnestly exhorteth to prevent portended calamities, using those virtuous and holy means wherewith others in like case have prevailed with God. To which purpose he perfecteth the *Rogations* or *Letanies* before in use, and addeth unto them that which the present necessity required. Their good success moved <sup>d</sup> *Sidonius* Bishop of *Averna* to use the same so corrected *Rogations* at such time as he and his people were after afflicted with Famine, and besieged with potent Adversaries. For till the empty name of the Empire came to be settled in *Charles* the great, the fall of the Romans huge Dominion concurring with other universal evils, caused those times to be dayes of much affliction and trouble throughout the world. So that *Rogations* or *Litanies* were then the very strength, stay, and comfort of Gods Church. Whereupon in the year five hundred and six, it was by the Council of *Aurelia* decreed, that the whole Church should bestow yearly at the Feast of Pentecost three days in that kind of processional service. About half an hundred years after, to the end that the Latine Churches, which all observed this custom, might not vary in the order and form of those great *Litanies* which were so solemnly every where exercised; it was thought convenient by *Gregory* the first, and the best of that name, to draw the flower of them all into one. But this iron began at length to gather rust; Which thing the *Synod* of *Colen* saw, and in part redrest within that Province, neither denying the necessary use for which such *Litanies* serve, wherein Gods clemency and mercy is desired by publike suit, to the end that plagues, destructions, calamities, famines, wars, and all other the like adversities, which for our manifold sins we have alwaies cause to fear, may be turned away from us and prevented through his grace; nor yet dissembling the great abuse whereunto as sundry other things, so this had grown by mens improbity and malice; to whom that which was devised for the appeasing of Gods displeasure, gave opportunity of committing things which justly kindled his wrath. For remedy whereof it was then thought better, that these and all other supplications or processions should be no where used but only within the wals of the House of God, the place sanctified unto prayer. And by us not only such inconveniences being remedied, but also whatsoever was otherwise amiss in form or matter, it now remaineth a work, the absolute perfection whereof upbraiderth with error, or somewhat worse, them whom in all parts it doth not satisfie. As therefore *Letanies* have been of longer continuance than that we should make either *Gregory* or *Mamercus* the Author of them, so they are of more permanent use than that now the Church should think it needeth them not. What dangers at any time are imminent, what evils hang over our heads, God doth know and not we. We find by daily experience, that those calamities may be nearest at hand, readiest to break in suddenly upon us, which we in regard of times or circumstances may imagine to be farthest off. Or if they do not in deed approach, yet such miseries as being present all men are apt to bewail with tears, the wise by their prayers should rather prevent. Finally, if we for our selves had a priviledge of immunity, doth not true Christian Charity require that whatsoever any part of the World, yea any one of all our brethren elsewhere, doth either suffer or fear, the same we account as our own burthen? What one petition is there found in the whole *Letany*, whereof we shall ever be able at any time to say, that no man living needeth the grace or benefit therein craved at Gods hands? I am not able to express how much it doth grieve me, that things of principal excellency should be thus bitten at, by men whom God hath indued with graces both of wit and learning for better purposes.

<sup>a</sup> Hier. Epist. 22. ad Eust.  
<sup>b</sup> Martyres tibi guarantur in cubiculo tuo.  
<sup>c</sup> Nunquam causa decris procedendi si semper quando nec esse est progressura sit.  
<sup>d</sup> Socras. lib. 6. cap. 8. Sozom. lib. 8. cap. 8. Theod. lib. 16. lib. 30. Lib. 3. cap. 10. Novel. 68. 51.  
<sup>e</sup> Basil. Ep. 63. Nicet. lib. 14. cap. 3. Codren. in Theodof. d Sidon. lib. 7. Epist. 1.

<sup>f</sup> Concil. tom. 2. pag. 513.

<sup>g</sup> Concil. tom. 5. Anno 1536.

Of *Athanasius*  
 Creed, and  
*Gloria Patri*,  
 a *Irenaeus*, l. i. c. 3.  
 b *Tertullian*, de  
 praescriptis  
 haereticis, & ad  
 versus Prax.  
 c The like  
 may be said of  
 the *Gloria Pa-*  
*tri* and the  
*Athanasius*  
 Creed.  
 It was first  
 brought into  
 the Church,  
 to the end, that  
 men thereby  
 should make  
 an open pro-  
 fession in the  
 Church of the  
 Divinity of  
 the Sonne of  
 God against  
 the detestable  
 opinion of *Ar-*  
*rian* & his Dis-  
 ciples, where-  
 with at that  
 time marvel-  
 lously swarmed  
 almost the  
 whole Chri-  
 stendom. Now  
 that it hath  
 pleased the  
 Lord to quench  
 that fire, there  
 is no such cause  
 why these  
 things should  
 be used in the  
 Church, at the  
 least why that  
*Gloria Patri*  
 should be so of-  
 ten repeated.  
 F. G. l. 1 p. 37.

42. We have from the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ received that brief Confession of Faith, which hath been always a badge of the Church, a mark where- by to discern Christian men from Infidels and Jews, 'That Faith received from the Apostles and their Disciples (saith Irenaeus) the Church though dispersed throughout the World, doth notwithstanding keep as safe as if it dwelt within the walls of some one house, and as uniformly hold, as if it had but one heart and soul; this as consonantly it preacheth, teacheth, and delivereth, as if but one tongue did speak for all. As one Sun shineth to the whole world, so there is no faith but this one published, the bright- ness whereof must enlighten all that come to the knowledge of the truth.' This rule (saith Tertullian) Christ did institute, the stream and current of this rule hath gone as far, it hath continued as long as the very promulgation of the Gospel. 'Under Con- stantine the Emperour, about three hundred years and upward after Christ, *Arrius* a Priest in the Church of *Alexandria*, a subtle-witted and a marvellous fair-spoken man, but discontented that one should be placed before him in honour, whose supe- rior he thought himself in desert, became through envy and stomach prone unto contradiction, and bold to broach at the length that Heresie wherein the Deity of our Lord Jesus Christ, contained, but not opened in the former Creed, the coe- quality and coeternity of the Son with the Father was denied. Being for this impi- ety deprived of his place by the Bishop of the same Church, the punishment which should have reformed him did but increase his obstinacy, and give him occasion of labouring with greater earnestness elsewhere, to intangle unwary minds with the snares of his damnable opinion. *Arrius* in short time had won to himself a num- ber both of Followers and of great Defenders, whereupon much disquietness on all sides ensued. The Emperour, to reduce the Church of Christ unto the unity of sound belief, when other means, whereof tryal was first made, took no effect, ga- thered that famous assembly of 318 Bishops in the Council of *Nice*, where besides order taken for many things which seemed to need redress, there was with com- mon consent for the settling of all mens minds, that other Confession of Faith set down, which we call the *Nicene Creed*, whereunto the *Arrians* themselves which were present subscribed also: not that they meant sincerely, and indeed to forsake their error, but only to escape deprivation and exile which they saw they could not avoid, openly persisting in their former opinions when the greater part had con- cluded against them, and that with the Emperours Royal Assent. Reserving there- fore themselves unto future opportunities, and knowing that it would not boot them to stir again in a matter so composed, unless they could draw the Emperour first, and by his means the chiefest Bishops unto their part; till *Constantines* death, and some- what after they always professed love and zeal to the *Nicene Faith*, yet ceased not in the mean while to strengthen that part which in heart they favoured, and to infect by all means under colour of other quarrels their greatest Adversaries in this cause. Amongst them *Athanasius* especially, whom by the space of 46 years, from the time of his consecration to succeed *Alexander* Arch-bishop in the Church of *Alex- andria*, till the last hour of his life in this world, they never suffered to enjoy the comfort of a peaceable day. The heart of *Constantine* stolen from him. *Constantius* *Constantines* successor, his scourge and torment by all the ways that malice armed with sovereign authority could devise and use. Under *Julian* no rest given him. And in the daies of *Valentinian* as little. Crimes there were laid to his charge ma- ny, the least whereof being just, had bereaved him of estimation and credit with men while the world standeth. His Judges evermore the self-same men by whom his accusers were suborned. Yet the issue always on their part shame; on his, triumph. Those Bishops and Prelates, who should have accounted his cause theirs, and could not many of them, but with bleeding hearts, and with watred cheeks, be- hold a person of so great place and worth constrained to endure so foul indignities, were sure by bewraying their affection towards him, to bring upon themselves those molestations, whereby if they would not be drawn to seem his Adversaries, yet others should be taught how unsafe it was to continue his friends. Whereupon it came to pass in the end, that (very few excepted) all became subject to the sway of time; other odder there was none amongst them, saving only that some fell sooner away, some later from the soundness of belief; some were Leaders in the Host of

Impiety,

Impiety, and the rest as common Souldiers, either yeilding through fear, or brought under with penury, or by flattery insinared, or else beguiled through simplicitie, which is the fairest excuse that well may be made for them. Yea (that which all men did wonder at) *Osius* the ancientest Bishop that Chrirtendom then had, the most forward in defence of the Catholike cause, and of the contrary part most feared, that very *Osius*, with whose hand the Nicene Creed it self was set down and framed for the whole Christian World to subscribe unto, so far yeilded in the end, as even with the same hand to ratifie the *Arrians* confession, a thing which they neither hoped to see, nor the other part ever feared, till with amazement they saw it done. Both were perswaded, that although there had been for *Osius* no way but either presently subscribe or dye, his answer and choice would have been the same that *Eleazar's* was, *a 2 Mac. 6. 24.* It doth not become our age to dissemble, whereby many young persons might think, that *Osius* an hundred years old and upward, were now gone to another Religion, and so *Maro Sulpis.* through mine hypocrisie [for a little time of transitory life] they might be deceived by me, and I procure malediction and reproach to my old age. For though I were now delivered from the torments of men, yet could I not escape the hand of the Almighty, neither alive nor dead. But such was the stream of those times, that all men gave place unto it, which we cannot but impute, partly, to their own over-sight. For at the first the Emperour was theirs, the determination of the Council of Nice was for them, they had the *Arrians* hands to that Council: So great advantages are never changed so far to the contrary, but by great error. It plainly appeareth that the first thing which weakened them, was their security. Such as they knew were in heart still affected towards *Arrianisme*, they suffered by continual nearness to possess the minds of the greatest about the Emperour, which themselves might have done with very good acception, and neglected it. In *Constantinus* life-time to have settled *Constantinus*, the same way had been a duty of good service towards God, a mean of peace and great quietness to the Church of Christ, a labour easie, and how likely we may conjecture, when after that so much pallas was taken to instruct and strengthen him in the contrary course, after that so much was done by himself to the furtherance of Heresie, yet being touched in the end voluntarily with remorse, nothing more grieved him than the memory of former proceedings in the cause of Religion, and that which he now foresaw in *Julian*, the next Physician into whose hands the body that was thus distempered must fall. Howbeit this we may somewhat excuse, in as much as every mans particular care to his own Charge was such, as gave them no leisure to heed what others practised in Princes Courts. But of the two Synods of *Arimine* and *Selencia*, what should we think? *Constantinus* by the *Arrians* suggestion had devised to assemble all the Bishops of the whole World about this controverisie; but in two severall places, the Bishops of the West at *Arimine* in *Italy*, the Eastern at *Selencia* the same time. Amongst them of the East there was no stop, they agreed without any great ado, gave their sentence against Heresie, excommunicated some chief maintainers thereof, and sent the Emperour word what was done. They had at *Arimine* about four hundred which held the truth, scarce of the adverse part four-score, but these obstinate, and the other weary of contending with them: whereupon by both it was resolved to send to the Emperour, such as might inform him of the cause, and declare what hindered their peaceable agreement. There are chosen for the Catholique side, such men as had in them nothing to be noted but boldness, neither gravity, nor learning, nor wisdom. The *Arrians* for the credit of their faction take the eldest, the best experienced, the most warie, and the longest practised *Veterans* they had amongst them. The Emperour conjecturing of the reason either part by the quality of them whom he saw, sent them speedily away, and with them a certain Confession of faith, ambiguously and subtilly drawn by the *Arrians*, whereunto unless they all subscribed, they should in no case be suffered to depart from the place where they were. At the length it was perceived, that there had not been in the Catholikes either at *Arimine*, or at *Selencia*, so much foresight, as to provide that true intelligence might pass between them what was done. Upon the advantage of which error, their Adversaries abuting each with perswasion: that other had yeilded, surprized both. The Emperour the more desirous and glad of such events, for that besides all other things wherein they hindered themselves,

*e Ex parte no-  
straleguntur  
dominos ado-  
lescentes, parim  
docti et parim  
cauti. Ad Arri-  
anis autem mis-  
si senes, callidi  
et ingenio va-  
lentes veterano,  
perfidia imbuti,  
qui apud Ro-  
gem facile su-  
periores existi-  
terunt. Sulpis.  
lib. i.  
d Elidemque  
conscripta ab  
improbo, fidem  
trastis verbis  
fidentibus in-  
volutam qua  
Catholicam disci-  
plinam perfi-  
dis latente lo-  
queretur. Ibid.*



the gall and bitterness of certain mens writings, who spared him little for honour sake, made him for their sakes the less inclinable to that truth, which he himself should have honoured and loved. Only in *Athanasius* there was nothing observed throughout the course of that long Tragedy, other than such as very well became a wise man to do, and a righteous to suffer. So that this was the plain condition of those times, the whole World against *Athanasius*, and *Athanasius* against it; half an hundred of years spent in doubtful trial which of the two in the end would prevail, the side which had all, or else the part which had no friend but God and death; the one a Defender of his innocency, the other a finisher of all his troubles. Now although these contentions were cause of much evil, yet some good the Church hath reaped by them, in that they occasioned the learned and sound in faith to explain such things as Heresie went about to deprave. And in this respect the Creed of *Athanasius* first exhibited unto *Julius* Bishop of *Rome*, and afterwards (as we may probably gather) sent to the Emperour *Jovian*, for his more full information concerning that truth which *Arrianism* so mightily did impugn, was both in the East and the West Churches accepted as a treasure of inestimable price, by as many as had not given up even the very ghost of belief.

ἡ τοῦ ἁγίου  
δοκτικῆς διδασκαλίας  
τοῦ κυρίου ἡμῶν  
Ἰησοῦ χριστοῦ  
καὶ τοῦ ἁγίου  
πνεύματος.  
Greg. de Atha.

That Creed  
which in the  
Book of Com-  
mon Prayer,  
followeth im-  
mediately after  
the reading of  
the Gospel.

3 Hil. Arel.  
Epist. ad Ang.

21 Cor. 13. 40.  
Exod. 33. 18.  
Heb. 1. 3.

1 Nat. 18. 10.

1 Jof. 7. 19.  
1 Jof. 22. 23.

1 Basil. Ep. 78.

Then was the Creed of *Athanasius* written, howbeit not then so expedient to be publickly used as now in the Church of God, because while the heat of division lasteth, truth it self enduring opposition, doth not so quietly and curantly pass throughout all mens hands, neither can be of that account which afterwards it hath, when the World once perceiveth the vertue thereof not only in it self, but also by the conquest which God hath given it over Heresie. That which Heresie did by sinister interpretations go about to pervert in the first and most ancient Apostolick Creed, the same being by singular dexterity and plainness cleared from those heretical corruptions, partly by this Creed of *Athanasius*, written about the year three hundred and forty, and partly by that other set down in the Synod of *Constantinople* forty years after, comprehending together with the *Nicean* Creed an addition of other Articles which the *Nicean* Creed omitted, because the controversie then in hand needed no mention to be made of them; these Catholick Declarations of our belief delivered by them which were so much neerer than we are unto the first publication thereof, and continuing needful for all men at all times to know, these Confessions as testimonies of our continuance in the same faith to this present day, we rather use than any other gloss or paraphrase devised by our selves, which though it were to the same effect, notwithstanding could not be of the like authority and credit. For that of *Hilary* unto *S. Augustin* hath been ever, and is likely to be always true, *Your most religious wisdom knoweth how great their number is in the Church of God, whom the very authority of mens names doth keep in that opinion which they hold already, or draw unto that which they have not before held.* Touching the Hymne of *Glory*, our usual conclusion to Psalms, the glory of all things is that wherein their highest perfection doth consist: and the glory of God that divine excellency whereby he is eminent above all things, his omnipotent, infinite, and eternal being, which Angels and glorified Saints do intuitively behold, we on earth apprehend principally by Faith, in part also by that kind of knowledge which groweth from experience of those effects, the greatness whereof exceedeth the powers and abilities of all creatures both in Heaven and Earth. God is glorified when such his excellency above all things is with due admiration acknowledged. Which dutiful acknowledgement of Gods excellency by occasion of special effects, being the very proper subject and almost the only matter purposely treated of in all Psalms, if that joyful Hymne of *Glory* have any use in the Church of God, whose Name we therewith extoll and magnifie, can we place it more fitly then where now it serveth as a close or conclusion to Psalms? Neither is the forme thereof newly or unnecessarily invented. We must (saith *Saint Basil*) *as we have received, even so baptize, and as we baptize even so believe, and as we believe even so give glory.* Baptizing we use the Name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; Confessing the Christian Faith we declare our belief in the Father, and in the Son, and in the Holy Ghost; ascribing glory unto God, we give it to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost. It is *ὁ αὐτὸς θεὸς ὁ αὐτὸς κυριεύων*, the token of a true and sound understanding

understanding for matter of doctrine about the Trinity, when in ministring Baptisme, and making Confession, and giving glory, there is a conjunction of all three, and no one of the three severed from the other two. Against the *Arrians* affirming the Father to be greater then the Son in honour, excellency, dignity, majesty, this forme and manner of glorifying God was not at that time first begun, but received long before, and alledged at that time as an argument for the truth. *If (saith For-1 Fohd. 118, badius) there be that inequality which they affirm, then do we every day blaspheme even Arrian, God, when in Thanksgivings and Offerings of Sacrifice we acknowledge those things common to the Father and the Son.* The *Arrians* therefore, for that they perceived how this did prejudice their cause, altered the Hymne of Glory, wherupon ensued in the Church of *Antioch* about the year 349. that jarre which *Theodore* and *Sozom.* k Theod. lib. 2. cap. 24. Sozomen. lib. 4. cap. 19. mention. In their Quires while they praised God together, at the manner was, at the end of the Psalms which they sung, it appeared what opinion every man held, for as much as they glorified some the Father, And the Son, And the Holy Ghost; some the Father By the Son, In the Spirit; the one sort thereby declaring themselves to embrace the Sons equality with the Father, as the Council of Nice had defined; the other sort against the Council of Nice his inequality. Learning their Bishop, although an enemy to the better part, yet wary and subtle, as in a manner all the Heads of the *Arrians* Faction were, could at no time be plainly heard to use either sorte, perhaps left his open contradiction of them whom he favoured not might make them the more eager, and by that mean the less apt to be privately wonne; or peradventure for that though he joynd in opinion with that sort of *Arrians*, who denyed the Son to be equal with the Father; yet from them he differed, which thought the Father and the Son not only unequal, but unlike, as *Arius* did upon a frivolous and false surmise, that because the Apostle hath said, *one God of whom, one Lord by whom, one Spirit in whom*, his different manner of speech doth argue a different Nature and Being in them of whom he speaketh: Out of which blind collection, it seemeth that this their new devised forme did first spring. But in truth even that very forme which the *Arrians* did then use (saying that they chose it to serve as their special mark of recognisance, and gave it secretly within themselves a sinister construction) hath not otherwise as much as he shew of any thing which soundeth towards impiety. For albeit if we respect Gods glory within it self, it be the equal right and possession of all three, and that without any oddes, any difference, yet touching his manifestation thereof unto us by continual effects, and our perpetual acknowledgement thereof unto him likewise by vertuous offices, doth not every tongue both ways confesse, that the brightness of his glory hath spread it self throughout the World By the Ministry of his only begotten Son, and is In the manifold graces of the Spirit every way marvellous; Again, that whatsoever we do to his glory, it is done In the power of the Holy Ghost, and made acceptable By the merit and mediation of Jesus Christ? So that glory to the Father And the Son, or glory to the Father By the Son, saving only where evil minds do abuse and pervert most holy things, are not else the voices of errour and schisme, but of sound and sincere Religion. It hath been the custome of the Church of Christ to end sometimes Prayers, and Sermons always, with words of glory, wherein, as long as the blessed Trinity had due honour, and till *Arrianisme* had made it a matter of great sharpness and subtilty of wit to be a sound believing Christian, men were not curious what syllables or particles of speech they used. Upon which confidence and trust notwithstanding, when Saint *Basil* began to practise the like indifferency, and to conclude publick prayers, glorifying sometime the Father with the Son and the Holy Ghost, sometime the Father by the Son in the Spirit, whereas long custome had enured them into the former kind alone, by means whereof the latter was new and strange in their ears, this needless experiment brought afterwards upon him a necessary labour of excusing himself to his friends, and maintaining his own act against them, who because the light of his candle too much drowned theirs, were glad to lay hold on so colourable matter, and exceeding forward to traduce him as an author of suspicious innovation. How hath the world forsaken that course which it sometime held? How are the judgements, hearts, and affections of men altered? May we not wonder that a man of St. *Basil*s authority and quality;

an Arch-bishop in the House of God, should have his Name far and wide called in question, and be driven to his painful Apologies, to write in his own defence whole Volumes, and yet hardly to obtain with all his endeavour a pardon, the crime laid against him being but only a change of some one or two syllables in their usual Church-Liturgy? It was thought in him an unpardonable offence to alter any thing; in us as intolerable, that we suffer any thing to remain unaltered. The very Creed of *Athanasius* and that sacred Hymne of Glory, than which nothing doth sound more heavenly in the ears of faithful men, are now reckoned as superfluities, which we must in any case pare away, lest we cloy God with too much service. Is there in that Confession of Faith any thing which doth not at all times edifie and instruct the attentive hearer? Or is our Faith in the blessed Trinity a matter need- less to be so oftentimes mentioned and opened in the principal part of that duty which we owe to God, our publick Prayer? Hath the Church of Christ from the first beginning, by a secret universal instinct of Gods good Spirit, always tied it self to end neither Sermon nor almost any speech of moment which hath concerned matters of God, without some special words of honour and glory to that Trinity which we all adore; and is the like conclusion of Psalms become now at length an eye-sore or a galling to their ears that hear it? Those flames of *Arrianisme* they say are quenched, which were the cause why the Church devised in such sort to confess and praise the glorious Deity of the Son of God. Seeing therefore the sore is whole, why retain we as yet the playster? When the cause why any thing was ordained doth once cease, the thing it self should cease with it, that the Church being eased of unprofitable labours, needful offices may the better be attended. For the doing of things unnecessary, is many times the cause why the most necessary are not done. But in this case so to reason will not serve their turns. For first, the ground whereupon they build, is not certainly their own, but with special limitations. Few things are so restrained to any one end or purpose, that the same being extinct they should forthwith utterly become frustrate. Wisdome may have framed one and the same thing to serve commodiously for divers ends, and of those ends any one be sufficient cause for continuance, though the rest have ceased; even as the tongue, which Nature hath given us for an instrument of speech is not idle in dumb persons, because it also serveth for taste. Again, if time have worne out, or any other meane altogether taken away what was first intended, uses not thought upon before may afterwards spring up, and be reasonable causes of retaining that which other considerations did formerly procure to be instituted. And it cometh sometime to pass, that a thing unnecessary in it self as touching the whole direct purpose whereto it was meant or can be applied, doth notwithstanding appear convenient to be still held even without use, lest by reason of that coherence which it hath with somewhat most necessary, the removal of the one should indammage the other; and therefore men which have clean lost the possibility of sight, keep still their eyes nevertheless in the place where Nature set them. As for these two branches whereof our question groweth, *Arrianisme* was indeed some occasion of the one, but a cause of neither, much less the only intire cause of both. For albeit conflict with *Arrians* brought forth the occasion of writing that Creed, which long after was made a part of the Church-liturgy, as Hymns and Sentences of glory were a part thereof before; yet cause sufficient there is why both should remain in use, the one as a most divine explication of the chiefest Articles of our Christian belief, the other as an heavenly acclamation of joyful applause to his praises in whom we believe; neither the one nor the other unworthy to be heard sounding as they are in the Church of Christ, whether *Arrianisme* live or dye. Against which poyson likewise if we think that the Church at this day needeth not those ancient preservatives, which ages before us were so glad to use, we deceive our selves greatly. The weeds of Heresie being grown unto such ripeness as that was, do even in the very cutting down scatter oftentimes those seeds which for a while lie unseen and buried in the earth, but afterward freshly spring up again no less pernicious than at the first. Which thing they very well know, and I doubt not will easily confess, who live to their grief, both toil and grief, where the blasphemies of *Arrians*, *Samosatenians*, *Tritheists*, *Eunychians*, and *Macedonians* are renewed by them,



them, who to hatch their Heresie, have choise those Churches as fittest nets where *Athanasius* Creed is not heard; by them I say renewed, who following the course of extreame reformation, were wont in the pride of their own proceedings to glory, that whereas *Luther* did but bow away the roof, and *Zwinglius* batter but the walls of Popish Superstition, the last and hardest work of all remained, which was, to raze up the very ground and foundation of Popery, that doctrine concerning the Deity of Christ, which *Satanasius* (for so it pleased those impious forsaken Miceants to speak) hath in this memorable Creed explained. So manifestly true is that which one of the <sup>a</sup> Ancients hath concerning Arrianisme, *Mortuis authoribus hujus veneni, scelerata tamen totius doctrina non moritur*, the authors of this venom being dead and gone, their wicked doctrine notwithstanding continueth.

*a Fabad. contra Arr.*

43 Amongst the heaps of these excesses and superfluities there is espied the want of a principal part of duty, *There are no thanksgivings for the benefits for which there are Petitions* in our Book of Prayer. This they have thought a point material to be objected. Neither may we take it in evil part to be admonished what special duties of thankfulness we owe to that merciful God, for whose unspeakable graces the only requital which we are able to make, is a true, hearty, and sincere acknowledgement, how precious we esteem such benefits received, and how infinite in goodness the Author from whom they come. But that to every Petition we make, for things needful there should be some answerable sentence of thanks provided particularly to follow such requests obtained; either it is not a matter so requisite as they pretend; or if it be, wherefore have they not then in such order framed their own Book of Common Prayer? Why hath our Lord and Saviour taught us a forme of Prayer containing so many petitions of those things which we want; and not delivered in like sort as many several formes of thanksgiving, to serve when any thing we pray for is granted? What answer soever they can reasonably make unto these demands, the same shall discover unto them how causeless a censure it is, that there are not in our Book thanksgivings for all the benefits for which there are petitions. For concerning the blessings of God, whether they tend unto this life or the life to come, there is great cause why we should delight more in giving thanks, than in making requests for them, in as much as the one hath pensiveness and fear, the other always joy annexed: the one belongeth unto them that seek, the other unto them that have found happiness; they that pray do but yet sow, they that give thanks declare they have reaped. Howbeit, because there are so many graces whereof we stand in continual need, graces for which we may not cease daily and hourly to sue, graces which are in bestowing always, but never come to be fully had in this present life; and therefore when all things here have an end, endless thanks must have their beginning in a State which bringeth the full and final satisfaction of all such perpetual desires; again, because our common necessities, and the lack which we all have, as well of ghostly as of earthly favours is in each kind so easily known, but the gifts of God according to those degrees and times which he in his secret wisdom seeth meet, are so diversly bestowed, that it seldome appeareth what all receive, what all stand in need of it seldome seeth hid, we are not to marvell though the Church do oftner concur in suits than in thanks unto God for particular benefits. Nevertheless, lest God should be any way unglorified, the greatest part of our daily Service, they know, consisteth according to <sup>a</sup> the blessed Apostles own precise rule, in much variety of Psalms and Hymns, for no other purpose, but only that out of so plentiful a treasure there might be for every mans heart to chuse out his own Sacrifice, and to offer unto God by particular secret instinct, what fitteth best the often occasions which any several either party or Congregation may seem to have. They that would clean take from us therefore the daily use of the very best means we have to magnifie and praise the Name of Almighty God for his rich blessings, they that complain of our reading and singing so many Psalms for so good an end, they I say that find fault with our store, should of all men be least willing to reprove

Our want of particular thanksgiving. As such prayers are needful whereby we beg release from our distresses; so there ought to be as necessary prayers of thanksgiving, when we have received those things at the Lords hand which we asked. *T.C. lib. 1. pag. 138.* I do not simply require a solemn and expresse thanksgiving for such benefits; but only upon a supposition, which is, that if it be expedient that there should be expresse prayers against so many of their earthly miseries, that then also it is meet that upon the deliverance there should be an expresse thanksgiving. *T.C. l. 3. p. 109.*

The default of the Book, for that there are no formes of Thanksgiving for the release from those common calamities from which we have petitions to be delivered. *T.C. l. 3. p. 208.*

*b Ephes. 5. 9. Colos. 3. 16.*

our

our scarcity of thankgivings. But because peradventure they see it is not either generally fit or possible that Churches should frame thankgivings answerable to each petition, they shorten somewhat the reins of their censure; there are no forms of thanksgiving, they say, for release of those common calamities, from which we have petitions to be delivered. *There are Prayers set forth to be said in the common calamities and universal scourges of the Realm, as Plague, Famine, &c. And indeed so it ought to be by the Word of God. But as such Prayers are needful*, whereby we beg release from our distresses, so there ought to be as necessary prayers of thanksgiving, when we have received those things at the Lords hand which we asked in our prayers. As oft therefore as any publike or universal scourge is removed, as oft as we are delivered from those either imminent or present calamities, against the storm & tempest whereof we all instantly craved favour from above, let it be a question what we should render unto God for his blessings universally, sensibly, and extraordinarily bestowed. A Prayer of three or four lines inserted into some part of our Church Liturgie? No, we are not perswaded that when God doth in trouble injoin us the duty of invocation, and promise us the benefit of deliverance, and profess that the thing he expecteth after at our hands, is to glorifie him as our mighty and only Saviour, the Church can discharge in manner convenient a work of so great importance by fore-ordaining some short Collect wherein briefly to mention thanks. Our custom therefore whensoever so great occasions are incident, is by publike authority to appoint throughout all Churches set and solemn forms as well of supplication as of thanksgiving, the preparations and intended complements whereof may stir up the minds of men in much more effectual sort, than if only there should be added the Book of Prayer that which they require. But we erre in thinking that they require any such matter. For albeit their words to our understanding be very plain, that in our book *there are Prayers set forth to be said when common calamities are felt, as Plague, Famine, and such like; again, that indeed so it ought to be by the Word of God: that likewise there ought to be as necessary prayers of thanksgiving when we have received those things: finally, that the want of such forms of thanksgiving for the release from those common calamities from which we have petitions to be delivered, is the default of the Book of Common Prayer: yet all this they mean but only by way of supposition of expresse Prayers* against so many earthly miseries were convenient, *that then indeed as many expresse and particular thankgivings should be likewise necessary.* Seeing therefore we know that they hold the one superfluous, they would not have it so understood as though their minds were that any such addition to the book is needfull, whatsoever they say for arguments sake concerning this pretended defect. The truth is, they wave in and out, no way sufficiently grounded, no way resolved what to think, speak or write, more than only that because they have taken it upon them, they must (no remedy now) be opposite.

In some things  
the matter of  
our Prayer, as  
they affirme,  
unsound.

44 The last supposed fault concerneth some few things, the very matter whereof is thought to be much amiss. In a Song of praise to our Lord Jesus Christ, we have these words, *When thou hadst overcome the sharpness of death, thou didst open the Kingdom of Heaven to all believers.* Which maketh some shew of giving countenance to their error, who think that the faithful which departed this life before the coming of Christ, were never till then made partakers of joy, but remained all in that place which they term the *Lake of the Fathers*. In our Liturgy request is made that we may be preserved from sudden death. This seemeth frivolous, because the godly should be always prepared to die. Request is made that God would give those things which we for our unworthiness dare not ask. This they say, *carrieth with it the note of popish servile fear, and savoureth not of that confidence and reverent familiarity that the children of God have through Christ with their heavenly Father.* Request is made that we may evermore be defended from all adversity. For this there is no promise in Scripture, and therefore it is no prayer of Faith, or of the which we can assure our selves that we shall obtain it. Finally, request is made that God would have mercy upon all men. This is impossible, because some are the vessels of wrath, to whom God will never extend his mercy.

45 As Christ hath purchased that Heavenly Kingdom, the last perfection whereof is glory in the life to come, grace in this life a preparation thereunto; so the same he hath opened to the world in such sort, that whereas none can possibly without him attain salvation, by him all that believe are saved. Now whatsoever he did or suffered, the end thereof was to open the doors of the Kingdom of Heaven which our iniquities had shut up. But because by ascending after that the sharpness of death was overcome, he took the very local possession of glory, and that to the use of all that are his, even as himself before had witnessed, *I go to prepare a place for you; And again, Whom thou hast given me, O Father, I will that where I am, they be also with me, that my glory which thou hast given me they may behold*: it appeareth that when Christ did ascend, he then most liberally opened the Kingdome of Heaven, to the end that with him and by him all believers might reign. In what estate the Fathers rested which were dead before, it is not hereby either one way or other determined. All that we can rightly gather is, that as touching their souls what degree of joy or happiness soever it pleased God to bestow upon them, his Ascension which succeeded procured theirs, and theirs concerning the body must needs be not only of, but after his. As therefore Helvidius, against whom S. Jerome writeth, abused greatly those words of Matthew concerning Joseph and the mother of our Saviour Christ, *He knew her not till she had brought forth her first born*, thereby gathering, against the honour of the blessed Virgin, that a thing denied with special circumstance doth import an opposite affirmation when once that circumstance is expired: After the self-same manner it should be a weak Collection, if whereas we say that when Christ had overcome the sharpness of death, he then opened the Kingdome of Heaven to all Believers, a thing in such sort affirmed with circumstance were taken as insinuating an opposite denial before that circumstance be accomplished, and consequently, that because when the sharpness of death was overcome, he then opened Heaven as well to believing Gentiles as Jews, Heaven till then was no receptacle to the souls of either. Wherefore be the Spirits of the just and righteous before Christ truly or falsely thought excluded out of heavenly joy, by that which we in the words alledged before do attribute to Christs Ascension, there is to no such opinion, nor to the favourers thereof any countenance at all given. We cannot better interpret the meaning of these words then Pope Leo himself expoundeth them, whose speech concerning our Lords Ascension may serve instead of a marginal gloss, *Christ's exaltation is our promotion, and whither the glory of the head is already gone before, thither the hope of the body also is to follow. For at this day we have not only the possession of Paradise assured unto us, but in Christ we have entered the highest of the Heavens*. His opening the Kingdom of Heaven and his entrance thereinto was not only to his own use, but for the benefit of all Believers.

46. Our good or evil estate after death dependeth most upon the quality of our lives. Yet somewhat there is why a vertuous mind should rather wish to depart this world with a kind of treatable dissolution, than to be suddenly cut off in a moment; rather to be taken then snatched away from the face of the earth. Death is that which all men suffer, but not all men with one mind, neither all men in one manner. For being of necessity a thing common, it is through the manifold persuasions, dispositions and occasions of men, with equal desert both of praise and dispraise shunned by some, by others desired. So that absolutely we cannot discommend, we cannot absolutely approve either willingness to live or forwardness to dye. And concerning the ways of death, albeit the choice thereof be only in his hands, who alone hath power over all flesh, and unto whose appointment we ought with patience meekly to submit our selves (for to be agents voluntarily in our own destruction, is against both God and Nature) yet there is no doubt but in so great variety, our desires will and may lawfully preferre one kind before another. Is there any man of worth and vertue, although not instructed in the School of Christ, or ever taught what the soundness of Religion meaneth, that had not rather end the days of this transitory life as Cyrus in Xenophon, or in Plato, Socrates are described, then to sink down with them of whom Elihu hath said, *Memento moriuntur*, there is scarce an instant between their flourishing and their not being? But let us which know what it is to die as Absalon or Ananias and Sapphira died, let

When thou hadst overcome the sharpness of death, thou didst open the Kingdome of Heaven unto all Believers.   
 a John 14. 2.   
 b John 17. 24.

c Hieron: con: Helu.   
 Aug. bar. 34.

d Cyr. super. Gen. 29.   
 Th. 3. 4. 12.   
 e Leo Ser. 1. de Ascens.

Touching Prayer for deliverance from sudden death.

f Job 34. 20.



a Heb. 11. 21.  
Deut. 33.  
Josh. 24.  
1 Reg. 2.

us beg of God that when the hour of our rest is come, the patterns of our dissolution may be <sup>a</sup> *Jacob, Moses, Joshua, David*, who leasurably ending their lives in peace, prayed for the mercies of God to come upon their posterity; replenished the hearts of the nearest unto them with words of memorable Consolation; strengthened men in the fear of God, gave them wholesome instructions of Life, and confirmed them in true Religion; in summe, taught the World no less virtuously how to dye, then they had done before how to live. To such as judge things according to the sense of natural men, and ascend no higher, suddenness because it shortneth their grief should in reason be most acceptable. That which causeth bitterness in death, is the languishing attendance and expectation thereof ere it come. And therefore Tyrants use what Art they can to increase the slowness of death. Quick riddance out of life is often both requested and bestowed as a benefit. Commonly therefore it is for virtuous considerations, that Wisdom so far prevaileth with men as to make them desirous of slow and deliberate death against the stream of their sensual inclination, content to endure the longer grief and bodily pain, that the soul may have time to call it self to a just account of all things past, by means whereof Repentance is perfected, there is wherein to exercise patience, the joys of the Kingdom of Heaven have leasure to present themselves, the pleasures of sinne and this Worlds vanities are censured with uncorrupt judgement, Charity is free to make advised choice of the soyl wherein her last Seed may most fruitfully be bettowed, the mind is at liberty to have due regard of that disposition of worldly things which it can never afterwards alter, and because <sup>b</sup> the nearer we draw unto God, the more we are oftentimes enlightened with the shining beams of his glorious presence, as being then even almost in sight, a leasurable departure may in that case bring forth for the good of such as are present, that which shall cause them for ever after from the bottom of their hearts to pray, *O let us dye the death of the righteous, and let our last end be like theirs.* All which benefits and opportunities are by sudden death prevented. And besides, for as much as death howsoever is a general effect of the wrath of God against sin, and the suddenness thereof a thing which happeneth but to few; The World in this respect feareth it the more as being subject to doubtful constructions, which as no man willingly would incur, so they whose happy estate after life is of all mens the most certain, would especially wish that no such accident in their death may give uncharitable minds occasion of rash, sinister, and suspicious verdicts, whereunto they are over-prone; so that whether evil men or good be respected, whether we regard our selves or others, to be preserved from sudden death is a blessing of God. And our Prayer against it importeth a two-fold desire, first, that death when it cometh may give us some convenient respite; or secondly, if that be denied us of God, yet we may have wisdom to provide always before-hand, that those evils overtake us not, which death unexpected doth use to bring upon careless men; and that although it be sudden in it self, nevertheless in regard of our prepared minds it may not be sudden.

Prayer that those things which we for our unworthiness dare not aske, God for the worthiness of his Son would vouchsafe to grant. This request carrieth with it still the note of the Popish servile fear, and savoureth not of that confidence and reverent familiarity that the Children of God have through Christ with their heavenly Father. T. C. lib. 1. page 136.

47. But is it credible that the very acknowledgement of our own unworthiness to obtain, and in that respect our professed fearfulness to ask any thing otherwise than only for his sake to whom God can deny nothing, that this should be noted for a Popish Errour, that this should be termed baseness, abjection of mind, or servility, is it credible? That which we for our unworthi-

ness are afraid to crave, our Prayer is, that God for the worthiness of his Son would notwithstanding vouchsafe to grant. May it please them to shew us which of these words it is that carrieth the note of Popish and servile fear? In reference to other Creatures of this inferiour World, mans worth and excellency is admired. Compared with God, the truest Inscription wherewith we can circle so base a coyné is that of *David*, *Univerſa vanitas eſt omnis homo*, whoſoever hath the name of a mortal man, there is in him whatsoever the name of vanity doth comprehend. And therefore what we say of our own unworthiness, there is no doubt but Truth will ratifie, alledged in Prayer it both becometh and behoveth Saints. For as humility is

c Psal. 39. 5.

in

in Suiters a decent vertue, so the rectification thereof by such effectual acknowledgements not only \* argueth a sound apprehension of his supereminent Glory and Majesty before whom we stand, but putteth also into his hands a kind of pledge or bond for security against our unthankfulness, the very natural Root whereof is always either Ignorance, Diffimulation, or Pride; Ignorance, when we know not the Author from whom our good cometh; Diffimulation, when our hands are more open than our eyes, upon that we receive; Pride, when we think our selves *worth* of that which meere grace and undeserved mercy bestoweth. In Prayer therefore to abate so vain imaginations with the *true conceit of unworthiness*, is rather to prevent than commit a fault: It being no Error thus to think, no fault thus to speak of our selves when we pray, is it a fault that the consideration of our unworthiness maketh us *fearful* to open our mouths by way of Suite? While *Job* had prosperity and lived in honour, men feared him for his authorities sake, and in token of their fear when they saw him they *hid themselves*. Between *Elisha* and the rest of *Jobs* Familiars the greatest disparity was but in years. And he, though riper than they in judgement, doing them reverence in regard of age, stood long [*e*] *doubtful*, and very loth to adventure upon speech in his Elders hearing. If so small inequality between man and man make their modesty a commendable vertue, who respecting Superiours as *Superiours*, can neither speak nor stand before them without fear: That the Publican approacheth not more boldly to God; that when Christ in mercy draweth neer to *Peter*, he in humility and fear craveth distance; that being to stand, to speak, to sue in the presence of so great Majesty, we are afraid, let no man blame us. <sup>4</sup> In which consideration notwithstanding, because to flie altogether from God, to despair that creatures unworthy shall be able to obtain any thing at his hands, and under that pretence to surcease from Prayers as bootless or fruitless offices, were to him no less injurious than pernicious to our own souls, even that which we tremble to do we do, we ask those things which we dare not ask. The knowledge of our own unworthiness is not without belief in the merits of Christ. With that true fear which the one causeth there is coupled true boldness, and encouragement drawn from the other. The very silence which our unworthiness purteth us unto, doth it self make request for us, and that in confidence of his grace. Looking inward we are stricken dumb, looking upward we speak and prevail. O happy mixture wherein things contrary do so qualifie and correct the one the danger of the others excess, that neither boldness can make us presume as long as we are kept under with the sense of our own wretchedness; nor, while we trust in the mercy of God through Jesus Christ, fear be able to tyrannize over us! As therefore our fear excludeth not that *boldness* which becometh Saints; so if their *familiarity* with God do not favour of this fear, it draweth too neer that irreverend confidence wherewith true Humility can never stand.

48 Touching continual deliverance in the world from a'l adversity, their conceit is, that we ought not to ask it of God by Prayer, forasmuch as in Scripture there is no promise that we shall be evermore free from vexations, calamities, and troubles. Minds rigorously affected are wont in every thing of weight and moment which they do or see, to examine according unto rules of Piety, what dependency it hath on God, what reference to themselves, what coherence with any of the securities whereunto all things in the World should lead, and accordingly they frame the inward disposition of their minds sometime to admire God, sometimes to bless him and give him thanks, sometime to exult in his love, sometime to implore his mercy. All which different elevations of spirit unto God are contained in the name of Prayer. Every good and holy desire though it lack the form, hath notwithstanding in it self the substance, and with him the force of a Prayer, who regardeth the very moanings, groans, and signes of the heart of man. Petitionary Prayer becometh only to such as are in themselves impotent, and stand in need of relief from others. We thereby declare unto God what our own desire is that he by his power should effect. It presupposeth therefore in us, First, the want of that which we pray for; Secondly, a feeling of that want; Thirdly, an earnest willingness of mind to be eased therein; Fourthly, a declaration of this our desire in the sight of God, not as if he should be otherwise ignorant of our necessities, but because we

α Μαρτυρίας  
 ὅς τῆς ἰδίας  
 παρὰ πάντα  
 ἡλικίας μαρ-  
 τύρη ἐστὶν τῆς τοῦ  
 Θεοῦ παρὰ  
 πάντα ὑπερ-  
 βολῆς. Pbilo.  
 de sacrif. Abel.  
 c. 9.

b Feb 19. 8.  
Amongst the  
parts of honour  
Aristotle reckoneth *εὐσε-*  
*κωνίας* and  
*ἐκδαρίας*. Retb.  
l. 1. c. 5.  
c Feb 32. 6.

4 The Publican did indeed not lift up his eyes: So that if by his Example we should say we dare ask nothing, we ought also to ask nothing, otherwise instead of teaching true humility, we open a School to hypocrisy, which the Lord detesteth.

T.C. l.3. p.103.  
e Ro. 5.2,8,15.

Feb. 10, 19.  
Prayer to be  
evermore deliv-  
ered from  
all adversity.  
For as much  
as there is no  
promise in the  
Scripture that  
we should be  
free from all  
adversity, and  
that evermore  
it seemeth  
that this Prayer  
might have been  
better conceiv-  
ed being no  
Prayer of  
Faith, or of  
the which we  
can assure our  
selves that we  
shall obtain it.  
T.C. 1.1-p.136.

a *Oratio quam  
non fit per  
Christum, non  
solum non po-  
test delere pec-  
catum, sed etiam  
ipsa fit pecca-  
tum.*  
*Aug. ear. 1. in  
Psal. 108.*

b *Num. 11. 33.  
1 Sam. 8. 7.  
Job 1. 12. &  
2. 6.  
Luke 8. 51.  
c 2 Cor. 12. 7.  
8. 9.  
Aug. Epi. 121.  
ad probum vi-  
dum.*

d *Psal. 1. 8.*

e *John 17. 1, 2.*

this way shew that we honour him as our God, and are verily perswaded that no good thing can come to pass which he by his Omnipotent power effecteth not. Now because there is no mans Prayer acceptable, whose person is odious, neither any mans person gracious without faith, it is of necessity required that they which pray do believe. The Prayers which our Lord and Saviour made were for his own worthiness accepted; ours God accepteth not but with this condition, if they be joyned with <sup>a</sup> belief in Christ. The Prayers of the Just are accepted always, but not always those things granted for which they pray. For in Prayer if faith and assurance to obtain were both one and the same thing, seeing that the effect of not obtaining is a plain testimony that they which prayed were not sure they should obtain, it would follow that their Prayer being without certainty of the event, was also made unto God without faith, and consequently that God abhorred it. Which to think of so many Prayers of Saints as we find have failed in particular requests, how absurd were it? His faithful people have this comfort, that whatsoever they right y ask, the same (no doubt, but) they shall receive, so far as may stand with the glory of God, and their own everlasting good; unto either of which two it is no virtuous mans purpose to seek or desire to obtain any thing prejudicial, and therefore that clause which our Lord and Saviour in the Prayer of his Agony did express, we in petitions of like nature do always imply, *Pater, si possibile est*, if it may stand with thy will and pleasure. Or if not, but that there be secret impediments and causes in regard whereof the thing we pray for is denied us, yet the Prayer it self which we make is a pleasing Sacrifice to God, who both accepteth and rewardeth it some other way. So that sinners in very truth are denied when they <sup>b</sup> seem to prevail in their Supplications, because it is not for their sakes or to their good that their Sutes take place; the faithful contrariwise, because it is for their good oftentimes that their Petitions do not take place, prevail even then when they most (<sup>c</sup>) seem denied. *Our Lord God in anger hath granted some importunate mens requests, as on the other side the Apostles sute he hath of favour and mercy not granted* (saith Saint Augustine.) To think we may pray unto God for nothing but what he hath promised in holy Scripture we shall obtain, is perhaps an errour. For of Prayer there are two uses. It serveth as a mean to procure those things which God hath promised to grant when we aske, and it serveth as a mean to express our lawful desires also towards that, which whether we shall have or no we know not till we see the event. Things in themselves unholy or unseemly we may not ask; we may whatsoever, being not forbidden, either Nature or Grace shall reasonably move us to wish as importing the good of men, albeit God himself have no where by promise assured us of that particular which our Prayer craveth. To pray for that which is in it self and of its own nature apparently a thing impossible, were not convenient. Wherefore though men do without offence wish daily that the affairs which with evil success are past, might have fallen out much better, yet to pray that they may have been any other than they are, this being a manifest impossibility in it self, the Rules of Religion do not permit. Whereas contrariwise when things of their own nature contingent and mutable are by the secret determination of God appointed one way, though we the other way make our Prayers, and consequently ask those things of God which are *by this supposition* impossible, we notwithstanding do not hereby in Prayer transgress our lawful bounds. That Christ, as the only begotten Son of God, having no Superior, and therefore owing honour unto none, neither standing in any need should either give thanks, or make petition unto God, were most absurd. As man, what could be seem him better, whether we respect his affection to God-ward, or his own necessity, or his charity and love towards men? Some things he knew should come to pass, and notwithstanding prayed for them, because he also knew that the necessary means to effect them, were his prayers. As in the Psalm it is said, <sup>d</sup> *Ask of me, and I will give thee the Heavens for thine Inheritance, and the ends of the Earth for thy possession.* Wherefore that which here God promiseth his Son, the same in the 17. of John he prayeth for, <sup>e</sup> *Father, the hour is now come, glorifie thy Son, that thy Son also may glorifie thee, according as thou hast given him power over all flesh.* But had Christ the like promise concerning the effect of every particular for which he prayed? That which was not effected could not be promised.



miled. And we know in<sup>a</sup> what sort he prayed for removal of that bitter cup, which cup he tasted notwithstanding his Prayer. To shift off this Example they answer first, that<sup>b</sup> as other children of God, so Christ had a promise of deliverance, as far as the glory of God in the accomplishment of his vocation would suffer. And if we ourselves have not also in that sort the promise of God to be evermore delivered from all adversity, what meaneth the Sacred Scripture to speak in so large terms, *Be obedient, and the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thy hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy Cattel, and in the fruit of the Land for thy wealth.* Again, *Keep his Laws, and thou shalt be blest above all people, the Lord shall take from thee all infirmities.* The man whose delight is in the Law of God, whatsoever he doth is shall prosper. For the ungodly there are great plagues remaining; but whosoever putteth his trust in the Lord, mercy embraceth him<sup>c</sup> on every side. Not only that mercy which keepeth from being over-laid or oppressed, but mercy which saveth from being touched with grievous miseries, mercy which turneth away the course of<sup>d</sup> the great water-floods, and permitteth them not to come near. Nevertheless, because the Prayer of Christ did concern but one calamity, they are still bold to deny the lawfulness of our Prayer for deliverance out of all, yea, though we pray with the same exception that he did, *If such deliverance may stand with the pleasure of Almighty God, and not otherwise.* For they have, secondly, found out a Rule that Prayer ought only to be made for deliverance<sup>e</sup> from this or that particular adversity, whereof we know not, but upon the event, what the pleasure of God is. Which quite overthroweth that other principle, wherein they require unto every Prayer which is of Faith an assurance to obtain the thing we pray for. At the first to pray against all adversity was unlawful, because we cannot assure our selves that this will be granted. Now we have licence to pray against any particular adversity, and the reason given, because we know not but upon the event what God will do. If we know not what God will do, it followeth that for any assurance we have, he may do otherwise than we pray, and we may faithfully pray for that which we cannot assuredly presume that God will grant. Seeing therefore neither of these two Answers will serve the turn, they have a third, which is, that to pray in such sort, is but idly mis-spent labour, because God hath already revealed his Will touching this request, and we know that the sure we make is denyed before we make it. Which neither is true, and if it were, was Christ ignorant what God had determined touching those things which himself should suffer? To say<sup>f</sup> he knew not what weight of sufferances his heavenly Father had measured unto him, is somewhat hard, harder, that although he knew them, notwithstanding for the present time they were forgotten, through the force of those unspeakable pangs which he then was in. The one against the plain express words of the holy Evangelist, *He knew all things that should come upon him*; the other less credible, if any thing may be of less credit than what the Scripture it self gain-sayeth. Doth any of them which wrote his sufferings, make report that memory failed him? Is there in his words and speeches any sign of defect that way? Did not himself declare before whatsoever was to happen in the course of that whole tragedy? Can we gather by any thing after taken from his own mouth either in the place of publike judgment, or upon the Altar of the Cross, that through the bruising of his Body, some part of the treasures of his soul were scattered and slipt from him? If that which was perfect both before and after did fail at this only middle instant, there must appear some manifest cause how it came to pass. True it is, that the pangs of his heaviness and grief were unspeakable: and as true, that because the minds of the afflicted do never think they have fully conceived the weight or measure of their own woe, they use their affection as a whetstone both to wit and memory; these as Nurses do feed grief, so that the weaker his conceit had been touching that which he was to suffer, the more it must needs in that hour have helped to the mitigation of his anguish. But his anguish we see was then at the very height whereunto it could possibly rise; which argueth his deep apprehension even to the last drop of the gall which that Cup contained, and of every circumstance wherein there was any force to augment heaviness; but above all things, the resolute determination of God, and his own unchangeable purpose which he at that time could not forget. To what intent then was his Prayer,

Gg 2

which

<sup>a</sup> Mat. 26. 39.  
<sup>b</sup> Mark 14. 36.  
<sup>c</sup> Luke 22. 42.  
<sup>d</sup> Neither did our Saviour Christ pray without promise: for as often the Children of God to whose condition he had humbled himself have, so had he a promise of deliverance so far as the glory of God in that accomplishment of his vocation would suffer.  
<sup>e</sup> T.C. 1.3. p. 200  
<sup>f</sup> Deut. 30. 9.  
<sup>g</sup> Deut. 7. 15.  
<sup>h</sup> Psal. 1. 4.  
<sup>i</sup> Psal. 32. 11.  
<sup>j</sup> T.C. 1.3. p. 201.  
<sup>k</sup> We ought not to desire to be free from all adversity, if it be his will, considering that he hath already declared his will therein.  
<sup>l</sup> T.C. 1.3. p. 201.

<sup>m</sup> T.C. 1.3. p. 202.

<sup>n</sup> John 18. 4.

a Pſal. 40. 8.

b Job. 13. 21.

c Mat. 27. 46.

Non potius di-

vinitas huma-

nitatem &amp; se-

cundum aliquid

deſeruiſſe, &amp;

ſecundum ali-

quid non deſe-

ruiſſe? Si ſerva-

reſ proſectio-

nem, ſed non

ſeparavit uni-

tatem. Sic ergo

dereliquit ut

non aſſervaret,

ſed non dereli-

quit ut recede-

ret. Sic ergo

humanitas a

divinitate in

paſſione dereli-

cta eſt. Quam

tamen moriem

quia non pro

ſua iniquitate,

ſed pro noſtra

redemptione ſu-

ſtinuit, quare

ſi derelicta re-

quirat, non qua-

ſi a verſum De-

um ac pœna

murmurans,

ſed nobis inno-

centiam ſuam

in pœna demon-

ſtrans.

Hug. de Sacra-

lib. 2. par. 1. c. 10.

Deum mem. ut

quid dereliqui-

ſti me? Vix eſt

nec ignorantia,

nec aſſidentia,

nec querela ſed

admirationis

tantum, qua

alibi inveſti-

ganda cauſa

ardorem &amp; di-

ligentiam acu-

at.

d Job 23. 8.

which plainly teſtifieth ſo great willingneſs to avoid death? Will, whether it be in God or man, belongeth to the eſſence or nature of both. The nature therefore of God being one, there are not in God divers wills, although the God-head be in divers perſons, becauſe the power of willing is a natural, not a perſonal propriety. Contrariwiſe, the perſon of our Saviour Chriſt being but one, there are in him two wills, becauſe two natures, the nature of God, and the nature of man, which both do imply this faculty and power. So that in Chriſt there is a divine, and there is an humane will, otherwiſe he were not both God and man. Hereupon the Church hath of old condemned Monothelites as Heretikes, for holding that Chriſt had but one will. The works and operations of our Saviours humane will were all ſubject to the Will of God, and framed according to his Law, *I deſire to do thy will, O God, and thy Law is within mine heart.* Now as mans will, ſo the Will of Chriſt hath two ſeveral kinds of operation, the one natural or neceſſary, whereby it deſireth ſimply whatſoever is good in it ſelf, and ſhunneſh generally all things which hurt; the other deliberate, when we therefore embrace things as good, becauſe the eye of underſtanding judgeth them good to that end which we ſimply deſire. Thus in it ſelf we deſire health, phyſick only for healths ſake. And in this ſort ſpecial reaſon often-times cauſeth the will by choice to prefer one good thing before another, to leave one for anothers ſake, to forego meaner for the attainment of higher deſires, which our Saviour likewiſe did. Theſe different inclinations of the will conſidered, the reaſon is eaſie how in Chriſt there might grow deſires ſeeming, but being not indeed oppoſite either the one of them unto the other, or either of them to the will of God. For let the manner of his ſpeech be weighed, *My ſoul is now troubled, and what ſhould I ſay? Father ſave me out of this hour. But yet for this very cauſe I am come into this hour.* His purpoſe herein was moſt effectually to propoſe to the view of the whole world two contrary objects, the like whereunto in force and efficacy were never preſented in that manner to any but only to the Soul of Chriſt. There was preſented before his eyes in that fearful hour, on the one ſide Gods heavy indignation and wrath towards mankind as yet unappeaſed, death as yet in full ſtrength, Hell as yet never maſtered by any that came within the confines and bounds thereof, ſomewhat alſo perſonally more than is either poſſible or needful for the wit of man to find out; finally himſelf fleſh and blood left alone to enter into conflict with all theſe; on the other ſide, a World to be ſaved by One, a pacification of wrath through the dignity of that ſacrifice which ſhould be offered, a conqueſt over death through the power of that Deity which would not ſuffer the Tabernacle thereof to ſee corruption, and an utter diſappointment of all the forces of infernal powers, through the purity of that ſoul which they ſhould have in their hands and not be able to touch. Let no man marvel that in this caſe the ſoul of Chriſt was much troubled. For what could ſuch apprehenſions breed, but (as their nature is) inexplicable paſſions of mind, deſires abhorring what they embrace, and embracing what they abhor? in which Agony how ſhould the tongue go about to expreſs what the ſoul indured? When the griefs of Job were exceeding great, his words accordingly to open them were many; howbeit, till unto his ſeeming they were undiscovered; *Though my talk (ſaith Job) be this day in bitterness, yet my plague is greater than my groaning.* But here to what purpoſe ſhould words ſerve, when nature hath more to declare than groans and ſtrong cries, more than ſtreams of bloody ſweats, more than his doubted and tripled prayers can expreſs, who thrice putting forth his hand to receive that Cup, beſides which there was no other cauſe of his coming into the World, he thrice pulleth it back again, and as often even with tears of blood craveth, *if it be poſſible, O Father, or if not, even what thine own good pleaſure is,* for whoſe ſake the Paſſion that hath in it a bitter, and bloody conflict, even with Wrath and Death and Hell, is moſt welcome. Whereas therefore we find in God a will reſolved that Chriſt ſhall ſuffer; and in the humane will of Chriſt two actual deſires, the one avoiding, and the other accepting death; is that deſire which firſt declareth it ſelf by prayer, againſt that wherewith he concludeth prayer, or either of them againſt his mind to whom prayer in this caſe ſeeketh? We may judge of theſe diverſities in the will, by the like in the underſtanding. For as the intellectual part doth not croſs it ſelf, by conceiving man juſt & unjuſt, when it meaneth not the ſame man, nor by imagi-

imagining the same man learned and unlearned, if learned in one skill, and in another kind of learning unskillfull, because the parts of every true opposition do always both concern the same subject, and have reference to the same thing, sith otherwise they are but in shew opposite, and not in truth: So the will about one and the same thing may in contrary respects have contrary inclinations, and that without contrariety. The Minister of justice may, for publike example to others, virtuously will the execution of that party, whose pardon another for consanguinities sake as virtuously may desire. Consider death in it self, and nature teacheth Christ to shun it. Consider death as a mean to procure the salvation of the world, and mercy worketh in Christ all a willingness of mind towards it. Therefore in these two desires there can be no repugnant opposition: Again, compare them with the will of God, and if any opposition be, it must be only between his appointment of Christs death, and the former desire which wisheth deliverance from death. But neither is this desire opposite to the will of God. The will of God was that Christ should suffer the pains of death. Not so his will, as if the torment of innocency did in it self please and delight God, but such was his will, in regard of the end whereunto it was necessary that Christ should suffer. The death of Christ in it self therefore God willeth not, which to the end we might thereby obtain life, he both alloweth and appointeth. In like manner the Son of man endureth willingly to that purpose those grievous pains, which simply not to have shunned had been against nature, and by consequent against God. I take it therefore to be an error, that Christ either knew not what himself was to suffer, or else had forgotten the things he knew. The root of which error was an over-restrained consideration of Prayer, as though it had no other lawful use but only to serve for a chosen mean, whereby the will resolveth to seek that which the understanding certainly knoweth it shall obtain: whereas prayers, in truth, both ours are, and his were, as well sometime a presentation of meer desires, as a mean of procuring desired effects at the hands of God. We are therefore taught by his example, that the presence of dolorous and dreadful objects, even in minds most perfect, may as clouds over-cast all sensible joy; that no assurance touching future victories can make present conflicts so sweet and easie, but nature will shun and shrink from them, nature will desire ease and deliverance from oppressive burthens; that the contrary determination of God is oftentimes against the effect of this desire; yet not against the affection it self, because it is naturally in us; that in such case our prayers cannot serve us as means to obtain the thing we desire; that notwithstanding they are unto God most acceptable sacrifices, because they testify we desire nothing but at his hands, and our desires we submit with contentment to be over-ruled by his will; and in general they are not repugnant unto the natural will of God, which wisheth to the works of his own hands, in that they are his own handy-work, all happiness, although perhaps for some special cause in our own particular, a contrary determination have seemed more convenient; finally, that thus to propose our desires which cannot take such effects as we specify, shall notwithstanding otherwise procure us his heavenly grace, even as this very prayer of Christ obtained Angels to be sent him as comforters in his Agony. And according to this example we are not afraid to present unto God our prayers for those things, which that he will perform unto us we have no sure nor certain knowledge. St. Pauls Prayer for the Church of Corinth was, that they might not do any evil, although he knew that no man liveth which sinneth not, although he knew that in this life we always must pray, <sup>d</sup> Forgive us our sins. It is our frailty, that in many things we all do amiss; but a virtue, that we would do amiss in nothing; and a testimony of that virtue, when we pray, that what occasion of sin soever do offer it self, we may be strengthened from above to withstand it. They pray in vain to have sin pardoned, which seek not also to prevent sin by prayer, even every particular sin, by prayer against all sin, except men can name some transgression wherewith we ought to have truce. For in very deed although we cannot be free from all sin collectively, in such sort that do part thereof shall be found inherent in us, yet distributively at the least all great and grievous actual offences, as they offer themselves one by one, both may and ought to be by all means avoided. So that in this sence to be preserved from all sin is not impossible. Finally, concerning deliverance it

2 Esd. 53. 10.  
Job 10. 15.

1 Thim. 2. 12.  
2 Cor. 13. 7.

d We may not  
pray in this life  
to be free from  
all sin, because  
we must always  
pray, Forgive  
us our sins.  
2 Cor. 13. 7.



self from all adversity, we use not to say men are in adversity whensoever they feel any small hinderance of their well-fare in this World, but when some notable affliction or cross, some great calamity or trouble befalleth them. Tribulation hath in it divers circumstances, they mind sundry faculties to apprehend them: It offereth sometime it self to the lower powers of the soul as a most unpleasant spectacle to the higher, sometimes as drawing after it a train of dangerous inconveniences, sometime as bringing with it remedies for the curing of sundry evils, as Gods instrument of revenge and fury sometime, sometime as a rod of his just, yet moderate ire and displeasure, sometime, as matter for them that spitefully hate us to exercise their poysoned malice, sometime as a furnace of tryal for vertue to shew it self, and through conflict to obtain glory. Which different contemplations of adversity do work for the most part their answerable effects. Adversity either apprehended by sense as a thing offensive and grievous to nature; or by reason conceived as a snare, an occasion of many mens falling from God, a sequel of Gods indignation and wrath, a thing which Satan desireth, and would be glad to behold; tribulation thus considered being present causeth sorrow, and being imminent breedeth fear. For moderation of which two affections growing from the very natural bitterness and gall of adversity, the Scripture much alledgeth contrary fruits, which affliction likewise hath whensoever it falleth on them that are tractable, the grace of Gods holy Spirit concurring therewith. But when the Apostle Saint Paul teacheth, that every one which will live godly in Christ Jesus must suffer persecution, and by many tribulations we enter into the Kingdome of Heaven, because in a forrest of many Wolves Sheep cannot choose but feed in continual danger of life; or when Saint James exhorteth to account it a matter of exceeding joy when we fall into divers temptations, because by the tryal of faith, patience is brought forth; was it, suppose we, their meaning to frustrate our Lords admonition, *Pray that ye enter not into temptation*? when himself pronounceth them blessed that should for his Name sake be subject to all kinds of ignominy and opprobrious malediction, was it his purpose that no man should ever pray with David, *Lord, remove from me, shame and contempt*? In those tribulations, saith Saint Augustine, *which may hurt as well as profit, we must say with the Apostle, What we should ask as we ought, we know not; yet because they are tough, because they are grievous, because the sense of our weakness flieeth them, we pray according to the general desire of the will of man, that God would turn them away from us, owing in the mean while this devotion to the Lord our God, that if he remove them not, yet we do not therefore imagine our selves in his sight despised, but rather with godly sufferance of evils, expect greater good at his merciful hands. For thus is vertue in weakness perfected.* To the flesh (as the Apostle himself granteth) all affliction is naturally grievous. Therefore nature which causeth to fear, teacheth to pray against all adversity. Prosperity in regard of our corrupt inclination to abuse the blessings of Almighty God, doth prove for the most part a thing dangerous to the souls of men. Very ease it self is death to the wicked, and the prosperity of fools slayeth them. Few men there are which long prosper and sin not. Howbeit even as these ill effects, although they be very usual and common, are no barre to the hearty prayers, whereby most vertuous minds with peace and prosperity always where they love, because they consider that this in it self is a thing naturally desired: So because all adversity is in it self against nature, what should hinder to pray against it, although the providence of God turn it of en unto the great good of many men? Such Prayers of the Church to be delivered from all adversity, are no more repugnant to any reasonable disposition of mens minds towards death, much less to that blessed patience and meek contentment which Saints by heaven'y inspiration have to endure, (what cross or calamity soever it pleaseth God to lay upon them) than our Lord and Saviours own Prayer before his Passion was repugnant unto his most gracious resolution to dye for the sins of the whole World.

a Psal. 119. 91.  
b 1 Tim. 3. 12.  
Top. against  
persecution is  
contrary to  
that word  
which saith,  
that every one  
which will live  
godly in Christ  
Jesus, must suf-  
fer persecution.  
T.C. l. 3. p. 100.  
c James 1. 3.  
d Psal. 119. 12.  
e Aug. Epist.  
121. cap. 14.

f Prov. 1. 32.

Prayer that all  
men may find  
mercy, and of  
the will of God  
that all men  
might be saved.

49. In praying for deliverance from all adversitie, we seek that which nature doth wish to it self; but by intreating for mercy towards all, we declare that affection wherewith Christian Charity thirsteth after the good of

of the whole World, we discharge that duty which the <sup>a</sup> Apostle himself doth im- <sup>a 1 Tim. 2.3.</sup>  
 pose on the Church of Christ as a commendable office, a sacrifice acceptable in Gods  
 sight, a service according to his heart, whose desire is to have all men saved; a work  
 most fureable with his purpose, who gave himself to be the price of redemption for  
 all, and a forcible meane to procure the conversion of all such as are not yet acquaint-  
 ed with the mysteries of that truth which must save their souls. Against it there is  
 but the bare shew of this one impediment, that all mens salvation, and many mens  
 eternal condemnation or death, are things the one repugnant to the other, that  
 both cannot be brought to pass; that we know there are vessels of wrath to whom  
 God will never extend mercy, and therefore that wittingly we ask an impossible  
 thing to be had. The truth is, that as life and death, mercy and wrath, are matters  
 of meer understanding or knowledge, all mens salvation and some mens endless  
 perdition are things so opposit, that whosoever doth affirm the one, must necessa-  
 rily deny the other; God himself cannot effect both, or determine that both shall  
 be. There is in the knowledge both of God and man this certainty, that life and  
 death have divided between them the whole body of mankind. What portion ei-  
 ther of the two hath, God himself knoweth; for us he hath left no sufficient  
 means to comprehend, and for that cause neither given any leave to search in par-  
 ticular who are infallibly the heirs of the Kingdom of God, who cast-aways. How-  
 beit concerning the state of all men with whom we live (for only of them our pray-  
 ers are meant) we may till the Worlds end, for the present, always presume, that as  
 far as in us there is power to discern what others are, and as far as any duty of ours  
 dependeth upon the notice of their condition in respect of God, the safest axiomes  
 for Charity to rest it self upon are these; *He which believeth already, is;* and  
*He which believeth not as yet, may be the Child of God.* <sup>b</sup> It becometh not us during <sup>b siden. Apost.</sup>  
 life altogether to condemn any man, seeing that (for any thing we know) there is hope <sup>lib. 6. Epist.</sup>  
 of every mans forgiveness, the possibility of whose repentance is not yet cut off by death.  
 And therefore charity which <sup>c</sup> hopeth all things, prayeth also for all men. Where-  
 fore to let go personal knowledge touching vessels of wrath and mercy, what they <sup>c 1 Cor. 13.7.</sup>  
 are inwardly in the sight of God it shilleth not, for us there is cause sufficient in all  
 men whereupon to ground our prayers unto God in their behalf. For whatsoever the  
 mind of man apprehendeth as good, the will of charity and love is to have it inlar-  
 ged in the very uttermost extent, that all may enjoy it to whom it can any way  
 adde perfection. Because therefore the farther a good thing doth reach, the nobler  
 and worthier we reckon it, our prayers for all mens good, no less than for our own,  
 the Apostle with very fit terms commendeth as being *καλόν*, a work commendable  
 for the largeness of the affection from whence it springeth, even as theirs, <sup>d Rom. 9.3.</sup>  
 have requested at Gods hands the salvation of many with the loss of their own  
 souls, drowning as it were and over-whelming themselves in the abundance of their  
 love towards others, is proposed as being in regard of the rareness of such affecti-  
 ons *ὑπερκαλόν*, more than excellent. But this extraordinary height of desire after  
 other mens salvation is no common mark. The other is a duty which belongeth  
 unto all and prevaieth with God daily. For as it is in it self good, so God accepteth  
 and taketh it in very good part at the hands of faithful men. Our prayers for all  
 men do include both them that shall find mercy, and them also that shall find  
 none. For them that shall, no man will doubt but our prayers are both accepted  
 and granted. Touching them for whom we crave that mercy which is not to be ob-  
 tained, let us not think that <sup>e</sup> our Saviour did mis-instruct his Disciples, willing  
 them to pray for the peace even of such as should be incapable of so great a ble- <sup>e Mat. 10.11.12</sup>  
 sing; or that the Prayers of the <sup>f</sup> Prophet Jeremy offended God, because the an- <sup>f Jer. 15.1.</sup>  
 swer of God was a resolute denial of favour to them for whom supplication was  
 made. And if any man doubt how God should accept such prayers in case they be  
 opposite to his Will, or not grant them if they be according unto that which him-  
 self willeth, our answer is, that such sures God accepteth, in that they are conforma-  
 ble unto his general inclination, which is that all men might be saved; yet always  
 he granteth them not, for as much as there is in God sometimes a more private oc-  
 casioned will which determineth the contrary. So that the other being the rule of  
 our actions; and not this, our requests for things opposite to this Will of God are  
 not

not therefore the less gracious in his sight. There is no doubt but we ought in all things to frame our wills to the Will of God, and that otherwise in whatsoever we do we sin. For of our selves being so apt to erre, the only way which we have to fireighten our paths, is by following the rule of his will, whose footsteps naturally are right. If the eye, the hand, or the foot, do that which the will commandeth, though they serve as instruments to sin, yet is sin the Commanders fault and not theirs, because Nature hath absolutely and without exception made them subjects to the will of man which is Lord over them: As the body is subject to the will of man, so is mans will to the Will of God; for so it behoveth that the better should guide and command the worse. But because the subjection of the body to the will is by natural necessity, the subjection of the will unto God voluntary; we therefore stand in need of direction after what sort our wills and desires may be rightly conformed to his. Which is not done by willing always the self-same thing that God intendeth. For it may chance that his purpose is sometime the speedy death of them, whose long continuance in life if we should not wish we were unnatural. When the object or matter therefore of our desires is (as in this case) a thing both good of it self, and not forbidden of God; when the end for which we desire it is virtuous and apparently most holy; when the root from which our affection towards it proceedeth, is Charity; piety that which we do in declaring our desire by prayer; yea over and besides all this, sith we know that to pray for all men living, is but to shew the same affection which towards every of them our Lord Jesus

*a Propterea nihil contrarium erat si Christus homo secundum affectum pietatis quam in humanitate sua assumpsit attulit volebat, quod tamen secundum voluntatem divinam, in qua cum patre omnia disponerebat futurum non esse praecebat, quia hoc ad veram humanitatem pertinebat, ut pietate moveretur, & hoc ad veram divinitatem, ut a sua dispositione non moveretur. Hug. de quat. b Prosp. de vocat. Gen. l. 1. c. 4. inter opera Ambros.*

Christ hath born, who knowing only as God who are his, did<sup>a</sup> as man taste death for the good of all men; surely to that will of God which ought to be and is the known rule of all our actions, we do not herein oppose our selves, although his secret determination lieth by against us; which if we did understand, as we do not, yet to rest contented with that which God will have done, is as much as he requireth at the hands of men. And concerning our selves what we earnestly crave in this case, the same, as all things else of like condition, we meekly submit unto his most gracious will and pleasure. Finally, as we have cause sufficient why to think the practice of our Church allowable in this behalf, so neither is ours the first which hath been of that mind. For to end with the words<sup>b</sup> of Prosper, *This Law of supplication for all men* (saith he) *the devout zeal of all Priests and all faithful men doth hold with such full agreement, that there is not any part of all the World where Christian people do not use to pray in the same manner. The Church every where maketh prayers unto God not only for Saints, and such as already in Christ are regenerated, but for all Infidels and enemies of the Cross of Jesus Christ, for all Idolaters, for all that persecute Christ in his followers, for Jews to whose blindness the light of the Gospel doth not yet shine, for Heretiques and Schismatiques, who from the unity of faith and charity are estranged. And for such what doth the Church ask of God but this, that leaving their errors they may be converted unto him, that faith and charity may be given them, and that out of the darkness of ignorance they may come to the knowledge of his truth? Which because they cannot themselves do in their own behalf, as long as the sway of evil custom over beareth them, and the chains of Sarian detain them bound, neither are they able to break thorough those errors wherein they are so determinately settled, that they pay unto falsity the whole sum of whatsoever love is owing unto Gods Truth, our Lord merciful and just requireth to have all men prayed for, that when we behold innumerable multitudes drawn up from the depth of so bottomless evils; we may not doubt but (in part) God hath done the thing we requested; nor despair, but that being thank full for them towards whom already he hath shewed mercy, the rest which are not as yet enlightened, shall before they pass out of life be made partakers of the like grace. Or if the grace of him which saveth [for so we see it falleth out] over-pass some, so that the Prayer of the Church for them be not received, this we may leave to the hidden Judgments of Righteousness, and acknowledge that in that secret there is a Gulf, which while we live we shall never sound.*

Of the name,  
the Author,  
and the force  
of Sacraments,

30 Instruction and Prayer, whercof we have hitherto spoken, are duties which serve as Elements, Parts or Principles to the rest that follow, in which number the

of Sacraments, which force consisteth in this, that God hath ordained them as means to make us partakers of him in Christ, and of life through Christ.

SACRA-





- Now when God became man, lest we should erre in applying this to the person of the Father, or of the Spirit, Saint *Peter's* Confession unto Christ was, Thou art the Son of the Living God; and Saint *John's* Exposition thereof was made plain, and that it is the Word which was made flesh. *The Father, and the holy Ghost (saith Damascen) have no communion with the Incarnation of the Word, otherwise than onely by approbation and assent.* Notwithstanding, forasmuch as the Word and Deity are one subject, wee must beware wee exclude not the Nature of God from incarnation, and so make the Son of God incarnate not to be very God. For undoubtedly even the Nature of God it self in the onely person of the Son is incarnate, and hath taken to it self flesh. Wherefore Incarnation may neither be granted to any person but onely one, nor yet denied to that nature which is common unto all three. Concerning the cause of which incomprehensible Mystery, for as much as it seemeth a thing unconsionant, that the world should honour any other as the Saviour, but him whom it honoureth as the Creatour of the World, and in the Wisdom of God it hath not been thought convenient to admit any way of saving man but by man himself, though nothing should be spoken of the love and mercy of God towards man, which this way are become such a spectacle, as neither men nor Angels can behold without a kind of heavenly astonishment, we may hereby perceive there is cause sufficient why divine Nature should assume Humane, that so God might be in Christ reconciling to himself the World. And if some cause be likewise required, why rather to this end and purpose the Son, than either the Father, or the Holy Ghost, should be made man, could we which are born the children of wrath, be adopted the Sons of God through grace, any other than the natural Son of God being Mediatour between God and us? It became therefore him by whom all things are to be the way of salvation to all, that the institution and restitution of the World might be both wrought by one hand. The Worlds Salvation was without the Incarnation of the Son of God a thing impossible; not simply impossible, but impossible, it being presupposed that the Will of God was no otherwise to have it saved than by the death of his own Son. Wherefore taking to himself our flesh, and by his Incarnation making it his own flesh, he had now of his own, although from us, what to offer unto God for us. And as Christ took Manhood, that by it he might be capable of death whereunto he humbled himself, so because Manhood is the proper subject of compassion and feeling pity, which maketh the Scepter of Christs Regency even in the Kingdome of Heaven amiable, he which without our Nature could not on Earth suffer for the sins of the World, doth now also by means thereof both make intercession to God for sinners, and exercise dominion over all men with a true, a natural, and a sensible touch of mercy.
52. It is not in mans ability either to expresse perfectly, or conceive the manner how this was brought to passe. But the strength of our Faith is tryed by those things wherein our wits and capacities are not strong. Howbeit because this Divine Mystery is more true than plain, divers having framed the same to their own conceits and fancies, are found in their expositions thereof more plain than true: In so much that by the space of five hundred years after Christ, the Church was almost troubled with nothing else, saving only with care and travel to preserve this Article from the sinister construction of Hereticks. Whose first mists when the light of the *Nicene* Council had dispelled, it was not long ere *Macedonius* transferred unto God; most Holy Spirit the same blasphemy, wherewith *Arrius* had already dishonoured his coeternally begotten Son; not long ere *Apollinaris* began to pare away from Christs humanity. In refutation of which impieties when the Fathers of the Church, *Athanasius, Basil,* and the two *Gregories*, had by their painful travels sufficiently cleared the truth, no less for the Deity of the Holy Ghost, than for the compleat humanity of Christ, there followed hereupon a final conclusion, whereby those Controversies, is also the rest which *Paulus Samosatenus, Sabellius, Photinus, Arius, Eunomius,* together with the whole swarme of pestilent *Demi-arians*, had from time to time stirred up since the Council of *Nice*, were both privately, first

at Rome in a smaller Synod, and then <sup>a</sup> at Constantinople in a general famous Assen- Anno D. 381.  
bly brought to a peaceable and quiet end, seven-score Bishops and ten agreeing in  
that Confession, which by them set down, remaineth at this present hour, a part of  
our Church Liturgy, a Memorial of their fidelity and zeal, a sovereign preservative  
of Gods people from the venomous infection of heresie. Thus in Christ the verity  
of God, and the compleat substance of man, were with full agreement established  
throughout the World, till such time as the Heresie of Nestorius broached it self,  
<sup>b</sup> dividing Christ into two persons, the Son of God, and the Son of man, the one a person  
begotten of God before all Worlds, the other also a person born of the Virgin Mary,  
and in special favour chosen to be made intire to the Son of God above all men, so that  
whoever will honour God, must together honour Christ, with whose person God hath  
vouchsafed to joyn himself in so high a degree of gracious respect and favour. But  
that the self-same person, which verily is man, should properly be God alio, and  
that by reason not of two persons linked in amity, but of two natures, Humane  
and Divine, conjoynd in one and the same Person, the God of glory may be said  
as well to have suffered death, as to have raised the dead from their graves; the Son  
of man as well to have made, as to have redeemed the World, Nestorius in no case  
would admit. That which deceived him, was want of heed to the first beginning of  
that admirable combination of God with man. The Word (saith S. John) was made  
flesh, and dwelt <sup>c</sup> in us. The Evangelist useth the plural number, Men for Manhood,  
as for the nature whereof we consist, even as the Apostle denying the Assumption  
of Angelical nature, saith likewise in the plural number, he took not <sup>d</sup> Angels, but  
the seed of Abraham. It pleased not the Word or Wisdom of God, to take to it  
self some one person amongst men, for then should that one have been advanced  
which was assumed, and no more; but Wisdom, to the end she might save many,  
built her House of that nature which is common unto all, she made not this or that  
man her Habitation, but dwelt in us. The Seeds of Herbs and Plants at the first are  
not in act, but in possibility, that which they afterwards grow to be. If the Son of  
God had taken to himself a man now made and already perfected, it would of neces-  
sity follow that there are in Christ two persons, the one assuming, and the other assu-  
med, whereas the Son of God did not assume a mans person unto his own, but  
a mans nature to his own person, and therefore took *semen*, the seed of Abraham,  
the very first original Element of our nature, <sup>e</sup> before it was come to have any per-  
sonal Humane subsistence. The flesh and the conjunction of the flesh with God be-  
gan both at one instant; his making, and taking to himself our flesh was but one act,  
so that in Christ there is no personal subsistence but one, and that from everlasting.  
By taking onely the nature of man, he still continueth on: person, and changeth  
but the manner of his subsisting, which was before in the meer glory of the Son of  
God, and is now in the habit of our flesh. For as much therefore as Christ hath no  
personal subsistence but one whereby we acknowledge him to have been eternally  
the Son of God, we must of necessity apply to the *person* of the Son of God, even  
that which is spoken of Christ according to his humane nature. For example, accord-  
ing to the flesh he was born of the Virgin Mary, baptized of John in the River  
Jordan, by Pilate adjudged to dye, and executed by the Jews: We cannot say  
properly that the Virgin bore, or John did baptize, or Pilate condemn, or the Jews  
crucifie the nature of man, because these are all personal Attributes, his person is  
the subject which receiveth them, his nature that which maketh his person capable  
or apt to receive. If we should say that the person of a man in our Saviour Christ  
was the subject of these things, this were plainly to intrap our selves in the very  
snare of the Nestorians Heresie, between whom and the Church of God there  
was no difference, saving only that Nestorius imagined in Christ as well a personal  
Humane subsistence, as a Divine, the Church acknowledging a substance both Di-  
vine and Humane, but no other personal subsistence than Divine, because the Son  
of God took not to himself a mans person, but the nature onely of a man. Christ  
is a person both Divine and Humane, howbeit not therefore two persons in one,  
neither both these in one sence, but a person Divine, because he is personally the  
Son of God, Humane, because he hath really the nature of the children of men.  
In Christ therefore God and Man, there is (saith <sup>f</sup> Paschasius) a two-fold substance,  
not

b Οὐκ ἔστι τὸ  
ἕν ἡμῶν.  
Cyril. Epist. ad  
Eulog.

c Οὐκ ἔστι τὸ  
ἕν ἡμῶν τὸ  
ἀνθρώπου, ἀλλὰ  
τὸ τοῦ Θεοῦ.

d Ἐν ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἁγίας  
καὶ θεῆς  
ἐκκλησίας.

e Ἐν ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἁγίας  
καὶ θεῆς  
ἐκκλησίας.

f Leon. de Sect.  
c. 1. de Sect.  
d. 1. de Sect.

g Ἐν ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἁγίας  
καὶ θεῆς  
ἐκκλησίας.

h Ἐν ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἁγίας  
καὶ θεῆς  
ἐκκλησίας.

i Ἐν ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἁγίας  
καὶ θεῆς  
ἐκκλησίας.

j Ἐν ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἁγίας  
καὶ θεῆς  
ἐκκλησίας.

k Ἐν ἡμῖν, ἀλλὰ τὸ  
ἐκ τῆς ἁγίας  
καὶ θεῆς  
ἐκκλησίας.



not a two fold person, because one person distinguisheth another, whereas one nature cannot in another become extinct. For the personal being which the Son of God already had, suffered not the substance to be personal which he took, although together with the nature which he had, the nature also which he took continueth. Whereupon it followeth against *Nestorius*, that no person was born of the Virgin but the Son of God, no person but the Son of God baptized, the Son of God condemned, the Son of God and no other person crucified, which one onely point of Christian Belief, the infinite worth of the Son of God, is the very ground of all things believed concerning life and salvation, by that which Christ either did or suffered as man in our behalf. But for as much as Saint *Cyril*, the chiefest of those two hundred Bishops assembled in the Council of *Ephesus* where the Heretic of *Nestorius* was condemned, had in his Writings against the *Arrians* avouched, that the Word or *Wisdom* of God hath but one nature which is eternal, and whereunto he assumed flesh (for the *Arrians* were of opinion, that besides Gods own eternal *Wisdom* there is a *Wisdom* which God created before all things, to the end he might thereby create all things else, and that this created *Wisdom* was the Word which took flesh.) Again, for as much as the same *Cyril* had given instance in the body and the soul of man no farther than onely to enforce by example against *Nestorius*, that a visible, and an invisible, a mortal and an immortal substance may united make one person, the words of *Cyril* were in process of time so taken, as though it had been his drift to reach, that even as in us the body and the Soul, so in Christ, God and man make but one nature. Of which error, six hundred and thirty Fathers in the Council of *Chalcedon* condemned *Eutiches*. For as *Nestorius* teaching rightly that God and man are distinct Natures, did thereupon mis-inferre that in Christ those natures can by no conjunction make one person; so *Eutiches* of sound belief, as touching their true personal copulation became unsound, by denying the difference which still continueth between the one and the other nature. We must therefore keep warily a middle course, shunning both that distraction of persons wherein *Nestorius* went awry, and also this later confusion of natures which deceived *Eutiches*: These natures from the moment of their first combination have been and are for ever inseparable. For even when his Soul forsook the Tabernacle of his Body, his Deity forsook neither Body nor Soul. If it had, then could we not truly hold either that the person of Christ was buried, or that the person of Christ did raise up it self from the dead. For the Body separated from the Word, can in no true sence be termed the Person of Christ; nor is it true, to say that the Son of God in raising up that Body did raise up himself, if the Body were not both with him and of him, even during the time it lay in the Sepulchre. The like is also to be said of the Soul, otherwise we are plainly and inevitably *Nestorians*. The very person of Christ therefore for ever one and the self-same, was onely touching bodily substance concluded within the Grave, his Soul onely from thence severed, but by personal union, his Deity still inseparably joyned with both.

Anno D. 431.

Anno D. 451.

ε' Αχάριος  
σημαίνει τὴν  
σάρκα εἶναι  
τὴν θεῶν φύ-  
σιν διὰ τὴν φύ-  
σιν καὶ τὴν σάρκα  
καὶ τὴν φύσιν  
Theodor. Dial.  
Aristot.

That by the union of the one with the other nature in Christ, there groweth neither gain nor loss of essential properties to either.

δ Ταύτα γὰρ  
τα εἰρησώ-  
ματα εἰς αὐτὸν  
τοῦ εὐαγγελί-  
ου.  
Iren. lib. 3. ad-  
versus haer.

53. The sequel of which conjunction of natures in the person of Christ, is no abolishment of natural properties appertaining to either substance, no transmigration thereof out of one substance into another; finally, no such mutual infusion as really causeth the same natural operations or properties to be made common unto both substances; but whatsoever is natural to Deity, the same remaineth in Christ uncommunicated unto his Manhood, and whatsoever natural to Manhood, his Deity thereof is incapable. The true properties and operations of his Deity are, to know that which is not possible for created natures to comprehend; to be simply the highest cause of all things, the well-spring of immortality and life; to have neither end nor beginning of dayes; to be every where present, and inclosed no where, to be subject to no alteration nor passion; to produce of it self these effects which cannot proceed but from infinite Majesty and Power. The true properties and operations of his Manhood are such, as *Irenaeus* reckoneth up, If Christ (saith he) had not taken flesh from the very earth, he would not have coveted those earthly nourishments wherewith bodies which he taken from thence are fed. This was the nature which felt hunger after long fasting, was desirous of rest after travel, restless compassion and love by tears, groined in heaviness, and with extremity of grief even

*even melted away it self into bloody sweats.* To Christ we ascribe both working of Wonders and suffering of pains, we use concerning him, speeches as well of Humility as of Divine Glory, but the one we apply unto that nature which he took of the Virgin Mary, the other to that which was in the beginning. We may not therefore imagine that the properties of the weaker nature have vanished with the presence of the more glorious, and have been therein swallowed up as in a Gulf. We dare not in this point give ear to them, who over-boldly affirm, that *The nature which Christ took weak and feeble from us by being mingled with Deity became the same which Deity is, that the assumption of our substance unto his was like the blending of a drop of Vinegar with the huge Ocean, wherein although it continue still, yet not with those properties which severed it hath, because substance the instant of their conjunction, all distinction and difference of the one from the other is extirped; and whatsoever we can now conceive of the Son of God, is nothing else but meer Deity:* which words are so plain and direct for Eutiches, that I stand in doubt they are not his whose name they carry. Sure I am they are far from truth, and must of necessity give place to the better advised sentences of other men. *He which in himself was appointed* (saith Hilary) *a Mediator to save his Church, and for performance of that mystery of mediation between God and Man is become God and Man, doth now being but one, consist of both those natures united, neither hath he through the union of both incurred the damage or loss of either, lest by being born a Man, we should think he hath given over to be God; or that because he continued God, therefore he cannot be Man also;* whereas the true belief which maketh a man happy, proclaimeth joyntly God and Man, confesseth the Word and Flesh together. Cyril more plainly, *His two natures have knit themselves the one to the other, and are in that nearness as incapable of confusion, as of distraction. Their coherency hath not taken away the difference between them, Flesh is not become God, but doth still continue flesh, although it be now the flesh of God. Yea, of each substance* (saith Leo) *the properties are all preserved and kept safe.* These two natures are as causes and original grounds of all things which Christ hath done. Wherefore some things he doth as God, because his Deity alone is the well-spring from which they flow; some things as Man, because they issue from his meer humane nature, some things joyntly as both God and Man, because both natures concur as principles thereunto. For albeit the properties of each nature do cleave only to that nature whereof they are properties, and therefore Christ cannot naturally be as God, the same which he naturally is as Man, yet both natures may very well concur unto one effect, and Christ in that respect be truly said to work both as God and as Man, one: and the self-same thing. Let us therefore set it down for a rule or principle so necessary, as nothing more, to the plain deciding of all doubts and questions about the union of natures in Christ, that of both natures there is a co-operation often, an association always, but never any mutual participation, whereby the properties of the one are infused into the other. Which rule must serve for the better understanding of that which Damascene hath touching cross and circulatory speeches, wherein there are attributed to God such things as belong to Manhood, and to Man such as properly concern the Deity of Christ Jesus, the cause whereof is the association of natures in one subject. A kind of mutual commutation there is, whereby those concreta names, God and Man, when we speak of Christ, do take interchangeably one anothers room, so that for truth of speech it skilleth not whether we say that the Son of God hath created the World, and the Son of man by his death hath saved it, or else that the Son of man did create, and the Son of God die to save the World. Howbeit, as oft as we attribute to God what the Man-hood of Christ claimeth, or to Man what his Deity hath right unto, we understand by the name of God, and the name of Man, neither the one nor the other nature, but the whole person of Christ in whom both natures are. When the Apostle saith of the Jews, that they crucified the Lord of glory, and when the Son of man, being on earth, affirmeth that the Son of Man was in Heaven at the same instant, there is in these two speeches that mutual circulation before

fuit alteri proprietates impartire, enunciando videlicet, idque non in abstracto sed in concreto salum, divinus homini, non humanitati humanæ, non Deitati sed Deo tribui. Cujus hoc est ratio, quia cum suppositum predicatum sit ejusmodi ut utramque naturam in se continet, sive ab una sive ab altera denominetur, nihil refert.

Hh

mentioned.

\* 1 Cor. 2. 8.  
\* John 3. 13.

b Overbid  
de xalard  
d'vri & Sab-  
teta. Greg.  
Nyss. de secta-  
tor.  
Apollinar. Ep.  
ad Flavio.

What Christ  
hath obtained  
according to  
the flesh, by the  
union of his  
flesh with  
Deity.

d Nativitas Dei non potest non eam ex qua profecta est te-  
nere naturam. Neq; enim aliud quam Deus subsistit qui non  
aliunde quam ex Deo Deus subsistit Hil. de Trin. lib. 4.  
Cum sit gloria sempiternitate, virtute, regno, potestate hoc  
quod pater est, omnia tamen hoc non sine auctore sicut pater,  
sive ex patre tanquam filius sine initio & aequalis habet.  
Ruffin. in Symb. Apost. cap. 9. Filium aliunde non deducit,  
sed de substantia patris omnem à patre consecutum potestate,  
Tertul. Contra Prax. d. Ephes. 1. 15. αὐτὸν ἀπαρτίστα,  
quicquid alteri quovismodo dat esse. c. 1ac. 1. 17. Pater lū-  
minum visū ē & ἀπαρτίστα & ἀχώρητος. Pachym. in Dio-  
nyl. de Coel. Hier. c. 1. Pater est principium totius divini-  
tatis quia ipsa à nullo est. Non enim habet de quo procedat,  
sed ab eo & filium est genitus, & Spiritus sanctus procedit,  
Aug. de Trin. l. 4. c. 20. Hinc Christus deitatis loco nomen  
ubique patris usurpat, quia pater nimirum est ἀρχαία  
Deitas. i. Pater tota substantia est, filius vero derivatio  
totius & propagatio. Tert. cont. Prax. 9. Quod enim Deus  
est, ex Deo est, Hil. de Trin. lib. 5. Nihil nisi natum habet  
filium. Hil. lib. 4. h' ἀρχαία ἀπαρτίστα & ἀχώρητος. Heb. 1. 1. Ἐξ  
ἀπρόβητου τῆς οὐρανοῦ καὶ γῆς ἀειδὸν ἀκίνητος, ἀ-  
χώρητος πατρὶς αἰῶνος. Sop. 7. 25, 26. i. Nihil in se di-  
versum ac dissimile habent natum & generans. Hil. de Syn.  
A. lver. Aria. In Trinitate alius atque alius, non aliud atq;  
aliud, Vincent. Lyr. ca. 19. k ubi auctor aeternus est, ibi &  
nativitatis aeternitas est: quia sicut nativitas ab auctore est  
ita & ab aeterni auctore aeterna nativitas est, Hil. de Trin.  
lib. 1. sicut naturam praeferat filio sine initio generatio:  
ita Spiritui sancto praeferat essentiam sine initio processio,  
Aug. de Trin. lib. 5. cap. 15. l 'Ὁσα λέγει ὁ πατὴρ ὅτι  
ἐλάβη οὐκ ἴδεν & ἰδὲ ἀέδωκε. Ἰδὲ τὸ αὐτὸ ἐρωτῶν τῆς αὐ-  
τοῦ λέγει ὁ πατὴρ ἀπάντηται, Theodoret. sol. 42. & ex Greg.  
Naz. Orem. 2. de fil. libid. 44.

m John 3. 35.  
n Eph. 1. 5.  
o Phil. 2. 9.  
p John 5. 26.  
q 1 John 5. 20.  
Hic est verus  
Deus, & vita  
aeterna.  
r John 4. 10.

mentioned. In the one there is attributed to God, or the \* Lord of glory, death, whereof divine nature is not capable; in the other ubiquitie unto \* Man, which humane nature admitteth not. Therefore by the Lord of glory we must needs understand the whole person of Christ, who being Lord of glory was indeed crucified, but not in that nature for which he is termed the Lord of glory. In like manner, by the Son of man the whole person of Christ must necessarily be meant, who being man upon earth, filled Heaven with his glorious presence, but not according to that nature for which the title of man is given him. Without this caution the Fathers whose belief was sincere, and their meaning most sound, shall seem in their writings one to deny what another constantly doth affirm. Theodoret disputeth with great earnestness, that God cannot be said to suffer. But he thereby meaneth Christ's divine nature against \* Apollinaris, which held even Deity it self passible. Cyril on the other side against Nestorius as much contendeth, that whosoever will deny very God to have suffered death, doth forsake the faith. Which notwithstanding to hold, were heresie, if the name of God in this assertion did not import, as it doth, the person of Christ, who being verily God suffered death, but in the flesh, and not in that substance for which the name of God is given him.

54 If then both natures do remain with their properties in Christ thus distinct as hath been shewed, we are for our better understanding what either nature receiveth from other, to note, that Christ is by three degrees a receiver; first, in that he is the Son of God; secondly, in that his humane nature hath had the honour of union with Deity bestowed upon it; thirdly, in that by means thereof sundry eminent graces have flowed as effects from Deity into that nature which is coupled

with it. On Christ therefore is bestowed the gift of eternal Generation, the gift of Union, and the gift of unction. By the gift of eternal Generation Christ hath received of the Father one & in number the self same substance, which the Father hath of himself, unreceived from any other. For every \* beginning is a Father unto that which cometh of it; and every Off-spring is a Son unto that out of which it groweth. Seeing therefore the Father alone is \* originally that Deity which Christ originally is not (for Christ is God \* by being of God, light \* by issuing out of light) it followeth hereupon, that whatsoever Christ hath common unto him with his heavenly Father, the same of necessity must be given him, but naturally and \* eternally given, not bestowed by way of benevolence and favour, as the other gifts both are. And therefore \* where the Fathers give it out for a rule, that whatsoever Christ is said in Scripture to have received, the same we ought to apply only to the Manhood of Christ: their Assertion is true of all things which Christ hath received by grace; but to that which he hath received of the Father by eternal nativity or birth, it reacheth not. Touching union of Deity with Manhood, it is by grace, because there can be no greater grace shewed towards man, then that God should vouchsafe to unite to mans nature

the Person of his only begotten Son. Because the Father \* loveth the Son as Man, he hath by uniting Deity with Manhood, given all things into his hands. It hath \* pleased the Father that in him all fulness should dwell. The name which he hath above all names is \* given him. As the Father hath life in himself, the Son in himself hath life also by the \* gift of the Father. The gift whereby God hath made Christ a Fountain of life, is, that \* conjunction of the nature of God with the nature of Man, in the person of Christ, \* which gift (saith Christ to the Woman of Samaria) if thou didst know, and in that respect understand, who it is which asketh water of thee



thee, thou wouldest ask of him, that he might give thee living Water. The Union therefore of the Flesh with Deity, is to *that flesh* a gift of principal grace and favour. For by virtue of this grace, Man is really made God, a creature is exalted above the dignity of all creatures, and hath all creatures else under it. This admirable union of God with Man can inforce in this higher nature 'no alteration, because unto God there is nothing more natural than not to be subject to any change. Neither is it a thing impossible, that the Word being made flesh, should be that which it was not before, as touching the manner of subsistence, and yet continue in all qualities or properties of nature the same it was, because th: Incarnation of the Son of God consisteth *merely in the union* of Natures, which union doth adde perfection to the Weaker, to the Nobler no alteration at all. If therefore it be demanded what the Person of the Son of God hath attained by assuming Manhood; surely, the whole sum of all is this, to be as we are, truly, really, and naturally man, by means whereof he is made capable of meaner offices, than otherwise his Person could have admitted, the only gain he thereby purchased for himself, was to be capable of loss and detriment for the good of others. But may it rightly be said concerning the Incarnation of Jesus Christ, that as our nature hath in no respect changed his, so from his to ours as little alteration hath ensued? The very cause of his taking upon him our nature, was to change it, to better the quality, and to advance the condition thereof, although in no sort to abolish the substance which he took; nor to infuse into it the natural forces and properties of his Deity. As therefore we have shewed how the Son of God by his Incarnation hath changed the manner of that personal subsistence which before was solitary, and is now in the association of flesh, no alteration thereby accruing to the nature of God; so neither are the *properties of mans nature*, in the person of Christ, by force and virtue of the same conjunction so much altered, as not to stay within those limits which our substance is bordered withal; nor the *state and quality* of our substance so unalter'd, but that there are in it many glorious effects proceeding from so near copulation with Deity. God from us can receive nothing, we by him have obtained much. For albeit the natural properties of Deity be not communicable to mans nature, the supernatural gifts, graces, and effects thereof are. The honour which our flesh hath by being the flesh of the Son of God, is in many respects great. If we respect but that which is common unto us with him, the glory provided for him and his in the Kingdom of Heaven, his Right and Title thereunto even in that he is man, differeth from other mens, because he is that Man of whom God is himself a part. We have right to the same inheritance with Christ, but not the same right which he hath, his being such as we cannot reach, and ours such as he cannot stoop unto. Furthermore, to be the Way, the Truth, and the Life; to be the Wisdom, Righteousness, Sanctification, Resurrection; to be the Peace of the whole world, the Hope of the righteous, the Heir of all things; to be that supreme Head whereunto all power both in Heaven and in earth is given; these are not honours common unto Christ with other men; they are Titles above the dignity and worth of any which were but a meer man, yet true of Christ, even in that he is man. But man with whom Deity is personally joined, and unto whom it hath added those excellencies which make him more than worthy thereof. Finally, sith God hath deified our nature, though not by turning it into himself, yet by making it his own inseparable habitation, we cannot now conceive how God should without man either exercise divine power, or receive the glory of divine praise. For Man is in 'both an associate of Deity. But to come to the grace of *Union*; Did the parts of our nature, the Soul and Body of Christ receive by the influence of Deity, whetewith they were march, no ability of operations, no virtue, or quality above nature? Surely, as the sword which is made fiery, doth not only cut by reason of the sharpness which simply it hath, but also burn by means of that heat which it hath from fire; so, there is no doubt, but the Deity of Christ hath enabled that nature which it took of man, to do more than man in this world hath power to comprehend, forasmuch as (the bare essential properties of Deity excepted) he hath imparted unto it all things, he hath re-

α δὲ σὺν τῷ  
ἀνθρώπῳ  
καὶ ἐν τῷ  
θεῷ, ὅτι  
τῆς ἀγίας  
τρί-  
ῆτος καὶ ἐν τῷ  
ἀνθρώπῳ τῷ  
ἐκ θεοῦ  
γεννη-  
θέντι.

Theod. Dial.  
"Αποκρίσις.  
Periculum sta-  
tim sui Deo  
nullum est.

Terul. de car.  
Chr. Majestati  
sibi Dei corpo-  
ris naturae  
nihil contulit,  
nihil abstulit.  
Leo de Nativ.  
Ser. 8.

Μὴν δὲ ὡς  
ἀπαρχῆς θε-  
οῦ μὲν καὶ τὴν  
ἡμῶν ἐκ θεοῦ  
γεννηθέντος  
ὑπαρχόντος.  
The-  
ophil. In for-  
mam servi  
transiit, non est  
naturam perdi-  
dit Deū.  
Hilar. de Trin.  
lib. 12.

ἡ μεταβολὴ  
ἀνθρώπου τῆς  
θεῶς ἐκφρα-  
σεως.  
Theod.  
καὶ ὁ θεὸς τῷ  
θεῷ ὁ ποιη-  
τὴς ὅντων  
καὶ ὁ σώτων ὁ  
τῆς ἐκκλησίας  
ὁ κυβερ-  
νῶν τὰ πάντα.  
τα ὅντων.

Ἰὼν τὴν ἐκκλησίαν ἀπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ ἀνθρώπου ἐκ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἐκ τῶν ἀνθρώπων. Gregor. Nyssapud Theod.  
"Αὐτὸς τῆς φύσεως τῆς οὐκ ἁπλῶς ἀπαρχῆς ἐκ τῶν ἀνθρώπων ἀρχῆς καὶ ὁ θεός. Chry. in Psal. 41.



Christ, his two natures, their conjunction, that which he either is or doth in respect of both, and that which the one receiveth from the other; such God in Christ is generally the medicine, which doth cure the world, and Christ in us is that receipt of the same medicine, whereby we are every one particularly cured. In as much as Christs Incarnation and Passion can be available to no mans good which is not made partaker of Christ, neither can we participate him without his presence, we are briefly to consider how Christ is present, to the end it may thereby better appear how we are made partakers of Christ, both otherwise, and in the Sacraments themselves. All things are in such sort divided into finite and infinite, that no one substance, nature, or quality, can be possibly capable of both. The world and all things in the world are finited, all effects that proceed from them, all the powers and abilities whereby they work, whatsoever they do, whatsoever they may, and whatsoever they are, is limited. Which limitation of each creature is both the perfection and also the preservation thereof. Measure is that which perfecteth all things, because every thing is for some end; neither can that thing be available to any end which is not proportionable thereunto; and to proportion as well excesses, as defects are opposite. Again, for as much as nothing doth perish but only through excess or defect of that, the due proportioned measure whereof doth give perfection; it followeth, that measure is likewise the preservation of all things. Out of which premises we may conclude, not only that nothing created can possibly be unlimited, or can receive any such accident, quality, or property, as may really make it infinite (for then should it cease to be a creature) but also that every creatures limitation is according to his own kind, and therefore as oft as we note in them any thing above their kind, it argueth that the same is not properly theirs, but groweth in them from a cause more powerful than they are. Such as the substance of each thing is, such is also the presence thereof. Impossible it is that God should withdraw his presence from any thing, because the very substance of God is infinite. He filleth Heaven and Earth, although he take up no room in either, because his substance is immaterial, pure, and of us in this World so incomprehensible, that albeit no part of us be ever absent from him, who is present whole unto every particular thing, yet his presence with us we no way discern further than only that God is present, which partly by reason, and more perfectly by Faith we know to be firm and certain. Seeing therefore that presence every where is the sequel of an infinite and incomprehensible substance, (for what can be every where, but that which can no where be comprehended?) to inquire whether Christ be every where, is to inquire of a natural property, a property that cleaveth to the Deity of Christ. Which Deity being common unto him with none, but only the Father, and the Holy Ghost, it followeth, that nothing of Christ which is limited, that nothing created, that neither the Soul nor the Body of Christ, and consequently, not Christ as man, or Christ according to his humane nature, can possibly be every where present, because those phrases of limitation and restraint do either point out the principal subject whereunto every such attribute adhereth, or else they intimate the radical cause out of which it groweth. For Example, when we say that Christ as man, or according to his humane nature suffered death, we shew what nature was the proper subject of mortality; when we say that as God, or according to his Deity, he conquered death, we declare his Deity to have been the cause, by force and virtue whereof he raised himself from the Grave. But neither is the Manhood of Christ that subject whereunto universal presence agreeth, neither is it the cause original by force whereof his Person is enabled to be every where present. Wherefore Christ is essentially present with all things, in that he is very God; but not present with all things as man, because Manhood and the parts thereof can neither be the cause, nor the true subject of such presence. Notwithstanding, in somewhat more plainly to shew a true immediate reason wherefore the Manhood of Christ can neither be every where present, nor cause the Person of Christ so to be, we acknowledge that of Saint Augustine concerning Christ most true, *In that he is personally the Word, he created all things; in that he is naturally man, he himself is created of God*; and it doth not appear that any one creature hath power to be present with all creatures.

Whereupon, nevertheless it will not follow, that Christ cannot therefore be thus pre-

*Psalm 133. 7, 8.*  
*Jer. 23. 24.*  
*b Ideo Deus*  
*ubique esse di-*  
*citur, quia, nul-*  
*li parti rerum*  
*absens est; ideo*  
*totum, quia non*  
*parti rerum*  
*partem sui pra-*  
*esentem prae-*  
*bet, et alteri parti,*  
*alteram partem,*  
*sed non solum*  
*universitati*  
*creaturarum, verum*  
*etiam cuilibet*  
*parti eius to-*  
*tum pariter ad-*  
*est. Aug. Epist.*  
*57.*  
*Quod ad ver-*  
*bum attinet,*  
*Creator est;*  
*quod ad homi-*  
*nem, creatura*  
*est. Aug. Epist.*  
*57. Deus qui*  
*semper est, et*  
*semper erat, et*  
*creatura Leo*  
*de Nativ. Mul-*  
*ti timore tre-*  
*pidae ne Chri-*  
*stum esse crea-*  
*turam dicere*  
*complectantur,*  
*nos proclama-*  
*mus non esse pe-*  
*riculum dicere*  
*Christum esse*  
*creaturam. He-*  
*ron. in Epist.*  
*ad Ephes. 2.*



sent, because he is himself a creature, so far as much as only infinite: presence is that which cannot possibly stand with the essence or being of any creature; as for presence with all things that are, with the whole race, mass, and body of them is finite, Christ by being a creature, is not in that respect excluded from possibility of presence with them. That which excludeth him therefore as man from so great largeness of presence, is only his being *Man*, a creature of this particular kind, whereunto the God of Nature hath set those bounds of restraint and limitation, beyond which to attribute unto it any thing more than a creature of that sort can admit, were to give it another nature, to make it a creature of some other kind than in truth it is. Furthermore, if Christ in that he is man be every where present, seeing this cometh not by the nature of Man-hood it self, there is no other way how it should grow, but either by the grace of union with Deity, or by the grace of union received from Deity. It hath been already sufficiently proved, that by force of union the properties of both natures are imparted to the person only in whom they are, and not what belongeth to the one nature really conveyed or translated into the other; it hath been likewise proved, that natures united in Christ continue the very same which they are where they are not united. And concerning the grace of union, wherein are contained the gifts and virtues which Christ as man hath above men, they make him really and habitually a man more excellent than we are, they take not from him the nature and substance that we have, they cause not his soul nor body to be of another kind than ours is. Supernatural endowment's are an advancement, they are no extinguishment of that nature whereto they are given. The substance of the body of Christ hath no presence, neither can have, but only local. It was not therefore every where seen, nor did it every where suffer death, every where it could not be intombed, it is not every where now being exalted into Heaven. There is no proof in the world strong to enforce that Christ had a true body, but by the true and natural properties of his body. Amongst which properties, definite or local presence is chief, *How is it true of Christ (saith Tertulian) that he died, was buried, and rose again, if Christ had not that very flesh, the nature whereof is capable of these things, flesh mingled with blood, supported with bones, woven with sinews, imbroidred with veins?* If his majestical body have now any such new property, by force whereof it may every where really even in substance present it self, or may at once be in many places: then hath the Majesty of his estate extinguished the verity of his nature. *Make thou no doubt or question of it (saith St. Augustine) but that the man Christ Jesus is now in that very place from whence he shall come in the same form and substance of flesh, which he carried thither, and from which he hath not taken nature, but given thereunto immortality. According to this form he spreadeth not out himself into all places. For it behoveth us to take great heed, lest while we go about to maintain the glorious Deity of him which is man, we leave him not the true bodily substance of a man. According to St. Augustines opinion therefore, that Majestical body which we make to be every where present, doth thereby cease to have the substance of a true body. To conclude, we hold it in regard of the fore-alleged proofs a most infallible Truth, that Christ as man is not every where present. There are which think it as infallibly true, that Christ is every where present as man, which peradventure in some sense may be well enough granted. His humane substance in it self is naturally absent from the earth, his soul and body not on earth, but in Heaven only. Yet because this substance is inseparably joined to that personal Word which by his very divine essence is present with all things, the nature which cannot have in it self universal presence, hath it after a sort by being no where severed from that which every where is present. For inasmuch as that infinite Word is not divisible into parts, it could not in part, but must needs be wholly incarnate, and consequently wheresoever the Word is, it hath with it Man-hood, else should the Word be in part or somewhere God only, and not man, which is impossible. For the person of Christ is whole, perfect God and perfect man, wheresoever, although the parts of his Man-hood, being finite, and his Deity infinite, we cannot say that the whole of Christ is simply every where, as we may say that his Deity is, & that his person is by force of Deity. For somewhat of the person of Christ is not every where in that sort, namely, his Man-hood, the only conjunction whereof with Deity is extended as far as Deity, the actual*

*Tertul. de  
car. Christ.*

*Aug. Ep. 37.*

actual *possession* restrained and tyed to a certain place, yet presence *by way of conjunction* is in some sort presence.

Again, as the Manhood of Christ may after a sort be every where said to be present; because that Person is every where present, from whose divine substance Manhood is no where severed: So the same Universality of presence may likewise seem in another respect applicable thereunto, namely, by *co-operation* with Deity, and that *in all things*. The light created of God in the beginning did first by it self illuminate the World, but after that the Sun and Moon were created, the World shined *hath by them* always enjoyed the same. And that Deity of Christ which before our Lords Incarnation wrought all things without man, doth now work nothing wherein the nature which it hath assumed is either absent from it or idle. Christ as man hath <sup>a</sup> all power both in Heaven and Earth given him. He hath as <sup>a</sup> man, not as God only, <sup>b</sup> a supreme dominion over quick and dead, for so much his Ascension into Heaven and his Session at the right hand of God do import: The Son of God which did first humble himself by taking our flesh upon him, descended afterwards much lower, and became according to the flesh obedient so far as to suffer death, even the death of the Cross, for all men, because such was his Fathers will. The former was an humiliation of Deity, the later an humiliation of Manhood, <sup>c</sup> for which cause there followed upon the later an exaltation of that which was humbled; for with power he created the world, but restored it by obedience. In which obedience as according to his Manhood he had glorified God on earth, so God hath glorified in Heaven that nature which yielded him obedience, and hath given unto Christ even in that he is Man, such fulness of power over the whole World, that he which before fulfilled in the state of humility and patience whatsoever God did require, doth now <sup>d</sup> reign in glory till the time that all things be restored. He which came down from Heaven, and descended into the lowest parts of the Earth, is ascended far above all Heavens, that sitting at the right hand of God, he might from thence fill all things with the gracious and happy fruits of his saving presence. Ascension into Heaven is a plain local translation of Christ according to his Manhood from the lower to the higher parts of the World. Session at the right hand of God, is the actual exercise of that Regency and Dominion wherein the Manhood of Christ is joyned and marched with the Deity of the Son of God. Not that his Manhood was before without the possession of the same power, but because the full use thereof was suspended, till that humility which had been before as a vail to hide and conceal Majesty were laid aside. <sup>e</sup> After his rising again from the dead then did God set him at his right hand in Heavenly places far above all principality and power, and might, and domination, and every name that is named, not in this World only, but also in that which is to come, and hath <sup>f</sup> put all things under his feet, and hath appointed him over all the head to the Church which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all. The <sup>g</sup> scepter of which spiritual Regiment over us in this present World is at the length to be yielded up into the hands of the Father which gave it, that is to say, the use and exercise thereof shall cease, there being no longer on earth any Militant Church to govern. This government therefore he exerciseth both as God and as man; as God, by essential presence with all things; as man, by co-operation with that which essentially is present. Touching the manner how he worketh as man in all things, the principal powers of the soul of man are the will and Understanding, the one of which two in Christ assenteth unto all things, and from the other nothing which Deity doth work is hid; so that by knowledge and assent the soul of Christ is present with all things which the Deity of Christ worketh. And even the body of Christ it self, although the definite limitation thereof be most sensible, doth notwithstanding admit in some sort a kind of infinite and unlimited presence likewise. For his body being a part of that nature, which whole nature is presently joyned unto Deity wheresoever Deity is, it followeth that his bodily substance hath every where a presence of true conjunction with Deity. And for as much as it is by vertue of that conjunction made the body of the Son of God, by whom also it was made a Sacrifice for the sins of the whole World, this giveth it a *presence of force and efficacy* throughout all generations of men. Albeit therefore nothing be *actually* infinite in substance, but God only in that he is God, nevertheless

<sup>a</sup> Mat. 28.

<sup>b</sup> Rom. 14: 9.

<sup>c</sup> Philip. 2. 9.

<sup>d</sup> Heb. 2. 9.

<sup>e</sup> Rev. 5. 12.

<sup>d</sup> Luke 22. 27.

<sup>f</sup> Heb. 3. 21.

<sup>g</sup> Ephes. 4. 9.

<sup>e</sup> Ephes. 1. 20.

<sup>f</sup> Psal. 8. 6.

<sup>g</sup> Heb. 1. 8.

<sup>g</sup> 1 Cor. 15.

vertheless as every number is infinite by possibility of addition, and every line by possibility of extension infinite, so there is no stint which can be set to the value or merit of the sacrificed Body of Christ, it hath no measured certainty of limits, bounds of efficacy unto life it knoweth none, but is also it self infinite in *possibility of application*. Which things indifferently every way considered, that gracious promise of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ concerning presence with his to the very end of the World, I see no cause but that we may well and safely interpret he doth perform, both as God, by essential presence of Deity, and as man, in that order, sense, and meaning which hath been shewed.

56. We have hitherto spoken of the person and of the presence of Christ. Participation is that mutual inward hold which Christ hath of us, and we of him, in such sort that each possesseth other by way of special interest, property, and inherent copulation. For plainer explication whereof, we may from that which hath been before sufficiently proved, assume to our purpose these two Principles, that *every original cause imparteth it self unto those things which come of it, and whatsoever taketh being from any other, the same is after a sort in that which giveth it being*. It followeth hereupon that the Son of God being light of light, must needs be also light in light. The persons of the God-head, by reason of the unity of their substance, do as necessarily remain one within another, as they are of necessity to be distinguished one from another, because two are the issue of one, and one the off-spring of the other two, only of three one not growing out of any other. And sith they all are but one God in number, one indivisible Essence or Substance, their distinction cannot possibly admit Separation. For how should that subsist *solitarily* by it self which hath no substance, but *individually* the very same whereby others subsist with it; seeing that the Multiplication of substances *in particular* is necessarily required to make those things subsist apart, which have the self-same general Nature, and the persons of that Trinity are not three particular substances, to whom one General Nature is common, but three that subsist by one substance, *which it self is particular*, yet they all three have it, and their several ways of having it are that which maketh their personal distinction? The Father therefore is in the Son, and the Son in him, they both in the Spirit, and the Spirit in both them. So that the Fathers first Off-spring which is the Son, remaineth eternally in the Father; the Father eternally also in the Son, no way severed or divided by reason of the sole and single unity of their substance. The Son in the Father as light in that light, out of which it floweth without separation; the Father in the Son as light in that light which it causeth and leaveth not. And because in this respect his eternal being is of the Father, which eternal being is his life, therefore he by the Father liveth. Again, sith all things do accordingly love their Off-spring as themselves are more or less contained in it, he which is thus the only begotten, must needs be in this degree the only Beloved of the Father. He therefore which is in the Father by eternal derivation of being and life from him, must needs be in him through an eternal affection of love. His Incarnation causeth him also as man to be now in the Father, and the Father to be in him. For in that he is man, he receiveth Life from the Father as from the Fountain of that ever-living Deity, which in the person of the Word hath combined it self with Manhood, and doth thereunto impart such life as to no other Creature besides him is communicated. In which consideration likewise the love of the Father towards him is more than it can be towards any other, neither can any attain unto that perfection of love which he beareth towards his Heavenly Father. Wherefore God is not so in any, nor any so in God as Christ, whether we consider him as the personal Word of God, or as the natural Son of Man. All other things that are of God have God in them, and he them in himself likewise. Yet because their substance and his wholly differeth, their coherence and communion either with him or amongst themselves is in no sort like unto that before mentioned. God hath his influence into the very Essence of all things, without which influence of Deity supporting them, their utter annihilation could not chuse but so low. Of him all things have both received their first being, and their continuance to be that which they are. All things are therefore partakers of God, they are his off-spring, his influence is in them, and the personal Wisdom of God is for that very cause said

to

The union or mutual participation which is between Christ and the Church of Christ in this present world.

a In the bosom of the Father. Joh. 1. 18. *Ecce dico alium esse patrem, et alium filium; non divisum a se, sed distinctum*. Tertul. contra Prax. Nec in numerum pluralem defluis incorporatio generatio, nec in divisionem cadit, ubi qui nascitur nequaquam a generante separatur. Ruffin. in Symbol.

b Luk. 3. 22. Joh. 3. 34, 35. 5. 20. 10. 17. 14. 31. 15. 10.



to excell in nimbleness or agility, to <sup>a</sup> pierce into all intellectual, pure and subtle <sup>a</sup> *Sap. 7. 23.* spirits, to go through all, and to reach unto every thing which is. Otherwise, how should the same wisdom be that which supporteth, <sup>b</sup> beareth up, and sustaineth all? <sup>b</sup> *Heb. 1. 3.* Whatsoever God doth work, the hands of all three Persons are jointly and equally in it, according to the order of that connexion, whereby they each depend upon other. And therefore albeit in that respect the Father be first, the Son next, the Spirit last, and consequently nearest unto every effect which groweth from all three, nevertheless, they all being of one essence, are likewise all of one efficacy. Dare any man, unless he be ignorant altogether how inseparable the Persons of the Trinity are, persuade himself that every of them may have their sole and several Possessions, or that <sup>c</sup> we being not partakers of all, can have fellowship with any one? <sup>c</sup> *John 14. 23.* The Father as Goodness, the Son as Wisdom, the Holy Ghost as Power, do all concur in every particular, outwardly issuing from that one only glorious Deity which they all are. For that which moveth God to work, is Goodness; and that which ordereth his Work, is Wisdom; and that which perfecteth his Work, is Power. All things which God in their times and seasons hath brought forth, were eternally and before all times in God, as a work unbegun is in the Artificer, which afterward bringeth it unto effect. Therefore whatsoever we do behold now in this present World, it was inwrapped within the Bowels of divine Mercy, written in the Book of eternal Wisdom, and held in the hands of Omnipotent Power, the first Foundations of the World being as yet unlaide. So that all things which God hath made are in that respect the <sup>d</sup> Off-spring of God, they are in him as effects in their highest cause; he likewise actually is in them, the assistance and influence of his Deity <sup>d</sup> *1st 17. 28.* is their life. Let hereunto saving efficacy be added, and it bringeth forth a special <sup>e</sup> *John 1:1. 4. 10.* off-spring amongst men, containing them to whom God hath himself given the gracious and amiable name of <sup>f</sup> Sons. We are by Nature the Sons of <sup>f</sup> *Adam. 2. 1. John 3. 1.* When God created *Adam* he created us; and as many as are descended from *Adam*, have in themselves the Root out of which they spring. The Sons of God we neither are all, nor any one of us, otherwise than only by grace and favour. The Sons of God have Gods own natural Son as a <sup>g</sup> second *Adam* from Heaven, whose Race <sup>g</sup> *1st Cor. 15. 47.* and Progenie they are by Spiritual and Heavenly Birth. God therefore loving eternally his Son, he must needs eternally <sup>h</sup> in him have loved and preferred before all <sup>h</sup> *Ephes. 1. 3. 4.* others them which are spiritually thence descended and sprung out of him. These were in God as in their Saviour, and not as in their Creatour only. It was the purpose of his *saving* Goodness, his *saving* Wisdom, and his *saving* Power, which inclined it self towards them. They which thus were in God eternally by their intended admission to life, have by vocation or adoption God actually now in them, as the Artificer is in the Work which his hand doth presently frame. Life as all other gifts and benefits groweth originally from the Father, and cometh not to us but <sup>i</sup> by the Son, not by the Son to any of us in particular, but <sup>i</sup> through the Spirit. <sup>j</sup> *1st John 5. 11.* For this cause the Apostle wisheth to the Church of *Corinth* the grace of our Lord <sup>j</sup> *Rom. 8. 10.* Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the Fellowship of the Holy Ghost. Which <sup>k</sup> *1st Cor. 13. 13.* three Saint *Peter* comprehendeth in one, <sup>k</sup> the participation of divine Nature. We <sup>k</sup> *2 Pet. 1. 4.* are therefore in God through Christ eternally according to that intent and purpose, whereby we are chosen to be made his in this present World, before the World it self was made; we are in God through the knowledge which is had of us; and the love which is born towards us from everlasting. But in God we actually are no longer than only from the time of our actual Adoption into the body of his true Church, into the fellowship of his children. For his Church he knoweth and loveth; so that they which are in the Church, are thereby known to be in him. Our being in Christ by Eternal fore-knowledge saveth us not, without our actual and real Adoption into the fellowship of his Saints in this present World. For in him we actually are by our actual <sup>l</sup> incorporation into that society which hath him for their Head; and doth make together with him one body (he and they in that respect having <sup>m</sup> one name) for which cause by vertue of this Mystical conjunction, we are of him, and in him, even <sup>n</sup> as though our very flesh and bones should be made continue with his. We are in Christ, because he <sup>n</sup> knoweth and loveth us even as parts <sup>o</sup> *John 15. 9.* of himself. No man actually is in him but they <sup>p</sup> in whom he actually is. For he <sup>p</sup> *1st John 5. 12.* which

- a *Iohn 15. 5. 6.* which hath not the Son of God, hath not life: <sup>a</sup> *I am the Vine, and you are the branches: He which abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much Fruit:* but the branch severed from the Vine withereth. We are therefore adopted Sons of God to Eternal Life by participation of the only begotten Son of God, whose Life is the <sup>b</sup> Well-spring and cause of ours. It is too cold an interpretation, whereby some men expound our being in Christ to import nothing else, but only that the self-same Nature which maketh us to be men, is in him, and maketh him man as we are. For what man in the World is there which hath not so far forth communion with Jesus Christ? It is not this that can sustain the weight of such sentences as
- c *Iohn 14. 20.* speak of the mystery of our <sup>c</sup> coherence with Jesus Christ. The Church is in Christ, as *Eve* was in *Adam*. Yea by grace we are every of us in Christ and in his Church, as by nature we are in those our first Parents. God made *Eve* of the rib of *Adam*. And his Church he frameth out of the very flesh, the very wounded and bleeding side of the Son of Man. His body crucified and his blood shed for the life of the
- d *1 Cor. 15. 48.* World, are the true Elements of that Heavenly being, which maketh us <sup>d</sup> such as himself is of whom we come. For which cause the words of *Adam* may be fitly the words of Christ concerning his Church, *Flesh of my flesh, and bone of my bones*, a true native extract out of my own body. So that in him even according to his Manhood, we according to our Heavenly Being, are as branches in that root out of which they grow. To <sup>e</sup> all things he is life, and to men light, *as the Son of God*; to the Church both life and light, <sup>f</sup> eternal by being made the Son of man for us, and by being in us a Saviour, whether we respect him as God, or as Man. *Adam* is in us as an original cause of our nature, and of that corruption of nature which causeth death; Christ as the <sup>g</sup> cause original of restauration to life; The person of *Adam* is not in us, but his nature, and the corruption of his nature derived into all men by
- \* propagation; Christ having *Adams* nature, as we have, but incorrupt, deriveth not nature but incorruption, and that immediately from his own person, into all that belong unto him. As therefore we are really partakers of the body of sin and death received from *Adam*; so except we be truly partakers of Christ, and as really possessed of his Spirit, all we speak of eternal life is but a dream. That which <sup>h</sup> quickeneth us, is the Spirit of the second *Adam*, and his flesh that wherewith he quickeneth. That which in him made our nature uncorrupt, was the union of his Deity with our nature. And in that respect the sentence of death and condemnation, which only taketh hold upon sinful flesh, could no way possibly extend unto him. This caused his voluntary death for others to prevail with God, and to have the force of an expiatory Sacrifice. The blood of Christ, as the Apostle witnesseth, doth therefore take away sin, because <sup>i</sup> *thro-gh the eternal Spirit he offered himself unto God without spot*. That which sanctified our nature in Christ, that which made it a sacrifice available to take away sin, is the same which quickeneth it, raised it out of the grave after death, and exalted it unto glory. Seeing therefore that Christ is in us as a quickning Spirit, the first degree of Communion with Christ must needs consist in the participation of his Spirit, which *Cyprian* in that respect well termeth <sup>k</sup> *germanissimam societatem*, the highest and truest society that can be between man and him, which is both God and Man in one. These things <sup>l</sup> Saint *Cyril* duly considering, reproveth their speeches, which taught that only the Deity of Christ is the Vine whereupon we by Faith do depend as branches, and that neither his flesh nor our bodies are comprised in this resemblance. For doth any man doubt but that even from the flesh of Christ our very bodies do receive that life which shall make them glorious at the later day, and for which they are already accounted parts of his blessed Body? Our corruptible bodies could never live the life they shall live, were it not that here they are joyned with his Body which is incorruptible, and that his is in ours as a cause of immortality, a cause by removing through the death and merit of his own flesh that which hindered the life of ours. Christ is therefore both as God and as Man, that true Vine whereof we both spiritually and corporally are branches. The mixture of his bodily substance with ours is a thing which the ancient Fathers <sup>m</sup> disclaim. Yet the mixture of his flesh with ours they <sup>n</sup> speak of, to
- m *Nostra quippe & ipsum conjunctio nec misce personarum nec unit substantiarum,*  
*sed affectum consociat & considerat voluntates.* Cypri. de Gorn. Dom. n *Quomodo dicunt carnem in corruptionem devinire, & non percipere vitam, quia à corpore Domini & sanguine alitur?* Iren. lib. 4. advers. hæres. cap. 34.

signifie

signifie what our very bodies through myttical conjunction receive from that vital efficacy which we know to be in his, and from bodily mixtures they borrow divers

\* similitudes, rather to declare the truth, than the manner of coherence between his sacred and the sanctified bodies of Saints.\* Thus much no Christian man will deny, that when Christ sanctified his own flesh, giving as God, and taking as man the Holy Ghost, he did not this for himself only, but for our sakes, that the grace of sanctification and life which was first received in him, might pass from him to his whole Race, as malediction came from *Adam* unto all mankind. Howbeit,

because the work of his Spirit to those effects is in us prevented by sin and death possessing us before, it is of necessity that as well our present sanctification unto newness of life, as the future restauration of our bodies should presuppose a participation of the grace, efficacy, merit or vertue of his Body and Bloud, without which foundation first laid there is no place for those other operations of the Spirit of Christ to ensue. So that Christ imparteth plainly himself by degrees. It pleaseth him in mercy to account himself incompleat and maimed<sup>b</sup> without us. But most

assured we are that we all receive of his fulness, because he is in us as a moving and working cause, from which many blessed effects are really found to ensue, and that in sundry both kinds and degrees, all tending to eternal happiness. It must be confessed that of Christ, working as a Creator, and a Governour of the World by providence, all are partakers; not all partakers of that grace whereby he inhabiteth whom he saveth. Again, as he dwelleth not by grace in all, so neither doth he equally work in all them in whom he dwelleth.

<sup>c</sup> *Whence is it (saith Saint Augustin) that some be holier than others are, but because God doth dwell in some more plentifully than in others?* And because the divine substance of Christ is equally in all, his humane substance equally distant from all, it appeareth that the participation of Christ, wherein there are many degrees and differences, must needs consist in such effects as being derived from both natures of Christ really into us, are made our own, and we by having them in us, are truly said to have him from whom they come; **C H R I S T** also more or less to inhabit and impart himself as the graces are fewer or more, greater or smaller, which really flow into us from Christ. Christ is whole with the whole Church, and whole with every part of the Church, as touching his person which can no way divide it self, or be posselt by degrees and portions. But the participation of Christ importeth, besides the presence of Christs person, and besides the myttical copulation thereof with the parts and members of his whole Church, a true actual influence of grace whereby the

<sup>d</sup> *life which we live according to godliness is his, and from him we receive those perfections wherein our eternal happiness consisteth. Thus we participate Christ partly by imputation, as when\* those things which he did and suffered for us are imputed unto us for righteousness; partly by habitual and real infusion, as when grace is inwardly bestowed while we are on earth, and afterwards more fully both our souls and bodies made like unto his in glory. The first thing of his so infused into our hearts in this life is the Spirit of Christ, whereupon because the rest, of what kind soever, do*

<sup>e</sup> *all both necessarily depend and infallibly also ensue, therefore the Apostles term it sometime<sup>f</sup> the seed of God, sometime the<sup>g</sup> pledge of our Heavenly Inheritance, sometime the<sup>h</sup> handsell or earnest of that which is to come. From hence it is, that they which belong to the myttical body of our Saviour Christ, and be in number as the stars of Heaven, divided successively by reason of their mortal condition into many generations, are notwithstanding coupled<sup>i</sup> every one to Christ the Head, and*

<sup>j</sup> *all unto every particular person amongst themselves, in as much as the same Spirit, which anointed the blessed soul of our Saviour Christ, doth so formalize, unite, and actuate his whole race, as if both he and they were so many limbs compacted into one body, by being quickned all with one and the same soul. That wherein we are partakers of Jesus Christ by imputation, agreeth equally unto all that have it. For it consisteth in such acts and deeds of his, as could not have longer continuance than while they were in doing, nor at that very time belong unto any other but*

<sup>k</sup> *10*

*a* *Uade considerandum est non solum ex hoc sed conformitate affectionum Christum in nobis esse; verum etiam participatione naturali (id est, reali et vera) quemadmodum si quis igne liquefactam ceram alii cera similiter liquefacta ita miscuerit ut unum quid ex utroque factum videatur, sic communicatione Corporis et Sanguinis Christi ipse in nobis est, et nos in ipso. Cyril. in Joan. lib. 10. cap. 13.*

*b* *Ephes. 1. 33: Ecclesia completum est qui implet omnia in omnibus. Id est, Christus in Ecclesia est.*  
*c* *Aug. Epist. 57*

*d* *Gal. 2. 20*  
*e* *Isa. 53. 5.*  
*f* *Ephes. 1. 7.*  
*g* *Rom. 8. 9.*  
*h* *Gal. 4. 6.*  
*i* *1 John 3. 2.*  
*j* *Eph. 1. 14.*  
*k* *Rom. 8. 23.*

*l* *1 Cor. 12. 27.*  
*m* *Ephes. 4. 15.*  
*n* *1-Rom. 12. 5.*  
*o* *Ephes. 4. 25.*



to him from whom they come, and therefore how men either then, or before, or  
 sithence, should be made partakers of them, there can be no way imagined, but  
 only by imputation. Again, a deed must either not be imputed to any, but rest alto-  
 gether in him whose it is, or if at all it be imputed, they which have it by imputation,  
 must have it such as it is, whole. So that degrees being neither in the personal pre-  
 sence of Christ, nor in the participation of those effects which are ours by imputati-  
 on only, it resteth that we wholly apply them to the participation of Christs infused  
 grace, although even in this kind also the first beginning of life, the seed of God, the  
 first fruits of Christs Spirit be without latitude. For we have hereby only the being of  
 the Sons of God, in which number how far soever one may seem to excel another, yet  
 touching this that all are Sons, they are all equals, some haply better sons than the rest,  
 but none any more a son than another. Thus therefore we see how the Father is in the  
 Son, and the Son in the Father, how both are in all things, and all in them, what com-  
 munion Christ hath with his Church, how his Church and every member thereof, is in  
 him by original derivation, and he personally in them by way of mystical association  
 wrought through the gift of the holy Ghost, which they that are his receive from him,  
 and together with the same, what benefit to ever the vital force of his body and blood  
 may yeild, yea by steps and degrees they receive the compleat measure of all such di-  
 vine grace as doth sanctifie and save throughout, till the day of their final exaltation  
 to a state of fellowship in glory with him, whose partakers they are now in those  
 things that tend to glory. As for any mixture of the substance of his flesh with ours,  
 the participation which we have of Christ includeth no such kind of gross surmise.

The necessity  
 of Sacraments  
 unto the parti-  
 cipation of  
 Christ.

57 It greatly offendeth, that some, when they labour to shew the use of the  
 holy Sacraments, assigne unto them no end but only to teach the mind; by other  
 senses, that which the Word doth teach by hearing. Whereupon, how easily neg-  
 lect and careless regard of so Heavenly mysteries may follow, we see in part by  
 some experience had of those men with whom that opinion is most strong. For  
 where the Word of God may be heard, which teacheth with much more expedition  
 and more full Explication any thing we have to learn; if all the benefit we reap  
 by Sacraments be instruction, they which at all times have opportunity of using  
 the better mean to that purpose, will surely hold the worse in less estimation. And  
 unto Infants which are not capable of instruction, who would not think it a meer  
 superfluity that any Sacrament is administred, if to administer the Sacraments be  
 but to teach receivers what God doth for them? There is of Sacraments therefore  
 undoubtedly some other more excellent and Heavenly use. Sacraments, by reason  
 of their mixt nature, are more diversly interpreted and disputed of, than any other  
 part of Religion besides, for that in so great store of properties belonging to the  
 self same thing, as every mans Wit hath taken hold of some special consideration  
 above the rest, so they have accordingly seemed one to cross another as touching  
 their severall opinions about the necessity of Sacraments; whereas in truth their dis-  
 agreement is not great. For let respect be had to the duty which every communi-  
 cant doth undertake, and we may well determine concerning the use of Sacraments,  
 that they serve as bonds of obedience to God, strict obligations to the mutual ex-  
 ercise of Christian Charity, provocations to godliness, preservations from sin, me-  
 morials of the principal benefits of Christ; respect the time of their institution,  
 and it thereby appeareth that God hath annexed them for ever unto the New Testa-  
 ment, as other Rites were before with the Old; regard the weakness which is in us,  
 and they are warrants for the more security of our belief; compare the receivers of  
 them with such as receive them not, and Sacraments are marks of distinction to  
 separate Gods own from strangers; so that in all these respects they are found to  
 be most necessary. But their chiefest force and virtue consisteth not herein so much,  
 as in that they are Heavenly Ceremonies, which God hath sanctified and ordained  
 to be administred in his Church; first, as marks whereby to know when God doth  
 impart the vital or saving grace of Christ unto all that are capable thereof; and se-  
 condly, as means conditional, which God requireth in them unto whom he impart-  
 eth grace. For sith God in himself is invisible, and cannot by us be discerned work-  
 ing, therefore when it seemeth good in the eyes of his Heavenly Wisdom, that  
 men for some special intent and purpose should take notice of his glorious presence,  
 he

he giveth some plain and sensible token whereby to know what they cannot see. For *Moses* to see God and live was impossible, yet <sup>a</sup> *Moses* by fire knew where the glory of God extraordinarily was present. The <sup>b</sup> Angel, by whom God indued the waters of the Pool called *Bethesda* with supernatural virtue to heal, was not seen of any, yet the time of the Angels presence known by the troubled motions of the waters themselves. The Apostles <sup>c</sup> by fiery tongues which they saw, were admonished when the Spirit, which they could not behold, was upon them. In like manner it is with us. Christ and his Holy Spirit with all their blessed effects, though entering into the soul of man we are not able to apprehend or express how, do notwithstanding give notice of the times when they use to make their access, because it pleaseth A mighty God to communicate by sensible means those blessings which are incomprehensible. Seeing therefore that grace is a consequent of Sacraments, a thing which accompanieth them as their end, a benefit which they have received from God himself the Author of Sacraments, and not from any other natural or supernatural quality in them, it may be hereby both understood that Sacraments are necessary, and that the manner of their necessity to life supernatural is not in all respects as food unto natural life, because they contain in themselves no vital force or efficacy; they are not physical but moral instruments of salvation, duties of service and worship, which unless we perform as the Author of grace requireth, they are unprofitable. For all receive not the grace of God which receive the Sacraments of his grace. Neither is it ordinarily his will to bestow the grace of Sacraments on any, but by the Sacraments; which grace also they that receive by Sacraments or with Sacraments, receive it from him, and not from them. For of Sacraments the very same is true which *Solomons* wisdom observeth in the brazen Serpent: <sup>d</sup> *He d* *Wild. 16. 17.* *that turned towards it, was not healed by the thing he saw, but by thee, O Saviour of* *Spiritus Sancti* *munus est grati-* *am implere my-* *sterii, Amb. in* *Luc. cap. 3.* *Sanctificatio* *elementis ef-* *fectum non pro-* *pria ipsarum* *natura prabet,* *sed virtus divi-* *na potentius* *operatur. Cypr.* *de Christm.* *e* *Dum homini* *bonum invisibi-* *le redditur, for-* *is ei ejusdem* *significatio per* *species visibiles* *adhibetur: ut* *foris excietur* *et intus repa-* *retur. In ipsa* *vase specie vir-* *tus exprimitur* *medicina. Hu-* *go de Sacram.* *li. 1. cap. 3.* *Si ergo vasa* *sunt spiritualis* *gratia sacra-* *menta, non ex* *suo sanant, quia* *vasa agrotum* *non curant, sed* *medicina. Idem.* *lib. 1. cap. 4.* *all.* This is therefore the necessity of Sacraments. That saving grace which Christ originally is, or hath for the general good of his whole Church, by Sacrament he severally deriveth into every member thereof. Sacraments serve as the instruments of God to that end and purpose; moral instruments, the use whereof is in our own hands, the effect in his; for the use we have his express commandment, for the effect his conditional promise; so that without our obedience to the one there is of the other no apparent assurance; and contrariwise where the signs and Sacraments of his grace are not either through contempt unreceived, or received with contempt, we are not to doubt but that they really give what they promise, and are what they signifie. For we take not Baptisme nor the Eucharist for bare resemblances or memorials of things absent, neither for naked signs and testimonies assuring us of grace received before, but (as they are indeed and verity) for means effectual, whereby God, when we take the Sacraments, delivereth into our hands that grace available unto eternal life, which grace the Sacraments represent or signifie. There have grown in the doctrine concerning Sacraments many difficulties for want of distinct explication what kind or degree of grace doth belong unto each Sacrament. For by this it hath come to pass, that the true immediate cause why Baptisme, and why the Supper of our Lord is necessary, few do rightly and distinctly consider. It cannot be denied but sundry the same effects and benefits which grow unto men by the one Sacrament, may rightly be attributed unto the other. Yet then doth Baptisme challenge to it self but the inchoation of those graces, the consummation whereof dependeth on mysteries ensuing. We receive Christ Jesus in Baptisme once as the first beginner, in the Eucharist often, as being by continual degrees the finisher of our faith. By Baptisme therefore we receive Christ Jesus, and from him that saving grace which is proper unto Baptisme. By the other Sacrament we receive him also, imparting therein himself and that grace which the Eucharist properly bestoweth. So that each Sacrament having both that which is general or common, and that also which is peculiar unto it self, we may hereby gather that the participation of Christ, which properly belongeth to any one Sacrament, is not otherwise to be obtained but by the Sacrament whereunto it is proper.

58 Now even as the Soul doth organize the body, and give unto every member thereof, that substance, quantity, and shape which nature seeth most expedient, so the substance of Baptism; the rites or solemnities thereunto belonging, and that the substance thereof being kept, other things in Baptism may give place to necessity.

the inward grace of Sacraments may teach what serveth best for their outward form; a thing in no part of Christian Religion, much less here to be neglected. Grace intended by Sacraments was a cause of the choice, and is a reason of the fitness of the Elements themselves. Furthermore, seeing that the grace which here we receive doth no way depend upon the natural force of that which we presently behold, it was of necessity that words of express declaration taken from the very mouth of our Lord himself should be added unto visible Elements, that the one might infallibly teach what the other do most assuredly bring to pass. In writing and speaking

a Eucharistia duobus ex rebus constat, terrena & celesti. Iren. advers. hæres. l. 4. c. 24. Arcanorum rerum symbola non nudis figuris, sed figuris simul & rebus constant. Halvet. conf. prior. Art. 2. b Sacramentum est cum res gesta visibilis longe aliud invisibile intus operatur. Ibid. Etyim. l. 1. Sacramentum est per quod sub tegumento rerum visibilium divina virtus salutem secretum operatur. Gregor. mag. Sacramentum est signum significans efficaciter effectum Dei gratitum. Occa. sent. l. 4. d. 1. Sacramentum propriè non est signum cujuslibet rei sacra, sed tantum rei sacra sanctificantis homines. Th. 12. q. 101.4 & q. 101.5. Sacramentum est signum passionis Christi. gratia & gloria. Ite est commemoratio prateriti, demonstratio presentis, & prognosticon futuri. Th. 3. q. 60. 3. Sacramenta sunt signa & symbola visibilia rerum internarum & invisibilium, per quæ, seu per media Dei virtute spiritum sancti in nobis agit. Cõf. Belg. Art. 33. Iren. Bee. Conf. c. 1. c Sacramenta consistens verbo, figuris, & rebus significatis. Confess. Halvet. post. cap. 19.

of the blessed Sacrament, we use for the most part under the name of their *substance*, not only to comprise that whereof they outwardly and sensibly consist, but also the secret grace which they signify and exhibit. This is the reason wherefore commonly in definitions, whether they be framed larger to augment, or stricter to abridge the number of Sacraments, we find grace expressly mentioned as their true essential forme, Elements as the matter whereunto that forme doth adjoyn it self. But if that be separated which is secret, and that considered alone which is seen, as of necessity it must in all those speeches that make distinction of Sacraments from Sacramental grace, the name of a Sacrament in such speeches can imply no more than what the *outward substance thereof* doth comprehend. And to make compleat the outward substance of a Sacrament, there is required an outward form, which form Sacramental Elements receive from Sacramental words. Hereupon it groweth that many times there are three things said to make up the substance of a Sacrament; namely, the grace which is

thereby offered, the Element which shadoweth or signifieth grace, and the Word which expresseth what is done by the Element. So that whether we consider the outward by it self alone, or both the outward and inward substance of any Sacraments, there are in the one respect but two essential parts, and in the other but three that concur to give Sacraments their full being. Furthermore, because definitions are to express but the most immediate and neerest parts of nature, whereas other principles farther off, although not specified in defining, are notwithstanding in nature implied and presupposed, we must note that in as much as Sacraments are actions religious and mystical, which nature they have not unless they proceed from a serious meaning; and what every mans private mind is, as we cannot know, so neither are we bound to examine: therefore always in these cases the known intent

d Si aliud Ministris agere intendant, puta sacra illudere mysteriis, vel aliud quod Ecclesia non consentiat, nihil agitur; sine fide enim spiritualis potestas exerceri quidem potest, sine Ecclesia intentione non potest. Lancel. inst. Jur. Can. lib. 1. tit. 2. §. hoc tamē.

e Accessorium non regulat

principale sed ab eo regulatur. 41. De regul. jur. in Sext. l. 2. ff. quod iusta. f Est nihil facile mutandum est ex solemnitate, tamen ubi aequitas evidens poscit subveniendum est. Lib. 123. de reg. jur.

of the Church generally doth suffice, and where the contrary is not manifest; we may presume that he which outwardly doth the work, hath inwardly the purpose of the Church of God. Concerning all other Orders, Rites, Prayers, Lessons, Sermons, Actions, and their Circumstances whatsoever, they are to the outward substance of Baptism but things accessorie, which the wisdom of the Church of Christ is to order according to the exigence of that which is principal. Again, considering that such Ordinances have been made to adorn the Sacrament, not the Sacrament to depend upon them; seeing also that they are not of the substance of Baptism, and that Baptism is far more necessary then any such incident Rite or Solemnity ordained for the better administration thereof, if the case be such as permitteth not Baptism to have the decent Complements of Baptism, better it were to enjoy the body without his Furniture, then to wait for this, till the opportunity of that for which we desire it be lost. Which Premises standing, it seemeth to have been no absurd collection, that in cases of necessity which will not suffer delay till Baptism be administered, with usual solemnities, (to speak the least) it may be tolerably given without them, rather than any man without it should be suffered to depart this life.



59 They which deny that any such case of necessity can fall, in regard whereof The ground the Church should to create Baptisme without the decent Rites and So emnities in Scripture thereunto belonging, pretend that such tolerations have risen from a false inter-pretation which certain men have made of the Scripture, grounding a necessity of outward Baptisme upon the words of our Saviour Christ: *Unless a man be born again of Water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.* For by *T.C.I. 1. p. 143.* Private Baptism first rose upon a false interpretation of the place of *St. John 3. 5.* *Unless a man be born again of Water, and of the Spirit;* and where certain do interpret the word *Water* for the material and elemental Water, when as our Saviour Christ taketh *Water* there by a borrowed speech, for the Spirit of God, the effect whereof it shadoweth out. For even as in another place, *Mat. 3. 11.* by *Fire* and the Spirit, he meaneth nothing but the Spirit of God, which purgeth and purifieth as the Fire doth: So in this place by *Water* and the Spirit, he meaneth nothing else but the Spirit of God which cleanseth the filth of sin, and cooleth the broyling heat of an unquiet Conscience, as *Water* washeth the thing which is foul, and quencheth the heat of the fire.

That unless a man be born again of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of Heaven. I hold it for a most unfallible rule in Expositions of sacred Scripture, that where a literal construction will stand, the farthest from the letter is commonly the worst. There is nothing more dangerous than this licentious and deluding Art, which changeth the meaning of words, as Alchymie doth or would do the substance of Metals, maketh of any thing what it listeth, and bringeth in the end all Truth to nothing. Or howsoever such voluntary exercise of wit might be born with otherwise; yet in places which usually serve, as this doth, concerning Regeneration by *Water* and the Holy Ghost, to be alledged for grounds and principles, less is permitted. To hide the general consent of Antiquity agreeing in the literal interpretation, they cunningly affirm, that certain have taken those words as meant of material *Water*, when they know, that of all the Ancients there is not one to be named, that ever did otherwise either expound or alledge the place, than as implying external Baptisme. Shall that which hath always received this and no other construction, be now disguised with a toy of novelty? Must we needs at the only shew of Critical conceit without any more deliberation, utterly condemn them of error, which will not admit that *Fire* in the words of *John* is quenched with the Name of the Holy Ghost; or with the name of the Spirit, *Water* dried up in the words of Christ? When the letter of the Law hath two things plainly and expressly specified, *Water* and the Spirit; *Water* as a duty required on our parts, the Spirit as a gift which God bestoweth; there is danger in presuming so to interpret it, as if the clause which concerneth our selves were more than needeth. We may by such rare expositions attain perhaps in the end to be thought witty, but with ill advice. Finally, if as at the time, when that Baptisme which was meant by *John*, came to be really and truly performed by Christ himself, we find the Apostles, that had been, as we are, before baptized, new baptized with the Holy Ghost, and in this their latter Baptisme as well a visible descent of fire, as a secret miraculous infusion of the Spirit; if on us he accomplish likewise the Heavenly work of our new-birth, not with the Spirit alone, but with *Water* thereunto adjoynd, sith the faithfullest expounders of his words are his own deeds, let that which his hand hath manifestly wrought, declare what his speech did doubtfully utter.

60 To this they adde, That as we erre by following a wrong construction of the place before alledged; so our second oversight is, that we thereupon infer a necessity over-rigorous and extream. The true necessity of Baptisme, a few Pro- gathered by the words of our Saviour Christ, and what the true necessity thereof indeed is *T.C.I. 1. p. 143.* Secondly, this error [of private Baptisme] came by a false and unnecessary conclusion drawn from that place. For although the Scripture should say, that none can be saved but those which have the Spirit of God, and are baptized with material and elemental Water; yet ought it to be understood of those which can conveniently and orderly be brought to Baptisme; as the Scripture saying, that who so doth not believe the Gospel, is condemned already, *John 3. 18.* meaneth this sentence of those which can hear the Gospel, and have discretion to understand it when they hear it; and cannot here shut under this condemnation, either those that be born deaf, and so remain, or little Infants or natural Fools, that have no wit to conceive what is preached.



plied. For as we are not naturally men without birth, so neither are we Christian men in the eye of the Church of God but by new birth, nor according to the manifest ordinary course of Divine Dispensation new born, but by that Baptism which both declareth and maketh us Christians. In which respect we justly hold it to be the door of our actual entrance into Gods house, the first apparent beginning of life, a seal perhaps to the grace of Election before received, but to our Sanctification here, a step that hath not any before it. There were of the old Valentian Hereticks some, which had knowledge in such admiration, that to it they ascribed all, and so despised the Sacraments of Christ, pretending that as ignorance had made us subject to all misery, so the full Redemption of the inward man, and the work of our Restauration, must needs belong unto Knowledge only. They draw very neer unto this error; who fixing wholly their minds on the known necessity of Faith, imagine that nothing but Faith is necessary for the attainment of all Grace. Yet is it a branch of Belief, that Sacraments are in their place no less required then Belief it self. For when our Lord and Saviour promisethto eternal Life, is it any otherwise then as he promised restitution of health unto Naaman the Syrian, namely, with this condition, *Wash and be clean*? or as to them which were stung of Serpents, health by beholding the brazen Serpent? If Christ himself which giveth Salvation do require Baptism, it is not for us that look for salvation, to sound and examine him whether unbaptized men may be saved, but seriously to do that which is required, and religiously to fear the danger which may grow by the want thereof. Had Christ only declared his will to have all men baptized, and not acquainted us with any cause why Baptism is necessary, our ignorance in the reason of that he enjoyneeth, might perhaps have hindered somewhat the forwardness of our obedience thereunto: whereas now being taught, that Baptism is necessary to take away sin, how have we the fear of God in our hearts, if care of delivering mens Souls from sin do not move us to use all means for their Baptism? Pelagius which denied utterly the guilt of original sin, and in that respect the necessity of Baptism, did notwithstanding both baptize Infants, and acknowledge their Baptism necessary for entrance into the Kingdom of God. Now the Law of Christ, which in these considerations maketh Baptism necessary, must be construed and understood according to rules of natural equity. Which rules if they themselves did not follow in expounding the Law of God, they would never be able to prove that the Scripture in saying, *Whoso believeth not the Gospel of Christ, is condemned already*; meaneth this sentence of those which can hear the Gospel, and have discretion when they hear to understand it, neither ought it to be applyed unto Infants, Deaf men and Foo's. That which teacheth them thus to interpret the Law of Christ is natural equity. And (because equity so teacheth) it is on all parts gladly confess that there may be in divers cases life by vertue of inward Baptism, even where outward is not found. So that if a y question be made, it is but about the bounds and limits of this possibility. For example, to think that a man whose Baptism the Crown of Martyrdom preventeth, doth lose, in that case, the happiness which so many thousands enjoy, that onely have had the grace to believe, and not the honour to seal the testimony thereof with death, were almost barbarous. Again, when some certain opinative men in Saint Bernards time began privately to hold that, because our Lord hath said, *Unless a man be born again of water*, therefore life, without either actual Baptism, or Martyrdom in stead of Baptism, cannot possibly be obtained at the hands of God: Bernard considering that the same equity which had moved them to think the necessity of Baptism no bar against the happy estate of unbaptized Martyrs, is as forcible for the warrant of their Salvation, in whom, although there be not the Sufferings of Holy Martyrs, there are the vertues which sanctified those Sufferings and made them precious in Gods sight, professed himself an enemy to that severity and strictness which admitteth no exception but of Martyrs only. For, siich he, if a man desirous of Baptism be suddenly cut off by death, in whom there wanted neither sound Faith, devout Hope, nor sincere Charity (God

m'Appl' post  
Cone. to Alex-  
triana. Basil.  
de Sp. Sc. 10.  
n T. C. l. 3. p. 134  
Hic which is  
not a Christi-  
an before he  
come to receive  
Baptism, cannot  
be made a  
Christian by  
Baptism; which  
is only the seal  
of the grace of  
God before re-  
ceived.  
o Iren. contra  
Heres. l. 1. c. 18.  
p Hic scelerat-  
issimi illi provo-  
cant quæstiones  
Adeo dicunt,  
baptismus non  
est necessarius  
quibus fide sa-  
tis est. Tert. de  
baptismo.  
Hinc nulla pro-  
deris fides, qui  
cum possit non  
percipit sacra-  
mentum. Bern.  
Epist. 70. ad  
Hugon.  
q 2 Reg. 5. 14.  
r Num. 21. 8.  
s Marc. 16. 16.  
t Institutio Sa-  
cramentorum  
quantum ad  
Deum autorem  
dispensationis  
est, quantum  
vero ad homi-  
nem obedi-  
entem necessitate.  
Quoniam in  
potestate Dei  
est præter ista  
hominem salva-  
re, sed in po-  
testate hominis  
non est, sine  
istâ ad salutem  
pervenire.  
Hug. de Sacra.  
lib. 1. cap. 5.  
u P. l. agius affe-  
rere arripit  
impetrate pro-  
fueris non

propter vitam, sed propter regnum Cælorum Baptismum parvulis conferentium. Eulib. Emiff. H'm. 5. de Pasch.  
2 Benignum leges interpretanda sunt, quo voluntas earum conservetur. L. Benign. D. de legib. & Senatuse.  
y T. C. l. 1. p. 143. z Bern. Epist. 70. ad Hugonem.



be merciful unto me, and pardon me if I erre) but verily of such a ones Salvation, in whom there is no other defect besides his faultless lack of Baptisme, despair I cannot, nor induce my mind to think his Faith void, his Hope confounded, and his Charity false to nothing, only because he hath not that which not contempt but impossibility withholdeth. *Tell me I beseech you (saith Ambrose) what there is in any of us more then to will, and to seek for our own good. Thy Servant Valentinian, O Lord, did wish. For Valentinian the Emperour dyed before his purpose to receive Baptisme could take effect.) And is it possible that he which had purposely thy Spirit given him to desire grace, should not receive that grace which that Spirit did desire? Doth it move you that the outward accustomed Solemnities were not done? As though Converts that suffer Martyrdom before Baptisme, did thereby forfeit their right to the Crown of eternal glory in the Kingdom of Heaven. If the blood of Martyrs in that case be their Baptisme, surely his religious desire of Baptisme standeth him in the same stead. It hath been therefore constantly held as well touching other Believers as Martyrs, that Baptisme taken away by necessity, is supplied by desire of Baptisme, because with enquiry this opinion doth best stand.*

b Qui ad tele-  
randam omnem  
pro Dei gloria  
sacrificium semel  
dicavit animam  
in Martyrium  
mibi videtur  
impletisse Summi  
ergo meriti est  
semel fuisse  
sententiam, atque  
ideo, ut dixi, ratio  
principatum  
obtinere possunt;  
et si forte propo-  
nendi dignetur  
facultatem, per-  
tinet tamen  
cuncta qua vo-  
luit pati. Joseph.  
l. de imper. sa-  
tio.  
c Gens. xvi. in  
Nativit.  
Beata Maria  
Cajetan. in 3.  
Theo. 9. 68. art. 1.  
et 2. Biel. in 4.  
Genes. 4. 4. q. 1.  
Tilman. Sege-  
berg. de sac. c. 1.  
Elisim. Neapol.  
in City. advers.  
heres. c. de bap-  
d 1 Cor. 7. 12.

e T C 13 p. 218  
It is a question  
whether there  
be any such ne-  
cessity of Bap-  
tisme, as that  
for the mini-  
sting thereof,  
the common  
decent orders  
should be bro-  
ken.

Touching Infants which dye unbaptized, first they neither have the Sacrament it self, nor any sense or conceit thereof, the judgement of many hath gone hard against them. But yet seeing grace is not absolutely tyed unto Sacraments, and besides, such is the lenity of God, that unto things altogether impossible he binderth no man, but where we cannot do what is enjoined us, accepteth our will to do in stead of the deed it self; Again, so far as there is in their Christian Parents and in the Church of God a presumed desire that the Sacrament of Baptisme might be given them, yea a purpose also that it shall be given; remorse of equity hath moved divers of the School Divines in these considerations ingenuously to grant, that God all merciful to such as are not in themselves able to desire Baptisme, imputeth the secret desire that others have in their behalf, and accepteth the same as theirs, rather than casteth away their Souls for that which no man is able to help. And of the Will of God to impart his grace unto Infants without Baptisme, in that case the very circumstance of their natural birth may serve as a just Argument, whereupon it is not to be misliked that men in charitable presumption do gather a great likelihood of their Salvation, to whom the benefit of Christian parentage being given, the rest that should follow is prevented by some such casualty as man hath himself no power to void. For, we are plainly taught of God. <sup>4</sup> That the Seed of faithful Parentage is holy from the very birth. Which a be it we may not so understand, as if the Children of believing Parents were without sin, or grace from baptized Parents derived by Propagation, of God by Covenant and Promise tyed to save any in meer regard of their Parents Belief: yet seeing that to all professors of the name of Christ, this preeminence above Infidels is freely given, the fruit of their bodies bringeth into the World with it a present interest and right to those means wherewith the Ordinance of Christ is that his Church shall be sanctified, it is not to be thought that he which as it were from Heaven hath nominated and designed them unto holiness by special privilege of their very birth, will himself deprive them of Regeneration and inward grace, only because necessary depriveth them of outward Sacraments. In which case, it were the part of Charity to hope, and to make men rather partial than cruel Judges, if we had not those fair appearances which here we have. Wherefore a necessity there is of receiving, and a necessity of administering the Sacrament of Baptisme; the one peradventure not so absolute as some have thought, but out of all peradventure the other more straight and narrow, than that the Church which is by office a Mother unto such as crave at their hands the Sacred Mystery of their new-Birth, should repel them, and see them dye unsatisfied of these their Ghostly desires, rather than give them their Souls Rites, with omission of those things which serve but only for the more convenient and orderly Administration thereof. For as on the one side we grant that those sentences of Holy Scripture which make Sacraments most necessary to eternal life, are no prejudice to their Salvation that want them by some inevitable necessity and without any fault of their own; so it ought in reason to be likewise acknowledged, that so far as our Lord himself maketh Baptisme necessary, necessary whether we respect the good

good received by Baptisme, or the Testimony thereby yielded unto God of that humility and meek obedience, which reposing wholly it self on the absolute authority of his Commandment, and on the truth of his Heavenly Promise, doubteth not but from Creatures despicable in their own condition and substance to obtain grace of inestimable value, or rather not from them, but from him, yet by them as by his appointed means, howsoever he by the secret ways of his own incomprehensible mercy may be thought to save without Baptisme, this cleareth not the Church from guiltiness of blood, if through her superfluous scrupulosity, lets and impediments of less regard should cause a grace of so great moment to be with-held, wherein our mercyleless strictness may be our own harm, although not theirs towards whom we shew it; and we for the hardness of our hearts may perish, albeit they through Gods unspeakable mercy do live. God which did not afflict that innocent, whose Circumcision *Moses* had over-long deferred, took revenge upon *Moses* himself for the injury which was done through so great neglect, giving us thereby to understand, that they whom Gods own mercy saveth without us, are on our parts notwithstanding, and as much as in us lieth, even destroyed, when under insufficient pretences, we defraud them of such ordinary outward helps as we should exhibit. We have for Baptisme no day set as the Jews had for Circumcision, neither have we by the Law of God, but only by the Churches discretion, a place thereunto appointed. Baptisme therefore, even in the meaning of the Law of Christ, belongeth unto Infants capable thereof, from the very instant of their birth. Which if they have not, howsoever, rather then lose it by being put off, because the time, the place, or some such like circumstance, doth not solemnly enough concur, the Church as much as in her lyeth, wilfully casteth away their souls.

61 The ancients it may be were too severe, and made the necessity of Baptisme more absolute then reason would, as touching Infants. But will any man say that they, notwithstanding their too much rigour herein, did in that respect sustain and tolerate defects of local or of personal solemnities, belonging to the Sacrament of Baptisme? The Apostles themselves did neither use nor appoint for Baptisme any certain time: The Church for general Baptisme heretofore made choice of two chief days in the year; the Feast of Easter, and the Feast of Pentecost. Which custome, when certain Churches in *Sicily* began to violate without cause, they were by *Leo* Bishop of *Rome* advised, rather to conform themselves to the rest of the World in things so reasonable, then to offend mens minds through needless singularity: howbeit, always providing that nevertheless in apparent peril of death, danger of siege, streights of persecution, fear of shipwrack, and the like exigents, no respect of times should cause this singular defence of true safety to be denyed unto any. This of *Leo* did but confirm that sentence which *Villar* had many years before given, extending the same exception as well unto places as times. That which Saint *Augustine* speaketh of women, hasting to bring their children to the Church when they saw danger, is a weak proof, that when necessity did not leave them so much time, it was not then permitted them neither to make a Church of their own home: Which answer dischargeeth likewise their example of a sick Jew, carried in bed to the place of Baptisme, and not baptized at home in private. The cause why such kind of Baptisme barred men afterwards from entering into holy orders, the reason wherefore it was objected against *Novatian*, in what respect; and how far forth it did disable, may be gathered by the twelfth Canon, set down in the Councel of *Neocaesarea*, after this manner. *A man which hath been baptized in sickness, is not after to be ordained Priest.* For it may be thought, that such do rather at that time, because they see no other remedy, than of a voluntary mind, lay hold on the Christian faith, unless their

*In omnibus obligationibus in quibus dies non ponitur, praesens debet observari, lib. 1. c. 4. De Reg. Jur.*

What things in Baptisme have been dispensed with by the Fathers respecting necessity.

*h. T. c. 1. p. 146. The Authours themselves of that error that they cannot be saved which are not baptized, did never seek no remedy of*

the mischief in Womens or private Baptisme. *T. C. li. 10. p. 119. What plainer testimony can there be then that of Augustine; which noteth the use of the Church to have been, to come to the Church with their children in danger of death, and that when some had opinion, that their children could not be saved if they were not baptized, Cont. lit. Form. lib. 1. cap. 13. I would also know of him what he will answer to that, which is noted of a Christian Jew desperately sick of the Palsie, that was with his bed carried to the place of Baptisme, Soc. lib. 7. cap. 4. What will he answer to this, That those which were baptized in their beds, were thereby made unapt to have any place among the Clergy as they call them; doth it not leave a note of infamy in those, which had procured that Baptisme should be ministered in private houses? Euseb. lib. 6. cap. 42. What unto the Emperours Decree, which upon authority of the ancient Laws, and of the Apostles, forbiddeth that the holy things should be administered in any private mans house? Just. Novel. 57. i. Leo Epist. 4. ad Episc. Sicil. k. Vill. Epist. ad Theoph. Alexand. in Praefat. Damas.*

true and sincere meaning be made afterwards the more manifest, or else the scarcity of  
 others enforce the Church to admit them. They bring in Justinian's Imperial Consti-  
 tution, but to what purpose, seeing it only forbiddeth men to have the mysteries of  
 God administered in their private Chappels, lest under that pretence Hereticks  
 should do secretly those things which were unlawful? In which consideration he  
 therefore commandeth, that if they would use those private Oratories otherwise  
 than only for their private Prayers, the Bishop should appoint them a Clerk, whom  
 they might entertain for that purpose. This is plain by later Constitutions, made  
 in the time of Leo: \* *It was thought good (saith the Emperour) in their judgement*  
 which have gone before, that in private Chappels none should celebrate the holy Com-  
 munion, but Priests belonging unto greater Churches. Which Order they took as it  
 seemeth for the custody of Religion, lest men should secretly receive from Hereticks,  
 † *Idem Con. 15.* in stead of the food, the bane of their Souls, pollution in place of expiation. † Again,  
 Whereas a sacred Canon of the sixth reverend Synod requireth Baptism, as others have  
 likewise the holy Sacrifices and Mysteries to be celebrated only in Temples hallowed  
 for publick use, and not in private Oratories; which stritt Decrees appear to have  
 been made heretofore in regard of Hereticks, which entered closely into such mens houses  
 as favoured their opinions, whom, under colour of performing with them such religious  
 Offices, they drew from the soundness of true Religion: Now that perverse opinions  
 through the grace of Almighty God are extinct and gone, the cause of former re-  
 straints being taken away, we see no reason but that private Oratories may hence for-  
 ward enjoy that liberty, which to have granted them heretofore, had not been safe.  
 In sum, all these things alledged are nothing, nor will it ever be proved while  
 the world doth continue, but that the practice of the Church in cases of extream  
 necessity, hath made for private Baptism always more than against it. Yea, Baptism  
 by any man in the case of necessity, was the voice of the whole world heretofore.  
 Neither is Tertullian, Epiphanius, Augustine, or any other of the ancient against  
 it. The boldness of such as pretending Tecla's example, took openly upon them  
 both Baptism, and all other publick Functions of Priesthood, Tertullian severely  
 controlleth, saying: \* *To give Baptism is in truth the Bishops Right. After him is*  
*belongeth unto Priests and Deacons; but not to them without authority from him recei-*  
*ved. For so the honour of the Church requireth, which being kept, preserveth peace.*  
*Were it not in this respect, the Laity might do the same, all sorts might give even as all*  
*sorts receive.* But because Emulation is the mother of Schismes, Let it content thee  
 (which art of the order of Lay-men) to do it in necessity when the state of time, or  
 place, or person thereunto compelleth. For then is their boldness priviledged that help,  
 when the circumstances of other mens dangers craveth it. What he granteth generally  
 to Lay-persons of the House of God, the same we cannot suppose he denyeth to  
 any sort or sex contained under that name, unless himself did restrain the limits of  
 his own speech; especially seeing that Tertullian's rule of interpretation is 'else-  
 where, Specialties are signified under that which is general, because they are therein  
 comprehended. A1 which Tertullian doth deny, is, that women may be called to  
 bear, or publicly take upon them to execute Offices of Ecclesiastical Order,  
 whereof none but men are capable. As for Epiphanius, he striketh on the very self-  
 same Anvil with Tertullian. And in necessity if S. Augustine alloweth as much unto  
 Lay-men as Tertullian doth, his not mentioning of women, is but a slender proof  
 that his meaning was to exclude women. Finally, the Council of Carthage likewise,  
 although it make no express submission, may be very well presumed willing to  
 stoop, as other Positive Ordinances do, to the countermands of necessity. Judge  
 therefore what the Ancients would have thought, if in their days it had been heard  
 which is published in ours, \* that because, *The substance of the Sacrament doth chie-*  
*ly*  
 Carthage, cap. 100. It is simply without exception decreed, that a woman ought not to baptize. b *Tertul. de Baptif.*  
 c *Subiectum est generali speciale. In ipso significatur Tert. de velan. Virg. Posito genere suppo-*  
*nitur species.* Az. in l. 1. c. de Transact. d *Non permittitur mulieri in Ecclesia loqui, sed nec docere, nec tingere, nec of-*  
*ferre, nec ullum virile munus necum Sacerdotum officii sortem sibi vendicare.* Tertul. de velan. Virg. e *T. C. l. 1. p. 144.*  
 The substance of the Sacrament dependeth chiefly on the Institution and Word of God, which is the forme, add as it were  
 the life of the Sacrament. T. C. lib. 1. p. 144. Although part of the Institution be observed, yet if the whole Institution  
 be not, it is no Sacrament. T. C. lib. 1. p. 146. The orders which God hath set, are, that it should be done in the Congrega-  
 tion, and by the Minister. T. C. lib. 1. p. 146. And I will further say, that although the Infants which dye without Baptisme  
 should be assuredly damned, (which is most false) yet ought not the orders which God hath set in his Church be broken  
 a *ret* this sort.



fly depend on the institution of God, which is the form, and as it were the life of the Sacrament; therefore first, if the whole Institution be not kept, it is no Sacrament; and secondly, if Baptism be private his institution is broken, in as much as according to the orders which he hath set for Baptism, it should be done in the Congregation, from whose Ordinance in this point we ought not to swerve, although we know that Infants should be assuredly damned without Baptism. O Sir, you that would spurn thus at such, as in case of so dreadful extremity should lye prostrate before your feet; you that would turn away your face from them at the hour of their most need; you that would damme up your ears, and harden your hearts as Iron, against the unresistable cries of Supplicants, calling upon you for mercy with terms of such invocation, as that most dreadful perplexity might minister, if God by miracle did open the mouths of Infants, to express their supposed necessity, should first imagine your self in their case, and them in yours. This done, let their supplications proceed out of your mouth, and your answer out of theirs. Would you then contentedly hear, *My Son, the Rites and Solemnities of Baptism must be kept, we may not do all that good may* come of it, neither are souls to be delivered from eternal death and condemnation, by breaking Orders which Christ hath set; would you in their case yourself be shaken off with these answers, and not rather embrace, inclosed with both your arms, a sentence, which now is no Gospel unto you, *I will have mercy and not Sacrifice*? To acknowledge Christs Institution the ground of both Sacraments, I suppose, no Christian man will refuse: For it giveth them their very nature, it appointeth the matter whereof they consist, the form of their administration it teacheth, and it blesteth them with that grace whereby to us they are both pledges and instruments of life. Nevertheless, seeing Christs Institution containeth, besides that which maketh compleat the Essence or Nature, other things that only are parts as it were of the furniture of Sacraments, the difference between these two must unfold that which the general terms of indefinite speech would confound. If the place appointed for Baptism be a part of Christs Institution, it is but his Institution as sacrifice, Baptism his Institution as mercy, in this case. He which requireth both Mercy and Sacrifice, rejecteth his own Institution of Sacrifice, where the offering of Sacrifice would hinder mercy from being shewed; External Circumstances even in the holiest and highest actions, are but the *lesser things of the Law*, whereunto those actions themselves being compared are the greater; and therefore as the greater are of such importance that they *must be done*, so in that extremity before supposed, if our account of the lesser which are *not to be omitted*, should cause omission of that which is more to be accounted of, were not this our strict obedience to Christs Institution touching *Mint and Cummin*, a disobedience to his Institution concerning love? But sith no Institution of Christ hath so strictly tyed Baptism to publick Assemblies, as it hath done all men unto Baptism, away with these mercies and bloody Sentences, let them never be found standing in the Books and Writings of a Christian man, they savour not of Christ, nor of his most gracious and meek Spirit, but under colour of exact obedience, they nourish cruelty and hardness of heart.

*Notro peccati  
to alterum salu-  
ti consulere non  
debemus. Aug.  
lib. cont. Mend.  
cap. 17.  
Math. 23.23*

*Math. 23.23*

62. To leave private Baptism therefore, and to come unto Baptism by women, which they say, is no more a Sacrament, then any other ordinary washing or bathing of a mans body; the reason whereupon they ground their opinion herein is such, as making Baptism by Women void, because Women are no Ministers in the Church of

Whether baptism by Women be true baptism: good and effectual to them that receive it.

*I T. C. lib. 1. pag. 144.* On this point, whether he be a Minister or no, dependeth not only the dignity, but also the being of the Sacrament. So that I take the baptism of Women to be no more the holy Sacrament of baptism, then any other dally or ordinary washing of the child.

God, must needs generally annihilate the Baptism of all unto whom their conceit shall apply this exception, whether it be in regard of sex, of quality, of insufficiency, or whatsoever. For if want of Calling do frustrate Baptism, they that baptize without Calling do nothing, be they Women or Men. To make Women Teachers in the House of God, were a gross absurdity, seeing the Apostle hath said, *I permit not a Woman to teach*: And again, *Let your Women in Churches be silent*. Those extraordinary gifts of speaking with tongues and prophesying, which God at that

*1 Tim. 2.12.  
1 Tim. 14.34*

time

\* Clem. Const.  
Apostol. lib. 2.  
cap. 9.

† T. C. l. 9. 344

a Licet prohibeantur, ne si permitterentur, eorum occasione proveniant ad illicita. Iul. de Adu. l. i. Officium. D. de rei vind.

b Ephes. 4. 5.

c Una est natura

utrasque de verba,

alia de caro,

una de carne,

alia de spiritu,

una de aternitate,

alia de mortalitate:

una de masculo

et sumina, alia

de Deo et Ecclesia.

Sed ipsa duo

singularia sunt.

Quomodo enim

utrum non potest

repeti, sic

nec Baptismus

iterari, Prosp.

Sent. 331. Eja

fratres, lacrimis

genialis fontis

ad lacrimis con-

volate, ut semper

vobis aqua suffi-

ficiat, hoc ante

omnia scientes

quia hanc nec

effundere licet

nec rursus ban-

rire. Zeno.

Inuit. ad font.

d. August. de

Baptis. cont.

Don. l. 1. c. 14.

time did not only bestow upon Men, but on Women also, made it the harder to hold them confined with private bounds. Whereupon the Apostles Ordinance was necessary against Womens publique admission to teach. And because when Law hath begun some one thing or other well, it giveth good occasion either to draw by judicious exposition out of the very Law it self, or to annex to the Law by authority and jurisdiction things of like conveniency; therefore \*Clement extendeth this Apostolike Constitution to Baptism. For (saith he) *If we have denied them leave to teach, how should any man dispense with nature, and make them Ministers of holy things, seeing this unskillfulness is a part of the Grecians impiety, which for the service of women goddesses, have women Priests?* I somewhat marvel, that men which would not willingly be thought to speak or write, but with good conscience, dare hereupon openly avouch Clement for a witness, that *as when the Church began not only to decline, but to fall away from the sincerity of Religion, so it borrowed a number of other prophanations of the Heathens, so it borrowed this, and would needs have women Priests, as the Heathens had; and that this was an occasion of bringing Baptism by Women into the Church of God.* Is it not plain in their own eyes, that first by an evidence which forbiddeth Women to be Ministers of Baptism, they endeavour to shew how Women were admitted unto that Function in the wain and declination of Christian piety: Secondly, that by an evidence rejecting the Heathens, and condemning them of impiety, they would prove such affection towards Heathens, as ordereth the affairs of the Church by the pattern of their example: And Thirdly, that out of an evidence which nameth the Heathens, as being in some part a reason why the Church had no Women Priests, they gather, that Heathens to have been one of the first occasions why it had. So that throughout every branch of this testimony their issue is, *Yea*, and their evidence directly *Noe*. But to Womens Baptism in private by occasion of urgent necessity, the reasons that only concern ordinary Baptism in publick, are no just prejudice; neither can we by force thereof disprove the practice of those Churches which (necessity requiring) allow Baptism in private to be administered by Women.

We may nor from Laws that prohibit any thing with restraint, conclude absolute and unlimited prohibitions: Although we deny not but they which utterly forbid such Baptisme, may have perhaps wherewith to justify their orders against it. For, even things lawful are well prohibited, when there is fear lest they make the way too unlawful more easie. And it may be, the liberty of Baptisme by Women at such times, doth sometimes embolden the rather sort to do it where no such necessity is. But whether of permission besides Law, or in presumption against Law they do it, it is thereby altogether frustrate, void, and as though it were never given. They which have not at the first their right Baptisme, must of necessity be re-baptized, because the Law of Christ tyeth all men to receive Baptisme. Iteration of Baptism once given hath been always thought a manifest contempt of that ancient Apostolick Aphorisme, *One Lord, One Faith, One Baptisme*; Baptisme not only one inasmuch as it hath every where the same substance, and offereth unto all men the same grace, but one also for that it ought not to be received by any one man above once. We serve that Lord which is but one, because no other can be joined with him: We embrace that Faith which is but one, because it admitteth no innovation: That Baptisme we receive which is but one, because it cannot be received often. For how should we practise Iteration of Baptisme, and yet teach that we are by Baptisme born anew; that by Baptisme we are admitted into the Heavenly society of Saints, that those things be really and effectually done by Baptisme, which are no more possible to be often done, than a man can naturally be often born, or civilly be often adopted into any ones Stock and Family? This also is the cause why they that present us unto Baptisme, are intitled for ever after, our Parents in God; and the reason why there we receive new names, in token that by Baptisme we are made new creatures. As Christ hath therefore dyed and risen again from the dead but once, so the Sacrament which both extinguisheth in him our former sin, and beginneth in us a new condition of life, is by one only actual administration for ever available, according to that in the Nicene Creed, *I believe one Baptisme for the remission of sins.* And because second Baptisme was ever abhorred in the Church of

Ord

God as a kind of incestuous birth; they that iterate Baptism, are driven under some pretence or other to make the former Baptisme void. <sup>a</sup> *Tertullian* the first that proposed to the Church; <sup>b</sup> *Agrippinus* the first in the Church that accepted, and against the use of the Church; *Novatian* the first that publicly began to practice re-baptization, did it therefore upon these two grounds; a true perswasion that Baptisme is necessary; and a false, that the Baptisme which others administered was not Baptisme. *Novatianus* his conceit was, that none can administer true Baptisme but the true Church of Jesus Christ; that he and his followers alone were the Church; and for the rest he accounted them wicked and prophane persons, such as by Baptisme could cleanse no man, unless they first did purifie themselves, and reform the faults wherewith he charged them. At which time <sup>c</sup> *St. Cyprian* with the greatest part of African Bishops, because they likewise thought that none but only the true Church of God can baptize; and were of nothing more certainly perswaded, than that Hereticks are as rotten branches cut off from the life and body of the true Church, gathered hereby that the Church of God both may with good consideration, and ought to reverse that Baptisme which is given by Hereticks. These held and practised their own opinion, yet with great protestations often made that they neither loved awith the left, nor thought in any respect the worse of them that were of a contrary mind. In requital of which ingenuous moderation, the rest that withstood them, did it in peaceable sort, with very good regard had of them as of men in error, but not in Heresie. The Bishop of *Rome* against their novelties, upheld, as be seemed him, the ancient and true Apostolick customes, till they which unadvisedly before had erred, became in a manner all <sup>d</sup> reconciled friends unto Truth, and saw that Heresie in the Ministers of Baptism, could no way evacuate the force thereof; <sup>e</sup> such Heresie alone excepted, as by reason of unsoundness in the highest Articles of Christian Faith, presumed to change, and by changing to maim the substance, the form of Baptism. In which respect the Church did neither simply disanul, nor absolutely ratifie Baptism by Hereticks. For the Baptism which Novatianists gave, stood firm; whereas they whom <sup>f</sup> *Samosotenians* had baptized, were rebaptized. It was likewise ordered in the <sup>g</sup> Council of *Arles*, that if any Arian did reconcile himself to the Church, they should admit him without new Baptism, unless by examination they found him not baptized in the Name of the Trinity. *Dionysius* Bishop of *Alexandria* maketh report how there lived under him a man of good reputation, and of very ancient continuance in that Church, who being present at the Rites of Baptism, and observing with better consideration than ever before, what was there done, came, and with weeping submission craved of his Bishop not to deny him Baptism, the due of all which profess Christ, seeing it had been so long since his evil hap to be deceived by the fraud of Hereticks, and at their hands (which till now he never thoroughly and duely weighed) to take a Baptism in full fraught with blasphemous impieties; a Baptism in nothing like unto that which the true Church of Christ useth. The Bishop greatly moved thereat, yet durst not adventure to re-baptize, but did the best he could to put him in good comfort, using much perswasion with him not to trouble himself with things that were past and gone, nor after so long continuance in the fellowship of Gods people, to call now in question his first entrance. The poor man that saw himself in this sort answered, but not satisfied, spent afterwards his life in continual perplexity, whereof the Bishop remained fearful to give release: perhaps too fearful, if the Baptism were such as his own Declaration importeth. For that the substance whereof was rotten at the very first, is never by tract of time able to recover soundness. And where true Baptism was not before given, the case of re-baptization is clear. But by this it appeareth that Baptism is not void in regard of Heresie; and therefore much less through any other moral defect in the Minister thereof. Under which second pretence, Donatists notwithstanding, took upon them to make frustrate the

*Ter. de Bapt. c. 1.*  
*Cyp. Epist. 71.*

*Euseb. lib. 7. cap. 12, 13.*  
*Cyp. Epist. 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76.*

*h Illi ipsi Episcopi qui rebaptizandos Hereticos cum Cypriano flaturans, ad antiquam consuetudinem revoluti, novum emisere decretum, Hieron. Cont. Lucifer. Vide et August. cont. Crescon. lib. 3. cap. 2. 3. et Epist. 48. i Dixisti fieri non posse ut in falso baptismo inquinatus abluat, immundum emundat, supplantatus erigat, porcinus liberet, rem veniam tribuat, dominum absolvat. Bene hac omnia paterunt ad solos Hereticos pertinere, qui salvaverunt symbolum, dum alter dixit duo Deos, cum Deus unus sit, alter Patrem vult in persona Filii cognoscere, alter carnem subducentem Vultu Dei, per quam Deo reconciliatus est mundum: et ceteri hujusmodi, qui a Sacramenti Catholici alieni noscuntur. Oper. lib. 1.*

*k Synod. Nicen. cap. 19.*  
*l Synod. 1. Arelas. cap. 8.*

*m Euseb. Eccl. Hist. l. 7. c. 8.*



Circa an. 300.

the Churches Baptism, and themselves to re-baptize *their own fry*. For whereas some forty years after the Martyrdom of blessed *Cyprian*, the Emperour *Dioclesian* began to "persecute the Church of Christ; and for the speedier abolishment of their Religion, to burn up their sacred Books, there were in the Church it self *Traditors*, content to deliver up the Books of God by composition, to the end their own lives might be spared. Which men growing thereby odious to the rest, whose constancy was greater; it fortuned that after, when one *Cacilian* was ordained Bishop in the Church of *Carthage*, whom others endeavoured in vain to defeat by excepting against him as a *Traditor*, they whose accusations could not prevail, desperately joined themselves in one, and made a Bishop of their own crue, accounting from that day forward their Faction the on'y true and sincere Church. The first Bishop on that part was *Majorinus*, whose Successor *Donatus*, being the first that wrote in defence of their Schism, the Birds that were hatched before by others, have their names from him. *Arrians* and *Donatists* began both about one time. Which Heresies according to the different strength of their own sinews, wrought as hope of success led them, the one with the choicest wits, the other with the multitude, so far, that after long and troublesome experience the perfectest view men could take of both was hardly able to induce any certain determinate resolution, whether Error may do more by the curious subtilty of sharp Discourse, or else by the meer appearance of zeal and devout affection; the later of which two aids, gave *Donatists*, beyond all mens expectation, as great a sway as ever any Schism or Heresie had within that reach of the Christian world where it bred and grew: the rather perhaps, because the Church which neither greatly feared them, and besides had necessary cause to bend it self against others that aimed directly at a far higher mark, the Deity of Christ, was contented to let *Donatists* have their course by the space of three-score years and above, even from ten years before *Constantine*, till the time

b Circa an. 370.

that *Optatus* Bishop of *Milevis* published his books against *Parmenian*. During which term, and the space of that Schismes continuance afterwards, they had, besides many other Secular and worldly means to help them forward, these special advantages. First, the very occasion of their breach with the Church of God, a just hatred and dislike of *Traditors*, seemed plausible, they easily perswaded their hearers that such men could not be holy as held communion and fellowship with them that betray Religion. Again, when to dazle the eyes of the simple, and to prove that it can be no Church which is not holy, they had in shew and sound of words the glorious pretence of the Creed Apostolick, *I beleve the holy Catholick Church*; we need not think it any strang: thing that with the multitude they gain credit. And avouching that such as are not of the true Church can administer no true Baptism, they had for this point whole Volums of *St. Cyprians* own writing, together with the judgment of divers *African Synods*, whose sentence was the same with his. Whereupon, the Fathers were likewise in defence of their just cause very greatly prejudiced, both for that they could not inforce the duty of mens communion with a Church confest to be in many things blame-worthy, unless they should oftentimes seem to speak as half defenders of the faults themselves, or at the least not so vehement accusers thereof as their adversaries; and to withstand iteration of Baptism, the other branch of the *Donatists* Heresie was impossible, without manifest and profest rejection of *Cyprian*, whom the world universally did in his life time admire as the greatest amongst Prelates, and now honour as the lowest in the Kingdom of Heaven. So true we find it by experience of all Ages in the Church of God, that the teachers error is the peoples tryal, harder and heavier by so much to bear, as he is in worth and regard greater, that mis-perswadeth them. Although there was odds between *Cyprians* cause and theirs, he differing from others of sounder understanding in that point, but not dividing himself from the body of the Church by Schism, as did the *Donatists*. For which cause, *saith Vincenius*, *Of one and the same opinion we judge (which may seem strange) the Authors Catholick, and the followers heretical; we acquit the Masters, and condemn the Scholars; they are Heirs of Heaven which have written those Books, the defenders whereof are troden down to the pit of Hell*. The invectives of Catholick Writers therefore against them are sharp; the words of *Imperial Edicts* by *Honorius* and *Theodosius* made to bridle them ve-

c *Vincen. Lib. viii. advers. heres. cap. 11.*  
d *Vide C. Theod. lib. 16. tit. 6. l. Adversarios*  
e *Nullum circa an. 405.*

ry bitter, the punishments severe in revenge of their folly. Howbeit for fear (as we may conjecture) lest much should be derogated from the Baptism of the Church, and Baptism by Donatists be more esteemed of than was meet, if on the one side that which Hereticks had done ill should stand as good, on the other side that be reversed which the Catholick Church had well and religiously done, divers better minded than advised men, thought it fittest to meet with this inconvenience, by re-baptizing Donatists as well as they re-baptized Catholicks. For stay whereof, the same Emperours saw it meet to give their Law a double edge, whereby it might equally on both sides cut off not only Hereticks which re-baptized whom they could pervert; but also Catholick and Christian Priests which did the like unto such as before had taken Baptism at the hands of Hereticks, and were afterwards reconciled to the Church of God. Donatists were therefore in process of time, though with much ado, wearied, and at the length worn out by the constancy of that Truth which teacheth, that evil Ministers of good things are as Torches, a light to others, a waste to none but themselves only, and that the foulness of their hands can neither any whit impair the vertue, nor stain the glory of the Mysteries of Christ. Now that which was done amiss by virtuous and good men, as *Cyprian* carried aside with hatred against Heresie, and was secondly followed by Donatists, whom Envy and Rancor covered with shew of Godliness, made obstinate to cancel whatsoever the Church did in the Sacrament of Baptism, hath of later days, in another respect, far different from both the former, been brought freshly again into practice. For the Anabaptist re-baptized, because, in his estimation the Baptism of the Church is frustrate, for that we give it unto Infants which have not Faith, whereas, according unto Christs Institution, as they conceive it, true Baptism should always presuppose actual belief in Receivers, and is otherwise no Baptism. Of these three Errors, there is not any but hath been able at the least to alledge in defence of it self many fair probabilities.

Notwithstanding, sith the Church of God hath hitherto always constantly maintained, that to re-baptize them which are known to have received true Baptism is unlawful; that if Baptism seriously be administered in the same Element, and with the same form of words which Christs Institution teacheth, there is no other defect in the World that can make it frustrate, or deprive it of the nature of a true Sacrament; And lastly, that Baptism is only then to be re-administred, when the first delivery thereof is void, in regard of the fore-alleged imperfections and no other, shall we now in the case of Baptism, which having both for matter and form the substance of Christs Institution, is by a fourth sort of men voided, for the only defect of Ecclesiastical Authority in the Minister, think it enough that they blow away the force thereof with the bare strength of their very breath, by saying, *We take such Baptism to be no more the Sacrament of Baptism, than any other ordinary bathing to be a Sacrament?* It becometh generally all sorts of men to keep themselves within the limits of their own vocation. And seeing God, from whom mens several degrees and preeminences do proceed, hath appointed them in his Church, at whose hands his pleasure is that we should receive both Baptism, and all other publick medicinable helps of Soul, perhaps thereby the more to settle our hearts in the love of our ghostly Superiors, they have small cause to hope that with him their voluntary Services will be accepted, who thrust themselves into Functions, either above their capacity or besides their place, and over-boldly intermeddle with Duties, whereof no charge was ever given them. They that in any thing exceed the compass of their own order, do as much as in them lyeth to dissolve that Order which is the harmony of Gods Church. Suppose therefore that in these and the like considerations the Law did utterly prohibite Baptism to be administered by any other than persons thereunto solemnly consecrated, what necessity soever happen. Are not many things firm being done, although in part done otherwise than Positive rigour and strictness did require? Nature as much as is possible inclineth unto valdities and preservations. Dissolutions and Nullities of things done are not only not favoured, but hated, when either urged without cause, or extended beyond their reach: If therefore at any time it come to pass, that in teaching publicly or privately, in delivering this blessed Sacrament of Regeneration, some unanctified obtrude

\* si quis C. No.  
sanct. Baptism.  
circa an. 413.

a Num. 16. 10.  
Levit. 10. 1.  
1 Sam. 13. 12.  
2 Sam. 6. 6.  
2 Chron. 26. 16.  
Heb. 5. 4.

b Saq. 306.  
Lugdunensi en  
litteris Decret.  
de matrim. con-  
tra H. Dams.  
Barthol. Reg.  
109. Prohibito  
fori si sans  
non tenent. In  
prohibitionibus  
autem circa res  
favorabiles  
contrarium

a T.C. 1.1.p.144

As S. Paul saith  
that a man  
cannot preach  
which is not  
sent, Ro. 10. 15.  
no not al-  
though he  
speak the  
words of the  
Scripture & in-  
terpret them:  
So I cannot see  
how a man can  
baptize unless  
he be sent to  
that end, al-  
though he  
poure water, &  
rehearse the  
words which  
are to be re-  
hearsed in the  
Ministry of  
Baptisme.

b T.C. 1.1.p.165

If either the  
matter of the  
Sacrament, or  
the form of it,  
which is the  
Institution  
[which things  
are only sub-  
stantial parts]  
were wanting,  
there should  
then have been  
no Sacrament  
at all ministered.  
But they being  
retained, & yet  
other things  
used which are  
not conveni-  
ent, the Sacra-  
ment is mini-  
stered, but not  
sincerely.

c T.C. 1.3.p.117

d T.C. 1.3.p.121

e T.C. 1.3.p.135

The Minister  
is of the sub-  
stance of the  
Sacrament,  
considering  
that it is a prin-  
cipal part of

Christ's Institution. *Bez. Epist. 2. Deft aqua, & tamen Baptismus aliquid differri cum adificatione non possit nec debet, ego certe quovis alio liquore non minus rite quam aqua baptizavi.* IT.C. 1.3.p.138. Shew me why the breach of the In-  
stitution in the form should make the Sacrament unavailable, and not the breach of this part (which concerneth the Mini-  
ster) T.C. *ibid.* Howsoever some learned and godly give some liberty in the change of the Elements of the holy Sacrament,  
yet I do not see how that can stand. *Idem* p. 137. I would rather judge him baptized into the Name of Christ, without ad-  
ding the Father and the Holy Ghost, when the Element of water is added, than when the other words being duly kept, some  
other liquor is used.

hand, contrary to Christs supposed Ordinance, do intrude it self to execute that, whereupon the Laws of God and his Church have deputed others, which of these two opinions seemeth more agreeable with Equiry, ours that disallow what is done amiss, yet make not the force of the Word and Sacraments, much less their nature and verry substance to depend on the Ministers authority and calling, or else theirs which defeat, disanull, and annihilate both, in respect of that one only personal defect, there being not any Law of God which saith, that if the Minister be incompetent, his Word shall be no Word, his Baptism no Baptism? He which teacheth and is not sent, loseth the reward, but yet retaineth the name of a Teacher; his usurped actions have in him the same nature which they have in others, although they yield him not the same comfort. And if these two cases be peers, the case of Doctrine and the case of Baptism both alike, sith no defect in their vocation that teach the Truth, is able to take away the benefit thereof from him which heareth, wherefore should the want of a lawful calling in them that baptize, make Baptism to be vain? They grant that the matter and the form in Sacraments are the only parts of substance, and that if these two be retained, albeit other things besides be used which are inconvenient, the Sacrament notwithstanding is administered but not sincerely. Why persist they not in this opinion? when by these fair speeches they have put us in hope of agreement, wherefore sip they up their words again, interlacing such frivolous Interpretations and Glosses as disgrace thir Sentence? What should move them, having named the *matter* and the *form* of the Sacrament, to give us presently warnings, that they mean by the *form* of the Sacrament the *instituition*, which exposition darkeneth whatsoever was before plain? For whereas in common understanding, that *form*, which added to the Element doth make a Sacrament, and is of the outward substance thereof, containeth onely the words of usual application, they set it down (left common Dictionaries should deceive us) that the *form* doth signifie in their Language the *instituition*, which institution in truth comprehendeth both form and matter. Such are their fumbling shifts to inclose the Ministers vocation within the compass of some essential part of the Sacrament. A thing that can never stand with sound and sincere construction. For what if the Minister be no circumstance, but a subordinate efficient cause in the work of Baptism? What if the Ministers vocation be a matter of personal necessity, and not a Ceremony variable as times and occasions require? What if his calling be a principal part of the Institution of Christ? Doth it therefore follow that the Ministers authority is of the substance of the Sacrament, and as incident into the nature thereof as the matter and the form it self, yea, more incident? For whereas in case of necessity the greatest amongst them professeth the change of the Element of Water lawful, and others which like not so well this opinion, could be better content that voluntarily the words of Christs Institution were altered, and men baptized in the Name of Christ, without either mention made of the Father or the Holy Ghost, nevertheless, in denying that Baptism administered by private persons ought to be reckoned of as a Sacrament, they both agree. It may therefore please them both to consider, that Baptism is an action in part Moral, in part Ecclesiastical, and in part Mystical: Moral, as being a duty which men perform towards God; Ecclesiastical, in that it belongeth unto Gods Church as a publike duty; finally, Mystical, if we respect what God doth thereby intend to work. The greatest Moral perfection of Baptism consisteth in mens devout obedience to the Law of God, which Law requireth both the outward act or thing done, and also that Religious affection which God doth so much regard, that without it whatsoever we do is hateful in his sight, who therefore is said to respect *Adverbs* more than *Verbs*, because the end of his Law in appointing what we shall do is our own perfection, which perfection consisteth chiefly in the virtuous disposition of the mind, and approveth it

self



self to him not by *doing*, but by *doing well*. Wherein appeareth also the difference between Humane and Divine Laws, the one of which two are content with *opus operatum*, the other require *opus operantis*, the one do but claim the deed, the other especially the mind. So that according to Laws which principally respect the heart of men, works of Religion being not religiously performed cannot morally be perfect. Baptism as an Ecclesiastical work, is for the manner of performance ordered by divers Ecclesiastical Laws, providing that as the Sacrament it self is a gift of no mean worth; so the Ministry thereof might in all circumstances appear to be a Function of no small regard. All that belongeth to the Mystical perfection of Baptism outwardly, is the Element, the Word, and the serious application of both unto him which receiveth both; whereunto if we adde that secret reference which this action hath to life and remission of sins, by virtue of Christs own compact solemnly made with his Church, to accomplish fully the Sacrament of Baptism, there is not any thing more required.

Now put the question whether Baptism administred to Infants without any Spiritual calling, be unto them both a true Sacrament and an effectual instrument of grace, or else an act of no more account than the ordinary Washings are. The sum of all that can be said to defeat such Baptism, is, that those things which have no being, can work nothing; and that Baptism without the power of Ordination, is as a judgement without sufficient Jurisdiction, void, frustrate, and of no effect. But to this we answer, that the fruit of Baptism dependeth only upon the Covenant which God hath made; that God by Covenant requireth in the elder sort, Faith and Baptism; in Children the Sacrament of Baptism alone, whereto he hath also given them right by special privilege of birth, within the bosom of the holy Church; that Infants therefore, which have received Baptism compleat, as touching the Mystical perfection thereof, are by vertue of his own Covenant and Promise cleansed from all sin, for as much as all other Laws concerning that which in Baptism is either Moral or Ecclesiastical, do bind the Church which giveth Baptism, and not the Infant which receiveth it of the Church. So that if any thing be therein amiss, the harm which groweth by violation of holy Ordinances, must altogether rest where the bonds of such Ordinances hold. For that in actions of this Nature it saith not as in Jurisdictions, may somewhat appear by the very opinion which men have of them. The nullity of that which a Judge doth by way of authority without authority, is known to all men, and agreed upon with full consent of the whole World, every man receiveth it as a general Edict of Nature; whereas the nullity of Baptism in regard of the like defect, is only a few mens new ungrounded and as yet unapproved imagination. Which difference of generality in mens persuasions on the one side, and their paucity whose conceit leadeth them the other way, hath risen from a difference easie to observe in the things themselves. The exercise of unauthorized Jurisdiction is a grievance unto them that are under it; whereas they that without authority presume to baptize, offer nothing but that which to all men is good and acceptable. Sacraments are food, and the Ministers thereof as Parents or as Nurses, at whose hands when there is necessity, but no possibility of receiving it, if that which they are not present to do in right of their Office, be of pity and compassion done by others, shall this be thought to turn Celestial Bread into gravel, or the medicine of Souls into poyson? Jurisdiction is a yoke which Law hath imposed on the necks of men in such sort, that they must endure it for the good of others, how contrary soever it be to their own particular appetites and inclinations: Jurisdiction bridlcth men against their wills, that which a Judge doth prevail by vertue of his very power; and therefore not without great reason, except the Law hath given him authority, whatsoever he doth, vanisheth. Baptism on the other side being a favour which it pleaseth God to bestow, a benefit of soul to us that receive it, and a grace which they that deliver are but as meer Vessels; either appointed by others or offered of their own accord to this Service; of which two if they be the one, it is but their own honour, their own offence to be the other; can it possibly stand with equity and right, that the faultiness of their presumption in giving Baptism should be able to prejudice us, who by taking Baptism have no way offended? I know there are many sentences found in the Books and Writings of the ancient Fathers, to prove both Ecclesiastical and also

a Fallum alio-  
rum alii nocere  
non debet Ulpl.  
de pupillo. Si  
plurimum.  
Item Alphen. l.  
Puer-familias.  
De Hæc. insti.  
Maleficia so-  
nent Auctores  
sui non alios.  
L. Sancimus 22  
C. de pœn.

a Aug. Epi. 23.

b T.C. l. 1. p. 136

Augustin standeth in doubt, whether Baptism by a Lay-man be available or no. *Cons. l. 1. p. 136.* I. 2. c. 13. where by all likelihood he was out of doubt, that that which was ministrifed by a Woman, whose unspenes therein is double to that of a Lay-man, was of no effect.

c T.C. l. 1. p. 116

The sacrilege of private persons, Women especially, in administering the holy Sacrament of Baptism.

d T.C. l. 3. p. 139

As by theical which the Prince hath set apart to seal his Grants with, when it is stolen and set to by him that hath no authoritie, there groweth no assurance to the party that hath it: So if it were possible to be the (seal of God which a woman should set to, yet for that she hath stolen it and put it to, not only without, but contrary to the Commandment of God, I see not how any can take any assurance by reason thereof.

Moral defects in the Minister of Baptism, a bar to the heavenly benefit thereof. Which sentences we always so understand, as *Augustin* understood in a case of like nature the words of *Cyprian*. When Infants baptized were after their Parents revolt carried by them in arms to the stewes of Idols, those wretched creatures, as *Saint Cyprian* thought, were not only their own ruine, but their childrens also; Their children, whom this their Apostasie profaned, did lose what *Christian Baptism* had given them being newly born. They lost (saith *S. Augustin*) the grace of Baptism, if we consider to what their Parents impiety did tend, although the mercy of God preserved them, and will also in that dreadful day of account give them favourable audience pleading in their own behalf; *The harm of other mens perfidiousness it lay not in us to avoid.* After the same manner, whatsoever we read written, if it sound to the prejudice of Baptism through any either Moral or Ecclesiastical defect therein, we construe it, as Equity and Reason teacheth, with restraint to the offender only, which doth, as far as concerneth himself, and them which wittingly concur with him, make the Sacrament of God fruitless. *S. Augustines doubtfulness,* whether Baptism by a Lay-man may stand, or ought to be re-administrifed, should not be mentioned by them which presume to define peremptorily of that, wherein he was content to profess himself unresolved. Albeit in very truth his opinion is plain enough, but the manner of delivering his judgement being modest, they make of a vertue an imbecility, and impute his calmness of speech to an irresolution of mind. His Disputation in that place is against *Parmenian*, which held, that a Bishop or a Priest if they fall into any Heresie, do thereby lose the Power which they had before to baptize, and that therefore Baptism by Hereticks is meerly void. For answer whereof he first denyeth, that Heresie can more deprive men of power to baptize others, than it is of force to take from them their own Baptism; and in the second place he farther addeth, that if Hereticks did lose the power which before was given them by Ordination, and did therefore unlawfully usurp as oft as they took upon them to give the Sacrament of Baptism, it followeth not that Baptism, by them ministrifed without authority, is no Baptism. For then what should we think of Baptism by Lay-men, to whom authority was never given? I doubt (saith *S. Augustine*) whether any man which carrieth a vertuous and godly mind will affirm, that the Baptism which Lay-men do in case of necessity ministrif should be iterated. For to do it unnecessarily, is to execute another mans office; necessity urging, to do it is then either no fault at all (much less so grievous a crime that it should deserve to be termed by the name of sacrilege) or if any, a very pardonable fault. But suppose it even of very purpose usurped and given unto any man by every man that listeth, yet that which is given cannot possibly be denied to have been given, how truly soever we may say it hath not been given lawfully. Unlawful usurpation a penitent affection must redress. If not, the thing that was given shall remain to the hurt and detriment of him which unlawfully either ministrifed or received the same, yet so that in this respect it ought not to be reputed, as if it had not at all been given. Whereby we may plainly perceive, that *Saint Augustine* was not himself uncertain what to think, but doubtful, whether any well-minded man in the whole World, could think otherwise then he did. Their Argument taken from a stolen seal, may return to the place out of which they had it, for it helpeth their cause nothing. That which men give or grant to others, must appear to have proceeded of their own accord. This being manifest, their Gifts and Grants are thereby made effectual, both to bar themselves from revocation, and to assure the right they have given. Wherein, for further prevention of mischiefs, that otherwise might grow by the malice, treachery, and fraud of men, it is both equal and meet that the strength of mens deeds, and the instruments which declare the same, should strictly depend upon divers solemnities, whereof there cannot be the like reason in things that pass between God and us, because first we need not doubt, lest the treasures of his Heavenly grace should without his consent be past by forged conveyances, nor lest he should deny at any time his own acts, and seek to revoke what hath been consented unto before: As there is no such fear of danger through deceit and falsehood in this case, so neither hath the circumstance of mens persons that weight in Baptism, which for good and just considerations in the custody of seals of Office it ought to have,

have. The grace of Baptism cometh by donation from God alone. That God hath committed the Ministry of Baptism unto special men, it is for orders sake in his Church, and not to the end that their authority might give being, or adde force to the Sacrament it self. That Infants have right to the Sacrament of Baptism, we all acknowledge. Charge them we cannot as guiltful and wrongful possessors of that, whereunto they have right by the manifest will of the Donor, and are not parties unto any defect or disorder in the manner of receiving the same. And if any such disorder be, we have sufficiently before declared, that *delictum cum capite semper ambulat*, mens own faults are their own harms. Wherefore to countervail this and the like mischoven resemblances with that, which more truly and plainly agreeth, the Ordinance of God concerning their vocation that minister Baptism, wherein the mystery of our regeneration is wrought, hath thereunto the same Analogy which laws of wedlock have to our first nativity and birth. So that if Nature do effect procreation, notwithstanding the wicked violation and breach even of Natures law, made that the entrance of all mankind into this present World might be without blemish, may we not justly presume that grace doth accomplish the other, although there be faultiness in them that transgress the Order which our Lord Jesus Christ hath established in his Church? Some light may be borrowed from Circumcision, for explication, what is true in this question of Baptism.

Seeing then that even they, which condemn *Zipporah* the wife of *Moses*, for taking upon her to circumcise her son, a thing necessary at that time for her to do, and as I think very hard to reprove in her, considering how *Moses*, because himself had not done it sooner, was therefore stricken by the hand of God, neither could in that extremity perform the office; whereupon, for the stay of Gods indignation, there was no choice, but the action must needs fall into her hands; whose fact therein whether we interpret, as some have done, that being a Midianite, and as yet not so thoroughly acquainted with the Jewish Rites, it much discontented her, to see her self through her husbands over-sight, in a matter of his own Religion brought unto those perplexities & straits, that either she must now endure him perishing before his eyes, or else wound the flesh of her own Child, which she could not do but with some indignation shewed, in that she sumingly both threw down the fore-skin at his feet, and upbraided him with the cruelty of his Religion: or if we better like to follow their more judicious Exposition, which are not inclinable to think that *Moses* was matcht like *Socrates*, nor that Circumcision could now in *Elsazar* be strange unto her, having had *Gersom* her elder son before circumcised, nor that any occasion of choler could rise from a spectacle of such misery, as doth naturally move compassion and not wrath, nor that *Zipporah* was so impious, as in the visible presence of Gods deserved anger, to storm at the Ordinance and Law of God, nor that the words of the history it self can inforce any such affection, but do only declare how after the act performed, she touched the feet of *Moses*, saying, *Sponsus tu mihi es sanguinum; Thou art unto me an husband of blood*, which might be very well, the one done, and the other spoken, even out of the flowing abundance of commiseration and love, to signifie with hands laid under his feet, that her tender affection towards him, had caused her thus to forget woman-hood, to lay all motherly affection aside, and to redeem her husband out of the hands of Death with effusion of blood; the sequel thereof, take it which way you will, is a plain argument that God was satisfied with that she did, as may

*Exod. 4. 24*  
*T.C.I. 1. p. 144*  
I say that the  
unlawfulness of  
that fact doth

appear sufficiently, in that she did it before her husband *Moses* which was a Prophet of the Lord, to whom that office of circumcision did appertain. Besides, that she did cut off the fore-skin of the Infant, not of mind to obey the Commandment of God, or for the salvation of the Child, but in a choler only, to the end that her husband might be eased and have release: which mind appeareth in her both by her words, and by casting away in anger the fore-skin which she had cut off. And if it be said, that the event declared that the act pleased God, because that *Moses* forthwith waxed better, and was recovered of his sickness, I have shewed before that if we measure things by the events, we shall oftentimes justify the wicked, and take the righteousness of the righteous from them.

*b Mala passio  
non irascimur;  
sed compas-  
mur, Boet. de*

*Moses*, saying, *Sponsus tu mihi es sanguinum; Thou art unto me an husband of blood*, which might be very well, the one done, and the other spoken, even out of the flowing abundance of commiseration and love, to signifie with hands laid under his feet, that her tender affection towards him, had caused her thus to forget woman-hood, to lay all motherly affection aside, and to redeem her husband out

c Where the usual translation hath *Exod. 4. 25*. She cut away the fore-skin of her son, and cast it at his feet, and said, Thou art indeed a bloody husband unto me. So he departed from him. Then she said, O bloody husband, because of the Circumcision: the words as they lie in the original, are rather thus to be interpreted: And she cut off the fore-skin of her son. Which being done, she touched his feet (the feet of *Moses*) and said, Thou art to me an husband of blood (in the plural number, thereby signifying effusion of blood) And the Lord withdrew from him at the very time, when she said, A husband of blood in regard of Circumcision.

of the hands of Death with effusion of blood; the sequel thereof, take it which way you will, is a plain argument that God was satisfied with that she did, as may



appear by his own testimony, declaring how there followed in the person of *Moses* present release of his grievous punishment upon her speedy discharge of that duty, which by him neglected, had offended God, <sup>a</sup> even as after execution of Justice by the hands of *Phineas*, the plague was immediately taken away, which former impunity of sin had caused; in which so manifest and plain cases, not to make that a reason of the event, which God himself hath set down as a reason, were falsely to accuse whom he doth justify, and without any cause to traduce what we should allow: yet seeing they which will have it a breach of the Law of God, for her to circumcise in that necessity, are not able to deny, but Circumcision being in that very manner performed, was to the innocent childe which received it true Circumcision, why should that defect whereby Circumcision was so little weakened be to Baptism a deadly wound? These premises therefore remaining, as hitherto they have been laid, because the Commandment of our Saviour Christ, which committeth <sup>b</sup> jointly to publick Ministers both Doctrine and Baptism, doth no more by linking them together import, that the nature of the Sacrament dependeth on the Ministers authority and power to preach the Word, than the force and virtue of the Word doth on licence to give the Sacrament; and considering that the work of external ministry in Baptism is only a preeminence of honour, which they that take to themselves and are not thereunto called as *Aaron* was, do but themselves in their own persons, by means of such usurpation, incur the just blame of disobedience to the Law of God, farther also in as much as it standeth with no reason, that errors grounded on a wrong interpretation of other mens deeds, should make frustrate whatsoever is misconceived, and that Baptism by Women should cease to be Baptism, as oft as any man will thereby gather that children which dye unbaptized are damned; which opinion if the act of Baptism administrated in such manner did inforce, it might be sufficient cause of disliking the same, but none of defeating or making it altogether void; last of all, whereas general and full consent of the godly learned in all ages, doth make for validity of Baptism, yea, albeit administrated in private, and even by Women, which kinde of Baptisme, in case of necessity, divers reformed Churches do both allow and defend, some others which do not defend, tolerate; few, in comparison, and they without any just cause, do utterly disdain and annihilate: surely, howsoever through defect on either side, the Sacrament may be without fruit, as well in some cases to him which receiveth, as to him which giveth it, yet no disability of either part can so far make it frustrate and without effect, as to deprive it of the very nature of true Baptism, having all things else which the Ordinance of Christ requireth. Whereupon we may consequently infer, that the administration of this Sacrament in private persons, be it lawful or unlawful, appeareth not as yet to be merely void: which none can take unto him, but he which is called unto it, as was *Aaron*: and further, forasmuch as the baptizing by private persons, and by women especially, confirmeth the dangerous error of the condemnation of young children, which die without Baptism; last of all, seeing we have the consent of the godly learned of all times against the Baptism by women, and of the Reformed Churches now, against the Baptism by private men, we conclude that the administration of this Sacrament by private persons, and especially by women, is merely both unlawful and void.

Interrogatories in Baptism touching Faith, and the purpose of a Christian life.

63 All that are of the race of Christ, the Scripture nameth them *Children of the promise*, which God hath made. The promise of eternal Life is the seed of the Church of God. And because there is no attainment of life, but through the only begotten Son of God, nor by him otherwise than being such as the Creed Apostolick describeth, it followeth that the Articles thereof are principles, necessary for all men to subscribe unto, whom by Baptism the Church receiveth into Christs School. All points of Christian doctrine are either demonstrable Conclusions, or demonstrative Principles. Conclusions have strong and invincible proofs, as well in the School of Jesus Christ, as elsewhere. And Principles be grounds, which require no proof in any kind of Science, because it sufficeth, if either their certainty be evident in it self, or evident by the light of some higher knowledge, and in it self such as no mans knowledge is ever able to overthrow. Now the principles whereupon we build our souls, have their evidence where they had their original; and as received from thence we adore them, we hold them in reverend admiration, we neither argue nor dispute above them, we give unto them that assent which the Oracles of God require.

quire. We are not therefore ashamed of the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, because miscreants in scorn have upbraided us, that the highest point of our wisdom is <sup>a</sup> *Belief*. That which is true, and neither can be discerned by sense, nor concluded by meer natural principles, must have principles of revealed Truth whereupon to build it self, and an habit of Faith in us wherewith principles of that kind are apprehended. <sup>b</sup> The mysteries of our Religion are above the reach of our understanding, above discourse of mans reason, above all that any creature can comprehend. Therefore the first thing required of him, which standeth for admission into Christs Family, is belief. Which belief consisteth not so much in knowledge, as in acknowledgement of all things that Heavenly wisdom revealeth; the affection of Faith is above her reach, her love to God-ward above the comprehension which she hath of God. And because only for Believers all things may be done, he which is good-nells it self, loveth them above all. Deserve we then the love of God, because we believe in the Son of God? What more opposite than Faith and Pride? When God had created all things, he looked upon them, and loved them, because they were all as himself had made them. So the true reason wherefore Christ doth love Believers, is, because their belief is <sup>c</sup> the gift of God, a gift than which flesh and blood in this world cannot possibly receive a greater. And as love to them of whom we receive good things, is duty, because they satisfie our desires in that which else we should want, so to love them on whom we bestow, is nature, because in them we behold the effects of our own virtue. Seeing therefore no Religion enjoyeth Sacraments the signes of Gods love, unless it have also that Faith whereupon the Sacraments are built, could there be any thing more convenient than that our first admittance to the actual receipt of his grace in the Sacrament of Baptism, should be <sup>d</sup> consecrated with profession of belief, which is to the Kingdom of God as a key, the want whereof excludeth Infidels both from that and from all other saving grace? We find by experience, that although Faith be an intellectual habit of the mind, and have her seat in the understanding, yet an evil moral disposition obstinately wedded to the love of darkness, dampeth the very light of heavenly illumination, and permiteth not the mind to see what doth shine before it. Men are lovers of pleasure more then lovers of God. Their assent to his saving Truth is many times withheld from it, not that the Truth is too weak to perswade, but because the stream of corrupt affection carrieth them a clean contrary way. That the mind therefore may abide in the light of Faith, there must abide in the will as constant a resolution to have no fellowship at all with the vanities and works of darkness. Two Covenants there are which Christian men (saith <sup>e</sup> *Isidor*) do make in Baptism, the one concerning relinquishment of Satan, the other touching obedience to the Faith of Christ. In like sort <sup>f</sup> *Saint Ambrose*, He which is baptized, forsaketh the intellectual Pharoah, the Prince of this world, saying, *Abrenuncio; Thee, O Satan, and thy Angels, thy works and thy mandates, I forsake utterly.* <sup>g</sup> *Tertullian* having speech of wicked spirits: *These (saith he) are the Angels which we in Baptism renounce.* The declaration of <sup>h</sup> *Justin the Martyr* concerning Baptism, sheweth how such as the Church in those days did baptize, made profession of Christian belief, and undertook to live accordingly. Neither do I think it a matter easie for any man to prove that ever Baptism did use to be administred without Interrogatories of these two kinds. Whereunto <sup>i</sup> *S. Peter* (as it may be thought) alluding, hath said, that the Baptism which saveth us, is not (as Legal Purifications were) a cleansing of the flesh from outward impurity, but *ἐνσυνείδητα, an interrogative tryal of a good conscience towards God.*

χρὴς τῆς καὶ αἰσῶνς ἐλευθέρουσας παρά τῷ θεῷ καὶ ὑποκατάστατον ἀποστολὴν διδόντας, ἵνα τετα ἀγνοῖας ὅς ἡμῶν ἔσται ὁδοῦ ἐν τῇ ἐξέτη ἀναγεννησας ὅς ἡμῆς αὐτοὶ ἀναγεννησάμεν ἀναγεννησάμεν. *Justin. Apol. 1. 1. Pet. 3. 21.*

64. Now the fault which they find with us concerning Interrogatories, is our moving of these questions unto Infants which cannot answer them, and the an-  
Interrogatories  
proposed unto  
Infants in bap-  
tism, and answered as in their names by god-fathers. They prophane holy baptism in toying foolishly, for that they ask questions of an Infant which cannot answer, as was wont to be spoken unto men, and unto such as being converted answered for themselves, and were baptized. Which is but a mockery of God, and therefore against the holy Scriptures, *Gal. 6. 7* Admon. to the Paulia. The same defended in *T. C. lib. 1. pag. 168.*

swearing

swearing of them by others as in their names. The Anabaptist hath many pretences to scorn at the Baptism of children: First, because the Scriptures, he saith, do no where give commandment to baptize Infants: Secondly, for that as there is no commandment, so neither any manifest example shewing it to have been done either by Christ or his Apostles: Thirdly, in as much as the Word preached and the Sacraments must go together, they which are not capable of the one, are not fit receivers of the other: Last of all, sith the Order of Baptism continued from the first beginning, hath in it those things which are unfit to be applied unto sucking children, it followeth in their conceit, that the Baptism of such is no Baptism, but plain mockery. They with whom we contend are no enemies to the Baptism of Infants; it is not their desire that the Church should hazard so many Souls, by letting them run on till they come to ripeness of understanding, that so they may be converted and then baptized, as Infidels heretofore have been; they bear not towards God so unthankful minds, as not to acknowledge it even amongst the greatest of his endless mercies, that by making us his own possession so soon, many advantages which Satan otherwise might take are prevented, and (which should be esteemed a part of no small happiness) the first thing whereof we have occasion to take notice is, how much hath been done already to our great good, though altogether without our knowledge; the Baptism of Infants they esteem as an Ordinance which Christ hath instituted, even in special love and favour to his own people; they deny not the practice thereof accordingly to have been kept, as derived from the hands, and continued from the days of the Apostles themselves unto this present. Only it pleaseth them not, that to Infants there should be Interrogatories proposed in Baptism. This they condemn as foolish, toyish, and prophane mockery. But are they able to shew that ever the Church of Christ had any publick Form of Baptism without Interrogatories; or that the Church did ever use at the solemn Baptism of Infants, to omit those questions as needless in this case?

<sup>a</sup> Aug. Epi. 23. Boniface a Bishop in S. *Augustines* time, knowing that the Church did universally use this custom of baptizing Infants with Interrogatories, was desirous to learn from S. *Augustine* the true cause and reason thereof: If (saith he) I should see before thee a young Infant, and should ask of thee whether that Infant when he cometh unto ripper age, will be honest and just or no; thou wouldest answer (I know) that to tell in these things what shall come to pass, is not in the power of a mortal man. If I should ask what good or evil such an Infant thinketh, thine answer hereunto must needs be again with the like uncertainty. If thou neither canst promise for the time to come, nor for the present pronounce any thing in this case, how is it that when such are brought unto Baptism, their Parents there undertake what the child shall afterwards do; yea they are not doubtful to say it doth that which is impossible to be done by Infants? At the least there is no man precisely able to affirm it done. Vouchsafe me hereunto some short answer, such as not only may press me with the bare authority of custom, but also instruct me in the cause thereof. Touching which difficulty, whether it may truly be said for Infants at the time of their Baptism that they do believe, the effect of Saint

*b* sicut credere respondetur, ita etiam fidelis vocatur; non rem ipsa mente annuendo, sed ipsum rei sacramentum percipiendo. Augu<sup>8</sup>. *Augustines* answer is yea, but with this distinction, <sup>a</sup> a present actual habit of Faith there is not in them, there is delivered unto them that Sacrament, a part of the due celebration whereof consisteth in answering to the Articles of Faith, because the habit of Faith, which afterwards doth come with years, is but a farther building up of the same edifice, the first foundation whereof was laid by the Sacrament of Baptism. For that which were we professed without any understanding, when we afterwards come to acknowledge, do we any thing else but on'y bring unto ripeness the very seed that was sown before? We are then believers, because then we begin to be that which process of time doth make perfect. And till we come to actual relief, the very Sacrament of Faith is a shield as strong as after this the Faith of the Sacrament against all contrary Infernal Powers. Which whosoever doth think impossible, is undoubtedly farther off from Christian Belief, though he be baptized, then are these Innocents, which at their Baptism albeit they have no conceit or cogitation of Faith, are notwithstanding pure and free from all opposite cogitations, whereas the other is not free. If therefore without any fear or scruple we may account them and term them believers only for their outward professions like,

which



which inwardly are farther from Faith then Infants, why not Infants much more at the time of their solemn initiation by Baptism the Sacrament of Faith, whereunto they not only conceive nothing opposite, but have also that ' grace given them which is the first and most effectual cause out of which our belief groweth? In sum, the whole Church is a multitude of Believers, all honoured with that title, even Hypocrites for their professions sake as well as Saints, because of their inward sincere perswasion, and Infants as being in the first degrees of their ghostly motion towards the attinal habit of Faith; the first sort are faithful in the eye of the World, the second faithful in the sight of God; the last in the ready direct way to become both, if all things after be suitable to these their present beginnings. This (saith Saint Augustine) would not haply content such persons as are incapable or unquiet, but to them which having knowledge are not troublesome, it may suffice. Wherein I have not far ease of my self objected against you that customs only, than which nothing is more firm, but of a customs most profitable I have done that little which I could to yield you a reasonable cause. Were Saint Augustine now living, there are which would tell him for his better instruction, that to say<sup>d</sup> of a child it is elect, and to say it doth believe, are all one; for which cause sith no man is able precisely to affirm the one of any Infant in particular, it followeth that precisely and absolutely we ought not to say the other. Which precise and absolute terms are needless in this cause. We speak of Infants as the rule of piety alloweth both to speak and think. They that can take to themselves in ordinary talk a charitable kind of liberty to name men of their own sort Gods dear children (notwithstanding the large reign of Hypocritie) should not methinks be so strict and rigorous against the Church for presuming as it doth of a Christian Innocent. For when we know how Christ in general hath said, that of such is the Kingdom of Heaven, which Kingdom is the Inheritance of Gods Elect, and do withal behold how his providence hath called them unto the first beginnings of eternal life, and presented them at the well-spring of new birth, wherein original sin is purged, besides which sin there is no hinderance of their Salvation known to us, as themselves will grant, hard it were that having so many fair inducements whereupon to ground, we should not be thought to utter at the least a truth as probable and allowable in terming any such particular Infant an elect Babe, as in presuming<sup>e</sup> the like of others, whose safety nevertheless we are not absolutely able to warrant. If any troubled with these scruples be only for Instructions sake desirous to know yet some farther reason why Interrogatories should be ministred to Infants in Baptism, and be answered unto by others as in their names, they may consider that Baptism implyeth a Covenant or League between God and Man, wherein as God doth bestow presently remission of sins and the Holy Ghost, binding also himself to adde in process of time what grace soever shall be farther necessary for the attainment of everlasting life; so every baptized Soul receiving the same grace at the hands of God, tieth likewise it self for ever to the observation of his Law no less than the Jews<sup>f</sup> by Circumcision bound themselves to the Law of Moses, The Law of Christ requiring therefore Faith and newness of Life in all men by virtue of the Covenant which they make in Baptism, is it toyish that the Church in Baptism exacteth at every mans hands an express profession of Faith, and an irrevocable promise of obedience by way of<sup>g</sup> so emn stipulation? That Infants may contract and covenant with God, the Law is plain. Neither is the reason of the Law obscure. For sith it tenderth, we cannot sufficiently express how much to their own good, and doth no way hurt or endanger them to begin the race of their lives herewith, they are, as equity requirerth, admitted hereunto, and in favour of their tender years such formal complements of stipulation as being requisite are impossible by themselves in their own perions to be performed, leave is given that they may<sup>h</sup> sufficiently discharge by others. Albeit therefore neither deaf nor dumb men, neither furious persons, nor children can receive any civil stipulation, yet this kind of ghostly stipulation they may through his indulgence who re-

c Multum mirabile res est quemadmodum quorundam nomen cognoscitur Deum fit inhabitator Domus et quorundam cognoscitur non fit. Nec illi enim ad Templum Dei pertinent, qui cognoscunt Deum non sicut Deum glorificaverunt: et ad templum Dei pertinent parvuli sanctissimi Christi regenerati spiritu sancto, qui per sacramentum possunt cognoscere Deum. Unde quomodo poterant illi nosse nec habere isti poterant habere anequam nosse. August. Epist.

57.  
d T.C.L.I. p. 169  
If Children could have faith yet they cannot present the child cannot precisely tell whether that particular child hath faith or no; we are to think charitably, and to hope it is one of the Church; but it can be no more precisely said that it hath faith, than it may be said precisely eluding.

e 2 John 1.  
f Gal. 3. 3.  
g stipulatio est verborum con-

ceptio, quibus si qui interrogatur datum n facitur ut se quod interrogatus est respondet, l. 5. §. 1. ff. de oblig. et act. In hac re olim talia verba tradita fuerunt. Spondes? Spondeo. Promittis? Promitto. Fide promittis? Fide promitto. Fide jubes? Fide jubeo. Dabis? Dabo. Facies? Faciam. Instit. de verb. oblig. lib. 2. tit. 15. h Gen. 17. 14. i Accommodat illis mater Ecclesia aliorum pedes ut videntur, aliorum cor ut credant, aliorum linguam ut faciantur, ut quoniam quod agri sunt alio peccante gravantur, sed qui sani sunt alio prohi consentant salvantur. Aug. Sermon. 10. de verb. Apost.

• T.C. 1.1.9.172

b Hi enim qui  
pro rep. cecide-  
runt in perpe-  
tuum per glo-  
riam vivere in-  
telleguntur.  
Instit. lib. 2. tit.  
25. sect. 1.

c Offeruntur  
quippe parvuli  
ad percipiē-  
dam spirituale  
gratiam non  
tam ab es-  
torum cen-  
stantur mani-  
bus quam et ab  
ipsi s et ipsi  
boni fideles sint  
quam ab un-  
versis sanctis  
sanctorum atque  
fidelium.  
Augustin. in Ep.  
23.  
ἀκούετε τὴν  
τοῦ διὰ τοῦ  
βαπτίσματος  
ἀγαθὴν τὴν  
ἐξουσίαν τοῦ  
ἐκείνων αὐτῶν  
τοῦ βαπτί-  
σματος.  
Justin. resp. ad  
Orchod.

speaking the singular benefit thereof, accepteth Children brought unto him for that  
 end, entreth into Articles of Covenant with them, and in tender commiseration  
 granteth that other mens professions and promises in Baptism made for them shall  
 avail no less than if they had been themselves able to have made their own: None  
 more fit to undertake this office in their behalf than such as present them unto Bap-  
 tism. A wrong conceit that none may receive the Sacrament of Baptism, but they  
 whose Parents, at the least the one of them, are by the soundness of their Religion  
 and by their vertuous demeanour, known to be men of God, hath caused <sup>a</sup> some to  
 repell Children whosoever bring them, if their Parents be mis-perswaded in Religi-  
 on, or for other mis-deserts excommunicated; some likewise for that cause to  
 withhold Baptism, unless the Father, albeit no such exception can justly be taken  
 against him, do notwithstanding make profession of his Faith, and avouch the child  
 to be his own. Thus whereas God hath appointed the Ministers of holy things,  
 they make themselves Inquisitors of mens persons a great deal farther than need  
 is. They should consider that God hath ordained Baptism in favour of mankind. To  
 restrain favours is an odious thing, to enlarge them acceptable both to God and  
 Man. Whereas therefore the Civil Law gave divers immunities to them which were  
 Fathers of three children and had them living, those immunities they held although  
 their children were all dead, if war had consumed them, because it seemed in that  
 case not against reason to repute them by a courteous construction of Law as <sup>b</sup> live  
 men, in that the honour of their Service done to the Common-wealth would re-  
 main always. Can it hurt us in exhibiting the graces which God doth bestow on  
 men, or can it prejudice his glory if the self-same equity guide and direct our hands?  
 When God made his Covenant with such as had *Abraham* to their Father, was one-  
 ly *Abrahams* immediate issue, or only his lineal posterity according to the flesh,  
 included in that Covenant? Were not Profelytes as well as Jews always taken for  
 the Sons of *Abraham*? Yea because the very Heads of Families are Fathers in some  
 sort, as touching providence and care for the meanest that belong unto them, the  
 servants which *Abraham* had bought with money were as capable of Circumcision,  
 being newly born, as any natural child that *Abraham* himself begat. Be it then  
 that Baptism belongeth to none but such as either believe presently, or else being  
 Infants are the children of *believing parents*. In case the Church do bring children  
 to the holy Font whose natural parents are either unknown, or known to be such as  
 the Church accurseth, but yet forgetteth not in that severity to take compassion up-  
 on their off-spring (for it is the Church which doth offer them to Baptism by the  
 Ministry of Prebenters) were it not against both equity and duty to refuse the Mo-  
 ther of believers herself, and not to take her in this case for a faithful Parent? It is  
 not the virtue of our fathers, nor the Faith of any other that can give us the true  
 holiness which we have by virtue of our new birth. Yet even through the common  
 faith and spirit of Gods Church (a thing which no quality of Parents can prejudice)  
 I say through the Faith of the Church of God undertaking the motherly care of our  
 souls, so far forth we may be, and are in our Infancy sanctified, as to be thereby  
 made sufficiently capable of Baptism, and to be interested in the Rites of our new  
 birth for their pieties sake that offer us thereunto. *It cometh sometime to pass* (saith  
 Saint *Augustine*) *that the children of bond-slaves are brought to Baptism by their*  
*Lord: sometime the Parents being dead, the friends alive undertake that office; some-*  
*times strangers or Virgins consecrated unto God, which neither have nor can have chil-*  
*dren of their own, take up Infants in the open streets, and so offer them unto Baptism,*  
*whom the cruelty of unnatural Parents casteth out and leaveth to the adventure of un-*  
*certain pity.* As therefore he which did the part of a Neighbour, was a Neighbour  
 to that wounded man whom the parable of the Gospel describeth: so they are fa-  
 thers, although strangers, that bring Infants to him which maketh them the Sons of  
 God. In the Phrase of some kind of men they use to be termed *witnesses*, as if they  
 came but to see and testify what is done. It favoureth more of piety to give them  
 their old accustomed name of Fathers and Mothers in God, whereby they are well  
 put in mind what affection they ought to bear towards those Innocents, for whose  
 religious education the Church accepteth them as pledges. This therefore is their  
 own duty. But because the answer which they make to the usual demands of stipula-  
 tion

tion proposed in Baptism is not their own, the Church doth best to receive it of them in that form which best sheweth whose the act is.

That which a Guardian doth in the name of his Guard or Pupil standeth by natural equity forcible for his benefit, though it be done without his knowledge. And shall we judge it a thing unreasonable, or in any respect unfit, that infants by words which others utter, should though unwittingly, yet truly and forcibly, bind themselves to that whereby their estate is so assuredly bettered? Herewith <sup>a</sup> Nestorius a Si Arianae aut Sabellianae hereses adseruer esset, et non suo ipsius symbolo tecum uteretur, convincerem te tamen testimoniorum sacrorum auctoritate; quid tandem si sic apud te agerem, quid diceret? quid responderet? nonne obsecro illud in eo te baptizatum, in eo te renatum esse? Et verè in negotio quovis improbo non importuna defensio, et qua non absurde causam erroris diceret, si perniciatiam non faceret errori. Nunc autem cum in Catholica urbe natus, Catholica fide institutus, Catholico baptismo regeneratus sis, nunquid agere tecum quasi cum Arianis aut Sabellianis possim? quod utrum fuisset. Minus dolo in malis editum quàm de bonis lapsum, minus fidem non habitam quàm amissam. Non iniquum autem hereticis, non iniquum aut grave aliquid posulo. Hoc fac in Catholica fide editum quod fueras pro pervertis-  
<sup>b</sup> Tertullian, to strike them the more deep, claimeth the promise which they made in Baptism. Why were they dumb being thus challenged? Wherefore stood they not up to answer in their own defence, that such professions and promises made in their names were frivolous; that all which others undertook for them was but mockery and profanation? That which no Heretick, no wicked liver, no impious despiser of God, no miscreant or malefactor, which had himself been baptized, was ever so desperate as to disgorge in contempt of so fruitful received customs, is now their voice that restore, as they say, the ancient purity of Religion.

*haptizatum, in eo te renatum esse? Et verè in negotio quovis improbo non importuna defensio, et qua non absurde causam erroris diceret, si perniciatiam non faceret errori. Nunc autem cum in Catholica urbe natus, Catholica fide institutus, Catholico baptismo regeneratus sis, nunquid agere tecum quasi cum Arianis aut Sabellianis possim? quod utrum fuisset. Minus dolo in malis editum quàm de bonis lapsum, minus fidem non habitam quàm amissam. Non iniquum autem hereticis, non iniquum aut grave aliquid posulo. Hoc fac in Catholica fide editum quod fueras pro pervertis-*

65 In Baptism many things of very ancient continuance are now quite and clean Of the Cross in  
abolished, for that the virtue and grace of this Sacrament had been therewith over- Baptism.  
shadowed as with too great abundance of leaves. Notwithstanding to them which think it always imperfect reformation that doth but shear and not flea, our retaining certain of those former Rites, especially the dangerous sign of the Cross, hath seemed almost an unpardonable over-sight. The Cross (they say) *is it is but a meer invention of man, should not therefore at all have been added to the Sacrament of Baptism. To sign childrens fore-heads with a Cross, in token that hereafter they shall not be ashamed to make profession of the Faith of Christ, is to bring into the Church a new word, whereas there ought to be no Doctor heard in the Church but our Saviour Christ. That reason which moved the Fathers to use, should move us not to use the sign of the Cross. They lived with Heathens which had the Cross of Christ in contempt, we wish such as adore the Cross, and therefore we ought to abandon it even as Ezechias did of old the brazen Serpent. These are the causes of displeasure conceived against the Cross; a Ceremony, the use whereof hath been profitable although we observe it not as the Ordinance of God but of man. For, saith <sup>c</sup> Tertullian, If of this and the like customs thou shouldest require some commandment to be shewed thee out of Scri- c Tertul. de  
tures, there is found. What reason there is to justify tradition, use or custom in this behalf, either thou mayest of thy self perceive, or else learn of some other that doth. d Traditio-  
Lest therefore the name of tradition should be offensive to any, considering how far non scriptas, si  
by some it hath been abused, we mean by <sup>e</sup> traditions, or ordinances made in the doctrina re-  
prime of Christian Religion, established with that authority which Christ hath left spectant, cum  
to his Church for matters indifferent; and in that consideration requisite to be ob- doctrina scripta  
served, till like authority see just and reasonable cause to alter them. So that tradi- convenire debe-  
tions Ecclesiastical are not rudely and in gross to be shaken off, because the Inven- re dicimus.  
tors of them were men. Such as say, they allow no <sup>f</sup> invention of man to be ming- Quod ad ritua-  
led with the outward administration of Sacraments, and under that pretence con- les & Ecclesi-  
demn our using the sign of the Cross, have helike some special dispensation them- asticas attinet,  
selves to violate their own rules. For neither can they indeed decently, nor do they ordinis & ad-  
sempet habendo  
ratio est; inu-*

*stiles autem & noxias, nempe ineptas & supersticiosas patronis sui relinquamus. Goulart. Genevens. in Epist. Cypr. 74. e T. C. L. x. p. 171. They should not have been so bold as to have brought it into the holy Sacrament of Baptism; and so mingle the ceremonies and inventions of men with the Sacraments and Institutions of God.*



\*T.C.I. 1. 1. 170

ever baptize any without manifest breach of this their profound axiome, that *Mens inventions should not be mingled with Sacraments and Institutions of God*. They seem to like very well in Baptism the custome of God-fathers, \* *because so generally the Churches have received it*. Which custome being of God no more intired then the other (howsoever they pretend the other hurtful, and this profitable) it followeth that even in their own opinion, if their words do shew their minds, there is no necessity of stripping Sacraments out of all such attire of Ceremonies as mans wisdom hath at any time clothed them withal, and consequently that either they must reform their speech as over-general, or else condemn their own practice as unlawful. Ceremonies have more in weight then in sight, they work by commonness of use much, although in the severall acts of their usage we scarcely discern any good they do. And because the use which they have for the most part is not perfectly understood, Superstition is apt to impute unto them greater vertue then indeed they have. For prevention whereof, when we use this Ceremony we always plainly express the end whereunto it serveth, namely, for a sign of remembrance to put us in mind of our duty.

\*T.C.I. 1. 1. 170

The profitable signification of the Crois maketh the thing a great deal worse, and bringeth in a new word into the Church, whereas there ought to be no Doctor heard in the Church but only our Saviour Christ. For although it be the Word of God that we should not be ashamed of the Crois of Christ, yet is it not the Word of God that we should be kept in remembrance of that by two lines drawn across one over another in the child's forehead.

b Luke 7. 44.

But by this mean they say we make it a great deal worse. For why? Seeing God hath no where commanded to draw two lines in token of the duty which we owe to Christ, our practice with this exposition publisheth a new Gospel, and causeth another Word to have place in the Church of Christ, where no voice ought to be heard but his. By which good reason the Authors of those grave admonitions to the Parliament are well holpen up, which held that *sitting at Communion breaketh rest and full accomplishment of legal Ceremonies in our Saviour Christ*. For although it be the Word of God that such Ceremonies are expired, yet seeing it is not the word of God that men to signifie so much should sit at the Table of our Lord, these have their doom as well as others, *Guilty of a new devised Gospel in the Church of Christ*. Which strange imagination is begotten of a special dislike they have to hear, that Ceremonies now in use should be thought significant, whereas in truth such as are not significant must needs be vain. Ceremonies destitute of signification are no better then the idle gestures of men, whose broken wits are not Masters of that they do. For if we look but into secular and civil complements, what other cause can there possibly be given why to omit them where of course they are looked for; for where they are not so due, to use them, bringeth mens secret intents oftentimes into great jealousy: I would know I say what reason we are able to yield why things so light in their own nature should weigh in the opinions of men so much, saying only in regard of that which they use to signifie or betoken? Doth not our Lord Jesus Christ [p] himself impute the omission of some courteous Ceremonies even in domestical entertainment to a colder degree of loving affection, and take the contrary in better part, not so much respecting what was less done, as what was signified less by the one then by the other? For to that very end he referreth in part those gracious expostulations, *Simon, seest thou this woman? since I entered into thine house thou gavest me no water for my feet, but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped them with the hairs of her head; thou gavest me no kisse, but this woman since the time I came in hath not ceased to kisse my feet; mine head with oyl thou didst not anoint, but this woman hath anointed my feet with oynment*. Wherefore as the usual dumb Ceremonies of common life are in request or dislike according to that they import, even so Religion having likewise her silent Rites, the chiefeft rule whereby to judge of their quality is that which they mean or betoken. For if they signifie good things (as somewhat they must of necessity signifie, because it is of their very nature to be signs of intimation presenting both themselves unto ourward sense, and besides themselves some other thing to the understanding of beholders) unless they be either greatly mischosen to signifie the same, or else applyed where that which they signifie agreeth not, there is no cause of exception against them as against evil and unlawful Ceremonies, much less of excepting against them only in that they are not without sense. And if every religious Ceremony which hath been invented of men to signifie any thing that God himself alloweth, were the publication of another Gospel in the Church of Christ, seeing that no Christian Church in the World, is, or can be without continual use of some Ceremonies which men have instituted,

instituted, and that to signifie good things (unless they be vain and frivolous Ceremonies) it would follow that the World hath no Christian Church which doth not daily proclaim new Gospels, a sequel, the manifest absurdity whereof argueth the rawness of that supposal out of which it groweth.

Now the <sup>a</sup> cause why antiquity did the more in *actions of common life* honour the Ceremony of the Crofs, might be for that they lived with Infidels. But that which they did in the Sacrament of Baptism was for the self-same good of Believers which is thereby intended still. The Crofs is for us an admonition no less necessary then for them to glory in the service of Jesus Christ, and not to hang down our heads as men ashamed thereof, although it procure us reproach and obloquy at the hands of this wretched World. Shame is a kind of fear to incur disgrace and ignominy. Now whereas some things are worthy of reproach, some things ignominious only through a false opinion which men have conceived of them, nature that generally feareth opprobrious reprehension must by reason and Religion be <sup>b</sup> taught what it should be ashamed of, and what not. But be we never so well instructed what our duty is in this behalf, without some present

admonition at the very instant of practise, what we know is many times not called to mind till that be done whereupon our just confusion ensueth. To supply the absence of such as that way might do us good when they see us in danger of sliding, there are <sup>c</sup> judicious and wise men which think we may greatly relieve our selves by a bare imagined presence of some, whose authority we fear and would be loath to offend, if indeed they were present with us. Witnesses at hand are a bridle unto many offences. Let the mind have always some whom it feareth, some whose authority may keep even secret thoughts under awe. Take Care, or if he be too harsh and rugged, chuse some other of a softer mettal, whose gravity of life and speech thou lovest, his mind and countenance carry with thee, set him always before thine eyes either as a watch or as a pattern. That which is crooked we cannot streighten but by some such level. If men of so good experience and insight in the mains of our weak flesh, have thought these fancied remembrances available to awaken shamefastness, that so the boldness of sin may be stayed ere it look abroad, surely the wisdom of the Church of Christ which hath to that use converted the Ceremony of the Crofs in Baptism, it is no Christian mans part to despise, especially seeing that by this means, where nature doth earnestly import aid, Religion yiledeth her that ready assistance, than which there can be no help more forcible, serving only to relieve memory, and to bring to our cogitation that which should most make ashamed of sin. The mind while we are in this present life <sup>d</sup> whether it contemplate, meditate, deliberate, or howsoever exercise it self, worketh nothing without continual recourse unto imagination the only store-house of wit, and peculiar chair of memory. On this anvil it ceaseth not day and night to strike, by means whereof, as the pulse declareth how the heart doth work, so the very <sup>e</sup> thoughts and cogitations of mans mind, be they good or bad, do no where sooner bewray themselves, than through the crevices of that wall where nature hath compassed the Cels and Cloisters of fancy. In the forehead nothing more plain to be seen than the fear of contumely

<sup>a</sup> T. C. lib. 1. p. 170. It is known to all that have read the Ecclesiastical stories, that the Heathen did object to Christians in times past in reproach that the God which they belloyed on was hanged upon a Crofs. And they thought good to testify that they were not ashamed therefore of the Son of God, by the often using of the signe of the Crofs. Which carelesnes and good mind to keep amongst them an open profession of Christ crucified although it be to be commended, yet is not this means so. For they might otherwise have kept it, and with less danger then by this use of crossing. And as it was brought in upon no good ground, so the Lord left a mark of his curse of it, and whereby it might be perceived to come out of the forge of mens baine, in that it began forthwith while it was yet in the swelling clouds to be superstitiously abused. The Christians had such a superstition in it, that they would do nothing without Crossing. But if it were granted that upon this consideration which I have before mentioned, the ancient Christians did well, yet it followeth not that we should so do. For we live not amongst those Nations which do cast us in the teeth or reproach us with the Crofs of Christ. Now that we live amongst Papists that do not condemn the Crofs of Christ, but which esteem more of the wooden Crofs, then of the true Crofs, which is his sufferings, we ought now to do clean contrariwise to the old Christians, and abolish all use of these Croffes. For contrary diseases must have contrary remedies. If therefore the old Christians to deliver the Crofs of Christ from contempt did often use the Crofs, the Christians now to take away the superstitious estimation of it ought to take away the use of it. <sup>b</sup> Ephes. 5. 12. Rom. 6. 11.

<sup>c</sup> Sen. Epist. 11 lib. 1.

<sup>d</sup> Τὸ τοῦτο ἡ φαντασία τῆς ψυχῆς ἀνεπαύσατο. *Arist. de anim. lib. 1. c. 1* Ἡ μὲν ἀνθρώπου φαντασία ἐστὶν τοῦ ἀλόγου ζώου ὡς ἡ ἀνθρώπου.

<sup>e</sup> *Σελαντιὰ ἐν τοῖς λογισμοῖς lib. 3. c. 11. Τὰ μὲν οὐκ ἴδμεν τὸ νῦν ἐστὶν ἐν τοῖς παρὰ ἄματι τοῦ ἑαυτοῦ ἐν ἑαυτοῖς δεῖται αὐτῶ τὸ δυνάμει καὶ οὐκ ἐν τῇ αἰσθητικῇ τῆς διανοίας ἐν ἑαυτῇ ἐν τῇ φαντασίᾳ τῆς ψυχῆς. 3. c. 9.*

<sup>f</sup> *From dominie tristitia, hilaritas, clementia, severitas index ed. Plin. lib. 11.*

a Ezek. 9. 4:  
Apoc. 7. 3. 9. 4.

b Εφοδισθησας  
γὰρ ἡ δόρυ-  
σβητος. Αἰθ.  
Εκ. 4. c. 9.  
c Caro signatur  
ut et anima  
muniat. Tert.  
de resur. car.

d Cyr. Epist.  
36. ad Thibari-  
anos.

e Cyr. de laps.

f Erant enim  
supplices cor-  
narii. Tert. lib.  
de cor. mil.  
In the service  
of Idols the  
doors of their  
Temples, the  
sacrifices, the  
Altars, the  
Priests, and the  
Suppliants that  
were present  
wore Garlands.

and disgrace. For which cause the Scripture (as with great probability it may be thought) describeth them<sup>a</sup> marked of God in the forehead, whom his mercy hath undertaken to keep from final confusion and shame. Nor that God doth set any corporal mark on his chosen, but to note that he giveth his elect security of preservation from reproach, the fear whereof doth use shew it self<sup>b</sup> in that part. Shall I say that the signe of the Crois (as we use it) is in some sort a mean to work our preservation from reproach? Surely the mind which as yet hath not hardened it self in sin is seldom provoked thereunto in any gross and grievous manner, but natures secret suggestion objected against it ignominy as a bar. Which conceit being entred into that Palace of mans fancy, the gates whereof have imprinted in them that holy signe which bringeth forthwith to mind whatsoever Christ hath wrought and we vowed against sin, it cometh hereby to pass, that Christian men never want a most effectual though a silent teacher to avoid whatsoever may deservedly procure shame. So that in things which we should be ashamed of we are by the Crois admonished faithfully of our duty at the very moment when admonition doth most need. Other things there are which deserve honour and yet do purchase many times our disgrace in this present World, as of old the very truth of Religion it self, till God by his own out-stretched arm made the glory thereof to shine over all the earth. Whereupon<sup>d</sup> St. Cyprian exhorting to martyrdom in times of heathenish persecution and cruelty, thought it not vain to allege unto them with other arguments the very Ceremony of that Crois whereof we speak. Never let that hand offer sacrifice to Idols which hath already received the body of our Saviour Christ, and shall hereafter the Crown of his glory; *arm your fore-heads* unto all boldness, that the *signe of God* may be kept safe. Again, when it pleased God that the fury of their enemies being bridled the Church had some little rest and quietness, (if so small a liberty but only to breathe between troubles may be termed quietness and rest) to such as fell not away from Christ through former persecutions, he giveth due and deserved praise in the self-same manner, *“ You that were ready to endure imprisonment, and were resolute to suffer death; you that have courageously withstood the world, ye have made your selves both a glorious spectacle for God to behold, and a worthy example for the rest of your brethren to follow. Those mouths which had sanctified themselves with food coming down from Heaven, loathed after Christs own body and blood to taste the poisoned and contagious scraps of Idols; those fore-heads which the signe of God had purified, kept themselves to be crowned by him, the touch of the garlands of Satan they abhorred.* Thus was the memory of that signe which they had in Baptism a kind of bar or prevention to keep them even from apostasie, whereunto the frailty of flesh and blood over-much fearing to endure shame, might peradventure the more easily otherwise have drawn them. We have not now through the gracious goodness of Almighty God, those extream conflicts which our fathers had with blasphemous contumelies every where offered to the Name of Christ, by such as professed themselves infidels and unbelievers. Howbeit, unless we be strangers to the age wherein we live, or else in some partial respect dissemblers of that we hourly both hear and see, there is not the simplest of us but knoweth with what disdain and scorn Christ is honoured far and wide. Is there any burden in the world more heavy to bear than contempt? Is there any contempt that grieveth as theirs doth, whose quality no way making them less worthy than others are of reputation, only the service which they do to Christ in the daily exercise of Religion treadeth them down? Doth any contumely which we sustain for Religion sake, pierce so deeply as that which would seem of meer conscience religiously spiteful? when they that honour God are despised; when the chiefest service of Honor that man can do unto him is the cause why they are despised; when they which pretend to honour him, and that with greatest sincerity, do with more than heathenish petulancy trample under foot almost whatsoever either we or the whole Church of God by the space of so many ages have been accustomed unto for the comlier and better exercise of our Religion, according to the soundest rules that wisdom, directed by the Word of God, and by long experience confirmed, hath been able with common advice, with much deliberation and exceeding great diligence to comprehend; when no man fighting under Christs banner can be always exempted from seeing or





incense, did enforce the utter abolition of this Ceremony,\* the fact of that virtuous Prince is by so much the more attentively to be considered. Our lives in this world are partly guided by rules, and partly directed by examples. To conclude out of general rules and axioms by discourse of wit our duties in every particular action, is both troublesome and many times so full of difficulty, that it maketh deliberations hard and tedious to the wisest men. Whereupon we naturally all incline to observe examples, to mark what others have done before us, and in the favour of our own ease rather to follow them than to enter into new consultation, if in regard of their virtue and wisdom we may but probably think they have waded without error. So that the willingness of men to be led by example of others both discovereth and helpeth the imbecility of our judgment. Because it doth the one, therefore insolent and proud wits would always seem to be their own guides; and because it doth the other, we see how hardly the vulgar sort is drawn unto any thing for which there are not as well examples as reasons alleged. Reasons proving that which is more particular by things more general and farther from sense are with the simpler sort of men less trusted, for that they doubt of their own judgement in those things; but of examples which prove unto them one doubtful particular by another more familiarly and sensibly known, they easily perceive in themselves some better ability to judge. The force of examples therefore is great, when in matter of action being doubtful what to do, we are informed what others have commendably done whose deliberations were like. But whosoever doth persuade by example, must as well respect the fitness as the goodness of that he alleageth. To *Ezechias* God himself in this fact giveth testimony of well-doing. So that nothing is here questionable but only whether the example alleaged be pertinent, pregnant and strong. The Serpent spoken of was first erected for the extraordinary and *miraculous cure* of the Israelites in the Desert. This use having presently an end when the cause for which God ordained it was removed, the thing it self they notwithstanding kept for a monument of Gods mercy, as in like consideration they did the pot of Manna, the Rod of *Aaron*, and the Sword which *David* took from *Goliath*. In process of time they made a monument of divine power a plain Idol, they burnt incense before it contrary to the Law of God, and did it the services of honour due unto God only. Which gross and grievous abuse continued till *Ezechias* restoring the purity of sound Religion, destroyed utterly that which had been so long and so generally a snare unto them. It is not amiss which the \* Canon Law hereupon concludeth, namely, that if our Predecessors have done some things which at that time might be without fault, and afterwards be turned to Error and Superstition, we are taught by *Ezechias* breaking the brazen Serpent, that Posterity may destroy them without any delay, and with great authority. But may it be simply and without exception hereby gathered, that Posterity is bound to destroy whatsoever hath been either at the first invented, or but afterwards turned to like superstition and error? No, it cannot be. The Serpent therefore and the signe of the Cross although seeming equal in this point, that superstition hath abused both, yet being herein also unequal, that neither they have been both subject to the like degree of abuse, nor were in hardness of redress alike, it may be that even as the one for abuse was religiously taken away, so now, when Religion hath taken away abuse from the other, we should by utter abolition thereof deserve hardly his commendation, whose example there is offered us no such necessary cause to follow. For by the words of *Ezechias* in terming the Serpent but a lump of brass, to shew that the best thing in it now was the metal or matter whereof it consisted, we may probably conjecture, that the people whose error is therein control'd, had the self-same opinion of it which the Heathens had of Idols, they thought that the power of Deity was with it, and when they saw it dissolved, hardly they might to comfort themselves, imagine as *Olympius* the Sophist did beholding the dissolution of Idols, *Shapes, and counterfeits they were, fashioned of matter subject unto corruption, therefore to grind them to dust was easy, but those celestial powers which dwelt and resided in them are ascended into Heaven*. Some difference there is between these opinions of palpable Idolatry, and that which the Schools in speculation have boulded out concerning the Cross. Notwithstanding so far as the Church of *Rome* hath hitherto practised, and doth profess

a Dist. 6. 3. c.  
Quia.

b *scilicet*. *liby*.  
cap. 15.

feels the same adoration to the signe of the Croſs, and neither leſs nor other than is due unto Chriſt himſelf, howſoever they varniſh and qualifie their ſentence, pretending that the Croſs, which to outward ſenſe preſenteth viſibly it ſelf alone, is not by them apprehended alone, but hath in their ſecret ſuſmiſe or conceit a reference to the Perſon of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt; ſo that the honour which they jointly do to both, reſpecteth principally his Perſon, and the Croſs but only for his Perſons ſake, the people not accuſtomed to trouble their wits with ſo nice and ſubtle differences in the exerciſe of Religion, are apparently no leſs inſnared by adoring the Croſs, than the Jews by burning incenſe to the brazen Serpent. It is by <sup>a</sup> *Thomas* ingenuouſly granted, that becauſe unto reaſonable creatures a kind of reverence is due for the excellency which is in them, and whereby they reſemble God, therefore if reaſonable Creatures, Angels, or Men ſhould receive at our hands holy and divine honour, as the ſigne of the Croſs doth at theirs, to pretend that we honour not them alone, but we honour God with them, would not ſerve the turn, neither would this be able to prevent the error of men, or cauſe them always to reſpect God in their adorations, and not to finiſh their intents in the object next before them. But unto this he addeth, that no ſuch error can grow by adoring in that ſort a dead Image, which every man knoweth to be void of excellency in it ſelf, and therefore will eaſily conceive that the honour done unto it hath an higher reference. Howbeit, ſeeing that we have by over-tru: experience been taught how often, eſpecially in theſe caſes, the light even of common underſtanding faileth, ſurely their uſual adoration of the Croſs is not hereby freed. For in actions of this kinde we are more to reſpect what the greateſt part of men is commonly prone to conceive, than what ſome few mens wits may deviſe in conſtruction of their own particular meanings. Plain it is, that a falſe opinion of ſome perſonal divine excellencie to be in thoſe things which either Nature or Art hath framed, cauſeth always religious adoration. And as plain, that the like adoration applyed unto things ſenſible, argueth to vulgar capacities, yea leaveth imprinted in them the very ſame opinion of Deity from whence all idolatrous worſhip groweth. Yea the meaner and baſer a thing worſhipped is in it ſelf, the more they incline to think that every man which doth adore it, knoweth there is in it or with it a preſence of divine power. Be it therefore tru: that Croſſes purpoſely framed or uſed for receipt of divine honour, be even as ſcandalous as the brazen Serpent it ſelf, where they are in ſuch ſort adored. Should we hereupon think our ſelves in the night of God, and in conſcience charged to aboliſh utterly the very Ceremony of the Croſs, neither meant at the firſt, nor now converted unto any ſuch offensive purpoſe? Did the Jews which could never be perſuaded to admit in the City of *Jeruſalem* that <sup>b</sup> Image of *Caſar* which the *Romans* were accuſtomed to adore, make any ſcruple of <sup>c</sup> *Caſars* Image in the Coin which they knew very well that men were not wont to worſhip? Between the Croſs which Superſtition honoureth as Chriſt, and that Ceremony of the Croſſe which ſerveth onely for a ſigne of remembrance, there is as plain and as great a difference, as between thoſe <sup>d</sup> brazen Images which *Salomon* made to bear up the Ceſterne of the Temple, and (ſith both were of like ſhape, but not of unlike uſe) <sup>e</sup> that which the *Iſraelites* in the *Wilderneſſe* did adore; or between the <sup>f</sup> Altars which *Jofias* deſtroyed becauſe they were inſtruments of meer Idolatry, and <sup>g</sup> that which the Tribe of *Reuben* with others erected near to the River *Jordan*, for which alſo they grew at the firſt into ſome diſlike, and were by the reſt of their brethren ſuſpected, yea hardly charged with open breach of the Law of God, accuſed of backwardneſſe in Religion, upbraided bitterly with the fact of *Peor*, and the odious example of *Achan*, as if the building of their Altar in that place had given manifeſt ſhew of ſo better than intended Apoſtaſie, till by a true declaration made in their ſhew defence, it appeared that ſuch as miſliked miſ-underſtood their enterprize, in as much as they had no intent to build any Altar for Sacrifice, which God would have no where offered ſaving in *Jeruſalem* onely, but to a farre other end and purpoſe, which being opened, ſatiſfied all parties, and ſo delivered them from cauſeleſſe blame. In this particular ſuppoſe the worſt, imagine that the immateriall Ceremony of the Croſſe had been the ſubject of as groſſe pollution

<sup>a</sup> *Thom. p. 3. q. 2. c. 1. ad. 107.*

<sup>b</sup> *Joſeph. Anti. lib. 17. c. 8. & L. 18. c. 3. & de bell. lib. 2. c. 8.*  
<sup>c</sup> *Their Eagles and the Images of their Princes they carried with them in all their Armies, and had always a kind of Chapel wherein they placed and adored them as Gods. Dio. lib. 40.*  
<sup>d</sup> *Herodian. l. 4. c. 11. 20.*  
<sup>e</sup> *2 Chron. 4. 3.*  
<sup>f</sup> *Exod. 32. 4.*  
<sup>g</sup> *2 Chron. 34. 7.*  
<sup>h</sup> *Joſh. 22. 10.*



lution as any Heathenish or prophane Idol. If we think the example of *Ezechias* a proof, that things which Errour and Superstition hath abused, may in no consideration be tolerated, although we presently finde them not subject to so vile abuse, the plain example of *Ezechias* proveth the contrary. The Temples and Idols which  
 a 1 Reg. 11. 17. under *Salomon* had been of very purpose framed for the honour of forraign Gods, *Ezechias* destroyed not, because they stood as forlorn things and did now no harm, although formerly they had done harm. *Josias*, for some inconvenience after-  
 b 1 Reg. 13. 13. wards, razed them up. Yet to both there is one commendation given even from God himse f, that touching matter of Religion, they walked in the steps of *David*.  
 c 1 Reg. 18. 3. 6. *vid.* and did no way displease God. Perhaps it seemeth that by force and virtue  
 3 Reg. 22. 2. of this example, although it bare detestation and hatred of Idolatry, all things which have been at any time worshipped, are not necessarily to be taken out of the World, nevertheless for remedy and prevention of so great offences, wisdom should judge it the safest course to remove altogether from the eyes of men that which may put them in mind of evil. Some kinds of evil, no doubt, there are very quick in working on those affections that most easily take fire, which evils should in that respect no oftner than need requirerh be brought in presence of weak minds. But neither is the Cross any such evil, nor yet the brazen Serpent it self so strongly poysoned, that our eyes, ears, and thoughts, ought to shun them both, for fear of some deadly harm to ensue the onely representation thereof by gesture, shape, sound, or such like significant means. And for mine own part, I most assuredly perswade my se'f, that had *Ezechias* (till the days of whose most virtuous Reign they ceased not continually to burn Incense to the brazen Serpent) had he found the Serpent, though sometime adored; yet at that time recovered from the evil of so gross abuse, and reduced to the same that was before in the time of *David*, at which time they esteemed it only as a memorial, signe, or monument of Gods miraculous goodness towards them, even as we in no other sort esteem the Ceremony of the Cross, the due consideration of an use so harm'less, common to both, might no less have wrought their equal preservation, than different occasions have procured, notwithstanding the ones extinguishment, the others lawful continuance. In all perswasions, which ground themselves upon example, we are not so much to respect what is done, as the causes and secret inducements leading therunto. The question being ther:fore, whether this Ceremony supposed to have been *sometimes* scandalous and offensive, ought for that cause to be *now* removed, there is no reason we should forthwith yeild our selves to be carried away with example, no not of them whose acts the highest judgment approveth for having reformed in that manner any publike evil: but before we either attempt any thing or resolve, the state and condition as well of our own affairs as theirs whose example presserh us, is advisedly to be examined, because some things are of their own nature scandalous, and cannot chuse but breed offence, as those <sup>d</sup> Sinks of execrable filth which *Josias* did overwhelm; some things, albeit not by nature and of themselves, are notwithstanding so generally turned to evil, by reason of an evil corrupt habit grown, and through long continuance incurably settled in the minds of the greatest part, that no redress can be well hoped for, without removal of that wherein they have ruined themselves, which plainly was the state of the Jewish people, and the cause why *Ezechias* did with such sudden indignation destroy what he saw worshipped; finally, some things are as the signe of the Cross, though subject either almost or altogether to as great abuse, yet curable with more facility and ease. And to speak as the truth is, our very nature doth hardly yeild to destroy that which may be fruitfully kept, and without any great difficulty clean scowred from the rust of evil, which by some accident hath grown into it. Wherefore to that which they build in this question upon the example of *Ezechias*, let this suffice. When Heathens despised Christian Religion, because of the sufferings of Jesus Christ, the Fathers, to testifie how little such contumelies and contempts prevailed with them, chose rather the sign of the Cross, than any other outward mark, whereby the world might most easily discern always what they were. On the contrary side now, whereas they which do all profess the Christian Religion are divided amongst themselves. and the fault of the one part is, that the zeal to the sufferings of Christ they admire too much, and

OVER-

over-superstitiously adore the Visible sign of his Cross, if you ask, what we that mislike them, should do, we are here advised to cure one contrary by another. Which Art or Method is not yet so current as they imagine. For if, as their practice for the most part sheweth, it be their meaning that the scope and drift of Reformation, when things are faulty, should be to settle the Church in the contrary, it standeth them upon to beware: of this rule, because seeing Vices have not only Vertues, but other Vices also in nature opposite unto them, it may be dangerous in these cases to seek but that which we find contrary to present evils. For in sores and sicknesses of the mind we are not simply to measure good by distance from evil, because one Vice may in some respect be more opposite to another, than either of them to that Vertue which holdeth the mean between them both. Liberality and Covetousness, the one a Vertue and the other a Vice, are not so contrary as the Vices of Covetousness and Prodigality; Religion and Superstition have more affiance, though the one be Light and the other Darknes, then Superstition and Profaneness, which are vicious extremities. By means whereof it cometh also to pass, that the meane, which is Vertue, seemeth in the eyes of each extreame an extremity; the liberal hearted man is by the opinion of the Prodigal miserable, and by the judgement of the Miserable lavish; Impiety for the most part upbraiderth Religion as superstitious, which Superstition often accuseth as impious, both so conceiving thereof because it doth seem more to participate each extreame, then one extreame doth another, and is by consequent less contrary to either of them, then they mutually between themselves. Now, if he that seeketh to reform Covetousness or Superstition, should but labour to induce the contrary, it were but to draw men out of Lime into Cole-dust. So that their course which will remedy the superstitious abuse of things profitable in the Church is not still to abolish utterly the use thereof, because not using at all is most opposite to ill using, but rather if it may be, to bring them back to a right perfect and religious usage, which a beir less contrary to the present sore, is notwithstanding the better and by many degrees the sounder way of recovery. And unto this effect that very precedent it self which they propose may be best followed. For as the Fathers, when the Cross of Christ was in utter contempt, did not superstitiously adore the same, but rather declare that they so esteemed it as was meet: In like manner where we find the Cross to have that honour which is due to Christ, is it not as lawful for us to retain it in that estimation which it ought to have, and in that use which it had of old without offence, as by taking it clean away to seem Followers of their Example, which cure wilfully by abscission that which they might both preserve and heal? Touching therefore the Sign and Ceremony of the Cross, we no way find our selves bound to relinquish it, neither because the first Inventors thereof were but mortal men, nor lest the sense and signification we give unto it should burthen us as Authors of a new Gospel in the House of God, nor in respect of some cause which the Fathers had more then we have to use the same, nor finally for any such offence or scandal as heretofore it hath been subject unto by error now reformed in the minds of men.

66. The ancient custome of the Church was, after they had baptized, to adde thereunto Imposition of hands, with effectual Prayer for the illumination of Gods most Holy Spirit, to confirm and perfect that which the grace of the same Spirit had already begun in Baptism. For our means to obtain the graces which God doth bestow, are our Prayers. Our Prayers to that intent are available as well for others as for our selves. To pray for others, is to bless them for whom we pray, because Prayer procureth the blessing of God upon them, especially the Prayer of such as God either most respecteth for their Piety and Zeal that way, or else regardeth for that their place and calling bindeth them above others unto this duty, as it doth both natural and spiritual Fathers. With Prayers of spiritual and personal Benediction, the manner hath been in all Ages to use *Imposition of hands*, as a Ceremony be-tokening our restrained desires to the party, whom we present unto God by Prayer. Thus when [b] Israel blessed Ephraim and Manasses, Josephs Sons, he imposed upon them his hands and prayed, *God in whose sight my Fathers Abraham and Isaac did walk, God which hath fed me all my life long unto this day, and the Angel which hath delivered me from all evil, bless these Children.* The Prophets which healed

Of Confirmation after Baptism.  
a Caro manus impositione ad-  
unbratur, ut et  
anima spiritu  
illuminetur.  
Tertul. de Resurrect. car.

b Gen. 48. 14.

disease

- c 2 Reg. 5. 11. diseases by Prayer, used therein the self-same Ceremony. And therefore <sup>a</sup> when *Elizans* willed *Naaman* to wash himself seven times in *Jordan* for cure of his foul disease, it much offended him: *I thought* (saith he) *with my self, Surely the man will come forth and stand and call upon the Name of the Lord his God, and put his hand*
- d Numb. 27. 18. *on the place, to the end he may so heal the Leprosie.* In <sup>a</sup> Consecrations and Ordinations of men unto rooms of divine calling, the like was usually done from the time of *Moses* to *Christ*. Their sutes that came unto *Christ* for help were also tendered oftentimes, and are expressed in such <sup>a</sup> formes or phrases of speech, as shew that he
- e Mat. 9. 18. was himself an observer of the same custome. He which with Imposition of Hands and Prayer did so great Works of Mercy for restauration of bodily health, was worthily judged as able to effect the infusion of Heavenly grace into them, whose age was not yet depraved with that malice which might be supposed a bar to the goodness of God towards them. They <sup>a</sup> brought him therefore young children to
- f Mat. 19. 13. put his hands upon them and pray. After the Ascension of our Lord and Saviour
- Marke 10. 13. *Jesus Christ*, that which he had begun continued in the daily practice of his Apostles, whose Prayer and Imposition of Hands, were a mean whereby thousands became partakers of the wonderful gifts of God; The Church had received from *Christ*
- g Marke 16. 17 <sup>a</sup> a promise, that such as believed in him, these signs and tokens should follow them, *To cast out Devils, to speak with tongues, to drive away Serpents, to be free from the harm which any deadly possion could work, and to cure diseases by Imposition of Hands.* Which power, common at the first in a manner unto all Believers, all Believers had not power to derive or communicate unto all other men, but whosoever was the instrument of God to instruct, convert and baptize them, <sup>a</sup> the gift of miraculous operations by the power of the Holy Ghost they had not, but only at the Apostles
- h Acts 19. 6. own hands. For which cause <sup>a</sup> *Simon Magus* perceiving that power to be in none but them, and presuming that they which had it might sell it, sought to purchase it of them with money. And as miraculous graces of the Spirit continued after the
- i Acts 8. 17. 18. Apostles times (for saith <sup>a</sup> *Irenaeus*) *They which are truly his Disciples, do in his Name and through grace received from him, such works for the benefit of other men, as every of them is by him enabled to work; Some cast out Devils, inasmuch as they which are delivered from wicked spirits have been thereby won unto Christ, and do constantly persevere in the Church and society of faithful men; Some excell in the knowledge of things to come, in the grace of Visions from God, and the gift of Prophetical Preditions; Some by laying on their hands, restore them to health which are grievously afflicted with sickness; yea there are that of dead have been made alive, and have afterwards many years conversed with us; What should I say? the gifts are innumerable wherewith God hath enriched his Church throughout the World, and by vertue whereof in the Name of Christ crucified under Pontius Pilate, the Church every day doth many Wonders for the good of Nations, neither fraudulently nor in any respect of lucre and gain to her self, but as freely bestowing as God on her hath bestowed his divine Graces: So it no where appeareth, that ever any did by Prayer and Imposition of Hands since the Apostles times, make others partakers of the like miraculous gifts and graces as long as it pleased God to continue the same in his Church, but only Bishops the Apostles Successors for a time, even in that power. <sup>a</sup> Saint Augustine*
- k Iren. l. 2. c. 57. *acknowledgeth, that such gifts were not permitted to last always, lest men should wax cold with the commonness of that, the strangeness whereof at the first inflamed them. Which words of Saint Augustine declaring how the vulgar use of these Miracles was then expired, are no prejudice to the like extraordinary graces more rarely observed in some, either then or of later days. Now whereas the Successors of the Apostles had but only for a time such power as by Prayer and Imposition of Hands to bestow the Holy Ghost; The reason wherefore Confirmation, nevertheless, by Prayer and Laying on of hands hath hitherto always continued, is for other very special benefits which the Church thereby enjoyeth. The Fathers every where impute unto it that gift of grace of the Holy Ghost, nor which maketh us first Christian men, but when we are made such, assisteth us in all vertue, armeth us against temptation and sin. For after Baptism administred, there followeth* (saith <sup>m</sup> *Tertullian*) *Imposition of hands with invocation and invocation of the Holy Ghost, which willingly cometh down from the Father to rest upon the purified and blessed bodies,*
- l Aug. de vera Relig. cap. 15.
- m Tertul. de B. p. 15.



bodies, as it were acknowledging the waters of Baptism a fit seat. S.<sup>r</sup> Cyprian in n Cyp. Epist. 2,  
more particular manner alluding to that effect of the Spirit which here especially ad Donat. cap. 2,  
was respected, *How great (saith he) is that power and force wherewith the mind is here (he meaneth in Baptism) enabled, being not only withdrawn from that pernicious hold which the World before had of it, nor only so purified and made clean that no stain or blemish of the Enemies invasion doth remain, but ever and besides (namely, through Prayer and Imposition of Hands) becometh yet greater, yet mightier in strength, so far as to reign with a kind of Imperial dominion over the whole Band of that roving and spoiling Adversary.* As much is signified by <sup>o</sup> Eusebius Emiffenus, saying, *The o Euseb. Emif. Holy Ghost which descendeth with saving influence upon the waters of Baptism, doth* Ser. de Pent.  
*there give that fulness which sufficeth for innocency, and afterwards exhibiteth in Confirmation an augmentation of further grace.* The Fathers therefore being thus periwaded, held Confirmation as <sup>an</sup> Ordinance Apostolick always profitable in p Aug. de Trin.  
Gods Church, although not always accompanied with equal largeness of those ex- lib. 1. cap. 16,  
ternal effects which gave it countenance at the first. The cause of severing Confir- Heb. 6. 2.  
mation from Baptism (for most commonly they went together) was sometimes in the Minister, which being of inferiour degree might baptize but not confirm, as in  
<sup>3</sup> their case it came to pass whom Peter and John did confirm, whereas Philip had before baptized them; and in theirs of whom <sup>S.</sup> Jerome hath said, *I deny not but q Acts 8. 12. 15  
the custome of the Churches is that the Bishop should go abroad, and imposing his hands, Hieron. adver,  
pray for the gift of the Holy Ghost on them whom Presbyters and Deacons far off in Lucif. cap. 4.*  
*lesser Cities have already baptized.* Which ancient custom of the Church, S. Cyprian groundeth upon the Example of Peter and John in the eight of the Acts before al-  
ledged. *The faithful in Samaria (saith he) Had already obtained Baptism: Only Cyp. Epist. 73.  
that which was wanting, Peter and John supplied by Prayer and Imposition of Hands, ad Jubaianum,  
to the end the Holy Ghost might be poured upon them. Which also is done amongst our  
selves, when they which be already baptized are brought to the Prelates of the Church,  
to obtain by our Prayer and Imposition of Hands the Holy Ghost.* By this it appear-  
eth that when the Ministers of Baptism were persons of inferiour degree, the Bi-  
shops did after confirm whom such had before baptized. Sometimes they which by  
force of their Ecclesiastical calling might do as well the one as the other, were not-  
withstanding men whom Heresie had dis-joynd from the Fellowship of true Belie-  
vers. Whereupon when any man by them baptized and confirmed, came after-  
wards to see and renounce their error, there grew in some Churches very hot con-  
tention about the manner of admitting such into the bosome of the true Church,  
as hath been declared already in the question of re-baptization. But the general  
received custom was only to admit them with Imposition of Hands and Prayer.  
Of which custom while some imagined the reason to be for that Hereticks might  
give remission of sins by Baptism, but not the Spirit by Imposition of Hands, be-  
cause themselves had not Gods Spirit, and that therefore their Baptism might stand,  
but Confirmation must be given again: the imbecility of this ground gave Cyprian  
occasion to oppose himself against the practice of the Church herein, labouring  
many ways to prove that Hereticks could do neither, and consequently, that their  
Baptism in all respects, was as frustrate as their Chrism; for the manner of those  
times was in Confirming to use anointing. On the other side, against Luciferians  
which ratified only the Baptism of Hereticks, but disanul'd their Confirmations  
and Consecrations, under pretence of the reason which hath been before specified,  
*Hereticks cannot give the Holy Ghost.* Saint Jerome proveth at large, that if Bap-  
tism by Hereticks be granted available to remission of sins, which no man receiveth  
without the Spirit, it must needs follow that the reason taken from disability of be-  
stowing the Holy Ghost, was no reason wherefore the Church should admit Con-  
verts with any new Imposition of Hands. Notwithstanding, because it might be  
objected, that if the gift of the Holy Ghost do always joyn it self with true Bap-  
tism, the Church, which thinketh the Bishops Confirmation after other mens Bap-  
tism needful for the obtaining of the Holy Ghost, should hold an error; Saint  
Jerom hereunto maketh answer, that the cause of this observation is not any abso-  
lute impossibility of receiving the Holy Ghost by the Sacrament of Baptism, unless  
a Bishop adde after it the Imposition of Hands, but rather a certain congruity and  
fitness

a Heb. 6. 3.

b Psal. 51. 10.  
21, 12.c T.C. l. 1. p. 199.  
Tell me why  
there should  
be any such

confirmation in the Church, being brought in by the fained Decretal Epistles of the Popes (this is retracted by the same, T. C. lib. 3. pag. 232. That it is ancients than the fained Decretal Epistles, I yield unto) and no one tittle thereof being once found in the Scripture, and seeing that it hath been so horribly abused, and not necessary, why ought it not to be utterly abolished? And thirdly, this Confirmation hath many dangerous points in it. The first step of Popery in this Confirmation, is in the laying of Hands upon the Head of the Child, whereby the opinion of it that it is a Sacrament, is confirmed, especially when as the Prayer doth say, that it is done according to the Example of the Apostles, which is a manifest untruth, and taken indeed from the Popish Confirmation. The second is, for that the Bishop, as he is called, must be the only Minister of it, whereby the Popish opinion, which esteemeth it above Baptism, is Confirmed. For whilst Baptism may be ministered of the Minister, and not Confirmation but only of the Bishop, there is great cause of suspicion given to think that Baptism is not so precious a thing as Confirmation, seeing this was one of the principal reasons whereby that wicked opinion was established in Popery. I do not here speak of the inconvenience, that men are constrained with charges to bring their children sometimes half a score miles for that, which if it were needful, might be as well done at home in their own Parishes. The third is, for that the Book saith, a cause of using Confirmation is, that by Imposition of Hands and Prayer, the Children may receive strength and defence against all temptations, whereas there is no promise, that by the laying on of Hands upon Children any such gift shall be given; and it maintaineth the Popish distinction, that the Spirit of God is given at Baptism, unto remission of sins, and in Confirmation, unto strength,

will

will remain behind. Thus much therefore generally spoken, may serve for answer unto their demands that require us to tell them, *Why there should be any such confirmation in the Church, seeing we are not ignorant how earnestly they have protested against it, and how directly (although untruly, for so they are content to acknowledge) it hath by some of them been said, to be first brought in by the fained Decretal Epistles of the Popes; or why it should not be utterly abolished, seeing that no one title thereof can be once found in the whole Scripture, except the Epistle to the Hebrews be Scripture; and again, seeing that how free soever it be now from abuse, if we look back to the times past, which wise men do always more respect than the present, it hath been abused, and is found at the length no such profitable Ceremony as the whole silly Church of Christ for the space of these sixteen hundred years hath through want of experience imagined: Last of all, seeing also besides the cruelty which is shewed towards poor Country people, who are fain sometimes to let their Ploughs stand still, and with incredible wearisome toyl of their feeble bodies, to wander over Mountains and through Woods; it may be now and then little less than a whole half score of miles for a Bishops blessing, which if it were needful, might as well be done at home in their own Parishes, rather than they to purchase it with so great loss and intolerable pain: There are, they say, in Confirmation besides this, three terrible points. The first is, laying on of hands with pretence that the same is done to the example of the Apostles, which is not only, as they suppose, a manifest untruth (for all the World doth know that the Apostles did never after Baptism lay hands on any, and therefore <sup>b</sup> S. Luke which saith they did was much deceived) but farther also we thereby teach men to think imposition of Hands a Sacrament, belike because it is a principle ingrafted by common light of Nature in the minds of men, that all things done by Apostolick example must needs be Sacraments: The second high point of danger is, that by tying Confirmation to the Bishop alone, there is great cause of suspicion given to think that Baptism is not so precious a thing as Confirmation; for will any man think that a velvet Coat is of no more price than a linen Coat, knowing the one to be an ordinary garment, the other an ornament which only Sergeants at Law do wear? Finally, to draw to an end of perils, the last and the weightiest hazard is, where the Book it self doth say that children by imposition of hands and prayer may receive strength against all temptation; which speech as a two-edged sword doth both ways dangerously wound; partly, because it ascribeth grace to imposition of hands, whereby we are able no more to assure our selves in the warrant of any promise from God that his Heavenly grace shall be given, then the Apostle was that himself should obtain grace by the bowing of his knees to God; and partly, because by using the very word strength in this matter, a word so apt to spread infection, we maintain with Popish Evangelists, an old forlorn distinction of the Holy Ghost, <sup>a</sup> bestowed upon Christs Apostles before his Ascension into Heaven, and <sup>c</sup> augmented upon them afterwards, a distinction of grace infused into Christian men by degrees, planted in them at the first by Baptism, after cherished, watered, and (be it spoken without offence) strengthened as by other vertuous offices which Piety and true Religion teacheth, even to by this very special Benediction whereof we speak, the Rite or Ceremony of Confirmation.*

67. The grace which we have by the holy Eucharist, doth not begin but continue life. No man therefore receiveth this Sacrament before Baptism, because no dead thing is capable of nourishment. That which groweth must of necessity first live. If our bodies did not daily waite, food to restore them were a thing superfluous. And it may be that the grace of Baptism would serve to eternal life, were it not that the state of our spiritual being is daily so much hindered and impaired after Baptism. In that life therefore where neither body nor soul can decay, our souls shall as little require this Sacrament as our bodies corporal nourishment. But as long as the days of our warfare last, during the time that we are both subject to diminution and capable of augmentation in grace, the Words of our Lord and Saviour Christ will remain forceable, <sup>d</sup> Except ye eat the Flesh of the Son of man, and drink his Blood, ye have no life in you. Life being therefore proposed unto all men as their end, they which by Baptism have laid the foundation and attained the first beginning of a new life, have here their nourishment and food prescribed for continuance

<sup>a</sup> Heb. 6. 3.

<sup>b</sup> Acts 8. 17.

<sup>c</sup> Ephes. 3. 14.

<sup>d</sup> John 10. 12.

<sup>e</sup> Acts 1. 8.

Of the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ.



*tinuance of life* in them. Such as will live the life of God, must eat the Flesh and drink the Blood of the Son of man, because this is a part of that dyer, which if we want, we cannot live. Whereas therefore in our Infancy we are incorporated into Christ, and by Baptism receive the grace of his Spirit without any sense or feeling of the gift which God bestoweth, in the Eucharist we so receive the gift of God, that we know by grace what the grace is which God giveth us, the degrees of our own increase in holiness and virtue we see and can judge of them, we understand that the strength of our life begun in Christ is Christ, that his Flesh is meat, and his Blood drink, not by surmised imagination, but truly, even so truly, that through Faith we perceive in the Body and Blood sacramentally presented the very taste of eternal life, the grace of the Sacrament is here as the food which we eat and drink. This was it that some did exceedingly fear, lest *Zwinglius* and *OEcolumpadius* would bring to pass, that men should account of this Sacrament but only as of a shadow, destitute, empty, and void of Christ. But seeing that by opening the several opinions which have been held, they are grown, for ought I can see, on all sides at the length to a general agreement, concerning that which alone is material, namely, the *real participation* of Christ, and of life in his Body and Blood by means of this Sacrament, wherefore should the World continue still distracted and rent with so manifold contentions, when there remaineth now no Controversie saving only about the subject *where* Christ is? Yea, even in this point no side denieth, but that the *soul of man* is the receptacle of Christs presence. Whereby the question is yet driven to a narrower issue, nor doth any thing rest doubtful but this, whether when the Sacrament is administered, Christ be whole *within man only*, or else his Body and Blood be also externally seated in the very consecrated Elements themselves: which opinion they that defend, are driven either to *Consubstantiate* and incorporate Christ with Elements Sacramental, or to *Transubstantiate* and change their substance into his; and so the one to hold him really but invisibly moulded up with the substance of those Elements, the other to hide him under the only visible shew of Bread and Wine, the substance whereof, as they imagine, is abolished, and his succeeded in the same room. All things considered and compared with that success, which truth hath hitherto had by so bitter conflicts with errors in this point, shall I wish that men would more give themselves to meditate with silence what we have by the Sacrament, and less to dispute of the manner how? If any man suppose that this were too great stupidity and dulness, let us see whether the Apostles of our Lord themselves have not done the like. It appeareth by many examples, that they of their own disposition were very scrupulous and inquisitive, yea, in other cases of less importance and less difficulty always apt to move questions. How cometh it to pass that so few words of so high a mystery being uttered, they receive with gladness the gift of Christ, and make no shew of doubt or scruple? The reason hereof is not dark to them which have any thing at all observed how the powers of the mind are wont to stir, when that which we infinitely long for, presenteth it self above and besides expectation. Curious and intricate speculations do hinder, they abate, they quench such inflamed motions of delight and joy, as divine graces use to raise when extraordinarily they are present. The mind therefore feeling present joy, is always marvellous unwilling to admit any other cogitation, and in that case casteth off those disputes whereunto the intellectual part at other times easily draweth. A manifest effect whereof may be noted, if we compare with our Lords Disciples in the twentieth of *John*, the people that are said in the sixth of *John* to have gone after him to *Capernaum*. These leaving him on the one side the Sea of *Tiberias*, and finding him again as soon as themselves by ship were arrived on the contrary side, whither they knew that by ship he came not, and by Land the journey was longer then according to the time he could have to travel, as they wondered, so they asked also, *Rabbi, when camest thou hither?* The Disciples, when Christ appeared to them in far more strange and miraculous manner, moved no question, but rejoiced greatly in that they saw. For why? The one sort beheld only that in Christ which they knew was more then natural, but yet their affection was not rapt therewith through any great extraordinary gladness; the other when they looked on Christ, were not ignorant that they saw the Well-spring of their own everlasting

everlasting felicity; the one, because they enjoyed not, disputed; the other disputed not, because they enjoyed. If then the presence of Christ with them did so much move, judge what their thoughts and affections were at the time of this new presentation of Christ, not before their eyes, but within their Souls. They had learned before, that his Flesh and Bloud are the true cause of eternal Life, that this they are not by the bare force of their own substance, but through the dignity and worth of his Person, which offered them up by way of Sacrifice for the life of the whole World, and doth make them still effectual thereunto; Finally, that to us they are life in particular, by being particularly received. Thus much they knew, although as yet they understood not perfectly to what effect or issue the same would come, till at the length being assembled for no other cause which they could imagine, but to have eaten the Paschever only that *Moses* appointed, when they saw their Lord and Master with hands and eyes lifted up to Heaven first bless and consecrate for the endless good of all generations till the Worlds end, the chosen Elements of Bread and Wine, which Elements made for ever the instruments of life by vertue of his Divine Benediction, they being the first that were commanded to receive from him, the first which were warranted by his promise, that not only unto them at the present time, but to whomsoever they and their Successors after them did duely administer the same, those mysteries should serve as conducts of life and conveyances of his Body and Bloud unto them, was it possible they should hear that voice, *Take, eat, this is my Body, drink ye all of this, this is my Bloud*; possible that doing what was required, and believing what was promised, the same should have present effect in them, and not fill them with a kind of fearful admiration at the Heaven which they saw in themselves? They had at that time a Sea of comfort and joy to wade in, and we by that which they did are taught, that this Heavenly Food is given for the satisfying of our empty souls, and not for the exercising of our curious and subtil wits. If we doubt what those admirable words may import, let him be our Teacher for the meaning of Christ, to whom Christ was himself a School-master, let our Lords Apostle be his Interpreter, content we our selves with his explication, *My Body, The communion of my Body*; *My Bloud, The communion of my Bloud*. Is there any thing more expedite, cleer and easie, then that as Christ is termed our life, because through him we obtain life, so the parts of this Sacrament are his Body and Bloud, for that they are so to us, who receiving them, receive that by them which they are termed? The Bread and Cup are his Body and Bloud, because they are causes instrumental, upon the receipt whereof the participation of his Body and Bloud ensueth. For that which produceth any certain effect, is not vainly nor improperly said to be that very effect whereunto it tenderth. Every cause is in the effect which groweth from it. Our souls and bodies quickened to eternal Life are effects, the cause whereof is the Person of Christ, his Body and Bloud are the true Well-spring out of which this life floweth. So that his Body and Bloud are in that very subject whereunto they minister life, not only by effect or operation, even as the influence of the Heavens is in Plants, Beasts, Men, and in every thing which they quicken, but also by a far more divine and mystical kind of Union, which maketh us one with him, even as He and the Father are one. The real presence of Christs most blessed Body and Bloud, is not therefore to be sought for in the Sacrament, but in the worthy Receiver of the Sacrament. And with this the very order of our Saviours words agreeth, first, *Take and eat*; then, *This is my Body which was broken for you*: first, *Drink ye all of this*, then followeth, *This is my Bloud of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sin*. I see not which way it should be gathered by the Words of Christ, when and where the Bread is his Body, or the Cup his Bloud, but only in the very heart and soul of him which receiveth them. As for the Sacraments they really exhibite, but for ought we can gather out of that which is written of them, they are not really, nor do really contain in themselves that grace which with them or by them it pleaseth God to bestow. If on all sides it be confest, that the grace of Baptism is poured into the soul of man, that by Water we receive it, although it be neither seated in the Water, nor the Water changed into it, what should induce men to think that the grace of the Eucharist must needs be in the Eucharist, before it can be in us that

receive it? The fruit of the Eucharist is the participation of the Body and Bloud of Christ. There is no sentence of Holy Scripture which saith, that we cannot by this Sacrament be made partakers of his Body and Bloud, except they be first contained in the Sacrament, or the Sacrament converted into them. *This is my Body*, and *This is my Bloud*, being words of promise, sith we all agree, that by the Sacrament Christ doth really and truly in us perform his promise, why do we vainly trouble our selves with so fierce contentions, whether by Consubstantiation, or else by Transubstantiation the Sacrament it self be first possessed with Christ or no? A thing which no way can either further or hinder us howsoever it stand, because our participation of Christ in this Sacrament dependeth on the co-operation of his Omnipotent Power, which maketh it his Body and Bloud to us, whether with change or without alteration of the Element such as they imagine, we need not greatly to care nor inquire. Take therefore that wherein all agree, and then consider by it self what cause why the rest in question should not rather be left as superfluous than urged as necessary. It is on all sides plainly confessed, first, That this Sacrament is a true and a real participation of Christ, who thereby imparteth himself, even his whole intire Person, *as a myssical head*, unto every soul that receiveth him, and that every such Receiver doth thereby incorporate or unite himself unto Christ *as a myssical member* of him, yea of them also whom he acknowledgeth to be his own: Secondly, That to whom *the Person of Christ* is thus communicated, to them he giveth by the same Sacrament his holy Spirit to sanctifie them, as it sanctifieth him which is their Head: Thirdly, That what *merit, force, or vertue sever there is in his sacrificed body and bloud*, we freely, fully, and wholly have it by this Sacrament: Fourthly, That *the effect thereof in us is a real transmutation of our souls and bodies* from sin to righteousness, from death and corruption to immortality and life: Fifthly, That because the Sacrament being of it self but a corruptible and earthly Creature, must needs be thought an unlikely Instrument to work so admirable effects in Man, we are therefore to rest our selves altogether upon *the strength of his glorious power*, who is able and will bring to pass that the Bread and Cup which he giveth us shall be truly the thing he promisseth. It seemeth therefore much amiss, that against them whom they term Sacramentaries, so many invective Discourses are made, all running upon two points, that the Eucharist is not a bare sign or figure only, and that the efficacy of his Body and Bloud is not all we receive in this Sacrament. For no man, having read their Books and Writings which are thus traduced, can be ignorant that both these Assertions they plainly confess to be most true. They do not so interpret the Words of Christ as if the name of his Body did import but the figure of his Body, and to be, were only to signifie his Bloud. They grant that these holy Mysteries received in due manner, do instrumentally both make us partakers of the grace of that Body and Bloud which were given for the life of the World, and besides also impart unto us even in true and real, though myssical manner, the very Person of our Lord himself, whole, perfect, and intire, as hath been shewed. Now whereas all three opinions do thus far accord in one, that strong conceit which two of the three have imbraced as touching a Literal, Corporal, and Oral manducation of the very substance of his Flesh and Bloud, is surely an opinion nowhere delivered in Holy Scripture, whereby they should think themselves bound to believe it, and (so speak with the softest terms we can use) greatly prejudiced in that when some others did so conceive of eating his Flesh, our Saviour to abate that error in them, gave them directly to understand how his Flesh so eaten could profit them nothing; because the words which he spake were Spirit, that is to say, they had a reference to a myssical participation, which myssical participation giveth life. Wherein there is small appearance of likelihood, that his meaning should be only to make them Marcionites by inversion, and to teach them that as *Marcion* did think, Christ seemed to be man, but was not, so they contrariwise should believe that Christ in truth would so give them as they thought his flesh to eat, but yet left the horror thereof should offend them, he would not seem to do that he did. When they which have this opinion of Christ in that blessed Sacrament go about to explain themselves, and to open after what manner things are brought to pass, the one sort lay the Union of Christs Deity with his Man-hood, as their first





and body; an alteration from death to life. In a word, it appeareth not, that of all the ancient Fathers of the Church, any one did ever conceive or imagine other than only a mystical participation of Christs both Body and Bloud in the Sacrament, neither are their speeches concerning the change of the Elements themselves into the Body and Bloud of Christ such, that a man can thereby in conscience assure himself it was their meaning to perswade the world either of a corporal Consubstantiation of Christ with those Sanctified and Blessed Elements before we receive them, or of the like Transubstantiation of them into the Body and Bloud of Christ. Which both to our mystical Communion with Christ are so unnecessary, that the Fathers, who plainly hold but this mystical Communion, cannot easily be thought to have meant any other change of Sacramental Elements, then that which the same Spiritual Communion did require them to hold. These things considered, how should that mind, which loving Truth, and seeking Comfort out of Holy Mysteries, hath not perhaps the leisure, perhaps not the wit nor capacity to tread out so endless Mazes; as the intricate Disputes of this cause have led men into, how should a veriously disposed mind better resolve with it self then thus? "Variety of judgments and opinions argueth obscurity in those things whereabout they differ. But that which all parts receive for Truth, that which every one having sisted, is by no one denied or doubted of, must needs be matter of infallible certainty. Whereas therefore there are but three Expositions made of, *This is my Body*, the first, This is in it self before participation really and truly the natural substance of my Body, by reason of the coexistence which my Omnipotent Body hath with the sanctified Element of Bread, which is the *Lutherans Interpretation*: The second, This is in it self and before participation the very true and natural substance of my Body, by force of that *Deity* which with the words of consecration abolisheth the substance of Bread, and substituteth in the place thereof my Body, which is the *Popish consecration*: The last, This hallowed food through concurrence of divine power, is in verity and truth, unto faithful Receivers, instrumentally a cause of that mystical participation, whereby as I make my self wholly theirs, so I give them in hand an actual possession of all such saving grace as my sacrificed body can yield, and as their souls do presently need: this is to them, and in them my Body: Of these three rehearsed Interpretations, the last hath in it nothing but what the rest do all approve and acknowledge to be most true, nothing but that which the words of Christ are on all sides confest to inforce, nothing but that which the Church of God hath always thought necessary, nothing but that which alone is sufficient for every Christian man to believe concerning the use and force of this Sacrament; finally, nothing but that wherewith the writings of all Antiquity are consonant, and all Christian Confessions agreeable. And as truth in what kind soever is by no kind of truth gain-said, so the mind which resteth it self on this, is never troubled with those perplexities which the other do both find, by means of so great contradiction between their opinions, and true principles of reason grounded upon Experience, Nature and Sense. Which albeit with boystorous courage and breath they seem oftentimes to blow away, yet who so observeth, how again they labour and sweat by subtilty of wit to make some shew of agreement between their peculiar conceits, and the general Edicts of Nature, must needs perceive they struggle with that which they cannot fully master. Besides, sith of that which is proper to themselves, their Discourses are hungry and unpleasant, full of tedious and irksome labour, heartless and hitherto without fruit; on the other side read we them, or hear we others, be they of our own or of ancient times, to what part soever they be thought to incline touching that whereof there is controversie, yet in this where they all speak but one thing, their Discourses are Heavenly, their words sweet as the Honey-comb, their tongues melodiously tuned Instruments, their sentences meer consolation and joy: Are we not hereby almost even with voice from Heaven admonished which we may safely cleave unto? He which hath said of the one Sacrament, *Wash and be clean*, hath said concerning the other likewise, *Eat and Live*. If therefore without any such particular and solemn warrant as this is, that poor distressed Woman coming unto Christ for health, could so constantly resolve her self, *May I but touch the skirt of his garment*,

"*garment, I shall be whole*, what moveth us to argue of the manner how life should come by bread, our duty being here but to take what is offered, and most assuredly to rest perswaded of this, that can we but eat we are safe? when I behold with mine eyes some small and scarce discernable Grain or Seed whereof Nature maketh a promise that a tree shall come, and when afterwards of that tree any skilful Artificer undertaketh to frame some exquisite and curious Work, I look for the event, I move no question about performance either of the one or of the other. Shall I simply credit Nature in things natural, shall I in things artificial relye my self on Art, never offering to make doubt, and in that which is above both Art and Nature refuse to believe the Author of both, except he acquaint me with his wayes, and lay the secret of his skill before me? Where God himself doth speak those things which either for height and sublimity of matter, or else for secrecie of performance we are not able to reach unto, as we may be ignorant without danger, so it can be no disgrace to confess we are ignorant. Such as love Piety will, as much as in them lieth, know all things that God commandeth, but especially the duties of service which they owe to God. As for his dark and hidden works, they preferre, as becometh them in such cases, simplicity of Faith before that knowledge, which curiously sifting what it should adore, and disputing too boldly of that which the wit of man cannot search, chilleth for the most part all warmth of zeal, and bringeth foundnesse of belief many times into great hazard. Let it therefore be sufficient for me presenting my self at the Lords Table, to know what there I receive from him, without searching or enquiring of the manner how Christ performeth his promise; let disputes and questions, enemies to Piety, abatements of true devotion, and hitherto in this cause but overpatiently heard, let them take their rest; let curious and sharp-witted men bear their heads about what Questions themselves will, the very letter of the Word of Christ giveth plain security, that these mysteries do as nails fasten us to his very Cross, that by them we draw out, as touching efficacy, force and vertue, even the bloud of his gored side; in the wounds of our Redeemer we there dip our tongues, we are died red both within and without, our hunger is satisfied and our thirst for ever quenched, they are things wonderful which he feelth, great which he seeth, and unheard of which he uttereth, whose soul is possit of this Pascall Lamb, and made joyful in the strength of this new wine, this bread hath in it more than the substance which our eyes behold, this Cup hallowed with solemn Benediction, availeth to the endless life and welfare both of Soul and Body, in that it serverth as well for a Medicine to heal our infirmities and purge our sins, as for a Sacrifice of Thanksgiving, which touching it sanctifieth, it enlighteneth with belief; it truly conformeth us unto the Image of Jesus Christ; what these Elements are in themselves it skilleth not, it is enough that to me which take them, they are the Body and Bloud of Christ, his promise in witness hereof sufficeth, his Word he knoweth which way to accomplish, why should any cogitation possess the mind of a faithful Communicant but this, *O my God thou art true, O my soul thou art happy*. Thus therefore we see, that howsoever mens opinions do otherwise vary, nevertheless touching Baptism and the Supper of the Lord, we may with content of the whole Christian world conclude they are necessary, the one to initiate or begin, the other to consummate or make perfect our life in Christ.

68. In administering the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ, the supposed faults of the Church of England are not greatly material, and therefore it shall suffice to touch them in few words. *The first is, that we do not use in a generality once for all to say to Communicants, Take, eat, and drink, but unto every particular person, Eat thou, drink thou, which is according to the Popish manner, and not the form that our Saviour did use. Our second oversight is by gesture. For in kneeling there hath been Superstition; sitting agreeth better to the action of a Supper; and our Saviour using that which was most fit, did himself not kneel. A third accusation is for not examining all Communicants, whose knowledge in the mystery of the Gospel should that way be made manifest, a thing every where, they say, used in the Apostles times, because all things necessary were used, and this in their opinion is necessary, yea, it is commanded, in as much as the Levites are commanded to prepare the people for* *2 Cbro. 35. 6.*

Of faults noted in the form of administering the holy Communion.



b1 Cor. 5. 11.

c Numb. 3. 13.  
Can. 9. Apost.  
Concil. 1. Brac.  
cap. 83.

d T.C.L. 3. p. 166

Besides that it is good to leave the Popish forme in those things, which we may so conveniently do, it is best to come as near the manner of celebration of the Supper which our Saviour Christ used as may be. And if it be a good Argument to prove that therefore we must rather say, Take thou, than Take ye, because the Sacrament is an application of the benefits of Christ, it becometh that the Preacher should direct his Admonitions particularly one after another unto all those which hear his Sermon, which is a thing absurd.

e T.C.L. 1. p. 165

Kneeling carrieth a shew of worship, sitting agreeth better with the action of the Supper, Christ and his Apostles knelt not.

the Passover, and examination is a part of their preparation, our Lords Supper in place of the Passover. The fourth thing misliked is, that against the Apostles' prohibition to have any familiarity at all with notorious Offenders, Papists being not of the Church are admitted to our very Communion, before they have by their Religious and Gospel-like behaviour purged themselves of that suspicion of Popery which their former life hath caused. They are Dogs, Swine, unclean Beasts, Forreigners and Strangers from the Church of God, and therefore ought not to be admitted though they offer themselves. We are fully condemned, in as much as when there have been store of people to hear Sermons and Service in the Church, we suffer the Communion to be ministered to a few. It is not enough that our Book of Common Prayer hath godly Exhortations to move all shewen which are present. For it should not suffer a few to Communicate, it should by Ecclesiastical Discipline and Civil punishment provide, that such as would withdraw themselves, might be brought to Communicate according both to the Law of God and the ancient Church Canons. In the sixth and last place cometh the enormity of imparting this Sacrament privately unto the sick. Thus far accused, we answer briefly to the first, that seeing God by Sacraments doth apply in particular unto every mans person the grace which himself hath provided for the benefit of all Man-kind, there is no cause, why administering the Sacraments we should forbear to express that in our forms of speech, which he by his Word and Gospel teacheth all to believe. In the one Sacrament, *I baptize thee* displeaseth them not. If *Eat thou* in the other offend them, their fancies are no Rules for Churches to follow. Whether Christ at his last Supper did speak generally once to all, or to every one in particular, is a thing uncertain. His words are recorded in that form which serveth best for the setting down with historical brevity what was spoken, they are no manifest proof that he spake but once unto all which did then Communicate, much less that we in speaking unto every Communicant severally do amiss, although it were cleer that we herein do otherwise than Christ did. Our imitation of him consisteth not in tying scrupulously our selves unto his syllables, but rather in speaking by the Heavenly direction of that inspired Divine Wisdom, which teacheth divers ways to one end, and doth therein controul their boldness, by whom any profitable way is censured as reproveable, only under colour of some small difference from great Examples going before, to do throughout every the like Circumstance, the same which Christ did in this action, were by following his foot-steps in that sort to erre more from the purpose he aimed at, than we now do by not following them with so nice and severe strictness. They little weigh with themselves how dull, how heavy, and almost how without sense the greatest part of the common multitude every where is, who think it either unmeet or unnecessary to put them, even man by man, especially at that time, in mind whereabout they are. It is true that in Sermons we do not use to repeat our sentences severally to every particular hearer, a strange madness it were if we should. The softness of wax may induce a wise man to set his stamp or image therein, it perswadeth no man that because Wooll hath the like quality, it may therefore receive the like impression. So the reason taken from the use of Sacraments in that they are Instruments of grace unto every particular man, may with good congruity lead the Church to frame accordingly her words in administration of Sacraments, because they easily admit this form, which being in Sermons a thing impossible, without apparent ridiculous absurdity, agreement of Sacraments with Sermons in that which is alledged as a reasonable proof of conveniency; for the one proveth not the same allegation impertinent, because it doth not inforce the other to be administered in like sort. For equal principles do then avail unto equal conclusions, when the matter whereunto we apply them is equal, and not else. Our kneeling at Communions is the gesture of Piety. If we did there present our selves but to make some shew or dumb resemblance of a Spiritual Feast, it may be that sitting were the fitter Ceremony; but coming as Receivers of inestimable grace at the hands of God, what doth better beseech our bodies at that hour, than to be sensible Witnesses of minds unfainedly humbled? Our Lord himself did that which custom and long usage had made fit; we, that which fitness and great decency hath made usual. The trayal of our selves before we eat of this Bread and drink of this Cup, is by expresse Commandment ever

ry mans practice duty. As for necessity of calling others unto account besides our selves, albeit we be not thereunto drawn by any great strength which is in their Arguments, who first press us with it as a thing necessary, by affirming that the Apostles did use it, and then prove the Apostles to have used it, by affirming it to be necessary; again, albeit we greatly muse how they can avouch, that God did command the Levites to prepare their Brethren against the Feast of Pasche, and that the Examination of them was a part of their preparation, when the place alleged to this purpose doth but charge the Levites, saying, *Make ready Lambshorns for your Brethren*, to the end they may do according to the Word of the Lord by *Moses*. Wherefore in the self-same place it followeth how Lambs, and Kids, and Sheep, and Bullocks were delivered unto the Levites, and that thus *the service was made ready*: It followeth likewise how the Levites having in such sort provided for the people, they made provision for themselves, and for the Priests, the Sons of Aaron; so that confidently from hence to conclude the necessity of Examination, arguing their wonderful great forwardness in framing all things to serve their turn, nevertheless the Examination of Communicants when need requirerh, for the profitable use it may have in such cases, we reject not. Our fault in admitting Popish Communicants, is it in that we are forbidden to eat, and therefore much more to communicate, with notorious Malefactors? The name of a Papist is not given unto any man for being a notorious Malefactor. And the crime wherewith we are charged, is suffering of Papists to communicate, so that be their life and conversation whatsoever in the sight of man, their Popish opinions are in this case laid as bars and exceptions against them, yea those opinions which they have held in former times, although they now both profess by word, and offer to shew by fact the contrary. All this doth not justifie us which ought not (they say) to admit them in any wise, till their Gospel-like behaviour have removed all suspicion of Popery from them, because Papists are *Dogs, Swine, Beasts, Forreigners and Strangers* from the House of God, in a word, they are *not of the Church*. What the terms of Gospel-like behaviour may include, is obscure and doubtful. But of the *visible Church* of Christ in this present World, from which they separate all Papists, we are thus persuaded: *Church* is a word which Art hath devised, thereby to sever and distinguish that society of men, which professeth the true Religion from the rest which profess it not. There have been in the world from the very first foundation thereof, but three Religions, *Paganism*, which lived in the blindness of corrupt and depraved Nature; *Judaism*, embracing the Law which reformed Heathenish Impiety, and taught Salvation to be looked for through One, whom God in the last days would send and exalt to be Lord of all; finally, *Christian Belief*, which yieldeth obedience to the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and acknowledgeth him the Saviour whom God did promise. Seeing then that *the Church* is a name, which Art hath given to *Professors of true Religion*, as they which will define a man, are to pass by those qualities wherein one man doth excell another, and to take only those essential properties, whereby a man doth differ from creatures of other kinds: So he that will teach what *the Church* is, shall never rightly perform the work whereabout he goeth, till in *manner of Religion* he touch that difference which severeth the *Churches Religion* from theirs who are not the Church. Religion being therefore a matter partly of *contemplation*, partly of *action*, we must define the Church, which is a religious society, by such differences as do properly explain the essence of such things, that is to say, by the object or matter whereabout the contemplations and actions of the Church are properly conversant. For so all knowledges and all vertues are defined. Whereupon, because the *only object* which separateth ours from other Religions, is *Jesus Christ*, in whom none but the Church doth believe, and whom none but the Church doth worship, we find that accordingly the Apostles do every where distinguish hereby the Church from Infidels and from Jews, accounting *them which call upon the name of our Lord Jesus Christ to be his Church*. If we go lower, we shall but adde unto this certain casual and variable accidents, which are not properly of the being, but make only for the happier and better being of the Church of God, either indeed, or in mens opinions and conceits. This is the error of all Popish definitions that hitherto have been brought. They define not the Church by that which

T.C.I. p. 164  
All things necessary were used in the Churches of God in the Apostles times, but examination was a necessary thing, therefore used. In the Book of Chronicles, a Chron. 35. 6. the Levites were commanded to prepare the people to the receiving of the Pasche, in place whereof we have the Lords Supper. Now Examination being a part of preparation, it followeth that here is commandment of the Examination.  
b 1 Cor. 5. 11.  
T.C.I. p. 167.  
Although they would receive the communion, yet they ought to be kept back until such time as by their Religious and Gospel-like behaviour, they have purged themselves of that suspicion of Popery, which their former life and conversation hath caused to be conceived.  
T.C.I. p. 167.

Rom. 15. 5.  
1 Cor. 1. 10.

1 John 2. 19.

1 Tim. 3. 16.

Mat. 13. 24-47.

the Church essentially is, but by that wherein they imagine their own more perfect than the rest are. Touching parts of eminency and perfection, parts likewise of imperfection and defect in the Church of God, they are infinite, their degrees and differences no way possible to be drawn unto any certain account. There is not the least contention and variance, but it blemisheth somewhat the Unity that ought to be in the Church of Christ, which notwithstanding may have not only without offence or breach of concord her manifold varieties in Rites and Ceremonies of Religion, but also her strifes and contentions many times, and that about matters of no small importance; yea, her schisms, factions, and such other evils whereunto the Body of the Church is subject, sound and sick remaining both of the same body, as long as both parts retain by outward profession that vital substance of truth, which maketh Christian Religion to differ from theirs which acknowledge not our Lord Jesus Christ the blessed Saviour of Mankind, give no credit to his glorious Gospel, and have his Sacraments, the seals of eternal life, in derision. Now the privilege of the visible Church of God (for of that we speak) is to be herein like the Ark of *Noah*, that, for any thing we know to the contrary, all without it are lost sheep; yet in this was the Ark of *Noah* privileged above the Church, that whereas none of them which were in the one could perish, numbers in the other are cast away, because to eternal life our profession is not enough. Many things exclude from the Kingdom of God, although from the Church they separate not. In the Church there arise sundry grievous storms, by means whereof whole Kingdoms and Nations professing Christ, both have been heretofore, and are at this present day divided about Christ. During which divisions and contentions amongst men, albeit each part do justifie it self, yet the one of necessity must needs erre, if there be any contradiction between them, be it great or little, and what side soever it be that hath the truth, the same we must also acknowledge alone to hold with the true Church in that point, and consequently, reject the other as an enemy, in that case fallen away from the true Church. Wherefore of Hypocrites and Dissemblers whose profession at the first was but only from the teeth outward, when they afterwards took occasion to oppugne certain principal Articles of Faith, the Apostles which defended the truth against them, pronounce them *gone out* from the Fellowship of sound and sincere Believers; when as yet the Christian Religion they had not utterly cast off. In like sence and meaning throughout all ages, *Hereticks* have justly been hated, as branches cut off from the body of the true Vine, yet only so far forth cut off as their Heresies have extended. Both Heresie and many other crimes, which wholly sever from God, do sever from God the Church of God in part only. The Mytery of Piety, saith the Apostle, is without peradventure great, *God hath been manifested in the Flesh, hath been justified in the Spirit, hath been seen of Angels, hath been preached to Nations, hath been believed on in the World, hath been taken up into Glory.* The Church a pillar and foundation of this truth, which no where is known or profess; but only within the Church, and they all of the Church that profess it. In the mean while it cannot be denied, that many profess this, who are not therefore cleared simply from all either faults or errors which make separation between us and the Well-spring of our happiness. Idolatry severed of old the Israelites; Iniquity, those Scribes and Pharisees from God, who notwithstanding were a part of the Seed of *Abraham*, a part of that very Seed which God did himself acknowledge to be his Church. The Church of God may therefore contain both them which indeed are not his, yet must be reputed his by us that know not their inward thoughts, and them whose apparent wickedness testifieth even in the sight of the whole world that God abhorreth them. For to this and no other purpose, are meant those Parables, which our Saviour in the Gospel hath concerning mixture of Vice with Vertue, Light with Darkness, Truth with Error, as well and openly known and seen as a cunningly cloaked mixture. That which separateth therefore utterly, that which cutteth off *clean* from the visible Church of Christ, is plain Apostasie, direct denial, utter rejection of the whole Christian Faith, as far as the same is professedly different from Infidelity. Hereticks, as touching those points of doctrine wherein they fail: Schismaticks, as touching the quarrels for which, or the duties wherein they divide themselves from their Brethren: Loose, licentious

and



and wicked persons, as touching their several offences or crimes, have all forsaken the true Church of God, the Church which is sound and sincere in the doctrine that they corrupt; the Church that keepeth the bond of Unity, which they violate; the Church that walketh in the Laws of Righteousness, which they transgress; this very true Church of Christ they have left, howbeit not altogether left, nor forsaken simply the Church upon the main foundations whereof they continue built, notwithstanding these breaches whereby they are rent at the top asunder. Now because for redress of professed Errors and open Schisms, it is, and must be the Churches care that all may in outward conformity be one, as the visible Politie of former Ages, even so our own to that end and purpose hath established divers Laws, the moderate severity whereof is a mean both to stay the rest, and to reclaim such as heretofore have been led awry. But seeing that the offices which Laws require, are always definite, and when that they require is done, they go no farther, whereupon sundry ill affected persons to save themselves from danger of Laws, pretend obedience, albeit inwardly they carry still the same hearts which they did before, by means whereof it falleth out, that receiving unworthily the blessed Sacrament at our hands, they eat and drink their own damnation; it is for remedy of this mischief here determined, that whom the Law of the Realm doth punish unless they communicate, such if they offer to obey Law, the Church notwithstanding should not admit without probation before had of their Gospel-like behaviour. Wherein they first set no time how long this supposed probation must continue; again, they nominate no certain judgement, the verdict whereof shall approve mens behaviour to be Gospel-like; and that which is most material, whereas they seek to make it more hard for dissemblers to be received into the Church, than Law and Politie as yet hath done, they make it in truth more easie for such kind of persons, to wind themselves out of the Law, and to continue the same they were. The Law requireth at their hands that duty which in conscience doth touch them nearest, because the greatest difference between us and them is the Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ, whose name in the service of our Communion we celebrate with due honour, which they in the error of their Mass profane. As therefore on our part to hear Mass, were an open departure from that sincere profession wherein we stand, so if they on the other side receive our Communion, they give us the strongest pledge of fidelity that man can demand. What their hearts are, God doth know. But if they which mind treachery to God and man, shall once apprehend this advantage given them, whereby they may satisfy Law, in pretending themselves conformable (for what can Law with Reason or Justice require more?) and yet be sure the Church will accept no such offer, till their Gospel-like behaviour be allowed, after that our own simplicity hath once thus fairly eased them from sting of Law; it is to be thought they will learn the mystery of Gospel-like behaviour when leisure serveth them. And so while without any cause we fear to profane Sacraments, we shall not only defeat the purpose of most wholesome Laws, but lose or wilfully hazard those Souls, from which the likeliest means of full and perfect recovery, are by our indiscretion withheld. For neither doth God thus bind us to dive into mens consciences, nor can their fraud and deceit hurt any man but themselves. To him they seem such as they are, but of us they must be taken for

1. Cor. 11. 27. If the place of the fifth to the Corinthians, do forbid that we should have any familiarity with notorious offenders, it doth much more forbid that they should be received to the Communion: And therefore Papists being such as which are notoriously known to hold heretical opinions, ought not to be admitted, much less compelled to the Supper. For seeing that our Saviour Christ did institute his Supper amongst his Disciples, and those only which were, as S. Paul speaketh, within; it is evident, that the Papists being without, and Foreigners and Strangers from the Church of God, ought not to be received if they would offer themselves: and that Minister that shall give the Supper of the Lord to him, which is known to be a Papist, and which hath never made any clear renouncing of Popery, with which he hath been defiled, doth profane the table of the Lord, and doth give the meat that is prepared for the children, unto Dogs, and he bringeth into the pasture, which is provided for the Sheep, Swine, and unclean Beasts, contrary to the faith and trust that ought to be in a Steward of the Lords House, as he is. For albeit that I doubt not but many of those which are now Papists, pertain to the Election of God, which God also in his good time will call to the knowledge of his truth: yet notwithstanding they ought to be unto the Minister and unto the Church, touching the ministering of Sacraments, as strangers and as unclean beasts. The ministering of the holy Sacraments unto them, is a declaration and seal of Gods favour and reconciliation with them, and a plain preaching partly, that they be washed already from their sin, partly, that they are of the household of God, and such as the Lord will feed to eternal life, which is not lawful to be done unto those which are not of the household of Faith. And therefore I conclude, that the compelling of Papists unto the Communion and the dismissing and letting of them go, when as they be to be punished for their stubbornness in Popery (with this condition, if they will receive the Communion) is very unlawful, when as although they would receive, yet they ought to be kept back till such time as by their Religious and Gospel-like behaviour, &c.

such as they seem. In the eye of God they are against Christ, that are not truly and sincerely with him; in our eyes they must be received as with Christ, that are not to outward shew against him. The case of impenitent and notorious sinners is not like unto theirs, whose only imperfection is Error, severed from pertinacy, Error in appearance content to submit it self to better instruction, Error so far already cured, as to crave at our hands that Sacrament, the hatred and utter refusal whereof was the weightiest point wherein heretofore they swerved and went astray. In this case therefore they cannot reasonably charge us with remiss dealing, or with carelessness to whom we impart the Mysteries of Christ, but they have given us manifest occasion to think it requisite, that we earnestly advise rather and exhort them to consider as they ought, their sundry over-sights; first, in equalling undistinctly crimes with errors, as touching force to make uncapable of this Sacrament: Secondly, in suffering indignation at the faults of the Church of Rome, to blind and withhold their judgements from seeing that which withal they should acknowledge, concerning so much nevertheless still due to the same Church; as to be held and reputed a part of the House of God, a limb of the visible Church of Christ: Thirdly, in imposing upon the Church a burthen to enter farther into mens hearts, and to make a deeper search of their consciences, than any Law of God or reason of man importeth: Fourthly and lastly, in repelling under colour of longer tryst such from the Mysteries of heavenly grace, as are both capable thereof by the Laws of God, for any thing we hear to the contrary, and should in divers considerations be cherished according to the merciful examples and precepts whereby the Gospel of Christ hath taught us towards such to shew compassion, to receive them with lenity and all meekness, if any thing be shaken in them to strengthen it, not to quench with delays & jealousies that feeble smoke of conformity which seemeth to breathe from them, but to build wheresoever there is any foundation, to adde perfection unto slender beginnings, and that as by other offices of piety, even so by this very food of Life, which Christ hath left in his Church, not only for preservation of strength, but also for relief of weakness: But to return to our own selves, in whom the next thing severely reprov'd is the paucity of Communicants, if they require at Communions frequency, we wish the same, knowing how acceptable unto God such service is, when multitudes cheerfully concur unto it; if they encourage men thereunto, we also (themselves acknowledge it) are not utterly forgetful to do the like; if they require some publick coercion for remedy of that, wherein by milder and softer means little good is done, they know our Laws and Statutes provided in that behalf, whereunto whatsoever convenient help may be added more by the wisdom of man, what cause have we given the World to think that we are not ready to hearken to it, and to use any good means of sweet compulsion, to have this high and Heavenly Banquet largely furnished? Only we cannot so far yield as to judge it convenient, that the holy desire of a competent number should be unsatisfied, because the greater part is careless and undispersed to joyn with them. Men should not (they say) be permitted a few by themselves to communicate, when so many are gone away, because this Sacrament is a token of our conjunction with our Brethren, and therefore by communicating apart from them, we make an apparent shew of distraction: I ask then, on which side Unity is broken, whether on theirs that depart, or on theirs who being left behind do communicate? First, in the one it is not denied, but that they may have reasonable causes of departure, and that then even they are delivered from just blame. Of such kind of causes two are allowed, namely, danger of impairing health, and necessary business requiring our presence elsewhere. And may not a third cause, which is *unfains* at the present time, detain us as lawfully back as either of these two? True it is, that we cannot hereby altogether excuse our selves, for that we ought to prevent this and do not. But if we have committed a fault in not preparing our minds before, shall we therefore aggravate the same with a worse, the crime of unworthy participation? He that abstaineth, doth want for the time that grace and comfort which religious Communicants have, but he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, receiveth death; that which is life to others, turneth in him to poyson. Notwithstanding whatsoever the cause be for which men abstain, were it reason that the fault of one part should

T.C.L.I. p. 147.

2 Chron. 30. 13.

Psal. 133. 1.

Luk. 14. 31.

should any way abridge their benefit that are not faulty? There is in all the Scripture of God no one syllable which doth condemn communicating amongst a few, when the rest are departed from them. As for the last thing, which is our imparting this Sacrament privately unto the sick, whereas there have been of old (they grant) two kinds of necessity, wherein this Sacrament might be privately administered, of which two, the one being erroneously imagined, and the other (they say) continuing no longer in use, there remaineth unto us no necessity at all, for which that custome should be retained. The falsely surmised necessity is that, whereby some have thought all such excluded from possibility of salvation, as did depart this life, and never were made partakers of the holy Eucharist. The other case of necessity was, when men, which had fallen in time of persecution, and had afterwards repented them, but were not as yet received again unto the fellowship of this Communion, did at the hour of their death request it, that so they might rest with greater quietness and comfort of mind, being thereby assured of departure in unity of Christs Church, which virtuous desire the Fathers did think it great impiety not to satisfie. This was *Serapions* case of necessity. *Serapion* a faithful aged person, and always of very upright life, till fear of persecution in the end caused him to shrink back, after long sorrow for his scandalous offence, and sate oftentimes made to be pardoned of the Church, fell at length into grievous sickness, and being ready to yield up the Ghost, was then more instant than ever before to receive the Sacrament. Which Sacrament was necessary in this case, not that *Serapion* had been deprived of everlasting Life without it, but that his end was thereby to him made the more comfortable. And do we think that all cases of such necessity are clean vanished? Suppose that some have by mispersuasion lived in Schism, withdrawn themselves from holy and publike Assemblies, hated the Prayers, and lothed the Sacraments of the Church, falsely presuming them to be fraught with impious and Antichristian corruptions, which error the God of mercy and truth opening at the length their eyes to see, they do not only repent them of the evil which they have done, but also in token thereof desire to receive comfort by that whereunto they have offered disgrace: (which may be the case of many poor seduced souls even at this day) God forbid we should think that the Church doth sin, in permitting the wounds of such to be supplied with that Oyl, which this gracious Sacrament doth yield, and their bruised minds not only need but beg. There is nothing which the soul of man doth desire in that last hour so much, as comfort against the natural terrors of death, and other scruples of conscience, which commonly do then most trouble and perplex the weak, towards whom the very Law of God doth exact at our hands all the helps that Christian lenity and indulgence can afford. Our general consolation deputing this life, is the hope of that glorious and blessed Resurrection, which the Apostle *St. Paul* nameth *Resurrection*, to note that as all men shall have their *corpora*, and be raised again from the dead, so the just shall be taken up and exalted above the rest, whom the power of God doth but raise and not exalt. This Life and this Resurrection our Lord Jesus Christ is for all men, as touching the sufficiency of that he hath done, but that which maketh us partakers thereof, is our particular communion with Christ, and this Sacrament a principal mean, as well to strengthen the bond, as to multiply in us the fruits of the same Communion; for which cause *St. Saint Cyprian* termeth it a joyful solemnity of expedite and speedy Resurrection; *Ignatius*, a medicine which procureth immortality and preventeth death; *Irenaeus*, the nourishment of our bodies to eternal life, and their preservative from corruption. Now because that Sacrament, which at all times we may receive unto this effect, is then most acceptable and most fruitful, when any special extraordinary occasion, nearly and presently urging, kindleth our desires towards it, their severity, who cleave unto that alone which is generally fit to be done, and so make all mens conditions alike, may adde much affliction to divers troubled and grieved minds, of whose particular estate, particular respect being had, according to the charitable order of the Church wherein we live, there inueth unto God that glory, which his righteous Saints comforted in their greatest distresses do yie d, and unto them which have their reasonable Petitions satisfied, the same contentment, tranquillity and joy, that others before them by means of like satisfaction have

a 1 Cor. 15. 27.  
b Philip. 3. 11.  
c *Διδ. τῶν ἐν τῇ γῆι ἰσχυρῶν*. Theophil.  
πῶς ἐν ἀποστάσει ἀνίστασθαι  
ἐκ νεκρῶν ἀπὸ τῆς ἀνάστασης. Ammon.  
vide. 1 Thef. 4. 17.  
d *Ματῆα 28. 1. surrexi et vivam*.  
*ἐκ νεκρῶν*.  
e *St. Cyprian*. de Corp. Dom. cap. 10.  
f *St. Ignatius*. ad Ephr. Epist. 1. c. 24. *Et si nihil facile mutandum est ex solemnitate, tamen ad equitatem evidens posuit salus nostram est*. Lib. 183. ff. de Reg. Jur.

reaped



reaped, and wherein we all are or should be desirous finally to take our leave of the World, whensoever our own uncertain time of most assured departure shall come. Concerning therefore both Prayers and Sacraments, together with our usual and received form of administering th: same in the Church of *England*, let thus much suffice.

Of Festival  
Days, and the  
natural causes  
of their con-  
venient insti-  
tution.

69 As the substance of God alone is infinite, and hath *no kind* of limitation, so likewise his continuance is from everlasting to everlasting, and knoweth neither beginning nor end. Which demonstrable conclusion being presupposed, it followeth necessarily, that besides him all things are finite, both in substance and in continuance. If in substance all things be finite, it cannot be, but that there are bounds without the compass whereof their substance doth not extend; if in continuance also limited, they all have, it cannot be denied, their set and their certain terms, before which they had no being at all. This is the reason, why first we do most admire those things which are greatest; and secondly, those things which are ancientest, because the one are least distant from the infinite substance; the other from the infinite continuance of God. Out of this we gather, that only God hath true immortality or eternity, that is to say, continuance wherein there groweth no difference by addition of hereafter unto now, whereas the noblest and perfectest of all things besides, have continually through continuance the time of former continuance lengthened, so that they could not heretofore be said to have continued so long as now, neither now so long as hereafter. Gods own eternity is the hand which leadeth Angels in the course of their Perpetuity; their Perpetuity the hand that draweth out celestial Motion, the Line of which Motion, and the Thread of Time are spun together. Now as Nature bringeth forth Time with Motion, so we by Motion have learned how to divide Time, and by the smaller parts of Time, both to measure the greater, and to know how long all things else endure. For Time considered in it self, is but the flux of that very instant, wherein the Motion of the Heaven began; being coupled with other things, it is the quantity of their continuance measured by the distance of two instants: As the time of a man is a mans continuance from the instant of his first breath, till the instant of his last gasp. Hereupon, some have defined Time to be the Measure of the Motion of Heaven; because the first thing which Time doth measure, is that Motion wherewith it began, and by the help whereof it measureth other things, as when the Prophet *David* saith, that a mans continuance doth not commonly exceed threescore and ten years, he useth the help both of Motion and Number to measure Time. They which make Time an effect of Motion, and Motion to be in Nature before Time, ought to have considered with themselves, that albeit we should deny as *Melissus* did, all Motion, we might notwithstanding acknowledge Time, because Time doth but signify the quantity of continuance, which continuance may be in things that rest and are never moved. Besides, we may also consider in rest both that which is past, and that which is present, and that which is future; yea, farther, even length and shortness in every of these, although we never had conceit of Motion. But to define without Motion, how long or how short such continuance is, were impossible. So that herein we must of necessity use the benefit of Years, Days, Hours, Minutes, which all grow from Celestial Motion. Again, for as much as that Motion is Circular, whereby we make our divisions of Time, and the Compass of that Circuit such, that the Heavens which are therein continually moved, and keep in their Motions uniform celerity, must needs touch often the same points, they cannot chuse but bring unto us by equal distances frequent returns of the same times. Furthermore whereas Time is nothing but the meer quantity of that continuance which all things have that are not as God is, without beginning, that which is proper unto all quantities agreeth also to this kind, so that Time doth but measure other things, and neither worketh in them any real effect, nor is it self ever capable of any. And therefore when commonly we use to say, that Time doth eat or fret out all things, that Time is the wisest thing in the World, because it bringeth forth all Knowledge, and that nothing is more foolish then Time, which never holdeth any thing long, but whatsoever one Day learneth, the same another day forgetteth again; that some men see prosperous and happy Days, and that some mens Days are miserable;

in



Deut. 16. 14.  
Nehem. 8. 9.

α Οὐδ' ἔτι  
διδόντες ἑαυτοῖς  
μισέβουλον ὅτι  
ἡμεῖς ἔχοντες τὸ  
φρονεῖν ὅτι  
ἐν αὐτῇ ἀνα-  
λίσκονται καὶ α-  
ποβαλὼν τὴν α-  
εισὴν ἔχοντες  
ἐν αὐτῇ τὴν  
αὐταρκείαν  
διατελεῖ τὰ  
ἅπαντα διὰ  
τὴν Ἀλήθειαν.

fic God aright, did commonly (as appeared by their wicked lives) more of custom and for fashion sake execute the services of their Religion, then with heartie & true devotion (which God especially requireth) he therefore protesteth against their Sabbath and solemn Days, as being therewith much offended, Plentiful & liberall expence is required in them that abound, partly as a sign of their own joy in the goodness of God towards them, and partly as a mean whereby to refresh those poor and needy, who being especially at these times made partakers of relaxation and joy with others do the more religiously blesse God, whose great mercies were a cause thereof, & the more contentedly endure the burthen of that hard estate wherein they continue. Rest is the end of all Motion, and the last perfection of all things that labour. Labours in us are journeys, and even in them which feele no wearinesse by any worke, yet they are but wayes whereby to come unto that which bringeth not happinesse till it do bring rest. For as long as any thing which we desire is unattained, we rest not. Let us not here take rest for idleness. They are idle, whom the painfulnesse of action causeth to avoid those labours, whereunto both God and Nature bindeth them; they rest, which either cease from their worke when they have brought it unto perfection, or else give over a meaner labour, because a worthier and better is to be undertaken. God hath created nothing to be idle or ill employed. As therefore, man doth consist of different and distinct parts, every part indued with manifold abilities, which all have their severall ends and actions thereunto referred; so there is in this great variety of duties which belong to men, that dependency and order, by means whereof the lower sustaining alwaies the more excellent, and the higher perfecting the more base, they are in their times and seasons continued with most exquisite correspondence; labours of bodily and daily toyle purchase freedome for actions of religious joy, which benefit these actions require with the gift of desired rest: a thing most naturall and fit to accompany the solemn Festivall duties of honour which are done to God. For if those principall works of God, the memory whereof we use to celebrate at such times, be but certain tastes and sayes, as it were, of that finall benefit, wherein our perfect felicitie and blisse lieth folded up, seeing that the presence of the one doth direct our cogitations, thoughts and desires towards the other, it giveth surely a kind of life, and addeth inwardly no finall delight to those so comfortable expectations, when the very outward countenance of that we presently doe, representeth after a sort that also whereunto we tend; as Festivall rest doth that Celestiall estate whereof the very <sup>a</sup> Heathens themselves which had not the means whereby to apprehend much, did notwithstanding imagine that it needs must consist in rest, and have therefore taught, that above the highest moveable Sphere there is nothing which feeleth alteration, motion or change, but all things immutable, unsubject to passion, blest with eternall continuance in a life of the highest perfection, and of that compleat abundant sufficiency within it self, which no possibilitie of want, maim or defect can touch. Besides, whereas ordinary labours are both in themselves painfull, and base in comparison of Festivall Services done to God, doth not the natural difference between them shew, that the one as it were by way of submission and homage should surrender themselves to the other, wherewith they can neither easily concur, because painfulnesse and joy are opposite, nor decently, because while the minde hath just occasion to make her abode in the House of gladnesse, the Weed of ordinary toyle and travel becometh her not? Wherefore even Nature hath taught the Heathens, and God the Jews, and Christ us, first, that Festivall Solemnities are a part of the publike exercise of Religion; secondly, that Praise, Liberalitie, and rest are as naturall Elements whereof Solemnities consist.

But these things the Heathens converted to the honour of their false gods; and as they failed in the end it selfe, so neither could they discern rightly what form and measure Religion therein should observe. Whereupon, when the Israelites impiously followed so corrupt example, they are in every degree noted to have done amiss; their Hymnes or Songs of praise were Idolatrick, their bountie excessive, and their rest wantonnesse. Therefore the Law of God which appointed them daies of Solemnitie, taught them likewise in what manner the same should be celebrated: According to the pattern of which Institution, David establishing the state of Religion ordi-



ordained praise to be given unto God in the Sabbaths, Moneths, and appointed times, as their custome had been always before the Lord. Now, besides the times which God himself in the Law of *Moses* particularly specified, there were, through the wisdom of the Church, certain other devised by occasion of like occurrences to those whereupon the former had risen, as namely, that which *Mardocheus* and *Esther* did first celebrate in memory of the Lords most wonderful protection, when *Haman* had laid his inevitable plot, to mans thinking, for the utter extirpation of the Jews even in one day. This they call the Feast of *Lots*, because *Haman* had cast their life and their death, as it were upon the hazard of a Lot. To this may be added, that other also of *Dedication*, mentioned in the tenth of Saint *Johus* Gospel, the institution whereof is declared in the History of *Maccabees*. But forasmuch as their Law by the coming of Christ is changed, and we thereunto no way bound, Saint *Paul* although it were not his purpose to favour investives against the special sanctification of days and times to the service of God, and to the honour of Jesus Christ, doth notwithstanding bend his forces against that opinion, which imposed on the Gentiles the yoke of Jewish Legal observations, as if the whole world ought for ever, and that upon pain of condemnation, to keep and observe the same. Such as in this persuasion hallowed those Jewish Sabbaths, the Apostle sharply reproveth, saying, *Ye observe dayes and moneths, and times and years, I am in fear of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.* Howbeit, so far off was *Tertullian* from imagining how any man could possible hereupon call in question such days as the Church of Christ doth observe, that the observation of these days he useth for an Argument whereby to prove, it could not be the Apostles intent and meaning to condemn simply all observing of such times. Generally therefore touching Feasts in the Church of Christ, they have that profitable use whereof St. *Augustine* speaketh, By *Festival Solemnities and set-days, we dedicate and sanctifie to God the memory of his benefices, lest unthankful forgetfulness thereof should creep upon us in course of time.* And concerning particulars, their Sabbath the Church hath changed into our Lords Day, that is, as the one did continually bring to mind the former world finished by creation, so the other might keep us in perpetual remembrance of a far better world, begun by him which came to restore all things, to make both Heaven and Earth new. For which cause they honoured the last day, we the first, in every seven, throughout the year. The rest of the days and times which we celebrate, have relation all unto one head. We begin therefore our Ecclesiastical year with the glorious *Annuntiation* of his birth by Angelical Embassage. There being hereunto added his blessed *Nativity* it self, the mystery of his legal *Circumcision*; the testification of his true *Incarnation* by the *Purification* of her which brought him into the world, his *Resurrection*, his *Ascension* into Heaven, the admirable sending down of his Spirit upon his chosen, and (which consequently ensued) the notice of that incomprehensible *Trinity* thereby given to the Church of God; again, forasmuch as we know that Christ hath not only been manifested great in himself, but great in other his Saints also, the days of whose departure out of the world are to the Church of Christ, as the Birth and Coronation days of Kings or Emperours, therefore especial choice being made of the very flower of all occasions in this kind, there are annual selected times to meditate of Christ glorified in them which had the honour to suffer for his sake, before they had age and ability to know him; glorified in them which knowing him as *Stephen*, had the sight of that before death, whereinto so acceptable death did lead; glorified in those Sages of the East, that came from far to adore him, and were conducted by strange light; glorified in the second *Elias* of the world, sent before him to prepare his way; glorified in every of those Apostles, whom it pleased him to use as Founders of his Kingdom here; glorified in the Angels, as in *Michael*; glorified in all those happy souls that are already possessed of Heaven. Over and besides which number not great, the rest be but four other days heretofore annexed to the Feast of Easter and Pentecost, by reason of general Baptisme usual at those two Feasts, which also is the cause why they had not, as other days, any proper name given them. Their first institution was therefore through necessity, and their present continuance is now for the greater honour of the principals, whereupon they still attend. If it be then demanded, whether we observe these

*Chron.* 23. 30.

*Heb.* 9. 27.

*Joh.* 10. 22.

*1 Mac.* 4. 53.

*Gal.* 4. 10.

*b Si omnem in totum devotionem temporum et dierum et mensium et annorum trahi Apostolus, cur Pascha celebramus annuo circulo in mense primo?*
*Cur quinquaginta exinde diebus in omni exultatione decurrimus? Lib. advers. Psych. Aug. de Civit. Dei, lib. 16 c. 4. c Luke 1. 16. d Luke 2. 21.*

times as being thereunto bound by force of Divine Law, or else by the only Positive Ordinances of the Church, I answer to this, that the very Law of Nature itself, which all men confess to be Gods Law, requireth in general no less the sanctification of times than of places, persons and things unto Gods honour. For which cause it hath pleased him heretofore, as of the rest, so of times likewise to exact some parts by way of perpetual homage, never to be dispensed withal, nor remitted; again, to require some other parts of time with as strict exaction, but for less continuance; and of the rest which were left arbitrary, to accept what the Church shall in due consideration consecrate voluntarily unto like Religious uses. Of the first kind amongst the Jewes was the Sabbath-day; of the second, those Feasts which are appointed by the Law of *Moses*; the Feast of Dedication invented by the Church, standeth in the number of the last kind. The Moral Law requiring therefore a seventh part throughout the age of the whole world to be that way employed, although with us the day be changed in regard of a new revolution begun by our Saviour Christ, yet the same proportion of time continueth which was before, because in reference to the benefit of Creation, and now much more of Renovation thereunto added by him which was Prince of the world to come, we are bound to accompt the sanctification of one day in seven, a duty which Gods immutable Law doth exact for ever. The rest, they say, we ought to abolish, because the continuance of them doth nourish wicked superstition in the minds of men, besides, they are all abused by Papists, the enemies of God, yea, certain of them, as Easter and Pentecost, even by the Jewes.

Exceptions against our keeping of other Festival dayes besides the Sabbath. T. C. L. I. p. 151. If they had been never abused, neither by the Papists, nor by the Jewes, as they have been, and are daily, yet such making of Holy days is never without some great danger of bringing in some evil and corrupt opinions into the minds of men. I will use an example in one, and that the chief of Holy days, and most generally, and of longest time observed in the Church, which is the Feast of Easter, which was kept of some more days, of some fewer. How many thousands are there, I will not say of the ignorant Papists, but of those also which profess the Gospel, which when they have celebrated those days with diligent heed taken unto their life, and with some earnest devotion in praying, and hearing the Word of God, do not by and by think that they have well celebrated the Feast of Easter, and yet have they thus notably deceived themselves. For Saint Paul teacheth, 1 Cor. 5. 8. that the celebrating of the Feast of the Christians Easter, is not as the Jewes was, for certain days, but sheweth that we must keep this Feast all the days of our life in the unleavened bread of sincerity and of truth. By which we see that the observing of the Feast of Easter for certain dayes in the year doth pull out of our minds, ere ever we be aware, the Doctrine of the Gospel, and causeth us to rest in that next consideration of our duties, for the space of a few days, which should be extended to all our life.

not to keep our Easter as the Jewes did for certain days, but in the unleavened bread of sincerity and of truth to feast continually, whereas the restraint of Easter to a certain number of days causeth us to rest for a short space in that near consideration of our duties, which should be extended throughout the course of our whole lives, and so pulleth out of our minds the Doctrine of Christs Gospel ere we be aware. The Doctrine of the Gospel which here they mean or should mean, is, that Christ having finished the Law, there is no Jewish Paschal Solemnity, nor abstinence from sower Bread now required at our hands; there is no Leaven which we are bound to cast out, but malice, sin and wickedness; no Bread but the food of sincere Truth, wherewith we are tied to celebrate our Passover. And seeing no time of sin is granted us, neither any intermission of sound belief, it followeth that this kind of feasting ought to endure always. But how are standing Festival Solemnities against this? That which the Gospel of Christ requireth, is the perpetuity of virtuous duties, not perpetuity of exercise or action, but disposition perpetual, and practice as oft as times and opportunities require. Just, valiant, liberal, temperate, and holy men are they, which can whensoever they will, and will whensoever they

71 Touching Jewes, their Easter and Pentecost have with ours as much affinity, as Philip the Apostle with Philip the Macedonian King. As for imitation of Papists, and the breeding of superstition, they are now become such common guests, that no man can think it discourteous to let them go as they came. The next is a rare Observation and strange: You shall find, if you mark it (as it doth deserve to be noted well) that many thousands there are, who if they have virtuously during those times behaved themselves, if their devotion and zeal in prayer have been fervent, their attention to the Word of God such as all Christian men should yield, imagine that herein they have performed a good duty, which notwithstanding to think is a very dangerous error, inasmuch as the Apostle Saint Paul hath taught, that we ought

they ought, execute what their several perfections import. If virtues did always cease to be, when they cease to work, there should be nothing more pernicious to Virtue than sleep: neither were it possible that men, as *Zachary* and *Elizabeth* should in all the Commandments of God walk unreprouable, or that the Chain of our conversation should contain so many links of divine Virtues, as the Apostles in divers places have reckoned up, if in the exercise of each virtue perpetual continuance were exacted at our hands. Seeing therefore all things are done in time, and many offices are not possible at one and the same time to be discharged duties of all sorts must have necessarily their several successions and seasons, in which respect the School-men have well and soundly determined, that Gods affirmative Laws and Precepts, the Laws that injoyne any actual duty, as Prayer, Alms, and the like, do bind us *ad semper velle*, but not *ad semper agere*, we are tyed to iterate and resume them when need is, howbeit not to continue them without any intermission. Feasts, whether God himself hath ordained them, or the Church by that Authority which God hath given, they are of Religion such publike services, as neither can, nor ought to be continued otherwise than only by iteration. Which iteration is a most effectual mean to bring unto full maturity and growth those seeds of godliness, that these very men themselves do grant to be sown in the hearts of many thousands, during the while that such Feasts are present. The constant habit of well-doing is not gotten without the custome of doing well, neither can virtue be made perfect, but by the manifold works of virtue often practised. Before the powers of our minds be brought unto some perfection, our first essays and offers towards virtue must needs be raw, yet commendable, because they tend unto ripeness. For which cause the Wisdom of God hath commanded especially this circumstance amongst others in solemn Feasts, that to Children and Novices in Religion, they minister the first occasion to ask and inquire of God. Whereupon if there follow but so much piety as hath been mentioned, let the Church learn to further imbecillity with prayer, *Preserve, Lord, these good and gracious beginnings, that they suddenly dry not up as the morning dew, but may prosper and grow as the gyces which rivers of waters keep always flourishing*; let all mens acclamations be, *Grace, Grace unto it*, as to that first laid corner stone in *Zerubbabels* buildings. For who hath despised the day of those things which are small? Or how dare we take upon us to condemne that very thing which voluntarily we grant, maketh us of nothing somewhat, seeing all we pretend against it is only, that as yet this somewhat is not much? The days of solemnity which are but few, cannot chuse but soon finish that outward exercise of godliness, which properly appertaineth to such times, howbeit mens inward disposition to virtue, they both augment for the present, and by their often returns bring also the same at the length unto that perfection which we most desire. So that although by their necessary short continuance, they abridge the present exercise of piety in some kind, yet because by repetition they enlarge, strengthen and confirm the habits of all virtue, it remaineth that we honour, observe and keep them as Ordinances, many ways singularly profitable in Gods Church. This exception being taken against Holy days, for that they restrain the praises of God unto certain times, another followeth condemning restraint of men from their ordinary Trades and labours at those times. It is not they say in the power of the Church to command rest, because God hath left it to all men at liberty, that if they think good to bestow six whole days in labour, they may, neither is it more lawful for the Church to abridge any man of that liberty which God hath granted, then to take away the yoke which God hath laid upon them, and to countermand what he doth expressly injoyne. They deny not but in times of publike calamity, that men may the better assemble themselves to fast and pray, the Church, because it

a T. G. l. 1. p. 153. I confess that it is in the power of the Church to appoint so many days in the Week, or in the Year (in the which the Congregation shall assemble to hear the Word of God, and receive the Sacraments, and offer up Prayers unto God) as it shall think good, according to those Rules which are before alleged: But that it hath power to make so many Holy days as we have, wherein men are commanded to cease from their daily vocations of ploughing, and exercising their Handy-crafts, that I deny to be in the power of the Church. For proof whereof, I will take the fourth Commandment, and no other interpretation of it then M. Doct. alloweth of, which is, That God liceneth and leaveth it at the liberty of every man, to work six days in the Week, so that he rest the Seventh Day. Seeing therefore that the Lord hath left it to all men at liberty, that they might labour, if they think good, six days; I say, the Church, nor no man can take this liberty away from them, and drive them to a necessary



necessary rest of the body. And if it be lawful to abridge the liberty of the Church in this point, and instead that the Lord saith, six days thou shalt labour if thou wilt, to say, thou shalt not labour six days: I do not see why the Church may not as well, whereas the Lord saith, *Thou shalt rest the Seventh Day*, command that thou shalt not rest the Seventh Day. For if the Church may restrain the liberty which God hath given them, it may take away the yoke also which God hath put upon them. And whereas you say, that notwithstanding this fourth Commandment, the Jews had certain other Feasts which they observed; indeed the Lord which gave this general Law, might make as many exceptions as he thought good, and so long as he thought good. But it followeth not, because the Lord did it, that therefore the Church may do it, unless it hath Commandment and Authority from God so to do. As when there is any general Plague or Judgement of God either upon the Church, or coming towards it, the Lord commandeth in such a case, *Isa. 2.15.* that they should sanctifie a general Fast, and proclaim *Ghousarab*, which signifieth a Prohibition, or forbidding of ordinary works, and is the same Hebrew word wherewith those Feast days are noted in the Law wherein they should rest. The reason of which Commandment of the Lords was, that they abstained that day as much as might be conveniently from meats, so they might abstain from their daily works, to the end they might bestow the whole day in hearing the Word of God, and humbling themselves in the Congregation, confessing their faults, and desiring the Lord to turn away from his fierce wrath. In this case the Church having Commandment to make a Holy day, may and ought to do it, as the Church which was in *Babylon*, did during the time of their Captivity: but where it is destitute of a Commandment it may not presume by any Decree to restrain that liberty which the Lord hath given.

hath received Commandment from God to procure a Prohibition from ordinary works, standeth bound to do it, as the Jewes afflicted did in *Babylon*. But without some express Commandment from God, there is no power, they say, under Heaven which may presume by any Decree to restrain the liberty that God hath given. Which opinion, albeit applied here no farther then to this present cause, shaketh universally the Fabrick of Government, tendeth to Anarchie and meer confusion, dissolveth Families, dissipateth Colledges, Corporations, Armies, overthroweth Kingdomes, Churches, and whatsoever is now, through the providence of God, by authority and power upheld. For whereas God hath foreprized things of the greatest weight, and hath therein precisely defined, as well that which every man must perform, as that which no man may attempt, leaving all sorts of men in the rest, either to be guided by their own good discretion, if they be free from subjection to others, or else to

be ordered by such Commandments and Laws as proceed from those Superiours under whom they live; the Patrons of liberty have here made Solemn Proclamation, that all such Laws and Commandments are void, in as much as every man is left to the freedom of his own mind, in such things as are not either exacted or prohibited by the Law of God; and because onely in these things the Positive Precepts of men have place, which Precepts cannot possibly be given without some abridgement of their liberty, to whom they are given: therefore if the Father command the Son, or the Husband the Wife, or the Lord the Servant, or the Leader the Souldier, or the Prince the Subject, to go or stand, sleep or wake, at such times as God himself in particular commandeth neither, they are to stand in defence of the freedom which God hath granted, and to do as themselves list, knowing that men may as lawfully command them things utterly forbidden by the Law of God, as yee them to any thing which the Law of God leaveth free. The plain contradictory whereunto is unfallibly certain. Those things which the Law of God leaveth arbitrary and at liberty, are all subject to the positive Laws of men, which Laws for the common benefit abridge particular mens liberty in such things, as far as the Rules of equity will suffer. This we must either maintain, or else overturn the world, and make every man his own Commander. Seeing then that labour and rest upon any one day of the six throughout the year, are granted free by the Law of God, how exempt we them from the force and power of Ecclesiastical Law, except we deprive the world of power to make any Ordinance or Law at all? Besides, is it probable that God should not only allow, but command concurrence of rest, with extraordinary occasions of doleful events, befalling peradventure some one certain Church, or not extending unto many, and not as much as permit or license the like; when Piety triumphant with joy and gladness, maketh solemn commemoration of Gods most rare & unwonted mercies, such especially as the whole race of Mankind doth or might participate? Of vacation from labour in times of sorrow, the on'y cause is, for that the general publike prayers of the whole Church, and our own private busineses, cannot both be followed at once; whereas of rest in the famous solemnities of publike joy, there is both this consideration the same, and also farther a kind of natural repugnancy, which maketh labours (as hath been proved) much more unfit to accompany Festival praises of God, then offices of humilia-

humiliation and grief. Again, if we list what they bring for proof and approbation of rest with fasting, doth it not in all respects as fully warrant, and as strictly command rest, whensoever the Church hath equal reason by feasts, and glad some solemnities to testify publique thankfulness towards God? I would know some cause, why those words of the Prophet *Joel*, *Sanctify a Fast, call a solemn Assembly*, which words were uttered to the Jewes, in misery and great distress, should more bind the Church to do at all times after the like, in their like perplexities, then the words of *Moses*, to the same people, in a time of joyful deliverance from misery, *Remember this day*, may warrant any annual celebration of benefices, no less importing the good of men; and also justify as touching the manner and form thereof, what circumstance soever they imitate only in respect of natural fitness or decency, without any Jewish regard to Ceremonies, such as were properly theirs, and are not by us expedient to be continued. According to the Rule of which general directions, taken from the Law of God, no less in the one then the other, the practice of the Church commended unto us in holy Scripture, doth not only make for the justification of black and dismal days (as one of the Fathers termeth them) but plainly offereth it self to be followed by such Ordinances (if occasion require) as that which *Mardocheus* did sometimes devise, *Hefther* what lay in her power help forward, and the rest of the Jewes establish for perpetuity, namely, That the fourteenth and fifteenth days of the moneth *Adar*, should be every year kept throughout all Generations, as days of feasting and joy, wherein they would rest from bodily labour, and what by gifts of charity bestowed upon the poor, what by other liberal signs of amity and love, all testify their thankful minds towards God, which almost beyond possibility had delivered them all, when they all were as men dead. But this decree, they say, was Divine, not Ecclesiastical, as may appear in that there is another decree in another Book of Scripture, which decree is plain, not to have proceeded from the Churches Authority, but from the mouth of the Prophet onely; and as a poor simple man sometime was fully perswaded, that if *Pontius Pilate* had not been a Saint, the Apostles would never have suffered his name to stand in the Creed, so these men have a strong opinion, that because the Book of *Hefther* is Canonical, the decree of *Hefther* cannot be possibly Ecclesiastical: If it were, they ask how the Jewes could bind themselves always to keep it, seeing Ecclesiastical Laws are mutable? As though the purposes of men might never intend constancy in that, the nature whereof is subject to alteration. Doth the Scripture: it self make mention of any divine Commandment? Is the Scripture witness of more, then only that *Mardocheus* was the Author of this custome, that by Letters written to his brethren the Jewes, throughout all Provinces under *Darius* the King of *Persia*, he gave them charge to celebrate yearly those two days, for perpetual remembrance of Gods miraculous deliverance and mercy; that the Jewes hereupon undertook to do it, and made it with general consent an order for perpetuity; That *Hefther* secondly, by her Letters confirmed the same which *Mardocheus* had before decreed; and that finally, the Ordinance was written to remain for ever upon record? Did not the Jewes in Provinces abroad observe at the first the fourteenth day, the Jewes in *Susa* the fifteenth? Were they not all reduced to an uniform order by means of those two Decrees, and so every where three days kept, the first with fasting, in memory of danger; the rest, in token of deliverance, as festival

*Joel* 2. 15.

*Exod* 13. 3.

*Heb* 9.

*1 Pet* 3. 9. The example out of *Hefther* is no sufficient warrant for these Feasts in question. For first, as in other cases, so in this case of days, the estate of Christians, under the Gospel, ought not to be so ceremonious, as was theirs under the Law. Secondly, that which was done there, was done by a special direction of the Spirit of God, either through the ministry of the Prophets, which they had, or by some other extraordinary means, which is not to be followed by us. This may appear by another place, *Zach* 8. where the Jewes changed their Fasts into Feasts, only by the mouth of the Lord, through the ministry of the Prophet. For further proof whereof, *Ps* 118, I take the 23. verse, where it appeareth, that this was an order to endure always, even as long as the other Feast days, which were instituted by the Lord himself. So that what abuses forever were of that Feast, yet as a perpetual Decree of God, it ought to have remained, whereas our Churches can make no such Decree, which may not upon change of times, and other circumstances, be altered. For the other proof herof I take the last Verse: For the Prophet contenteth not himself with this, that he had rehearsed the Decree, as he doth sometimes the decree of prophane Kings, but addeth precisely, that as soon as ever the Decree was made, it was registered in this Book of *Hefther*, which is one of the books of Canonical Scripture, declaring thereby in what esteem they had it. If it had been of no further Authority then our decrees, or then a Canon of one of the Councils, it had been presumption to have brought it into the Library of the holy Ghost. The sum of my Answer is, That this Decree was Divine, and not Ecclesiastical only.

festival and joyful days? Was not the first of these three, afterwards the day of sorrow and heaviness, abrogated, when the same Church saw it meet that a better day, a day in memory of like deliverance, out of the bloody hands of *Nicanor*, should succeed in the room thereof? But for as much as there is no end of answering fruitless oppositions; let it suffice men of sober minds, to know that the Law both of God and Nature alloweth generally, days of rest and festival solemnity, to be observed by way of thankful and joyful remembrance, if such miraculous favours be shewed towards mankind as require the same; that such graces God hath bestowed upon his Church, as well in latter as in former times, that in some particulars, when they have fallen out, himself hath demanded his own honour, and in the rest hath left it to the wisdom of the Church, directed by those precedents, and enlightened by other means, always to judge when the like is requisite. About questions therefore concerning Days and Times, our manner is not to stand at bay

a *Commemoratio Apostolica* passionis totius Christianitatis magistra à cunctis jure celebratur. Cod. l. 2. tit. 12. l. 7. b T. C. l. 1. p. 153. For so much as the old people did never keep any Feast or Holy day for remembrance either of *Moses*, &c. c T. C. l. 1. p. 153. The people, when it is called *S. Pauls* day, or the blessed Virgin *Maries* day, can understand nothing thereby, but that they are instituted to the honour of Saint *Paul*, or the Virgin *Mary*, unless they be otherwise taught. And if you say, let them so be taught, I have answered, that the teaching in this Land, cannot by any order which is yet taken, come to the most part of those, which have drunk this poison, &c. d *Scilicet ignorans nos nec Christum unquam relinquere, qui pro totius servandorum mundi salute passus est, nec alium quempiam colere posse. Nam hunc quidem tanquam filium Dei adoramus, Martyres vero tanquam Discipulos et Imitatores Domini dignè propter insuperabilem in Regem ipsorum ac Praeceptorum benevolentiam diligimus, quorum et nos conjunctes et discipulos fieri optamus.* Euseb. Hist. Eccles. lib. 4. cap. 15.

to bring forth, than vainly boast of our own peculiar and private inventions, as if the skill of 'profitable Regiment had left her publick habitation, to dwell in retired manner with some few men of one livery; we make not our childish 'appeals so netimes from our own to forreign Churches, sometime from both unto Churches incienter than both are, in effect always from all others to our own selves, but as becometh them that follow with all humility the ways of peace, we honour, reverence and obey, in the very next degree unto God, the voice of the Church of God wherein we live. They, whose wits are too glorious to fall to so low an ebbe, they which have risen and swollen so high, that the walls of ordinary Rivers are unable to keep them in; they whose wanton contentions in the cause whereof we have spoken, do make all where they go, a Sea, even they at their highest float are constrained both to see and 'grant, that what their fancy will not yield to like, their judgement cannot with reason condemn. Such is evermore the final victory of all truth, that they which have not the hearts to love her, acknowledge, thur to hate her they have no cause.

g T. C. l. 1. p. 154. We condemn not the Church of England, nei-

ther in this, nor in other things, which are meet to be reformed. For it is one thing to dislike, another thing to condemn; and it is one thing to condemn something in the Church, and another thing to condemn the Church for it.

h Πολλὰς μὲν  
ἡμετέρας πολλὰς  
ἡμετέρας  
αὐτὰς ἀνὰ  
κατὰ τὴν ἡμέ-  
ραν τοῦ ἡμετέ-  
ρου ἐλάττω  
ἐλάττω. de  
Audio dictu  
apud Dion. l. 60

Touching those festival Days therefore which we now observe, their number being no way felt 'discommodious to the Common-wealth, and their grounds 'sue as hitherto hath been shewed, what remaineth, but to keep them throughout all generations holy, 'severed by manifest notes of difference from other times, adorned with that which most may betoken true, virtuous, and celestial joy? To which in 'ent, because surcease from labour is necessary, yet not so necessary, no not on the Sabbath or Seventh Day it self, but that rarer occasions in mens particular Affairs subject to manifest detriment, unless they be presently followed, may with very good conscience draw them sometimes aside from the ordinary rule, considering the favourable dispensation which our Lord and Saviour grounded on this Axi-

om 2,



ome, *Man was not made for the Sabbath, but the Sabbath ordained for man*, so far forth as concerneth Ceremonies annexed to the principal Sanctification thereof, howsoever the rigour of the Law of *Moses* may be thought to import the contrary, if we regard with what severity the violation of Sabbaths hath been sometime punished, a thing perhaps the more requisite at that instant, both because the Jews by reason of their long abode in a place of continual servile toil, could not suddenly be wained and drawn unto contrary offices, without some strong impression of terrour; and also for that there is nothing more needful, then to punish with extremity the first transgressions of those Laws, that require a more exact observation for many Ages to come; therefore as the Jews superstitiously addicted to their Sabbaths rest for a long time, not without danger to themselves, and obloquie to their very Law, did afterwards perceive and amend wisely their former error, not doubting that bodily labours are made by necessity venial, though otherwise especially on that day, rest be more convenient, so at all times the voluntary scandalous contempt of that rest from labour, wherewith publicly God is served, we cannot too severely correct and bridle. The Emperour *Constantine* having with over-great facility licensed Sundays labours in Country Villages, under that pretence, whereof there may justly no doubt sometime consideration be had, namely, lest any thing which God by his providence hath bestowed, should miscarry, not being taken in due time. *Leo*, which afterwards saw that this ground would not bear so general and large indulgence as had been granted, doth, by a contrary Edict, both reverse and severely censure his Predecessours remissness, saying, *"We ordain according to the true meaning of the Holy Ghost, and of the Apostles thereby directed, that on the sacred Day, wherein our own integrity was restored, all do rest and surcease labour, that neither Husband-man nor other on that day put their hands to forbidden works. For if the Jews did so much reverence their Sabbath, which was but a shadow of ours, are not we which inhabit the light and truth of grace, bound to honour that day which the Lord himself hath honoured, and hath therein delivered us both from dishonour and from death? are we not bound to keep it singular and inviolable, well contenting our selves with so liberal a grant of the rest, and not incroaching upon that one, which God hath chosen to his own honour? Were it not wretched neglect of Religion, to make that very day common, and to think we may do with it as with the rest?"* Imperial Laws which had such care of hallowing, especially, our Lords Day, did not omit to provide that other Festival times might be kept with vacation from labour, whether they were days appointed on the sudden, as extraordinary occasions fell out, or days which were celebrated yearly, for Politick and Civil considerations; or finally, such days as Christian Religion hath ordained in Gods Church. The joy that setteth aside labour, disperseth those things which labour gathereth. For gladness doth always rise from a kind of fruition and happiness, which happiness banisheth the cogitation of all want, it needeth nothing but only the bestowing of that it hath, inasmuch as the greatest felicity that felicity hath, is to spread and enlarge it self; it cometh hereby to pass, that the first effect of joyfulness is to rest, because it seeketh no more; the next, because it aboundeth, to give. The root of both is the glorious presence of that Joy of mind which riseth from the manifold considerations of Gods unspeakable mercy, into which considerations we are led by occasion of sacred times. For how could the Jewish Congregations of old be put in mind by their weekly Sabbaths, what the World reaped through his goodness, which did of nothing creat the World; by their yearly Passover, what farewell they took of the Land of *Aegypt*; by their Pentecost, what Ordinances, Laws, and Statutes, their Fathers received at the hands of God; by their Feast of Tabernacles, with what protection they journeyed from place to place, through so many fears and hazards, during the tedious time of forty years travel in the Wilderness; by their Annual solemnity of *Lots*, how near the whole seed of *Israel* was unto utter extirpation, when it pleased that great God which guideth all things in Heaven and Earth,

Mark 2. 27.  
Numb. 15. 32.

a Hi vacare  
confessi sunt  
septima die, &  
neq. arma por-

care in praeliis dictus, neque terra cultum contingere, neq. al-  
terius cuiuspiam curam habere patiuntur, sed in templis extenden-  
tes manus adorare usq. ad vespertim soliti sunt. Ingressiente verb  
in civitatem Ptolomæo Lago cum exercitu & multis hominib;  
cum custodire debuissent civitatem, ipse stultitiam observantibus  
provincia quidem Dominum suscepit amarissimum, lex verb mani-  
festata est, malam habere solennitatem. Agatharchid. apud Joseph.  
lib. 1. cont. Appion. vide & Dion. l. 37. b 1 Mar. 2. 40.

c Neh. 13. 15.  
d Cod. l. 3. tit.  
12. l. 3.

e Leo consti. 54.

f T. C. l. 3. tit. 12  
Dies festus.

a Mat. 28. 1.

Mark 16. 1.

Luke 24. 1.

John 20. 1.

1 Cor. 16. 2.

Apoc. 1. 10.

b *Apostoli propositum fuit non ut leges de festis diebus celebrandis sancirent, sed ut, recta vivendi rationis & pietatis nobis antea essent.* Socrat. Hist. lib. 4. cap. 25. c *Qua toto terrarum orbe servantur, vel ab ipsis Apostolis vel Consiliis generalibus quorum est saluberrima in Ecclesia auctoritas, statuta esse intelligere licet: sicut quod Domini Passio & Resurrectio, & in Caelum Ascensus, & Adventus spiritus sancti anniversaria solennitate celebrantur.* Aug. Ep. 118. d Luke 2. 14.

Earth, so to change the counsels and purposes of men, that the same hand which had signed a Decree in the opinion both of them that granted, and of them that procured it, irrevocable, for the general massacre of Man, Woman, and Child, became the Buckler of their preservation, that no one hair of their heads might be touched; the same days which had been set for the pouring out of so much innocent blood, were made the days of their execution, whose malice had contrived the plot thereof; and the self-same persons that should have endured whatsoever violence and rage could offer, were employed in the just revenge of cruelty, to give unto blood-thirsty men the taste of their own Cup: or how can the Church of Christ now indure to be so much called on and preached unto by that which every Dominical Day throughout the year, that which year by year so many Festival times, if not commanded by the Apostles themselves, whose care at that time was of greater

things, yet instituted either by such universal authority, as no man, or at the least such as we, with no reason may despise, do as sometime the holy Angels did from Heaven, sing, *Glory be unto God on high, peace on earth, towards men good will* (for this in effect is the very Song that all Christian Feasts do

apply as their several occasions require) how should the days and times continually thus inculcate what God hath done, and we refuse to agnize the Benefit of such remembrances; that very benefit which caused *Moses* to acknowledge those Guides of Day and Night, the Sun and Moon which enlighten the World, not more profitable to nature by giving all things life, then they are to the Church of God, by occasion of the use they have, in regard of the appointed Festival Times? That which the head of all Philosophers hath said of Women, if they be good, the half of the Common-wealth is happy, wherein they are; the same we may fitly apply to times; well to celebrate these religious and sacred days, is to spend the flower of our time happily. They are the splendor and outward dignity of our Religion, forcible Witnesses of ancient Truth, provocations to the exercises of all Piety, shadows of our endless felicity in Heaven, on Earth everlasting Records and Memorials, wherein they which cannot be drawn to hearken unto that we teach, may only by looking upon that we do, in a manner read whatsoever we beleave.

Of Days appointed as well for ordinary, as for extraordinary Fasts in the Church of God.

T. C. l. 1. p. 30. I will not enter now to discuss whether it were well done to fast in all places according to the customs of the place. You oppose *Ambrose* and *Augustine*, I could oppose *Ignatius* and *Tertullian*, whereof the one saith, it is *nefas*, a detestable thing to fast upon the Lords Day; the other, that it is to kill the Lord. *Tertullian*, *de Coron. mil. Ignatius*, *Epist. ad Philippen*. And although *Ambrose* and *Augustine* being private men of Rome would have so done, yet it followeth not, but they had been Citizens and Ministers there, that they would have done it. And if they had done so, yet it followeth not, that if they would have spoken against that appointment of Days, and *voussoirs* of Fasting, whereof *Eusebius* saith, that *Montanus* was the first Author. I speak of that which they ought to have done. For otherwise I know, they both thought corruptly of Fasting, when as the one saith, it was a remedy or reward to fast other days, but in Lent not to fast, was sin: and the other saith, what salvation we can obtain, if we blot not out our sins by Fasting, seeing that the Scripture saith, that Fasting and Almes doth deliver from sin, and therefore calleth them new Teachers, that shut out the merit of Fasting. *Aug. de temp. 61. Ser. Amb. lib. 10. Ep.*

ing appointed in spiritual considerations th. it beginning either from *Montanus*, or any other, whose Heresies may prejudice the

72 The matching of contrary things together is a kind of illustration to both. Having therefore spoken thus much of Festival Days, the next that offer themselves to hand, are days of pensive humiliation and sorrow. Fastings are either of mens own free and voluntary accord, as their particular devotion doth move them thereunto; or else they are publicly enjoined in the Church, and required at the hands of all men. There are which altogether disallow not the former kinde; and the latter they greatly commend, so that it be upon extraordinary occasions only, and after one certain manner exercised. But yearly or weekly Fasts, such as ours in the Church of England, they allow no farther, then as the Temporal State of the Land doth require the same, for the maintenance of Sea-faring-men, and preservation of Cartel, because the decay of the one, and the waste of the other, could not well be prevented but by a Politick order, appointing some such usual change of Diet as ours is. We are therefore the rather to make it manifest in all mens eyes, that set times of Fast-

to be kept by all sorts of men, took not the

the credit and due estimation thereof, but have their ground in the Law of Nature, are allowable in Gods sight, were in all Ages heretofore, and may till the Worlds end be observed, not without singular use and benefit. Much hurt hath grown to the Church of God, through a false imagination, that Fasting standeth men in no stead for any spiritual respect, but only to take down the frankness of Nature, and to tame the wildness of flesh. Whereupon the World being bold to surfeit, doth now blush to fast, supposing that men when they fast, do rather bewray a Disease, then exercise a Virtue. I much wonder what they who are thus periwaded do think, what conceit they have concerning the Fasts of the Patriarks, the Prophets, the Apostles, our Lord Jesus Christ himself. The affections of Joy and Grief are so knit unto all the actions of mans life, that whatsoever we can do, or may be done unto us, the sequel thereof is continually the one or the other affection. Wherefore considering that they which grieve and joy as they ought; cannot possibly otherwise live then as they should, the Church of Christ, the most absolute and perfect School of all vertue, hath by the special direction of Gods good Spirit hitherto always inured men from their infancy, partly with days of Festival Exercise, for the framing of the one affection; and partly with times of a contrary sort, for the perfecting of the other. Howbeit over and besides this, we must note, that as resting, so fasting likewise attendeth sometimes no less upon the Actions of the higher, than upon the affections of the lower part of the mind. Fasting, saith *Tertullian*, is a work of reverence towards God. The end thereof sometimes elevation of mind; sometime the purpose thereof quite contrary. The cause why *Moses* in the Mount did so long fast, was meer divine speculation; the cause why *David*,<sup>a</sup> humiliation. Our life is<sup>b</sup> a mixture of good with evil. When we are partakers of good things, we joy, neither can we but grieve at the contrary. If that befall us which maketh glad, our Festival Solemnities declare our rejoycing to be in him whose meer undeserved mercy is the Author of all happiness; if any thing be either imminent or present which we shun, our Watchings, Fasting, Cryes, and Tears, are unsained testimonies, that our selves we condemne as the only causes of our own misery, and do all acknowledge him no less inclinable than able to save. And because as the memory of the one, though past, reneweth gladness; so the other called again to mind doth make the wound of our just remorse to bleed anew, which wound needeth often touching the more, for that we are generally more apt to Kalender Saints then sinners days, therefore there is in the Church a care not to iterate the one alone, but to have frequent repetition of the other. Never to seek after God, saving only when either the Crib or the Whip doth constrain were brutish servility, and a great derogation to the worth of that which is most predominant in man, if sometime it had not a kind of voluntary access to God, and of constenance as it were with God, all these inferiour considerations laid aside. In which sequestration so far as higher cogitations do naturally drown and bury all inferior cares, the mind may as well forget natural both food and sleep, by being carried above it self with serious and heavenly Meditation, as by being cast down with heaviness, drowned and swallowed up of sorrow. Albeit therefore concerning Jewish Abstinence from certain kinds of meats, as being unclean, the Apostle doth teach that<sup>c</sup> the Kingdom of Heaven is not meat nor drink, that food commendeth us not unto God, whether we take it, or abstain from it; that if we eat, we are not thereby the more acceptable in his sight, nor the less if we eat not; his purpose notwithstanding was far from any intent to derogate from that Fasting, which is no such scrupulous Abstinence, as only refuseth some kinds of meats and drinks, lest they make them unclean that taste them; but an Abstinence whereby we either interrupt or otherwise abridge the care of our bodily sustentance, to shew by this kind of outward exercise, the serious intention of our minds, fixed on Heavenlier and better desires, the earnest hunger and thirst whereof depriveth the body of those usual contentments, which otherwise are not denied unto it. These being in Nature the first causes that induce fasting, the next thing which followeth to be considered, is the ancient practice thereof amongst the Jews. Touching whose private voluntary Fasts, the Precept our Saviour gave them, was, *When ye fast, look not sour, as Hypocrites: For they disfigure their faces, that they might seem to men to fast: Verily I say unto you, they have their reward: When thou fastest, anoint thy head, & wash thy face, that thou seem not*

<sup>a</sup> *Tertul. de jej. Neque enim cibi semper in periculo semper inedia moritur sequela est.*

<sup>b</sup> *Μετὰ δὲ τὸ πολεμῆσαι τὸν ἀκατον καὶ ἀμυγῶντος χαρὰν ἀποδεδῶκεν ἐπὶ τῷ γένει, ἀλλ' ἐν ἀκατον καὶ ἀμυγῶν, οὐ γὰρ ἵσταντο πατὴρ τὸ ἀποδοῦν χάριν λυσάμενος καὶ δυνάμενος ἐν ἀκατον ἀνιδίωτος ἀποδοῦν, παρὰ μὲν δὲ τὴν ἀμυγῶντος οὐσίας, οὐδ' ἀδρας ποτὲ ἐν καλῶν δυνάμενος τῷ θυμῷ διακρίνας.*

<sup>c</sup> *Phil. lib. de Abraham. c. 14. 17.*

<sup>d</sup> *Mat. 6. 16.*



unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret will reward thee openly. Our Lord and Saviour would not teach the manner of doing, much less propose a reward for doing that, which were not both holy and acceptable in Gods sight. The Pharisees weekly bound themselves unto double Fasts, neither ate they for this reprov'd. Often fasting, which was a virtue in *Jobus* Disciples, could not in them of it self be a vice; and therefore not the oftentimes of their fasting, but their hypocrisie therein was blamed. Of <sup>a</sup> publick injoined Fasts, upon causes extraordinary, the examples of Scripture are so far frequent, that they need no particular rehearſal. Publick extraordinary Fastings were sometimes for <sup>b</sup> one only day, sometimes for <sup>c</sup> three, sometimes for <sup>d</sup> seven. Touching Fasts not appointed for any such extraordinary causes, but either yearly, or monthly, or weekly observed and kept; First, upon the <sup>e</sup> ninth day of that moneth, the tenth whereof was the Feast of Expiation, they were commanded of God, that every soul, year by year, should afflict it self. Their yearly Fasts every fourth moneth, in regard of the City of *Jerusalem*, entred by the Enemy; every fifth, for the memory of the overthrow of their Temple; every seventh, for the treacherous destruction and death of *Gedaliah*, the very last stay which they had to lean unto in their greatest misery; every tenth, in remembrance the time when siege began first to be laid against them; all these not commanded by God himself, but ordained by a publick Constitution of their own; the Prophet *Zachary* expressly toucheth, That Saint *Jerome*, following the tradition of the Hebrews, doth make the first, a memorial of the breaking of those two Tables, when *Moses* descended from Mount Sinai; the second a memorial as well of Gods indignation, condemning them to forty years travel in the Desert, as of his wrath in permitting Chaldeans to waste, burn and destroy their City; the last, a heavy tydings, brought out of *Jury* to *Ezekiel* and the rest, which lived as Captives in forrain parts, the difference is not of any moment, considering that each time of sorrow is naturally evermore a Register of all such grievous events as have hapned, either in, or near about the same time. To these I might adde <sup>f</sup> sundry other Fasts, above twenty in number, ordained amongst them by like occasions, and observed in like manner, besides their weekly Abstinence, Mondays and Thursdays, throughout the whole year. When men fasted, it was not always after one and the same sort, but either by depriving themselves wholly of all food, during the time that their Fasts continued, or by abating both the quantity and kind of Diet. We have of the one a plain Example in the *Ninivites* Fasting, and as plain a precedent for the other in the Prophet *Daniel*, *I was* (saith he) *in heaviness for three weeks of days, I eat no pleasant bread, neither tasted flesh nor wine.* Their tables, when they gave themselves to fasting, had not that usual furniture of such Dishes as do cherish blood with blood, but <sup>g</sup> for food they had bread, for suppage, salt, and for sawce, hearbs. Whereunto the Apostle may be thought to allude, saying, *One believeth he may eat all things, another which is weak* (and maketh a conscience of keeping those customs which the Jewes observe) *eateth herbs.* This austere repast they took in the Evening, after abstinence the whole day. For, to forbear a noons Meale, and then to recompence themselves at night, was not their use. Nor did they ever accustom themselves on Sabbaths or Festival days to fast. And yet it may be a question whether in some sort they did not always fast the Sabbath. Their Fastings were partly in token of penitency, humiliation, grief and sorrow, partly in signe of devotion and reverence towards God. Which second consideration (I dare not peremptorily and boldly affirm any thing) might induce to abstain till noon, as their manner was on fasting days to do till night. May it not very well be thought that hereunto the sacred <sup>h</sup> Scripture doth give some secret kind of Testimony? *Josephus* is plain, that the sixth hour (the day they divided into twelve) was wont on the Sabbath always to call them home unto meat. Neither is it improbable but that the <sup>i</sup> Heathens did therefore so often upbraid them with Fasting on that day. Besides, they which found so great fault with our Lords Disciples, for rubbing a few ears of corn in their hands on the Sabbath Day,

Mat. 6. 16.

a 2 Chron. 20.

Jer. 36 Extra 8.

1 Sam. 7.

b Iudg. 10. 12.

c 2 Msc. 13. 12.

d 1 Sam. 31. 13.

e Chron. 10. 12

f Levitic. 13.

Levit. 16.

Philo de hujm

festi jejuniis ita

loquitur.

Ou εστιν εν

αυτοις ιεροι

περισυς καδς

καθαρις οπως

διανοιαι με-

δους εν-

χλωπος με-

η ιμπεδι-

ζουσι ομα-

τικα παρους

οποια ολην

συβαλουν εν

πλησμονης ε-

ορταζουσι ι-

λασμονου

την παττερα

ου παρτις ο-

σιαις ενχαρις

διδου αμνησι-

αν ιου παλα-

ον αμαρτανω-

των, κτησι δ

α, απολαυσιν

νουν αγαθων

ισωσιν αι-

γιδος. pag. 447.

f Zac. 8. 16.

g Exod. 31.

Numb. 14.

h Vide Ribet.

L. 5. c. 21.

Dan. 10. 23.

i Puram ex f-

ne animalium

carnam. Apul.

in Asclep. in

fine Fastum ex

potum pura nos-

se non ventris

scilicet sed ani-

ma causa.

Tertul. de por-

nit. vide Phil.

lib. de vita con-

templ.

Rom. 14. 2.

Hieron. lib. 2. cont. Jovinian. Judith 8. 6. R. Mos. in Milne. Tor. lib. 3. qui est de tempor. cap. de Sab. &amp; cap. de Je-

jun. i Neb. 8. 11. Hora sexta qua Sabbath nostru ad prandium vocare soles super venit. Ioseph. lib. de vita sua.

k Sabbath Indeorum a Mose in omne annu jejuniis dicata. Iustin. lib. 36. Ne Iudeum quidem, mi Tiberi, tam libenter

Sabbati jejuniis servat, quam ego hodie servavi. Sueton. in Octav. cap. 76. Acta 2. 15.

are not unlikely to have aimed at the same mark. For neither was the bodily pain so great that it should offend them in this respect, and the very manner of defence which our Saviour there useth, is more direct and literal to Justifie the breach of the Jewish custome in Fasting, than in working at that time. Finally, the Apostles afterwards themselves when God first gave them the gift of Tongues, whereas some in disdain and spite termed grice drunkenness, it being then the day of Pentecost, and but only a fourth part of the day spent, they use this as an argument against the other cavil, *These men*, saith *Peter*, *are not drunk as you suppose, since as yet the third hour of the day is not over-past*. Howbeit, leaving this in suspense, as a thing not altogether certainly known, and to come from Jews to Christians, we finde that of private voluntary Fastings the Apostle *S. Paul* speaketh more then once. And (saith *Tertullian*) they are sometime commanded throughout the Church, *aliqua sollicitudinis Ecclesiastica causa*, the care and fear of the Church so requiring. It doth not appear that the Apostles ordained any set and certain days to be generally kept of all. Norwithstanding, forasmuch as Christ hath fore-signified, that when himself should be taken from them, his absence would soon make them apt to fast, it seemeth that even as the first Festival Day appointed to be kept of the Church was the Day of our Lords return from the dead, so the first sorrowful and mourning day was that we now observe in memory of his departure out of this World. And because there could be no abatement of grief, till they saw him raised whose death was the occasion of their heaviness; therefore the day he lay in Sepulchre hath been also kept and observed as a weeping day. The custome of fasting these two days before Easter, is undoubtedly most ancient, in so much that *Ignatius* not thinking him a Catholique Christian man which did not abhor (and as the state of the Church was then) avoid fasting on the Jews Sabbath, doth notwithstanding except for ever that one Sabbath or Saturday which falleth out to be the Easter-eve, as with us it always doth, and did sometimes also with them which kept at that time their Easter the fourteenth day of *March*, as the custome of the Jews was. It came afterward to be an order, that even as the day of Christs Resurrection, so the other two, in memory of his death and burial, were weekly. But this when *St. Ambrose* lived, had not as yet taken place throughout all Churches, no nor in *Millan*, where himself was Bishop. And for that cause he saith, that although at *Rome* he observed the Saturdays-fast, because such was then the custome in *Rome*, nevertheless in his own Church at home he did otherwise. The Churches which did not observe that day, had another instead thereof, which was the Wednesday, for that when they judged it meet to have weekly a day of humiliation, besides that whereon our Saviour suffered death, it seemed best to make their choice of that day especially, whereon the Jews are thought to have first contrived their treason together with *Judas* against Christ. So that the instituting and ordaining both of these and of all other times of like exercise, is as the Church shall judge, expedient for mens good. And concerning every Christian mans duty herein, surely that which *Augustinus* and *Ambrose* are before alleadged to have done, is such, as all men favouring equity must needs allow, and follow, if they affect peace. As for specified errors, I will not in this place dispute, whether voluntary fasting with a vertuous purpose of mind, be any medicinable remedy of evil, or a duty acceptable unto God, and in the world to come even rewardable, as other offices are which proceed from Christian piety; whether wilfully to break and dispose the wholesome Laws of the Church herein, be a thing which offendeth God; whether truly it may not be said, that penitent both weeping and fasting, are means to blot out sin, means whereby through Gods unspeakable and undeserved mercy we obtain or procure to our selves pardon; which attainment unto any gracious benefit by him bestowed, the Phrase of antiquity useth to express by the name of merit; but if either *Saint Augustinus*, or *Saint Ambrose* have taught any wrong opinion, seeing they which reprove them are not altogether free from error, I hope they will think it no error in us so to censure mens smaller faults, that their virtues be not thereby generally prejudiced. And if in Churches abroad, where we are not subject to power or jurisdiction, discretion should teach us for peace and quietness sake to frame our selves to other mens example, is it meet that at home

where our freedom is less, our boldness should be more? Is it our duty to oppose, in the Churches whereof we are Ministers, the rites and customs which in forrain Churches piety and modesty did teach us as strangers not to oppose, but to keep without shew of contradiction or dislike? Why oppose they the name of a Minister in this case unto the state of a private man? Doth their order exempt them from obedience to Laws? That which their Office and place requireth, is to shew themselves patterns of reverend subjection, not Authours and Masters of contempt towards Ordinances, the strength whereof when they seek to weaken, they do but in truth discover to the world their own imbecillities, which a great deal wiselier they might conceal. But the practice of the Church of Christ we shall by so much the better both understand and love, if to that which hitherto hath been spoken, there be somewhat added for more particular declaration, how Hereticks have partly abused Fasts, and partly bent themselves against the lawful use thereof in the Church of God. Whereas therefore *Ignatius* hath said, If any keep Sundays or Saturdays Fasts (one only Saturday in the year excepted) that man is no better then a murderer of Christ; the cause of such his earnestness at that time was the impiety of certain Hereticks, which thought that this world being corruptible, could not be made but a very evil Author. And therefore as the Jews did by the Festival Solemnity of their Sabbath, rejoyce in the God that created the world, as in the Author of all goodness: so those Hereticks in hatred of the Maker of the world, sorrowed, wept, and fasted on that day, as being the birth-day of all evil. And as Christian men of sound belief, did solemnize the Sunday, in joyfull memory of Christs Resurrection, so likewise at the self-same time such hereticks as denied his resurrection, did the contrary to them which held it; when the one sort rejoyced, the other fasted. Against those hereticks, which have urged perpetual abstinence from certain meats, as being in their very nature unclean, the Church hath still bent her self as an enemy; *Saint Paul* giving charge to take heed of them, which under any such opinion, should utterly forbid the use of meats or drinks. The Apostles themselves forbid some, as the order taken at *Jerusalem* declareth. But the cause of their so doing, we all know. Again, when *Tertullian*, together with such as were his followers, began to Montanize, and pretending to perfect the severity of Christian Discipline, brought in sundry unaccustomed days of fasting, continued their Fasts a great deal longer, and made them more rigorous then the use of the Church had been; the minds of men being somewhat moved at so great, and so sudden novelty, the cause was presently inquired into. After notice taken how the Montanists held these additions to be supplements of the Gospel, whereunto the Spirit of Prophecy did now mean to put, as it were, the last hand, and was therefore newly descended upon *Montanus*, whose orders all Christian men were no less to obey, then the Laws of the Apostles themselves; this abstinence the Church abhorred likewise, and that justly. Whereupon *Tertullian* proclaiming even open war to the Church, maintained Montanisme, wrote a Book in defence of the new Fast, and intitled the same; *A Treatise of Fasting against the opinion of the carnal sort*. In which Treatise nevertheless, because to much is sound and good, as doth either generally concern the use, or in particular declare the custome of the Churches fasting in those times, men are not to reject whatsoever is alledged out of that book, for confirmation of the truth. His error discovereth it self in those places, where he defendeth Fasts to be duties necessary for the whole Church of Christ to observe as commanded by the holy Ghost, and that with the same authority from whence all other Apostolical ordinances came, both being the Laws of God himself, without any other distinction or difference, saving only that he which before had declared his will by *Paul* and *Peter*, did now farther reveal the same by *Montanus* also. Against us ye pretend, saith *Tertullian*, that the publick orders which Christianity is bound to keep, were delivered at the first, and that no new thing is to be added therunto. Stand if you can upon this point; For behold, I challenge you for fasting more than at Easter your selves. But in fine ye answer, that these things are to be done as established by the voluntary appointment of men, and not by virtue or force of any divine Commandment. Well then (he addeth) Ye have removed your first footing, and gone beyond that which was delivered, by doing more than

Ἐν τῇ κυρίῃ  
καὶ ἡ ἐκκλη-  
σίαν τῆς κυ-  
ρίας ἡδὲ  
ἐκκλησίας. ὅτι  
καὶ οὗτοι  
ἐστὶν ἐπιστ. ad  
Philip.

a Vide Irenae.  
l. 1. c. 20, 21, 22,  
23, 24, 25. Epi-  
stol. 11, 22, 23  
24, 27, 28, &  
41, 42.  
Vide Canon.  
Apost. 35.



than was at the first imposed upon you. You say, you must do that which your own judgments have allowed: we require your obedience to that which God himself doth institute. Is it not strange that men to their own will should yield that which to Gods Commandment they will not grant? Shall the pleasure of men prevail more with you than the power of God himself? These places of Tertullian for fasting, have worthily been put to silence. And as worthily *Aerius* condemned for opposition against fasting. The one endeavoured to bring in such fasts as the Church ought not to receive; the other, to overthrow such as already it had received and did observe; the one was plausible unto many by seeming to hate carnal looseness and rigorous excess much more than the rest of the world did; the other drew hearers, by pretending the maintenance of Christian liberty; the one thought his cause very strongly upheld by making invective declamations with a pale and a withered countenance against the Church, by filling the ears of his starved hearers with speech suitable to such mens humours, and by telling them, no doubt to their marvellous contentment and liking, *Our new Prophetes are refused, they are despised. Is it because Montanus doth preach some other god, or dissolve the Gospel of Jesus Christ, or overthrow any Canon of faith and hope? No, our crime is, we teach that men ought to fast more often then marry; he best feast-maker is with them the perfectest Saint, they are assuredly merry Spirit, and therefore these our corporal devotions please them not:* thus the one for *Montanus* and his Superstition. The other in a clean contrary tune against the Religion of the Church. *Epiph. Hær. 74. These set-fasts away with them, for they are Jewish, and bring men under the yoke of servitude: if I will fast let me chuse my time, that Christian liberty be not abridged:* Hereupon their glory was to fast especially upon the Sunday, because the order of the Church was on that day not to fast. *On Church fasting-days, & especially the week before Easter, when with us (saith Epiphanius) customs admitteth nothing but lying down upon the earth, abstinence from fleshly delights and pleasures, sorrowfulness, dry and unfavoury diet, prayer, watching, fasting, all the medicines which holy affections can minister, they are up besides to take in of the strongest for the belly; and when their veins are well swoln, they make themselves mirth with laughter at this our service, wherein we are perswaded we please God.* By this of *Epiphanius* it doth appear, not only what fastings the Church of Christ in those times used, but also what other parts of Discipline were together therewith in force, according to the ancient use and custome of bringing all men at certain times to a due consideration and an open humiliation of themselves. Two kinds there were of publick penitency; the one belonging to notorious offenders, whose open wickedness had been scandalous; the other appertaining to the whole Church, and unto every severall person whom the same containeth. It will be answered, that touching this latter kind it may be exercised well enough by men in private. No doubt, but penitency is as Prayer, a thing acceptable unto God, be it in publick or in secret. Howbeit as in the one, if men were wholly left to their own voluntary Meditations in their Closets, and not drawn by Laws and Orders unto the open Assemblies of the Church, that there they may joyn with others in Prayer, it may be soon conjectured, what Christian devotion that way would come unto in a short time: even so in the other, we are by sufficient experience taught, how little it booteth to tell men of washing away their sins with tears of Repentance, and so to leave them altogether unto themselves. O Lord, what heaps of grievous transgressions have we committed, the best, the perfectest, the most righteous amongst us all, and yet can pass them over unforgotten for, and unrepented of, only because the Church hath forgotten utterly how to bestow her wonted times of Discipline, wherein the publick example of all was unto every particular person, a most effectual mean to put them often in mind, and even in a manner to draw them to that which now we all quite and clean forget, as if penitency were no part of a Christian mans duty. Again, besides our private offences which ought not thus loosely to be over-slipped, suppose we the body and corporation of the Church so just, that at no time it needeth to shew it self openly cast down in regard of those faults and transgressions, which though they do not properly belong unto any one, had notwithstanding a special Sacrifice appointed for them in the Law of *Moses*, & being common to the whole society which containeth all, must needs so far concern every man in particular, as at sometime in solemn manner to require

ment with more then daily and ordinary testifications of grief. There could not hereunto a fitter preamble be devised, then that memorable commination set down in the Book of Common-Prayer, if our practice in the rest were futable. The head already so well drawn, doth but with a proportionable body. And by the Preface to that very part of the English Liturgy, it may appear how at the first setting down thereof, no less was intended. For so we are to interpret the meaning of these words, wherein restitution of the Primitive Church Discipline is greatly for, touching the manner of publique penance in time of Lent. Wherewith some being not much acquainted, but having framed in their minds the conceit of a new Discipline, far unlike to that of old, they make themselves believe, it is undoubtedly this their Discipline, which at the first was so much desired. They have long pretended that the whole Scripture is plain for them. If now the Communion Book make for them too (I well think the one doth as much as the other) it may be hoped that being found such a well-willer unto their cause, they will more favour it than they have done. Having therefore hitherto spoken, both of Festival days, and so much of solempne Fasts, as may reasonably serve to shew the ground thereof in the Law of Nature, the practice partly appointed, and partly allowed of God in the Jewish Church, the like continued in the Church of Christ, together with the sinister oppositions, either of Hereticks erroneously abusing the same, or of others thereat quarrelling without cause, we will only collect the chiefest points as well of resemblance, as of difference between them, and so end. First, in this they agree, that because nature is the general root of both, therefore both have been always common to the Church with Infidels and Heathen men. Secondly, they also herein accord, that as oft as joy is the cause of the one, and grief the well-spring of the other, they are <sup>a</sup> incompatible. A third degree of affinity between them, is, that neither being acceptable to God in it self, but both tokens of that which is acceptable, their approbation with him must necessarily depend on that which they ought to import and signifie; so that if herein the mind dispose not it self aright, whether we <sup>b</sup> rest or <sup>c</sup> fast we offend. A fourth thing common unto them is, that the greatest part of the world hath always grossly and palpably offended in both; Infidels because they did all in relation to false gods; godless, sensual, and careless minds, for that there is in them no constant, true and sincere affection towards those things which are pretended by such exercise; yea, certain flattering oversights they are, wherewith sundry, and they not of the worst sort, may be easily in these cases led awry, even through abundance of love and liking to that which must be embraced by all means, but with caution, inasmuch as the very admiration of Saints, whether we celebrate their glory, or follow them in humility, whether we laugh or weep, mourn or rejoyce with them, is (as in all things the affection of love) apt to deceive, and doth therefore need the more to be directed by a watchful guide, seeing there is manifestly both ways, even in them whom we honour, that which we are to observe and shun. The best have not still been sufficiently mindful, that Gods very Angels in Heaven are but Angels, and that bodily exercise considered <sup>d</sup> in it self is no great matter. Finally, seeing that both are Ordinances well devised for the good of man, and yet not man created purposely for them; as for <sup>e</sup> other Offices of vertue whereunto Gods immutable Law for ever tyeth, it is but equity to wish or admonish that, where by uniform order they are not as yet received, the example of <sup>f</sup> Victors extremity in the one, and of <sup>g</sup> Johns Disciples curiosity in the other, be not followed; yea, where they are appointed by Law, that notwithstanding <sup>h</sup> we avoid Judaisme, and as in Festival days, mens necessities for matter of labour; so in time of Fasting, regard be had to their imbecilities, lest they should suffer harm, doing good. Thus therefore we see how these two customes are in divers respects equal. But of Fasting the use and exercise, though less pleasant, is by so much more requisite than the other, as grief of necessity is a more familiar guest then the contrary passion of mind, albeit gladness to all men be naturally more welcom. For first, we our selves do many more things amiss than well, and the fruit of our own ill doing is remorse, because nature is conscious to it self that it should do the contrary. Again, forasmuch as the world over-aboundeth with malice, and few are delighted in doing good unto other men, there is no man so

feldo ne

<sup>a</sup> *Con. Laod.*

<sup>b</sup> *cap. 51. 52. vetat  
Natalitia Mar-  
tyrum in Qua-  
dragesima ce-  
lebrari.*

<sup>c</sup> *Esg. 2. 13.*

<sup>d</sup> *Esg. 58. 3.*

<sup>d</sup> *1 Tim. 4. 8.*

<sup>e</sup> *Ecclef. 12. 13.*

<sup>f</sup> *Esg. 58. 6, 7.*

<sup>g</sup> *Rom. 14. 17.*

<sup>h</sup> *1. 17.*

<sup>i</sup> *Heb. 12. 14.*

<sup>j</sup> *Ephes. 2. 4.*

<sup>k</sup> *Euseb. Ecclef.*

<sup>l</sup> *Hist. L. c. 5. c. 13.*

<sup>m</sup> *Math. 9. 14.*

<sup>n</sup> *Col. 2. 16.*

seldom crost as pleased at the hands of others, whereupon it cannot be choi-  
 sed, but every mans woes must dou- le in that respect the number and measure of his de-  
 lights. Besides, concerning the very choice which oftentimes we are to make, our  
 corrupt inclination well considered, there is no cause why our Saviour should account *Mat. 6. 4.*  
 them happiest that do most mourn, and why *Solomon* might judge it better to fre-  
 quent mourning then feasting-houses; not better simply and in it self (for then  
 would Nature that way incline) but in regard of us and our common weakness bet-  
 ter. *Job* was not ignorant that his Childrens Banquets, though tending to amity, *Job 1. 5.*  
 needed Sacrifice. Neither doth any of us all need to be taught that in things  
 which de- light, we easily swerve from mediocrity, and are not easily led by a right *a'Εν ταῖς δὲ*  
 direct line. On the other side, the sores and diseases of mind which inordinate *μάστιγα φυ-*  
 pleasure breedeth, are by dolour and grief cured. For which cause as all offences use *λακτίου τοῦ*  
 to seduce by pleasing, so all punishments endeavour by vexing to reform trans- *ἡδὺ καὶ τῶν ἡ-*  
 gressions. We are of our own accord apt enough to give entertainment to things *δουλοῦ καὶ οὐδ' α-*  
 delectable, but patiently to lack what flesh and blood doth desire; and by vertue *δυνατοὶ κρείτο-*  
 to forbear what by nature we covet: this no man attaineth unto, but with labour *μαρ ἀνθρώπου.*  
 and long practice. From hence it riseth, that in former Ages, abstinence and fast *Αριστ. Eth. 1.*  
 ing more then ordinary, was always a special branch of their praise, in whom it  
 could be observed and known, were they such as continually gave themselves to  
 austere life, or men that took often occasions in private vertuous respects to lay *cap. 13.*  
*Solomon* counsel aside, *b Eat thy Bread with joy,* and to be followers of *Dauids* ex-  
 ample, which saith, *c I humbled my soul with fasting;* or but they who otherwise  
 worthy of no great commendation, have made of hunger, some their gain, some  
 their Physick, some their Art, that by mastering sensual appetites without constraint,  
 they might grow able to indure hardness whensoever need should require. For the  
 body accustomed to emptiness pineth not away so soon as having still used to fill  
 it self. Many singular affects there are which should make fasting even in publick  
 considerations the rather to be accepted. For I presume we are not altogether with-  
 out experience how great their advantage is in martial enterprizes, that lead Armies  
 of men trained in a School of abstinence. It is therefore noted at this day in some,  
 that patience of hunger and thirst hath given them many victories; in others that  
 because if they want, there is no man able to rule them, nor they in plenty to mo-  
 derate themselves: he which can either bring them to hunger or overcharge them,  
 is sure to make them their own overthrow. What Nation soever doth feel these  
 dangerous inconveniencies, may know that sloth and fulness in peaceable times at  
 home is the cause thereof, and the remedy a strict observation of that part of Chri-  
 stian Discipline, which teacheth men in practice of ghostly welfare against them-  
 selves, those things that afterwards may help them, justly assaulting or standing in  
 lawful defence of themselves against others. The very purpose of the Church of  
 God, both in the number and in the order of her Fasts, hath been not only to pre-  
 serve thereby throughout all Ages, the remembrance of miseries heretofore sustai-  
 ned, and of the causes in our selves out of which they have risen, that men consid-  
 ring the one, might fear the other the more, but farther also to temper the mind,  
 lest contrary affections coming in place should make it too profuse and dissolute,  
 in which respect it seemeth that Fasts have been set as Ushers of Festival Days, for  
 prevention of those disorders, as much as might be; wherein, notwithstanding, the  
 World always will deserve, *d* as it hath done, blame; because such evils being not  
 possible to be rooted out, the most we can doe, is in keeping them low; and (which  
 is chiefly the fruit we look for) to create in the minds of men a love towards frugal  
 and severe life, to undermine the palaces of wantonness, to plant Parsimony as Na-  
 ture, where Riotousness hath been studied, to harden whom pleasure would melt,  
 and to help the tumours which always fulness breedeth, that children as it were in  
 the Wool of their Infancy died with hardness, may never afterwards change colour;  
 that the poor, whose perpetual Fasts are of necessity, may with better contentment  
 endure the hunger, which Vertue causeth others to often to chuse, and by advice of  
 Religion it self so far to esteem above the contrary; that they, which for the most  
 part do lead sensual and easie lives; they which, as the Prophet *David* describeth  
 them, are not plagued like other men, may by the publick spectacle of all be still

*b Ecclef. 9. 7.*

*c Psal. 35. 13.*

*d Valde absur-  
dum est nimia  
saturitate velle  
honoreare marty-  
rem quem scias  
Deo placuisse  
junioris, Hier.  
Epistol. ad Eust.*

*Psal. 73. 5.*



Psal. 69. 10.

The celebration  
of Matrimony.  
T. G. l. i. p. 199.

put in mind what themselves are ; finally, that every man may be every mans daily guide and example, as well by fasting to declare humility, as by praise to express joy in the sight of God, although it have herein befallen the Church as sometimes David ; so that the speech of the one may be truly the voice of the other, *My soul fasted, and even that was also turned to my reproach.*

73 In this world there can be no society durable, otherwise then only by propagation. Albeit therefore single Life be a thing more Angelical and Divine, yet with the replenishing first of Earth with blessed Inhabitants, and then of Heaven with Saints everlastingly praising God, did depend upon conjunction of Man and Woman, he which made all things compleat and perfect, saw it could not be good to leave men without any Helper, unto the forealluaged end : In things which some farther end doth cause to be desired, choice seeketh rather proportion, then absolute perfection of goodness. So that woman being created for mans sake to be his Helper, in regard of the end before mentioned, namely, the having and ringing up of Children, whereunto it was not possible they could concur, unless there were subalternation between them, which subalternation is naturally grounded upon inequality, because things equal in every respect are never willingly directed one by another. Woman therefore was even in her first estate framed by Nature, not only after in time, but inferior in excellency also unto man, howbeit in so due and sweet proportion, as being presented before our eyes, might be sooner perceived then defined. And even herein doth lie the reason, why that kind of love which is the perfectest ground of Wedlock is seldom able to yield any reason of it self. Now, that which is born of Man must be nourished with far more travel, as being of greater price in Nature, and of slower pace to perfection, then the Offspring of any other Creature besides. Man and Woman being therefore to join themselves for such a purpose, they were of necessity to be linked with some straight and insoluble knot. The bond of Wedlock hath been always more or less esteemed of, as a thing religious and sacred. The title which the very Heathens themselves do oftentimes give, is *Holy*. Those Rites and Orders which were instituted in the solemnization of Marriage, the Hebrews term by the name of conjugal *sanctification*. Amongst our selves, because sundry things appertaining unto the public order of Matrimony, are called in question, by such as know not from whence those Customes did first grow, to shew briefly some true and sufficient reason of them shall not be superfluous ; although we do not hereby intend, to yield so far unto Enemies of all Church Orders saving their own, as though every thing was unlawful, the true cause and reason whereof at the first might hardly perhaps be now rendered. Wherefore, to begin with the times wherein the liberty of Marriage is restrained ; *There is, saith Solomon, a time for all things ; a time to laugh, and a time to mourn.* The duties belonging unto Marriage, and Offices pertaining to Penitence, are things unsuitable and unfit to be matched together, the Prophets and Apostles themselves do witness. Upon which ground, as we might right well think it marvellous absurd to see in a Church a Wedding on the day of a publick Fast, so likewise in the self-same consideration, our Predecessors thought it not amiss to take away the common liberty of Marriages, during the time which was appointed for preparation unto, and for exercise of general humiliation by fasting and praying, weeping for sins. As for the delivering up of the woman, either by her Father or by some other, we must note, that in ancient times, all women which had not husbands nor fathers to govern them, had their Tutors without whose authority there was no act which they did warrantable. And for this cause, they were in marriage delivered unto their husbands by others. Which custome retained, hath still this use, that it putteth women in mind of a duty, whereunto the very inbecility of their nature and sex doth bind them, namely, to be always directed, guided and ordered by others, although our Positive Laws do not tie them now as Pupils. The custome of laying down money seemeth to have been derived from the Saxons, whose manner was to buy their wives. But, seeing there is not any great cause, wherefore the memory of that custome should remain, it skillerth not much, although we suffer it to lie dead, even as we see it in a manner already worn out. The Ring hath been always used as an especial Pledge of faith and fidelity. Nothing

a Tūc iēpēs  
pāues. Dionys.  
Holicar. ant. l. a.  
b Kidduschin.  
in Rituali Heb.  
de benedictione  
nuptiarum.  
Ecclef. 3. 1.  
Zael. 2. 16.

c Mulieres an-  
tiquo jure tu-  
ta perdotas con-  
suebat Ricce-  
bant uxorē à tu-  
toris potestate,  
qua in manum  
conuenissent.  
Bott. in Topic.  
Cic.

d Nullam ne  
privatam qui-  
dem rem sumi-  
nam sine aucto-  
re agere majo-  
res nostri volu-  
erunt.  
Liv. lib. 44.  
The reason  
yielded by Tal-  
ty, this, Prop-  
ter infirmita-  
tem consilii.  
Cic. pro Mur.  
Vide leges Six-  
on. tit. 6. & 17.

thing more fit to serve as a Token of our purposed endless continuance in that  
 which we never thought to revoke. This is the cause wherefore the Heathens them-  
 selves did in such cases use the Ring, whereunto *Tertullian* alluding, saith, that in  
 ancient times; *No woman was permitted to wear gold, saving only upon one finger, a Aurum nulla*  
*which her husband had fastned unto himself, with that Ring which was usually given*  
*for assurance of future marriage.* The cause why the Christians use it, as some of the  
 Fathers think, is <sup>a</sup> either to testifie mutual love, or rather to serve for a pledge of  
 conjunction in heart and mind agreed upon between them. But what right and  
 custome is there so harmless, wherein the wit of man bending it self to derision,  
 may not easily find out somewhat to scorn and jest at? He that should have beheld  
 the Jews when they shoud with <sup>c</sup> a four-cornered Garment, spread over the heads  
 of espoused couples, while their Espousals were in making; he that should have be-  
 held their <sup>d</sup> praying over a Cup, and their delivering the same at the Marriage  
 Feast with set forms of Benediction, as the order amongst them was, might being  
 seldw affected, take thereat as just occasion of scornful caviil, as at the use of the  
 Ring in Wedlock amongst Christians. But of all things the most hardly taken, is  
 the uttering of these words, *Wish my body I thee worship*; in which words when once  
 they are understood, there will appear as little cause as in the rest, for any Wife  
 man to be offended. First therefore, inasmuch as unlawful copulation doth pollute  
 and <sup>e</sup> dishonour both parties, this protestation that we do worship and honour ano-  
 ther with our bodies, may import a denial of all such lets and impediments to our  
 knowledge, as might cause any stain, blemish, or disgrace that way; which kind of  
 construction being probable, would easily approve that speech to a peaceable and  
 quiet mind. Secondly, in that the Apostle doth so expressly affirm, that parties un-  
 married have not any longer entire power over themselves, but each hath interest  
 in others person, it cannot be thought an absurd construction to say, that wor-  
 shipping with the body, is the imparting of that interest in the body unto another,  
 which none before had, save only our selves. But if this were the natural mean-  
 ing, the words shoud perhaps be as requisite to be used on the one side as on the o-  
 ther; and therefore a third sense there is, which I rather rely upon. Apparent it is,  
 that the ancient difference between a lawful Wife and a Concubine was only <sup>f</sup> in  
 the different purpose of man betaking himself to the one or the other. If his pur-  
 pose were only fellowship, there grew to the Woman by this mean no worship at  
 all, but the contrary. In professing that his intent was to adde by his person, hon-  
 our and worship unto hers, he took her plainly and cleerly to Wife. This is it  
 which the Civil Law doth mean, when it maketh a Wife to differ from a Concu-  
 bine in <sup>g</sup> dignity; a Wife to be taken where <sup>h</sup> Conjugal honour and affection do  
 go before. The worship that grew unto her being taken with declaration of this in-  
 tent, was that her Children became by this mean legitimate and free; her self was  
 made a Mother over his Family; last of all, she received such advancement of state,  
 as things annexed unto his person might augment her with, yea, a right of partici-  
 pation was thereby given her both in him, and even in all things which were his.  
 This doth somewhat the more plainly appear, by adding also that other Clause, *With*  
*all my worldly Goods I thee endow.* The former branch having granted the princi-  
 pal, the latter granted that which is annexed thereunto. To end the publick Solem-  
 nity of Marriage, with receiving the blessed Sacrament, is a custome so Religious  
 and so Holy, that if the Church of *England* be blameable in this respect, it is not  
 for suffering it to be so much, but rather for not providing that it may be more put  
 in ure. The Laws of *Romulus* concerning Marriage are therefore extolled above  
 the rest amongst the Heathens which were before,  
 in that they established the use of certain special  
 Solemnities, whereby the minds of men were  
 drawn to make the greater conscience of wed-  
 lock, and to esteem the bond thereof, a thing  
 which could not be without impiety dissolved. If  
 there be any thing in Christian Religion strong and effectual to like purpose, it is  
 the Sacrament of the holy Eucharist, in regard of the force whereof *Tertullian*  
 breaketh out into these words, concerning Matrimony therewith sealed; *Unde*  
*sub-*

*a Aurum nulla*  
*novas prae-*  
*ter unico digito*  
*quem sponsus*  
*opponeret*  
*pronubo annulo.*  
*Tertul. Apol.*  
*c. 6.*  
*b 15lor. de Ec-*  
*cles. Offic. lib.*  
*2. cap. 19.*  
*c Elias Thesb.*  
*in diff. H. buph.*  
*d In Ritual. de*  
*benedict. nupri-*  
*orum.*  
*e Rom. 4. 24.*  
*f 1 Cor. 7. 4.*  
*g L. penult. D.*  
*de concub.*  
*h Litem legato*  
*sest. penult. D.*  
*de legat. 3.*  
*h L. donaciones*  
*D. de donatio-*  
*nibus.*  
*Ὅτι τὸ ὁ*  
*νόμιμον τὰς τὴν γυναικαὶ ἰνδραστὶ τὰς γαμουράς ὅτι*  
*μαρτυρίας ἰχθῶντες ἰστέον ἀποστολῶν ὅτι ἰνδ τὴν*  
*τὴν γαμουράν τὸ τὴν τῶν, ὡς τοὺς ἀνδράς ὡς*  
*ἀνδράς τὴν ὡς ἀνδράς τὴν γυναικαὶ τὴν γυναικαὶ*  
*κεστῶν. Dion. Hal. Antiq. lib. 2.*

*sufficient ad enarrandam felicitatem ejus Matrimonii quod Ecclesia conciliat & confirmat oblatio? I know not which way I should be able to shew the happiness of that Wedlock, the knot wherof the Church doth fasten, and the Sacrament of the Church confirm. Touching Marriage therefore, let thus much be sufficient.*

Churching of  
Women.  
T.G. l. 1. p. 150.

74. The fruit of Marriage is Birth, and the companion of Birth travel, the grief whereof being so extrem, and the danger always so great, dare we open our mouths against the things that are holy, and presume to censure it, as a fault in the Church of Christ, that women after their deliverance do publicly shew their thankful minds unto God? But behold what reason there is against it: Forsooth, if there should be solemn and expresse giving of thanks in the Church for every benefit, either equal, or greater then this, which any singular person in the Church doth receive, we should not only have no preaching of the Word, nor ministering of the Sacraments, but we should not have so much leisure as to do any corporal or bodily work, but should be like those Massilian Hereticks which do nothing else but pray. Surely better a great deal to be like unto those Hereticks which do nothing else but pray, then those which do nothing else but quarrel. Their heads it might haply trouble somewhat more then as yet they are aware of, to find out so many benefits greater then this, or equivalent thereunto, for which if so be our Laws did require solemn and expresse thanksgiving in the Church, the same were like to prove a thing so greatly cumbersome as is pretended. But if there be such store of mercies, even inestimable, poured every day upon thousands (as indeed the earth is full of the blessings of the Lord, which are day by day renewed without number and above measure) shall it not be lawful to cause solemn thanks to be given unto God for any benefit, then which greater or whereunto equal are received, no Law binding men in regard thereof to perform the like duty? Suppose that some bond there be that tieth us at certain times to mention publicly the names of sundry our Benefactors. Some of them it may be are such, that a day would scarcely serve to reckon up together with them the Catalogue of so many men besides, as we are either more or equally beholden unto: Because no Law requireth this impossible labour at our hands, shall we therefore condemn that Law whereby the other being possible and also dutiful is enjoyned us? So much we owe to the Lord of Heaven, that we can never sufficiently praise him nor give him thanks for half those benefits for which this Sacrifice were most due. Howbeit, God forbid we should cease performing this duty, when publick Order doth draw us unto it, when it may be so easily done, when it hath been so long executed by devout and vertuous people; God forbid, that being so many ways provoked in this case unto so good a duty, we should omit it, only because there are other cases of like nature, wherein we cannot so conveniently, or at least wise do not perform the same most vertuous Office of Piety. Wherein we trust that as the action it self pleaseth God, so the order and manner thereof is not such as may justly offend any. It is but an over-flowing of Gall, which causeth the Womens absence from the Church, during the time of her lying in, to be traduced and interpreted as though she were so long judged *unholy*, and were thereby shut out or sequestred from the House of God, according to the ancient Levitical Law.

*a Dist. 5. c. Hac quo. In lege precipiebatur ut mulier si masculum pareret 40. si feminam 80. diebus à templi cessaret ingressu. Nunc autem statim post partum Ecclesiam ingredi non prohibetur. b Leo. Const. 17. Quod profectio non tam propter muliebrem immunditiam, quam ob alias causas in intima legis ratione requiritur, & veteri prohibitum esse lege, & gratia temporis traditionis loco suscepisse potest. Existimo siquidem sacram legem id præscripsisse, quo præteritum eorum qui intemperanter viverent concupiscentiam castigaret, quemadmodum & alia multa per alia præcepta ordinantur & præscribuntur, quo indomitus quorundam in mulieris stimulus retundatur. Quia & hac providentia quam legem constituit voluntas est ut partu à depravatione liberi sint. Quia enim quicquid natura supervacuum est idem corruptivum est & inutile, quod hic sanguis superfluum sit, quia illi obnoxia essent in immunditie ad id tempore vivere illa lex julet, quo ipso etiam nomine sensu lascivii concupiscentia ad temperantiam redigatur, ne ex inutili & corrupta materia ipsum animam coarguentur.*

Whereas the very Canon Law it self doth not so hold, but directly \* professeth the contrary; she is not barred from thence in such sort as they interpret it, nor in respect of any unholiness forbidden entrance into the Church, although her abstaining from publick Assemblies, and her abode in separation for the time be \* most convenient. To scoffe at the manner of attire, than which there could be nothing devised for such a time more grave and decent, to make it a token of some folly committed, for which they are loth to shew their faces, argueth



gueth that great Divines are sometime more merciful then wile. As for the Women themselves, God accepting the service which they faithfully offer unto him; it is no great disgrace though they suffer pleasant witted men, a little to intermingle with zeal scorn. The name of *Oblations* applied not only here to those small and petite payments which yet are a part of the Ministers right, but also generally given unto all such allowances as serve for their needful maintenance, is both efficient and convenient. For as the life of the Clergy is spent in the Service of God, so it is sustained with his Revenue. Nothing therefore more proper then to give the name of *Oblations* to such payments, in token that we offer unto him whatsoever his Ministers receive.

75. But to leave this, there is a duty which the Church doth owe to the faithful departed, wherein for as much as the Church of England is said to do those things which are, though *not unlawful*, yet *inconvenient*, because it appointeth a prescriptive form of Service at Burials, suffereth mourning Apparel to be worn, and permitteth Funeral Sermons, a word or two concerning this point will be necessary, although it be needless to dwell long upon it. The end of Funeral Duties is, first, to shew that love towards the party deceased which Nature requireth; then to do him that honour which is fit both generally for man, and particularly for the quality of his person; last of all, to testify the care which the Church hath to comfort the living, and the hope which we all have concerning the Resurrection of the dead. For signification of love towards them that are departed, mourning is not denied to be a thing convenient; as in truth the Scripture every where doth approve lamentation made unto this end. The Jews by our Saviours tears therefore, gathered in this case, that his love towards *Lazarus* was great. And that as mourning at such times is fit; so likewise that there may be a kind of Attire suitable to a sorrowful affection, and convenient for Mourners to wear, how plainly doth *David*s example shew, who being in heaviness went up to the Mount with his head covered, and all the people that were with him in like sort? White garments being fit to use at Marriage-Feasts, and such other times of joy; whereunto *Solomon* alluding, when he requireth continual cheerfulness of mind, speaketh in this sort, *Let thy garments be always white*: what doth hinder the contrary from being now as convenient in grief, as this heretofore in gladness hath been? *If there be no sorrow*, they say, *it is hypocritical to pretend it, and if there be, to provoke it by wearing such attire, is dangerous*. Nay, if there be, to shew it is natural, and if there be not, yet the signs are meet to shew what should be, especially, sith it doth not come oftentimes to pass, that men are fain to have their mourning Gowns pull'd off their backs, for fear of killing themselves with sorrow that way nourished. The honour generally due unto all men, maketh a decent interring of them to be convenient even for very humanities sake. And therefore so much as is mentioned in the Burial of the Widows Son, the carrying of him forth upon a Bier, and the accompanying of him to the earth, hath been used even amongst Infidels, all men accounting it a very extream desecration, not to have at the least this honour done them. Some mans estate may require a great deal more, according as the fashion of the Country where he dyeth doth afford. And unto this appertained the ancient use of the Jews, to embalm the Corps with sweet Odours, and to adorn the Sepulchres of certain. In regard of the quality of men, it hath been judged fit to commend them unto the world at their death, amongst the Heathen in Funeral Orations, amongst the Jews in sacred Poems; and why not in Funeral Sermons also amongst Christians? Us it sufficeth that the known benefit hereof doth countervail Millions of such inconveniences as are therein furnished, although they were not furnished only but found therein. The life and the death of Saints is precious in Gods sight. Let it not seem odious in our eyes, if both the one and the other be spoken of, then especially, when the present occasion doth make mens minds the more capable of such speech. The care no doubt of the living, both to live and to dye well must needs be somewhat increased, when they know that their departure shall not be folded up in silence, but the ears of many be made acquainted with it. Moreover when they hear how mercifully God hath dealt with their Brethren in their last need, besides the praise which they give to God, and the joy which they have or should have by reason of their Fellowship and

Of the Rites of Burial.

T.C.L.3. p.336.

John 11. 36.

1 Sam. 15. 30.

Ecclef. 9. 8.

Luke 7. 14.

Psal. 79. 3.

John 19. 40.

Mat. 23. 27.

1 Sam. 1. 19.

Jer. 16. 7.

Prov. 31. 6.  
1 Chron. 19. 2.  
Job 2. 11.

and Communion with Saints, is not their hope also much confirmed against the day of their own dissolution? Again, the sound of these things doth not so pass the ears of them that are most loose and dissolute in life, but it causeth them one time or other to wish, *O that I might dye the death of the Righteous, and that my end might be like his!* Thus much peculiar good there doth grow at those times by speech concerning the dead, besides the benefit of publick instruction common unto Funeral with other Sermons. For the comfort of them whose minds are through natural affection pensive in such cases, no man can justly mislike the custome which the Jews had to end their Burials with Funeral Banquets, in reference whereunto the Prophet *Jeremy* spake, concerning the people which God had appointed unto a grievous manner of destruction, saying, that men should not *give them the Cup of consolation to drink for their Father or for their Mother*, because it should not be now with them as in peaceable times with others, who bringing their Ancestors unto the Grave with weeping eyes, have notwithstanding means wherewith to be re-comforted. *Give wine*, saith *Solomon*, *unto them that have grief of heart*. Surely, he that ministreth unto them comfortable speech, doth much more then give them wine. But the greatest thing of all other about this duty of Christian Burial, is an outward reitification of the hope which we have touching the Resurrection of the dead. For which purpose let any man of reasonable judgement examine, whether it be more convenient for a company of men, as it were in a dumb show, to bring a Corse to the place of burial, there to leave it covered with earth, and so end, or else to have the Exequies devoutly performed with solemn recital of such Lectures, Psalms and Prayers, as are purposely framed for the stirring up of mens minds unto a careful consideration of their estate, both here and hereafter. Whereas therefore it is objected, that neither the people of God under the Law, nor the Church in the Apostles times did use any form of service in burial of their dead, and therefore that this order is taken up without any good example or precedent followed therein; First, while the world doth stand, they shall never be able to prove, that all things which either the one or the other did use at Burials, are set down in holy Scripture, which doth not any where of purpose deliver the whole manner and form thereof, but toucheth only sometime one thing, and sometime another which was in use, as special occasions require any of them to be either mentioned or insinuated. Again, if it might be proved that no such thing was usual amongst them, hath Christ so deprived his Church of judgement, that what Rites and Orders soever the latter Ages thereof have devised, the same must needs be inconvenient? Furthermore, that the Jews before our Saviours coming had any such form of service, although in Scripture it be not affirmed; yet neither is it there denied (for the forbidding of Priests to be present at burials, letteth not but that others might discharge that duty, seeing all were not Priests which had rooms of publick Function in their Synagogues) and if any man be of opinion, that they had no such form of service, thus much there is to make the contrary more probable. The Jews at this day have, as appeareth in their form of Funeral Prayers, and in certain of their Funeral Sermons published; neither are they so affected towards Christians, as to borrow that order from us; besides, that the form thereof is such as hath in it sundry things, which the very words of the Scripture it self do seem to allude unto, as namely, after departure from the Sepulchre unto the house whence the dead was brought, it sheweth the manner of their burial-Feast, and a consolatory form of prayer, appointed for the Master of the Synagogue thereat to utter; albeit I may not deny, but it hath also some things which are not perhaps so ancient as the Law and the Prophets. But whatsoever the Jews custome was before the days of our Saviour Christ, hath it once at any time been heard of, that either Church or Christian man of sound belief did ever judge this a thing unmeet, undecent, unfit for Christianity, till these miserable days, wherein under the colour of removing superstitious abuses, the most effectual means, both to reitifie and to strengthen true Religion, are plucked at, and in some places even pulled up by the very roots? Take away this which was ordained to shew at Burials. the peculiar hope of the Church of God concerning the dead, and in the manner of those dumb Funerals, what one thing is there whereby the World may perceive we are Christian men?

76. I come now unto that Function which undertaketh the publick Ministry of holy things, according to the Laws of Christian Religion. And because the nature of things consisting, as this doth, in action, is known by the object whereabout they are conversant, and by the end or scope wherunto they are referred, we must know that the object of this Function is both God and Men; God, in that he is publickly worshipped of his Church; and Men, in that they are capable of happiness, by means which Christian Discipline appointeth. So that the summe of our whole labour in this kind, is to honour God, and to save men. For whether we severally take, and consider men one by one, or else gather them into one society and body, as it hath been before declared, that every mans Religion is in him the Well-spring of all other sound and sincere vertues, from whence both here in some sort, and hereafter more abundantly, their full joy and felicity ariseth, because while they live, they are blessed of God, and when they dye, their works follow them: So at this present we must again call to mind how the very wordly peace and prosperity, the secular happiness, the temporal and natural good estate both of all Men, and of all Dominions, hangeth chiefly upon Religion, and doth evermore give plain testimony, that as well in this as in other considerations the Priest is a pillar of that Common-wealth, wherein he faithfully serveth God. For if these Assertions be true, first, that nothing can be enjoyed in this present world against his will which hath made all things: secondly, that albeit God doth sometime permit the impious to have, yet impiety permiteth them not to enjoy, no nor temporal blessings on earth: thirdly, that God hath appointed those blessings to attend as Hand-maids upon Religion: and fourthly, that without the work of the Ministry, Religion by no means can possibly continue, the use and benefit of that sacred Function, even towards all mens wordly happiness, must needs be granted. Now the first being a Theoreme both understood and confest of all, to labour in proof thereof were superfluous. The second perhaps may be called in question, except it be perfectly understood. By good things temporal therefore we mean length of days, health of body, store of friends and well-willers, quietness, prosperous success of those things we take in hand; riches with fit opportunities to use them during life, reputation following us both alive and dead, children, or such as instead of children, we wish to leave Successors and Partakers of our happiness. These things are naturally every mans desire, because they are good. And on whom God bestoweth the same, them we confest he graciously blesteth. Of earthly blessings the meanest is wealth, reputation the chiefest. For which cause we esteem the gain of honour an ample recompence for the loss of all other worldly benefices. But for as much as in all this there is no certain perpetuity of goodness, nature hath taught to affect these things, not for their own sake, but with reference and relation to somewhat independantly good, as is the exercise of vertue and speculation of truth. None, whose desires are rightly ordered, would wish to live, to breathe, and move, without performance of those actions which are becoming mens excellency. Wherefore having not how to employ it, we wax weary even of life it self. Health is precious, because sickness doth breed that pain which disableth action. Again, why do men delight so much in the multitude of friends, but for that the actions of life being many, do need many helping hands to further them? Between troublesome and quiet days we would make no difference, if the one did not hinder and interrupt, the other uphold our liberty of action. Furthermore, if those things we do, succeed, it rejoyceth us not so much for the benefit we thereby reap, as in that it probably argueth our actions to have been orderly and well guided. As for riches, to him which hath and doth nothing with them, they are a contumely. Honour is commonly presumed a sign of more then ordinary vertue and merit, by means whereof when ambitious minds thirst after it, their endeavours are testimonies how much it is in the eye of nature to possess that body, the very shadow whereof is set at so high a rate. Finally, such is the pleasure and comfort which we take in doing, that when life forsaketh us, still our desires to continue action, and to work, though not by our selves, yet by them whom we leave behind us, causeth us providently to resign into other mens hands, the helps we have gathered for that purpose, devising also the best we can to make them perpetual. It appeareth therefore,

Of the nature of that Ministry, which serveth for performance of divine duties in the Church of God, and how happiness, not eternal only, but also temporal, doth depend upon it.

a Si creatura Dei, merito & dispensatione Dei sumus: Quis enim magis diligit, quam ille qui fecit? Quis autem ordinatus regis quam à qui & fecit & diligit? Quis vero sepe spectatur & sepe ordinatur & regere solent, quam qui & facienda providit, & prouisa perficit? Quapropter omnem potestatem à Deo esse omnemque ordinationem, & qui non legimus sensimus, & qui legimus cognoscimus. Paul. O. rof. Hist. aduers. Pagan. lib. 2. ΟΥΤΟΙ ΤΑ ΧΡΗΜΑΤ' ΙΔΙΑ ΚΑΛΗΣΑΙ ΒΕΒΟΤΟΙ ΤΑ ΘΕΙ' ΙΝ ΑΥ' Δ' ΥΧΟΥΝΤΕΣ ΕΠΙΜΑΧΕΙΣ ΔΕ. Eurip. Phœniz. b ΟΥΚ ΕΝΔΕΙΧΕΤΑΙ ΤΟ ΕΥΤΥΧΕΙΝ ΤΗ ΜΕΛΕΙ ΤΗ ΓΑΡΧΗ ΝΑΝΟΣ. Eurip. Heracles fore,



fore, how all the parts of temporal felicity are only good in relation to that which useth them as instruments, and that they are no such good as wherein a right desire doth ever stay or rest it self. Now temporal blessings are enjoyed of those which have them, know them, esteem them according to that they are in their own nature. Wherefore of the wicked whom God doth hate, his usual and ordinary speeches are, That blood-thirsty and deceitful men shall not live out half their days; that God shall cause a pestilence to cleave unto the wicked, and shall strike them with consuming grief, with Fevers, burning diseases and sores which are past cure; that when the impious are fallen, all men shall tread them down, and none shew countenance of love towards them, as much as by pitying them in their misery; that the sins of the ungodly shall bereave them of peace; that all counsels, complots, and practices against God shall come to nothing; that the lot and inheritance of the unjust is beggary; that the name of unrighteous persons shall putrify, and the posterity of Robbers starve. If any think that Iniquity and Peace, Sin and Prosperity can dwell together, they erre, because they distinguish not aright between the matter, and that which giveth it the form of happiness, between possession and fruition, between the having and the enjoying of good things. The impious cannot enjoy that they have, partly because they receive it not as at Gods hands, which only consideration maketh temporal blessings comfortable; and partly because through error, placing it above things of far more price and worth, they turn that to poison which might be food, they make their prosperity their own snare, in the nest of their highest growth they lay foolishly those Egges, out of which their woful over-throw is afterwards hatcht. Hereby it cometh to pass, that wise and judicious men observing the vain behaviours of such as are risen to unwonted greatness, have thereby been able to prognosticate their ruine. So that in very truth no impious or wicked man doth prosper on earth, but either sooner or later the world may perceive easily, how at such time as others thought them most fortunate, they had but only the good estate which fat Oxen have above lean; when they appeared to grow, their climbing was towards ruine. The grofs and bestial conceit of them which want understanding, is only, that the fullest bellies are happiest. Therefore the greatest felicity they wish to the Common-wealth wherein they live, is that it may but abound and stand, that they which are riotous may have to pour out wihoot stint; that the poor may sleep and the rich feed them; that nothing unpleasant may be commanded, nothing forbidden men which themselves have a lutt to follow; that Kings may provide for the ease of their Subjects, and not be too curious about their manners; that wantonness, excess, and lewdness of life may be left free, and that no fault may be capital, besides dislike of things settled in so good terms. But be it far from the just to dwell either in or neer to the Tents of these so miserable felicities. Now whereas we thirdly affirm, that Religion and the Fear of God, as well induceth secular prosperity as everlasting blis in the world to come, this also is true. For otherwise godliness could not be said to have the promises of both lives, to be that ample Revenue, wherein there is always sufficiency, and to carry with it a general discharge of want, even so general, that David himself should protest, he never saw the just forsaken. Howbeit to this we must adde certain special limitations; as first, that we do not forget how crazed and diseased minds (whereof our heavenly Physitian must judge) receive oftentimes most benefit by being deprived of those things which are to others beneficially given, as appeareth in that which the Wise-man hath noted concerning them whose lives God mercifully doth abridge, lest wickedness should alter their understanding; again, that the measure of our outward prosperity be taken by proportion with that which every mans estate in this present life requireth. External abilities are instruments of action. It contenteth wise Artificers to have their instruments proportionable to their work, rather fit for use, than huge and goodly to please the eye: Seeing then the actions of a servant do not need that which may be necessary for men of calling and place in the world, neither men of inferiour condition many things which greater Personages can hardly want, surely they are blessed in worldly respects, that have wherewith to perform sufficiently what their station and place asketh, though they have no more. For by reason of mans imbecillity and proneness

Psal. 55. 23.

Dem. 28. 21.

Prov. 10.

Prov. 16. 18.

Antennam  
clausa.

οὐκ ἔστι δὲ θεὸς  
οὐδὲ τὰ ἄλλα  
ἐκ τούτων καὶ  
οὐδὲν ἢ γὰρ  
ἡ ἐξ οὐρανόθεν  
ἐλθὼν μὴ καὶ ἡ  
ἐκ τούτων. Hiero-  
dor. lib. 7.

αὐτὸν τὸν  
ἀρχὸν ἡμεῶν  
τοῖς καὶ οὐρα-  
νοῦ. Euseb.  
Phoenic.

proneſſe to elation of mind, \* too high a flow of proſperity is dangerous, too low an ebbe again as dangerous; for that the vertue of patience is rare, and the hand of neceſſity ſtronger, than ordinary vertue is able to withſtand; *Solomons* diſcreet and moderate deſire we all know: *Give me, O Lord, neither riches nor penury.* Men over-high exalted either in honour, or in power, or in nobility, or in wealth; they likewiſe that are much on the contrary hand ſunk either with beggery, or through dejection, or by baſeneſs, do not eaſily give ear to reaſon, but the one exceeding apt unto outrages, and the other to petty miſchiefs. For greatneſs delighteth to ſhew it ſelf by effects of power, and baſeneſs to help it ſelf with ſhifts of malice. For which cauſe, a moderate, indifferent temper, between fullneſs of bread, and emptineſs hath been evermore thought and found (all circumſtances duly conſidered) the ſafeſt and happieſt for all Eſtates, even for King and Princes themſelves. Again, we are not to look, that theſe things ſhould always concur, no not in them which are accounted happy, neither that the courſe of mens lives, or of publick affairs ſhould continually be drawn out as an even thred (for that the nature of things will not ſuffer) but a juſt ſurvey being made, as thoſe particular men are worthily reputed good, whoſe vertues be great, and their faules tolerable, ſo him we may register for a man fortunate, and that for a proſperous or happy State, which having flouriſhed, doth not afterwards feel any tragical alteration, ſuch as might cauſe them to be a ſpectacle of miſery to others. Beſides, whereas true felicity conſiſteth in the higheſt operations of that nobler part of man, which ſheweth ſometime greateſt perfection, not in uſing the benefits which delight nature, but in ſuffering what nature can hardieſt indure, there is no cauſe why either the loſs of good, if it tend to the purchaſe of better, or why any miſery, the iſſue whereof, is their greateſt praiſe and honor that have ſuſtained it, ſhould be thought to impeach that temporal happineſs, where-with Religion, we ſay, is accompanied, but yet in ſuch meaſure, as the ſeveral degrees of men may require by a competent eſtimation, and unleſs the contrary do more advance, as it hath done thoſe moſt Heroical Saints, whom afflictions have made glorious. In a word, not to whom no calamity falleth, but whom neither miſery nor proſperity is able to move from a right mind, them we may truly pronounce fortunate, and whatſoever doth outwardly happen without that precedent improbixie, for w<sup>ch</sup> it appeareth in the eyes of ſound and impartial Judges to have proceeded from Divine revenge, it paſſeth in the number of humane casualties whereunto we are all alike ſubject. No miſery is reckoned more then common or humane, if God ſo diſpoſe that we paſſe thorow it, and come ſafe to ſhore, even as contrariwiſe, men do not uſe to think thoſe flouriſhing days happy, which do end in tears. It ſtanderth therefore with theſe cautions firm and true, yea, ratified by all mens unfained confeſſions drawn from the very heart of experience, that whether we compare men of note in the world with others of like degree and ſtate, or elſe the ſame men with themſelves, whether we confer one Dominion with another, or elſe the different times of one and the ſame Dominion, the manifeſt odds between their very outward condition, as long as they ſtedfaſtly were obſerved to honour God, and their ſucceſs being ſaln from him, are remonſtrances more then ſufficient, how all our welfare even on earth dependeth wholly upon our Religion. Heathens were ignorant of true Religion. Yet ſuch as that little was which they knew, it much impaired, or bettered their worldly affairs, as their love and zeal towards it did wain or grow. Of the Jews, did not even their moſt malicious and mortal Adverſaries all acknowledge, that to ſtrive againſt them, it was in vain, as long as their amity with God continued, that nothing could weaken them but Apoſtaſie? In the whole courſe of their own proceedings, did they ever find it otherwiſe, but that during their faith and fidelity towards God, every man of them was in war as a thouſand ſtrong, and as much as a grand Senate for counſel in peaceable deliberations; contrariwiſe that if they ſwarved, as they did often, their wonted courage and magnanimity forſook them utterly, their Souldiers and Military men trembled at the ſight of the naked ſword; when they entered into mutual conference, and ſate in counſel for their own good, that which children might have ſeen, their graveſt Senators could not diſcern; their Prophets ſaw darkneſs inſtead of Viſions; the wiſe and prudent were as men bewicht, even that which they knew (being ſuch as might ſtand them in ſtead) they had not the

α ταντοτις  
δ λογισμὸς ἵ-  
σως ἀλλ' ἐν  
ἀπαλατιῶν,  
ἰσὺν ἀπαχύν  
ἐν ἵσως κ' ἡδύ-  
ματ' ὁ Γρεγ.  
Naz. Apol. 3.  
They may ſeem  
haply the moſt  
deſect, but they  
are the wiſeſt  
for their own  
ſafety, which  
ſear clyming;  
no leſs then  
falling.  
Ariſt. Polit.  
lib. 4. cap. 11:

grace to utter, or if any thing were well proposed, it took no place, it entered not into the minds of the rest to approve and follow it, but as men confounded with strange and unusual amazements of Spirit, they attempted tumultuously they saw not what; and by the issues of all attempts, they found no certain conclusion but this, *God and Heaven are strong against us in all we do.* The cause whereof was secret fear, which took heart and courage from them, and the cause of their fear, an inward guiltiness that they all had offered God such apparent wrongs as were not pardonable. But it may be, the case is altogether changed, and that in Christian Religion there is not like force towards temporal felicity. Search the ancient Records of time, look what hath happened by the space of these sixteen hundred years, see if all things to this effect be not luculent and clear, yea, all things so manifest, that for evidence and proof herein, we need not by uncertain dark conjectures surmise any to have been plagued of God for contempt, or blest in the course of faithful obedience towards true Religion, more then only them, whom we find in that respect on the one side, guilty by their own confessions, and happy on the other side by all mens acknowledgment, who beholding the prosperous estate of such as are good and vertuous, impute boldly the same to Gods most especial favour, but cannot in like manner pronounce, that whom he afflicteth above others, with them he hath cause to be more offended. For Vertue is always plain to be seen, rareness causeth it to be observed, and goodness to be honoured with admiration. As for iniquity and sin, it lieth many times hid, and because we be all offenders, it becometh us not to incline towards hard and severe sentences touching others, unless their notorious wickedness did sensibly before proclaim that which afterwards came to pass. Wherefore the sum of every Christian mans duty is, to labour by all means towards that which other men seeing in us may justifie; and what we our selves must accuse, if we fall into it, that by all means we can, to avoid, considering especially, that as hitherto upon the Church there never yet fell tempestuous storm, the vapours whereof were not first noted to rise from coldness in affection, and from backwardness in duties of service towards God; so if that which the tears of Antiquity have uttered concerning this point should be here set down, it were assuredly enough to soften and to mollifie a heart of Steel. On the contrary part, although we confess with Saint *Augustine* most willingly, that the chiefest happiness for which we have some Christian Kings in so great admiration above the rest, is not because of their long Raign; their calm and quiet departure out of this present life; the settled establishment of their own flesh and blood, succeeding them in Royaltie and power; the glorious overthrow of forraign enemies, or the wise prevention of inward danger, and of secret attempts at home; all which solaces and comforts of this our unquiet life, it pleaseth God oftentimes to bestow on them which have no society or part in the joys of Heaven, giving thereby to understand, that these in comparison are toys and trifles far under the value and price of that which is to be looked for at his hands: but in truth the reason wherefore we most extoll their felicity, is, if so be they have virtuously reigned, if honour have not filled their hearts with pride, if the exercise of their power have been service and attendance upon the Majesty of the most High, if they have feared him as their own inferiours and subjects have feared them, if they have loved neither pomp nor pleasure more than Heaven, if revenge have slowly proceeded from them, and mercy willingly offered it self, if so they have tempered rigour with lenity, that neither extream severity might utterly cut them off in whom there was manifest hope of amendment, nor yet the easiness of pardoning offences imbolden offenders, if knowing that whatsoever they do, their potency may bear it out, they have been so much the more careful not to do any thing but that which is commendable in the best, rather than usual with greatest personages, if the true knowledge of themselves have humbled them in Gods sight, no less than God in the eyes of men hath raised them up; I say, albeit we reckon such to be the happiest of them that are mightiest in the world, and albeit those things alone are happiness, nevertheless, considering what force there is even in outward blessings, to comfort the minds of the best disposed, and to give them the greater joy, when Religion and Peace, Heavenly and Earthly happiness are wreathed in one Crown, as to the

worthiest



worthiest of Christian Princes it hath by the providence of the Almighty hitherto befallen, let it not seem unto any man a needless and superfluous waste of labour, that there hath been thus much spoken, to declare how in them especially it hath been so observed, and withall universally noted even from the highest to the very meanest, how this peculiar benefit, this singular grace and preeminence Religion hath, that either it guardeth as an heavenly shield from all calamities, or else conducteth us safe through them, and permitte them not to be miseries; it either giveth honours, promotions, and wealth, or else more benefit by wanting them than if we had them at will; it either filleth our houses with plenty of all good things, or maketh a Sallad of green herbs more sweet than all the sacrifices of the ungodly. Our fourth Proposition before set down was, that Religion without the help of spiritual Ministry is unable to plant it self, the fruits thereof not possible to grow of their own accord. Which last Assertion is herein as the first, that it needeth no farther confirmation. If it did, I could easily declare, how all things which are of God, be hith by wonderful art and wisdom ordered, as it were, together with the glue of mutual assistance, appointing the lowest to receive from the nearest to themselves, what the influence of the highest yieldeth. And therefore the Church being the most absolute of all his works, was in reason to be also ordered with like harmony, that what he worketh, might no less in grace than in nature be effected by hands and instruments duly subordinated unto the power of his own Spirit. A thing both needful for the humiliation of man, which would not willingly be debtor to any, but to himself, and of no small effect to nourish that divine love, which now maketh each embrace other, not as Men, but as Angels of God. Ministerial actions tending immediately unto Gods honour, and mans happiness, are either as contemplation, which helpeth forward the principal work of the Ministry, or else they are parts of that principal work of administration it self, which work consisteth in doing the service of Gods house, and in applying unto men the sovereign medicines of grace already spoken of the more largely, to the end it might thereby appear, that we owe to the guides of our souls even as much as our souls are worth, although the debt of our temporal blessings should be stricken off.

77. The Ministry of things divine is a function, which as God did himself institute, so neither may men undertake the same but by authority and power given them in lawful manner. That God which is no way deficient or wanting unto Man in necessities, and hath therefore given us the light of his heavenly Truth, because without that inestimable benefit we must needs have wandered in darkness, to our endless perdition and woe, hath in the like abundance of mercies ordained certain to attend upon the due execution of requisite parts and offices therein prescribed for the good of the whole world, which men, thereunto assigned, do hold their authority from him, whether they be such as himself immediately, or as the Church in his name investeth, it being neither possible for all, nor for every man without distinction convenient to take upon him a charge of so great importance. They are therefore Ministers of God, not only by way of subordination as Princes and civil Magistrates, whose execution of judgement and justice, the supreme hand of divine providence doth uphold, but Ministers of God, as from whom their authority is derived, and not from men. For in that they are Christs Embassadors and his Labourers, who should give them their Commission, but he whose most inward affairs they manage? Is not God alone the Father of Spirits? Are not souls the purchase of Jesus Christ? What Angel in Heaven could have said to man, as our Lord did unto Peter, *Feed my sheep? Preach? Baptize? Do this in remembrance of me? Whose sins ye retain, they are retained, and their offences in Heaven pardoned, whose faults ye shall on earth forgive?* What think we? Are these retritral sounds, or else are they voices uttered out of the clouds above? The power of the Ministry of God translateth out of darkness into glory; it raiseth men from the earth, and bringeth God himself down from Heaven; by blessing visible Elements it maketh them invisible grace; it giveth daily the Holy Ghost, it hath to dispose of that flesh which was given for the life of the World, and that blood which was poured out to redeem souls; when it poureth malediction upon the heads of the wicked, they perish; when it revoketh the same, they revive.

Luke 12.48.  
1 Cor. 4.1.  
Tit. 1. 7.  
1 Pet. 4.10.  
Ephes. 3.2.  
ἡ ἐξουσία  
ἡ τοῦ πνεύματος  
ἀποφ. Epist. ad  
Philem.

Of power given unto man to execute that heavenly Office; of the gift of the Holy Ghost in Ordination; and whether conveniently the power of Order may be sought or sued for.

Tertul. de Ad-  
hort. Castit.

Heb. 2. 17.

Matth. 19.

a In 12. submis-  
sionem est, ut  
idem juris esset  
sanantibus quod  
foribus, id est,  
bonis et qui  
nunquam defe-  
cerunt à populo  
Romano. Fest.  
in ver. Samni-  
tes.  
b Ruffin. Hist.  
Ecclesiast. lib. 28.

O wretched blindness, if we admire not so great power, more wretched if we consider it aright, and notwithstanding, imagine that any but God can bestow it. To whom Christ hath imparted power, both over that mystical Body which is the society of souls, and over that natural, which is himself for the knitting of both in one, (a work which antiquity doth call the making of Christs Body) the same power is in such not amiss both termed a kind of mark or Character, and acknowledged to be indelible. Ministerial power is a mark of separation, because it severeth them that have it from other men, and maketh them a special order consecrated unto the service of the most High, in things wherewith others may not meddle. Their difference therefore from other men, is in that they are a distinct order. So Tertullian calleth them. And Saint Paul himself dividing the body of the Church of Christ into two Moieties, nameth the one part *Isidras*, which is as much as to say, the order of the Laity, the opposite part whereunto we in like sort term the order of Gods Clergy, and the spiritual power which he hath given them, the power of their order, so far forth as the same consisteth in the bare execution of holy things, called properly the affairs of God. For of the Power of their jurisdiction over mens persons we are to speak in the books following. They which have once received this power, may not think to put it off, and on, like a Cloke, as the weather serveth, to take it, reject and resume it as oft as themselves list, of which prophane and impious contempt these latter times have yielded, as of all other kinds of iniquity and Apostasie, strange examples; but let them know which put their hands unto this Plough, that once consecrated unto God, they are made his peculiar inheritance for ever. Suspensions may stop, and degradations utter y cut off the use or exercise of power before given; but voluntarily it is not in the power of man to separate and pull asunder what God by his authority coupleth. So that although there may be through misdesert degradation, as there may be cause of just separation after Matrimony; yet if (as sometime it doth) restitution to former dignity, or reconciliation after breach doth happen, neither doth the one nor the other ever iterate the first knot. Much less is it necessary, which some have urged, concerning the reordination of such, as others in times more corrupt did consecrate heretofore. Which etroure already que'd by St. Jerome, doth not now require any other refutation. Examples I grant there are which make for restraint of those men from admittance again into rooms of spiritual function, whose fall by heresie, or want of constancy in professing the Christian Faith, hath been once a disgrace to their calling. Nevertheless, as there is no Law which bindeth, so there is no cause that should always lead to shew one and the same severity towards persons culpable. Goodness of nature it self more inclineth to clemency than rigour. And we in other mens offences do behold the plain image of our own imbecility. Besides also them that wander out of the way, it cannot be unexpedient to win with all hopes of favour, lest strictness used towards such as reclaim themselves should make others more obstinate in error. Wherefore after that the Church of Alexandria had somewhat recovered it self from the tempests and storms of Arrianisme, being in consultation about the re-establishment of that which by long disturbance had been greatly decayed and hindered, the severer sort gave quick sentence, that touching them which were of the Clergy, and had stained themselves with heresie, there should be none so received into the Church again, as to continue in the order of the Clergy. The rest which considered how many mens cases it did concern, thought it much more safe and consonant to bend somewhat down towards them which were fallen, to shew severity upon a few of the chiefeit leaders, and to offer to the rest a friendly reconciliation, without any other demand saving only the abjuration of their error; as in the Gospel that wailfull young man which returned home to his Fathers house, was with joy admitted and honoured, his elder brother hardly thought of for repining thereat, neither commended so much for his own fidelity and vertue, as blamed for not embracing him freely, whose unexpected recovery ought to have blotted out all remembrance of mis-demeanors and faults past. But of this sufficient. A thing much stumbled at in the manner of giving Orders, is our using those memorable words of our Lord and Saviour Christ, *Receive the Holy Ghost*. The Holy Ghost they say we cannot give, and

and therefore we <sup>a</sup> foolishly bid men receive it. Wise men for their authorities sake a <sup>quidam ritus,</sup> must have leave to befool them whom they are able to make wise by better in <sup>autē quidem</sup> struction. Notwithstanding, if it may please their wisdom as well to hear what <sup>ab illis q̄r finis</sup> fools can say, as to control that which they do, thus we have heard some wise men <sup>illo Scriptura</sup> teach, namely, That the <sup>b</sup> holy Ghost may be used to signifie not the person alone, <sup>fundamento in-</sup> but the gifts of the holy Ghost, and we know that spiritual gifts are not only abilities <sup>strum ex a</sup> to do things miraculous, as to speak with tongues which were never taught us, to <sup>disciplina no-</sup> cure diseases without art, and such like; but also that the very authority and pow- <sup>stra autoribus</sup> er which is given men in the Church to be Ministers of holy things, this is contain- <sup>(pace illorum</sup> ed within the number of those gifts whereof the holy Ghost is author, and therefore <sup>dixerim) non</sup> he which giveth this power may say without absurdity or folly, <sup>magna primum</sup> *Receive the holy Ghost*, such power as the Spirit of Christ hath indued his Church withal, such pow- <sup>minore aduc-</sup> er as neither Prince nor Potentate, King nor *Cesar* on earth can give. So that if <sup>in Ecclesia no-</sup> men alone had devised this form of speech, thereby to express the heavenly well- <sup>stra retineatur.</sup> spring of that power which Ecclesiastical Ordinations do bestow, it is not to fool- <sup>Ecclesiast. dis-</sup> ish but that wise men might bear with it. If then our Lord and Saviour himself <sup>cip. p. 53.</sup> have used the self-same form of words, and that in the self-same kind of action, <sup>b Eccles. discip.</sup> although there be but the least shew of probability, yea, or any possibility, that his <sup>fol. 52. p. 1. 18.</sup> meaning might be the same which ours is, it should teach sober and grave men not to be too venturous in condemning that of folly, which is not impossible to have in it more profoundness of wisdom than flesh and blood should presume to control. Our Saviour after his resurrection from the dead gave his Apostles their Commiſſion, saying; *All power is given me in Heaven and in Earth: Go therefore and* <sup>Matth. 28. 18.</sup> *teach all Nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and the Son, and the ho- ly Ghost, teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I command you. In summe,* *As my Father sent me, so send I you.* Whereunto St. John doth adde farther, that <sup>John. 20. 21.</sup> *having thus spoken, he breathed on them and said, Receive the holy Ghost.* By which words he putteth likelyhood understand some gift of the Spirit which was present'y at that time bestowed upon them, as both the speech of actual delivery in saying *Receive*, and the visible signe thereof, his breathing did shew. Absurd it were to imagine our Saviour did both to the ear and also to the very eye express a real donation, and they at that time receive nothing. It resteth then that we search what special grace they did at that time receive. Touching miraculous power of the Spirit, most apparent it is, that as then they received it not, but the promise thereof was to be shortly after performed. The words of Saint Luke concerning that power, are therefore set down with signification of the time to come, <sup>Luke 24. 47.</sup> *Behold I will send the promise of my Father upon you, but tarry you in the City of Jeru- salem, until ye be indued with power from on high.* Wherefore, undoubtedly, it was some other effect of the Spirit, the holy Ghost in some other kind which our Saviour did then bestow. What other likelier than that which himself doth mention, as it should seem of purpose to take away all ambiguous constructions, and to declare that the holy Ghost, which he then gave, was an ho'y and a ghostly authority, authority over the souls of men, authority, a part whereof consisteth in power to remit and retain sins? *Receive the ho'y Ghost, Whose sins soever ye remit,* <sup>John 20. 23.</sup> *they are remitted; whose sins ye retain, they are retained.* Whereas therefore the other Evangelists had set down, that Christ did before his suffering promise to give his Apostles the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, and being risen from the dead, promised moreover at that time a miraculous power of the holy Ghost: Saint John addeth, that he also invested them even then with the power of the holy Ghost for castigation and relaxation of sin, wherein was fully accomplished that which the promise of the Keys did import. Seeing therefore that the same power is now given, why should the same form of words expressing it be thought foolish? The cause why we breath not as Christ did on them unto whom he imparted power, is, for that neither Spirit nor spiritual authority may be thought to proceed from us, which are but delegates or assignes to give men possession of his graces. Now besides that the power and authority delivered with those words is it self *χαρισμα*, a gracious donation which the Spirit of God doth bestow, we may most assuredly per- swade our selves, that the hand which imposeth upon us the function of our



a Et si necessarium est tropidare de merito, religioſum eſt tamen gaudere de donis: quoniā qui mihi oneris eſt avar. iſpe ſciſ adminiſtratione adiutor; eo ne magnitudine grata ſumunt abſtinentiae, dabit virtutem qui conſultis dignitate. Leo. ſer. 1. in Anniver. ſi A. rē orōvūm. rē āvior vbeio ſūm; iſe tūū duxvūv tāvrvūv. Greg. N. iſan. Num. 11. 17. Auctor. libel. diſcipl. Eccleſiaſt.

Ministry, doth under the same form of words to tie it self thereunto, that he which receiveth the burthen, is thereby for ever warranted to have the Spirit with him, and in him for his assistance, aid, countenance and support in whatsoever he faithfully doth to discharge duty. Knowing therefore that when we take Ordination, we also receive the presence of the holy Ghost, partly to guide, direct, and strengthen us in all our ways, and partly to assume unto it self for the more authority, those actions that appertain to our place and calling, can our ears admit such a speech uttered in the reverend performance of that solemnity; or can we at any time renew the memory, and enter into serious cogitation thereof, but with much admiration and joy? Remove what these foolish words do imply, and what hath the Ministry of God besides wherein to glory? Whereas now so far as the holy Ghost, which our Saviour in his first Ordinations gave, doth not less concur with spiritual vocations throughout all ages, than the Spirit which God derived from Moses to them that assisted him in his government, did descend from them to their successors in like authority and place, we have for the least and meanest duties performed by virtue of Ministerial power, that, to dignifie, grace, and authorize them, which no other offices on earth can challenge. Whether we Preach, Pray, Baptize, Communicate, Condemn, give Absolution, or whatsoever, as disposers of Gods mysteries; our words, judgments, acts, and deeds, are not ours but the holy Ghosts. Enough if unfeignedly and in heart we did believe it, enough to banish whatsoever may justly be thought corrupt, either in bestowing, or in using, or in esteeming the same otherwise than is meet. For prophanely to bestow, or loosely to use, or vilely to esteem of the holy Ghost, we in all shew and profession abhor. Now because the Ministry is an office of dignity and honour; some are doubtful whether any man may seek for it without offence, or to speak more properly, doubtful they are not, but rather bold to accuse our Discipline in this respect, as not only permitting, but requiring ambitious suits and other oblique ways or means whereby to obtain it. Against this they plead, that our Saviour did stay till his Father sent him, and the Apostles till he them; that the ancient Bishops in the Church of Christ were examples and patterns of the same modesty. Whereupon in the end they infer, *Let us therefore at the length amend that custome of repairing from all parts unto the Bishop at the day of Ordination, and of seeking to obtain Orders; let the custome of bringing commendatory Letters be removed; let men keep themselves at home, expecting there the voice of God, and the authority of such as may call them to undertake charge.* Thus feverently they censure and control ambition, if it be ambition which they take upon them to reprehend. For of that there is cause to doubt. Ambition, as we understand it, hath been accounted a vice which seeketh after honours inordinately. Ambitious minds esteeming it their greatest happiness to be admired, revered, and adored above others, use all means lawful and unlawful which may bring them to high rooms. But as for the power of order considered by it self, and as in this case it must be considered, such reputation it hath in the eye of this present World, that they which affect it, rather need encouragement to bear contempt, than deserve blame as men that carry aspiring minds. The work whereunto this power serveth is commended, and the desire thereof allowed by the Apostle for good. Nevertheless because the burthen thereof is heavy, and the charge great, it cometh many times to pass, that the minds even of virtuous men are drawn into clean contrary affections, some in humility declining that by reason of hardness, which others in regard of goodness only do with fervent alacrity cover. So that there is not the least degree in this service, but it may be both in reverence shunned, and of very devotion longed for. If then the desire thereof may be holy, religious, and good, may not the profession of that desire be so likewise? We are not to think it so long good as it is dissembled, & evil if once we begin to open it. And allowing that it may be opened without ambition, what offence, I beseech you, is there in opening it, there where it may be furthered and satisfied, in case they to whom it appertaineth think meet?

1 Tim. 2. 1.

b ὅτ' παλαι-  
ων τούτων ἐνδο-  
κημιαῖατος ἀ-  
νεκότην ἐν-  
είσκειν ὅπως  
πάντοτε εἰς  
ἐπιταγείαν ἢ  
προμήτειαν ἢ  
χάριν προβάλλ-  
ῃτε ἢ ὑποχω-  
ρῇτε ἀποβῆται.

In vain are those desires allowed, the accomplishment whereof it is not lawful for men to seek. Power therefore of Ecclesiastical order may be desired, the desire thereof may be professed, they which profess themselves that way inclined, may endeavour to bring their desires to effect, and in all this no necessity of evil. Is it the bringing of testimonial Letters wherein so great obliquity consisteth? What more simple, more plain, more harmless, more agreeable with the law of common humanity, then that men where they are not known, use for their easier access the credit of such as can best give testimony of them? Letters of any other construction our Church-Discipline alloweth not, and these to allow, is neither to require ambitious suings, nor to approve any indirect or unlawful act. The Prophet *Esay* receiving his message at the hands of God, and his charge by heavenly vision, heard the voice of the Lord, saying, *Whom shall I send? Who shall go for us?* Whereunto he recordeth his own answer, *Then I said, Here Lord I am, send me.* Which in effect is the Rule and Canon whereby touching this point the very order of the Church is framed. Esay 6. 8.

The appointment of times for solemn ordination, is but the publick demand of the Church in the name of the Lord himself, *Whom shall I send, Who shall go for us?* The confluence of men, whose inclinations are bent that way, is but the answer thereunto, whereby the labours of sundry being offered, the Church hath freedom to take whom her agents in such case think meet and requisite. As for the example of our Saviour Christ who took not to himself this honour to be made our high Priest, but received the same from him which said; *Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec*, his waiting, and not attempting to execute the office till God saw convenient time, may serve in reproof of usurped honours, for as much as we ought not of our own accord to assume dignities, whereunto we are not called as Christ was. But yet it should be withal considered, that a proud usurpation without any orderly calling is one thing, and another the bare declaration of willingness to obtain admittance; which willingness of mind, I suppose, did not want in him whose answer was to the voice of his heavenly calling, *Behold I am come to do thy will.* And had it been for him, as it is for us, expedient to receive his commission signed with the hands of men, to seek it, might better have beseeemed his humility, then it doth our boldness, to reprehend them of Pride and Ambition, that make no worse kind of sures then by letters of information. Himself in calling his Apostles prevented all cogitations of theirs that way, to the end it might truly be said of them, *Ye chose not me, but I of mine own voluntary motion made choice of you.* Which kind of undesired nomination to Ecclesiastical places befell divers of the most famous amongst the ancient Fathers of the Church in a clean contrary consideration. For our Saviours election respected not any merit or worth, but took them which were farthest off from likelihood of fitness: that afterwards their supernatural ability and performance, beyond hope, might cause the greater admiration; whereas in the other, meer admiration of their singular and rare virtues was the reason why honours were enforced upon them, which they of meekness and modesty did what they could to avoid. But did they ever judge it a thing unlawful to wish or desire the office, the only charge and bare Function of the Ministry? Towards which labour, what doth the blessed Apostle else but encourage, saying, *He which desireth it, is desirous of a good work?* What doth he else by such sentences but stir, kindle and inflame ambition, if I may term that desire ambition, which coveteth more to testify love by painfulness in Gods service, than to reap any other benefit? Although of the very honour it self, and of other emoluments annexed to such labours, for more encouragement of mans industry, we are not so to conceive neither, as if no affection could be cast towards them without offence. Only as the Wiseman giveth counsel: *Seek not to be made a Judge, lest thou be not able to take away iniquity, and lest thou fearing the person of the mighty, shouldst commit an offence against thine uprightness;* so it always becometh men to take good heed, lest affection to that, which hath in it as well difficulty as goodness, sophisticate the true and sincere judgement which before-hand they ought to have of their own ability, for want whereof, many forward minds have found in stead of contentment repentance. But for as much as hardness of things in themselves most excellent cooleth the

the tervency of mens desires, unless there be somewhat naturally acceptable to incite labour (for both the method of speculative knowledge doth by things which we sensibly perceive: conduct to that which is in nature more certain though less sensible, and the method of vertuous actions is also to train beginners at the first by things acceptable unto the taste of natural appetite, till our minds at the length be settled to embrace things precious in the eye of reason, meerly and wholly for their own sakes) howsoever inordinate desires do hereby take occasion to abuse the Politie of God, and Nature, either affecting without worth, or procuring by unseemly means that which was instituted, and should be reserved for better minds to obtain by more approved courses, in which consideration the Emperours *Anthemius* and *Leo* did worthily oppose against such ambitious practices that ancient and famous Constitution, wherein they have these sentences, *Let not a Prelate be ordained for reward or upon request, who should be so far sequestred from all ambition, that they which advance him might be faine to search where he hideth himself, to entreat him drawing back, and to follow him till importunity have made him yield, let nothing promote him but his excuses to avoid the burthen, they are unworthy of that vocation which are not therunto brought unwillingly; notwithstanding, we ought not therefore with the odious name of ambition, to traduce and draw into hatred every poor request or sute wherein men may seem to affect honour; seeing that ambition and modesty do not always so much differ in the mark they shoot at, as in the manner of their prosecutions. Yea even in this may be error also, if we still imagine them least ambitious, which most so bear to stir either hand or foot towards their own preferments. For there are that make an Idol of their great sufficiency, and because they surmise the place should be happy that might enjoy them, they walk every where like grave Pageants, observing whether men do not wonder why so small account is made of so rare worthiness; and in case any other mans advancement be mentioned, they either smile or blush at the marvellous folly of the world, which seeth not where dignities should offer themselves. Seeing therefore that suites after spiritual Functions may be as ambitiously forborn as prosecuted, it remaineth that the evenest line of moderation between both, is neither to follow them, without conscience; nor of pride, to withdraw ourselves utterly from them.*

α Μίσην ἡμῖ  
τις τῶν τι  
ἄσαν ταλαμῶν  
καὶ τῶν λίαν  
δύων, ἥ ἡμέ  
πάσαι ἐκ  
πυλῶν  
περὶ αὐτῶν  
δουλοῦντες.  
ὅτι δὲ οὐκ ἐν  
τῶν πασῶν  
θεραπεύονται.  
Ge. p. Noxiu.  
Apolog.

Of Degrees,  
whereby the  
power of Or-  
der is dis-  
tinguished; and  
concerning the  
Attire of Mini-  
sters.

b Πρὸς δια-  
κονίαν καὶ φυλα-  
κὴν ἐκείνης καὶ  
ἐκείνης καὶ  
λατρείαν αὐ-  
τῶν τῶν  
θεῶν ἡμῶν ἀνα-  
σῆται.  
Philo. p. 297.

78. It pleaseth Almighty God to chuse to himself, for discharge of the legal Ministry, one only Tribe out of twelve others, the Tribe of *Levi*, not all unto every divine service, but *Aaron* and his sons to one charge & the rest of that sanctified Tribe to another. With what solemnities they were admitted into their Functions, in what manner *Aaron* and his successors the high Priests ascended every Sabbath and festival day, offered, and ministered in the Temple; with what sin-offering once every year they reconciled first themselves and their own house, afterwards the people unto God; how they confessed all the iniquities of the children of *Israel*, laid all their trespasses upon the head of a sacred Goat, and so carried them out of the City; how they purged the holy place from all uncleanness, with what reverence they entered within the Vail, presented themselves before the Mercy-Seat, and consulted with the Oracle of God: What service the other Priests did continually in the Holy Place, how they ministered about the Lamps Morning and Evening; how every Sabbath they placed on the Table of the Lord those twelve loaves with pure Incense, in perpetual remembrance of that mercy which the Fathers, the twelve Tribes had found by the providence of God for their food, when hunger caused them to leave their natural soil, and to seek for sustenance in *Egypt*; how they employed themselves in sacrifice day by day; finally, what offices the Levites discharged, and what duties the rest did execute, it were a labour too long to enter into, if I should collect that which Scriptures and other ancient Records do mention. Besides these, there were indifferently out of all Tribes from time to time some call'd of God as Prophets, fore-shewing them things to come, and giving them counsel in such particulars as they could not be directed in by the Law; some chosen of men to read, study, and interpret the Law of God, as the Sons or Scholars of the old Prophets, in whose room afterwards Scribes and Expounders of the Law succeeded. And because where so great variety is, if there should be equality,



lity, confusion would follow, the Levites were in all their service at the appointment and direction of the Sons of *Aaron*, or Priests, they subject to the principal guides and leaders of their own Order, and they all in obedience under the High Priest. Which difference doth also manifest it self in the very titles, that men for honours sake gave unto them, terming *Aaron* and his Successors, High or Great; the ancients over the companies of Priests, Arch-Priests, Prophets, Fathers; Scribes and Interpreters of the Law, Masters. Touching the Ministry of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the whole body of the Church being divided into Laity and Clergy, the Clergy are either Presbyters or Deacons. I rather term the one sort Presby-

ters than Priests, because in a matter of so small moment I would not willingly offend their ears, to whom the name of Priesthood is odious, though without cause. For as things are distinguished one from another by those true essential forms, which being really and actually in them, do not only give them the very last and highest degree of their natural perfection, but are also the knot, foundation and root whereupon all other inferior perfections depend: so if they that first do impose names, did always understand exactly the nature of the thing which they name, it may be that then by hearing the terms of vulgar speech, we should still be taught what the things themselves most properly are. But because words have so many Artificers by whom they are made, and the things whereunto we apply them are fraught with so many varieties, it is not always apparent what the first Inventors respected, much less what every mans inward conceit is which useth their words. For any thing my self can discern herein, I suppose that they which have bent their study to search more diligently such matters, do for the most part find that names advisedly given, had either regard unto that which is naturally most proper; or if perhaps, to some other speciality, to that which is sensibly most eminent in the thing signified; and concerning popular use of words, that which the wisdom of their Inventors did intend thereby, is not commonly thought of, but by the name the thing altogether conceived in gross, as may appear in that if you ask of the common sort what any certain word, for example, what a Priest doth signifie, their manner is not to answer, a Priest is a Clergy-man which offereth sacrifice to God, but they shew some particular person, whom they use to call by that name. And if we list to descend to Grammar, we are told by Masters in those Schools, that the word *Priest* hath his right place *ἐν τῇ λέξει ἀρχιερεὺς τῶν δαγμάτων* in him whose meer function or charge is the service of God. Howbeit because the most eminent part both of *Heathenish* and *Jewish* service did consist in sacrifice, when learned men declare what the word *Priest* doth properly signifie, according to the mind of the first imposer of that name, their ordinary Schools do well expound it to imply sacrifice. Seeing then that sacrifice is now no part of the Church-Ministry, how should the name of Priesthood be thereunto rightly applied? Surely even as *S. Paul* applyeth the name of *flesh* unto that very substance of fishes which hath a proportionable correspondence to flesh, although it be in nature another thing. Whereupon when Philosophers will speak warily, they make a difference between flesh in one sort of living creatures, and that other substance in the rest which hath but a kind of analogie to flesh: the Apostle contrariwise having matter of great importance whereof to speak, nameth indifferently both flesh. The Fathers of the Church of Christ with like security of speech call usually the Ministry of the Gospel *Priesthood*, in regard of that which the Gospel hath proportionable to ancient sacrifices, namely the Communion of the blessed body and blood of Christ, although it hath properly now no sacrifice. As for the people, when they hear the name, it draweth no more their minds to any cogitation of sacrifice, than the name of a Senator or of an Alderman causeth them to think upon old age, or to imagine that every one so termed must needs be ancient, because years were re-

s. T. C. l. 1. p. 198. For so much as the common and usual speech of England is to note by the word *Priest*, not a Minister of the Gospel, but a *Sacrificer*, which the Minister of the Gospel is not, therefore we ought not to call the Ministers of the Gospel *Priests*. And that this is the English speech, it appears by all the English Translations, which translate always *ἱερεὺς*, which sacrificers, *Priests*, and do not of the other side, for any that ever I read, translate *ἐπισκοπὸς* a *Priest*. Seeing therefore a Priest with us, and in our Tongue, doth signifie both by the Papists Judgement, in respect of their abominable Mass, and also by the Judgement of the Protestants, in respect of the Beast which were offered in the Law, a *sacrificing* Office, which the Minister of the Gospel neither doth nor can execute; it is manifest that it cannot be without great offence so used.

Etymol. mag.

b ἱερεὺς, ἱερὰ ἔργα.  
Hely. Christus  
homo, dicitur,  
quia actum offi-  
Prophecia quia  
sutura revela-  
vit; sacerdos,  
quia pro nobis  
hostiam se obtu-  
lit. Ibid. Orig.  
lib. 7. cap. 2.  
c 1 Cor. 15. 39.  
d Ἐχρησά-  
μεθα τὴν λέξιν  
αὐτῆς τὴν τῶν  
ἀδελφῶν ἀποστό-  
λων, τὴν λέξιν ἡ  
ἐκείνη τὴν τῶν  
ἀποστόλων ἡ δὲ  
ἀριστ. de Anim.  
lib. 2. c. 111.

spected

Esa 66. 21.

a Rev. 4. 4.  
b Rev. 10. 14.  
Mat. 19. 28.  
1 Pet. 5. 1.

c in the Epist.  
Sto. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
revel. 1. 1. 1.  
Dion. 1. 1. 1.  
110.  
A. 1. 1. 1. 1.

Cyp. Ep. 9. 1.  
ad Rogationum

Ignat. Epist.  
ad Tral.

spected in the first nomination of both. Wherefore to pass by the name, let them use what daeth they will, whether we call it a Priesthood, a Presbytership, or a Ministry, it skilleth not: Although in truth the word *Presbyter* doth seem more fit, and in propriety of speech more agreeable then *Priest* with the drift of the whole Gospel of Jesus Christ. For what are they that embrace the Gospel but Sons of God? What are Churches but his families? Seeing therefore we receive the Adoption and state of Sons by their Ministry whom God hath chosen out for that purpose; seeing also that when we are the Sons of God, our continuance is still under their care which were our Progenitors, what better title could there be given them than the reverend name of *Presbyters*, or fatherly guides? The Holy Ghost throughout the body of the New Testament, making so much mention of them, doth not any where call them Priests. The Prophet *Esa*, I grant, doth, but in such sort as the ancient Fathers, by way of analogie. *A Presbyter*, according to the proper meaning of the new Testament, is he, unto whom our Saviour Christ hath communicated the power of spiritual procreation. Out of the twelve Patriarchs issued the whole multitude of *Israel* according to the flesh. And according to the mystery of heavenly birth, our Lords Apostles we all acknowledge to be the Patriarchs of his whole Church. S. *John* therefore beheld sitting about the throne of God in heaven four and twenty Presbyters, the one half Fathers of the old, the other of the new *Jerusalem*. In which respect the Apostles likewise gave themselves the same title, albeit that name were not proper, but common unto them with others. For of Presbyters, some were greater, some less in power, and that by our Saviours own appointment; the greater they which received fulness of spiritual power, the less they to whom less was granted. The Apostles peculiar charge was to publish the Gospel of Christ unto all Nations, and to deliver them his Ordinances received by immediate revelation from himself. Which preeminence excepted, to all other offices and duties incident into their order, it was in them to ordain and consecrate whomsoever they thought meet, even as our Saviour did himself assign seventy others of his own Disciples inferior Presbyters, whose commission to preach and baptize was the same which the Apostles had. Whereas therefore we find, that the very first Sermon which the Apostles did publicly make was the conversion of above three thousand souls, unto whom there were every day more and more added, they having no open place permitted them for the exercise of Christian Religion, think we that twelve were sufficient to teach and administer Sacraments in so many private places, as so great a multitude of people did require? This harvest, our Saviour (no doubt) foreseeing, provided accordingly Labourers for it before hand. By which mean it came to pass, that the growth of that Church being so great and so sudden, they had notwithstanding in a readines Presbyters enough to furnish it. And therefore the history doth make no mention by what occasion Presbyters were instituted in *Jerusalem*, only we read of things which they did, and how the like were made afterwards elsewhere. To these two degrees appointed of our Lord and Saviour Christ, his Apostles soon after annexed Deacons; Deacons therefore must know, saith *Cyprian*, that our Lord himself did elect Apostles, but Deacons after his ascension unto Heaven the Apostles ordained, Deacons were Stewards of the Church, unto whom at the first was committed the distribution of Church goods, the care of providing therewith for the poor, and the charge to see that all things of expence might be religiously and faithfully dealt in. A part also of their Office, was attendance upon their Presbyters at the time of Divine Service. For which cause *Ignatius*, to set forth the dignity of their calling, saith, that they are in such case to the Bishop, as if Angelical powers did serve him. These only being the uses for which Deacons were first made, if the Church have since extended their Ministry further than the circuit of their labour at the first was drawn, we are not herein to think the Ordinance of Scripture violated, except there appear some prohibition, which hath abridged the Church of that liberty. Which I note chiefly in regard of them to whom it seemeth a thing so monstrous, that Deacons should sometime be licensed to preach, whose institution was at the first to another end. To charge them for this as men not contented with their own vocations, and as breakers into that which appertaineth unto others, it is very hard. For when they

they are thereunto once admitted, it is a part of their own vocation, it appertaineth now unto them as well as others; neither is it intrusion for them to do it being in such sort called, but rather in us it were temerity to blame them for doing it. Suppose we the office of teaching to be so repugnant unto the office of Deaconship, that they cannot concur in one and the same person? What was there done in the Church by Deacons, which the Apostles did not first discharge being Teachers? Yes, but the Apostles found the burthen of Teaching so heavy, that they judged it meet to cut off that other charge, and to have Deacons, which might undertake it. Be it so. The multitude of Christians increasing in *Jerusalem*, and waxing great, it was too much for the Apostles to teach, and to minister unto Tables also. The former was not to be slackt, that this latter might be followed. Therefore unto this they appointed others. Whereupon we may rightly ground this axiome, that when the subject wherein one mans labours of sundry kinds are imployed, doth wax so great, that the same men are no longer able to manage it sufficiently as before, the most natural way to help this, is, by dividing their charge into slices, and ordaining of under-officers, as our Saviour under twelve Apostles, seventy Presbyters, and the Apostles by his example seven Deacons to be under both. Neither ought it to seem less reasonable, that when the same men are sufficient both to continue in that which they do, and also to undertake somewhat more, a combination be admitted in this case; as well as division in the former. We may not therefore disallow it in the Church of *Geneva*, that *Calvin* and *Besa* were made both Pastors and Readers in Divinity, being men so able to discharge both. To say they did not content themselves with their Pastoral vocations, but brake into that which belongeth to others; to alledge against them, *He that exhorteth in exhortation*, as against *Rom. 12. 8.* us, *He that distributeth in simplicity*, is alledged in great dislike of granting licence for Deacons to preach, were very hard. The ancient custome of the Church, was to yield the poor much relief, especially Widows. But as poor people are always querulous and apt to think themselves less respected then they should be, we see that when the Apostles did what they could without hinderance to their weightier business, yet there were which grudged that others had too much, and they too little; the *Grobian* Widows shorter Commons then the Hebrews. By means whereof the Apostles saw it meet to ordain Deacons. Now tract of time having clean worn out those first occasions, for which the Deaconship was then most necessary, it might the better be afterwards extended to other Services, and so remain as at this present day, a degree in the Clergy of God which the Apostles of Christ did institute. That the first seven Deacons were chosen out of the seventy Disciples, is an error in *Epiphanius*. For to draw men from places of weightier, unto rooms of meaner labour, had not been fit. The Apostles, to the end they might follow teaching with more freedom, committed the Ministry of Tables unto Deacons. And shall we think they judged it expedient to chuse so many out of those seventy to be Ministers unto Tables, when Christ himself had before made them Teachers? It appeareth therefore, how long these three degrees of Ecclesiastical Order have continued in the Church of Christ, the highest and largest, that which the Apostles, the next that which Presbyters, and the lowest that which Deacons had. Touching Prophets, they were such men as having otherwise learned the Gospel, had from above bestowed upon them a special gift of expounding Scriptures, and of fore-shewing things to come. Of this sort *Agabus* was, and besides him in *Jerusalem* *AB 21. 10.* sundry others, who notwithstanding are not therefore to be reckoned with the *AB 11. 27.* Clergy, because no mans gifts of qualities can make him a Minister of holy things, unless Ordination do give him power. And we no where find Prophets to have been made by Ordination, but all whom the Church did ordain, were either to serve as Presbyters or as Deacons. Evangelists were Presbyters of principal efficiency, whom the Apostles sent abroad, and used as Agents in Ecclesiastical affairs where-soever they saw need. They whom we find to have been named in Scripture, Evangelists, *Ananias*, *Apollas*, *Timothy*, and others were thus employed. And concerning Evangelists, afterwards in *Trajan's* days, the History Ecclesiastical noteth that many of the Apostles, Disciples and Scholars which were then alive, and did with singular love of Wisdom affect the Heavenly Word of God, to shew their willing

*a AB 9. 18.*

*b AB 18. 24.*

*c 2 Tim. 4. 5.*

*1 Tim. 3. 15. 53.*

*14. 2. 8.*

*Euseb. Eccles.*

*lib. 1. 3. c. 34.*



1 Cor. 2. 18.

Ephes. 4. 7.  
Psal. 68. 18.

willing minds in executing that which Christ first of all required at the hands of men, they sold their Possessions, gave them to the poor, and betaking themselves to travel, undertook the labour of Evangelists, that is, they painfully preached Christ, and delivered the Gospel to them, who as yet had never heard the Doctrine of Faith. Finally, whom the Apostle nameth Pastors and Teachers, what other were they than Presbyters also, howbeit settled in some certain charge, and thereby differing from Evangelists? I beseech them therefore which have hitherto troubled the Church with question about Degrees & Offices of Ecclesiastical calling, because they principally ground themselves upon two places, that all partiality laid aside, they would sincerely weigh and examine whether they have not mis-interpreted both places, and all by surmising incompatible Offices, where nothing is meant but sundry graces, gifts and abilities which Christ bestowed. To them of *Corinth*, his words are these, *God placed in the Church, first of all, some Apostles; Secondly, Prophets; Thirdly, Teachers; after them powers, then gifts of Cures, Aides, Governments, kinds of Languages. Are all Apostles? Are all Prophets? Are all Teachers? Is there power in all? Have all grace to cure? Do all speak with Tongues? Can all interpret? But be ye desirous of the better graces.* They which plainly discern first, that some one general thing there is which the Apostle doth here divide into all these branches, and do secondly conceive that general to be Church-offices, besides a number of other difficulties, can by no means possibly deny but that many of these might concur in one man, and peradventure, in some one all, which mixture notwithstanding, their form of Discipline doth most shun. On the other side, admit that *Communicants of special infused grace*, for the benefit of members knit into one body, the Church of Christ, are here spoken of, which was in truth the plain drift of that whole Discourse, and see if every thing do not answer in due place with that fitness, which sheweth easily what is likeliest to have been meant. For why are Apostles the first, but because unto them was granted the Revelation of all Truth from Christ immediately? Why Prophets the second, but because they had of some things knowledge in the same manner? Teachers the next, because whatsoever was known to them it came by hearing, yet God willed made them able to instruct, which every one could not do that was taught. After Gifts of Edification there follow general abilities to work things above Nature, Grace to cure men of bodily Diseases, Supplies against occurrent defects and impediments, Dexterity to govern and direct by counsel; Finally, aptness to speak or interpret foreign tongues. Which Graces not poured out equally, but diversly sorted and given, were a cause why not only they all did furnish up the whole Body, but each benefit and help other. Again, the same Apostle other-where in like sort. *To every one of us is given grace, according to the measure of the gift of Christ. Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led Captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men. He therefore gave some Apostles, and some Prophets, and some Evangelists, and some Pastors and Teachers, for the gathering together of Saints, for the work of the Ministry, for the edification of the Body of Christ.* In this place none but gifts of Instruction are express. And because of Teachers some were Evangelists which neither had any part of their knowledge by Revelation as the Prophets, and yet in ability to teach were far beyond other Pastors, they are, as having received one way less than Prophets, and another way more than Teachers, set accordingly between both. For the Apostle doth in neither place respect what any of them were by Office or Power given them through Ordination, but what by Grace they all had obtained through miraculous infusion of the Holy Ghost. For in Christian Religion, this being the ground of our whole Belief, that the promises which God of old had made by his Prophets concerning the wonderful Gifts and Graces of the Holy Ghost, wherewith the Reign of the true *Messias* should be made glorious, were immediately after our Lords Ascension performed, there is no one thing whom of the Apostles did take more often occasion to speak. Out of men thus indued with gifts of the Spirit upon their Conversion to Christian Faith, the Church had her Ministers chosen, unto whom was given Ecclesiastical power by Ordination. Now, because the Apostle in reckoning degrees and varieties of Grace, doth mention Pastors and Teachers, although he mention them not in respect of their Ordination to exercise the Ministry,

stery, but as examples of men especially enriched with the gifts of the Holy Ghost, divers learned and skilful men have so taken it, as if those places did intend to teach what Orders of Ecclesiastical persons there ought to be in the Church of Christ, which thing we are not to learn from thence but out of other parts of holy Scripture, whereby it clearly appeareth, that Churches Apostolick did know but three degrees in the power of Ecclesiastical Order; at the first Apostles, Presbyters, and Deacons, afterwards in stead of Apostles, Bishops, concerning whose Order we are to speak in the seventh Book. There is an error which beguileth many who much intangle both themselves and others by not distinguishing *Services, Offices and Orders* Ecclesiastical, the first of which three, and in part the second may be executed by the Laity, whereas none have, or can have the third but the Clergy. Catechists, Exorcists, Readers, Singers, and the rest of like sort, if the nature only of their labours and pains be considered, may in that respect seem Clergymen, even as the Fathers for that cause term them usually Clerks, as also in regard of the end whereunto they were trained up, which was to be ordered when years and experience should make them able. Notwithstanding, in as much as they no way differed from others of the Laity longer then during that work of Service, which at any time they might give over, being thereunto but admitted, not tied by irrevocable Ordination, we find them always exactly severed from that body whereof those three before rehearsed Orders alone are natural parts. Touching Widows, of whom some men are perswaded, that if such as Saint Paul describeth may be gotten, we ought to retain them in the Church for ever, certain mean Services there were of Attendance; as about Women, at the time of their Baptism, about the bodies of the sick and dead, about the necessities of Travellers, Wayfaring men and such like, wherein the Church did commonly use them when need required, because they lived of the Alms of the Church, and were fittest for such purposes; Saint Paul doth therefore, to avoid scandal, require that none but Women well experienced and virtuously given, neither any under threescore years of age should be admitted of that number. Widows were never in the Church so highly esteemed as Virgins. But seeing neither of them did or could receive Ordination, to make them Ecclesiastical persons were absurd. The ancientest therefore of the Fathers mention those three degrees of Ecclesiastical Order specified, and no more. *When your Captains (saith Tertullian) that is to say, the Deacons, Presbyters and Bishops flye, who shall teach the Laity, that they must be constant? Again, What should I mention Lay-men (saith Optatus) yea, or divers of the Ministry is self? To what purpose Deacons, which are in the third, or Presbyters in the second degree of Priesthood, when the very Heads and Princes of all, even certain of the Bishops themselves were content to redeem life with the loss of Heaven? Heaps of Allegations in a case so evident and plain are needless. I may securely therefore conclude, that there are at this day in the Church of England, no other then the same degrees of Ecclesiastical Order, namely, Bishops, Presbyters, and Deacons, which had their beginning from Christ, and his blessed Apostles themselves. As for Deans, Prebendaries, Parsons, Vicars, Curates, Arch-deacons, Chancellors, Officials, Commissaries, and such other the like names, which being not found in holy Scripture, we have been thereby through some mens error thought to allow of Ecclesiastical Degrees not known, nor ever heard of in the better Ages of former times; all these are in truth but Titles of Office, whereunto partly Ecclesiastical persons, and partly others are in sundry forms and conditions admitted, as the state of the Church doth need Degrees of Order, still continuing the same they were from the first beginning. Now what habit or attire doth becom each order to use in the course of common life, both for the gravity of his place, and for example sake to other men, is a matter frivolous to be disputed of. A small measure of wisdom may serve to teach them how they should cut their coats. But seeing all well ordered Policies have ever judged it meet and fit by certain special distinct Ornaments to sever each sort of men from other when they are in publick, to the end that all may receive such Complements of Civil Honour, as are due to their Rooms and Callings; even where their persons are not known, it argueth a disproportioned mind in them whom so decent orders displease.*

T.C. l. 1. p. 194  
1 Tim. 5. 9.

Tertul. de Persecut.

Optat. lib. 1.

79 We might somewhat marvel, what the Apostle Saint Paul should mean to say that Covetousness is Idolatry, if the daily practice of men did not shew, that whereas Nature requireth God to be honoured with wealth, we honour for the most part wealth as God. Fain we would teach our selves to believe, that for worldly goods it sufficeth frugally and honestly to use them to our own benefit, without detriment and hurt of others; or if we go a degree farther, and perhaps convert some small contemptible Portion thereof to Charitable uses, the whole duty which we owe unto God herein is fully satisfied. But for as much as we cannot rightly honour God, unless both our Souls and Bodies be sometime employed in his Service; Again, sith we know that Religion requireth at our hands the taking away of so great a part of the time of our lives quite and clean from our own business, and the bestowing of the same in his, suppose we that nothing of our wealth and substance is immediately due to God, but all our own to bestow and spend as our selves think meet? Are not our riches as well his, as the days of our life are his? Wherefore, unless with part we acknowledge his Supreme Dominion, by whose benevolence we have the whole, how give we Honour to whom Honour belongeth, or how hath God the things that are Gods? I would know what Nation in the World did ever honour God, and not think it a point of their duty to do him honour with their very goods. So that this we may boldly set down as a principle cleer in Nature, an Axiome which ought not to be called in question, a Truth manifest and infallible, that men are eternally bound to honour God with their substance, in token of thankfull acknowledgment that all they have is from him. To honour him with our worldly goods, not only by spending them in lawful manner, and by using them without offence, but also by alienating from our selves some reasonable part or portion thereof, and by offering up the same to him as a signe that we gladly confess his Sole and Sovereign Dominion over all, is a duty which all men are bound unto, and a part of that very Worship of God, which as the Law of God and Nature it self requireth, so we are the rather to think all men no less strictly bound thereunto than to any other natural duty, in as much as the hearts of men do so cleave to these earthly things, so much admire them for the sway they have in the World, impute them so generally either to Nature or to Chance and Fortune, so little think upon the Grace and Providence from which they come, that unless by a kind of continual tribute we did acknowledge Gods Dominion, it may be doubted that in short time men would learn to forget whose Tenants they are, and imagine that the World is their own absolute, free and independent inheritance. Now, concerning the kind or quality of gifts which God receiveth in that sort, we are to consider them, partly as first they proceed from us, and partly as afterwards they are to serve for divine uses. In that they are testimonies of our affection towards God, there is no doubt, but such they should be as becometh most his Glory to whom we offer them. In this respect the fatness of *Abels* sacrifice is commended; the flower of all mens increase assigned to God by *Solomon*; the gifts and donations of the people rejected as oft as their cold affection to God-ward made their presents to be little worth. Somewhat the Heathens saw touching that which was herein fit, and therefore they unto their gods did not think they might consecrate any thing which was *impure* or *unsound*, or *already given*, or *else not truly their own to give*. Again, in regard of use, forasmuch as we know that God hath himself no need of worldly commodities, but taketh them because it is our good to be so exercised, and with no other intent accepteth them, but to have them used for the endless continuance of Religion; there is no place left of doubt or controversy, but that we in the choice of our gifts are to level at the same mark, and to frame our selves to his known intents and purposes. Whether we give unto God therefore that which himself by commandment requireth; or that which the publick consent of the Church thinketh good to allow, or that which every mans private devotion doth best like, in as much as the gift which we offer, proceedeth not only as a testimony of our affection towards God, but also as a mean to uphold Religion, the exercise whereof cannot stand without the help of temporal commodities: if all men be taught of Nature to wish, and as much as in them lieth, to procure the perpetuity of good things; if

Parum, pro-  
bum, profanum,  
suum, Eccl.  
lib. 24.



if for that very cause we honour and admire their wisdom, who having been founders of Common-weals, could devise how to make the benefit they left behind them durable; if especially in this respect we prefer *Lycurgus* before *Solon*, and the *Spartan* before the *Athenian* Politie, it must needs follow, that as we do unto God very acceptable service in honouring him with our substance, so our service that way is then most acceptable, when it tendeth to perpetuity. The first permanent donations of honour in this kind are Temples. Which works do so much set forward the exercise of Religion, that while the World was in love with Religion, it gave to no sort greater reverence than to whom it could point and say, *These are the men that have built us Synagogues*. But of Churches we have spoken sufficiently heretofore. The next things to Churches are the ornaments of Churches, memorials which mens devotion hath added to remain in the treasure of Gods house, not only for uses wherein the exercise of Religion presently needeth them, but also partly for supply of future casual necessities, whereunto the Church is on earth subject, and partly to the end that while they are kept they may continually serve as testimonies, giving all men to understand, that God hath in every Age and Nation, such as think it no burthen to honour him with their substance. The riches first of the Tabernacle of God, and then of the Temple of *Jerusalem*, arising out of voluntary gifts and donations, were, as we commonly speak, a *Nemo scit*, the value of them above that which any man would imagine. After that the Tabernacle was made, furnished with all necessities, and set up, although in the wilderness their ability could not possibly be great, the very mettle of those vessels which the Princes of the twelve Tribes gave to God for their first presents, amounted even then to two thousand and four hundred shekels of Silver, an hundred and twenty shekels of Gold, every shekel weighing half an ounce. What was given to the Temple which *Solomon* erected, we may partly conjecture, when over and besides Wood, Marble, Iron, Bras, Vestments, precious Stones, and Money; the sum which *David* delivered into *Solomons* hands for that purpose, was of Gold in Masse eight thousand, and of Silver seventeen thousand Cichars, every Cichar containing a thousand and eight hundred shekels, which riseth to nine hundred Ounces in every one Cichar: whereas the whole charge of the Tabernacle did not amount unto thirty Cichars. After their return out of *Babylon*, they were not presently in case to make their second Temple of equal magnificence and glory with that which the enemy had destroyed. Notwithstanding what they could they did. Inasmuch that the building finished, there remained in the Coffers of the Church, to uphold the fabrick thereof, six hundred and fifty Cichars of Silver, one hundred of Gold. Whereunto was added by *Nehemias* of his own gift a thousand drams of Gold, fifty vessels of Silver, five hundred and thirty Priests vestments; by other the Princes of the fathers twenty thousand drams of Gold, two thousand and two hundred pieces of Silver; by the rest of the people twenty thousand of Gold, two thousand of Silver, threecore and seven attires of Priests. And they furthermore bound themselves towards other charges to give by the Poll in what part of the World so ever they should dwell, the third of a shekel, that is to say, the sixth part of an ounce yearly. This out of certain Provinces, they always sent in Gold. Whereof *Mithridates* is said to have taken up by the way before it could pass to *Jerusalem* from *Asia*, in one adventure eight hundred talents; *Crassus* after that to have borrowed of the Temple it self eight thousand: at which time *Eleazar* having both many other rich ornaments, and all Tapesty of the Temple under his custody, thought it the safest way to grow unto more composition, and so to redeem the residue by parting with a certain beam of Gold abo it seven hundred and a half in weight, a prey sufficient for one man, as he thought, who had never bargained with *Crassus* till then, and therefore upon the confidence of a solemn oath that no more should be looked for, he simply delivered up a large morsel, whereby the value of that which remained was betrayed, and the whole lost. Such being the casualties whereunto moveable treasures are subject, the Law of *Moses* did both require eight and twenty Cities together with their fields and whole Territories in the Land of *Judah*, to be reserved to God himself; and not only provide for the liberty of farther additions, if men of their own accord should think good, but also for the safe

Numb. 7. 35, 36.

1 Chron. 29.

Exod. 25. 28.

& 37. 24.

Ezra 2. 68, 69.

Hag. 2. 4.

Ezr. 8. 24.

Nehem. 7. 70.

Nehem. 10. 32.

a Cic. orat. pro

L. Flac. Cum

aurum Iuda-

rum nomine

quatuor ex

Italia & ex

omnibus vestris

provinciis Hierosolymam ex-

portari soleret

Flaccus Sanxis

edicto, ne ex

Asia exportari

liceret.

b Joseph. Anti.

lib. 14. cap. 12.

c Every talent

is value 600.

Crowns.

Numb. 35.

Levit. 25. 34.

& 7. 32.

preservation thereof unto all posterities, that no mans avarice or fraud, by defeating so vertuous intents, might discourage from like purposes. Gods third indowment did therefore of old consist in lands. Furthermore, some cause no doubt there is, why besides sundry other more rare donations on uncerta'in rate, the tenth should be thought a revenue so natural to be allotted out unto God. For of the spoils which *Abraham* had taken in war, he delivered unto *Melchisedeck* the Tithes. The vow of *Jacob*, at such times as he took his journey towards *Haran*, was, *If God will be with me, and will keep me in this voyage which I am to go, and will give me bread to eat, and clothes to put on, so that I may return to my fathers house in safety, then shall the Lord be my God; and this stone which I have set up as a pillar, the same shall be Gods House, and of all thou shalt give me I will give unto thee the Tithes.* And as *Abraham* gave voluntarily, as *Jacob* vowed to give God Tithes, so the Law of *Moses* did require at the hands of all men the self-same kind of Tribute, the tenth of their Corn, Wine, Oyl, Fruit, Cattle, and whatsoever increase his heavenly Providence should send. In so much that Panyns being herein followers of their steps, paid Tithes likewise: Imagine we that this was for no cause done, or that there was not some special inducements to judge the tenth of our worldly profits the most convenient for Gods portion? Are not all things by him created in such sort, that the forms which give them their distinction are number, their operations measure, & their matter weight? *Three* being the mystical number of Gods unsearchable perfection within himself; *seven* the number whereby our own perfections through grace are most ordered; and *ten* the number of natures perfections (for the beauty of nature is order, and the foundation of order number, and of number the highest we can rise unto without iteration of numbers under it) could nature better acknowledge the power of the God of nature then by assigning unto him that quantity which is the content of all she possesseth? There are in *Philo* the Jew, many arguments to shew the great congruity and fitness of this number in things consecrated unto God. But because over-nice and curious speculations become not the earnestness of holy things, I omit what might be farther observed, as well out of others as out of him, touching the quantity of this general sacred tribute; whereby it cometh to pass, that the meanest and the very poorest amongst men, yielding unto God as much in proportion as the greatest, and many times in affection more, have this as a sensib'e token always assuring their minds, that in his sight, from whom all good is expected, they are concerning acceptance, protection, divine privileges and preeminencies whatsoever, equals and peers with them unto whom they are otherwise in earth'y respects inferiours, being furthermore well assured that the cop as it were thus presented to God is neither lost, nor unfruitfully bestowed, but doth sanctifie to them again the whole Mass, and that he by receiving a little undertaketh to bless all. In which consideration the Jews were accustomed to name their Tithes the *hedges* of their riches. Albeit a hedge do only fence and preserve that which is contained, whereas their Tithes and offerings did more, because they procured increase of the heap out of which they were taken. God demandeth no such debt for his own need, but for their only benefit that owe it. Wherefore detaining the same, they hurt not him whom they wrong; and themselves whom they think they relieve, they wound; except men will haply affirm, that God did by fair speeches, and large promises, delude the world in saying, *Bring ye all the Tithes into the store-house, that there may be meat in mine house, (deal truly, defraud not God of his due) and prove if I will not open unto you the Windows of Heaven, and pour down upon you an immeasurable blessing.* That which Saint *James* hath concerning the effect of our prayers unto God, is for the most part of like moment in our gifts: We pray and obtain not, because he which knoweth our hearts, doth see our desires are evil. In like manner we give, and we are not the more accepted, because he beholdeth how unwisely we spill our gifts in the bringing. It is to him which needeth nothing, all one whether anything or nothing be given him. But for our own good, it always becometh that whatsoever we offer up into his hands, we bring it seasoned with this cogitation, *Thou Lord art worthy of all honour.* With the Church of Christ touching these matters, it standeth as it did with the whole World before *Moses*. Whereupon for many years men being

Gen. 14. 20.

Gen. 28. 20.

Deut. 24. 22.

Plin. hist. nat.

lib. 11. cap. 14.

a Διὰ τὴν ἀρίστην  
μὴν ἢ ἀπὸ  
μυριάδων ἢ ἐκ  
τρίτης τριάκοντα  
τάτης. Philo.  
de' Avar.

b Massoreth se-  
per est legi;  
dioniarum se-  
per decima. R.  
A. quibus in  
Pirk. Abob.

Mal. 3.

c Nemo liben-  
ter dedit quod  
non accepit  
sed expressit.  
Sen. de Benef.  
lib. 1. cap. 1.

being desirous to honour God in the same manner, as other vertuous and holy personages before had done, both during the time of their life, and if farther ability did serve, by such device as might cause their works of piety to remain always, it came by these means to pass that the Church from time to time, had treasure proportionable unto the poorer or wealthier estate of Christian men. And as soon as the state of the Church could admit thereof, they easily condescended to think it most natural and most fit, that God should receive, as before, of all men his ancient accustomed revenues of Tithes. Thus therefore both God and Nature have taught to convert things temporal to eternal uses, and to provide for the perpetuity of Religion, even by that which is most transitory. For to the end that in worth and value there might be no abatement of any thing once assigned to such purposes, the Law requireth precisely the best of that we possess; and to prevent all damages by way of commutation, were in stead of natural commodities, or other rights, the price of them might be taken, the Law of *Moses* determined their rates, and the payments to be always made by the Side of the Sanctuary, wherein there was great advantage of weight above the ordinary current Side. The truest and surest way for God to have always his own, is by making him payment in kind out of the very self-same riches, which through his gracious benediction the earth doth continually yield. This where it may be without inconvenience, is for every mans conscience sake. That which cometh from God to us, by the natural course of his providence, which we know to be innocent and pure, is perhaps best accepted, because least spotted with the stain of unlawful, or indirect procurement. Besides, whereas prices daily change, Nature which commonly is one, must needs be the most indifferent and permanent standard between God and Man. But the main foundation of all, whereupon the security of these things dependeth, as far as any thing may be ascertained amongst men, is, that the Title and Right which man had in every of them before Donation, doth by the Act, and from the time of any such Donation, Dedication, or Grant, remain the proper possession of God till the worlds end, unless himself renounce or relinquish it. For if equity have taught us, that every one ought to enjoy his own; that what is ours no other can alienate from us, but with our own deliberate consent; finally, that no man having past his consent or deed, may change it to the prejudice of any other, should we presume to deal with God worse then God hath allowed any man to deal with us? A be it therefore we be now free from the Law of *Moses*, and consequently, not thereby bound to the payment of Tithes; yet because Nature hath taught men to honour God with their substance, and Scripture hath left us an example of that particular proportion, which for moral considerations hath been thought fittest by him whose wisdom could best judge; furthermore, seeing that the Church of Christ hath long since entered into obligation, it seemeth in these days a question altogether vain and superfluous, whether Tithes be a matter of divine Right: because howsoever at the first, it might have been thought doubtful, our case is clearly the same now with theirs, unto whom St. *Peter* sometime spake, saying, *While it was whole, it was whole thing*. When our Tithes might have probably seemed our own, we had colour of liberty to use them as we our selves saw good. But having made them his whose they are, let us be warned by other mens example what it is *periculosum*, to wash or clip that coine which hath on it the mark of God. For that all these are his possessions, and that he doth himself so reckon them appeareth by the form of his own speeches. Touching Gifts and Oblations, *Thou shalt give them me*; touching Oratories and Churches, *My house* shall be called the House of Prayer; touching Tithes, *Will a man spoil God?* Yet behold, even me your God ye have spoiled, notwithstanding ye ask wherein, as though ye were ignorant, what injury there hath been offered in Tithes: ye are heavily accursed, because with a kind of publike consent ye have joined your selves in one to rob me, imagining the commonness of your offence to be every mans particular justification, touching Lands, *Ye shall offer to the Lord a sacred portion of ground, and that sacred portion shall belong to the Priests* Neither did God only thus ordain amongst the Jews, but the very purpose, intent, and meaning of all that have honoured him with their substance, was to invest him with the property of those benefits, the use whereof

Levit. 27. 34.

a Lib. 11. de

Reg. Jur.

b Cujus per erro-

rem dati re-

positio est, ejus

consulto dati

donatio est l. 1.

D. de cond.

indeb.

This the

ground of Con-

sideration in a-

liations from

man to man.

c Nemo potest

mutare consil-

ium suum in al-

terius prejudi-

cium, lib. 75 de

Reg. Jur.

Acts 5. 4.

Exod. 32. 29. 30.

Math. 23. 13.

Mal. 3. 8.

d Non videntur

rem admittre

quibus propria

non sunt. 83.

de Reg. Jur.

Ezech. 45. 1. 4.



mult needs be committed to the hands of men. In which respect the title of ancient  
*Mag. Chur. c. 1.* Grants and Charters, is, *We have given unto God both for Us and our Heirs for ever,*  
*Yea, We know, saith Charls the Great, that the goods of the Church are the sacred in-*  
*Capitul. Carn.* *struments of God, to the Lord our God we offer and dedicate whatsoever we deliver un-*  
*lib. 6. cap. 284.* *to his Church.* Whereupon the Laws Imperial do likewise divide all things in such  
 sort, that they make some to belong by right of Nature indifferently unto every  
 man, some to be the certain goods and possessions of Common-weals, some to  
 appertain unto several Corporations or Companies of men, some to be privately  
 mens own in particular, and some to be separated quite <sup>a</sup> from all men; which last  
 branch comprizeth things sacred and holy, because thereof God alone is owner.  
 The sequel of which received opinion, as well without as within the Walls of the  
 House of God touching such possessions hath been ever, that there is not an act  
 more honourable, then by all means to amplifie and defend the patrimony of Reli-  
 gion, not any more <sup>b</sup> impious and hateful, than to impair those possessions which  
 men in former times, when they gave unto holy uses, were wont at the Altar of  
 God, and in presence of their ghostly Superiours, to make as they thought, inviolable,  
 by words of fearful execration, saying, *These things we offer to God, from whom if*  
*any take them away (which we hope no man will attempt to do) but if any shall, let his*  
*account be without favour in the last day, when he cometh to receive the doom which*  
*is due for sacrilege against that Lord and God unto whom we dedicate the same.* The  
 best and most renowned Prelates of the Church of Christ have in this consideration  
 rather sustained the wrath, then yielded to satisfie the hard desire of their greatest  
 Commanders on earth, coveting with ill advice and counsel that which they wit-  
 tingly should have suffered God to injoy. There are of Martyrs, whom posterity much  
 honour, for that having under their hands the custody of such <sup>c</sup> treasures, they could  
 by vertuous delusion invent how <sup>d</sup> to save them from prey, even when the safety of  
 their own lives they gladly neglected, as one, sometime an Archdeacon under *Xistus*  
 the Bishop of Rome, did, whom when his Judge understood to be one of the Church  
 Stewards; thirst of blood began to flake, and another humour to work, which  
 first by a favourable countenance, and then by quiet speech did thus calmly dis-  
 closeth it self, *You that profess the Christian Religion, make great complaints of the*  
*wonderful cruelty we shew towards you. Neither peradven are altogether without*  
*cause. But for myself, I am far from any such bloody purpose. Ye are not so willing*  
*to live, as I unwilling that out of these lips should proceed any capital sentence against*  
*you. Your Bishops are said to have rich vessels of gold and silver, which they use in the*  
*exercise of their Religion; besides, the same is, that numbers sell away their Lands*  
*and Livings, the huge prices whereof are brought to your Church-coffers; by which*  
*means the devotion that maketh them and their whole posterity poor, must needs might-*  
*ily enrich you, whose God we know was no Coyner of money, but left behind him many*  
*wholesome and good Precepts, as namely, that Cxar should have of you the things that*  
*are fit for, and due to Cxar. His wars are costly and chargeable unto him. That which*  
*you suffer to rust in corners, the affairs of the Common wealth do need. Your profession is*  
*not to make account of things transitory. And yet if ye can be contented but to foregoe*  
*that which ye care not for, I dare undertake to warrant you both safety of life, and free-*  
*dom of using your conscience, a thing more acceptable to you than wealth.* Which fair-  
 ly the happy Martyr quietly hearing, and perceiving it necessary to make some  
 shift for the safe concealment of that which being now desired was not unlikely to  
 be more narrowly afterwards sought, he craved respite for three days, to gather the  
 riches of the Church together, in which space against the time the Governour  
 should come to the doors of the Temple, big with hope to receive his prey, a mitera-  
 ble rank of the poor, lame, and impotent persons was provided, their names deliv-  
 ered him up in writing as a true Inventory of the Churches goods, & some few words  
 used to signifie how proud the Church was of these treasures. If men did not natural-  
 ly abhor sacrilege, to resist or defeat so impious attempts would deserve small praise.  
 But such is the general dereliction of rapine in this kind, that whereas nothing doth  
 in peace or war more uphold mens reputation then prosperous success, because in  
 common construction, unless notorious improbity be join'd with prosperity, it seem-  
 eth to argue favour with God, they which once have stained their hands with these  
 odious

*a Nullum au-*  
*tem sunt res*  
*sacra & reli-*  
*giosa & san-*  
*cta. Quod*  
*enim divini*  
*juris est, id nul-*  
*lum in bonis*  
*est. Inst. l. 3. tit. 1.*  
*b Solum cum Divi*  
*sacrilégi pug-*  
*nant, Curt. l. 7.*  
*Sacrum sacro-*  
*re commenda-*  
*tum qui demp-*  
*seris rapserit-*  
*ve, parricide*  
*esto, Leg. 12.*  
*tab. Capitul.*  
*Carul. l. 6. c. 28.*  
*c Deposita pie-*  
*tatis, Tertul.*  
*Apologet.*  
*Prudent, Peri-*  
*steb.*



*Plal. 90. 10.* peradventure fall out to be threescore and ten years, or if strength do serve, unto fourscore, what followeth, is likely to be small joy for them whosoever they be that behold it. Thus have the best things been overthrowen, not so much by puissance and might of Adversaries, as through defect of counsel, in them that should have upheld and defended the same.

Of Ordinations lawful without title, and without any popular election precedent, but in no case without regard of due information what their quality is, that enter into holy Orders.

80. There are in a Minister of God these four things to be considered, his Ordination which giveth him power to meddle with things sacred, the charge or portion of the Church allotted unto him for exercise of his Office; the performance of his duty, according to the exigence of his charge; and lastly, the maintenance which in that respect he receiveth. All Ecclesiastical Laws and Canons which either concern the bestowing or the using of the power of Ministerial Order, have relation to these four. Of the first we have spoken before at large. Concerning the next, for more convenient discharge of Ecclesiastical duties, as the body of the people must needs be severed by divers precincts, so the Clergy likewise accordingly distributed. Whereas therefore Religion did first take place in Cities, and in that respect was a cause why the name of Pagans, which properly signifieth Country people, came to be used in common speech for the same that Infidels and Unbelievers were; it followed thereupon that all such Cities had their Ecclesiastical Colledges, consisting of Deacons and of Presbyters, whom first the Apostles or their Delegates the Evangelists, did both ordain and govern. Such were the Colledges of *Jerusalem, Antioch, Ephesus, Rome, Corinth*, and the rest, where the Apostles are known to have planted our Faith and Religion. Now because Religion and the cure of souls was their general charge in common over all that were neer about them, neither had any one Presbyter his several Cure apart, till *Evarestus* Bishop in the See of *Rome*, about the year 112 began to assign precincts unto every Church, or Title, which the Christians held, and to appoint unto each Presbyter a certain compass, whereof himself should take charge alone; the commonliousness of this invention caused all parts of Christendom to follow it, and at the length amongst the rest our own Churches, about the year 636. became divided in like manner. But other distinction of Churches there doth not appear any in the Apostles Writings, save only, according to those Cities wherein they planted the Gospel of Christ, and erected Ecclesiastical Colledges. Wherefore to ordain *κατὰ πόλιν* throughout every City, and *κατὰ ἐκκλησίαν* throughout every Church, so in them signifie the same thing. Churches then neither were, nor could be in so convenient sort limited as now they are; first, by the bounds of each state, and then within each state by more particular precincts, till at the length we descend unto several Congregations termed *Parishes*, with far narrower restraint, than this name at the first was used. And from hence hath grown their errour, who as oft as they read of the duty which Ecclesiastical persons are now to perform towards the Church, their manner is always to understand by that Church, some particular Congregation, or Parish Church. They suppose that there should now be no man of Ecclesiastical Order, which is not tyed to some certain Parish. Because the names of all Church-Officers are words of relation, because a Shepherd must have his Flock, a Teacher his Scholars, a Minister his company which he ministrereth unto, therefore it seemeth a thing in their eyes absurd and unreasonable, that any man should be ordained a Minister, otherwise, than only for some particular Congregation. Perceive they not, how by this meane they make it unlawful for the Church to imploy men at all, in converting Nations? For if so be the Church may not lawfully admit to an Ecclesiastical Function, unless it tie the party admitted unto some particular Parish, then surely, a thankless labour it is, whereby men seek the Conversion of Infidels, which know not Christ, and therefore cannot be as yet divided into their special Congregations and Flocks: But to the end it may appear how much this one thing amongst many more hath been mistaken, there is first no Precept, requiring that Presbyters and Deacons be made in such sort, and not otherwise. Albeit therefore the Apostles did make them in that order, yet is not their Example such a Law, as without all exception bindeth to make them in no other order but that. Again, if we will consider that which the Apostles themselves did, surely, no man can justly say that herein we practise any thing repugnant to their example,

a *ABs* 8. 15. 36

*Apos.* 1. 20.

b *Tit.* 1. 5.

c *ABs* 14. 23.



example. For by them there was ordained only in each Christian City a Colledge of Presbyters and Deacons to administer holy things. *Evaristus* did a hundred years after the birth of our Saviour Christ begin the distinction of the Church into Parishes. Presbyters and Deacons having been ordained before to exercise Ecclesiastical Functions in the Church of *Rome* promiscuously, he was the first that tied them each one to his own station. So that of the two, indefinite Ordination of Presbyters and Deacons doth come more neere the Apostles Example, and the tying of them to be made only for particular Congregations, may more justly ground it self upon the Example of *Evaristus* than of any Apostle of Christ. It hath been the opinion of wise and good men heretofore, that nothing was ever devised more singularly beneficial unto Gods Church, than this which our honourable Predecessors have to their endless praise found out by erecting such Houses of Study, as those two most famous Universities do contain, and by providing that choice Wits, after reasonable time spent in contemplation, may at the length either enter into that holy Vocation, for which they have been so long nourished and brought up, or else give place and suffer others to succeed in their rooms, that so the Church may be always furnished with a number of men, whose ability being first known by publick tryal in Church-labours there where men can best judge of them, their calling afterwards unto particular charge abroad may be according. All this is frustrate, those worthy Foundations we must dissolve, their whole device and religious purpose which did erect them is made void, their Orders and Statutes are to be cancelled and disannulled, in case the Church be forbidden to grant any power of Order, unless it be with restraint to the party ordained unto some particular Parish or Congregation. Nay, might we not rather affirm of Presbyters and of Deacons, that the very nature of their Ordination is unto necessary local restraint a thing opposite and repugnant? The Emperour *Justinian* doth say of Tutors, *Certa rei vel causæ tutor dari non potest, quia persona non causa vel rei tutor datur.* He that should grant a Tutorship, restraining his grant to some one certain thing or cause, should do but idly, because Tutors are given for personal defence generally, and not for managing of a few particular things or causes. So he that ordaining a Presbyter or a Deacon, should in the form of Ordination restrain the one or the other to a certain place, might with much more reason be thought to use a vain and frivolous addition, than they reasonably to require such local restraint, as a thing which must of necessity concur evermore with all lawful Ordinations. Presbyters and Deacons are not by Ordination consecrated unto places, but unto Functions. In which respect, and in no other it is, that first they are by vertue thereof bequeathed unto God, severed and sanctified to be employed in his Service, which is the highest advancement that mortal creatures on Earth can be raised unto, the Church of Christ hath not been acquainted in former Ages with any such prophane and unnatural custom, as doth halloiw men with Ecclesiastical Functions of Order only for a time, and then dismiss them again to the common Affairs of the World. Whereas, contrariwise, from the place or charge where that power hath been exercised, we may be by sundry good and lawful occasions translated, retaining nevertheless the self-same power which was first given. It is some grief to spend thus much labour in refusing a thing that hath so little ground to uphold it, especially first they themselves that teach it do not seem to give thereunto any great credit, if we may judge their minds by their actions. There are amongst them that have done the work of Ecclesiastical persons, sometime in the Families of Noble men, sometime in much more publick and frequent Congregations; there are that have successively gone through perhaps seven or eight particular Churches after this sort; yea, some that at one and the same time have been, some which at this present hour are, in real obligation of Ecclesiastical duty, and possession of commodity thereto belonging, even in sundry particular Churches within the Land; some there are amongst them which will not so much abridge their liberty, as to be fastened or tied unto any place; some which have bound themselves to one place, only for a time, and that time being once expired, have afterwards voluntarily given other places the like experience and tryal of them. All this I presume they would not do, if their perswasion were as strict as their words pretend. But for the avoiding of these and such other the like confusi-

*Just. lib. i. tit. 14. §. 4.*

ons as are incident into the cause and question whereof we presently treat, there is not any thing more material, then first to separate exactly the nature of the Ministry from the use and exercise thereof; Secondly, to know that the only true and proper Act of Ordination is, to invest men with that power which doth make them Ministers by consecrating their persons to God, and his Service in holy things during term of life, whether they exercise that power or no; Thirdly, that to give them a title or charge where to use their Ministry, concerneth not the making, but the placing of Gods Ministers; and therefore the Laws which concern only their Election or Admission unto that place of charge, are not applicable to infringe any way their Ordination; Fourthly, that as oft as any ancient Constitution, Law or Canon is alledged, concerning either Ordinations or Elections, we forget not to examine whether the present case be the same which the ancient was, or else do contain some just reason for which it cannot admit altogether the same Rules which former Affairs of the Church, now altered, did then require. In the question of making Ministers without a Title, which to do they say is a thing unlawful, they should at the very first have considered what the name of Title doth imply, and what affinity or coherence Ordinations have with Titles, which thing observed would plainly have shewed them their own error. They are not ignorant that when they speak of a Title, they handle that which belongeth to the placing of a Minister in some charge, that the place of charge wherein a Minister doth execute his Office, requireth some House of God for the people to resort unto, some definite number of Sou's unto whom he there administretu holy things, and some certain allowance whereby to sustain life; that the Fathers at the first named *Oratories*, and Houses of Prayer, Titles, thereby signifying how God was interested in them, and held them as his own Possessions. But because they know that the Church had Ministers before Christian Temples and Oratories were, therefore some of them understand by a Title, a definite Congregation of people only, and so deny that any Ordination is lawful which maketh Ministers, that have no certain Flock to attend, forgetting how the Seventy whom Christ himself did ordain Ministers, had their calling in that manner, whereas yet no certain charge could be given them. Others referring the name of a Title, especially to the maintenance of the Minister, infringe all Ordinations made, except they which receive Orders be first intitled to a competent Ecclesiastical Benefice, and (which is most ridiculously strange) except besides their present Title to some such Benefice, they have likewise some other Title of Annual Rent or Pension whereby they may be relieved, in case through infirmity, sickness, or other lawful impediment they grow unable to execute their Ecclesiastical Function. So that every man lawfully ordained must bring a bow which hath two strings, a Title of present Right, and another to provide for future possibility or chance. Into these absurdities and follies they slide by mis-conceiving the true purpose of certain Canons, which indeed have forbidden to ordain a Minister without a Title, nor that simply it is unlawful so to ordain, but because it might grow to an inconvenience, if the Church did not somewhat restrain that liberty. For seeing they which have once received Ordination, cannot again return into the World, it behoveth them that ordain, to fore-see how such shall be afterwards able to live, lest their poverty and destitution should redound to the disgrace and discredit of their calling. Which evil prevented, those very Laws which in that respect forbid, do expressly admit Ordinations to be made at large, and without Title; namely, if the party so ordained have of his own for the sustentance of this life, or if the Bishop which giveth him Orders will find him competent allowance, till some place of Ministration, from whence his maintenance may arise, be provided for him, or if any other fit and sufficient means be had against the danger before mentioned. Absolutely therefore it is not true, that any ancient Canon of the Church which is, or ought to be with us in force, doth make Ordinations at large unlawful, and as the state of the Church doth stand, they are most necessary. If there be any conscience in men touching that which they write or speak, let them consider as well what the present condition of all things doth now suffer, as what the Ordinances of former Ages did appoint, as well the weight of those causes, for which our Affairs have altered, as the reasons in regard whereof our Fathers and Predecessors

Unlawful to ordain a Minister without Title. *Abstra.* 243. & p. 246. The Law requireth that every one admitted unto Orders having for his present Relief some Ecclesiastical Benefice should also have some other title unto some annual rent or pension whereby he might be relieved in case he were not able through infirmity, sickness, or other lawful impediment to execute his Ecclesiastical Office and Function.

Predecessors did sometime strictly and severely keep that, which for us to observe now, is neither meet nor always possible. \*In this our present Cause and Controversie, whether any not having Title of Right to a Benefice may be lawfully ordained a Minister, is it not manifest in the eyes of all men, that whereas the name of a Benefice doth signifie some standing Ecclesiastical Revenue, taken out of the Treasure of God, and allotted to a spiritual Person, to the end he may use the same, and enjoy it as his own for term of life, unless his default cause Deprivation? The Clergy for many years after Christ had no other Benefices, but only their Canonical Portions, or monethly Dividends allowed them according to their several degrees and qualities, out of the common Stock of such Gifts, Oblations and Tithes, as the fervour of Christian Piety did then yield. Yea, that even when Ministers had their Churches and Flocks assigned unto them in several, yet for maintenance of life, their former kind of allowance continued, till such time as Bishops and Churches Cathedral being sufficiently endowed with Lands, other Presbyters enjoyed in stead of their first Benefices, the Tithes and Profits of their own Congregations whole to themselves? Is it not manifest that in this Realm, and so in other the like Dominions, where the tenure of Lands is altogether grounded on Military Laws, and held as in Fee under Princes which are not made Heads of the people by force of voluntary Election, but born the Sovereign Lords of those whole and intire Territories, which Territories their famous Progenitors obtaining by way of Conquest, retained what they would in their own hands, and divided the rest to others with reservation of Sovereignty and Capital Interest; the building of Churches, and consequently the assigning of either Parishes or Benefices was a thing impossible without consent of such as were principal Owners of Land; in which consideration, for their more encouragement hereunto, they which did so far benefit the Church, had by common consent granted (as great equity and reason was) a right for them and their Heirs till the Worlds end, to nominate in those Benefices men whose quality the Bishop allowing might admit them thereunto? Is it not manifest, that from hence inevitably such inequality of Parishes hath grown, as causeth some through the multitude of people which have resort unto one Church, to be more than any one man can weild, and some to be of that nature by reason of Chappels annex'd, that they which are Incumbents should wrong the Church, if so be they had not certain Stipendaries under them, because where the Corps of the profit or Benefice is but one, the Title can be but one man, and yet the charge may require more? Not to mention therefore any other reason whereby it may clearly appear how expedient it is, and profitable for this Church to admit Ordinations without Title, this little may suffice to declare, how impertinent their allegations against it are out of ancient Canons, how untrue their confident asseverations, that only through negligence of Popish Prelates the custom of making such kind of Ministers hath prevailed in the Church of Rome against their Canons, and that with us it is expressly against the Laws of our own Government, when a Minister doth serve as a Stipendary Curate, which kind of service nevertheless the greatest Rabbins of that part do altogether follow. For howsoever they are loth peradventure to be named Curates, Stipendaries they are, and the labour they bestow is in other mens cures, a thing not unlawful for them to do, yet unseemly for them to condemn which practise it. I might here discover the like over-sight throughout all their Discourses, made in behalf of the peoples pretended right to elect their Ministers before the Bishop may lawfully ordain. But because we have other where as large disputed of popular Elections, and of the Right or Patronage, wherein is drowned whatsoever the people under any pretence of colour may seem to challenge about admission and choice of the Pastors that shall feed their Souls, I cannot see what one duty there is which always ought to go before Ordination, but only care of the parties worthiness, as well for integrity and vertue, as knowledge, yea, for vertue more, in as much as defect of knowledge may sundry ways be supplied, but the scandal of vicious and wicked life is a deadly evil.

81 The truth is, that of all things hitherto mentioned, the greatest is that three- Of the learning  
that should be  
in Ministers, their residence, and the number of their Livings:  
fold



a T. C. l. p. 70.

b 66.

c 69.

1 Tim. 3. 2.

Tit. 1. 9.

2 Tim. 1. 15.

Hos. 4. 6.

Mat. 15. 14.

Luke 1. 8.

Acts 20. 2.

1 Sam. 1. 19.

1 Tim. 4. 12.

Iohn 10. 4.

1 Pet. 5. 3.

Acts 20. 28.

1 Thes. 1. 17.

Council. Nic. 6.

15.

Mat. 6. 14.

1 Cor. 7. 24.

fold blot or blemish of notable ignorance, unconscionable absence from the Cures whereof men have taken charge, and unsatiable hunting after spiritual preferments without either care or conscience of the publick good. Whereof, to the end that we may consider as in Gods own sight and presence with all uprightness, sincerity and truth, let us particularly waigh and examine in every of them; First, how far forth they are reproveable by Reasons and Maximes of common right; Secondly, whether that which our Laws do permit, be repugnant to those Maximes, and with what equity we ought to judge of things practised in this case, neither on the one hand defending that which must be acknowledged out of square; nor on the other side condemning rashly whom we list, for whatsoever we disallow. Touching Arguments therefore, taken from the principles of common right, to prove that Ministers should be <sup>a</sup> learned, that they ought to be <sup>b</sup> Resident upon their Livings, and that <sup>c</sup> more then one only Benefice or Spiritual Living may not be granted unto one man; the first, because St. Paul requireth in a Minister ability to teach, to convince, to distribute the Word rightly, because also the Lord himself hath protessed, they shall be no Priests to him which have rejected knowledge, and because if the Blind lead the Blind, they must both needs fall into the Pit; the second, because Teachers are Shepherds, whose Flocks can be at no time secure from danger; they are Watchmen whom the Enemy doth always besiege, their labours in the Word and Sacraments admit no intermission; their duty requireth instruction and conference with men in private; they are the living Oracles of God, to whom the people must resort for counsel; they are commanded to be Patterns of Holiness, Leaders, Feeders, Supervisors amongst their own; it should be their grief, as it was the Apostles, to be absent, though necessarily, from them over whom they have taken charge; finally, the last, because Plurality and Residence are opposit, because the placing of one Clark in two Churches is a point of Merchandize and filthy gain, because no man can serve two Masters, because every one should remain in that Vocation whereto he is called; what conclude they of all this? Against Ignorance, against Non-residence, and against Plurality of Livings, is there any man so raw and dull, but that the Volumes which have been written, both of old and of late, may make him in so plentiful a cause eloquent? For if by that which is *generally* just and requisite, we measure what knowledge there should be in a Minister of the Gospel of Christ; the Arguments which Light of Nature offereth; the Laws and Statutes which Scripture hath; the Canons that are taken out of ancient Synods; the Decrees, and Constitutions of sincerest Times; the Sentences of all Antiquity; and in a word, even every mans full consent and conscience is against Ignorance in them that have charge and cure of Souls. Again, what availeth it if we be Learned and not Faithful? or what benefit hath the Church of Christ, if there be in us sufficiency without endeavour, or care to do that good which our place exacteth? Touching the pains and industry therefore, wherewith men are in conscience bound to attend the work of their Heavenly Calling, even as much as in them lieth, bending thereunto their whole endeavour, without either fraud, sophistication or guile; I see not what more effectual Obligation or Bond of Duty there should be urged, then their own only Vow and Promise made unto God himself, at the time of their Ordination. The work which they have undertaken requireth both care and fear. Their sloth that negligently perform it maketh them subject to malediction. Besides, we also know that the fruit of our pains in this Function is life both to our selves and others. And do we yet need incitements to labour? Shall we stop our ears both against those conjuring exhortations which Apostles, and against the fearful comminations which Prophets have uttered out of the mouth of God; the one for prevention, the other for reformation of our sluggishness in this behalf? St. Paul, *Amend to your selves, and to all the flock, whereof the holy Ghost hath made you overseers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood* Again, *I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus Christ, which shall judge the quick and the dead at his coming, preach the Word; be instant.* Jeremiah, *Wo unto the Pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture; I will visit you for the wickedness of your works, saith the Lord; the remnant of my sheep I will gather together out of all Countries, and will bring them again to their folds, they shall grow and*

Acts 20. 27.

Jer. 23. 2.

and increase, and I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them. Ezechiel, Ezech. 34. 2. Should not the shepherds, should they not feed the flock? Ye eat the fat, and ye clothe your selves with the wool, but the weak ye have not strengthened, the sick ye have not cured, neither have ye bound up the broken, nor brought home again that which was driven away; ye have not inquired after that which was lost, but with cruelty and rigor ye have ruled. And verie 8. Wherefore, as I live, &c. Nor let us think to excuse our selves, if happily we labour, though it be at randome, and fit not altogether idle abroad. For we are bound to attend that part of the flock of Christ, whereof the Holy Ghost hath made us over-seers. The residence of Ministers upon their own peculiar charge, is by so much the rather necessary; for that absencing themselves from the place where they ought to labour, they neither can do the good which is looked for at their hands, nor reap the comfort which sweeteneth life to them that spend it in these travels upon their own. For it is in this, as in all things else, which are through private interest dearer, than what concerneth either others wholly, or us but in part, and according to the rate of a general regard. As for plurality, it hath not only the same inconveniencies which are observed to grow by absence; but over and besides, at the least in common construction, a shew of that worldly humour which men do think should not reign so high. Now from hence their Collections are as followeth; first, a repugnancy or contradiction between the Principles of common right, and that which our Laws in special considerations have allowed: second y, a nullity or frustration of all such acts, as are by them supposed opposite to those Principles, an invalidity in all ordinations of men unable to preach, and in all dispensations which mitigate the Law of common right for the other two: And why so? Forsooth, because whatsoever we do in these three cases, and not by virtue of common right, we must yield it of necessity done by warrant of peculiar right or privilege. Now a privilege is said to be that, that for favour of certain persons cometh forth against common right; things prohibited are dispensed with, because things permitted are dispatched by common right; but things forbidden require dispensations. By which descriptions of a privilege and dispensation it is (they say) apparent, that a privilege must licence and authorize the same; which the Law against ignorance, non-residence and plurality doth infringe; and so be a Law contrariant or repugnant to the Law of Nature, and the Law of God, because all the reasons whereupon the Positive Law of man against these three was first established, are taken and drawn from the Law of Nature and the Law of God. For answer whereunto we will but lead them to answer themselves. First therefore if they will grant (as they must) that all direct oppositions of speech require one and the self-same subject, to be meant on both parts where opposition is pretended, it will so low that either the maxims of common right do enforce the very same things not to be good which we say are good, grounding our selves on the reasons, by vertue whereof our privileges are established; or if the one do not reach unto that particular subject for which the other have provided, then is there no contradiction between them. In all contradictions, if the one part be true, the other eternally must be false. And therefore if the Principles of common right, do at any time truly enforce that particular not to be good, which privileges make good, it argueth invincibly, that such privileges have been grounded upon error. But to say, that every privilege is opposite unto the principles of common right, because it dispenseth with that which common right doth prohibit, hath gross absurdity. For the voice of Equity and Justice is, that a general Law doth never derogate from a special Privilege; whereas if the one were contrariant to the other, a general Law being in force should always dissolve a Privilege. The reason why many are deceived by imagining that so it should do, and why men of better insight conclude directly it should not, doth rest in the subject or matter it self, which matter indefinitely considered in Laws of common right, is in Privileges considered as beset and limited with special circumstances, by means whereof to them which respect it, but by way of generality, it seemeth one and the same in both, although it be not the same, if once we descend to particular consideration thereof. Precepts do always propose perfection, not such as none can attain unto, for then in vain should we ask or require it at the hands of men, but such perfection as all men must aim at; to the end that as largely as humane providence and care can extend it, it

may take place. Moral Laws are the rules of Politick, those Politick, which are made to order the whole Church of God, Rules unto all particular Churches, and the Laws of every particular Church, Rules unto every particular man, within the body of the same Church; Now because the higher we ascend in these rules, the further still we remove from those specialties, which being proper to the subject, whereupon our actions must work are therefore chiefly considered by us, by them least thought upon that wade altogether in the two first kinds of general directions, their judgment cannot be exact and sound, concerning either Laws of Churches, or Actions of men in particular, because they determine of effects by a part of the causes only out of which they grow, they judge conclusions by demi-premisses and half principles, they lay them in the balance stript from those necessary material circumstances which should give them weight, and by shew of falling uneven with the scale of most universal and abstracted rules, they pronounce that too light which is not, if they had the skill to weigh it. This is the reason why men altogether conversant in study do know how to teach, but not how to govern; men experienced contrariwise govern well, yet know not which way to set down orderly the Precepts and Reasons of that they do. He that will therefore judge rightly of things done, must join with his forms and conceits of general speculation, the matter wherein our actions are conversant. For by this shall appear what equity there is in those Privileges and peculiar grants or Favours, which otherwise will seem repugnant to justice, and because in themselves considered they have a shew of repugnancy, this deceiveth those great Clerks, which hearing a privilege defined to be an *special right brought in by their power and authority, that make it for some publick benefit against the general course of reason*, are not able to comprehend how the word *against* doth import *exception*, without any *opposition* at all. For inasmuch as the hand of justice must distribute to every particular what is due, and judge what is due with respect had, no less of particular circumstances then of general rules and axiomes, it cannot fit all sorts with one measure, the wills, counsels, qualities and states of men being divers. For example, the Law of common right bindeth all men to keep their promises, perform their compacts, and answer the Faith they have given either for themselves, or others. Notwithstanding he which bargaineth with one under years, can have no benefit by this allegation, because he bringeth it against a person which is exempt from the common rule. Shall we then conclude, that thus to exempt certain men from the Law of common right, is against God, against Nature, against whatsoever may avail to strengthen and justify that Law before alledged, or else acknowledge (as the truth is) that special causes are to be ordered by special rules, that if men grown unto ripe age, disadvantage themselves by bargaining, yet what they have wittingly done, is strong, and in force against them, because they are able to dispose and manage their own affairs, whereas youth for lack of experience and judgment, being easily subject to circumvention, is therefore justly exempt from the Law of common right, whereunto the rest are justly subject? This plain inequality between men of years, and under years, is a cause why Equity and Justice cannot apply equally the same general Rule to both, but ordereth the one by common right, and granteth to the other a special privilege. Privileges are either transitory or permanent. <sup>a</sup> Transitory, such as serve only some one turn, or at the most extend no farther than to this or that man, with the end of whose natural life they expire; Permanent, such as the use whereof doth continue still, for that they belong unto certain *kinds* of men and causes which never die. Of this nature are all immunities and preeminences, which for just considerations one sort of men enjoyeth above another, both in the Church and Commonwealth, no man suspecting them of contrariety to any branch of those Laws or Reasons, whereupon the general right is grounded. Now there being general Laws and Rules whereby it cannot be denied, but the Church of God standeth bound to provide that the Ministry may be learned, that they which have charge may reside upon it, and that it may not be free for them in scandalous manner to multiply Ecclesiastical livings; it remaineth in the next place to be examined, what the Laws of the Church of England do admit, which may be thought repugnant to any thing hitherto alledged, and in what special consideration they seem to admit the same. Considering

<sup>a</sup> *Huius singulare est, quod contra tenorem rationis, propter aliquam utilitatem auctoritatem constituentium introductum est. Paulus ff. de Legib.*

<sup>b</sup> *Privilegium personale cum persona extinguitur, & privilegium datum actioni transfertur cum actione. Op. de regulis, part. 1. 227.*



ing therefore, that to furnish all places of Cure in this Realm, it is not an Army of twelve thousand learned men that would suffice, nor two Universities that can always furnish as many as decay in so great a number, nor a fourth part of the livings with Cure, that when they fall are able to yield sufficient maintenance for learned men, is it not plain, that unless the greatest part of the people should be left utterly without the publick use and exercise of Religion, there is no remedy but to take into the Ecclesiastical order, a number of men meanly qualified in respect of learning. For whatsoever we may imagine in our private Closets, or talk for Communication sake at our Boords, yea, or write in our Books, through a notional conceit of things needful, for performance of each mans duty, if once we come from the Theory of learning, to take out so many learned men, let them be diligently view'd, out of whom the choice shall be made, and thereby an estimate made, what degree of skill we must either admit, or else leave numbers utterly destitute of guides; and I doubt not but that men indued with sense of common equity, will soon discern, that besides eminent and competent knowledge, we are to descend to a lower step, receiving knowledge in that degree which is but tolerable. When we commend any man for learning, our speech importeth him to be more than meanly qualified that way; but when Laws do require learning as a quality, which maketh capable of any function, our measure to judge a learned man by, must be some certain degree of learning, beneath which we can hold no man so qualified. And if every man that listeth may set that degree himself, how shall we ever know when Laws are broken, when kept, seeing one man may think a lower degree sufficient, another may judge them insufficient that are not qualified in some higher degree. Wherefore of necessity either we must have some Judge, in whose conscience they that are thought and pronounced sufficient, are to be so accepted and taken, or else the Law it self is to let down the very lowest degree of fitness that shall be allowed in this kind. So that the question doth grow to this issue. *Saint Paul* requireth learning in Presbyters, yea such learning as doth enable them to exhort in doctrine which is sound, and to disprove them that gain-say it. What measure of ability in such things shall serve to make men capable of that kind of Office, he doth not himself precisely determine, but referreth it to the conscience of *Titus*, and others, which had to deal in ordaining Presbyters. We must therefore of necessity make this demand, whether the Church lacking such as the Apostle would have chosen, may with good conscience take out of such as it hath in a meaner degree of fitness, them that may serve to perform the service of publick Prayer, to minister the Sacraments unto the People, to solemnize Marriage, to visit the Sick, and bury the Dead, to instruct by reading, although by preaching they be not as yet so able to benefit and feed Christs flock. We constantly hold, that in this case the Apostles Law is not broken. He requireth more in Presbyters than there is found in many whom the Church of *England* alloweth. But no man being tyed unto impossibilities, to do that we cannot we are not bound. It is but a stratagem of theirs therefore, and a very indirect practice, when they publish large declamations to prove that learning is required in the Ministry, and to make the silly people believe that the contrary is maintained by the Bishops, and upheld by the Laws of the Land; whereas the question in truth is not whether learning be required, but whether a Church wherein there is not sufficient store of learned men to furnish all Congregations, should do better to let thousands of souls grow savage, to let them live without any publick service of God, to let their children dye unbaptized, to withhold the benefit of the other Sacrament from them, to let them depart this world like Pagans, without any thing as much as read unto them concerning the way of life, then as it doth in this necessity, to make such Presbyters as are so far forth sufficient, although they want that ability of preaching which some others have. In this point therefore we obey necessity, and of two evils we take the less; in the rest a publick utility is sought, and in regard thereof some certain inconveniencies tolerated, because they are recompensed with greater good. The Law giveth liberty of non-Residence for a time to such as will live in Universities, if they faithfully there labour to grow in knowledge, that so they may afterwards the more edifie and the better instruct their Congregations. The Church in their absence is not destitute, the

Tit. i. 9.

peoples salvation not neglected for the present time, the time of their absence is in the intendment of Law bestowed to the Churches great advantage and benefit, those necessary helps are procured by it, which turn by many degrees more to the peoples comfort in time to come, than if their Pastors had continually attended with them. So that the Law doth hereby provide in some part to remedy and help that evil which the former necessity hath imposed upon the Church. For compare two men of equal meanness, the one perpetually resident, the other absent for a space, in such sort as the Law permiteth: Allox unto both some nine years continuance with Cure of souls: And must not three years absence in all probability and likelihood make the one more profitable than the other unto Gods Church, by so much as the increase of his knowledge, gotten in those three years, may adde unto six years travel following? For the greater ability there is added to the instrument, wherewith it pleaseth God to save Souls, the more facility and expedition it hath to work that which is otherwise hardlier effected: As much may be said touching absence granted to them that attend in the families of Bishops, which Schools of gravity, discretion and wisdom, preparing men against the time that they come to reside abroad, are in my poor opinion even the fittest places that any ingenious mind can wish to enter into, between departure from private study and access to a more publick charge of Souls; yea no less expedient, for men of the best sufficiency and most maturity in knowledge, than the very Universities themselves are for the ripening of such as be raw. Employment in the families of Noble men, or in Princes Courts, hath another end, for which the self-same leave is given, not without greater respect to the good of the whole Church. For assuredly whoeuer doth well observe, how much all inferiour things depend upon the orderly courses and motions of those greater Orbes, will hardly judge it either meet or good, that the Angels assisting them should be driven to betake themselves unto other Stations, although by nature they were not tyed where now they are, but had charge also elsewhere, as long as their absence from beneath might but tolerably be supplied, and by descending their rooms above should become vacant. For we are not to dream in this case of any platform, which bringeth equally high and low unto Parish Churches, nor of any constraint to maintain at their own charge men sufficient for that purpose; the one so repugnant to the Majesty and Greatness of English Nobility, the other so improbable and unlikely to take effect, that they which mention either of both, seem not indeed to have conceived what either is. But the eye of Law is the eye of God, it looketh into the hearts and secret dispositions of men, it beholdeth how far one star differeth from another in glory, and as mens several degrees require, accordingly it guideth them, granting unto principal Personages privileges correspondent to their high estates, and that not only in Civil, but even in Spiritual affairs, to the end they may love that Religion the more, which no way seeketh to make them vulgar, no way diminisheth their dignity and greatness, but to do them good doth them honour also, and by such extraordinary favours teacheth them to be in the Church of God the same which the Church of God esteemeth them, more worth than thousands. It appeareth therefore in what respect the Laws of this Realm have given liberty of non-residence to some, that their knowledge may be increased, and their labours by that mean be made afterwards the more profitable to others, lest the houses of great men should want that daily exercise of Religion, wherein their example availeth as much, yea many times peradventure more than the Laws themselves, with the common sort. A third thing respected both in permitting absence, and also in granting to some that liberty of addition or plurality, which necessarily inforceth their absence, is a meer both just and conscionable regard, that as men are in quality, and as their services are in weight for the publick good, so likewise their rewards and encouragements by special privilege of Law might somewhat declare how the State it self doth accept their pains, much abhorring from their bestial and savage rudeness, which think that Oxen should only labour, and Asses feed. Thus to Readers in Universities, whose very paper and book expences their ancient allowances and stipends at this day do either not or hardly sustain; to Governours of Colledges, lest the great overplus of charges necessarily inforced upon them, by reason of their place,

and

and very slenderly supplied, by means of that change in the present condition of things, which their Founders could not fore-see; to men called away from their Cures, and imployed in weightier busin:is, either of the Church or Common-wealth, because to impose upon them a burthen which requireth their absence, and not to release them from the duty of Residence, were a kind of cruel and barbarous injustice; to Residents in Cathedral Churches, or upon dignities Ecclesiastical, forasmuch as these being rooms of greater Hospitality, places of more respect and consequence than the rest, they are the rather to be furnished with men of best quality, and the men for their qualities sake to be favoured above others; I say unto all these in regard of their worth and merit, the Law hath therefore given leave while themselves bear weightier burthens, to supply inferior by depuration; and in like consideration partly, partly also by way of honour to learning, Nobility and Authority permitteth, that men which have taken Theological degrees in Schools, the Suffraganes of Bishops, the househ'd Chaplains of men of honour, or in great Office, the brethren and sons of Lords temporal, or of Knights, if God shall move the hearts of such to enter at any time into holy Orders, may obtain to themselves a faculty or licence to hold two Ecclesiastical Livings though having cure; any Spiritual Person of the Queens Council three such Livings; her Chaplains, what number of promotions her self in her own Princely wisdom thinketh good to bestow upon them. But, as it fareth in such cases, the gap which for just considerations we open unto some, letteth in others through corrupt practices, to whom such favours were neither meant, nor should be communicated. The greatness of the Harvest, and the scarcity of able Workmen, hath made it necessary, that Law should yield to admit numbers of men but slenderly and meanly qualified. Hereupon because whom all other worldly hopes have forsaken, they commonly reserve Ministerial Vocation, as their last and surest refuge ever open to forlorn men; the Church that should nourish them, whose service she needeth, hath obtruded upon her their service, that know not otherwise how to live and sustain themselves. These finding nothing more easie then means, to procure the writing of a few lines to some one or other which hath authority, and nothing more usual than too much facility in condescending unto such requests, are often received into that Vocation whereunto their unworthiness is no small disgrace. Did any thing more aggravate the crime of *Jeroboams* prophane Apostasie, than that he chose to have his Clergy the scum and refuse of his who'e Land? Let no man spare to tell it them, they are not faithful towards God, that burthen wilfully his Church with such swarms of unworthy creatures. I will not say of all degrees in the Ministry, that which *S. Chrysostom* doth of the highest, *He that will undertake so weighty a charge, had need to be a man of great understanding, rarely assisted with Divine grace, integrity of manners, purity of life, and for all other virtues, to have in him more then a man;* but surely this I will say with *Chrysostom*, *We need not doubt whether God be highly displeased with us, or what the cause of his anger, is if things of so great fear and holiness as are the least and lowest duties of his service, be thrown wilfully on them whose not only mean, but bad and scandalous quality doth defile whatsoever they handle.* These eye-sores and blemishes, in continual attendants about the Service of Gods Sanctuary, do make them every day fewer that willingly resort unto it, till at length all affection and zeal towards God be extinct in them through a wearisom contempt of their persons, which for a time only live by Religion, and are for recompence, in fine, the death of the Nurse that feedeth them. It is not obscure, how inconvenient the Church hath found both this abuse of the liberty, which Law is enforced to grant; and not only this, but the like abuse of that favour also, which Law in other considerations already mentioned, affordeth touching Residence and plurality of spiritual Livings. Now that which is practised corruptly to the detriment and hurt of the Church, against the purpose of those very Laws, which notwithstanding are pretended in defence and justification thereof, we must needs acknowledge no less repugnant to the grounds and principles of common right, than the fraudulent proceedings of Tyrants to the principles of just Sovereignty. Howbeit not so those special privileges which are but instruments wrested and forced to serve malice. There is in the Patriark of Heathen Philosophers this precept, *Let no husbandman*

*Chrysost. de Sa-  
cerd. 3. c. 15.*

*αὐτὸς γὰρ ὁ  
ἐν τῷ βάλαντον  
ἵππῳ καὶ ἀνα-  
τίθῃ ἐν τῷ  
πρὸς τὴν τιμὴν  
ἔστι δὲ δὲ.*  
*Arist. Po. 7. c. 6.*



6 *Acts* 10:34.1 *Cor.* 4:11.1 *Thes* 2:9.2 *Thes* 3:8.

not no Handy-craftsman be a Priest. The reason whereupon he groundeth, is a maxime in the Law of Nature. It importeth greatly the good of all men that God be revered; with whose honour it standeth not that they which are publicly employed in his service should live of base and manuary Trades. Now compare herewith the Apostles words, *Ye know these hands have ministered to my necessities, and them that ate with me.* What think we? Did the Apostle any thing opposite herein, or repugnant to the Rules and Maximes of the Law of Nature? The self-same reasons that accord his actions with the Law of Nature shall declare our Privileges and his Laws no less consonant. Thus therefore we see, that although they urge very colourably the Apostles own sentences, requiring that a Minister should be able to divide rightly the Word of God, that they who are placed in charge should attend unto it themselves, which in absence they cannot do, and that they which have divers Cures must of necessity be absent from some, whereby the Law Apostolick seemeth apparently broken, which Law requiring attendance cannot otherwise be understood, than so as to charge them with perpetual Residence: again, though in every of these causes, they infinitely heap up the Sentences of Fathers, the Decrees of Popes, the ancient Edicts of Imperial authority, our own National Laws & Ordinances prohibiting the same, and grounding evermore their prohibitions, partly on the Laws of God and partly on reasons drawn from the light of Nature, yet hereby to gather and infer contradiction between those Laws which forbid indefinitely, and ours which in certain cases have allowed the ordaining of sundry Ministers, whose sufficiency for learning is but mean; again, the licensing of some to be absent from their Flocks, and of others to hold more than one only Living which hath cure of souls, I say, to conclude repugnancy between these especial permissions, and the former general prohibitions, which set not down their own limits, is erroneous, and the manifest cause thereof ignorance in differences of matter which both sorts of Law concern. If then our considerations be reasonable, just and good, whereupon we ground whatsoever our Laws have by special right permitted; if only the effects of abused Privileges be repugnant to the Maximes of common right, this main foundation of repugnancy being broken, whatsoever they have built thereupon falleth necessarily to the ground. Whereas therefore, upon surmise or vain supposal of opposition between our special, and the principles of common right, they gather that such as are with us ordained Ministers, before they can preach, be neither lawful, because the Laws already mentioned forbid generally to create such, neither are they indeed Ministers, although we commonly so name them, but whatsoever they execute by virtue of such their pretended vocation is void; that all our grants and tolerations, as well of this as the rest are frustrate and of no effect; the persons that enjoy them possess them wrongfully, and are deprivable at all hours; finally, that other just and sufficient remedy of evils there can be none besides the utter abrogation of these our mitigations, and the strict establishment of former Ordinances to be absolutely executed whatsoever follow, albeit the answer already made in discovery of the weak and unbound foundation whereupon they built these erroneous collections may be thought sufficient, yet because our desire is rather to satisfy, if it be possible, than to shake them off, we are with very good will contented to declare the causes of all particulars more formally and largely than the equity of our own defence doth require.

There is crept into the minds of men, at this day, a secret pernicious and pestilent conceit, that the greatest perfection of a Christian man doth consist in discovery of other mens faults, and in wit to discourse of our own profession. When the World most abounded with just, righteous and perfect men, their chiefest study was the exercise of piety, wherein for their safest direction, they reverently hearkened to the readings of the Law of God, they kept in mind the Oracles and Aphorisms of wisdom, which tended unto vertuous life; if any scruple of conscience did trouble them for matter of Actions which they took in hand, nothing was attempted before counsel and advice were had, for fear lest rashly they might offend. We are now more confident, not that our knowledge and judgment is riper, but because our desires are another way.

Their scope was obedience, ours is skill; their endeavour was reformation of life,  
our

our vertue nothing but to hear gladly the reproof of vice; they in the practice of their Religion wearied chiefly their knees and hands, we especially our ears and tongues. We are grown, as in many things else, so in this, to a kind of intemperancy, which (only Sermons excepted) hath almost brought all other duties of Religion out of taste. At the least they are not in that account and reputation which they should be. Now because men bring all Religion in a manner to the only office of hearing Sermons, if it chance that they who are thus conceited do embrace any special opinion different from other men, the Sermons that relish not that opinion, can in no wise please their appetite. Such therefore as preach unto them, but hit not the string they look for, are rejected as unprofitable, the rest as unlawful, and indeed no Ministers, if the faculty of Sermons want. For why? A Minister of the Word should, they say, be able rightly to divide the Word. Which Apostolick Canon many think they do well observe, when in opening the sentences of holy Scripture, they draw all things favourably spoken unto one side, but whatsoever is reprehensive, severe, and sharpe, they have others on the contrary part whom that must always concern, by which their over-partial and unindifferent proceeding while they thus labour amongst the people to divide the Word, they make the Word a meane to divide and distract the people. *Ὁρίσθημις to divide, aright, doth note in the Apostles Writings, soundness of doctrine only, and in meaning standeth opposite to ἀντιστήμις the broaching of new opinions against that which is received.* For questionless the first things delivered to the Church of Christ, were pure and sincere Truth. Which whosoever did afterwards oppugne, could not chuse but divide the Church into two moities; in which division, such as taught what was first believed, held the truer part, the contrary side in that they were teachers of novelty, erred. For prevention of which evil there are in this Church many singular and well devised remedies, as namely the use of subscribing to the Articles of Religion before admission to degrees of learning, or to any Ecclesiastical living, the custom of reading the same Articles and of approving them in publick Assemblies wheresoever men have Benefices with cure of Souls, the order of testifying under their hands allowance of the Book of Common-Prayer, and the Book of ordaining Ministers; finally, the Discipline and moderate severity which is used either in other wise correcting or silencing them that trouble and disturbe the Church with Doctrines which tend unto Innovation; it being better that the Church should want altogether the benefit of such mens labours, than endure the mischief of their inconformity to good Laws; in which case if any repine at the course and proceedings of Justice, they must learn to content themselves with the answer of *M. Curium*, which had sometime occasion to cut off one from the Body of the Common-wealth, in whose behalf because it might have been pleaded that the party was a man serviceable, he therefore began his judicial sentence with this preamble, *Non esse opus Reip. eo civi qui parere nesciret*; The Common-wealth needeth men of quality, yet never those men which have not learned how to obey. But the ways which the Church of England hath taken to provide that they who are Teachers of others may do it soundly, that the Purity and Unity as well of ancient Discipline as Doctrine may be upheld, that avoiding singularities, we may all glorifie God with one heart and one tongue, they of all men do least approve, that most urge the Apostles Rule and Canon. For which cause they alledge it not so much to that purpose, as to prove that unpreaching Ministers (for so they term them) can have no true nor lawful calling in the Church of God. *Saint Augustine* hath said of the will of man, that simply it will proceedeth from Nature, but our well-willing is from Grace. We say as much of the Minister of God publicly to teach and instruct the Church; is necessary in every Ecclesiastical Minister, but ability to teach by Sermons is a Grace which God doth bestow on them whom he maketh sufficient for the commendable discharge of their duty. That therefore wherein a Minister differeth from other Christian men, is not as some have childishly imagined, the sound preaching of the Word of God, but as they are lawfully and truly Governours to whom authority of regiment is given in the Common-wealth, according to the order which Politie hath set, to Canonical Ordination in the Church of Christ is that which maketh a lawful Minister, as touching the validity of any Act which appertaineth to that vocation. The cause

Vuln. l. 6. c. 3.

Or. man. p. 11.

cause why Saint *Paul* willed *Timothy* not to be over-hasty in ordaining Ministers, was (as we very well may conjecture) because imposition of hands doth consecrate and make them Ministers, whether they have gifts and qualities fit for the laudable discharge of their duties or no. If want of learning and skill to preach did frustrate their Vocation, Ministers ordained before they be grown unto that maturity should receive new Ordination, whensoever it chanceth that study and industry doth make them afterwards more able to perform the office, than which what conceit can be more absurd? Was not *S. Augustine* himself contented to admit an Assistant in his own Church, a man of small Erudition, considering that what he wanted in knowledge was supplied by those vertues which made his life a better Orator, than more learning could make others whose conversation was less Holy? Were the Priests, since *Moses*, all able and sufficient men, learnedly to interpret the Law of God? Or was it ever imagined, that this defect should frustrate what they executed, and deprive them of right unto any thing they claimed by vertue of their Priesthood? Surely, as in Magistrates, the want of those gifts which their Office needeth, is cause of just imputation of blame in them that wittingly chuse insufficient and unfit men when they might do otherwise, and yet therefore is not their choice void, nor every action of Magistracy frustrate in that respect. So whether it were of necessity, or even of very carelessness, that men unable to preach should be taken in Pastors rooms, nevertheless, it seemeth to be an error in them, which think that the lack of any such perfection defeateth utterly their Calling. To wish that all men were so qualified, as their Places and Dignities require, to have all sinister and corrupt dealings which hereunto are any lett, to cover speedy redress of those things whatsoever, whereby the Church sustaineth detriment, these good and vertuous desires cannot offend any but ungodly minds. Notwithstanding, some in the true vehemency, and others under the fair pretence of these desires, have adventured that which is strange, that which is violent and unjust. There are which in confidence of their general allegations concerning the knowledge, the Residence and the single Livings of Ministers, presume not only to annihilate the solemn Ordinations of such as the Church must of force admit, but also to urge a kind of universal proscription against them, to set down Articles, to draw Commissions, and almost to name themselves of the *Quorum*, for inquiry into mens estates and dealings, whom at their pleasure they would deprive and make obnoxious to what punishment themselves list, and that not for any violation of Laws, either Spiritual or Civil, but because men have trusted the Laws too far, because they have held and enjoyed the liberty which Law granteth, because they had not the wit to conceive as these men do, that Laws were made to intrap the simple, by permitting those things in shew and appearance, which indeed should never take effect, for as much as they were but granted with a secret condition to be put in practice, *If they should be profitable and agreeable with the Word of God*, which condition failing in all Ministers that cannot preach, in all that are absent from their Livings, and in all that have divers Livings (for so it must be presumed, though never as yet proved) therefore as men which have broken the Law of God, and Nature, they are depriveable at all hours. Is this the Justice of that Discipline whereunto all Christian Churches must stoop and submit themselves? Is this the equity wherewith they labour to reform the World? I will no way diminish the force of those Arguments whereupon they ground. But if it please them to behold the visage of these collections in another Glass, there are Civil as well as Ecclesiastical Un sufficiencies, Non-residences, and Pluralities; yea the reasons which Light of Nature hath ministred against both are of such affinity, that much less they cannot enforce in the one than in the other. When they that bear great Offices be persons of mean worth, the contempt wherinto their authority groweth, <sup>a</sup>weakness the sinews of the whole State. Notwithstanding, where many Governours are needful, and they not many, whom their quality can commend, <sup>b</sup>the penury of worthier must needs make the meaner sort of men capable: Cities in the absence of their Governours, are as ships wanting Pilots at Sea. But were it therefore <sup>c</sup>Justice to punish whom superiour Authority pleaseth to call from home, or alloweth to be employed elsewhere? In committing <sup>d</sup>many Offices to one man, there are apparently these inconveniences; the

The Author  
of the *Abstrall*.  
a *per ydior xic-  
ent xabroſus  
de iſtius dñi  
per ydior xic-  
ſum. Aſſiſo.*  
Polit. 2. cap. 11.  
b *Nec ignoro  
maximos bono-  
res ad parum  
dignos penuria  
meliorum ſole-  
re deſerri.* Ma-  
maxim. paneg  
ad Julian.  
c *Neque enim  
aquum conſum  
eſt abſente  
reipub. cauſa  
inter res re-  
ferri dum rei-  
pub. operatur.*  
U pian. l. 15.  
d *ſi maritus ad  
legem Iulianam  
aſſiſter.*  
d *Ariſt. Polit.*  
lib. 1. cap. 11.  
See the like  
Preamble fra-  
med by the  
Author of the  
*Abſtrall*, where  
he ſancitieth a  
Biſhop depo-  
ſing one unapt  
to preach, whom  
himſelf had be-  
fore ordained.

Common-



Common-wealth doth lose the benefit of serviceable men, which might be trained up in those rooms; it is not easie for one man to discharge many mens duties well; in service of Warfare and Navigation, were it not the overthrow of whatsoever is undertaken, if one or two should ingross such Offices as being now divided into many hands, are discharged with admirable both perfection and expedition? Nevertheless, be it far from the mind of any reasonable man to imagine, that in these considerations Princes either ought of duty to revoke all such kind of grants, though made with very special respect to the extraordinary merit of certain men, or might in honour demand of them the resignation of their Offices, with speech to this or the like effect. *For as much as you A. B. by the space of many years, have done us that faithful service in most important affairs, for which we always judging you worthy of much honour, have therefore committed unto you from time to time, very great and weighty Offices, which hitherto you quietly enjoy: we are now given to understand, that certain grave and learned men have found in the books of ancient Philosophers, divers Arguments drawn from the common light of Nature, and declaring the wonderful discommodities which use to grow by Dignities thus heaped together in one; For which cause, at this present, moved in conscience and tender care for the publick good, we have summoned you hither, to dispossess you of those places, and to depose you from those rooms, wherof indeed by vertue of our own grant, yet against reason, you are possessed. Neither ought you, or any other to think us rash, light, or inconstant, in so doing: For we tell you plain, that herein we will both say and do that thing which the noble and wise Emperour sometimes both said and did, in a matter of far less weight than this; Quod inconsultò fecimus, consultò revocamus, That which we unadvisedly have done, we advisedly will revoke and undo.* Now for mine own part, the greatest harm I would wish them who think that this were consonant with equity and right, is, that they might but live where all things are with such kind of Justice ordered, till experience have taught them to see their error. As for the last thing which is incident into the cause whereof we speak, namely, what course were the best and safest whereby to remedy such evils as the Church of God may sustain, where the present liberty of Law is turned to great abuse, some light we may receive from abroad, not unprofitable for direction of Gods own sacred house and family. The Romanes being a people full of generosity, and by nature courteous, did no way more shew their gentle disposition, than by easie condescending to set their bond-men at liberty. Which benefit in the happier and better times of the Common-wealth, was bestowed for the most part as an ordinary reward of vertue, some few now and then also purchasing freedom with that which their just labours could gain, and their honest frugality save. But as the Empire daily grew up, so the manners and conditions of men decayed, wealth was honoured, and vertue not cared for, neither did any thing seem opprobrious out of which there might rise commodity and profit, so that it could be no marvel in a State thus far degenerated, if when the more ingenious sort were become base, the baser laying aside all shame and face of honesty, did some by robberies, burglaries, and prostitutions of their bodies gather wherewith to redeem liberty; others obtain the same at the hands of their Lords, by serving them as vile instruments in those attempts, which had been worthy to be revenged with ten thousand deaths. A learned, judicious, and polite Historian, having mentioned so foul disorders; giveth his judgement and censure of them in this sort: *Such eye-sore in the Common-wealth have occasioned many vertuous minds to condemn altogether the custome of granting liberty to any bond slave, for as much as it seemed a thing absurd, that a people which commanded all the world should consist of so vile refuse. But neither is this the only custome wherein the prescitable inventions of former are depraved by later Ages; and for my self I am not of their opinion that with the abrogation of so grossly used customes, which abrogation might peradventure be cause of greater inconveniences ensuing, but as much as may be I would rather advise that redress were sought, through the careful providence of chief Rulers and Overseers of the Common-wealth, by whom a yearly survey being made of all that are manumitted, they which seem worthy might be taken and divided into Tribes with other Citizens, the rest dispersed into Colonies abroad, or otherwise disposed of, that the Common-wealth might sustain neither harm nor disgrace by them.* The ways

Dionys. Halica.  
Rom. antiq. l. 4.

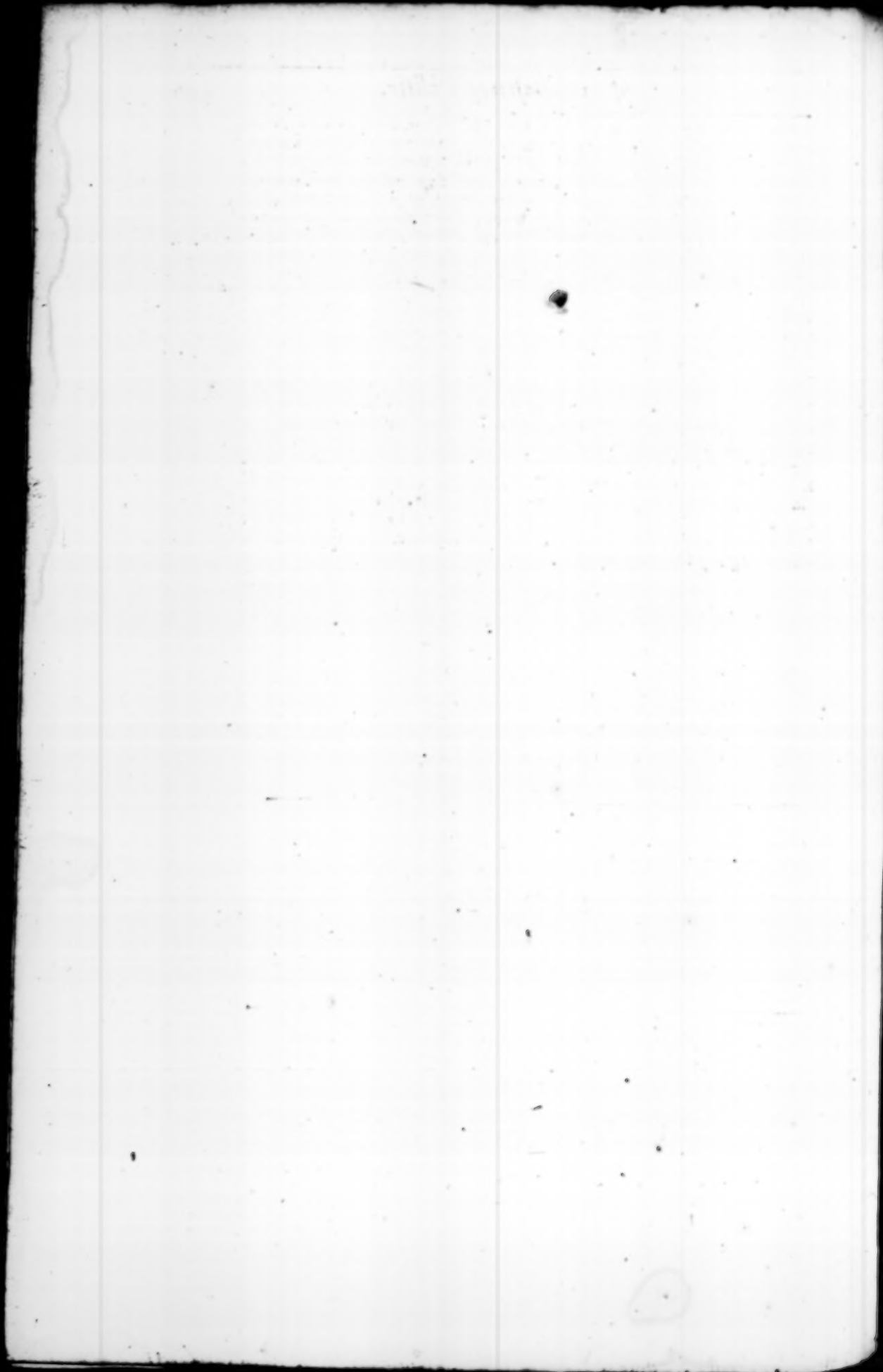
to meet with disorders growing by abuse of Laws, are not so intricate and secret, especially in our case, that men should need either much advertisement or long time for the search thereof. And if counsel to that purpose may seem needful, this Church (God be thanked) is not destitute of men endued with ripe judgement, whensoever any such thing shall be thought necessary. For which end at this present to propose any special inventions of mine own, might argue in a man of my place and calling more presumption perhaps than wit. I will therefore leave it intire unto graver consideration, ending now with request only and most earnest sute; first, that they which give Ordination, would, as they tender the very honour of Jesus Christ, the safety of men, and the endless good of their own souls, take heed, lest unnecessarily, and through their default the Church be found worse, or less furnished than it might be: secondly, that they which by right of Patronage have power to present unto spiritual Livings, and may in that respect much damage the Church of God, would, for the ease of their own account in that dreadful day, somewhat consider what it is to betray for gain the Souls which Christ hath redeemed with blood, what to violate the sacred bond of fidelity and solemn promise, given at the first to God and his Church by them, from whose original interest together with the self-same Title of right, the same Obligation of duty likewise is descended: Thirdly, that they unto whom the granting of Dispensations is committed, or which otherwise have any stroke in the disposition of such preferments as appertain unto learned men, would bethink themselves what it is to respect any thing either above or besides merit, considering how hardly the world taketh it, when to men of commendable note and quality there is so little respect had, or so great unto them whose defects are very mean, that nothing doth seem more strange than the one sort, because they are not accounted of, and the other because they are, it being every mans hope and expectation in the Church of God, especially that the only purchase of greater rewards should be always greater deserts, and that nothing should ever be able to plant a Thorn where a Vine ought to grow: Fourthly, that honourable Personages, and they, who by virtue of any principal office in the Common-wealth are enabled to qualifie a certain number, and make them capable of favours or faculties above others, suffer not their names to be abused, contrary to the true intent and meaning of wholesome Laws, by men in whom there is nothing notable besides covetousness and ambition: Fifthly, that the graver and wiser sort in both Universities, or whosoever they be, with whose approbation the marks and recognisances of all learning are bestowed, would thinke the Apostles caution against unadvised Ordinations not impertinent or unnecessary to be born in mind, even when they grant those degrees of Schools, which degrees are not *gratia gratia data*, kindnesses bestowed by way of humanity, but they are *gratia gratum facientes*, favours which always imply a testimony given to the Church and Common-wealth, concerning mens sufficiency for manners and knowledge; a testimony, upon the credit whereof sundry Statutes of the Realm are built, a testimony so far available, that nothing is more respected for the warrant of divers mens ability to serve in the affairs of the Realm; a testimony wherein if they violate that Religion, wherewith it ought to be always given, and do thereby induce into error such as deem it a thing uncivil to call the credit thereof in question, let them look that God shall return back upon their heads, and cause them in the state of their own Corporations to feel either one way or other the punishment of those harms, which the Church through their negligence doth sustain in that behalf: Finally, and to conclude, that they who enjoy the benefit of any special Indulgence or Favour which the Laws permit, would as well remember what is duty towards the Church, and in conscience towards God they ought to do, as what they may do by using to their own advantage whatsoever they see tolerated, no man being ignorant that the cause why absence in some cases hath been yielded unto, and in equity thought sufferable, is the hope of greater fruit through industry elsewhere; the reason likewise wherefore pluralities are allowed unto men of note, a very sovereign and special care, that as Fathers in the ancient world did declare the preeminence of priority in birth, by doubling the worldly portions of their first born; so the Church by a course not unlike in assigning mens rewards, might testify an estimation had proportionably of their virtues,

vertues, according to the ancient rule Apottolick, *They which excell in labour, ought to excell in honour*; and therefore unless they answer faithfully the expectation of the Church herein, unless sincerely they bend their wits day and night, both to sow because they reap, and to sow as much more abundantly as they reap more abundantly than other men, whereunto by their very acceptance of such benignities they formally bind themselves, let them be well assured that the honey which they eat with fraud shall turn in the end into true gall, for as much as Laws are the sacred image of his wisdom who most severely punisheth those colourable and subtle crimes that seldom are taken within the walk of humane Justice: I therefore conclude, that the grounds and maxims of common right whereupon Ordinations of Ministers unable to preach, tolerations of absence from their Cures; and the multiplications of their spiritual livings are disproved, do but indefinitely enforce them unlawful, not unlawful univerſally and without exception; that the Laws which indefinitely are against all these things, and the Priviledges which make for them in certain cases are not the one repugnant to the other, that the Laws of God and Nature are violated through the effects of abused Priviledges; that neither our Ordinations of men unable to make Sermons, nor our dispensations for the rest, can be justly proved frustrate by vertue of any such surmised opposition between the special Laws of this Church which have permitted, and those general which are alledged to disprove the same; that when priviledges by abuse are grown incommodious, there must be redress; that for remedy of such evils, there is no necessity the Church should abrogate either in whole or in part the specialties before mentioned; and that the most to be desired were a voluntary reformation thereof on all hands which may give passage unto any abuse.

For the main Hypothesis or foundation of these conclusions, let that before set down in the 9. be read together with this last the 81. Paragraph.

FINIS.





# OF THE LAWES OF Ecclesiastical Policy:

*The sixth Book.*

Containing their fifth Assertion.

*That our Lawes are corrupt and repugnant to the Lawes of God, in matter belonging to the power of Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, in that we have not throughout all Churches certain Lay-Elders established for the exercise of that Power.*



He same men which in heat of contention, do hardly either speak, give ear to reason, being after sharp and bitter conflicts, retired to a calm remembrance of all their former proceedings; the causes that brought them into quarrell, the course which their striving affections have followed, and the issue wherunto they are come, may peradventure as troubled waters, in small time of their own accord, by certain easie degrees settle themselves again, and so recover that clearnesse of well advised judgement, whereby they shall stand at the length indifferent, both to yeild and admit any reasonable satisfaction, where before they could not endure with patience to be gain-said. Neither will I despair of the like successe in these unpleasant controversies touching Ecclesiastical Policy, the time of silence which both parts have willingly taken to breath, seeming now as it were a pledge of all mens quiet contentment, to hear with more indifferency the weightiest and last remains of that Cause, Jurisdiction, Dignity, Dominion Ecclesiastical. For, let any man imagine, that the bare and naked difference of a few Ceremonies could either have kindled so much fire, or have caused it to flame so long; but that the parties which herein laboured mightily for change, and (as they say) for Reformation, had somewhat more then this mark whereto to aim.

Having therefore drawn out a compleat Form, as they suppose, of publick service to be done to God, and set down their plot for the Office of the Ministry in that behalf; they very well knew, how little their labours so far forth bestowed, would avails them in the end, without a claim of Jurisdiction to uphold the Fabrick which they had erected; and this neither likely to be obtained, but by the strong hand of the people, nor the people unlikely to favour it; the more, if overture were made of their own interest, right and title thereunto. Whereupon there are many which have conjectured this to be the cause, why in all the projects of their Discipline, (it being manifest that their drift is, to wrest the Key of Spiritual Authority out of the hands of

The question between us, whether all Congregations, or Parishes ought to have Lay-Elders invested with power of Jurisdiction in spiritual causes.

Lib 6.

Lib 7.

Lib 8.

former Governours, and equally to possesse therewith the Pastors of all several Congregations) the people first for surer accomplishment, and then for better defence thereof, ~~are~~ pretended necessary Actors in those things, whereunto their ability for the most part is as slender, as their title and challenge unjust.

Notwithstanding (whether they ~~law~~ it necessary for them to perswade the people, without whose help they could do nothing, or else (which I rather think) the affection which they bear towards this new Form of Government, made them to imagine it Gods own Ordinance,) Their Doctrine is, that by the Law of God, there must be for ever in all Congregations certain Lay-~~Elders~~, Ministers of Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction in as much as our Lord and Saviour by Testament (for so they presume) hath left all Ministers or Pastors in the Church Executors equally to the whole power of (spiritual Jurisdiction, and with them hath joyned the people as Colleagues. By maintenance of which assertion, there is unto that part apparently gained a twofold advantage, both because the people in this respect are much more easily drawn to favour it, as a matter of their own interest; and for that, if they chance to be crossed by such as oppose against them, the colour of Divine Authority, assumed for the grace & countenance of that power in the vulgar sort, furnisheth their Leaders with great abundance of matter behoveful for their encouragement, to proceed alwayes with hope of fortunate successe in the end, considering their cause to be as *Dauids* was, a just defence of power given them from above, and consequently their Adversaries quarrel the same with *Sais* by whom the Ordinance of God was withstood.

Numb. 161

Now on the contrary side, if this their surmise prove false; if such, as in justification whereof no evidence sufficient either hath been or can be alledged (as I hope it shall clearly appear after due examination and trial) let them then consider whether those words of *Corah*, *Dathan* and *Abiram* against *Moses* and against *Aaron*, it is too much that ye take upon you, you seeing all the Congregation is holy, be not the very true abstract and abridgment of all their published Admonitions, Demonstrations, Supplications, and Treatises whatsoever, whereby they have laboured to void the rooms of their spiritual Superiours before Authorized, and to advance the new fancied Scepter of Lay-~~Presbyterial~~ Power.

#### The nature of Spiritual Jurisdiction.

But before there can be any sealed Determination, whether Truth do rest on their part, or on ours, touching Lay-Elders, we are to prepare the way thereunto, by explication of some things requisite, and very needful to be considered, as first how besides that spiritual power, which is of Order, and was instituted for performance of those duties, wherof there hath been speech already had, there is in the Church no less necessary, a second kind, which we call the power of Jurisdiction. When the Apostle doth speak of ruling the Church of God, and of receiving accusations, his words have evident reference to the power of Jurisdiction. Our Saviours words to the power of Order, when he giveth his Disciples charge, saying, *Preach, Baptize: Do this in remembrance of me.* *Τὸς ἑσὺν οὗτοί ἐστιν οἱ ἄνθρωποι οἱ ὧν ἔσται ἡ ἐκκλησία ὡς ἡ ἐκκλησία τοῦ σώματος τοῦ σώματος, ὅς ἐστιν ὁ ἰσχυρὸς Χριστός.* *Epist. ad Smyrn.* A Bishop faith (*Ignatius*) doth bear the Image of God and of Christ, of God in ruling, of Christ in administering holy things: By this therefore we see a manifest difference acknowledged between the power of Ecclesiastical Order, and the power of Jurisdiction Ecclesiastical.

Athen. 20. 28.

1 Tim. 5. 19.

Marc. 6. 15.

Mat. 23. 19.

1 Cor. 11. 24.

The spiritual power of the Church, being such as neither can be challenged by right of nature, nor could by humane authority be instituted, because the forces and effects thereof are supernatural and Divine, we are to make no doubt or question, but that from him which is the Head, it hath descended unto us that are the Body now invested therewith. He gave it for the benefit and



and good of souls, as a mean to keep them in the Path which leadeth unto endless felicity, a bridle to hold them within their due and convenient bounds, and if they do go astray, a forcible help to reclaim them: Now although there be no kind of Spiritual Power, for which our Lord Jesus Christ did not give both Commission to exercise, and direction how to use the same, although his Laws in that behalf recorded by the holy Evangelists be the onely ground and foundation, whereupon the practice of the Church must sustaine it self: yet as all multitudes once grown to the form of societies are even thereby naturally warranted, to enforce upon their own subjects particularly those things, which publick wisdom shall judge expedient for the common good: so it were absurd to imagine the Church it self the most glorious amongst them abridged of this liberty, or to think that no Law, Constitution or Canon, can be further made, either for Limitation or Amplification, in the practice of our Saviours Ordinances, whatsoever occasion be offered through variety of times, and things, during the state of this inconstant world, which bringeth forth daily such new evils, as must of necessity by new remedies be redrest, did both of old enforce our venerable Predecessor, and will alwayes constrain others, sometime to make, sometime to abrogate, sometime to augment, and again to abridge sometime; in sum, often to vary, alter and change customes, incident into the manner of exercising that Power which doth it self continue alwayes one and the same: I therefore conclude, that Spiritual Authority is a Power which Christ hath given to be used over them which are subject unto it for the eternal good of their souls according to his own most Sacred Laws, and the wholsome positive Constitutions of his Church.

In Doctrine referred unto Action and Practice, as this is, which concerns Spiritual Jurisdiction, the first sound and perfect understanding is the knowledge of the end, because thereby both use doth frame, and contemplation judge all things.

*Of Penitency, the chiefeft end propounded by Spiritual Jurisdiction. Two kinds of Penitency; the one a Private Duty toward God, the other a Duty of external Discipline. Of the vertue of Repentance from which the former Duty proceedeth: And of Contrition the first part of that Duty.*

SEing that the chiefeft cause of Spiritual Jurisdiction is to provide for the health and safety of mens Souls, by bringing them to see and repent their grievous offences committed against God, as also to reform all injuries offered with the breach of Christian Love and Charity toward their brethren, in matters of Ecclesiastical cognizance; the use of this power, shall by so much the plainlier appear, if first the nature of Repentance it self be known.

We are by Repentance to appease whom we offend by sin. For which cause, whereas all sin deprives us of the favour of Almighty God, our way of Reconciliation with him, is the inward secret Repentance of the heart; which inward Repentance alone sufficeth, unlesse some special thing, in the quality of sin committed, or in the party that hath done amisse, require more. For besides our submission in Gods sight, Repentance must not onely proceed to the private contrition of men, if the sin be a crime in iurious; but also farther, where the wholsome Discipline of Gods Church exacteth a more exemplary and open satisfaction. Now the Church being satisfied with outward repentance, as God is with inward, it shall not be amisse, for more perspicuity to term this latter alwayes the Vertue, that former the Discipline of Repentance: Which Discipline hath two sorts of Penitents to work upon, in as much as it hath been accustomed to lay the Offices of Repentance on some, seeking

Si a

others,

*Penitentia secundum, et unius quod in alia negotium est, tanto potius probatur est ut no sola conscientia profertur, sed aliquoties etiam alia administratur.*

Second penitency following that before Baptism, and being not more then once admitted in one man, requireth by so much the greater labour to make it manifest, for that it is not a work which can come again in tryal, but must be therefore with some open solemnity executed, and not left to be discharged with the privacy of conscience alone. *Tertul. de pe.*

others, shunning them, on some at their own voluntary request, on others altogether against their wills, as shall hereafter appear by store of ancient examples. Repentance being therefore either in the sight of God alone, or else with the notice also of men: Without the one, sometime thoroughly performed, but alwayes practised more or lesse, in our daily devotions and prayers, we have no remedy for any fault: Whereas the other is onely required in sins of a certain degree and quality; the one necessary for ever, the other so far forth as the Laws and Orders of Gods Church shall make it requisite, the nature, parts and effects of the one alwayes the same; The other limited, extended, varied by infinite occasions.

The vertue of Repentance in the heart of man is Gods handy work, a fruit or effect of Divine Grace, which Grace continually offereth it self, even unto them that have forsaken it, as may appear by the words of Christ in St. *Iohns* Revelation, *I stand at the door and knock*: Nor doth he only knock without, but also within assist to open, whereby access and entrance is given to the heavenly presence, of that saving power, which maketh man a repaired Temple for Gods good Spirit again to inhabit. And albeit the whole traine of vertues which are implied in the name of Grace be infused at one instant; yet because when they meet and concur unto any effect in man, they have their distinct operations rising orderly one from another; It is no unnecessary thing that we note the way or method of the Holy Ghost, in framing mans sinful heart to repentance: A work, the first foundation whereof is laid by opening and illuminating the eye of faith, because by faith are discovered the principles of this action, whereunto unlesse the understanding do first assent, there can follow in the will towards penitency no inclination at all: Contrariwise the Resurrection of the dead, the Judgement of the World to come, and the endlesse misery of sinners being apprehended, this worketh fear, such as theirs was, who feeling their own distresse and perplexity in that passion, besought our Lords Apostles earnestly to give them counsel what they should do. For fear is impotent and unable to advise it self, yet this good it hath, that men are thereby made desirous to prevent, if possibly they may, whatsoever evil they dread: The first thing that wrought the *Ninivites* repentance, was fear of destruction within fourty dayes; signes and miraculous works of God, being extraordinary representations of Divine power, are commonly wont to stir any the most wicked with terror, lest the same power should bend it self against them: And because tractable minds, though guilty of much sin, are hereby moved to forsake those evil wayes, which make his power in such sort their astonishment and fear; Therefore our Saviour denounced his curse against *Corabzin* and *Bethsaida*, saying, that if *Tyre* and *Sidon* had seen that which they did, those signes which prevailed little with the one, would have brought the others repentance. As the like thereunto did in the men given to curious Arts, of whom the Apostolick History saith, that *Fear came upon them, and many which had followed vain sciences, burnt openly the very books out of which they had learned the same*; As fear of contumely and disgrace amongst men, together with other civil punishments, are a bridle to restrain from any hainous acts, whereinto mens outrage would otherwise break; So the fear of Divine revenge and punishment where it taketh place, doth make men desirous to be rid likewise from that inward guiltinesse of sin, wherein they would else securely continue. Howbeit, when Faith hath wrought a fear of the event of sin, yet repentance hereupon ensueth not, unlesse our belief conceive both the possibility and means to avert evil: The possibility in as much as God is merciful, and most willing to have sin cured; The means, because he hath plainly taught what is requisite, and shall suffice unto that purpose. The nature





time, to feel no quietnesse within our selves, to take neither sleep nor food with contentment, never to give over supplications, confessions, and other penitent duties, till the light of Gods reconciled favour, shine in our darkned soul.

Fals. de remi.  
peccat. lib. 2.  
cap. 15.

*Fulgentius* asking the question, why *David's* confession should be held for effectual penitence and not *Saul's*; answereth, that the one hated sin, the other feared only punishment in this world: *Saul's* acknowledgement of sin was fear, *David's* both fear and also love.

Jons c. 3. 9.

This was the fountain of *Peters* tears, this the life and spirit of *David's* eloquence, in those most admirable Hymns intitled *Penitentiall*, where the words of sorrow for sin, do melt the very bowels of God remitting it, and the comforts of grace in remitting sin, carry him which sorrowed, rapt as it were into heaven with extacies of joy and gladnesse. The first motive of the *Ninivites* unto repentance was their belief in a sermon of fear, but the next and most immediate, an axiom of love; *Who can tell whether God will turn away his fierce wrath, that we perish not*: No conclusion such as theirs, let every man turn from his evil way, but out of premisses such as theirs were, fear and love: Wherefore the well-spring of repentance is faith, first breeding fear, and then love, which love causeth hope, hope resolution of attempt, *I will go to my Father, and say, I have sinned against heaven and against thee*; that is to say, I will do what the duty of a Convert requireth.

Now in a Penitents or Converts duty, there are included; first, the aversion of the will from sin; secondly, the submission of our selves to God, by supplication and prayer; thirdly, the purpose of a new life, testified with present works of amendment: Which three things do very well seem to be comprised in one definition, by them which handle repentance, as a vertue that hateth, bewaileth, and sheweth a purpose to amend sin: We offend God in thought, word, and deed. To the first of which three, they make contrition; to the second, confession; and to the last, our works of satisfaction, answerable.

Contrition doth not here import these sudden pangs and convulsions of the mind, which cause sometimes the most forsaken of God, to retract their own doings; it is no natural passion or anguish, which riseth in us against our wills, but a deliberate aversion of the will of man from sin, which being alwaies accompanied with grief, and grief oftentimes partly with tears, partly with other external signes; it hath been thought, that in these things, contrition doth chiefly consist: whereas the chiefest thing in contrition, is that alteration whereby the will which was before delighted with sin, doth now abhor and shun nothing more. But forasmuch as we cannot hate sin in our selves without heavinesse and grief, that there should be in us a thing of such hateful quality, the will averted from sin must needs make the affection suitable; yea, great reason why it should so do: For since the will by conceiving sin hath deprived the soul of life; and of life there is no recovery without repentance the death of sin; repentance not able to kill sin, but by withdrawing the will from it; the will impossible to be withdrawn, unlesse it concur with a contrary affection to that which accompanied it before in evil: Is it not clear, that as an inordinate delight did first begin sin, so repentance must begin with a just sorrow, a sorrow of heart, and such a sorrow as renteth the heart; neither a feigned nor slight sorrow; not feigned, least it increase sin; nor slight, least the pleasures of sin over-match it.

Wherefore of Grace, the highest cause from which mans penitency doth proceed, of Faith, Fear, Love, Hope, what force and efficiency they have in repentance: of parts and duties thereunto belonging, comprehended in the Schoolemens definitions; finally, of the first among those duties, Contrition which disliketh and bewaileth iniquity, let this suffice.

And

And because God will have offences by repentance, not onely abhorred within our selves, but also with humble supplication displayed before him, and a testimony of amendment to be given, even by present works, worthy repentance, in that they are contrary to those we renounce and disclaim: Although the vertue of Repentance do require, that her other two parts, Confession and Satisfaction should here follow; yet seeing they belong as well to the Discipline as to the vertue of Repentance, and onely differ for that in the one they are performed to man; in the other to God alone; I had rather distinguish them in joynt handling, then handle them apart, because in quality and manner of practise, they are distinct.

*Of the Discipline of Repentance instituted by Christ, practised by the Fathers, converted by the School-men into a Sacrament; and of confession, that which belongeth to the vertue of Repentance, that which was used among the Jews, that which the Papacy imagineth a Sacrament, and that which Ancient Discipline practised.*

1. **O**ur Lord and Saviour in the 16th. of St. Matthews Gospel, giveth his Apostles regiment in general over Gods Church. For they that have the Keyes of the Kingdom of Heaven, are thereby signified to be Stewards of the House of God under whom they guide, command, judge, and correct his Familie. The souls of men are Gods treasure, committed to the trust and fidelity of such, as must render a strict account for the very least which is under their custody. God hath not invested them with power to make a revenue thereof; but to use it for the good of them whom Jesus Christ hath most dearly bought. Mat. 16. 19.

And because their Office therein consisteth of sundry functions, some belonging to Doctrine, some to Discipline, all contained in the name of the Keyes, they have for matters of Discipline, as well litigious as criminal, their Courts and Consistories erected by the heavenly Authority of his most sacred voice, who hath said, *Dic Ecclesie*, Tell the Church, against rebellious and contumacious persons, which refuse to obey their sentences; armed they are with power to eject such out of the Church, to deprive them of the honours, rights, and priviledges of Christian men, to make them as Heathens and Publicans, with whom society was hatefull. Mat. 18. 17.

Furthermore, lest their acts should be slenderly accounted of, or had in contempt, whether they admit to the Fellowship of Saints; or seclude from it, whether they bind Offenders, or set them again at liberty, whether they remit, or retain sins, whatsoever is done by way of orderly and lawful proceeding, the Lord himself hath promised to ratifie. This is that grand Original Warrant, by force whereof the Guides and Prelates in Gods Church, first his Apostles, and afterwards others following them successively, did both use and uphold that Discipline, the end whereof is to heal mens Consciences, to cure their sins, to reclaim Offenders from iniquity, and to make them by repentance just. Mat. 18. 18.  
Jn. 20. 23.  
1 Cor. 5. 3.  
2 Cor. 2. 6.  
1 Tim. 1. 20.

Neither hath it of Ancient time, for any other respect been accustomed to bind by Ecclesiastical Censures, to retain so bound, till tokens of manifest Repentance appeared, and upon apparent Repentance to release, saving onely because this was received as a most expedient method for the cure of sin.

The course of Discipline in former Ages reformed open Transgressors, by putting them unto Offices of open penitence; especially Confession, whereby they declared their own crimes in the hearing of the whole Church, and were not from the time of their first convention capable of the holy Mysteries of Christ, till they had solemnly discharged this duty.

Offenders

Offenders in secret knowing themselves altogether as unworthy to be admitted to the Lords Table, as the other which were with-held, being also perswaded that if the Church did direct them in the offices of their penitency, and assist them with publike prayer, they should more easily obtain that they sought, then by trusting wholly to their own endeavours; finally, having no impediment to stay them from it but bashfulness, which countervailed not the former inducements; and besides, was greatly eased by the good construction, which the charity of those times gave to such actions, wherein mens piety and voluntary care to be reconciled to God, did purchase then much more love, then their faults (the testimonies of common frailty) were able to procure disgrace, they made it not nice to use some one of the Ministers of God, by whom the rest might take notice of their faults, prescribe them convenient remedies, and in the end after publick Confession, all joyn in prayer unto God for them.

The first beginner of this custome, had the more Followers by meanes of that special favour which alwayes was with good consideration shewed towards voluntary penitents above the rest.

But as Professors of Christian belief, grew more in number, so they waxed worse, when Kings and Princes had submitted their Dominions unto the Scepter of Jesus Christ, by means whereof Persecution ceasing, the Church immediately became subject to those evils which peace and security bringeth forth; there was not now that love which before kept all things in tune, but every where Schismes, Discords, Dissentions amongst men, Conventicles of Hereticks, bent more vehemently against the founder and better sort then very Infidels and Heathens themselves; faults not corrected in charity, but noted with delight, and kept for malice, to use when the deadliest opportunities should be offered.

Whereupon, forasmuch as publick Confessions became dangerous and prejudicial to the safety of well-minded men, and in divers respects advantageous to the enemies of Gods Church; it seemed first unto some, and afterwards generally requisite, that voluntary Penitents should surcease from open Confession.

In stead whereof, when once private and secret Confession had taken place with the *Latins*, It continued as a profitable Ordinance, till the *Latteran* Council had Decreed, that all men once in a year at the least, should confesse themselves to the Priest.

So that being a thing thus made both general and also necessary, the next degree of estimation whereunto it grew, was to be honoured and lifted up to the nature of a Sacrament, that as Christ did institute Baptism to give life, and the Eucharist to nourish life, so Penitence might be thought a Sacrament, ordained to recover life, and Confession a part of the Sacrament.

See in 4. sent.  
d. 14. q. 1. art.  
1.  
Id. ead. dist. 9.  
2. art. 1.

They define therefore their private Penitency, to be a Sacrament of remitting sins after Baptism: The vertue of Repentance, a detestation of wickedness, with full purpose to amend the same, and with hope to obtain pardon at Gods hands.

Wheresoever the Prophets cry *Repent*, and in the Gospel *S. Peter* maketh the same Exhortation to the Jews, as yet unbaptized, they will have the vertue of Repentance only to be understood. The Sacrament, where he adviseth *Simon Magus* to repent, because the sin of *Simon Magus*, was after Baptism.

Now although they have onely external Repentance for a Sacrament, internal for a Vertue; yet make they Sacramental Repentance nevertheless to be composed of three parts, Contrition, Confession, and Satisfaction; which is absurd; because Contrition being an inward thing, belongeth to the Vertue, and not to the Sacrament of Repentance, which must consist of external parts, if the nature thereof be external.

Besides,



Besides, which is more absurd, they leave out Absolution, whereas some of their School Divines, handling Penance in the nature of a Sacrament, and being not able to espie the least resemblance of a Sacrament, save only in Absolution (for a Sacrament by their doctrine must both signifie and also confer, or bestow some special Divine Grace) resolved themselves, that the duties of the Penitent could be but meer preparations to the Sacrament, and that the Sacrament itself was wholly in Absolution. And albeit Thomas with his Followers have thought it safer, to maintain as well the services of the Penitent, as the words of the Minister, necessary unto the essence of their Sacrament; the services of the Penitent, as a cause material; the words of Absolution, as a formal; for that by them all things else are perfected to the taking away of sin: which opinion now reigneth in all their Schools, since the time that the Council of Trent gave it solemn approbation, seeing they all make Absolution, if not the whole essence, yet the very form whereunto they ascribe chiefly the whole force and operation of their Sacrament; surely to admit the matter as a part, and not to admit the form, hath small congruity with reason.

Scot. sent. l. 4. d. 147. 4.

Self. 14. c. 3.

Decet Sancta

Synodus Sacra-

ment. peniten-

tia formam in

qua praeipue

ipsum visira

est, in illis

Ministri ver-

ba positam

esse, Ego te

absolvo, Sunt

autem quasi

materia hujus

Sacramenti

ipsum peniten-

tis adus, nem-

pe Conitio,

Confessio, &

Satisfactio.

Again, for as much as a sacrament is complear, having the matter and form which it ought, what should lead them to set down any other parts of Sacramental repentance, then Confession and Absolution, as Durandus hath done?

For touching Satisfaction, the end thereof, as they understand it, is a further matter, which resteth after the Sacrament administered, and therefore can be no part of the Sacrament.

Will they draw in Contrition with satisfaction, which are no parts, and exclude Absolution (a principal part,) yea, the very complement, form and perfection of the rest as themselves account it? But for their breach of precepts in art, it skilleth not, if their doctrine otherwise concerning Penitency, and in Penitency touching Confession might be found true.

We say, Let no man look for pardon, which doth smother and conceal sin, where in duty it should be revealed.

The cause why God requireth Confession to be made to him, is that thereby testifying a deep hatred of own iniquity, the only cause of his hatred and wrath towards us, we might because we are humble, be so much the more capable of that compassion and tender mercy, which knoweth not how to condemn sinners that condemn themselves.

It is be our Saviours own principle, that the conceit we have of our debt forgiven, proportioneth our thankfulness and love to him, at whose hands we receive pardon; doth not God fore-see, that they which with ill advised modesty seek to hide their sin like Adam, that they which rake it up under ashes, and confesse it not, are very unlikely to requite with offices of love afterwards, the grace which they shew themselves unwilling to prize at the very time when they sue for it, in as much as their not confessing what crimes they have committed, is a plain signification how loth they are that the benefit of Gods most gracious pardon should seem great. Nothing more true, then that of Tertullian. Confessio doth as much abate the weight of mens offences, as concealment doth make them heavier. For he which confesseth, hath a purpose to appease God; he, a determination to persist and continue obstinate which keeps them secret to himself. St. Chrysostome almost in the same words, Wickedness is by being acknowledged, lessened, and doth but grow by being hid. If men having done amisse, let it slip, as though they knew no such matter, what is there to stay them from falling into one and the same evil? To call our selves sinners availeth nothing, except we lay our faults in the ballance, and take the weight of them one by one. Confesse thy crimes to God, disclose thy transgressions before thy Judge, by way of humble supplication and suit, if not with tongue, at the least with heart, and in this sort seek mercy. A general perswasion that thou art a sinner, will neither so humble, nor bridle thy soul, as if the Catalogue of thy sins examined severally, be continually kept in mind. This shall make thee lowly in thine eyes, this shall preserve thy feet

Luc. 7. 47.

Tantum rele-

vat Confessio

delictorum

quantum dissi-

mulatio exag-

gerat. Confessio

autem satisf-

actionis con-

silium est, dis-

simulatio con-

summat.

Tert de pen.

Chrysostom 30.

in Epist. ad

Heb.

T c

from

from falling, and sharpen thy desires towards all good things. The mind I know doth hardly admit such unpleasant remembrances, but we must force it, we must constrain it thereunto. It is safer now to be bitten with the memory, then hereafter with the torment of sin.

Levit. 16, 21.

All Israel is bound on the day of expiation to repent and confesse.  
R. Mos. in lib. Misn. Beggad. par. 2, fol. 10.

The Jews with whom no repentance for sin is available without Confession, either conceived in mind or uttered; which latter kind they call usually *וְיָדוּ* Confession delivered by word of mouth, had first that general Confession which once every year was made, both severally by each of the people for himself, upon the day of expiation, and by the Priest for them all. On the day of expiation, the high Priest maketh three expresse confessions, acknowledging unto God the manifold transgressions of the whole Nation, his own personal offences likewise, together with the sins, as well of his Family, as of the rest of his rank and order.

They had again their voluntary Confessions, at the times and seasons, when men bethinking themselves of their wicked conversation past, were resolved to change their course, the beginning of which alteration was still Confession of sins.

Thirdly, over and besides these, the Law imposed upon them also that special Confession, which they in their book call *וְיָדוּ עַל עֲוֹן בִּירוּחָם*.

Nam. 5. 6.

Confession of that particular fault, for which we namely seek pardon at Gods hands. The words of the Law concerning Confession in this kind are as followeth: When a man or woman shall commit any sin, that men commit, and transgresse against the Lord, their sin which they have done (that is to say the very deed it self in particular) they shall acknowledge. In *Leviticus* after certain transgressions there mentioned, we read the like: When a man hath sinned in any one of these things, he shall then confesse, how in that thing he hath offended. For such kind of special sins, they had also special Sacrifices, wherein the manner was that the Offender should lay his hands on the head of the Sacrifice which he brought, and should there make Confession to God, saying, *Now O Lord, that I have offended, committed sin, and done wickedly in thy sight, this or this being my fault, behold, I repent me, and am utterly ashamed of my doings; my purpose is never to return more to the same crime.*

Lev. 5. 5.

M. in Tora Tractat Tebub. cap. 1. & R. M. in lib. Misn. par. 2. chap. 16.  
M. in Misn. par. 2. fol. 16.  
To him which is sick, and draweth towards death, they say confesse.  
Idem.

None of them, whom neither the house of judgement had condemned to die, or of them which are to be punished with stripes, can be clear by being executed or scourged, till they repent and confesse their faults.

Finally, there was no man amongst them at any time, either condemned to suffer death, or corrected, or chastized with stripes, none ever sick and near his end, but they called upon him to repent and confesse his sins.

Of Malefactors convicted by witnesses, and thereupon either adjudged to die, or otherwise chastized, their custom was to exact, as *Joshua* did of *Achan*, open confession, *My son, now give glory to the Lord God of Israel, confesse unto him, and declare unto me what thou hast committed, conceal it not from me, Jos. 7. 19.*

Concerning injuries and trespasses which happen between men, they highly commend such as will acknowledge before many.

It is in him which repenteth, accepted as an high sacrifice, if he will confesse before many, make them acquainted with his over-sights, and reveal the transgressions which have passed between him and any of his brethren; saying, *I have verily offended this man, thus and thus I have done unto him, but behold I do now repent and am sorry.* Contrariwise, whosoever is proud and will not be known of his faults, but cloaketh them, is not yet come to perfect repentance; for so it is written, *He that hides his sins shall not prosper*, which words of *Solomon* they do not further extend, then only to sins committed against men, which are in that respect meet before men to be acknowledged particularly. But in sins between man and God, there is no necessity that man should himself make any such open and particular recital of them; to God they are known, and of us it is required, that we call

cast not the memory of them carelessly and loosely behind our backs, but keep in mind as near as we can, both our own debt, and his grate which remitteeth the same.

Wherefore to let passe Jewish confession, and to come unto them which hold Confession in the ear of the Priest commanded; yea, commanded in the nature of a Sacrament, and thereby so necessary, that sin without it cannot be pardoned, let them find such a Commandment in holy Scripture, and we ask no more. *John the Baptist* was an extraordinary person, his birth, his actions of life, his Office extraordinary. It is therefore recorded for the strangeness of the act, but not set down as an everlasting Law for the World; *That to him Jerusalem and all Judea made confession of their sins*: Besides, at the time of this confession, their pretended sacrament of repentance, as they grant, was not yet instituted, neither was it sin after Baptism, which Penitents did there confesse; When that which befel the seven sons of *Scorva*, for using the name of our Lord Jesus Christ in their conjurations, was notified to Jews and Grecians in *Ephesus*; it brought an universal fear upon them, in so much that divers of them which had believed before, but not obeyed the Laws of Christ as they should have done, being terrified by this example, came to the Apostle, and confessed their wicked deeds. Which good and vertuous act, no wise man, as I suppose will disallow, but commend highly in them, whom Gods good Spirit shall move to do the like when need requireth.

Yet neither hath this example the force of any general commandment, or law to make it necessary for every man; to pour into the ears of the Priest whatsoever hath been done amisse, or else to remain everlastingly culpable and guilty of sin; in a word, it proveth confession practized as a vertuous act, but not commanded as a Sacrament.

Now concerning *St. James* his Exhortation, whether the former branch be considered, which saith, *Is any sick among you? let him call for the Ancients of the Church, and let them make their prayers for him*; or the latter, which stirreth up all Christian men unto mutual acknowledgement of faults amongst themselves; *Lay open your minds, make your confessions one to another*; is it not plain, that the one hath relation to that gift of healing, which our Saviour promised his Church, saying, *They shall lay their hands on the sick, and the sick shall recover health*? relation to that gift of healing, whereby the Apostle imposed his hands on the Father of *Publius*, and made him miraculously a sound man; relation finally to that gift of healing, which so long continued in practice after the Apostles times, that whereas the *Novatianists* denied the power of the Church of God, in curing sin after Baptism, *St. Ambrose* asked them again, *Why it might not as well prevail with God for spiritual, as for corporal and bodily health, yea, wherefore (saith he) do ye your selves lay hands on the diseased and believe it to be a work of benediction or prayer, if haply the sick person be restored to his former safety?* And of the other member which toucheth mutual confession, do not some of themselves, as namely, *Cajetan* deny, that any other Confession is meant, then only that, which seeketh either association of prayers, or reconciliation, or pardon of wrongs? Is it not confessed by the greatest part of their own retinue, that we cannot certainly affirm Sacramental Confession to have been meant or spoken of in this place? Howbeit *Bellarmaine* delighted to run a course by himself where colourable shifts of wit will but make the way passible, flaudeth as formally for this place, and not lesse for that in *St. John*, then for this. *St. John* saith, *If we confesse our sins, God is faithful and just to forgive our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness*; doth *St. John* say, *If we confesse to the Priest, God is righteous to forgive, and if not, that our sins are unpardonable?* No, but the titles of God just and righteous do import, that he pardoneth sin only for his promise sake; And there is not (they say) any promise of forgiveness upon confession made to God without the Priest; Not any promise, but with this condition, and yet this condition no where exprest.

Is it not strange that the Scripture speaking so much of repentance, and



of the several duties which appertain thereunto, should ever mean; and no where mention that one condition, without which all the rest is utterly of none effect; or will they say, because our Saviour hath said to his Ministers, *Whose sins ye retain, &c.* and because they can remit no more, then what the offenders have confessed, that therefore by virtue of his promise, it standeth with the Righteousnesse of God, to take away no mans sins, until by auricular confession they be opened unto the Priest?

They are men that would seem to honour Antiquity, and none more to depend upon the reverend judgement thereof. I dare boldly affirm, that for many hundred years after Christ, the Fathers held no such opinion; they did not gather by our Saviours words, any such necessity of seeking the Priests Absolution from sin, by secret and (as they now term it) sacramental confession: Publick confession they thought necessary by way of Discipline, not private confession, as in the nature of a Sacrament necessary.

For to begin with the purest times it is unto them which read and judge without partiality a thing most clear, that the ancient *Εὐαγγέλιον* or confession, defined by *Tertullian* to be a Discipline of humiliation, and submission, framing mens behaviour in such sort as may be fittest to move pity, the confession which they use to speak of in the exercise of repentance, was made openly in the hearing of the whole both Ecclesiastical Consistory and Assembly.

*Plerique hoc opus ut publicationem sui aut suffragii, aut de die in diem differre, praeferunt pudoris magis memores quam salutis, veluti illi qui in partibus veteranorum corporis contracta vexatione conscientiarum meditentium vivunt. Et ita cum eriguntur, conscientia sua percunt. Tert. de pen.*

*Qui necessitatem sacrificii de pecunia apud Magistram redimunt, non habent accipere securitatis Syngrapha libellatici dicebantur.*

*Hom. 1. de invio quadragesimae.*

This is the reason wherefore he perceiving, that divers were better content their tores should secretly fester, and eat inward, then be laid so open to the eyes of many, blameth greatly their unwise bashfulness, and to reform the same, perswadeth with them saying, *Amongst thy brethren and fellow servants, which are partakers with thee of one and the same nature, fear, joy, grief, sufferings (for of one common Lord and Father, we have all received one spirit) why shouldst thou not think with thy self, that they are but thine own self? wherefore dost thou avoid them, as likely to insult over thee, whom thou knowest subject to the same baps? At that which grieveth any one part, the whole body cannot joyce, it must needs be that the whole will labour and strive to help that wherewith a part of it self is molested.*

St. Cyprian being grieved with the dealings of them, who in time of persecution had through fear betrayed their faith, and notwithstanding thought by shift to avoid in that case the necessary Discipline of the Church, wrote for their better instruction, the book intituled *De lapsis*; a Treatise concerning such, as had openly forsaken their Religion, and yet were loth openly to confess their fault, in such manner as they should have done: In which book he compareth with this sort of men, certain others which had but a purpose only to have departed from the Faith; and yet could not quite their minds, till this very secret and hidden fault was confessed, *How much both greater in faith (saith St. Cyprian) and also as touching their fear, better, are those men who although neither sacrifice, nor libel could be objected against them, yet because they thought to have done that which they should not, even this their intent they dolefully open unto Gods Priests? They confess that wherof their conscience accuseth them, the burthen that presseth their minds they discover, they foretell out of smaller and slighter evils, to seek remedy: He saith they declared their fault, not to one only man in private, but revealed it to Gods Priests, they confessed it before the whole Consistory of Gods Ministers.*

*Salvianus* (for I willingly embrace their conjecture, who ascribe those Homiles to him which have hitherto by common error past under the counterfeit name of *Eusebius Emesenus*.) Nay, *Salvianus*, though coming long after Cyprian in time, giveth nevertheless the same evidence for his truth, in a case very little different from that before alleadged; his words are these, *Whereas (most dearly beloved) we see that penance oftentimes is sought and sued for by holy soules, which even from their youth have bequeathed themselves a precious treasure unto God, let us know that the inspiration of Gods good Spirit moveth them so to do for the benefit of his Church, and let such as are wounded, learn to enquire for that remedy, wherunto the very soundest do thus offer and obtrude*

as it were themselves, that if the vertuous do bewaile small offences, the others cease not to lament great. And surely, when a man that hath lesse need, performeth sub oculis Ecclesie, in the view, sight, and beholding of the whole Church, an office worthy of his faith and compunction for sin, the good which others thereby reap is his own harvest, the heap of his rewards groweth by that which another gaineth, and through a kind of spiritual usury from that amendment of life which others learn by him, there returneth lucre into his coffers. The same Salvianus in another of his Homilies, If faults haply be not great and grievous (for example, if a man have offended in word, or in desire, worthy of reproof, if in the wantonnesse of his eye, or the vanity of his heart) the stains of words and thoughts are by daily prayer to be cleansed, and by private compunction to be scourged out: But if any man examining inwardly his own Conscience, have committed some heinous and capital offence, as if by bearing false witness, he have quelled and betrayed his faith, and by rashnesse of perjury have violated the sacred name of Truth, if with the mire of lustfull uncleannesse he have sullied the vail of Baptism, and the gorgeous robe of Virginity, if by being the cause of any mans death, he have been the death of the new man within himself, if by conference with South sayers, Wizards, and Charmers, he hath enthralled himself to Satan, These and such like committed crimes, cannot thoroughly be taken away with ordinary, moderate, and secret satisfaction, but greater causes do require greater and sharper remedies, they need such remedies as are not onely sharp, but solemn, open, and publick. Again, Let that soul (saith he) answer me, which through pernicious shamesfastnesse is now so abash't to acknowledge his sin in conspectu fratrum before his brethren, as he should have been before abash't to commit the same, what he will do in the presence of that Divine Tribunal where he is to stand arraigned in the Assembly of a glorious and celestial host? I will hereunto adde but St. Ambrose's testimony: For the places which I might alleadge, are more then the cause it self needeth; There are many (saith he) who fearing the judgement that is to come, and feeling inward remorse of conscience, when they have offered themselves unto penitency, are enjoyned what they shall do, give back for the only way which they think that publick supplication will put them unto. He speaketh of them which sought voluntarily to be penanced, and yet withdrew themselves from open confession, which they that were penitents for publick crimes could not possibly have done, and therefore it cannot be said he meaneth any other then secret sinners in that place. Gennadius a Presbyter of Marfiles in his book touching Ecclesiastical assertions, maketh but two kinds of confession necessary, the one in private to God alone for smaller offences, the other open, when crimes committed are hainous and great, Although (saith he) a man be bitten with conscience of sin, let him will be from thenceforward to sin no more; let him before he communicate, satisfie with tears and prayers, and then putting his trust in the mercy of Almighty God (whose wont is, to yeild to godly confessions) let him boldly receive the Sacrament. But I speak this of such as have not burthened themselves with capital sins. Then I exhort to satisfie, first by publick penance, that so being reconciled by the sentence of the Priest, they may communicate safely with others. Thus still we hear of publick confessions, although the crimes themselves discovered were not publick; we hear that the cause of such confessions was not the opennesse, but the greatnesse of mens offences; finally, we hear that the same being now held by the Church of Rome to be Sacramental, were the onely penitential confessions used in the Church for a long time, and esteemed as necessary remedies against sin.

They which will find Auricular confessions in S. Cyrilian, therefore must seek out some other passage, then that which B. Harminie alledgeth, Whereas in smaller faults which are not committed against the Lord himself, there is a competent time assigned unto penitency, and that confession is made, after that observation and tryal had been had of the Penitents behaviour; neither may any communicate till the Bishop and Clergy have laid their hands upon him; how much more ought all things to be warily and stay'dly observed, according to the Discipline of the Lord, in these most grievous and extreame crimes? S. Cyrilian, speech is against rashness in admitting Idolaters

Hom. 10. Ad Monachos.

Graviores & actiores. Et publicas curas requirunt. Hom. 8 ad Monachos.

Lid. 2. de pen. cap. 9.

Cyp. Epist. 12

Insuper vita eius qui agit penitentiam.

Con. Nic. par.  
2. c. 13.  
Pro file &  
conversations  
Penitentium.

De pen. diff. 1.  
cap. Men'uram  
Amb. de pen.  
lib. 2. c. 10.  
Greg. Niss. rat  
In eis qui alio  
accede judi-  
cant.

Orig. in Psal.  
37.

Amb. 1. 2. de  
pen. c. 9.

Si non tam se  
solvere cupiunt  
quem Sacerdos  
tem ligare.  
Aug. in hor.  
de pen.

Hon. de pen.  
Niniv.

Idolaters to the holy Communion, before they had shewed sufficient Repen-  
tance, considering that other offenders were forced to stay out their time,  
and that they made not their publick confession, which was the last act of  
penitency, till their Life and Conversation had been seen into, not with the  
eye of Auricular Scrutiny, but of Pastoral Observation, according to that in  
the Council of Nice, where thirteen years, being set for the penitency of  
certain offenders, the severity of this Decree is mitigated with special caution:  
That in all such cases, the mind of the penitent and the manner of his repentance is to  
be noted, that as many as with fear and tears, and meekness, and the exercise of good  
works, declared themselves to be Converts indeed, and not in outward appearance only,  
towards them the Bishop at his discretion might use more lenity. If the Council of  
Nice suffice not, let Gratian the Founder of the Canon Law expound Cyrian,  
who sheweth that the stint of time in penitency, is either to be abridged or  
enlarged, as the Penitents faith and behaviour shall give occasion; I have  
easilier found out men (saith S. Ambrose) able to keep themselves free from crimes,  
then conformable to the rules which in penitency they should observe. S. Gregory  
Bishop of Nice complaineth and enveigheth bitterly against them, who in the  
time of their penitency, lived even as they had done alwayes before; Their  
countenance as chearful, their attire as neat, their dyet as costly, and their sleep  
as secure as ever, their worldly busynesse purposely followed, to raise pensive thoughts  
from their minds, repentance pretended, but indeed nothing lesse express; These were  
the inspections of life whereunto S. Cyprian alludeth; as for Auricular Exami-  
nations he knew them not.

Were the Fathers then without use of private Confession as long as pub-  
lick was in use? I affirm no such thing. The first and ancientest that men-  
tioneth this Confession, is Origen, by whom it may seem that men being loth  
to present rashly themselves and their faults unto the view of the whole  
Church, thought it best to unfold first their minds to some one special man  
of the Clergy, which might either help them himself, or referre them to an  
higher Court if need were; Be therefore circumspect (saith Origen) in making  
choise of the party, to whom thou meanst to confesse thy sin; know thy Physician before  
thou use him; If he find thy malady, such as needeth to be made publick, that other may  
be the better by it, and thy self sooner helpt, his counsel must be obeyed. That which  
moved sinners thus voluntarily to detect themselves both in private and in  
publick, was fear to receive with other Christian men the mysteries of hea-  
venly grace, till Gods appointed Stewards and Ministers did judge them  
worthy: It is in this respect that S. Ambrose findeth fault with certain men  
which sought imposition of penance, and were not willing to wait their time,  
but would be presently admitted Communicants. Such people (saith he) do seek  
by so rash and preposterous desires, rather to bring the Priest into bonds then to loose  
themselves: In this respect it is that S. Augustine hath likewise said, When the  
wound of sin is so wide, and the disease so far gone that the medicinable body and blood  
of our Lord may not be touched, men are by the Bishops authority to sequester themselves  
from the Altar, till such time as they have repented, and be after reconciled by the same  
authority. Furthermore, because the knowledge how to handle our own  
sores, is no vulgar and common art, but we either carry towards our selves  
for the most part an over-soft and gentle hand, fearfull of touching too near  
the quick, or else endeavouring not to be partial, we fall into timorous scru-  
pulosities, and sometime into those extreame discomforts of mind, from  
which we hardly do ever lift up our heads again, men thought it the safest  
way to disclose their secret faults, and to crave imposition of penance from  
them whom our Lord Jesus Christ hath left in his Church to be spiritual and  
ghostly Physicians, the guides and Pastors of redeemed souls, whose office  
doth not onely consist in general perswasions unto amendment of life, but  
also in the private particular cure of diseased minds.

Howsoever the Novatianists presume to plead against the Church (saith  
Salvianus) that every man ought to be his own penitentiary, and that it is a part of  
our duty to exercise, but not of the Churches Authority to impose or prescribe repentance;  
the



the truth is otherwise, the best and strongest of us may need in such cases direction: *What doth the Church in giving penance, but shew the remedies which she requirerh? or what do we in receiving the same but fulfill her precepts? what else but sue unto God with tears, and fasts, that his merciful eare may be opened?* S. Augustines exhortation is directly to the same purpose; *Let every man whilst he hath time judge himself, and change his life of his own accord, and when this is resolved, Let him from the dispensers of the holy Sacraments, learn in what manner he is to pacifie Gods displeasure:* But the greatest thing which made men forward and willing upon their knees to confesse whatsoever they had committed against God, and in no wise to be withheld from the same, With any fear of disgrace, contempt, or oblique, which might ensue, was their fervent desire to be helped and assisted with the prayers of Gods Saints. Wherein as St. James doth exhort unto mutual confession, alledging this onely for a reason, *that just mens devout prayers are of great avail with God;* so it hath been heretofore the use of Penitents for that intent to unburthen their minds, even to private persons, and to crave their prayers. Whereunto Cassianus alluding, counselleth, *That if men possit with dulnesse of spirit be themselves unapt to do that which is required, they should in meek affliction seek health at the least by good and vertuous mens prayers unto God for them.* And to the same effect Gregory Bishop of Nisse, *Humble thy self, and take unto thee such of thy brethren as are of one mind, and do bear kind affliction towards thee, that they may together mourn and labour for thy deliverance. Shew me thy bitter and abundant tears, that I may blend mine own with them.*

Aug. hom. de  
pen. citatur a  
Grat. dist. 1. c. 2  
judicet.

A propostis  
Sacramento-  
rum accipiat  
satisfactionis  
sua modum.

Jan. 5. 16.

Cassia. col. 20.  
c. 8.

Greg. Niss. ora-  
tione in eos  
qui alios acerbè  
judicant.

But because of all men there is or should be none in that respect more fit for troubled and distressed minds to repair unto then Gods Ministers, he proceedeth further, *Make the Priest, as a Father partaker of thine affliction and grief, be held to impart unto him the things that are most secret, he will have care both of thy safety, and of thy redit.*

*Confession* (saith Leo) is first to be offered to God, and then to the Priest, as to one which maketh supplication for the sins of penitent offenders. Suppose we, that men would ever have been easily drawn, much lesse of their own accord have come unto publick confession, whereby they know they should found the trumpet of their own disgrace, would they willingly have done this, which naturally all men are loth to do, but for the singular trust and confidence which they had in the publick prayers of Gods Church? *Let thy mother the Church weep for thee* (saith Ambrose) *let her wash and bathe thy faults with her tears:* On Lord doth love that many should become suppliant for one; In like sort long before him, Tertullian, *Some few assembled make a Church, and the Church is as Christ himself;* When thou dost therefore put forth thy hands to the knees of thy brethren, thou touchest Christ; it is Christ unto whom thou art a suppliant; so when they pour out tears over them, it is even Christ that taketh compassion; Christ which prayeth when they pray: Neither can that easily be denied, for which the Son is himself contented to become a suitor.

Leo 1. Ep. 78.  
ad Episc. Cam-  
pan. citatur a  
Grat. de iura,  
d. 1. c. sufficit.

Ambr. l. 2. de  
pen. c. 10.

Tertul. de pen.

Whereas in these considerations therefore, voluntary Penitents had been long accustomed for great and grievous crimes, though secret, yet openly both to repent and confesse as the Canons of Ancient Discipline required, the Greek Church first, and in proceesse of time the Latine altered this order, judging it sufficient and more convenient that such offenders should do penance and make confession in private onely. The cause why the Latins did, Leo declareth, saying: *Although that ripenesse of faith be commendable, which (or the fear of God doth not fear to incur shame before all men, yet because everyones crimes are not such, that it can be free and safe for them to make publication of all things, wherein repentance is necessary, let a custome so unfit to be kept, be abrogated, least many forbear to use remedies of penitency, whilst they either blush or are afraid to acquaint their enemies with those acts for which the Lawes may take hold upon them. Besides, it shall win the more repentance, if the consciences of sinners be not emptied into the peoples eares; And to this onely cause doth Sozomen impute the change, which the Grecians made, by ordaining throughout all Churches certain Penitentiaries*

Leo 1. Ep. 78.

Penitentiaries

penitentiaries to take the Confessions, and appoint the penances of secret offenders. *Socrates* (for this also may be true that more inducements then one, did set forward an alteration so generally made) affirmeth the *Grecians* (and not unlikely) to have specially respected therein the occasion, which the *Novatianists* took at the multitude of publick Penitents, to insult over the Discipline of the Church, against which they still cryed out, whereforever they had time and place, *He that sheweth sinners favour, doth but teach the innocent to sin*: And therefore they themselves admitted no man to their Communion upon any repentance, which once was known to have offended after Baptism, making sinners thereby not the fewer, but the closer, and the more obdurate, how fair soever their pretence might seem.

The *Grecians* Canon for some one Presbyter in every Church to undertake the charge of penitency, and to receive their voluntary Confessions, which had sinned after Baptism, continued in force for the space of above some hundred years, till *Nellarius*, and the Bishops of Churches under him begun a second alteration, abolishing even that confession which their Penitentiaries took in private. There came to the Penitentiary of the Church of *Constantinople*, a certain Gentlewoman, and to him she made particular confession of her faults committed after Baptism, whom thereupon he advised to continue in fasting and prayer, that as with tongue she had acknowledged her sins, so there might appear likewise in her some work worthy of repentance: But the Gentlewoman goeth forward, and detesteth her self of a crime, whereby they were forced to disrobe an Ecclesiastical person, that is, to degrade a Deacon of the same Church. When the matter by this mean came to publick notice, the people were in a kind of tumult offended, not only at that which was done, but much more, because the Church should thereby endure open infamy and scorn. The Clergy perplexed and altogether doubtfull what way to take, till one *Eudemon* born in *Alexandria*, but at that time a Priest in the Church of *Constantinople*, considering that the causes of voluntary Confession whether publick or private, was especially to seek the Churches aid, as hath been before declared, least men should either not communicate with others, or wittingly hazard their souls, if so be they did communicate, and that the inconvenience which grew to the whole Church was otherwise exceeding great, but especially grievous by means of so manifold offensive detestations, which must needs be continually more, as the world did it self wax continually worse for Antiquity together with the gravity and severity thereof (saith *Sozomen* had already begun by little and little to degenerate into loose and carelesse living, whereas before offences were lesse, partly through bashfulness in them which open their own fautes, and partly by means of their great austerity, which thought as judges in this businesse; these things *Eudemon* having weighed with himself, resolved easily the mind of *Nellarius*, that the Penitentiaries office must be taken away, and for participation in Gods holy mysteries every man be left to his own Conscience, which was as he thought, the onely means to free the Church from danger of Obloquie and Disgrace. Thus much (saith *Socrates*) I am the bolder to relate, because I received it from *Eudemons* own mouth, to whom mine answer was at that time; Whether your counsel, Sir, have been for the Churches good, or otherwise, God knoweth. But I see, you have given occasion whereby we shall not now any more reprehend one anothers faults, nor observe that Apostolick precept, which saith, Have no Fellowship with the unfruitful works of darknesse, but rather be ye also reprovers of them. With *Socrates*, *Sozomen* both agreeth in the occasion of abolishing Penitentiaries; and moreover testifieth also, that in his time living with the younger *Theodosius*, the same abolition did still continue, and that the Bishops had in a manner every where followed the example given them by *Nellarius*.

Wherefore to implead the truth of this History, Cardinal *Serenus* alledgeth that *Socrates*, *Sozomen* and *Eudemon* were all *Novatianists*, and that they

they falsifie in saying, (for so they report) that as many as held the Consubstantiall being of Christ, gave their assent to the abrogation of the fore-heresed Canon. The sum is, he would have it taken for a fable, and the world to be perswaded that *Neclarius* did never any such thing. Why then should *Socrates* first and afterwards *Sozomen* publish it? To please their pew-fellows the Disciples of *Novatian*. A poor gratification, and they very silly friends, that would take lyes for good turns. For the more acceptable the matter was, being deemed true, the lesse they must needs (when they found the contrary) either credit, or affect him which had deceived them. Notwithstanding we know that joy and gladnesse rising from false information, do not onely make men so forward to believe that which they first hear, but also apt to scholie upon it, and to report as true whatsoever they wish were true. But so far is *Socrates* from any such purpose, that the fact of *Neclarius* which others did both like and follow, he doth disallow and reprove. His speech to *Eudemon* before set down, is proof sufficient that he writeth nothing, but what was famously known to all, and what himself did with had been otherwise. As for *Sozomen's* correspondency with Hereticks, having shewed to what end the Church did first ordain *Penitentie*, he addeth immediately that *Novatianists*, which had no care of repentance, could have no need of this office. Are these the words of a friend or enemy? Besides, in the entrance of that whole narration: *Not to sin* (saith he) *at all would require a nature more divine then ours is; But God hath commanded to pardon sinners; yea, although they transgresse and offend often.* Could there be any thing spoken more directly opposite to the Doctrine of *Novatian*? *Eudemon* was Presbyter under *Neclarius*.

To *Novatianists* the Emperor gave liberty of using their Religion quietly by themselves, under a Bishop of their own, even within the City, for that they stood with the Church in defence of the Catholick faith against all other Hereticks besides. Had therefore *Eudemon* favoured their heretic, their Camps were not pitched so far off, but he might at all times have found easie access unto them. Is there any man that lived with him and hath touched him that way? if not, why suspect we him more then *Neclarius*? Their report touching *Greecian* Catholick Bishops, who gave approbation to that which was done, and did also the like themselves in their own Churches, we have no reason to discredit without some manifest and clear evidence brought against it. For of Catholick Bishops, no likelihood but that their greatest respect to *Neclarius*, a man honored in those parts no less then the Bishop of *Rome* himself in the western Churches, brought them both easily and speedily unto conformity with him, *Arrians*, *Eunomians*, *Apollinarians*, and the rest that stood divided from the Church, held their *Penitentie* as before. *Novatianists* from the beginning had never any, because their opinion touching penitency was against the practice of the Church therein, and a cause why they severed themselves from the Church; so that the very state of things as they then stood, giveth great shew of probability to his speech, who hath affirmed, that they only which held the *Consubstantiall* with the Father, and *Novatianists* which joyned with them in the same opinion, had no *Penitentie* in their Churches, the rest retained them. By this it appeareth therefore how *Baronius* finding the relation plain, that *Neclarius* did abolish even those private secret confessions which the people had been before accustomed to make to him, that was *Penitentiary*, laboureth what he may to discredit the Authors of the report, and to leave it imprinted in mens minds, that whereas *Neclarius* did but abrogate publick confession, *Novatianists* have maliciously forged the abolition of private, as if the odds between these two were so great in the

Tanta hac Socrati testamini praestanda est fides quanta ceteris haereticis de suis dogmatibus tractantibus; quippe Novatianus sella cum fuerit, quam vere ac sincere hac scripserit adversus penitentiam in Ecclesia administrari solitam, quoniam credo posse facile iudicare, Bar. r. 1. an. Chr. 56.

Sozomenum eandem propter causam fuisse certum est. Nec Eudemonem illum alium quam Novatianus sella hominem fuisse credendum est. Ibid.

Sacerdos ille merito a Neclario est gradu amotus officioque depositus quo factus Novatianus (ut max. est haereticorum) quamcumque licet levem ut Socratis dogmatibus detrahant, accipere aut occasinam, non tantum Presbyterum Penitentiarum in ordinem redactum, sed et penitentiam ipsam unam cum eo fuisse proscriptam calumniose admodum clamant, cum tamen illa potius Theatralis fieri interdum solita peccatorum fuerit abrogata. Ibid.



ballance of their judgment, which equally hated and condemned both; or, as if it were not more clear then light that the first alteration which established Penitentiaries, took away the burthen of publick confession in that kind of penitents, and therefore the second must either abrogate private, or nothing.

Cardinal Bellarmine therefore finding that against the Writers of the History, it is but in vain to stand upon so doubtful terms, and exceptions, endeavoureth mightily to prove even by their report, no other confession taken away then publick which Penitentiaries used in private to impose upon publick offenders; For why? It is (saith he) very certain th. 1 the name of Penitents in the Fathers writings significth onely publick penitents; certain, th. 2 to hear the confessions of the rest was more then one could possibly have done; certain, that Sozomen, to shew how the Latine Church retained in his time what the Greek had cleancast off, declareth the whole order of publick penitency used in the Church of Rome, but of private he maketh no mention. And in these considerations Bellarmine will have it the meaning both of *Socrates* and *Sozomen*, that the former Episcopal constitution, which first did erect Penitentiaries, could not concern any other offenders, then such as publickly had sinned after Baptism. That onely they, were prohibited to come to the holy Communion, except they did first in secret confesse all their sins to the Penitentiary, by his appointment openly acknowledge their open crimes and do publick penance for them: that whereas before *Novatians* uprising, no man was constrainable to confesse publickly any sin, this Canon enforced publick offenders thereunto, till such time as *Arcadius* thought good to extinguish the practice thereof.

The Will of the  
author is manifest,  
as appears.

Let us examine therefore these subtile and fine conjunctures, whether they be able to hold the touch, It seemed good (saith *Socrates*) to put down the Office of these Priests which had charge of Penitency, what charge that was, the kinds of penitency then usual must make manifest. There is often speech in the Fathers Writings, in their Books frequent mention of Penitency, exercised within the chambers of our heart and seen of God, and not communicated to any other, the whole charge of which penitency is imposed of God, and doth rest upon the sinner himself. But if Penitents in secret being guilty of crimes whereby they knew they had made themselves unfit guests for the Table of our Lord, did seek direction for their better performance of that which should set them clear; it was in this case the Penitentiaries office to take their confessions, to advise them the best way he could for their souls good, to admonish them, to counsel them, but not to lay upon them more then private penance. As for notorious wicked persons, whose crimes were known, to convict, judge, and punish them, was the office of the Ecclesiastical Consistory; Penitentiaries had their institution to another end: But unless we imagine that the ancient time knew no other repentance then publick, or that they had little occasion to speak of any other repentance, or else that in speaking thereof they used continually some other name, and not the name of repentance, whereby to express private penitency, how standeth it with reason, that whensoever they write of Penitents, it should be thought they meant onely publick Penitents? The truth is, they handle all three kinds, but private and voluntary repentance much osiner, as being of far more general use, whereas publick was but incident unto few, and not often then once incident unto any. Howbeit, because they do not distinguish one kind of penitency from another by difference of names, our safest way for construction, is to follow circumstance of matter, which in this Narration will not yeild it self appliable onely unto publick penance, do what they can, that would so expound it.

They boldly and confidently affirm that no man being compellable to confesse publickly any sin, before *Novatians* time, the end of instituting Penitentiaries afterward in the Church, was that by them, men might be constrained unto publick confession. Is there any record in the world which doth testify this to be true? There is that testifieth the plain contrary; For *Sozomen* declaring purposely the cause of their Institution, saith. that whereas men openly craving pardon at Gods hands (for publick confession the last all of penitency was alwaies made

made in the form of a contrite prayer unto God,) it could not be avoided but they must withall confesse what their offences were; This in the opinion of their Prelate seemed, from the first beginning (as we may probably think) to be somewhat burthenfome, that men whose crimes were unknown, should blaze their own faults, as it were on the Stage, acquainting all the people with whatsoever they had done amiffe. And therefore to remedy this inconvenience, they laid the charge upon one onely Priest, chosen out of such as were of best conversation, a silent and a discreet man, to whom they which had offended, might resort and lay open their lives. He according to the quality of every ones transgressions, appointed what they should do or suffer, and left them to execute it upon themselves. Can we with a more direct and evident testimony, that the office here spoken of, was to ease voluntary penitents from the burthen of publick confessions, and not to constrain notorious offenders thereunto? That such offenders were not compellable to open confessions till *Novatians* time, that is to say, till after the dayes of persecution under *Decius* the Emperour, they of all men should not so peremptorily avouch; which whom, if *Fabian* Bishop of *Rome*, who suffered Martyrdom the first year of *Decius*, be of any authority and credit, it must enforce them to reverse their sentence, his words are so plain and clear against them. For such as commit those crimes, whereof the Apostle hath said, They that do them shall never inherit the Kingdom of heaven, must (saith he) be forced unto amendment, because they slip down to hel, if Ecclesiastical Authority say them not. Their conceit of impossibility that one man should suffice to take the general charge of penitency in such a Church as *Constantinople*, hath risen from a meer erroneous supposal, that the Ancient manner of private confession was like the shrift at this day usual in the Church of *Rome*, which tyeth all men at one certain time to make confession, whereas confession was then neither looked for till men did offer it, nor offered for the most part by any other; then such as were guilty of heinous transgressions, nor to them any time appointed for that purpose. Finally, the drift which *Sozomen* had in relating the Discipline of *Rome*, and the form of publick penitency there retained even till his time, is not to signifie that onely publick confession was abrogated by *Nellarius*, but that the West or Latine Church held still one and the same order from the very beginning, and had not, as the Greek, first cut off publick voluntary confession, by ordaining, and then private by removing *Penitentiaries*. Wherefore to conclude, it standeth I hope very plain and clear, first against the one Cardinal, that *Nellarius* did truly abrogate confession in such sort as the Ecclesiastical History hath reported; and secondly, as clear against them both, that it was not publick confession onely which *Nellarius* did abolish.

Fab. Decret.  
Ep. 1. Tit. 1.  
Canc. p. 358.

The paradox in maintenance whereof *Hessels* wrote purposely a book touching this Argument to shew that *Nellarius* did but put the *Penitentiary* from his office, and not take away the office it self, is repugnant to the whole advice which *Eudemon* gave, of leaving the people from that time forward to their own Consciences, repugnant to the conference between *Socrates* and *Eudemon*, wherein complaint is made of some inconvenience, which the want of the office would breed finally, repugnant to that which the History declareth concerning other Churches which did as *Nellarius* had done before them, not in deposing the same man (for that was impossible) but in removing the same office out of their Churches, which *Nellarius* had banished from his. For *Pamellius* to admire it as a wonderful happy invention. But in sum, they are all gravelled, no one of them able to go smoothly away, and to satisfie either others, or himself, with his own conceit concerning *Nellarius*.

Nec est quod  
sibi blandian-  
tur illi de  
facto Nellarii  
cum id potius  
secretorum pec-  
catorum con-  
fessionem com-  
probat, et non  
aliud quam  
Presbyterum  
penitentialem  
illo officio suo  
moverit, uti  
apertissime de-  
ducit D. Jones  
Hessellus Pa-  
mel. in Cypr.  
lib. 1. de annot.  
p. 88. in lib.  
Tertul. de  
pœn. annot. 1

Onely in this they are stiffe, that Auricular Confession *Nellarius* did not abrogate, least if so much should be acknowledged, it might enforce them to grant that the Greek Church at that time held not confession, as the Latin now doth, to be the part of a Sacrament instituted by our Saviour Jesus Christ, which therefore the Church till the worlds end hath no power to alter. Yet

seeing that as long as publick voluntary confession of private crimes did continue in either Church (as in the one it remained not much above 200. years, in the other about 400) the only acts of such repentance were; first, the offenders intimation of those crimes to some one Presbyter, for which imposition of penance was sought; secondly, the undertaking of penance imposed by the Bishops; thirdly, after the same performed and ended, open confession to God in the hearing of the whole Church; whereupon fourthly, ensued the prayer of the Church; fifthly, then the Bishops imposition of hands; and so sixthly, the parties reconciliation or restitution to his former right in the holy Sacrament. I would gladly know of them which make only private confession a part of their Sacrament of penance, how it could be so in those times: For where the Sacrament of penance is ministred, they hold that confession to be Sacramental which he receiveth who must absolve; whereas during the fore-rehearsed manner of penance, it can no where be shewed, that the Priest to whom secret information was given, did reconcile, or absolve any: for, how could he when publick confession was to go before reconciliation, and reconciliation likewise in publick thereupon to ensue? so that if they did account any confession Sacramental, it was surely publick, which is now abolisht: in the Church of Rome; and as for that which the Church of Rome doth so esteeme, the Ancient neither had it in such estimation, nor thought it to be of so absolute necessity for the taking away of sin: But (for any thing that I could ever observe out of them) although not onely in crimes open and notorious, which made men unworthy and incapable of holy mysteries, their Discipline required, first publick penance, and then granted that which *S. Hieron* mentioneth, saying, *The Priest layeth his hand upon the penitent, and by invocation intreateth that the holy Ghost may return to him again, and so after having enjoyed solemnly all the people to pray for him, reconcileth to the Altar him who was delivered to Satan for the destruction of his flesh, that his Spirit might be safe in the day of the Lord.* Although I say not onely in such offences being famously known to the world, but also if the same were committed secretly, it was the custom of those times, both that private intimation should be given, and publick confession made thereof, in which respect whereas all men did willingly the one, but would as willingly have withdrawn themselves from the other, had they known how: Is it tolerable, (saith *S. Ambrose*) that to sue to God thou shouldst be ashamed, which blushest not to seek and sue unto man? should it grieve thee to be a suppliant to him from whom thou canst not possible hide thy self, when to open thy sins to him, from whom, if thou wouldst, thou mightest conceal them, it doth not any thing at all trouble thee? This thou art loath to do in the Church, where all being sinners, nothing is more opprobrious indeed then concealment of sin, the most humble the best thought of, and the lowliest accounted the justest. All this notwithstanding, we should do them very great wrong, to father any such opinion upon them, as if they did teach it a thing impossible for any sinner to reconcile himself unto God, without confession unto the Priest.

*Sacerdos imponit manum subiecto, reditum spiritus sancti invocatur, etque ita cum qui traditus fuerat Satanae in interitum carnis, ut spiritus saluus fieret, indistincta in populum oratione altari reconciliatur.*  
*Hier. advers. Lucifer.*  
*Amb. de pen. l. c. c. 10.*

*Chrysostom: ubi promittitur, quod si quis seipsum coram deo confiteatur, et poenitentiam agat, non erit ei peccatum imputatum.*

*Cassian. Collat. 20. c. 8.*

*Prosper. de vita contempl. lib. 2. c. 7.*

Would *Chrysostom* thus perswaded have said, Let the enquiry and punishment of thy offences be made in thine own thoughts, let the Tribunal whereat thou arraignest thy self be without witness, Let God and onely God see thee and thy confession.

*Chrysostomus in Epistola ad Romanos, de poenitentia l. c. vi. de poenitentia, i. de poenitentia p. 1. de poenitentia p. 2.*

Would *Cassianus* so believing have given counsell, That if any were withheld with bashfulness from discovering their faults to men, they should be so much the more instant and constant in opening them by supplication to God himself, whose wont is to help without publication of mens shame, and not to upbraid them when he pardoneth?

Finally, would *Prosper* settled in this opinion have made it, as touching reconciliation to God, a matter indifferent, Whether men of Ecclesiastical order did detect their crimes by confession, or leaving the world ignorant thereof, would separate voluntarily themselves for a time from the Altar, though not in affliction, yet in execution



of their Ministry, and so bewail their corrupt life? Would he have will'd them as he doth, to make bold of it, that the favour of God being either may recovered by fruits of forcible repentance, they should not only receive whatsoever they had lost by sin, but also after this their new enfranchisement, aspire to the endless joys of that supernal City? To conclude, we every where find the use of confession, especially publick, allowed of, and commended by the Fathers, but that extreame and rigorous necessity of Auricular and private confession, which is at this day so mightily upheld by the Church of Rom., we find not. First, it was not then the Faith and Doctrine of Gods Church, as of the Papacy at this present. Secondly, that the only remedy for sin after Baptism, is Sacramental penitency. Thirdly, that confession in secret is an essential part thereof. Fourthly, That God himself cannot now forgive sin without the Priest. That because forgiveness at the hands of the Priest must arise from confession in the offenders; Therefore to confesse unto him, is a matter of such necessity, as being not either in deed, or at the least in desire performed, excludeth utterly from all pardon, and must consequently in Scripture be commanded, wheresoever any promise of forgiveness is made. No, no; these opinions have youth in their countenance, Antiquity knew them not, it never thought nor dreamed of them.

But to let passe the Papacy. For as much as Repentance doth import alteration within the mind of a sinful man, whereby through the power of Gods most gracious and blessed Spirit, he seeth, and with unfained sorrow acknowledgeth former offences committed against God, hath them in utter detestation, seeketh pardon for them in such sort as a Christian should do, and with a resolute purpose setteth himself to avoid them, leading as near as God shall assist him for ever after an unspotted life; And in the order (which Christian Religion hath taught for procurment of Gods mercy towards sinners) confession is acknowledged a principal duty; Yea, in some cases, confession to man, not to God only; It is not in reformed Churches denied by the Learnedest sort of Divines, but that even this confession, cleared from all errours, is both lawful and behoveful for Gods people.

Confession by man being either private or publick, private confession to the Minister alone touching secret crimes, or absolution thereupon ensuing, as the one, so the other is neither practised by the French Discipline, nor used in any of those Churches, which have bin cast by the French mould. Open confession to be made in the face of the whole Congregation by notorious Malefactors, they hold necessary; Howbeit not necessary towards the remission of sins: But only in some sort to content the Church, and that one mans repentance may seem to strengthen many, which before have weakned by one mans fall.

Saxonians and Bohemians in their Discipline constrain no man to open confession: Their Doctrine is, that whose faults have been publick and thereby scandalous unto the world, such when God giveth them the spirit of repentance, ought as solemnly to return, as they have openly gone astray. First, for the better testimony of their own unfained conversion unto God. Secondly, the more to notifie their reconciliation unto the Church: And lastly, that others may make benefit of their example.

But concerning confession in private, the Churches of Germany, as well the rest, as Lutherans agree, that all men should at certain times confesse their offences to God in the hearing of Gods Ministers, thereby to shew how their sins displease them, to receive instruction for the wiser carriage of themselves hereafter, to be soundly resolved, if any scruple or snare of conscience do entangle their minds, and which is most material, to the end that men may at Gods hands seek every one his own particular pardon, through the power of those Keyes, which the Minister of God using according to our blessed Saviours Institution in that case, it is their part to accept the benefit thereof as Gods most merciful Ordinance for their good,

Calv Instit.  
lib. 3. cap. 4.  
sect. 7.

Sed tantum ut  
Ecclesia sit a-  
liqua ratio-  
natisculum,  
et omnes uni-  
us continentia  
confirmetur,  
qui su- rant u-  
nius peccatis  
et scandalis  
vulnerati.  
Sadecl in pl.  
32 v. 5

Harm Confess.  
Sect. 8. ex. 5.  
cap. confess. Bo-  
hem.

and

and without any distrust or doubt, to embrace joyfully his grace so given them, according to the word of our Lord, which hath said, *Whose sins ye remit are remitted.* So that grounding upon this assured belief, they are to rest with minds encouraged and persuaded concerning the forgiveness of all their sins, as out of Christs own word and power by the Ministry of the Keyes.

Cap. 5. Confess.  
Boban.

It standeth with us in the Church of England, as touching publick confession thus :

First, seeing day by day we in our Church begin our publick Prayers to Almighty God, with publick acknowledgement of our sins, in which confession every man prostrate as it were before his glorious Majesty, cryeth against himself, and the Minister with one sentence pronounceth universally all clear, whose acknowledgement so made hath proceeded from a true penitent mind ; What reason is there, every man should not under the general terms of confession represent to himself his own particulars whatsoever, and adjoyning thereunto that affection which a contrite spirit worketh, embrace to as full effect the words of Divine grace, as if the same were severally and particularly uttered with addition of prayers, imposition of hands, or all the ceremonies and solemnities that might be used for the strengthening of mens assiance in Gods peculiar mercy towards them ? Such complements are helps to support our weaknesse, and not causes that serve to procure or produce his gifts, as *David* speaketh, the difference of general and particular Forms in confession and absolution is not so material, that any mans safety or ghostly good should depend upon it. And for private confession and absolution, it standeth thus with us.

As for private  
confession,  
abuses and  
errors set  
apart, we  
condemne it  
not, but  
leave it at  
liberty, *how*  
*deserve*, part.  
156.

The Ministers power to absolve is publicly taught and professed, the Church not denied to have authority either of abridging, or enlarging the use and exercise of that power ; upon the people no such necessity imposed of opening their transgressions unto men, as if remission of sins otherwise were impossible, neither any such opinion had of the thing it self, as though it were either unlawful or unprofitable, saving only for these inconveniences, which the world hath by experience observed in it heretofore. And in regard thereof, the Church of England hitherto hath thought it the safer way to refer mens hidden crimes unto God and themselves only ; Howbeit not without special caution for the admonition of such as come to the holy Sacrament, and for the comfort of such as are ready to depart the world. First, because there are but few that consider how much that part of Divine Service which consists in partaking the holy Eucharist doth import their souls, what they loose by neglect thereof, and what by devout practice they might attain unto, therefore least carelesnesse of general confession should as commonly it doth extinguish all remorse of mens particular enormous crimes. Our custom ( whensoever men present themselves at the Lords Table ) is solemnly to give themselves fearful admonition, what woes are perpendicularly hanging over the heads of such as dare adventure to put forth their unworthy hands to those admirable mysteries of life, which have by rare examples been proved conduits of irremediable death to impenitent Receivers, whom therefore as we repel being known, so being not known we can but terrifie. Yet with us, the Ministers of Gods most holy Word and Sacraments, being all put in trust with the custody and dispensation of those mysteries, wherein our Communion is and hath been ever accounted the highest grace that men on earth are admitted unto, have therefore all equally the same power to withhold that sacred myssical food from notorious evil-livers, from such as have any way wronged their neighbours, and from parties between whom there doth open hatred and malice appear, till the first sort have reformed their wicked lives, the second recompensed them unto whom they were injurious, and the last condescended unto some course of Christian reconciliation, whereupon their mutual accord may ensue. In which cases for the first branch

of

of wicked life, and the last which is open enmity, there can arise no great difficulty about the exercise of his power: In the second, concerning wrongs, there may if men shall presume to define or measure injuries, according to their own conceits depraved oftentimes, as well by error, as partiality, and that no lesse in the Minister himself, then in another of the people under him.

The knowledge therefore which he taketh of wrongs must rise as it doth in the other two, not from his own opinion or conscience, but from the evidence of the fact which is committed; Yea, from such evidence as neither doth admit denial nor defence. For if the offender having either colour of Law to uphold, or any other pretence to excuse his own uncharitable and wrongful dealings, shall wilfully stand in defence thereof, it serveth as a bar to the power of the Minister in this kind. Because (as it is observed by men of very good judgement in these affairs,) although in this sort our separating of them be not to strike them with the mortal wound of Excommunication, but to stay them rather from running desperately headlong into their own harm, yet it is not in us, to sever from the holy Communion, but such as are either found culpable by their own confession, or have been convicted in some publick, secular, Ecclesiastical Court. For, who is he, that dares take upon him to be any mans both accuser and judge? Evil persons are not rashly, and as we list to be thrust from Communion with the Church, in so much that if we cannot proceed against them by any orderly course of judgement, they rather are to be suffered for the time then molested. Many there are reclaimed, as Peter; Many as Judas known well enough, and yet tolerated; Many which must remain undescried till the day of his appearance, by whom the secret corners of darkness shall be brought into open light.

Leaving therefore unto his judgement, them, whom we cannot stay from casting their own souls into so great hazard, we have in the other part of penitential Jurisdiction in our power, and Authority to release sin, joy on all sides, without trouble or molestation unto any. And if to give, be a thing more blessed then to receive, are we not infinitely happier in being authorized to bestow the Treasure of God, then when necessity doth constrain to withdraw the same.

They which during life and health are never destitute of wayes to delude repentance, do notwithstanding oftentimes when their last hour draweth on, both feel that sting which before lay dead in them, and also thirst after such helps as have been alwayes till then unfavoury; St. Ambros words touching late repentance are somewhat hard, *If a man be penitent and receive absolution (which cannot in that case be denied him) even at the very point of death, and so depart, I dare not affirm he goeth out of the world well; I will counsel no man to trust to this, because I am loth to deceive any man, seeing I know not what to think of it; shall I judge such a one a cast away? Neither I will avouch him safe: All I am able to say, is, Let his estate be left to the will and pleasure of Almighty God: Wilt thou be therefore delivered of all doubt? Repent while yet thou art healthy and strong: If thou defer it till time give no longer possibility of sinning, thou canst not be thought to have left sin, but rather sin to have forsaken thee.* Such admonitions may in their time and place be necessary, but in no wise prejudicial to the generality of Gods own high and heavenly promise, *Whensoever a sinner doth repent from the bottom of his heart, I will put out all his iniquity.* And of this, although it have pleased God not to leave to the world any multitude of examples, least the carelesse should too far presume, yet one he hath given, and that most memorable to withhold from despair in the mercies of God,

*Nos à communione quemquam prohibere non possumus, quousque hac prohibito non dum sit mortalis, sed medicinalis, nisi aut sponte confessum, aut aliquo sine seculari, siue Ecclesiastico iudicio accusatum atque convictum. Quis enim sibi arrogat, eandem assumere ac causam ipse sit et accusator et iudex?*

*Non enim temere et quodammodo libere, sed propter iudicium ad Ecclesie communionem separandi sunt mali, ut si propter iudicium auferri non possint, tollerentur potius, velut palea cum tritico. Multi corriguntur, ut Petrus; multi tolerantur, ut Judas; multi negliguntur, donec veniat Dominus, et illuminabit abscondita tenebrarum. Rhennan. admonit. de dogmat. Terrul.*

Lib. 3 de pen.

at



at what instant so ever mans unfained conversion be wrought. Yea, because to countervail the fault of delay, there are in the latest repentance oftentimes the surest tokens of sincere dealing; Therefore upon special confession made to the Minister of God, he presently absolveth in this case the sick party from all sins by that Authority which Jesus Christ hath committed unto him, knowing that God respecteth not so much what time is spent, as what truth is shewed in repentance.

In sum, when the offence doth stand only between God and mans conscience,

Non dico tibi, ut te prodas in publicum, neque ut te apud alios accuses, sed obedire te volo Phropheta dicenti, Revela Domino viam tuam. Ante Deum confitere peccata tua; Peccata tua dicito ut ea deleat; Si confunderis alicui dicere quæ peccasti, dicito ea quotidie in anima: Non dico ut confitearis conservo qui exprobrat; Deo dico qui ea curat; Non necesse est presentibus testibus confiteri, solus te Deus consistentem videat. Rogo & oro ut crebris Deo immortalis, confiteamini, & enumeratis vestris delectis veniam petatis. Non te in Theatrum conservorum dugo, non hominibus peccata tua conch detegere. Repete coram Deo conscientiam tuam, te explica, cense medico præstantissimo vulnera tua, & pete ab eo medicamentum, *Christ. hom. 31. ad Heb. & in Plal. 59. Hum. de pen. & confess. & hom. 5. de incor. Die natura, humil. nemque de Lazaro.*

the Counsel is good, which *St. Chrysostome* giveth, *I wish thee not to bewray thy self publickly, nor to accuse thy self before others. I wish thee to obey the Prophet who saith, Disclose thy way unto the Lord, confesse thy sins before him, Tell thy sins to him that he may blot them out. If thou be ashamed to tell unto any other, wherein thou hast offended, rehearse them every day between thee and thy soul, I wish thee not to confesse them to thy fellow servant, who may upbraid thee with them; Tell them to God, who will cure them; There is no need for thee in the presence of witnesses to acknowledge them; Let God alone see thee at thy Confession; I pray and beseech you that you would more often then you do, confesse to God eternal, and reckoning up your trespasses, desire his pardon: I carry you not into a Theatre or open Court of many your fellow servants, I seek not to detell your crimes before men; Disclose your conscience before God, unfold your selves to him, lay forth your wounds before him, the best Physician that is, and desire of him salve for them. If hereupon it follow, as it did with David, I thought, I will confesse against my self my wickednesse unto thee O Lord, and thou forgavest me th. plague of*

my sin, we have our desire, and there remaineth only thankfulness accompanied with perpetuity of care to avoid that which being not avoided, we know we cannot remedy without new perplexity and grief. Contrariwise, if peace with God do not follow the paines we have taken in seeking after it, if we continue disquieted, and not delivered from anguish, mistrusting whether that we do be sufficient, it argueth that our soar doth exceed the power of our own skill, and that the wisdom of the Pastor must bind up those parts, which being bruised, are not able to be recured of themselves.

#### Of Satisfaction.

Here resteth now Satisfaction only to be considered; A point which the Fathers do often touch, albeit they never aspire to such mysteries as the Papacy hath found, enwrapped within the folds, and plaits thereof. And it is happy for the Church of God that we have the Writings of the Fathers, to shew what their meaning was. The name of satisfaction, as the Ancient Fathers meant it, containeth whatsoever a Penitent should do in the humbling himself unto God, and testifying by deeds of contrition, the same which confession in words pretendeth; He which by Repentance for sins (saith *Tertullian* speaking of fickle minded men) had a purpose to satisfy the Lord, will now by repenting his repentance make Satan satisfaction, and be so much more hateful to God, as he is unto Gods enemy more acceptable. Is it not plain that satisfaction doth here include the whole work of penitency, and that God is satisfied, when men are restored through sin into favour by Repentance? How canst thou (saith *Chrysostom*) move God to pity thee, when thou wilt not seem as much as to know that thou hast offended? By appealing, pacifying, and moving God to pity. *St. Chrysostom* meaneth the very same with the Latin Fathers, when they speak of satisfying God. We feel (saith *Cyprian*) the bitter smart

*Tertul. de penit.*

*Chry. in 1. Cor. hom. 8. ubi dicitur isti saccardi.*

heart of this rod and scourge, because there is in us neither care to please him with our good deeds, nor to satisfie him for our evil. Again, Let the eyes which have looked on Idols sponge out of their unlawful acts with those sorrowful tears, which have power to satisfie God. The Master of sentences alleadgeth out of St. Augustine, that which is plain enough to this purpose. Three things there are in perfect penitency, Compunction, Confession, and Satisfaction; that as we three wayes offend God, namely in heart, word, and deed: So by three duties we may satisfie God.

Cyp. Ep. 8.  
Cyp. Ep. 26.  
Sentent. l. 4.  
dist. 16.

Satisfaction, as a part, comprehendeth only that which the Papists meant by worthy of Repentance; and if we speak of the whole work of repentance it self, we may in the phrase of antiquity term it very well satisfaction.

Satisfaction is a work which Justice requireth to be done for contentment of persons injured: Neither is it in the eye of Justice a sufficient satisfaction, unlesse it fully equal the injury for which we satisfie. Seeing then that sin against God Eternal and Infinite, must needs be an infinite wrong: Justice in regard thereof doth necessarily exact an infinite recompense, or else inflict upon the offender infinite punishment. Now because God was thus to be satisfied, and man not able to make satisfaction, in such sort his unspeakable love and inclination to save mankind from eternal death ordained in our behalf a Mediator to do that which had been for any other impossible: Wherefore all sin is remitted in the only faith of Christs passion, and no man without belief thereof justified; Bonavent. in sentent. 4. dist. 15. q. 9. Faith alone maketh Christs satisfaction ours, howbeit that faith alone which after sin maketh us by conversion his.

For in as much as God will have the benefit of Christs satisfaction, both thankfully acknowledged and duly esteemed, of all such as enjoy the same, he therefore imparteth so high a treasure unto no man whose faith hath not made him willing by repentance to do even that which of it self, how unavailable soever, yet being required, and accepted with God, we are in Christ thereby made capable, and fit vessels to receive the fruits of his satisfaction: Yea, we so far please and content God, that because when we have offended, he looketh but for repentance at our hands; our repentance and the works thereof are therefore termed satisfactory, not for that so much is thereby done as the justice of God can exact, but because such actions of grief and humility in man after sin, are *illice divinae misericordiae* (as Tertullian speaketh of them) they draw that pity of Gods towards us, wherein he is for Christs sake contented upon our submission to pardon our rebellion against him; and when that little which his Law appointeth is faithfully executed, it pleaseth him in tender compassion and mercy to require no more.

Repentance is a name which noteth the habit and operation of a certain grace, or vertue in us: Satisfaction, the effect which it hath, either with God or man. And it is not in this respect said amisse, that satisfaction importeth acceptation, reconciliation & amity; because that through satisfaction on the one part made, and allowed on the other, they which before did reject are now content to receive, they to be won again which were lost, and they to love unto whom just cause of hatred was given. We satisfie therefore in doing that which is sufficient to this effect, and they towards whom we do it are satisfied, if they accept it as sufficient and require no more: Otherwise we satisfie not, although we do satisfie: For so between man and man it oftentimes falleth out, but between man and God, never; It is therefore true that our Lord Jesus Christ by one most precious and propriatory sacrifice, which was his body, a gift of infinite worth, offered for the sins of the whole world, hath thereby once reconciled us to God, purchased his general free pardon, and turned away divine indignation from mankind. But we are not for that cause to think, any office of penitence, either needlesse or fruitlesse, on our own behalf. For then would not God require any such duties at our hands; Christ doth remain everlastingly a gracious Intercessour, even for every particular penitent. Let this assure us, that God how highly soever

Apo. 1. 6.

Cassia, coll.  
20. c. 2.Basil hom in  
Psal 37.warror qd  
indus d' m b.  
q'io To G's-  
ar.Cum Deus i-  
raicitur, non  
ejus significa-  
tur perturba-  
tio qualis est  
in animo iras-  
centis hominis  
sed ex humanis  
motibus trans-  
lato vocabulo,  
vindicta eius  
que non nisi  
iusta est, ira  
nomen accepit.

Aug. tom. 3.

Ezech c. 33.

Penitentia  
compensatione  
redimendam  
proponit impu-  
nitatem Deus.  
Tertull. de  
pen.

a Num 14. 21

b Num. 20. 12

c Num 12. 14

d 2 Sam 12. 14

e Cui Deus

vera propitius

est non solum

condonat pec-

cata ne noc-

ant ad futu-

rum seculum,

sed etiam ca-

stigit, ne semper

peccare dis-

sset. Aug.

in Psal 58.

f Pl. Suntur

quidam quo ce-

teri corrigun-

tur; exempla

sunt omnium,

tormenta pau-

corum. Cypr.

de lapsis.

Ezec. 33. 14.

Rom. 2. 5

Ez. 1. 18.

g Si texit Deus

peccata, noluit

advertere, si

noluit advertere

noluit animadvertere.

displeased and incensed with our sins, is notwithstanding for his sake by our tears pacified, taking that for satisfaction, which is due by us, because Christ hath by his satisfaction made it acceptable. For, as he is the high Priest of our salvation, so he hath made us Priests likewise under him, to the end we might offer unto God praise and thankfulness while we continue in the way of life, and when we sin, the satisfactory or propitiatory sacrifice of a broken and a contrite heart. There is not any thing that we do that could pacifie God, and clear us in his sight from sin, if the goodness, and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ were not, whereas now beholding the poor offer of our religious endeavours, meekly to submit our selves as often as we have offended, he regardeth with infinite mercy those services which are as nothing, and with words of comfort reviveth our afflicted minds, saying, *It is I, even I that take away thine iniquities for mine own sake.* Thus doth repentance satisfie God, changing his wrath and indignation unto mercy.

Anger and mercy are in us, passions; but in him not so.

God (saith St. Basil) is no wayes passionate, but because the punishments which his judgements do inflict, are like effects of indignation severe and grievous to such as suffer them, therefore we term the revenge which he taketh upon sinners anger; and the withdrawing of his plagues, mercy. His wrath (saith St. Augustine) is not as ours, the trouble of a mind disturbed and disquieted with things amisse, but a calm, unpassionate, and just assignation of dreadful punishment to be their portion which have disobeyed; his mercy a free determination of all felicity and happiness unto men, except their sins remain as a bar between it and them. So that when God doth cease to be angry with sinful men, when he receiveth them into favour, when he pardoneth their offences, and remembreth their iniquities no more, (for all these signifie but one thing) it must needs follow that all punishments before due in revenge of sin, whether they be temporal or eternal are remitted.

For how should Gods indignation import only mans punishment, and yet some punishment remain unto them towards whom there is now in God no indignation remaining? God (saith Tertullian) takes penitency at mens hands, and men at his in lieu thereof receive impunity; which notwithstanding doth not prejudice the chastisements which God after pardon hath laid upon some offenders, as on the people of Israel, on Moses, on Miriam, on David, either for their own more sound amendment, or for example unto others in this present world (for in the world to come, punishments have unto these intents no use, the dead being not in case to be better by correction, nor to take warning by executions of Gods Justice there seen) but assuredly to whomsoever he remitteth sin, their very pardon is in it self a full, absolute and perfect discharge for revengful punishment, which God doth now here threaten, but with purpose of revocation, if men repent, no where inflict but on them whom impenitency maketh obdurate.

Of the one therefore it is said, *Though I tell the wicked, Thou shalt die the death, yet if he turneth from his sin, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live and not die.* Of the other, *Thou according to thine hardness, and heart that will not repent, treasurest up to thy self wrath against the day of wrath, and evident appearance of the judgement of God.* If God be satisfied and do pardon sin, our justification restored is as perfect as it was at the first bestowed: For so the Prophet Isaiah witnesseth, *Though your sins were as crimson, they shall be made as white as snow, though they were as scarlet, they shall be as white as wooll.* And can we doubt concerning the punishment of revenge, which was due to sin, but that if God be satisfied, and have forgotten his wrath, it must be even as St. Augustine reasoneth, *What God hath covered, he will not observe, and what he observeth not, he will not punish.* The truth of which doctrine is not to be shifted off by restraining it unto eternal punishment alone: For then

would not David have said, *They are blessed to whom*

*God imputeth not sin; blessedness having no part*

*or fellowship at all with malediction: Whereas to be*

*subject to revenge for sin, although the punishment be but temporal, is to be*

*under*



under the curse of the Law; wherefore, as one and the same fire consumeth stubble and refineth gold, so if it please God to lay punishment on them whose sins he hath forgiven; yet is not this done for any destructive end of wasting and eating them out, as in plagues inflicted upon the impenitent, neither is the punishment of the one as of the other proportioned by the greatness of sin past, but according to that future purpose, whereunto the goodness of God referreth it, and wherein there is nothing meant to the sufferer, but furtherance of all happiness, now in grace, and hereafter in glory; St. *Augustin*, to stop the mouths of Pelagians, arguing, That if God had imposed death upon Adam and Adams posterity, as a punishment of sin, death should have ceased when God had procured sinners their pardon. Answereth first, it is no marvel, either that bodily death should not have happened to the first man, unless he had first sinned, (death as a punishment following his sin) or that after sin is forgiven, death notwithstanding befall to the faultful, to the end that the strength of righteousness might be exercised, by overcoming the fear thereof. So that justly God did inflict bodily death on man for committing sin, and yet after sin forgiven, took it not away, that his righteousness might still have whereby to be exercised. He fortifieth this with Davids example, whose sin he forgave, and yet afflicted him for exercise and tryal of his humility. Briefly, a general axiome he hath for all such chastisements, Before forgiveness, they are the punishment of sinners, and after forgiveness, they are exercises and trials of righteous men. Which kind of proceeding is agreeable with Gods nature and mans comfort, that it sheweth even injurious to both, if we should admit those surmised retributions of temporal wrath, in God appeale towards reconciled sinners As a Father he delights in his childrens conversion, neither doth he threaten the penitent with wrath, or them with punishment which already mourn; but by promise assureth such of indulgence and mercy; yea, even of plenary pardon which taketh away all both faults and penalties: There being no reason why we should think him the lesse just because he sheweth him thus merciful, when they which before were obstinate labour to appease his wrath with the penitive meditation of contrition, the meek humility which confession expresseth, and the deeds wherewith repentance declareth it self to be an amendment as well of the rotten fruits, as the dried leaves and withered root of the tree. For with these duties by us performed and presented unto God in heaven by Jesus Christ, whose blood is a continual sacrifice of propitiation for us, we content, please, and satisfie God. Repentance therefore, even the sole vertue of Repentance without either purpose of shift or desire of absolution from the Priest; Repentance the secret conversion of the heart, in that it consisteth of these three; and doth by these three pacifie God; may be without hyperbolical terms most truly magnified, as a recovery of the soul of man from deadly sickness, a restitution of glorious light to his darkned mind, a comfortable reconciliation with God, a spiritual nativity, a rising from the dead, a day spring from out the depth of obscurity, a redemption from more then the Egyptian thralldom, a grinding of the old Adam, even into dust and powder, a deliverance out of the prisons of hell, a full restoration of the Seat of Grace and Throne of Glory, a triumph over sin, and a saving Victory.

Amongst the works of satisfaction, the most respected have been alwayes these three, Prayers, Fasts, and Almes deeds; by prayers, we lift up our souls to him from whom sin and iniquity hath withdrawn them; by fasting, we reduce the body from thralldom under vain delights, and make it serviceable for parts of vertuous conversation; by Almes, we dedicate to charity those worldly goods and possessions, which unrighteousness doth neither get, nor bestow well: The first a token of pity intended towards God; the second a pledge of moderation and sobriety in the carriage of our own persons; the last, a testimony of our meaning to do good to all men. In which three, the Apostle by way of abridgement comprehendeth whatsoever may appertain to sanctimony, holiness, and good life: As contrariwise the very masse of general corruption

*Aug de peccat  
mer. l. 2. c. 34.  
Mirandum non  
est, si mortem  
corporis non fa-  
cisse eventum  
homini, nisi  
peccasset pec-  
catorum, cujus  
etiam talis  
pena consequer-  
etur: et post  
remissionem  
peccatorum  
eam fidelitas  
eventus ut ejus  
timore vincen-  
do exerceatur  
fortitudo justi-  
tie. Sic et  
mortem corpo-  
ris propter hoc  
peccatum De-  
us homini in-  
fluxit, et post  
peccatorum  
remissionem  
propter exer-  
cendum justi-  
tiam non ade-  
mit.*  
*Acce remissio-  
nem esse illa  
susplicia pec-  
catorum, post  
remissionem  
autem certa-  
mina exercita-  
tionisq; iusto-  
rum. Cypri.  
Epist. 53.*

2 Cor. 7. 11.  
 Tis ipse de-  
 quis dicitur de-  
 si. ipse, hunc  
 autem ipse  
 quoniam  
 dicitur de-  
 quis de  
 quoniam  
 Cyprianus  
 30. in Ep. ad  
 Heb.  
 Cyprianus de lapsis

Salv. ad Eccl.  
 Cath. 1b. 1.

Levit. 5. 2.

Numb. 5. 8.

ruption throughout the world, what is it but only forgetfulness of God, carnal pleasure, immoderate desire after worldly things, prophaneſs, licentiousness, covetousness? All offices to repentance have these two properties; there is in performance of them painfulness, and in their nature a contrariety unto sin. The one consideration, causeth them both in holy Scripture and elsewhere to be termed judgement or revenges taken voluntarily on our selves, and to be furthermore also preservatives from future evils, in as much we commonly use to keep with the greater care that which with pain we have recovered. And they are in the other respect contrary to sin committed, contrition, contrary to the pleasure; confession, to the error, which is mother of sin; and to the deeds of sin, the works of satisfaction contrary; therefore they are the more effectual to cure the evil habit thereof: Hereunto it was that S. Cyprian referred his earnest and vehement exhortations, *That they which had fallen, should be instant in prayer, reject bodily ornaments, whenonce they had stripped themselves out of Christs attire, abhor all food after Satans morsels tasted, follow works of righteousness, which wash away sin, and be plentiful in alms deeds whereunto souls are delivered from death.* Not, as if God did according to the manner of corrupt Judges, take some money to abate so much in the punishment of Malefactors. These duties must be offered (saith Salvianus) not in confidence to redeem or buy out sin, but as tokens of meek submission; neither are they with God accepted, because of their value, but for the affections sake, which doth thereby shew it self. Wherefore concerning satisfaction made to God by Christ only and of the manner how repentance generally, particularly also, how certain special works of penitency, both are by the Fathers in their ordinary phrase of speech called satisfactory, and may be by us very well so acknowledged, enough hath been spoken.

Our offences sometimes are of such nature as requireth that particular men be satisfied, or else repentance to be utterly void, & of none effect. For, if either through open repine or cloaked fraud, if through injurious, or unconscionable dealing a man have wittingly wronged others to enrich himself, the first thing evermore in this case required (ability serving) is restitution. For let no man deceive himself, from such offences we are not discharged, neither can be, till recompence and restitution to man, accompany the penitent confession we have made to Almighty God. In which case the Law of Moses was direct and plain, *If any sin and commit a trespass against the Lord, and deny unto his neighbours that which was given him to keep, or that which was put unto him of trust, or doth by robbery, or by violence oppress his neighbour; or hath found that which was lost and deneth it, and swear falsely, for any of these things that a man doth wherein he sinneth, he that doth thus offend and trespass, shall restore the robbery that he hath taken, or the thing he hath gotten by violence, or that which was delivered him to keep, or the lost thing which he found; and for whatsoever he hath sworn falsely; adding perjury to injury, he shall both restore the whole sum and shall adde thereunto a fifth part more, and deliver it unto him, unto whom it belongeth, the same day wherein he offereth for his trespass.* Now because men are commonly over slack to perform this duty, and do therefore defer it sometime, till God have taken the party wronged out of the world, the Law providing that trespassers might not under such pretence gain the restitution which they ought to make, appointeth the kindred surviving to receive what the dead should, if they had continued. But (saith Moses) *if the party wronged have no kinsman to whom this damage may be restored, it shall then be rendered to the Lord himself for the Priests use.* The whole order of proceeding herein is in sundry traditional writings set down by their great Interpreters and Scribes, which taught them that a trespass between a man and his neighbour, can never be forgiven till the offender have by restitution made recompence for wrongs done; yea, they hold it necessary that he appease the party grieved by submitting himself unto him, or, if that will not serve, by using the help and mediation of others; in this case (say they) for any man to shew himself unappeasable and cruel, were a sin most grievous, considering that the people of God should be easie to relent, as Joseph was towards

towards his brethren; finally, if so it fall out that the death of him which was injured, prevent his submission which did offend, let him then (for so they determine that he ought) go accompanied with ten others unto the Sepulchre of the dead, and there make confession of the fault, saying, *I have sinned against the Lord God of Israel, and against this man, to whom I have done such or such injury, and if money be due, let it be restored to his heirs, or in case he have none known, leave it with the house of judgement.* That is to say, with the Senators, Ancients and Guides of Israel; we hold not Christian people tyed unto Jewish orders, for the manner of restitution; but surely restitution, we must hold necessary as well in our own repentance as theirs, for sins of wilfull oppression and wrong.

*Quandiu enim res propter quam peccatum est, non redditur, si reddi potest, non agitur penitentia sed fingitur. Sent. 4. d. 15.*

Now although it suffices, that the offices wherewith we pacifie God or private men, be secretly done; yet in cases where the Church must be also satisfied, it was not to this end and purpose unnecessary, that the ancient Discipline did farther require outward signes of contrition to be shewed, confession of sins to be made openly, and those works to be apparent which served as testimonies for conversion before men. Wherein, if either hypocrisie did at any time delude their judgement, they knew, that God is he whom masks and mockeries cannot blind, that he which seeth mens hearts would judge them according unto his own evidence, and as Lord, correct the sentence of his servants, concerning matters beyond their reach; Or if such as ought to have kept the rules of Canonical satisfaction, would by sinister means and practices undermine the same, obtruding presumptuously themselves to the participation of Christs most sacred mysteries, before they were orderly readmitted thereunto, the Church for contempt of holy things, held them incapable of that grace, which God in the Sacrament doth impart to devout Communicants; and no doubt but he himself did retain bound, whom the Church in those cases refused to loose.

*Cyp. Ep. l. 52.*

The Fathers, as may appear by sundry Decrees and Canons of the Primitive Church, were (in matter specially of publick scandal) provident that too much facility of pardoning might not be shewed. He that casteth off his lawful wife (saith S. Basil) and doth take another, is adjudged an adulterer by the verdict of our Lord himself; and by our Fathers it is Canonically ordained, that such for the space of a year shall mourn, for two years space bear, three years be prostrate, the seventh year assemble with the faithful in prayer, and after that be admitted to communicate, if with tears they bewail their fault.

*Basil. Ep. ad Amphil. c. 26.*

Of them which had fallen from their faith in the time of Emperour Licinius, and were not thereunto forced by any extream usage, the Nicene Synod, under Constantine ordained, That earnestly repenting, they should continue three years Hearers, seven years be prostrate, and two years communicate with the people in prayer, before they came to receive the oblation. Which rigor sometimes they tempered neverthelesse with lenity, the selfsame Synod having likewise defined, That whatsoever the cause were, any man desirous at the time of departure out of this life to receive the Eucharist might (with examination and tryal) have it granted him by the Bishop. Yea, besides this case of special commiseration, there is a Canon more large which giveth alwayes liberty to abridge, or extend out the time, as the parties meek, or sturdy disposition should require.

*Council. Nicen. can. 11.*

By means of which Discipline, the Church having power to hold them many years in suspence, there was bred in the minds of the penitents, thorough long and daily practice of submission, a contrary habit unto that which before had been their ruine, and for ever afterwards warinesse not to fall into those snares, out of which they knew they could not easily wind themselves. Notwithstanding, because there was likewise hope, and possibility of shortning the time, this made them in all the parts and offices of their repentance the more fervent. In the first station, while they onely beheld others passing towards the Temple of God, whereunto for themselves to approach, it was not lawfull, they stood as miserable forlorn men, the very patterns of perplexity and woe. In the second, when they had the favour to wait at the doors of

God,

*Exod. x. 3. obd. ubi et in via Babil. 157. et am. ubi et per. 200. Eux. per. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.*



God, where the sound of his comfortable word might be heard, none received it with attention like to theirs: thirdly, being taken and admitted to the next degree of prostrates, at the feet, yet behind the back of that Angel representing God, whom the rest saw face to face; their tears, and entreaties both of Pastor and People were such as no man could resist. After the fourth step which gave them liberty to hear and pray with the rest of the people, being so near the haven, no diligence was then slack which might hasten admission to the heavenly Table of Christ their last desire. It is not therefore a thing to be marvelled at, though S. Cyprian took it in very ill part, when open backsliders from the faith and sacred Religion of Christ, laboured by sinister practice to procure from imprisoned Saints, those requests for present absolution, which the Church could neither yield unto with safety of Discipline, nor in honour of Martyrdom easily deny. For, what would thereby ensue, they needed not to conjecture, when they saw how every man which came so commended to the Church by letters, thought that now he needed not to crave, but might challenge of duty his peace; taking the matter very highly, if but any little forbearance, or small delay was used. He which is overthrown (saith Cyprian) menaceth them that stand, the wounded them that were never toucht; and because presently he hath not the body of our Lord, in his soul imbrued hands, nor the blood within his polluted lips, the miscreant fumeth at Gods Priests; Such is thy mind. O thou furious man; thou art angry with him, which laboureth to turn away Gods anger from thee; but thou threatenest which sueth unto God for grace, and mercy on thy behalf.

*facens flantibus, et integris vulneratus minatur.*  
Ex. 12. 31.  
Jer. 7. 15.  
Eccl. 14. 14.

Touching Martyrs, he answereth, That it ought not in this case to seem offensive, though they were denied, seeing God did himself refuse to yield to the party of his own righteous Saints, making suit for obdurate Jews.

As for the parties in whose behalf such shifts were used, to have their desire, was in very truth, a way to make them the more guilty: Such peace granted contrary to the rigour of the Gospel, contrary to the Law of our Lord and God, doth but under colour of merciful relaxation deceive sinners, and by soft handling destroy them, a grace dangerous for the givers, and to him which receiveth it, nothing at all available. The patient expectation that bringeth health, is by this means not regarded; recovery of soundness not sought for by the onely medicine available, which is satisfaction, penitency thrown out of mens hearts, the remembrance of that heaviest and last judgement clean banished; the wounds of dying men, which should be healed, are covered; the stroke of death, which hath gone as deep as any bowels are to receive it, is overcast with the slight shew of a cloudy look. From the Altar of Satan to the holy of the Lord, men are not afraid to come even belching in a manner the sacrificed morsels they have eaten, yea, their jaws yet breathing out the irksome savour of their former contagious wickedness, they seize upon the blessed body of our Lord, nothing terrified with that dreadful commination, which saith, *Whoever eateth and drinketh unworthily, is guilty of the body and blood of Christ.* They vainly think it to be peace which is gotten before they be purged of their faults, before their crime be solemnly confest, before their Conscience be cleared by the sacrifice and imposition of the Priests hands, and before they have pacified the indignation of God. Why term they that a favour which is an injury? wherefore cloak they impiety with the name of charitable indulgence? Such facility giveth not, but rather taketh away peace; and is it self another fresh persecution or tryal, whereby that fraudulent enemy maketh a secret havock of such as before he had overthrown; and now to the end he may clean swallow them, he casteth sorrow in a dead sleep, putteth grief to silence, wipeth away the memory of faults newly done, smothereth the sighs that should rise from a contrite Spirit, dryeth up eyes, which ought to send forth rivers of tears, and permitteth not God to be pacified with full repentance, whom heinous and enormous crimes have displeased.

1 Cor. 11. 27.

By this then we see that in S. Cyprians judgement all absolutions are void, frustrate

frustrate and of no effect, without sufficient repentance first shewed; Whereas contrariwise, if true and full satisfaction have gone before, the sentence of man here given is ratified of God in Heaven, according to our Saviours own sacred Testimony, *Whose sins ye remit, they are remitted.*

By what works in the vertue, and by what in the discipline of repentance, we are said to satisfie either God or men, cannot now be thought obscure; The end of satisfaction As for the Inventors of Sacramental satisfaction, they have both altered the natural order heretofore kept in the Church, by bringing in a strange preposterous course, to absolve before satisfaction be made, and moreover by this their misordered practice, are grown into sundry errors concerning the end whereunto it is referred.

They imagine beyond all conceit of Antiquity, that when God doth remit sin, and the punishment eternal thereunto belonging, he reserveth the torments of hell fire to be neverthelesse endured for a time, either shorter or longer, according to the quality of mens crimes. Yet so that there is between God and man, a certain composition (as it were) or contract, by vertue whereof works assigned by the Priest to be done after absolution shall satisfie God, as touching the punishment which he otherwise would inflict for sin pardoned and forgiven.

Now because they cannot assure any man, that if he performeth what the Priest appointeth, it shall suffice; This (I say) because they cannot do, The way of satisfying by others, in as much as the Priest hath no power to determine or define of equivalency between sins and satisfactions; And yet if a Penitent depart this life, the debt of satisfaction being either in whole or in part undischarged, they stedfastly hold, that the soul must remain in unspeakable torment till all be paid; Therefore for help and mitigation in this case, they advise men to set certain copes-mates on work, whose prayers and sacrifices may satisfie God for such souls as depart in debt. Hence have arisen the infinite pensions of their Priests, the building of so many Altars and Tombs, the enriching of Churches with so many glorious costly gifts, the bequeathing of lands, and ample possessions to Religious Companies, even with utter forgetfulness of friends, parents, wife and children, all natural affection giving place unto that desire, which men doubtful of their own estate, have to deliver their souls from torment after death.

Yet, behold even this being done, how far forth it shall avail, they are not sure; And therefore the last upshot unto all their former inventions, is, that as every action of Christ, did both merit for himself, and satisfie partly for the eternal, and partly for the temporal punishment due unto men for sin; So his Saints have obtained the like priviledge of Grace, making every good work they do, not only meritorious in their own behalf, but satisfactory too for the benefit of others; Or if, having at any time grievously sinned, they do more to satisfie God, then he in justice can exact, or look for at their hands, the surplusage runneth to a common stock, out of which treasury, containing whatsoever Christ did by way of Satisfaction for temporal punishment, together with the satisfactory force which resideth in all the vertuous works of Saints; And in their Satisfactions whatsoever doth abound, (I say) *From hence they hold God satisfied for such arrerages, as men bebind in account discharge not by other means, and for disposition hereof, as it is their Doctrine, that Christ remitteth not eternal death without the Priests Absolution, so without the grant of the Pope, they cannot but teach it alike impossible, that Souls in Hell should receive any temporal release of pain. The Sacrament of Pardon from him being to this effect no lesse necessary, than the Priests Absolution to the other.* So that by this postern gate cometh in the whole mark of Papal Indulgences, a gain unestimable unto him, to others a spoil, a scorn both to God and Man. So many works of satisfaction pretended to be done by Christ, by Saints, and Martyrs; So many vertuous acts possessed with satisfactory force and vertue, so many supererogations in satisfying beyond the exigence of their own necessity; And this that the Pope might make a

Menopolis

Monopolie of all, turning all to his own gain, or at least to the gain of those which are his own. Such facilitie they have to convert a pretended Sacrament into a Revenue.

*Of Absolution of Penitents.*

Mat. 9. 2.  
Mark. 5. 22.  
Luc. 5. 25.

**S**In is not helped but by being assured of Pardon: It resteth therefore to be considered what warrant we have concerning Forgiveness, when the Sentence of man absolveth us from sin committed against God. At the words of our Saviour, saying, to the sick of the Palsie, *Son, thy sins are forgiven thee*, Exception was taken by the Scribes, who secretly reasoned against him, *Is any able to forgive sins, but only God?* Whereupon they condemned his speech as blasphemy, the rest which believed him to be a Prophet sent from God, saw no cause wherefore he might not as lawfully say, and as truly, To whomsoever amongst them, *God hath taken away thy sins*, as *Nathan* (they all knew) had used the very like speech, to whom *David* did not therefore impute blasphemy, but imbraced, as became him, the words of truth, with joy and reverence.

Now there is no Controversie, but as God in that special case did authorize *Nathan*, so Christ more generally his Apostles, and the Ministers of his Word, in his Name to absolve sinners. Their power being equal, all the difference between them can be but only in this, that whereas the one had propheticall evidence, the other have the certainty, partly of Faith, and partly of Humane experience, whereupon to ground their sentence; Faith, to assure them of Gods most gracious Pardon in Heaven unto all Penitents, and touching the sincerity of each particular parties repentance as much, as outward sensible tokens or signes can warrant.

It is not to be marvelled that so great a difference appeareth between the Doctrine of *Rome* and *Ours*, when we teach Repentance. They, imply in the Name of Repentance much more than we do; We stand chiefly upon the due inward Conversion of the Heart, they more upon Works of external shew; We teach above all things, that Repentance which is one and the same from the beginning to the Worlds end; They a Sacramental Penance of their own devising and shaping: We labour to instruct men in such sort, that every Soul which is wounded with sin, may learn the way how to cure it self, they clean contrary would make all Sores seem incurable, unless the Priests have a hand in them.

Ipsius penitentis actio non est pars Sacramenti, nisi quatenus potestati Sacerdotali subijcitur & a Sacerdote dirigatur vel jubetur. Bell. de Pœn. l. 1. c. 16.

Christus instituit Sacerdotes Judices super terram cum ea potestate, ut sui ipsorum sententia, nemo post Baptismum lapsus reconciliari possit. Bell. l. 3. c. 1. De pœnit.

Touching the force of whose Absolution they strangely hold, that whatsoever the Penitent doth, His Contrition, Confession, and Satisfaction have no place of right to stand, as material parts in this Sacrament, nor consequently any such force as to make them available for the taking away of sin, in that they proceed from the Penitent himself without the privy of the Minister, but onely, as they are enjoined by the Ministers Authority and Power. So that no contrition or grief of heart, till the Priest exact it, no acknowledgement of sins, but that which he doth demand, no praying, no fasting, no alms, no recompence, or restitution for whatsoever we have done, can help, except by him, it be first imposed. It is the chain of their own Doctrine, no remedie for mortal sin committed after Baptisme, but the Sacrament of Penance only: No Sacrament of Penance, if either matter or form be wanting; No wayes to make those duties a material part of the Sacrament, unless we consider them, as required and exacted by the Priest. Our Lord and Saviour, they say, hath ordained his Priests, Judges in such sort, that no man which sinneth after Baptisme, can be reconciled unto God, but by their sentence. For why? if there were any other way of Reconciliation, the very promise of Christ should be false in saying,

*Whoso*



Whatsoever ye bind on Earth, shall be bound in Heaven, and whose sins soever ye retain, are retained. Except therefore the Priest be willing, God hath by promise hampred himself so, that it is not now in his own power to pardon any man. Let him which hath offended crave as the Publican did, *Lord be thou merciful to me a sinner*; Let him, as *David* make a thousand times his supplication, *Have mercy upon me, O God, according to thy loving kindness, according to the multitude of thy compassion put away mine iniquities*. All this doth not help till such time as the pleasure of the Priest be known, till he have signed us a pardon, and given us, our *quietus est*. God himself hath no answer to make but such as that of his Angel unto *Lot*, I can do nothing.

It is true, that our Saviour by these words, *whose sins ye remit, they are remitted*, did ordain Judges over our sinful Souls, givethem Authority to absolve from sin, and promise to ratifie in Heaven whatsoever they should do on Earth, in execution of this their Office; to the end that hereby, as well his Ministers might take encouragement to do their duty with all Faithfulness, as also his people admonition, gladly, with all reverence, to be ordered by them, both parts knowing that the Functions of the one towards the other have his perpetual assistance and approbation. Howbeit all this with two restraints which every jurisdiction in the world hath, the one, that the practice thereof proceed in due order, the other that it do not extend it self beyond due bounds, which bounds or limits have so confined penitential jurisdiction, that although there be given unto it power of remitting sin, yet not such sovereignty of power that no sin should be pardonable in man without it: Thus to enforce our Saviours words, is as though we should gather, that because, Whatsoever *Joseph* did command in the Land of *Egypt*, *Pharaoh* grant is, it should be done, therefore, he granteth that nothing should be done in the Land of *Egypt*, but what *Joseph* did command, and so consequently, by enabling his servant *Joseph*, to command under him, disableth himself to command any thing without *Joseph*.

Quod si pos-  
sent ei sine  
sacerdotum  
sententia ab-  
solvi, enim  
esset vera  
Christi pro-  
missio, Qua-  
cunque &c.  
Bellarm. ibid.

Christus or-  
dinariam  
suam potesta-  
tem in Apostolos transiit, extraordinariam sibi reservavit.

tem in Apostolos transiit, extraordinariam sibi reservavit.

But by this we see how the Papacy maketh all sin unpardonable, which hath not the Priests Absolution, except peradventure in some extraordina-ry case, where albeit absolution be not had, yet, it must be desired.

Ordinaria  
enim reme-  
dia in Ec-  
clesia ad re-

mittenda peccata sunt ab eo instituta, Sacramenta: sine quibus peccata remittere Christus potest, sed extraordinarie & multo variis, hoc fecit quam per Sacramenta. Nolit igitur eos extraordinariis remissionis peccatorum confidere, quia, & rara sunt & incerta, sed ordinaria, ut ita dicam, visibilia Sacramentorum querere remedia. Maldon in Mat. 16. 19.

Christus or-  
dinariam  
suam potesta-  
tem in Apostolos transiit, extraordinariam sibi reservavit.

What is then the force of absolution? What is it which the act of Absolution worketh in a sinful man? doth it by any operation derived from it self alter the state of the Soul? Doth it really take away sin, or but ascertain us of Gods most gracious and merciful pardon? The latter of which two is our ascertainment, the former theirs.

Mat. 9. 2.  
Mar. 2. 7.  
Luc. 5. 21.  
Cyp. de laps.  
c. 14.  
Clem. Alex.  
Pdag. li. 1.  
et. in libro  
de baptis-  
mo, c. 23.  
et. in libro  
de unitate,  
c. 10.  
et. in libro  
de ecclesia,  
c. 10.  
et. in libro  
de baptis-  
mo, c. 23.  
et. in libro  
de unitate,  
c. 10.

At the words of our Lord and Saviour *Jesus Christ*, saying unto the sick of the palsy, *Son, thy sins are forgiven thee*, the Pharisees which knew him not to be *Son of the living God*, took secret exception, and fell to reasoning with themselves against him: *Is any able to forgive sin, but God only?* The *sin* (saith *St. Cyprian*) that are committed against him, be alone hath power to forgive, which took upon him our sins, he which sorrowed and suffered for us, he whom the Father delivered unto death for our offences. Whereunto may be added that which *Clement Alexandrinus* hath, Our Lord is profitable every way, every way beneficial, whether we respect him as Man, or as God, as God forgiving, as Man instructing and learning how to avoid sin. For it is I, even I that putteth away thine iniquities for mine own sake, and will not remember thy sins, saith the Lord.

Mat. 9. 2.  
Mar. 2. 7.  
Luc. 5. 21.  
Cyp. de laps.  
c. 14.  
Clem. Alex.  
Pdag. li. 1.  
et. in libro  
de baptis-  
mo, c. 23.  
et. in libro  
de unitate,  
c. 10.  
et. in libro  
de ecclesia,  
c. 10.  
et. in libro  
de baptis-  
mo, c. 23.  
et. in libro  
de unitate,  
c. 10.

Y y

Now

Veniam pec-  
catis quæ in  
ipsum com-  
missa sunt so-  
lus potest ille  
largiri, qui  
peccata no-  
stra portavit.  
qui pro nobis  
doluit, quem  
Deus tradidit  
pro peccatis  
nostris.

Now albeit we willingly confesse with St. Cyprian, *The sins that are commit-  
ted against him; he only hath power to forgive, who hath taken upon him our sins, he  
which hath sorrowed and suffered for us, he, whom God hath given for our offences.*  
Yet neither did St. Cyprian intend to deny the power of the Minister, other-  
wise then if he presume beyond his Commission to remit sin, where Gods  
own will is it should be retained; For, against such Absolutions he speaketh  
(which being granted to whom they ought to have been denyed are of no  
validitie,) and if rightly it be considered, how higher causes in operation  
use to concur with inferiour means; his grace with our Ministerie; God really  
performing the same, which man is authorized to act as in his name; there  
shall need for decision of this point no great labour.

Villici de per-  
secutum Van-  
dal.

To remission of sins, there are two things necessary, Grace, as the only  
cause which taketh away iniquity, and Repentance as a duty or condition re-  
quired in us. To make repentance such as it should be, what doth God demand  
but inward sincerity; joynd with fit and convenient offices for that purpose,  
the one referred wholly to our own consciences, the other best discerned by  
them whom God hath appointed Judges in this Court. So that having first the  
promises of God for pardon generally unto all offenders penitent, and parti-  
cularly for our own unsained meaning, the unfallible testimony of a good con-  
science, the sentence of Gods appointed Officer and Vicegerent to approve  
with impartial judgement the quality of that we have done, and, as from his  
tribunal in that respect to absolve us of any crime: I see no cause but that by  
the rules of our Faith and Religion we may rest our selves very well assured  
touching Gods most merciful pardon & grace, who especially for the streng-  
thening of weak, timorous and fearful minds, hath so far indued his Church with  
power to absolve sinners. It pleaseth God that men sometimes should by mis-  
sing this help perceive how much they stand bound to him for so precious a  
benefit enjoyed. And surely so long as the world lived in any awe or fear of  
falling away from God, so dear were his Ministers to the People, chiefly in this  
respect, that being through tyrannie, and persecution deprived of Pastors, the  
doleful rehearsal of heir lost felicities hath not any one thing more eminent,  
then that sinners distressed should not now know, how or where to unlade their  
burchens. Strange it were unto me that the Fathers who so much every where  
extol the grace of Jesus Christ in leaving unto his Church this Heavenly and  
Divine power, should as men whose simplicity had universally been abused,  
agree all to admire and magnifie a needlesse Office.

The sentence therefore of Ministerial absolution hath two effects, touching  
sin it only declareth us freed from the guiltiness thereof, and restored into  
Gods favours; but concerning right in sacred and divine mysteries whereof  
through sin we were made unworthy, as the power of the Church did before  
effectually bind and retain us from access unto them, so upon our apparent  
repentance, it truly restorath our liberty, looseth the chains wherewith we  
were tied, remitteth all whatsoever is past, and accepteth us no lesse return-  
ed then if we never had gone astray.

For in as much as the power which our Saviour gave to his Church, is of  
two kinds, the one to be exercised over voluntary penitents only, the other  
over such as are to be brought to amendment by Ecclesiastical censures, the  
words wherein he hath given this Authority must be so understood as the sub-  
ject or matter whereupon it worketh, will permit. It doth not permit that in  
the former kind (that is to say) in the use of power over voluntary Converts  
to bind or loose, remit or retain should signifie any other, then only to pro-  
nounce of sinners according to that which may be gathered by outward signs,  
because really to effect the removal or continuance of sin in the soul of any  
offender, is no Priestly act, but a work which far exceedeth their ability. Con-  
trarywise in the latter kind of spiritual Jurisdiction, which by censures con-  
straineth men to amend their lives: It is true that the Minister of God doth then  
more declare and signifie what God hath wrought. And this power, true it is,  
that the Church hath invested in it.

Ho albeit,

Howbeit, as other truths, so this hath by error been oppugned and de-  
praved through abuse. The first of name, that openly in writing withstood  
the Churches authority, and power to remit sin, was *Tertullian*, after he had  
combined himself with *Montanists*, drawn to the liking of their Heresie, through  
the very sowerness of his own nature, which neither his incredible skill and  
knowledge otherwise, nor the Doctrine of the Gospel it self, could but so  
much alter as to make him favour any thing, which carried with it the taste of  
lenitie. A Spung steeped in Worm-wood and Gall, a man through too much  
severity mercilese, and neither able to endure, nor to be endured of any. His  
book entituled concerning Chastity, and written professedly against the Dis-  
cipline of the Church, hath many fretful and angry sentences, declaring a mind  
very much offended with such as would not perswade themselves that of sins,  
some be pardonable by the Keys of the Church, some incapable of forgive-  
ness; That middle and moderate offences having received chastisement, may  
by spiritual authority afterwards be remitted: But greater transgressions must  
(as touching indulgence) be left to the only pleasure of Almighty God in  
the World to come: That as Idolatry and Blood-shed, so likewise Fornication  
and sinful Lust are of this nature; that they which so far have fallen from  
God, ought to continue for ever after barred from access unto his Sanctuary,  
condemned to perpetual profusion of tears, deprived of all expectation and  
hope to receive any thing at the Churches hands, but publication of their  
shame. For (saith he) who will fear to waite out that which he hopeth he may reco-  
ver? Who will be careful for ever to hold that, which he knoweth cannot for ever be  
withheld from him? He which slacketh the bridle to sin, loath thereby give it even the  
spur also. Take away fear, and that which presently succeedeth in stead thereof  
is licentious desire. Greater offences therefore are punishable, but not pardona-  
ble by the Church. If any Prophet or Apostle be found to have remitted such  
transgressions, they did it, not by the ordinary course of discipline, but by ex-  
traordinary power. For they also raised the dead, which none but God is able  
to do; they restored the Impotent and Lame men, a work peculiar to Jesus  
Christ; Yea, that which Christ would not do, because executions of such se-  
verity becomed not him, who came to save and redeem the World by his suf-  
ferings, they by their power strook *Elymus* and *Ananias*, the one blind, and the  
other dead. Approve first your selves to be as they were Apostles or Prophets,  
and then take upon you to pardon all men. But if the authority you have be  
only Ministerial, and no way Sovereign, over-reach not the limits which God  
hath set you; know that to pardon capital Sin, is beyond your Commission.

Howbeit, as oftentimes the vices of wicked men do cause other their com-  
mendable qualities to be abhorred, so the honour of great mens vertues is easi-  
ly a Cloak of their errours: In which respect *Tertullian* hath past with much  
lesse obloquie and reprehension than *Novatian*, who broached afterwards the  
same opinion, had not otherwise wherewith to countervail the offence he gave,  
and to procure it the like toleration. *Novatian* as the first a Stoical Philoso-  
pher (which kind of men hath alwayes accounted stupidity the highest top of  
wisdom, and commiseration the deadliest sin) became by Institution and Stu-  
dy the very same which the other had been before, thorow a secret natural  
distemper upon his conversion to the Christian Faith and recovery from sick-  
ness, which moved him to receive the Sacrament of Baptisme in his Bed. The  
Bishop contrary to the Canons of the Church would needs in special love  
towards him ordain him Presbyter, which favour satisfied not him, who  
thought himself worthy of greater place and dignity. He closed therefore  
with a number of well minded men, and not suspicious what his secret pur-  
poses were, and having made them sure unto him by fraud, procurerth his own  
consecration to be their Bishop. His Prelacy now was able as he thought to  
countenance what he intended to publish, and therefore his letters went pre-  
sently abroad to sundry Churches, advising them never to admit to the fellow-  
ship of holy Mysteries, such as had after Baptism offered sacrifice to Idols.

There was present at the Council of Nice, together with other Bishops,



Council. Nicaea.  
c. 30.  
Sacrosanct. L. 1. c. 7

one *Arcadius* a *Novatianist*, touching whose diversity in opinion from the Church, the Emperour desirous to heere some reason, asked of him certain questions, for answer whereunto *Arcadius* weaveth out a long History of things that happened in the persecution under *Decius*. And of men, which to save life, forsook Faith, but the end was a certain bitter Canon framed in their own School, That men which fall into deadly sin after holy Baptisme, ought never to be again admitted to the Communion of Divine Mysteries: That they are to be exhorted unto repentance, howbeit not to be put in hope that pardon can be had at the Priests hands, but with God, which hath Sovereign Power and Authority in himself, to remit sins, it may be in the end they shall find Mercy. These followers of *Novatian*, which gave themselves the title of *adusti*, clean, pure and unspotted men, had one point of *Montanisme* more then their Master did professe; for amongst sins unpardonable, they reckoned second Marriages, of which opinion *Tertullian* making (as his usual manner was) a salt Apologie, *Suchis* (saith he) our story hardeneth, that defaming our Comforter with a kind of enormity in discipline, we dam up the doors of the Church, no lesse against twice married men, then against Adulterers and Fornicators. Of this sort therefore it was ordained by the *Nicean Synod*, that, if any such did return to the Catholick and Apostolick unity, they should in writing bind themselves to observe the Orders of the Church, and Communicate sive with them which had been often married, or had fallen in time of persecution, as with other sort of Christian people. But further to relate, or, at all to refel the error of mis-believing men, concerning this point, is not now to our present purpose greatly necessary.

The Church may receive no small detriment by corrupt practice, even there where Doctrine concerning the substance of things practized is free from any great or dangerous corruption. If therefore that which the Papacy doth in matter of Confessions and Absolution, be offensive, if it palpably serve in the use of the Keyes, howsoever, that, which it teacheth in general concerning the Churches power to retain and forgive sins be admitted true, have they not on the one side as much whereto to be abashed, as on the other wherein to rejoice?

They bind all men upon pain of everlasting condemnation and death, to make confession to their Ghostly Fathers of every great offence they know, and can remember that they have committed against God. Hath Christ in his Gospel so delivered the Doctrine of Repentance unto the World? Did his Apostles so preach it to Nations? Have the Fathers so believed, or so taught? Surely *Novatian* was not so mercilesse in depriving the Church of power to Absolve some certain offenders, as they in imposing upon all a necessity thus to confesse. *Novatian* would not deny but God might remit that which the Church could not, whereas in the Papacy it is maintained that what we conceal from men, God himself shall never pardon. By which oversight, as they have here surcharged the World with multitude, but much abated the weight of confession, so the carelesse manner of their Absolution hath made discipline for the most part amongst them a bare formality: Yea, rather a mean of emboldning unto vicious and wicked life, then either any help to prevent future, or medicine to remedie present evils in the Soul of Man. The Fathers were slow and alwayes fearful to absolve any before very manifest tokens given of a true penitent and contrite spirit. It was not their custome to remit sin first, and then to impose works of satisfaction, as the fashion of Rome is now, in so much that this their preposterous course and misordered practises hath bred also in them an error concerning the end and purpose of these works. For against the guiltinesse of sin and the danger of everlasting condemnation thereby incurred, Confession and Absolution succeeding, the same are as they take it, a remedy sufficient, and therefore what their penitentiaries do think to enjoyn farther, whether it be a number of *Ave-Maries* dayly to be scored up, a Journey of Pilgrimage to be undertaken, some few dishes of ordinary diet to be exchanged, offerings to be made at the shrines of Saints, or a little to be scraped off from mens superfluities for relief of poor people, all

all is in lieu or exchange with God, whose Justice notwithstanding our pardon, yet oweth us still some temporal punishment; Either in this or in the life to come, except we quit it our selves here with works of the former kind, and continued till the ballance of Gods most strict severity shall find the paines we have taken equivalent with the plagues which we should endure, or else the mercy of the Pope relieve us. And at this postern gate cometh in the whole Mass of Papal Indulgences so infinitely strewed that the pardon of sin, which heretofore was obtained hardly, and by much suit, is with them become now almost impossible to be escaped.

To set down then the force of this sentence in Absolving Penitents; There are in sin these three things; The act which passeth away and vanisheth; The Pollution wherewith it leaveth the Soul defiled; And the punishment whereunto they are made subject that have committed it. The act of sin, is every deed, word, and thought against the Law of God. *In peccato, tria sunt; actio, pollutio, poenitentia. Bon. sent. l. 4. c. 2. q. 3. 1. 2. 3. 4. Mat. 15. 19.* For sin is the transgression of the Law, and although the deed it self do not continue, yet is that bad quality permanent, whereby it maketh the soul unrighteous and deformed in Gods sight. *From the Heart, come evil Cogitations, Murders, Adulteries, Fornications, Thefts, false Testimonies, Slanders; These are things which defile a man.* They do not only as effects of impurity argue the next to be unclean, out of which they came, but as causes they strengthen that disposition unto wickedness, which brought them forth; They are both fruits and seeds of uncleanness, they nourish the root out of which they grow, they breed that iniquity, which bred them. The blot therefore of sin abideth, though the act be transitory. And out of both ariseth a present debt, to endure what punishment soever the evil which we have done, deserveth, an obligation, in the chains whereof sinners by the Justice of Almighty God continue bound till Repentance loose them. *Repent thou thy wickedness* (saith Peter) unto Simon Magus, beseech God, that, if it be possible, the thought of thine heart may be pardoned; For I see thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity. In like manner Solomon; *The wicked shall be held fast in the cords of his own sin.* *AB. 8. 23.*

Nor doth God, only bind sinners hand a foot by the dreadful determination of his own unsearchable Judgement against them; But sometime also the Church bindeth by the Censures of her discipline: So that when offenders upon their repentance are by the same discipline absolved, the Church looseth but her own bonds, the chains wherein she had tryed them before.

The act of sin God alone remitteth, In that his purpose is never to call it to account, or to lay it unto mens charge; *The stain he washeth out by the satisfying grace of his spirit;* And concerning the punishment of sin, as none else hath power to cast body and soul into hell fire, so none power to deliver either besides him. *AB. 7. 60. Mich. 7. 19. 1 Cor. 6. 11. Tit. 3. 5. Luc. 17. 5. Mat. 10. 28.*

As for the Ministerial sentence of private Absolution, it can be no more than a Declaration what God hath done; It hath but the force of the Prophet Nathans Absolution; *God hath taken away thy sin:* Then which construction, especially of words judicial, there is noe any thing more vulgar. For example, the Publicans are said in the Gospel to have justified God, The Jews in Malachi to have blessed proud men, which sin and prosper noe that the one did make God righteous, or the other the wicked happy: But to blesse, to justifie and to absolve, are as commonly used for words of judgement, or declaration, as of true and real efficacy; Yea, even by the opinion of the Master of sentences; It may be soundly affirmed and thought that God alone doth remit and retain sins, although he have given power to the Church to do both; But he one way, and the Church another. He only by himself forgiveth sin, who cleanseth the soul from inward blemish, and looseth the debt of eternal death: So great a Priviledge he hath not given unto his Priests, who notwithstanding are authorized

*Proo. 5. 22. Sacerdotes opus Justitia exerceant in peccatores cum eis iuxta poena ligant; opus misericordiae cum de ea aliquid relaxant, vel Sacramentorum communioni conciliant; alia opera in peccatores exerceant nequeant. Sent. l. 4. dil. 18.*

*Mat. 10. 28*

*2 Sam. 12. 13. Luc. 7. 7. Malachi 1. 15. 2 Sam. 1. 27.*

thorized to loose and bind, that is to say, declare who are bound, and who are loosed. For albeit a man be already cleared before God, yet he is not in the Church of God so taken, but by the vertue of the Priests sentence, who likewise may be said to bind by imposing satisfaction, and to loose by admitting to the holy Communion.

Hier. tom. 6.  
comment. in  
15. Mat.

Saint Hierome also, whom the Master of the Sentences alleadgeth for more countenance of his own opinion, doth no lesse plainly and directly affirm; That as the Priests of the Law could only discern, and neither cause nor remove Le-prosies, So the Ministers of the Gospel when they retain or remit sin, do but in the one judge how long we continue guilty, and in the other declare when we are clear or free. For there is nothing more apparent, then that the discipline of Repentance both publick and private was ordained as an outward mean to bring men to the vertue of inward conversion: So that when this by manifest tokens did seem effected, Absolution ensuing (which could not make) served only to declare men innocent.

But the cause wherefore they are so stiffe and have forsaken their own Master in this point, is for that they hold the private discipline of Penitency to be a Sacrament: Absolution an external sign in this Sacrament; the signs external of all Sacraments in the New Testament, to be both causes of that which they signifie, and signes of that which they truly cause.

To this opinion concerning Sacraments, they are now tied by expounding a Canon in the Florentine Councel, according to the former Ecclesiastical invention received from Thomas. For his devise it was, that the mercy of God, which useth Sacraments as instruments whereby to work, indueth them at the time of their Administration with supernatural force and abilitie to induce grace into the souls of men; Even as the Ax and Saw doth seem to bring Timber into that fashion which the mind of the Artificer intendeth. His concept Scotus, Occam, Petrus Allianensis, with sundry others, do most earnestly and strongly impugne, shewing very good reason, wherefore no Sacrament of the new Law can either by vertue which it self hath, or by force supernatural given it, be properly a cause to work grace; but Sacraments are therefore said to work or conferr grace, because the will of Almighty God is, although not to give them such efficacy, yet himself to be present in the Ministry of the working that effect, which proceedeth wholly from him without any real operation of theirs, such as can enter into mens Souls.

In which construction, seeing that our book and writings have made it known to the World how we joyn with them, it seemeth very hard and injurious dealing, that Bellarmine throughout the whole course of his second

book de Sacramentis in genere, should so boldly face down his Adversaries, as if their opinion were that Sacraments are naked, empty, and uneffectual signes; wherein there is no other force than only such as in pictures to stir up the mind, that so by theorie and speculation of things represented, Faith may grow; finally, that all the operation which Sacraments have, is a sensible and divine Instruction. But had it pleased him not to hud-wink his own knowledge, I nothing doubt but he fully saw how to answer himself, it

Scot. sent. 1. 4  
solut. ad 4  
quæst. 8.  
quintam.  
Occam in 1.  
quæst. Al-  
list. quæst. 1.  
in 4. sent.

Lutherani de hac re interdum ita scribunt ut videantur à Catholicis non dissensire; interdum autem æquissime scribunt contraria, ut semper in eodem sententia morient. Sacramenta non habent immediate illam efficien- tiam respectu gratiæ, sed esse nuda signa, tamen mediate aliquid efficere quatenus excitant et alunt fidem, quod ipsum non faciunt nisi represen- tando ut Sacramenta per se sum excitant fidem, quæmodum prædicatio verbi per auditum. Bellarm. de Sac. in genere l. 1. c. 2.

Quædam signa sunt theoria, non ad alium finem instituta, quæ ad signifi- candum, aut ad significandum et efficiendum, quæ ob id prædica docti præsent. Contraversia est inter nos et hæreticos, quod illi faciunt Sacra- menta signa prioris generis. Quare si ostendere poterimus esse signa posteri- oris generis, oblatum est causam. cap. 8.

Sententia memoria representandum est Sacramenta nihil aliud quæ instrumenta- les esse conferenda nobis gratia causant. Calv. in Ant. con. Frid. sc. 7. c. 5. Si quisque qui negat Sacramentis contineri gratiam quæ figurant, illis introibamus, ibid. can. 8.

Iste modus non transcendit rationem signi, cum Sacramentum nova legis non solum significent, sed causent gratiam. part. 3. q. 5. art. 1. Alex- and. 2. 2. q. 2. memb. 2. art. 5. 1. & 2. Th. de veris. q. 97. art. 3. Allian. in quart. sent. 5. 4. Capr. in 4. d. 1. q. 1. Palud. tom. 1. Petrar. lib. 4. cont. Gent. 4. 57.



it being a matter very strange and credible, that one which with so great diligence hath winnowed his adversaries writings, should be ignorant of their minds. For, even as in the person of our Lord Jesus Christ both God and Man, when his humane nature is by it self considered, we may not attribute that unto him, which we do and must as-

*Necesse est ponere aliquam virtutem supernaturalem in Sacramento. Sent. 4. d. 1. q. 1. art. 4.*

*Sacramentum consequitur spirituales virtutes, cum benedictione Christi, & applicatione Ministerii ad usum Sacramenti. par. 3. q. 61. art. 4. concil.*

*Virtus sacramentalis debet esse transiens ex uno in aliud & incompletum, ibidem.*

*Ex Sacramento duo consequuntur in anima, unum est caracter, sive aliquis ornatu; aliud est gratia. Respectu primo Sacramenta sunt causa aliquo modo efficientes; respectu secundo sunt disponentes, Sacramenta causant dispositionem ad formam ultimam, sed aliquam perfectionem non inducunt, Sent. 4. d. 1. q. 1. art. 4.*

scribe as oft as respect is had unto both natures combined; so because in Sacraments there are two things distinctly to be considered; the outward signe, and the secret concurrence of Gods most blessed Spirit, in which respect our Saviour hath taught that water and the Holy Ghost are combined, to work the mystrie of new birth; Sacraments therefore as signes have only those effects before mentioned; but of Sacraments, in that by Gods own will and Ordinance they are signes assisted alwayes with the power of the Holy Ghost; we acknowledge whatsoever either the places of the Scripture, or the authority of Councils and Fathers, or the proofs and arguments of reason which he alleadgeth, can shew to be wrought by them. The Elements and words have power of infallible signification, for which they are called Seals of Gods Truth; The Spirit affixed unto those Elements and Words, power of operation within the Soul, most admirable, divine, and impossible to be exprest. Forso God hath instituted and ordained that together with due administration and receipt of Sacramental signs, there shall proceed from himself, grace effectual, to Sanctifie, to Cure, to Comfort, and whatsoever is else for the good of the Souls of Men. Howbeit this opinion *Thomas* rejecteth, under pretence that it maketh Sacramental Words and Elements to be in themselves no more then signs, whereas they ought to be held as causes of that they signifie. He therefore reformeth it with this addition, that the very sensible parts of the Sacraments do Instrumentally effect and produce, not grace, (for the Schoolmen both of these times, and long after, did for the most part maintain it untrue, and some of them unpobible, that sanctifying grace should efficiently proceed but from God alone, and that by immediate creation, as the substance of the Soul doth) but the phantasie which *Thomas* had, was that sensible thing through Christ & the Priests Benediction, receive a certain supernatural transitory force, which leaveth behind it a kind of preparative quality or beaurty within the Soul, whereupon immediately from God doth ensue the grace that justifieth.

Now they which pretend to follow *Thomas*, differ from him in two points. For first, they make grace an immediate effect of the outward signe, which he for the dignitie and excellency thereof was afraid to do. Secondly, whereas he to produce but a preparative quality in the Soul, did imagine God to create in the instrument, a supernatural gift, or habilitie; they confesse that nothing is created, infused, or any way inherent either in the word, or in the elements; nothing that giveth them instrumental efficacy, but Gods meer motion, or application. Are they able to explain unto us, or themselves to conceive what they mean when they thus speak? For example, let them teach us, in the Sacrament of Baptism, what it is for water to be moved, till it bring forth grace. The application thereof by the Minister is plain to sense; the force which it hath in the mind, as a mortal instrument of information, or instruction, we know by reason, and by faith we understand how God doth assist it with his Spirit; whereupon ensueth the grace which *Saint Cyprian* did in himself observe, saying, After communicatur, the bath of regeneration having scoured out the stained foulness of former life, supernatural light had entrance into the brest which was purified and cleansed for it; after that a second nativity had made another man, by inward receipt of the Spirit from

*Sicut Deus (scilicet gratiam) ad id quod nec Angelis, qui sunt nobiliores sensibilibus creaturis, hoc Sent. 4. d. 1. q. 1. art. 4. Eph. 2.*

Heaven;

Heaven; things doubtful began in marvellous manner to appear certain that to be open which lay hid, darknesse to shine like the clear light, former hardnesse to be made facility, impossibilitie easinesse: Insomuch as it might be discerned how that was earthly, which before had been carnally bred and lived, given over unto sins: That now Gods own, which the holy Ghost did quicken.

Our opinion is therefore plain unto every mans understanding. We take it for a very good speech which Bonaventure hath uttered in saying, Heed must

Cavendum enim ne dum nimis damus corporalibus signis ad laudem, subtrahamus honorem causæ curanti & animæ suscipienti.

be taken that while we ascribe too much to the bodily signes in way of their commendation, we withdraw not the honour which is due to the cause which worketh in them, and the Soul which receiveth them: Whereunto we conformably teach, that the outward sign applyed, hath of it self no natural efficacy towards grace, neither doth God put into it any supernatural inherent vertue; And, as I think, we thus far avouch no more than they themselves confesse to be very true.

Our opinion is therefore plain unto every mans understanding. We take it for a very good speech which Bonaventure hath uttered in saying, Heed must be taken that while we ascribe too much to the bodily signes in way of their commendation, we withdraw not the honour which is due to the cause which worketh in them, and the Soul which receiveth them: Whereunto we conformably teach, that the outward sign applyed, hath of it self no natural efficacy towards grace, neither doth God put into it any supernatural inherent vertue; And, as I think, we thus far avouch no more than they themselves confesse to be very true.

If any thing displease them, it is because we add to these premisses another assertion; that with the outward sign, God joyneth his holy Spirit; and so the whole instrument of God bringeth that to passe, whereunto the baser and meaner part could not extend. As for operations through the motions of signs, they are dark, intricate and obscure, perhaps possible; Howbeit, not proved either true or likely, by alleadging that the touch of our Saviours garment restored health, clay sight, when he applyed it. Although ten thousand such examples should be brought, they overthrow not this one principle; that, where the instrument is without inherent, the effect must necessarily proceed from the only agents adherent power.

Lak. 18 Jo. 9.

It passeth a mans conceit how water should be carried into the Soul with any force of divine motion, or grace proceed but meerly from the influence of Gods Spirit: Notwithstanding if God himself teach his Church in this case to believe that which he hath not given us capacity to comprehend, how incredible soever it may seem, yet our wits should submit themselves, and reason give place unto faith therein. But they yield it to be no question of faith, how grace doth proceed from Sacraments; if in general they be acknowledged true instrumental causes, by the Ministry whereof men receive divine grace: And that they which impute grace to the only operation of God himself, concurring with the external sign, do nolesse acknowledge the true efficacy of the Sacrament, then they that ascribe

Bel. de Sacram. in Gen. l. 2. c. 1.

Dicimus gratiam non creari à Deo, sed produci ex aptitudine & potentia naturali animæ. sicut cætera omnia quæ producuntur in subiectis talibus quæ sunt apta nata ad suscipiendum accidentia. Allen de Sacram. in Gen. c. 37.

the same to the quality of the sign applyed, or to the motion of God applying, and so far carrying it, till grace be not created but extracted, out of the natural possibility of the soul. Nevertheless this last Philosophical imagination (if I may call it Philosophical,) which useth the terms, but overthroweth

the rules of Philosophy, and hath no article of Faith to support it, but whatsoever it be, they follow it in a manner all, they cast off the first opinion, wherein is most perspicuity and strongest evidence of certain truth. The Councel of Florence and Trent defining that Sacraments contain and confer grace, the sense whereof (if it liked them) might so easily conform it self with the same opinion which they drew without any just cause quite and clean the other way, making grace the issue of bare words, in such Sacraments as they have framed destitute of any visible Element, and holding it the off-spring as well of Elements as of words in those Sacraments where both are; but in no Sacrament acknowledging grace to be the fruit of the Holy Ghost working with the outward signe, and not by it, in such sort, as Thomas himself teacheth; that the Apostles Imposition of Hands caused not the comming of Holy Ghost, which notwithstanding was bestowed together with the exercise of that Ceremony; Yea by it, (saith the Evangelist) to wit, as by a mean, which came between the true Agent and the Effect, but not otherwise.

Th. de Verit. q. 27. art. 2. resp. ad 16. Ali. 2. 18.

Many

Many of the Ancient Fathers presupposing that the Faithful before Christ had not till the time of his coming, that perfect Life and Salvation, which they looked for and we possess, thought likewise their Sacraments to be but prefigurations of that which ours in present do exhibit. For which cause the *Flórentine Councel* comparing the one with the other, saith, that the old did only shadow grace, which was afterward to be given through the passion of *Jesus Christ*. But the after-wit of latter dayes hath found out another more exquisite distinction that Evangelical Sacraments are causes to effect grace, through motions of signes legal according to the same signification and sense wherein Evangelical Sacraments are held by us to be Gods Instruments for that purpose. For howsoever *Bellar.* hath thrunk up the *Lutherans* sinews, and cut off our doctrine by the skirts; *Allen*, although he term us Heretiques, according to the usual bitter venome of his first stile; doth yet ingeniously confesse, that the old Schoolmens doctrine and ours is one concerning Sacramental efficacy, derived from God himself assisting by promise those outward signs of Elements and words, out of which their School-men of the newer mint are so desirous to hatch grace. Where God doth work and use these outward means, wherein he neither findeth nor planteth force and aptesse towards his intended purpose, such means are but signs to bring men to the consideration of his omnipotent power, which without the use of things sensible, would not be marked. At the time therefore when he giveth his heavenly grace, he applyeth by the hands of his Ministers, that which betokeneth the same, nor only betokeneth, but being also accompanied for ever with such power as doth truly work, is in that respect, termed Gods instrument a true efficient cause of Grace; a cause not in it self, but only by connexion of that which is in it self a cause, namely Gods own strength and power. Sacraments, that is to say, the outward signs in Sacraments, work nothing till they be blessed and sanctified by God. But what is Gods heavenly benediction and sanctification, saving only the association of his spirit? shall we say that Sacraments are like Magical signs, if thus they have their effect? Is it magick for God to manifest by things sensible what he doth, and to do by his most glorious spirit really, what he manifesteth in his Sacraments? The delivery and administration whereof, remaineth in the hands of mortal men, by whom, as by personal instruments, God doth apply signs, and with signs inseparably joyn his spirit, and through the power of his spirit work grace. The first is by way of concomitance and consequence to deliver the rest also that either accompany, or ensue. It is not here, as in cases of mutual commerce, where divers persons have divers acts to be performed in their own behalf; a creditor to shew his bill, and a debtor to pay his money. But God and man do here meet in one action upon a third, in whom, as it is the work of God to create grace, so it is his work by the hand of the Minister to apply a sign which should betoken, and his work to annex that spirit which shall effect it. The action therefore is but one, God the Author thereof, and man a copartner by him assigned to work for, with, and under him. God the giver of grace, by the outwards Ministry of man, so far forth as he authorizeth man to apply the Sacraments of grace in the soul, which he alone worketh, without either instrument or coagent.

Whereas therefore with us the remission of sin is ascribed unto God, as a thing which proceedeth from him only, and presently followeth upon the vertue of true repentance appearing in man; that which we attribute to the

Quod ad circumcissionem sequebatur requisitio, sicbat ratione rei adjunctæ & ratione pacti divini, eodem plane modo quo non solum hæretici sed etiam aliquæ vetustiores Scholastici voluerunt nova Sacramenta conferre gratiam. *Allen de Sacra. in gen. c. 39.*

*Bonaventura, Scotus, Durandus, Richardus, Occamus, Marfilus, Gabriel, velunt solum Deum producere gratiam ad præsentiam Sacramentorum. Bellarm. de Sacra. in gen. lib. 2. c. 11.*

Puto longe probatiorum & tatiorem sententiam qua dat Sacramentis veram efficientiam. Primò, quia doctores passim docent Sacramenta non agere nisi prius à Deo virtutem seu benedictionem, seu sanctificationem accipiant. Et referunt effectum Sacramentorum ad omnipotentiam Dei, Et conferunt cum veris causis efficientibus. Secundò, quia non esset differentia inter modum agendi Sacramentorum, Et signorum Magicorum. Tertio, quia tunc non esset homo Dei Minister in ipsa actione Sacramenti, sed homo præberet signum actione sua, Et Deus alia actione visò eo signo infunderet gratiam, ut cum unus ostendit signum Mercedis, quid Deus baptizat per dominum. *Bel. l. 2. cap. 11.*



they do not onely impute to the Sacrament of Repentance; but having made Repentance a Sacrament, and thinking of Sacraments as they do, they are enforced to make the Ministry of his Priests, and their Absolution a cause of that which the sole Omnipotency of God worketh. And yet for my own part, I am not able well to conceive how their Doctrine, That humane Absolution is really a cause out of which our deliverance from sin doth ensue, can cleave with the Council of Trent, defining, That contrition perfected with Charity doth at all times it self reconcile offenders to God, before they come to receive actually the Sacrament of Penance. How it can stand with those Discourses of the learned Rabbies, which grant, That whosoever turneth unto God with his whole heart, hath immediately his sins taken away; that if a man be truly converted, his pardon can neither be denied nor delayed; It doth not stay for the Priests Absolution, but presently followeth. Surely if every contrite sinner in whom there is charity, and a sincere conversion of heart, have remission of sins given him, before he seek it at the Priests hands, if reconciliation to God be a present and immediate sequel, upon every such conversion or change; it must of necessity follow, seeing no man can be a true Penitent or Contrite, which doth not both love God and sincerely abhor sin; that therefore they all before Absolution attain forgiveness; whereunto notwithstanding Absolution is pretended a cause so necessary, that sin without it, except in some rare extraordinary case, cannot possibly be remitted. Shall Absolutely be a cause producing and working that effect, which is alwayes brought forth without it, and had before Absolution be thought? But when they which are thus before hand pardoned of God, shall come to be also absolved by the Priest, I would know what force his Absolution hath in this case? Are they able to say here that the Priest doth remit any thing? Yet, when any of ours ascribeth the work of Remission to God, and interpreteth the Priests sentence to be but a solemn declaration of that which God himself hath already performed, they scorn at it; they urge against it, that if this were true, our Saviour Christ should rather have said, What is loosed in Heaven, ye shall loose on earth, then as he doth, Whatsoever ye loose on Earth, shall in Heaven be loosed. As if he were to learn of us how to place his words, and not we to crave rather of him a sound and right understanding; least to his dishonour, and our own hurt we mis-expound them. It sufficeth I think both against their constructions to have proved that they ground an untruth on his speech; and in behalf of our own, that his words without any such transposition do very well admit the sense we give them; which is, that he taketh to himself the lawful proceedings of Authority in his name, and that the Act of Spiritual Authority in this case, is by sentence to acquit or pronounce them free from sin, whom

they judge to be sincerely and truly penitent; which Interpretation they themselves do acknowledge though not sufficient, yet very true.

Absolution they say, declareth indeed; but this is not all, for it likewise maketh innocent; which addition, being an untruth proved, our truth granted, hath I hope sufficiency without it; and consequently our opinion therein, neither to be challenged as untrue, nor as insufficient. To rid themselves out of these Bryars, and to make Remission of sins an effect of Absolution, notwithstanding that which hitherto hath been said, they have two shifts; at first, that in many penitents, there is but attrition of heart, which attrition they define to be grief proceeding from fear without love; and to these they say Absolution doth give that contrition whereby men are really purged from sin. Secondly, that even where contrition or inward repentance doth cleanse without absolution; the reason why it cometh so to pass, is, because such contrites intend and desire Absolution, though they have it not. Which two things granted: The one, that Absolution given, maketh them contrite that are

not; the other, even in them which are contrite, the cause why God remitteth sin,

Conc. Trid.  
sess. 14. c. 4.

Beilar. de  
12. 1. 2. 2. 13.

*Hac expositio, Ego te absolvo, id est, Absolutum ostendo, partim quidem vera est, non tamen perfecta. Sacramenta quippe nova legis non solum significant, sed efficiunt quod significant. Soto, sent. 1. 4. dist. 14. q. 1. art. 3.*

*Attritio solum dicit dolorem propter peccata inferni; dum quis accedit attritio per gratiam sacramentalem, fit contritio Soto, sent. 4. dist. 14. q. 1. art. 1.*

*Dum accedit vere contritio propter Deum, illa etiam contritio non est attritio, nisi quando prius natura informetur gratia per sacramentum in voto. Soto sent. 4. dist. 14. q. 1. art. 1.*

is the purpose or desire they have to receive Absolution: we are not to stand against a sequel so clear and manifest as this, that alwayes remission of sin proceedeth from Absolution either had or desired. But should a reasonable man give credit to their bare conceits, and because their Positions have driven them to imagine Absolving of insufficiently disposed penitents, to be a real creating of further vertue in them, must all other men think it due? Let them cancel hence forward and blot out all their Books, those old Cautions touching necessity of Wisdom, least Priests should inconsiderately absolve any man in whom there were not apparent tokens of true Repentance; which to do, was in Cyprians judgement *Pessilent Deceit and Flattery, not onely not available, but hurtful to them that had transgressed; a frivolous, frustrate and false peace, such as caused the unrighteous to trust to a lie, and destroyed them unto whom it promised safety.* What needeth observation whether Penitents have worthinesse and bring contrition, if the words of Absolution do infuse contrition? Have they born us all this while in hand, that contrition is a part of the matter of their Sacrament; a Condition or Preparation of the Mind towards Grace to be received by Absolution in the form of their Sacrament? And must we now believe that the form doth give the matter? That Absolution bestoweth contrition, and that the words do make presently of *Saul, David, of Judas, Peter?* For what was the penitency of *Saul* and *Judas*, but plain attrition, honour of sin through fear of punishment, without any loving sense, or tast of Gods Mercy?

Their other fiction, imputing remission of sin to desire of Absolution from the Priest, even in them which are truly contrite, is an evasion somewhat more witty, but no whit more possible for them to prove. Belief of the World and Judgement to come, Faith in the Promises, and Sufferings of Christ for Mankind, Fear of his Majestie, Love of his Mercy, Grief for Sin, Hope for Pardon, Suit for Grace; These we know to be the Elements of true Contrition; suppose that besides all this God did also command that every penitent should seek his Absolution at the Priests hands, where so many causes are concurring unto one effect; Have they any reason to impute the whole effect unto one, any reason in the choice of that one to passe by Faith, Fear, Love, Humility, Hope, Prayer, whatsoever else, and to enthrone above them all a desire of Absolution from the Priest, as if in the whole work of mans Repentance, God did regard and accept nothing but for and in consideration of this? Why do the *Tridentine Counsel* impute it to Charitie, *That contrites are reconciled in Gods sight, before they receive the Sacrament of Penance, if desired Absolution be the true Cause?* But let this passe how it will, seeing the question is not what vertue God may accept in penitent sinners, but what grace Absolution actually given doth really bestow upon them. If it were as they will have it, that God regarding the humiliation of a contrite Spirit, because there is joyned therewith a lowly desire of the Sacrament of Priestly Absolution, pardoneth immediately, and forgiveth all offences: Doth this any thing help to prove that Absolution received afterward from the Priest, can more then declare him already pardoned which did desire it? To desire Absolution, presupposing it commanded, is obedience: and obedience in that case is a Branch of the vertue of Repentance, which vertue being thereby made effectual to the taking away of sins without the Sacrament of Repentance, Is it not an Argument that the Sacrament of Absolution hath here no efficacy, but the vertue of Contrition worketh all? For how should any effect ensue from causes which actually are not? The Sacrament must be applied wheresoever any grace doth proceed from it.

*Legitima contritio totum Sacramenti pro suo tempore debet inducere, atque adeo in virtute futuri Sacramenti peccata remitti. Id. art. 3.*

*Imagine Absolving of further vertue in*

*Tunc, sententia Sacerdotis iudicio Dei, & totius ecclesie Curia approbatur, & confirmatur, cum ita ex discretione procedit, ut reorum merita non contradicant. sent. l. 4. d. 18.*

*Non est periculosum sacerdoti dicere, Ego te absolvo, illis in quibus signa contritionis videri, quæ sunt dolor de præteritis, & præpositum de cætero non peccandi; alias, absolvere non debet. Tho. Opusc. 22. Cyp. de lapsis.*

A reatu mortis æternæ absolvitur homo à Deo per contritionem; manet autem reatus ad quandam poenam temporalem, & Minister Ecclesiæ quicumque virtute clavium tollit reatum cujusdam partis poenæ illius. *Abul. in defens. per. 1. c. 7.*

the punishment of sin; but if the party penitent come contrite, he hath by their own grant, Absolution before Absolution; if not contrite, although the Priest should seem a thousand times to Absolve him, all were in vain. For which cause, the Antients and better sort of their School Di-

Signum hujus Sacramenti est causa effectiva gratiæ five remissionis peccatorum, non simpliciter sicut ipsa prima poenitentia, sed secundum quid, quia est causa efficaciar gratiar qua fit remissio peccati, quantum ad aliquem effectum in penitente, ad minus quantum ad remissionem sequelæ ipsius peccati, scilicet poenæ, *Alex. p. 4. q. 14. memb. 2.*

Potestas clavium propriè loquendo non se extendit supra culpam; ad illud quod obijcitur To. 22. Quorum remiseritis peccata, dicendum quod vel illud de remissione dicitur quantum ad ostensionem vel solum quantum ad poenam. *Bon. sent. 1. d. 18. q. 1.*

Ab æterna poena nullo modo solvit sacerdos, sed à purgatorio; neque hoc per se, sed per accidens, quod cum in penitente virtute clavium minuitur debitum poenæ temporalis, non ita acriter punietur in purgatorio sicut si non esset absolutus. *Sent. 4. d. 18. q. 2.*

So that where it is but desired only, whatsoever may follow upon Gods acceptation of this desire, the Sacrament afterwards received, can be no cause thereof. Therefore the further we wade, the better we see it still appear, that the Priest doth never in Absolution, no not so much as by way of Service and Ministry, really either forgive them, take away the uncleanness, or remove the real abolition of sin, and eternal punishment, to the meer pardon of Almighty God, without dependency upon the Priests Absolution, as a cause to effect the same. His Absolution hath in their Doctrine certain other effects specified, burth denied; Wherefore having hitherto spoken of the vertue of Repentance required; of the Discipline of Repentance which Christ did establish; and of the Sacrament of Repentance invented since, against the pretended force of Humane Absolution in Sacramental penitency; Let it suffice thus far to have shewed how God alone doth truly give, the vertue of Repentance alone procure, and private Ministerial Absolution, but declare remission of sins.

Now the last and sometimes hardest to be satisfied by Repentance, are our Minds; and our Minds we have then satisfied, when the Conscience is of guilty become clear. For, as long as we are in our selves privy to our own most heinous crimes, but without sense of Gods Mercy and Grace towards us, unlesse the heart be either brutish for want of Knowledge, or altogether hardened by wilful Atheisme; the remorse of sin is in it, as the deadly sting of a Serpent: which point since very Infidels and Heathens have observed in the nature of sin, (for the disease they felt, though they knew no remedy to help it) we are not rashly to despise those sentences, which are the testimonies of their experience touching this point. They knew that the eye of a Mans own Conscience is more to be feared by evil doers, then the presence of a thousand Witneses, in as much as the mouths of other accusers are many wayes stoppt, the ears of the accused not alwayes subject to glowing with contumely and exprobration; whereas a guilty Mind being forced to be still both a Martyr and a Tyrant it self, must of necessity endure perpetual Anguish and Grief. For, as the Body is rent with stripes, so the mind with guiltinesse of Cruelty, Lust, and wicked Resolutions. Which furies brought the Emperour *Tyberius* sometimes into such perplexity, that writing to the Senate, his wonted art of dissimulation failed him utterly in this case; And whereas it had been ever his peculiar delight so to speak, that no man might be able to sound his meaning, he had not the power to conceal what he felt through the secret scourge of an evil Conscience, though no necessity did now enforce him to disclose the same. *What to write, or how to write, at this present, if I know (saith Tyberius) let the Gods and Goddesses, who thus continually eat me, only be worse to me then they are.* It was not his Imperial Dignity and Power, that could provide a way to protect him against himself, the fears and suspicion which improbriety had bred, being strengthened



ned by every occasion, and those vertues clean banished which are the onely foundation of sound tranquillity of minde. For which cause, it hath been truly said, and agreeably with all mens experience, that if the vertuous did excell in no other privilege, yet far happier they are then the contrary sort of men, for that their hopes be alwayes better. Neither are we to marvel that these things known unto all, do stay so few from being Authors of their own wo. For we see by the ancient example of *Josephs* unkind brethren, how it cometh to remembrance easily when crimes are once past, what the difference is of good from evil, and of right from wrong. But such considerations when they should have prevented sin, were over watcht by inordinate desires. Are we not bound then with all thankfulness to acknowledge his infinite goodness and mercy, which hath revealed unto us the way how to rid our selves of these mazes; the way how to shake off that yoke, which no flesh is able to beare; the way how to change most grisly horror into a comfortable apprehension of heavenly joy?

Wherunto there are many which labour with so much the greater difficulty, because imbecillity of mind doth not suffer them to censure rightly their own doings: Some fearful lest the enormity of their crimes be so unpardonable that no repentance can do them good; some, lest the imperfection of their Repentance make it uneffectual to the taking away of sin. The one drive all things to this issue, whether they be not men that have sinned against the *Holy Ghost*; the other to this, what Repentance is sufficient to clear sinners, and to assure them that they are delivered. Such as by error charge themselves of unpardonable sin, must think it may be they deem that unpardonable which is not. Our Saviour speaketh indeed of Blasphemy which shall never be forgiven. But have they any sure and infallible knowledge what that Blasphemy is? If not, why are they unjust and cruel to their own Souls, imagining certainty of guiltiness in a Crime concerning the very nature whereof they are uncertain? For mine own part, although where this Blasphemy is mentioned, the cause why our Saviour spake thereof, was the Pharisees Blasphemy, which was not afraid to say, *He had an unclean Spirit, and did cast out Spirits by the Power of Beelzebub*; Nevertheless I dare not precisely deny but that even the Pharisees themselves might have repented and been forgiven, and that our Lord *Jesus Christ* peradventure might but take occasion at their Blasphemy, which as yet was pardonable, to tell them further of an unpardonable Blasphemy, whereinto he foresaw that the Jews would fall. For it is plain that many thousands at the first, professing Christian Religion, became afterwards wilful Apostates, moved with no other cause of revolt, but meer indignation that the Gentiles should enjoy the benefit of the Gospel as much as they, and yet not be burthened with the yoke of *Moses Law*. The Apostles by Preaching had wone them to Christ, in whose Name they embraced with great alacrity the full remission of their former sins and iniquities, they received by the Imposition of the Apostles hands, that *Grace and Power of the Holy Ghost* whereby they cured Diseases, Prophesied, spake with Tongues; and yet in the end after all this they fell utterly away, renounced the Mysteries of Christian Faith, Blasphemed in their formal Abjurations that most Glorious and Blessed Spirit, the Guisits whereof themselves had posselt; and by this means sunk their Souls in the Gulf of that unpardonable sin; whereof, as our Lord *JESUS CHRIST* had told them before hand; so the Apostle at the first appearance of such their revolt, putterh them in mind again, that falling now to their former Blasphemies, their Salvation was irrecoverably gone: It was for them in this case impossible to be renewed by any repentance; because they were now in the state of *Satan* and his Angels; the Judge of quick and dead had passed his irrevocable sentence against them. So great difference there is between Infidels unconverted and back sliders in this manner fallen away, that alwayes we have hope to reclaim the one, which onely hate whom they never knew; but to the other which know and Blaspheme, to them that with more then

Mat. 27. 32.  
Mar. 3. 30.

Acts 2. 38.

Heb. 6. 6.

infernal

Heb. 10: 26.

infernal malice accurse both the seen brightnesse of Glory which is in him, and in themselves, the tasted goodnesse of Divine Grace, as those execrable Miscreants did, who first received in extraordinary miraculous manner, and then in outrageous sort blasphemed the Holy Ghost, abusing both it and the whole Religion, which God by it did confirm and magnifie; to such as willfully thus sin, after so great light of the Truth, and Gifts of the Spirit, there remaineth justly no fruit or benefit to be expected by Christs Sacrifice.

For all other offenders without exception or flint, whether they be strangers that seek access, or followers that will make return unto God, upon the tender of there Repentance, the grant of his grace standeth everlastingly signed with his blood in the book of eternal life. That which in this case overterrifieth fearful Souls, is, a misconceit whereby they imagine every act which they do knowing that they do amisse, and every wilful Breach or Transgression of Gods Law, to be meer sin against the Holy Ghost, forgetting that the Law of Moses it self ordained Sacrifices of Expition, aswel for faults presumptuously committed, as things wherein men offend by error.

Now there are on the contrary side others, who doubting not of Gods Mercy toward all that perfectly repent, remain notwithstanding scrupulous and troubled with continual fear, least defects in their own Repentance be a bar against them.

Jer. 6. 26.

Mich. 1. 8, 9.

Lament. 2. 18.

These cast themselves first into very great, and peradventure needlesse Agonies through misconstruction of things spoken about proportioning our griefs to our sins, for which they never think they have wept and mourned enough; yea, if they have not alwayes a stream of Tears at Command, they take it for a heart congealed and hardened in sin, when to keep the

*Quam magna deliquimus, tam granditer desileamus. Alto vulnere diligens Et longa medicina non desit, penitentia crimina minor non fit. Cypr. de lapsis. Non levi agendum est contritione, ut debita illa redimantur, quibus mors aeterna debetur, nec transitoria opus est satisfatione per malis illis propter quae paratus est ignis aeternus. Euseb. Emislenus, vel potius Salv. f. 106.*

Psal. 6. 6.

Mar. 12. 43.

Acts 10. 37.

wound of contrition bleeding, they unfold the circumstances of their Transgressions, and endeavour to leave nothing which may be heavy against themselves. Yet do what they can, they are still fearful, least herein also they do not that which they ought and might. Come to prayer, their coldnesse taketh all heart and courage from them with fasting; albeit their flesh should be withered, and their Blood clean dried up, would they ever the lesse object, What is this to Davids humiliation? Wherein notwithstanding there was not any thing more then necessary. In works of Charity and Alms-deeds? It is not all the world can persuade them they did ever reach the poor bounty of the widdows two Mites, or by many Millions of Leagues come near to the mark which Cornelius touched; so far they are off from the proud surmise of any Penitential Supererogation in miserable wretched worms of the earth. Notwithstanding for as much as they wrong themselves with over-rigorous and extream exactions, by means whereof they fall sometimes into such perplexities as can hardly be allayed: it hath therefore pleased Almighty God in tender commiseration over these imbecilities of men, to ordain for their Spiritual and Ghostly comfort, consecrated persons, which by sentence of Power and Authority given from above, may as it were out of his very mouth ascertain timorous and doubtful minds in their own particular, ease them of all their scrupulosities, leave them settled in Peace, and satisfied touching the Mercy of God towards them. To use the benefit of this help for the better satisfaction in such cases, is so natural that it can be forbidden no man, but yet not so necessary that all men should be in case to need it.

They are of the two the happier therefore that can content and satisfie themselves by judging discreetly what they perform, and soundly what God doth require of them. For having that which is most material, the substance of Penitency rightly bred touching signs and tokens thereof, we may boldly affirm that they do which imagine for every offence a certain propor-

Proportionable degree in the Passions and Grievs of Mind, whereunto whosoever aspi-  
 reth not, repenteth in vain. That to frustrate mens Confessions and Considerations of  
 sin, except every circumstance which may aggravate the same, be unrigt and laid in the  
 Ballance, is a merciless extremity, although it be true, that, as near as we can, such  
 wounds must be searched to the very bottom; last of all to set down the like stint, and  
 so shut up the doors of Mercy against penitents which come short thereof in the devo-  
 tion of their prayers, in the continuance of their fasts, in the largeness and bounty  
 of their almes, or in the course of any other such like duties, is more then God him-  
 self hath thought meet, and consequently more then mortal men should presume to  
 do. That which God doth chiefly respect in mens penitency, is their hearts. *The*  
*Heart is it which maketh Repentance sincere,* sincerity that which findeth favour in Gods  
 sight, and the favour of God that which supplyeth by Gracious acceptation whatso-  
 ever may seem defective in the faithful, hearty and true offices of his servants. Take it  
 (saith Chrys.) upon my credit, *Such is Gods merciful inclination towards men, that re-*  
*pentance offered with a single and sincere mind, he never refuseth, no, not although we be*  
*come to the very top of iniquity.* If there be a will and desire to return, he receiveth,  
 embraceth, omitteth nothing which may restore us to former happiness; yea, that  
 which is yet above all the rest, albeit we cannot in the duty of satisfying him, attain what  
 we ought, and would, but come far behind our Mark, he taketh nevertheless in good  
 worth that little which we do; be it never so mean, we lose not our labour therein. The  
 least and lowest step of Repentance in S. Chrysostome judgement severeth and setteth us  
 above them that perish in their sin. I therefore will end with S. Augustine conclusion.  
*Lord, in thy Book and Volume of life all shall be written, as well the least of thy Saints, as*  
*the chiefest.* Let not therefore the imperfect fear, let them only proceed and go for-  
 ward.

Jer. 39. 12.  
Joel. 2. 12

Chrys. de repen-  
tatione, ad The-  
od. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
3. 1. 1. 1.

Aug. de Ps. 103

OF







OF THE  
**L A W**  
OF  
Ecclesiastical Politie.

*There is no testimony  
for the cause of  
this book but  
by authors who  
for aught he did it  
had done not to do  
or when he opposed the  
main point.*

*The Seventh Book.*

*Their Sixth Assertion, That there ought not to be in  
the Church, Bishops indued with such Authority  
and Honour as ours are.*

The Matter contained in this Seventh Book.

1. **T**He state of Bishops although sometime oppugned, and that by such as therein would most seem to please God, yet by his providence upheld hitherto, whose glory it is to maintain that whereof himself is the Author.
2. What a Bishop is, what his name doth import, and what doth belong unto his office as he is a Bishop.
3. In Bishops two things traduced; of which two, the one their Authority, and in it the first thing condemned, their superiority over other Ministers: What kinde of superiority in Ministers it is which the one part holdeth, and the other denieth lawful.
4. From whence it hath grown that the Church is governed by Bishops.
5. The time and cause of instituting everywhere Bishops with restraints.
6. What manner of power Bishops from the first beginning have had.
7. After what sort Bishops, together with Presbyters have used to govern the Churches which were under them.
8. How far the power of Bishops hath reached from the beginning in respect of territory, or local compass.
9. In what respects Episcopal Regiment hath been gainsaid, of old by Aecius.
10. In what respect Episcopal Regiment is gainsaid by the Authors of pretended Reformation at this day.

## The Seventh Book of

11. Their arguments in disgrace of Regiment by Bishops, as being a meer invention of man, and not found in Scripture, answered.
12. Their arguments to prove there was no necessity of instituting Bishops in the Church.
13. The fore-alleged Arguments answered.
14. An answer unto those things which are objected concerning the difference between that Power which Bishops now have, and that which ancient Bishops had more than other Presbyters.
15. Concerning that civil Power and Authority which our Bishops have.
16. The Arguments answered, whereby they would prove that the Law of God, and the judgement of the best in all ages condemneth the ruling superiority of one Minister over another.
17. The second malicious thing wherein the state of Bishops suffereth obloquie, is their Honour.
18. What good doth publicly shew from the Prelate.
19. What kinds of Honour be due unto Bishops.
20. Honour in Title, Place, Ornament, Attendance and Priviledge.
21. Honour by endowment with Lands and Livings.
22. That of Ecclesiastical Goods, and consequently of the Lands and Livings which Bishops enjoy, the propriety belongs unto God alone.
23. That Ecclesiastical persons are receivers of Gods Rents, and that the honor of Prelates, is to be thereof his chief Receivers, not without liberty from him granted of converting the same unto their own use, even in large manner.
24. That for their unworthiness to deprive both them and their Successors of such Goods, and to convey the same unto men of secular callings, hath extream Sacrilegious Injustices.

The state of Bishops although sometime oppugned, and that by such as therein would most seem to please God, yet by his providence upheld hitherto, whose glory it is to maintain that whereof himself is the Author.



it was which must be effected, or else that there could be no work of perfect Reformation accomplished. To this purpose, in a solemn Sermon, and in a great Assembly he described unto them the present quality of their publique Estate, by the parable of a tree, huge and goodly to look upon, but without that fruit which it should and might bring forth; affirming that the onely way of redress was a full and perfect establishment of Christs Discipline (for so their manner is to entitle a thing hammered out upon the forge of their own invention) and that to make way of entrance for it, there must be three great limbs cut off from the body of that stately tree of the Kingdom: Those three limbs were three sorts of men; Nobles, whose high Estate would make them otherwise disdain to put their necks under that yoke: Lawyers, whose Courts being not pulled down, the new Church Consistories were not like to flourish: Finally, Prelates, whose ancient Dignity, and the simplicity of their intended Church Discipline, could not possibly stand together. The proposition of which device being plausible to alive spirits, restless through desire of innovation, whom commonly nothing doth more offend than a change which goeth fearfully on by slow and suspicious paces; the heavier and more experienced sort began presently thereat to pull back their feet again, and exceedingly to fear the stratagem of Reformation for ever after. Whereupon ensued those extream conflicts of the one part with the other, which continuing and encreasing to this very day, have now made the state of that flourishing Kingdom even such, as whereunto we may most fitly apply those words of the Prophet Jeremiah, *Thy breach is great like the Sea, who can heal thee?* Whether this were done in truth, according to the constant affirmation of some avouching the same, I take not upon me to examine;

That



That which I note therein is, How with us that policie hath been corrected. For to the Authors of pretended Reformation with us, it hath not seemed expedient to offer the edge of the axe unto all three boughs at once, but rather to single them, and strike at the weakest first, making show that the lop of that one shall draw the more abundance of sap to the other two, that they may thereby the better prosper. All prosperity, felicity and peace we wish multiplied on each Estate, as far as their own hearts desire is: But let men know that there is a God, whose eye beboldeth them in all their ways, a God, the usual and ordinary course of whose justice, is to return upon the head of malice the same devices which it contriveth against others. The foul practices which have been used for the overthrow of Bishops, may perhaps wax bold in proceſs of time to give the like assault even there, from whence at this present they are most seconded. Nor let it over-dismay them who suffer such things at the hands of this most unkind world, to see that heavenly estate and dignity thus conculcated, in regard whereof so many their Predecessors were no lesse esteemed then if they had not been men but Angels amongst men. With former Bishops it was as with Job in the days of that prosperity, which at large he describeth, laying, *Unto me men gave ear, they waited and held their tongue at my counsel, after my words they replied not, I appointed out their way and did sit at their head, I dwelt as it had been a King in an Army.* At this day the case is otherwise with them; and yet no otherwise then with the self same Job at what time the alteration of his estate wrested these contrary speeches from him, *But now they that are younger than I mock at me, the children of fools, and off-spring of slaves, creatures more base then the earth they tread on, such as if they did show their heads young and old would shun at them and chase them thorow the streets with a cry, their song I am, I am a theam for them to talk on.* An injury lets grievous if it were not offered by them whom Satan hath through his fraud and subtilty so far beguiled as to make them imagine herein they do unto God a part of most faithful service. Whereas the Lord in truth, whom they serve herein, is as St Cyprian telleth them, like, not Christ (for he it is that doth appoint and protect Bishops) but rather Christs adversary and enemy of his Church. A thousand five hundred years and upward the Church of Christ hath now continued under the sacred Regiment of Bishops. Neither for so long hath Christianity been ever planted in any Kingdom throughout the world but with this kind of government alone, which to have been ordained of God, I am for mine own part even as resolutely perswaded, as that any other kind of Government in the world whatsoever is of God. In this Realm of England, before Normans, yea before Saxons, there being Christians, the chief Pastors of their souls was Bishops. This order from about the first establishment of Christian Religion which was publicly begun through the vertuous disposition of King Lucie not fully two hundred years after Christ, continued till the coming in of the Saxons: By whom Paganism being every where else replanted, onely one part of the Island, whereinto the ancient, natural inhabitants the Britains were driven, retained constantly the faith of Christ together with the same form of spiritual Regiment, which their Fathers had before received. Wherefore in the Histories of the Church we find very ancient mention made of our own Bishops. At the Council of *Ariminus* about the year 359 Britain had three of her Bishops present. At the arrival of *Augustine* the Monk, whom *Gregory* sent hither to reclaim the Saxons from Gentility about six hundred years after Christ, the Britains he found observers still of the self same Government by Bishops over the rest of the Clergy; under this form Christianity took root again, where it had been exiled. Under the self same form it remained \* till the days of the Norman Conqueror. By him and his successors thereunto † sworn, it hath from that time till now, by the space of above five hundred years more been upheld. O Nation utterly without knowledge, without sense! We are not through error of mind deceived, but some wicked thing hath undoubtedly bewitched us, if we forsake that Government, the use whereof universal experience hath for so many years approved, and betake our selves unto a Regiment, neither appointed of God himself, as they who favour it pretend, nor till yesterday ever heard of among men. By the Jews *Festus* was much complained of, as being a Governor marvellous corrupt, and almost intolerable: Such notwithstanding were they who came after him, that men which thought the publique condition most afflicted under *Festus*, began to wish they



onely, grew in short time peculiar and proper to signifie such Episcopall Authority alone, as the chiefeſt Governors exerciſed over the reſt. For with all names this is uſual, that in as much as they are not given till the things whereunto they are given have been ſome time firſt obſerved, therefore generally things are ancients than the names whereby they are called.

Again; ſith the firſt things that grow into general obſervation, and do thereby give men occaſion to find names for them, are thoſe which being in many ſubjects, are thereby the eaſier, the oftner, and the more univerſally noted; it followeth that names impoſed to ſignifie common qualities or operations are ancients, then is the reſtraint of thoſe names, to note an excellency of ſuch qualities or operations in ſome one or few amongſt others. For example, the name Diſciple being invented to ſignifie generally a learner, it cannot chooſe but in that ſignification be more ancient then when it ſignifieth as it were by a kinde of appropriation, thoſe Learners who being taught of Chriſt were in that reſpect termed Diſciples by an excellency. The like is to be ſeen in the name Apoſtle, the uſe whereof to ſignifie a Meſſenger, muſt needs be more ancient then that uſe which reſtraineth it unto Meſſengers ſent concerning Evangelical affairs: Yea this uſe more ancient then that whereby the ſame word is yet reſtrained further to ſignifie onely thoſe whom our Saviour himſelf immediately did ſend. After the ſame manner the Title or Name of a Biſhop having been uſed of old to ſignifie both an Eccleſiaſtical Overſeer in general, and more particularly alſo a Principal Eccleſiaſtical Overſeer; it followeth, that this latter reſtrained ſignification is not ſo ancient as the former, being more common. Yet becauſe the things themſelves are always ancients then their names; therefore that thing which the reſtrained uſe of the word doth import, is likewiſe ancients than the reſtraint of the word is; and conſequently that power of chief Eccleſiaſtical Overſeers, which the term of a Biſhop importeth, was before the reſtrained uſe of the name which doth import it. Wherefore a lame and an impotent kind of reaſoning it is, when men go about to prove that in the Apoſtles times there was no ſuch thing as the reſtrained name of a Biſhop; doth now ſignifie; becauſe in their writings there is found no reſtraint of that name, but onely a general uſe whereby it reacheth unto all ſpiritual Governors and Overſeers.

But to let go the name, and to come to the very nature of that thing which is thereby ſignified in all kinds of Regiment whether Eccleſiaſtical or Civil: as there are ſundry operations publique, ſo likewiſe great inequality there is in the ſame operations, ſome being of principal reſpect, and therefore not fit to be dealt in by every one to whom publique actions, and thoſe of good importance, are notwithstanding well and firſt enough committed. From hence have grown thoſe different degrees of Magiſtrates or publique perſons, even Eccleſiaſtical as well as Civil. Amongſt Eccleſiaſtical Perſons therefore Biſhops being cheif ones; a Biſhops function muſt be defined by that wherein his Cheifty conſiſteth. A Biſhop is a Miniſter of God, unto whom with permanent continuance, there is given not onely power of adminiſtring the Word and Sacraments, which power other Presbyters have; but alſo a further power to ordain Eccleſiaſtical perſons, and a power of Cheifty in Government over Presbyters as well as Lay men, a power to be by way of jurisdiction a Paſtor even to Paſtors themſelves. So that this Office, as he is a Presbyter or Paſtor, conſiſteth in thoſe things which are common unto him with other Paſtors, as in adminiſtring the Word and Sacraments: But thoſe things incident unto his Office, which do properly make him a Biſhop, cannot be common unto him with other Paſtors. Now even as Paſtors, ſo likewiſe Biſhops being principal Paſtors, are either at large or elſe with reſtraint. At large, when the ſubject of their Regiment is indefinite, and not tyed to any certain place: Biſhops with reſtraint are they whoſe regiment over the Church is contained within ſome definite, local compaſs, beyond which compaſs their jurisdiction reacheth not. Such therefore we always mean when we ſpeak of that regiment by Biſhops which we hold a thing moſt lawful, divine and holy in the Church of Chriſt.

• And God brought them unto Adam, that Adam might ſee or conſider what names it was meet he ſhould give unto them, G. n. 2 19

So alſo the name Deacon is a Miniſter, appropriated to a certain order of Miniſters.

The name likewiſe of a Miniſter was common to divers degrees, which now is peculiarly among our ſelves given onely to Paſtors, and not as anciently to Deacons alſo.



In Bishops two things traduced, of which two the one their Authority, & in it the first thing condemned, their superiority over other Ministers; what kind of superiority in Ministers it is which the one part holdeth and the other denieth lawful.

III. In our present regiment by Bishops two things there are complained of, the one their great Authority, and the other their great Honor. Touching the Authority of our Bishops, the first thing which therein displeaseth their Adversaries, is their Superiority which Bishops have over other Ministers. They which cannot brook the superiority which Bishops have, do notwithstanding themselves admit that some kind of difference and inequality there may be lawfully amongst Ministers: Inequality as touching gifts and graces they grant, because this is so plain that no mist in the world can be cast before mens eyes so thick, but that they needs must discern thorow it, that one Minister of the Gospel may be more learned, holier and wiser, better able to instruct, more apt to rule and guide them than another: Unless thus much were confest, those men should lose their fame and glory whom they themselves do entitle the Lights and grand Worthies of this present age. Again, a priority of Order they deny not, but that there may be, yea such a priority as maketh one man amongst many a principal Actor in those things whereunto sundry of them must necessarily concur, so that the same be admitted only during the time of such actions and no longer; that is to say just so much superiority, and neither more nor less may be liked of, then it hath pleased them in their own kind of regiment to set down. The inequality which they complain of is, *That one Minister of the Word and Sacraments should have a permanent superiority above another, or in any sort a superiority of power mandatory, judicial and coercive over other Ministers.* By us on the contrary side, inequality, even such inequality as unto Bishops being Ministers of the Word and Sacraments granteth a superiority permanent above Ministers, yea a permanent superiority of power mandatory, judicial and coercive over them, is maintained a thing allowable, lawful and good. For superiority of power may be either above them or upon them, in regard of whom it is termed superiority. One Pastor hath superiority of power above another, when either some are authorised to do things which other then are permitted unto all, some are preferred to be principal Agents: the rest Agents with dependency and subordination. The former of these two kinds of superiority is such as the High Priest had above other Priests of the Law, in being appointed to enter once a year the holy place, which the rest of the Priests might not do. The latter superiority such as Presidents have in those actions which are done by others with them; they nevertheless being principal and chief therein. One Pastor hath superiority of power, not only above but upon another, when some are subject unto others commandment and judicial controlment, by vertue of publique jurisdiction. Superiority in this last kinde is utterly denied to be allowable, in the rest it is only denied that the lasting continuance and settled permanency thereof is lawful: So that if we prove at all the lawfulness of superiority in this last kind, where the same is simply denied, and of permanent superiority in the rest where some kind of superiority is granted, but with restraint to the term and continuance of certain actions, with which the same must, as they say, expire and cease; If we can show these two things maintainable; we bear up sufficiently that which the adverse party endeavoureth to overthrow. Our desire therefore is, that this issue may be strictly observed, and those things accordingly judged of, which we are to allege. This we boldly therefore set down, as a most infallible truth, *That the Church of Christ is at this day lawfully, and so hath been since the first beginning, governed by Bishops: having permanent superiority, and ruling power over other Ministers of the Word and Sacraments.*

For the plainer explication whereof, let us briefly declare first, The birth and original of the same power, whence and by what occasion it grew. Secondly, What manner of power antiquity doth witness Bishops to have had more then Presbyters, which were no Bishops. Thirdly, After what sort Bishops together with Presbyters have used to govern the Churches under them, according to the like testimonial evidence of antiquity. Fourthly, How far the same Episcopal power hath usually extended, unto what number of persons it hath reached, what bounds and limits of place it hath had. This done, we may afterwards defend unto those by whom the same either hath been heretofore, or is at this present hour gaind.

1V. The first Bishops in the Church of Christ were his blessed Apostles, for the Office whereunto *Matthias* was chosen the sacred History doth term *Episcopos*, in Episcopall Office. Which being spoken expressly of one, agreeth no less unto them all then unto him. For which cause *St. Cyprian* speaking generally of them all doth call them \* Bishops. They which were termed Apostles, as being sent of Christ to publish his Gospel throughout the world, and were named likewise Bishops; in that the care of Government was also committed unto them, did no less perform the offices of their Episcopall Authority by governing, then of their Apostolical by teaching. The word *Presbiter*, expressing that part of their office which did consist in regiment, proveth not (I grant) their chieftie in regiment over others; because as then that name was common unto the function of their inferiours, and not peculiar unto theirs. But the History of their actions sheweth plainly enough how the thing it self which that name appropriated importeth, that is to say, even such spiritual chieftie as we have already defined to be properly Episcopall, was in the holy Apostles of Christ. Bishops therefore they were at large. But was it lawful for any of them to be a Bishop with restraint? True it is their charge was indefinite: yet so, that in case they did all, whether severally or joyntly discharge the Office of proclaiming every where the Gospel, and of guiding the Church of Christ, none of them casting off his part in their (a) burthen which was laid upon them; there doth appear no impediment but that they having received their common charge indefinitely might in the execution thereof notwithstanding restrain themselves, or at leastwise be restrained by the after commandment of the Spirit, without contradiction or repugnancy unto that charge more indefinite and general before given them; especially if it seemed at anytime requisite, and for the greater good of the Church, that they should in such sort tye themselves unto some special part of the flock of Jesus Christ, guiding the same in several as Bishops. For first, notwithstanding our Saviours commandment unto them all to go and preach unto all Nations: Yet some restraint we see there was made, when by agreement between *Paul* and *Peter* moved with those effects of their labours which the providence of God brought forth; the one betook himself unto the Gentiles, the other unto the Jews, for the exercise of that Office of every where preaching. A further restraint of their Apostolical labours, as yet there was also made, when they divided themselves into several parts of the world; (a) *John* for his charge taking *Asia*, and so the residue other quarters to labour in. If nevertheless it seem very hard that we should admit a restraint so particular, as after that general charge received, to make any Apostle notwithstanding the Bishop of some one Church, what think we of the Bishop of *Jerusalem* (b) *James*, whose consecration unto that Mother Sea of the world, because it was not meet that it should at any time be left void of some Apostle doth seem to have been the very cause of *St. Paul's* miraculous vocation to make up the (c) number of the Twelve again, for the gathering of nations abroad, even as the (d) martyrdom of the other *James* the reason why *Barnabas* in his stead was called. Finally, Apostles whether they did settle in any one certain place, as *James*, or else did otherwise as the Apostle *Paul*; Episcopall Authority either at large or with restraint they had and exercised: Their Episcopall power they sometimes gave unto others to exercise as agents onely in their stead, and as it were by commission from them. Thus (e) *Titus*, and thus *Timothy* at the first, though (f) afterwards indued with Apostolical power of their own. For in process of time the Apostles gave Episcopall Authority, and that to continue always with them which had it. We are able to number up them, saith *Irenaeus*, who by the Apostles were made Bishops. *Iren.* lib. 3. cap. 3. In *Rome* he affirmeth that the Apostles themselves made *Linus* the first Bishop. Again of *Polycarp* he saith likewise, that the Apostles made him Bishop of the Church of *Smyrna*. Of *Antioch* they made *Evdodius* Bishop as *Ignatius* witnesseth, exhorting that

that Church to tread in his holy steps, and to follow his vertuous example. The Apostles therefore were the first which had such authority, and all others who have it after them in orderly sort are their lawful Successors, whether they succeed in any particular Church, where before them some Apostle hath been seated; As *Simon* succeeded *James* in *Jerusalem*; or else be otherwise endued with the same kind of Bishoply power, although it be not where any Apostle before hath been. For to succeed them, is after them to have that Episcopal kind of power which was first given to them. All Bishops are, saith *Jerome*, the Apostles successors. In like sort *Cyprian* doth term Bishops, *Præpositus qui Apostolis vicaria ordinatione succedunt*. From hence it may happily seem to have grown, that they whom now we call Bishops \* were usually termed at the first Apostles, and so did carry their very names in whose rooms of spiritual authority they succeeded. Such as deny Apostles to have (a) any successors at all in the office of their Apostleship, may hold that opinion without contradiction to this of ours, if they well explain themselves in declaring what truly and properly Apostleship is: In some things every Presbyter, in some things onely Bishops, in some things neither the one nor the other are the Apostles Successors. The Apostles were sent as special chosen (b) eye-witnesses of *Jesus Christ*, from whom (c) immediately they received their whole Embassage, and their Commission to be the principal (d) first founders of an House of God consisting as well of (e) Gentiles as of Jews: In this there are not after them any other like unto them; And yet the Apostles have now their successors upon earth, their true successors, if not in the largeness, surely in the kind of that Episcopal function, whereby they had power to sit as spiritual ordinary Judges, both over Laity and over Clergy where Churches Christian were established.

*Hieron. ep. 21.*  
*Cyp. ep. ad Florent.*

\* *Theod. in*  
*1 Tim. 3.*  
*2 Epist. Apo-*  
*stolatus nulla*  
*successio. Fini-*  
*torem enim legatio*  
*cum legato nec*  
*ad successores*  
*ipsius transit.*  
*Steph. de eccl. prin-*  
*tib. c. cap. 7.*  
*b Act. 1. 21, 22.*  
*1 John 1. 3.*  
*c Gal. 1. 1.*  
*d Apoc. 21. 14.*  
*e Mat. 28. 19.*

The time & cause of instituting every where Bishops with restraint.

V. The Apostles of our Lord did according unto those directions which were given them from above, erect Churches in all such Cities as received the Word of Truth, the Gospel of God: All Churches by them erected, received from them the same Faith, the same Sacraments, the same form of publick regiment. The form of Regiment by them established at first was, That the Laity or people should be subject unto a Colledge of Ecclesiastical persons, which were in every such City appointed for that purpose. These in their writings they term sometime Presbyters, sometime Bishops. To take one Church out of a number for a pattern what the rest were, the Presbyters of *Ephesus*, as it is in the History of their departure from the Apostle *Paul* at *Miletum*, are said to have wept abundantly all, which speech doth shew them to have been many. And by the Apostles exhortation it may appear, that they had not each his several flock to feed, but were in common appointed to feed that one flock the Church of *Ephesus*; for which cause the phrase of his speech is this, *Attendite gregi*, Look all to that one flock over which the Holy Ghost hath made you Bishops. These persons Ecclesiastical being termed as then, Presbyters and Bishops both, were all subject unto *Paul* as to an higher Governor appointed of God to be over them. But for as much as the Apostles could not themselves be present in all Churches, and as the Apostle *St. Paul* foretold the Presbyters of the *Ephesians* that there would rise up from amongst their own selves, men speaking perverse things to draw Disciples after them; there did grow in short time amongst the Governors of each Church, those emulations, strifes, and contentions, wherof there could be no sufficient remedy provided, except according unto the order of *Jerusalem* already begun, some one were indued with Episcopal Authority over the rest, which one being resident might keep them in order, and have preeminence or principality in those things, wherein the equality of many agents was the cause of disorder and trouble. This one President or Governour amongst the rest had his known Authority established a long time before that settled difference of name and title took place, whereby such alone were named Bishops. And therefore in the book of *St. Johns Revelation* we find that they are entituled Angels. It will perhaps be answered, That the Angels of those Churches were onely in every Church a Minister of the Word and Sacraments.

As appeareth both by his sending to call the Pre-byters of *Ephesus* before him as far as to *Miletum* *Acts 20. 17.* which was almost fifty miles, and by his leaving *Timothy* in his place with authority and instructions for ordaining of Ministers there, *1 Tim. 5. 22.* and for proportioning their maintenance verse 17, 18. and for judicial hearing of accusations brought against them, verse 19. and for holding them in an uniformity of Doctrine, chap. 1. verse 3.

*Revel. 2.*

ty established a long time before that settled difference of name and title took place, whereby such alone were named Bishops. And therefore in the book of *St. Johns Revelation* we find that they are entituled Angels. It will perhaps be answered, That the Angels of those Churches were onely in every Church a Minister of the Word and Sacraments.



Sacraments: But then we ask, Is it probable that in every of these Churches, even in *Ephesus* it self, where many such Ministers were long before, as hath been proved, there was but one such when *John* directed his speech to the Angel of that Church? If there were many, surely *St. John* in naming but only one of them an Angel, did behold in that one somewhat above the rest. Nor was this order peculiar unto some few Churches, but the whole world universally became subject thereunto; in so much as they did not account it to be a Church, which was not subject unto a Bishop. It was the general received persuasion of the ancient Christian world, that *Ecclesia est in Episcopo*, the outward being of a Church consisteth in the having of a Bishop: That where Colledges of Presbyters were, there was at the first, equality amongst them, *St. Jerome* thinketh it a matter clear; but when the rest were thus equal, so that no one of them could command any other as inferior unto him, they all were controllable by the Apostles, who had that Episcopal authority abiding at the first in themselves, which they afterwards derived unto others. The cause wherefore they under themselves appointed such Bishops as were not every where at the first, is said to have been those strifes and contentions, for remedy whereof, whether the Apostles alone did conclude of such a regiment, or else they together with the whole Church judging it a fit and a needful policy did agree to receive it for a custom; no doubt but being established by them on whom the Holy Ghost was powred in so abundant measure for the ordering of Christs Church, it had either Divine appointment before hand, or Divine approbation afterwards, and is in that respect to be acknowledged the Ordinance of God; no less then that ancient Jewish regiment, whereof though *Jethro* were the Deviser, yet after that God had allowed it, all men were subject unto it, as to the Polity of God, and not of *Jethro*. That so the ancient Fathers did think of Episcopal Regiment, that they held this order as a thing received from the blessed Apostles themselves, and authorized even from heaven, we may perhaps more easily prove, then obtain that they all shall grant it who see it proved. *St. Augustine* setteth it down for a principle, that whatsoever positive order the whole Church every where doth observe, the same it must needs have received from the very Apostles themselves, unless perhaps some general Council were the Authors of it. And he saw that the ruling superiority of Bishops was a thing universally established, not by the force of any Council, (for Councils do all presuppose Bishops, nor can there any Council be named so antient, either general, or as much as provincial, thence the Apostles own times, but we can shew that Bishops had their Authority before it, and not from it.) Wherefore *St. Augustine* knowing this, could not chuse but reverence the Authority of Bishops, as a thing to him apparently and most clearly apostolical. But it will be perhaps objected that Regiment by Bishops was not so universal nor antient as we pretend; and that an Argument hereof may be *Jeroms* own Testimony, who living at the very same time with *St. Augustine*, noteth this kind of Regiment as being no where antient, saving onely in *Alexandria*; his words are these, *It was for a remedy of Schism that one was afterwards chosen to be placed above the rest, lest every mans putting unto himself, should rend assunder the Church of Christ. For (that which also may serve for an Argument or token hereof) at Alexandria from Mark the Evangelist, unto Heraclas and Dionysius, the Presbyters always chose one OF THEMSELVES, whom they placed in higher degree, and gave unto him the Title of Bishop.* Now *St. Jerome* they say would never have picked out that one Church from amongst so many, and have noted that in it there had been Bishops from the time that *St. Mark* lived, if so be the self same order were of like antiquity every where; his words therefore must be thus schooled; In the Church of *Alexandria*, Presbyters indeed had even from the time of *St. Mark* the Evangelist, always a Bishop to rule over them for a remedy against Divisions, Factions and Schismes. Not so in other Churches, neither in that very Church any longer then *usq. ad Heraclam & Dionysium*, till *Heraclas* and his Successor *Dionysius* were Bishops. But this construction doth bereave the words construed, partly of wit, and partly of truth, it maketh them both absurd and false. For if the meaning be that Episcopal Government in that Church was then expired, it must have expired with the end of some one, and not of two several Bishops days, unless perhaps it fell sick under *Heraclas*, and with *Dionysius* gave up the Ghost. Besides it is clearly untrue that the Presbyters of that Church did then cease to be under a Bishop: Who doth not know that after *Dionysius*,

Cyp. L. 4. Epist. 9

Hieron. Ep ad E. 25.

Exod. 18. 19.

Epist. ad Irenaeum

Epist. ad Evag.

T.C.L. p. 92.

It is to be observed that *Jerom* saith, it was so in *Alexandria*, signifying that in other Churches it was no so.

Soc. 1. 1. 2. 3

*Maximus* was Bishop of *Alexandria*, after him *Theonas*, after him *Peter*, after him *Achillas*, after him *Alexander*, of whom *Socrates* in this sort writeth; it fortuneth on a certain time that this *Alexander* in the presence of the Presbyters which were under him, and of the rest of the Clergy there, discoursed somewhat curiously and subtilly of the holy Trinity, bringing high Philosophical proofs, that there is in the Trinity an Unity. Whereupon *Arius* one of the Presbyters which were placed in that degree under *Alexander*, opposed eagerly himself against those things which were uttered by the Bishop. So that thus long Bishops continued even in the Church of *Alexandria*. Nor did their Regiment here cease, but these also had others their Successors till St. *Jerome*'s own time, who living long after *Heraclas*, and *Dionysius* had ended their days, did not yet live himself to see the Presbyters of *Alexandria*, otherwise then subject unto a Bishop. So that we cannot with any truth, so interpret his words as to mean, that in the Church of *Alexandria* there had been Bishops indued with Superiority over Presbyters from St. *Mark*'s time, onely till the time of *Heraclas* and of *Dionysius*; Wherefore that St. *Jerome* may receive a more probable interpretation then this, We answer, that generally, of Regiment by Bishops, and what term of continuance it had in the Church of *Alexandria*, it was no part of his mind to speak, but to note one onely circumstance belonging to the manner of their election, which circumstance is, that in *Alexandria* they used to chuse their Bishops altogether out of the colledge of their own Presbyters, and neither from abroad nor out of any other inferior order of the Clergy, whereas oftentimes (a) elsewhere the use was to chuse as well from abroad as at home, as well inferior unto Presbyters as Presbyters when they saw occasion. This custome, saith he, the Church of *Alexandria* did always keep, till in *Heraclas* and *Dionysius*, they began to do otherwise. These two were the very first not chose out of their Colledge of Presbyters.

Vnto *Iguatius*  
Bishop of *An-  
tioch*, there a  
Deacon their  
was made  
Successor,  
(b) *Ignatius* be-  
ing a Presby-  
ter of *An-  
tioch*.  
was chosen  
to succeed  
Nestor in  
the Bishop-  
rick of *Eph-  
esus*.  
Basilus.

The drift and purpose of St. *Jerome*'s speech doth plainly show what his meaning was; for whereas some did over-extol the Office of the Deacon in the Church of Rome; where Deacons being grown great, through wealth, challenged place above Presbyters: St. *Jerome* to abate this insolency, writing to *Evagrius*, diminisheth by all means the Deacons estimation, and listeth up Presbyters as far as possible the truth might bear. An attendant, saith he, upon Tables and Widows proudly to exalt himself above them, at whose prayers is made the body and blood of Christ; above them, between whom and Bishops there was at the first for a time no difference neither in authority nor in title. And whereas afterward schisms and contentions made it necessary that some one should be placed over them, by which occasion the title of Bishop became proper unto that one, yet was that one chosen out of the Presbyters, as being the chiefest, the highest, the worthiest degree of the Clergie, and not out of Deacons; in which consideration also it seemeth that in *Alexandria* even from St. *Mark* to *Heraclas* and *Dionysius* Bishops there, the Presbyters evermore have chosen one of themselves, and not a Deacon at any time, to be their Bishop. Nor let any man think that Christ hath one Church in Rome and another in the rest of the world; that in Rome be allowed Deacons to be honoured above Presbyters, and elsewhere will have them to be in the next degree to the Bishop. If it be deemed that abroad where Bishops are poorer, the Presbyters under them may be the next unto them in honour; but at Rome where the Bishop hath ample revenues, the Deacons whose estate is nearest for wealth, may be also for estimation the next unto him: We must know that a Bishop in the meanest City is no less a Bishop then he who is seated in the greatest; the countenance of a rich, and the meanness of a poor estate doth make no odds between Bishops; and therefore if a Presbyter at *Engubium* be the next in degree to a Bishop, surely, even at Rome it ought in reason to be so likewise; and not a Deacon for wealths sake only to be a above, who by order should be, and elsewhere is, underneath a Presbyter. But ye will say that according to the custom of Rome a Deacon presenteth unto the Bishop him which standeth to be ordained Presbyter; and upon the Deacons testimony given concerning his fitness, he receiveth at the Bishops hands Ordination: So that in Rome the Deacon having this special prebeminence, the Presbyter ought there to give place unto him. Wherefore is the custom of one City brought against the practise of the whole World? The paucity of Deacons in the Church of Rome hath gotten the credit, as unto Presbyters their multitude hath been cause of contempt: Howbeit even in the Church of Rome, Presbyters sit and Deacons stand; an Argument as strong against the superiority of Deacons, as the fore-  
alleged reason doth seem for it. Besides, whosoever is promoted must needs be raised from a lower

lower degree to an higher; wherefore either let him which is Presbyter be made a Deacon, that so the Deacon may appear to be the greater; or if of Deacons Presbyters be made, let them know themselves to be in regard of Deacons, though below in gain, yet above in Office. And so the end we may understand that those Apostolical Orders are taken out of the Old Testament, what Aaron and his Sons and the Levites were in the Temple, the same in the Church may Bishops and Presbyters and Deacons challenge unto themselves. This is the very drift and substance, this the true construction and sense of St. Jeroms whole discourse in that Epistle: Which I have therefore endeavoured the more at large to explain, because no one thing is less effectual or more usual to be alleged against the ancient Authority of Bishops; concerning whose Government St. Jeroms own words elsewhere are sufficient to show his opinion, that this order was not onely in Alexandria so ancient, but even as ancient in other Churches. We have before alleged his testimony touching James the Bishop of Jerusalem. As for Bishops in other Churches on the first of the epistle to Titus, thus he speaketh, Till through instinct of the devil there grew in the Church factions, and among the people it began to be profest, I am of Paul, I of Apollo, and I of Cephas, Churches were governed by the common advice of Presbyters; but when every one began to reckon those whom himself had baptized his own and not Christ, it was decreed IN THE WHOLE WORLD that one chosen out of the Presbyters should be placed above the rest, to whom all care of the Church should belong, and so the seeds of schism be removed. If it be so, that by St. Jeroms own confession this order was not then begun when people in the Apostles absence began to be divided into factions by their Teachers, and to rehearse, I am of Paul, but that even at the very first appointment thereof was agreed upon and received thorowout the world; how shall any man be perwaded that the same Jerom thought it so ancient no where saving in Alexandria, one only Church of the whole world. A sentence there is indeed of St. Jeroms which being not thoroughly considered and weighed may cause his meaning so to be taken, as if he judged episcopal regiment to have been the Churches invention long after, and not the Apostles own institution; as namely, when he admonisheth Bishops in this manner; As therefore Presbyters do know that the custom of the Church makes them subject to the Bishop which is set over them; so let (b) A Bishops know that custom rather than the truth of any Ordinance of the Lords maketh them greater then the rest, and that with common advice they ought to govern the Church. To clear the sense of these words therefore, a. we have done already the former: Laws which the Church from the beginning universally hath observed were some delivered by Christ himself, with a charge to keep them till the worlds end, as the law of baptizing and administering the holy Eucharist; some brought in afterwards by the Apostles, yet not without the special direction of the Holy Ghost, as occasions did arise. Of this sort are those Apostolical orders and laws whereby Deacons, Widows, Virgins were first appointed in the Church.

This answer to Saint Jerom, seemeth dangerous, I have qualified it as I may, by addition of some words of restraint; yet I satisfy not my self, in my judgment it would be altered. Now whereas Jerom doth term the Government of Bishops by restraint, an Apostolical tradition, acknowledging thereby the same to have been of the Apostles own institution; it may be demanded how these two will stand together; namely, that the Apostles by divine instinct, should be as Jerom confesseth the Authors of that regiment; and yet the custom of the Church be accomplished (for so by Jerom it may seem to be in this place accomplished) the chiefest prop that upholds the same? To this we answer, That for as much as the whole body of the Church, hath power to alter with general consent and upon necessary occasions, even the positive laws of the Apostles, if there be no commandments to the contrary, and it manifestly appears to her, that change of times have clearly taken away the very reason of Gods first institution, as by sundry examples may be most clearly proved; What laws the universal Church might change, and doth not; if they have long continued without any alteration; it seemeth that St. Jerom ascribeth the continuance of such positive laws, though instituted by God himself, to the judgement of the Church. For

(b) Bishops he meaneth by restraint; For Episcopal power was always in the Church instituted by Christ himself, the Apostles being in government Bishops at large; as no man will deny having received from Christ himself that Episcopal Authority. For which cause Cyprian hath said of them, *meminisse Dominum docuit quoniam Apostoli id est episcopi & presbyteri Dominus elegit: Diaconos autem post officium Domini in color Apostoli sine constitutione sui & Ecclesie ministrant.* Lib. 3. Ep. 9.



they which might abrogate a Law and do not, are properly said to uphold, to establish it, and to give it being. The Regiment therefore whereof Jerom speaketh being positive, and consequently, not absolutely necessary, but of a changeable nature, because there is no Divine voice which in express words forbiddeth it to be changed, he might imagine both that it came by the Apostles by very Divine appointment at the first, and notwithstanding be after a sort, said to stand in force, rather by the custom of the Church, choosing to continue in it, then by the necessary constraints of any Commandment from the Word, requiring perpetual continuance thereof. So that St. Jeromes admonition is reasonable, sensible, and plain, being contrived to this effect; The ruling superiority of one Bishop over many Presbyters, in each Church, is an order descended from Christ to the Apostles, who were themselves Bishops at large, and from the Apostles to those whom they in their steads appointed Bishops over particular Countries and Cities, and even from those ancient times, universally established, thus many years it hath continued throughout the World; for which cause Presbyters must not grudge to continue subject unto their Bishops, unless they will proudly oppose themselves against that which God himself ordained by his Apostles, and the whole Church of Christ approveth and judgeth most convenient. On the other side Bishops albeit they may avouch with conformity of truth, that their Authority hath thus descended even from the very Apostles themselves, yet the absolute and everlasting continuance of it, they cannot say that any Commandment of the Lord doth injoynt; And therefore must acknowledge that the Church hath power by universal consent upon urgent cause to take it away, if thereunto she be constrained through the proud, tyrannical, and unreformable dealings of her Bishops, whose Regiment she hath thus long delighted in, because she hath found it good and requisite to be so governed. Wherefore lest Bishops forget themselves, as if none on earth had Authority to touch their states, let them continually bear in mind, that it is rather the force of custom, whereby the Church having so long found it good to continue under the Regiment of her vertuous Bishops, doth still uphold, maintain, and honour them in that respect, then that any such true and heavenly Law can be showed, by the evidence whereof it may of a truth appear that the Lord himself hath appointed Presbyters for ever to be under the Regiment of Bishops, in what sort soever they behave themselves; let this consideration be a bridle unto them, let it teach them not to disdain the advice of their Presbyters, but to use their authority with so much the greater humility and moderation, as a Sword which the Church hath power to take from them. In all this there is no let why St. Jerom might not think the Authors of Episcopall Regiment to have been the very blessed Apostles themselves, directed therein by the special motion of the Holy Ghost, which the ancients all before, and besides him and himself also elsewhere, being known to hold, we are not without better evidence then this, to think him in judgment divided both from himself and from them. Another Argument that the Regiment of Churches by one Bishop over many Presbyters, hath been always held Apostolical, may be this. We find that throughout all those Cities where the Apostles did plant Christianity, the History of times hath noted succession of pastors in the seat of one, not of many (there being in every such Church evermore many Pastors) and the first one in every rank of succession, we find to have been if not some Apostle, yet some Apostles Disciple. By Epiphanius the Bishops of Jerusalem are reckoned down from James to Hilarion then Bishop. Of them which boasted that they held the same things which they received of such as lived with the Apostles themselves, Tertullian speaketh after this sort, let them therefore shew the beginnings of their Churches, let them recite their Bishops one by one, each in such sort succeeding other, that the first Bishop of them have had, for his Author and Predecessour, some Apostle, or at least some Apostolical Person, who persevered with the Apostles. For so Apostolical Churches are wont to bring forth the evidence of their states. So doth the Church of Smyrna, having Polycarp whom John did consecrate; Catalogues of Bishops in a number of other Churches, Bishops and succeeding one another, from the very Apostles times are by Eusebius and Socrates collected, whereby it appeareth so clear, as nothing in the World more, that under them and by their appointment this order began, which maketh many Presbyters subject unto the Regiment of some one Bishop. For as in Rome while the civil ordering of the Commonwealth, was joyntly and equally in the hands of two Consuls, Historical Records concerning them, did evermore mention them both, and note which two as Col-  
legues

Lp. 2. to 2.  
H. ccc. l. 66.

De prescrip.  
adv. heret.

legues succeeded from time to time: So there is no doubt but Ecclesiastical antiquity had done the very like, had not one Pastors place and calling been always so eminent above the rest in the same Church. And what need we to seek far for proofs that the Apostles who began this order of Regiment by Bishops, did it not but by divine instinct, when without such direction things of far less weight and moment they attempted not? *Paul* and *Barnabas* did not open their mouths to the Gentiles, till the Spirit had said, separate me *Paul* and *Barnabas* for the work whereunto I have sent them. The Eunuch by *Philip* was neither baptized nor instructed before the Angel of God was sent to give him notice that so it pleased the most High. In *Asia* *Paul* and the rest were silent, because the Spirit forbade them to speak. When they intended to have seen *Bythinia* they stayed their journey, the Spirit not giving them leave to go. Before *Timothy* was employed in those Episcopal affairs of the Church, about which the Apostle *St. Paul* used him, the Holy Ghost gave special charge for his Ordination, and propheticall intelligence more then once, what success the same would have. And shall we think that *James* was made Bishop of *Jerusalem*, *Eusebius* Bishop of the Church of *Antioch*, the Angels in the Churches of *Asia* Bishops, that Bishops every where were appointed to take away factions, contentions and Schisms, without some like divine intigation and direction of the Holy Ghost? Wherefore let us not fear to be herein bold and peremptory, that if any thing in the Churches Government, surely the first institution of Bishops was from Heaven, was even of God, the Holy Ghost was the Author of it.

Acts 13.

Acts 8.

Acts 16.

1 Tim. 2. 18.

VI. A Bishop, saith *St. Augustin*, is a Presbyters Superior, but the question is now, wherein that superiority did consist. The Bishops preeminence we say therefore was twofold. First he excelled in latitude of the power of order, secondly in that kind of power which belongeth unto jurisdiction. Priests in the law had authority and power to do greater things then *Levites*, the high Priest greater then inferior Priests might do, therefore *Levites* were beneath Priests, and Priests inferior to the high Priest, by reason of the very degree of dignity, and of worthiness in the nature of those functions which they did execute, and not onely for that the one had power to command and controul the other. In like sort Presbyters having a waighter and a worthier charge then Deacons had, the Deacon was in this sort the Presbyters inferior, and where we say that a Bishop was likewise ever accounted a Presbyters superior, even according unto his very power of order, we must of necessity declare what principal duties belonging unto that kind of power a Bishop might perform, and not a Presbyter. The custome of the primitive Church in consecrating holy Virgins, and Widows, unto the service of God and his Church, is a thing not obscure; but easie to be known, both by that which *St. Paul* himself concerning them bath, and by the latter consonant evidence of other mens writings. Now a part of the preeminence which Bishops had in their power of order, was that by them onely such were consecrated. Again, the power of ordaining both Deacons and Presbyters, the power to give the power of order unto others, this also hath been always peculiar unto Bishops. It hath not been heard of, that inferior Presbyters were ever authorized to ordain. And concerning ordination so great force and dignity it hath, that whereas Presbyters by such power as they have received for Administration of the Sacraments, are able onely to beget Children unto God; Bishops having power to Ordain, do by vertue thereof create fathers to the people of God, as *Epiphanius* fitly disputeth. There are which hold that between a Bishop and a Presbyter, touching power of order, there is no difference: The reason of which conceipt is for that they see Presbyters no less then Bishops Authorized to offer up the prayers of the Church, to Preach the Gospel, to Baptize, to Administer the holy Eucharist, but they considered not with all as they should, that the Presbyters authority to do these things is derived from the Bishops which doth ordain him thereunto, so that even in those things which are common unto both, yet the power of the one, is as it were a certain light borrowed from the others lamp. The Apostles being Bishops at large, Ordained every where Presbyters. *Titus* and *Timothy* having received Episcopal power, as Apostolique Embassadors or Legates, the one in *Greece*, the other in *Ephefus*, they both did by vertue thereof, likewise ordain throughout all Churches Deacons

What manner of power Bishops from the first beginning have had.

Aug. Ep 19. ad Hieron. & de heres. 33.

1 Cor. 7. 16.

1 Tim. 5. 9.

Tr. 1. 1. de. 22. v. 8.

Epiph. 2. l. 1. c. 1. h. 7. 4.

Acts 14. 23.

1 Tim. 2. 1.

1 Tim 3. 22.

apud ad gyp-  
tam Presbyteri  
consequantur  
præsentem non sit  
Episcopum Com-  
g. volgo A. d. b.  
dic. in 4. Ep ad  
Episcopos.

Deacons and Presbyters within the circuits allotted unto them. As for Bishops by restraint, their power this way incommunicable unto Presbyters, which of the ancients do not acknowledge? I make not confirmation any part of that power which hath always belonged onely unto Bishops; because in some places the custom was that Presbyters might also confirm in the absence of a Bishop; albeit for the most part none but onely Bishops were thereof the allowed Ministers.

Here it will be perhaps objected that the power of Ordination it self was not every where peculiar and proper unto Bishops, as may be seen by a Council of Carthage, which sheweth their Churches Order to have been, That Presbyters should together with the Bishop lay hands upon the ordained. But the Answer hereunto is eatie; For doth it hereupon follow that the power of Ordination was not principally and originally in the Bishop? Our Saviour hath said unto his Apostles, *With me ye shall sit and judge the Twelve Tribes of Israel*; yet we know that to him alone it belongeth to judge the World, and that to him all judgement is given. With us even at this day Presbyters are licensed to do as much as that Council speaketh of, if any be present. Yet will not any man thereby conclude that in this Church others then Bishops are allowed to ordain: The association of Presbyters is no sufficient proof that the power of Ordination is in them; but rather that it never was in them, we may hereby understand, for that no man is able to shew either Deacon or Presbyters ordained by Presbyters only, and his Ordination accounted lawful in any antient part of the Church; every where examples being found both of Deacons and of Presbyters ordained by Bishops alone oftentimes, neither ever in that respect thought insufficient. Touching that other chieftly, which is of Jurisdiction, amongst the Jews he which was highest through the worthiness of peculiar duties incident into his function in the legal service of God, did bear always in Ecclesiastical jurisdiction the chieftest sway. As long as the glory of the Temple of God did last, there were in it sundry orders of men consecrated unto the service thereof; one sort of them inferior unto another in dignity and degree; the Nathiners subordinate unto the Levites, the Levites unto the Priests, the rest of the Priests to those twenty four which were chieft Priests, and they all to the High Priest. If any man surmise that the difference between them was onely by distinction in the former kind of power, and not in this latter of jurisdiction, are not the words of the Law manifest which make Eleazar the Son of Aaron the Priest chieft Captain of the Levites, and overseer of them, unto whom the charge of the Sanctuary was committed? Again at the commandment of Aaron and his Sons, are not the Gersonites themselves required to, do all their service in the whole charge belonging unto the Gersonites being inferior Priests as Aaron and his Sons were High Priests? Did not Jehoshaphat appoint Amarias the Priest to be chieft over them who were Judges for the cause of the Lord in Jerusalem? Priests, saith Josephus, *Worship God continually, and the eldest of the stock are governors over the rest. He doth sacrifice unto God before others, he hath care of the Laws, judgeth controversies, correcteth offenders, and whosoever obeyeth him not is convicted of impiety against God.* But unto this they answer, That the reason thereof was because the High-Priest did prefigure Christ, and represent to the people that chieftly of our Saviour which was to come; so that Christ being now come there is no cause why such preheminance should be given unto any one. Which fancy pleaseth so well the humour of all sorts of rebellious spirits that they all seek to shroud themselves under it. Tell the Anabaptist which holdeth the use of the sword unlawful for a Christian man, that God himself did allow his people to make wars; they have their answer round and ready, *Those antient wars were figures of the spiritual wars of Christ.* Tell the Barrowist what sway David, and others the Kings of Israel did bear in the ordering of spiritual affairs, the same answer again serveth, namely, *That David and the rest of the Kings of Israel prefigured Christ.* Tell the Martinist of the High-Priests great authority and jurisdiction, amongst the Jews, what other thing doth serve his turn but the self-same shift; *By the power of the High-Priest the universal supreme Authority of our Lord Jesus Christ was shadowed.* The thing is true, that indeed High-Priests were figures of Christ, yet this was in things belonging unto their power of order; they figured Christ by entering into the holy place, by offering for the sins of all the people once a year, and by other the like duties: But that to govern and to maintain order amongst those that were subject

to

Numb. 3. 32

Numb. 4. 27.

2 Chron. 19. 11

Joseph. Ant. 9.  
p. 12.



to them, is an office figurative and abrogated by Christs coming in the Ministry; that their exercise of jurisdiction was figurative, yea figurative in such sort, that it had no other cause of being instituted, but onely to serve as a representation of some-whatsoever come, and that herein the Church of Christ ought not to follow them; this Article is such as must be confirmed, if any way by miracle, otherwise it will hardly enter into the heads of reasonable men, why the High-Priest should more figure Christ in being a Judge then in being whatsoever he might be besides. St. Cyprian deemed it no wretling of Scripture to challenge as much for Christian Bishops, as was given to the High-Priest amongst the Jews, and to urge the Law of Moses as being most effectual to prove it. St. Jerome likewise thought it an argument sufficient to ground the Authority of Bishops upon. To the end, saith he, we may understand Apostolical traditions to have been taken from the Old Testament, that which Aaron, and his Sons, and the Levites were in the Temple; Bishops, and Presbyters and Deacons in the Church may lawfully challenge to themselves. In the Office of a Bishop Ignatius observeth these two functions *ἐπισκοπῆς καὶ διέσεως*, concerning the one such is a prebeminence of a Bishop, that he onely hath the heavenly mysteries of God committed originally unto him, so that otherwise then by his Ordination, and by authority received from him, others besides him are not licensed therein to deal as ordinary Ministers of Gods Church. And touching the other part of their sacred Function, wherein the power of their jurisdiction doth appear, first how the Apostles themselves, and secondly how Titus and Timothy had rule and jurisdiction over Presbyters, no man is ignorant. And had not Christian Bishops afterward the like power? Ignatius Bishop of Antioch being ready by blessed martyrdom to end his life, writeth unto his Presbyters the Pastors under him in this sort, *ἐπεὶ οὐκ ἔστιν ἡμεῖς ὡς ἐν ἑνὶ σώματι καὶ ἐν ἑνὶ κυρίῳ*. After the death of Fabian Bishop of Rome, there growing some trouble about the receiving of such persons into the Church as had fallen away in persecution, and did now repent their fall; the Presbyters and Deacons of the same Church advertised St. Cyprian thereof, signifying That they must of necessity defer to deal in that cause till God did send them a new Bishop which might moderate all things. Much we read of extraordinary falling usually in the Church. And in this appeareth also somewhat concerning the chiefly of Bishops. The custome is, saith Tertullian, that Bishops do appoint when the people shall all fast. Yea, it is not a matter left to our own free choice whether Bishops shall rule or no, but the will of our Lord and Saviour is, saith Cyprian, that every act of the Church, be governed by her Bishops. An Argument it is of the Bishops high preeminence, rule and Government over all the rest of the Clergy, even that the Sword of persecution did strike, especially, always at the Bishop as at the head, the rest by reason of their lower estate, being more secure, as the self-same Cyprian noteth; the very manner of whose speech unto his own, both Deacons and Presbyters who remained safe, when himself then Bishop was driven into exile, argueth likewise his eminent authority and rule over them, By these letters saith he, I both exhort and COMMAND that ye whose presence there is not envied at, nor so much beset with dangers, supply my room in doing those things which the exercise of Religion doth require. Unto the same purpose serve most directly, those comparisons, then which nothing is more familiar in the books of the ancient Fathers, who as oft as they speak of the several degrees in Gods Clergy, if they chance to compare Presbyters with Levitical Priests of the law; the Bishop (a) they compare unto Aaron the High Priest; if they compare the one with the Apostles, the other they compare (although in a lower proportion) sometime (b) to Christ, and sometime to God himself, evermore shewing that they placed the Bishop in an eminent degree of ruling authority and power above other Presbyters. (c) Ignatius comparing Bishops with Deacons, and with such Ministers of the word and Sacrament as were but Presbyters, and had no Authority over Presbyters; What is saith he, the Bishop but one which hath all principality and power over all, so far forth as man may have it, being to his power, a follower even of Gods own Christ; Mr. (d) Calvin himself, though an enemy unto Regiment by Bishops, doth notwithstanding confess, that in old time the Ministers which had charge to teach, chose of their Company one in every City, to whom they appropriated the Title of Bishop, least equality should breed dissention. He added farther, that look what duty the Roman Consuls did ex-

Cyp. l. 3 ep. 91  
ad Rogatianum  
Hieron. ep. 85.

Epist. ad Smyrn.

Tim. 5. 19.  
Against a  
Presbyter  
receive no  
accusation  
under two or  
three witness-  
ses.  
Ignat. Epist. ad  
Antioch.  
Apud Cyp. Ep.  
l. ep. 7.

Tertul. advers.  
Psychic. Episcopis  
universa plebi  
mandare; et non  
assensu.  
Cyp. Ep. 37.

Cyp. Ep. 39.  
Vide Ignat. ad  
Magenf.  
(a) Quod Aaron  
& filii ejus  
hos Episcopos  
& Presbyteros  
esse noverimus.  
Hier. Ep. 2. ad  
Nejotianum.  
(b) Ila est ut in  
Episcopis omni-  
um in Presby-  
teris Apostolos  
recognoscas  
Auctor opus.  
de 7. ordinis.  
Eccl. inter opera  
Hieron.  
(c) Ignat. Ep.  
ad Tra.  
(d) N. fit l. 4.  
cap. 4. Sect. 2.  
ecclite

ecute in proposing matters unto the Senate, in asking their opinions, in directing them by advise, admonition, exhortation, in guiding actions by their Authority, and in seeing that performed which was with common consent agreed on, the like charge had the Bishop in the assembly of other Ministers. This much Calvin being forced by the evidence of truth to grant, doth yet deny the Bishops to have been so in Authority at the first as to bear rule over other Ministers, Wherein what rule he doth mean I know not. But if the Bishops were so far in dignity, above other Ministers as the Consuls of Rome, for their year above other Senators, it is as much as we require. And undoubtedly if as the Consul of Rome, so the Bishops in the Church of Christ had such authority, as both to direct other Ministers, and to see that every of them should observe that which their common consent had agreed on, how this could be done by the Bishop not bearing rule over them, for mine own part I must acknowledge that my poor conceit is not able to comprehend. One objection there is of some force to make against that which we have hitherto endeavoured to prove, if they mistake it not who alledge it. St. *Jerom* comparing other Presbyters with him, unto whom the name of Bishop was then appropriate, asketh what a Bishop by virtue of his place and calling may do more then a Presbyter, except it be onely to Ordain? In like sort *Chrysostome* having moved a question, wherefore St. *Paul* should give *Timothy* precept concerning the quality of Bishops, and descend from them to Deacons, omitting the Order of Presbyters between, he maketh thereunto this answer, *What things he spake concerning Bishops, the same are also meet for Presbyters, whom Bishops seem not to excell in any thing but onely in the power of Ordination.* Wherefore seeing this doth import no ruling superiority, it follows that Bishops were as then no rulers over that part of the Clergy of God. Whereunto we answer that both St. *Jerom* and St. *Chrysostom* had in those their speeches, an eye no farther then onely to that function, for which Presbyters and Bishops were consecrated unto God. Now we know that their Consecration had reference to nothing but onely that which they did by force and virtue of the power of order, wherein fith Bishops received their charge, onely by that one degree to speak of, more ample then Presbyters did theirs, it might Le well enough said that Presbyters were that way authorized to do, in a manner even as much as Bishops could do, if we consider what each of them did by virtue of solemn consecration; for as concerning power of regiment and jurisdiction, is was a thing withal added unto Bishops for the necessary use of such certain persons and people, as should be thereunto subject in those particular Churches whereof they were Bishops, and belonged to them onely, as Bishops of such or such a Church, whereas the other kind of power had relation indefinitely unto any of the whole society of Christian men, on whom they should chance to exercise the same, and belonged to them absolutely, as they were Bishops, wheresoever they lived, St. *Jeroms* conclusion therefore is, that seeing in the one kind of power, there is no greater difference between a Presbyter and a Bishop, Bishops should not be because of their preeminence in the other, too much lift up themselves, above the Presbyters under them. St. *Chrysostomes* collection, that whereas the Apostle doth set down the qualities, whereof regard should be had in the Consecration of Bishops, there was no need to make a several discourse how Presbyters ought to be qualified when they are Ordained, because there being so little difference in the functions, whereunto the one and the other receive Ordination, the same precepts might well serve for both, at least-wise by the vertues required in the greater, what should need in the less might be easily understood. As for the difference of jurisdiction, the truth is the Apostles yet living, and themselves where they were resident, exercising the jurisdiction in their own persons, it was not everywhere established in Bishops. When the Apostles prescribed those laws; and when *Chrysostom* thus spake concerning them, it was not by him at all respected, but his eye was the same way with *Jeroms*, his cogitation was wholly fixed on that power which by Consecration is given to Bishops, more then to Presbyters, and not on that which they have over Presbyters by force of their particular accessory jurisdiction. Wherein if any man suppose that *Jerom* and *Chrysostom* knew no difference at all between a Presbyter and a Bishop, let him weigh but one or two of their sentences. The pride of insolent Bishops, hath not a sharper enemy then *Jerom*, for which cause he taketh often occasions most severely to inveigh against them, sometimes for \*shewing disdain and contempt of the Clergy under

*Hieron. Epist. ad  
Eugr. 85.*

*Chrysost. hom. 10  
in 1 Tim. 3.*

\*Velut in al qua  
suis non fecula  
constituit vix  
dignatur vid re  
moniales & allo  
qui conseruat  
suos. in 4 cap.  
Epist. ad Gal.

under them; sometime for not (b) suffering themselves to be told of their fautes, and admonished of their duty by inferiours; sometime for not (c) admitting their Presbyters to teach, if so be them selves were in presence; sometimes for not vouchsafing to use any conference with them, or to take any counsel of them. Howbeit never doth he in such wise bend himself against their disorders, as to deny their Rule and Authority over Presbyters: Of Vigilantius being a Presbyter he thus writeth (d) *Miror sanctum Episcopum in cuius parochia Presbyter esse dicitur, acquiescere furori eius & non virga Apostolica virgaq; ferrea infringere vas inutile. I marvel that the holy Bishop under whom Vigilantius is said to be a Presbyter, doth yield to his fury, and not break that unprofitable vessel with his Apostolick and iron rod. With this agreeth most fitly the grave advice he giveth to Nepotian, Be thou subiect unto thy Bishop, and receive him as the father of thy soul. This also I say that Bishops should know themselves to be Priests and not (d) Lords, that they ought to honor the Clergie as becometh the Clergie to be honoured, to the end their Clergie may yield them the honour which as Bishops they ought to have: Thus of the Orator Domitius is famous, Wherefore should I esteem of thee as of a Prince, when thou makst not of me that reckoning which should in reason be made of a Senator? Let us know the Bishop and his Presbyter, to be the same which Aaron sometimes and his Sons were. Finally writing against the Heretiques which were named Luciferians, The very safety of the Church, saith he, dependeth on the dignity of the chief Priest, to whom unless men grant an exceeding and an eminent power, there will grow in Churches even as many Schisms as there are persons which have authority.*

Touching Chrysostom, to shew that by him there was also acknowledged a ruling superiority of Bishops over Presbyters, both the usual, and in no respect unlawful: what need we allege his words and sentences, when the history of his own Episcopall actions in that very kind, is till this day extant for all men to read that will? For St. Chrysostom of a Presbyter in Antioch, grew to be afterwards Bishop of Constantinople, and in process of time when the Emperors heavy displeasure had through the practice of a powerful faction against him effected his banishment: Innocent the Bishop of Rome understanding thereof wrote his Letters unto the Clergie of that Church, *That no successor ought to be chosen in Chrysostoms room, Nec ejus clorum alii parere pontifici, nec hic Clergie O B E T any other Bishop then him. A fond kind of speech if so be there had been as then in Bishops no ruling superiority over Presbyters: When two of Chrysostoms Presbyters had joyned themselves to the faction of his mortal enemy Theophilus, Patriarch in the Church of Alexandria; the same Theophilus and other Bishops which were of his Conventicle, having sent those two amongst others to cite Chrysostom their lawful Bishop, and to bring him into publique judgement, he taketh against this onething special exception, as being contrary to all order, That those Presbyters should come as Messengers, and call him to judgement who were a part of that Clergie whereof himself was Ruler and Judge. So that Bishops to have had in those times a ruling superiority over Presbyters, neither could Jerom nor Chrysostom be ignorant; and therefore hereupon it were superfluous that we should any longer stand.*

VII. Touching the next point, How Bishops together with Presbyters have used to govern the Churches which were under them: It is by Zinarius somewhat plainly and at large declared, that the Bishop had his seat on high in the Church above the residue which were present; that a number of Presbyters did always there assist him; and that in the oversight of the people those Presbyters were (b) after a sort the Bishops Coadjutors. The Bishops and Presbyters, who, together with him, governed the Church are for the most part by Ignatius joyntly mentioned. In the Epistle to them of Tralles, he saith of Presbyters that they are *episcopi & coadjutores & consiliores & amatores & assistants of the Bishop, and concludeth in the end, He that should disobey these were a plain Atheist, and an irreligious person, and one that did set Christ himself and his own Ordinances at naught.* Which order making Presbyters or Priests

\* C

After what sort Bishops together with Presbyters have used to govern the Churches which were under them. *Utrum episcopi cum presbyteris in ecclesia sederent, ut in Can. Apost. 52.*

(b) *Nemo potentibus Episcopis audet contradicere: Nemo audet accusare majorem propterea quasi amici & beati & in preceptis Domini ambulantem augere vicem peccatis. Difficilis est accusatio in presb. m. S. enim per amicitiam non creditur, & si convellitur facit non puniatur. Lucap. 5. & ceteris.*

(c) *Vessima causa iudicis est in quibusdam ecclesiis tace & Presbyteros & praelatos Episcopis non loqui; quasi aut invident aut non digne audire. Ep. ad Nepotian.*

d Ep. 54. ad Nepotian

e Hieron. ad Nepot.

f No Bishop may be a Lord in reference unto the Presbyters which are under him, if we take that name in the worse part, as I come here doth. For a Bishop is to rule his Presbyters, not as Lords do their slaves, but as Fathers do their children.

in vita Chrysost.

g Pollad. in vita Chrysostom.



*Cum epiſcopo  
presbyteri ſa-  
ce dotali honore  
conjuſſi, ep. 28  
Ego eſſe conſeſ-  
ſi, epiſcopi non ſi-  
m, ad ſide-  
bunt, ep. 37.*

*Cyp. ep. 93.*

*Cyp. ep. 58.*

\* Such a one  
was that Pe-  
ter whom  
Caſſiodorus writ-  
ting the life  
of Cyprianus  
d ſtill the  
Archpreſby-  
ter of the  
Church of  
Alexandria  
under Tere-  
ſtina at that  
time Biſhop.

the Biſhops Aſſiſtants doth not import that they were of equal authority with him, but rather ſo adjoynd that they alſo were ſubject, as hath been proved. In the Writings of St. Cyprian nothing is more uſual then to make mention of the Colledge of Presbyters ſubject unto the Biſhop, although in handling the common affairs of the Church they aſſiſted him. But of all other places which open the ancient order of Episcopall Presbyters the moſt clear is that Epistle of Cyprian unto Cornelius, concerning certain Novatian Heretiques received again upon their conversion into the unity of the Church: *After that Urbanus and Sidonius Confessors had come and ſignified unto our Presbyters that Maximus a Confessor and Presbyter, did together with them deſire to return into the Church, it ſeemed meet to hear from their own mouths and confeſſions that which by meſſage they had delivered. When they were come, and had been called to account by the Presbyters touching thoſe things they had committed; their answer was, That they had been deceived, and diſrequeſt that ſuch things as there they were charged with might be forgotten. It being brought unto me what was done, I took order that the Presbytery might be aſſembled. There were alſo preſent five Biſhops, that upon ſealed advice it might be, with conſent of all, determined what ſhould be done about their perſons.* Thus ſaith St. Cyprian. Wherein it may be peradventure demanded, Whether he and other Biſhops did thus proceed with advice of their Presbyters in all ſuch publique affairs of the Church, as being thereunto bound by Eccleſiaſtical Canons; or elſe that they voluntarily ſo did, becauſe they judged it in diſcretion as then moſt convenient. Surely the words of Cyprian are plain, that of his own accord he choſe this way of proceeding. *Unto that, ſaith he, which Donatus, and Forminatus, and Novatus, and Gordius, our Compresbyters have written, I could by my ſelf alone make no answer, forasmuch as at the very firſt entring into my Biſhoprick I reſolutely determined not to do any thing of mine own private judgement, without your counſel and the peoples conſent.* The reaſon whereof he ſendeth in the ſame Epistle ſaying, *When by the grace of God my ſelf ſhall come unto you (for St. Cyprian was now in exile) of things which either have been, or muſt be done we will conſider, ſicut honor mutuus poſcit, as the law of courteſie which one doth owe to another of us, requirerh.* And at this very mark doth St. Jerom evermore aim intelling Biſhops that Presbyters were at the firſt their equals, that in ſome Churches for a long time no Biſhop was made but only ſuch as the Presbyters did chooſe out amongst themſelves, and therefore no cauſe why the Biſhop ſhould diſdain to conſult with them, and in weighty affairs of the Church to uſe their advice; ſometime to countenance their own actions, or to reſtrain the boldneſs of proud and insolent ſpirits, that which Biſhops had in themſelves ſufficient authority and power to have done, notwithstanding they would not do alone, but craved therein the aid and aſſiſtance of other Biſhops; as in the caſe of thoſe Novatian Hereticks, before alleaged, Cyprian himſelf did. And in Cyprian we finde of others the like practice. *Rogatian a Biſhop, having been uſed contumeliously by a Deacon of his own Church wrote thereof his complaint unto Cyprian and other Biſhops. In which caſe their answer was, That although in his own cauſe, he did of humility rather ſhew his grievance, then himſelf take revenge, which by the vigor of his Apoſtolical Office, and the authority of his Chair he might have preſently done, without any further delay: Yet if the party ſhould do again as before, their judgements were, Fugaris circa eum poteſtate honoris tui, & cum vel depnas vel abſtineas: Uſe on him that power which the honour of thy place giveth thee, either to depoſe him or exclude him from acceſs unto holy things. The Biſhop for his aſſiſtance and eaſe had under him to guide and direct, Deacons in their charge his Archdeacon ſo termed in reſpect of care over Deacons, albeit himſelf were not Deacon but Presbyter. For the guidance of Presbyters in their function the Biſhop had likewiſe under him one of the ſelf ſame order with them, but above them in authority, one whom the ancient termed uſually an Arch-Presbyter, we at this day name him Dean. For moſt certain truth it is that Churches Cathedral, and the Biſhops of them are as glaſſes wherein the face and very countenance of Apoſtolical antiquity remaineth even as yet to be ſeen, notwithstanding the alterations which tract of time and the courſe of the world hath brought. For defence and maintenance of them we are moſt earneſtly bound to ſtrive, even as the Jews were for their Temple, and the High-Prieſt of God therein; The overthrow and ruine of the one, if ever the ſacrilegious avarice of Atheiſts ſhould prevail ſo far, which God of his infinite*

infinite mercy forbid, ought no otherwise to move us, then the people of God were moved, when having beheld the sack and combustion of his Sanctuary in most lamentable manner flaming before their eyes, they uttered from the bottom of their grieved spirits those voices of doleful supplication, *Exurge Domine & miserearis Sion, servi tui diligunt lapides ejus, pulveris ejus miserati sunt.*

How far the power of Bishops had reached, what number of persons was subject unto them at the first, and how large their territories were, it is not for the question we have in hand, a thing very greatly material to know: For if we prove that Bishops have lawfully of old ruled over other Ministers, it is enough, how soever those Ministers have been, how small soever the circuit of place which hath contained them. Yet hereof somewhat, to the end we may so far forth illustrate Church antiquities; a (a) law imperial there is,

VIII. How far the power which Bishops had did reach, what number of persons was subject unto them at the first, and how large their territories were, it is not for the question we have in hand, a thing very greatly material to know: For if we prove that Bishops have lawfully of old ruled over other Ministers, it is enough, how soever those Ministers have been, how small soever the circuit of place which hath contained them. Yet hereof somewhat, to the end we may so far forth illustrate Church antiquities; a (a) law imperial there is, which sheweth that there was great care had to provide for every Christian City a Bishop as neer as might be, and that each City had some territory belonging unto it, which territory was also under the Bishop of the same City; that because it was not universally thus, but in some Countries, one Bishop had subject unto him many Cities and their territories, the law which provided for establishment of the other orders, should not prejudice those Churches wherein this contrary custome had before prevailed. Unto the Bishop of every such City, not onely the Presbyters of the same City, but also of the territory thereunto belonging, were from the first beginning subject. For we must note that when as yet there were in Cities no parish Churches, but onely Colledges of Presbyters under their Bishops Regiment, yet smaller Congregations and Churches there were even then abroad, in which Churches there was but some one onely Presbyter to perform amongst them Divine duties. Towns and Villages abroad receiving the faith of Christ from Cities whereunto they were adjacent, did as spiritual and heavenly Colonies by their subjection, honour those ancient mother Churches, out of which they grew. And in the Christian Cities themselves, when the mighty increase of beleivers made it necessary to have them divided into certain severall companies, and over every of those companies one onely pastor to be appointed for the ministry of holy things: between the first, and the rest after it, there could not but be a natural inequality; even as between the Temple and Synagogues in Jerusalem. The Clergy of Cities were termed *Urbici*, to shew a difference between them and the Clergies of the Towns, of Villages, of Castles abroad. And how many soever these Parishes or Congregations were in number, which did depend on any one principal City Church, unto the Bishop of that one Church they and their severall sole Presbyters were all subject.

For if so be as some imagine every petty Congregation or Hamlet had had his own particular Bishop, what sence could there be in those words of Jerom, concerning Castles, Villages, and other places abroad, which having onely Presbyters, to teach them, and to minister unto them the Sacraments, were resorted unto by Bishops for the Administration of that wherewith their Presbyters were not licensed to meddle. To note a difference of that one Church where the Bishop hath his seat, and the rest which depend upon it, that one hath usually been termed Cathedral, according to the same sence wherein Ignatius speaking of the Church of Antioch, termeth it his throne, and Cyprian making mention of Evarestus who had been Bishop, and was now deposed, termeth him *cathedra extorrem*, one that was thrust besides his chair. The Church where the Bishop is set with his Colledge of Presbyters about him, we call a Sea; the Local compass of his authority we term a Diocess. Unto a Bishop within the compass of his own both Sea and Diocess, it hath by right of his place evermore appertained\* to ordein Presbyters, to make Deacons, and with

*Antiqua & Primitiva Ecclesia Christiana sub Pontificatus & de quatuordecim legationibus constituta. Cons. Constant. c. 2. ubi per apostolica sedis auctoritatem expressum adnotatur. Sic. Lib. 5. cap. 8.*

How far the power of Bishops had reached, from the beginning in respect of territory or local compass

(a) L. 36. c. de Epis. ad cler. *Episcopus in suis limitibus regnat. Kai kai dia deias anagkai eis nomos eis apostolous oti eis idia diocesis eis ministerio & aucto i ipso alia diocesis, quatenus si inter eis anagkai Equestra i i regno. Kai kai oti. O kai diocesis aucto i i ministerio. Kai i Apollonio de Iomphie apud i diocesis eis Iomphias. Besides Cyprian ep. 5. Cum iussu idem per omnes provincias & per omnes singulas ordines sunt Episcopi.*

*Vbi ecclesiastici ordinis non est confusio, & officii & singulis sacerdos qui est ibi solus. Tit. 8. cap. ad cap. 11.*

*Cyp. Ep. 25.*

*Jerom. ad ver Lucifer.*

*Cyp. Ep. 49.*

*Con Ant. och Cap. 9.*

*Cons.*

judgement, to dispose of all things of weight. The Apostle *St. Paul* had Episcopal Authority, but so at large that we cannot assign unto him any one certain Diocese. His (a) positive orders and constitutions, Churches every where did obey. Yea, a charge and a case, saith he, I (b) have even of all Churches. The walks of *Titus* and *Timothy* was limited within the bounds of a narrow precinct, as for other Bishops, that which *Chrysostom* hath concerning them, if they be evil, could not possibly agree unto them, unless their Authority had reached farther then to some one only Congregation? The danger being so great as it is, to him that scandalizeth one soul, what shall he saith (c) *Chrysostom*, speaking of a Bishop, what shall he deserve, by whom so many souls, yea even whole Cities and peoples, men, women and children, citizens, peasants, inhabitants, both of his own City, and of other Towns, subject unto it are offended? A thing so unusual it was for a Bishop not to have ample jurisdiction, that *Theophilus*, patriarch of *Alexandria*, for making one a Bishop of a small Town, is noted as a proud despiser of the commendable orders of the Church with this censure, (d) such novelties *Theophilus* presumed every where to begin, taking upon him as it had been another *Moses*. Whereby is discovered also their error, who think that such as in Ecclesiastical writings they find termed *Chorepiscopi* were the same in the Country which the Bishop was in the City: Whereas the old *Chorepiscopi* are they, that were appointed of the Bishops to have, as his vicegerent, some oversight of those Churches abroad, which were subject unto his See, in which Churches they had also power to make Sub-Deacons, Readers and such like petty Church Officers. With which power so stinted, they not contenting themselves, but adventuring at the length, to Ordain even Deacons and Presbyters also, as the Bishop himself did, their presumption herein was controlled and staid by the ancient edict of Councils. For example that of *Antioch*, it hath seemed good to the holy Synod that such in Towns and Countries as are called *Chorepiscopi* do know their limits and govern the Churches under them, contenting themselves with the charge thereof, and with Authority to make Readers, Sub-Deacons, Exorcists, and to be Leaders or Guiders of them, but not to meddle with the Ordination either of a Presbyter or of a Deacon, without the Bishop of that City, whereunto the *Chorepiscopus* and his territory also is subject. The same Synod appointeth likewise that those *Chorepiscopi* shal be made by none but the Bishop of that City, under which they are. Much might hereunto be added, if it were further needed to prove that the Local compass of a Bishops authority and power was never so straightly listed, as some men would have the World to imagine. But to go forward, Degrees there are and have been of old even amongst Bishops, also themselves: One sort of Bishops being superiors unto Presbyters onely, another sort having preeminence also above Bishops. It cometh here to be considered in what respect inequality of Bishops was thought at the first a thing expedient for the Church, and what odds there hath been between them, by how much the power of one hath been larger, higher, and greater then of another. Touching the causes for which it hath been esteemed meet that Bishops themselves should not every way be equals; they are the same for which the wisdom both of God and Man, hath evermore approved it as most requisite, that where many Governors must of necessity concur for the ordering of the same affairs, of what nature soever they be, one should have some kind of sway or stroke more then all the residue. For where number is, there must be order, or else of force there will be confusion. Let there be divers agents, of whom each hath his private inducements, with resolute purpose to follow them, (as each may have) unless in this case some had preeminence above the rest, a chance it were if ever any thing should be either begun, proceeded in, or brought unto any conclusion by them, deliberations and Councils would seldom go forward, their meetings would always be in danger, to break up with jars and contradictions. In an Army a number of Captains, all of equal power, without some higher to oversee them; what good would they do? In all Nations where a number are to draw any one way, there must be some one principal Mover. Let the practise of our very Adversaries themselves herein be considered, are the Presbyteries able to determine of Church affairs, unless their pastors do strike the chiefest stroke and have power above the rest? Can their Pastoral Synod do any thing, unless they have some President amongst them? In Synods they are forced to give one

1 Cor. 16.  
All have ordained in  
the Churches  
of Galatia,  
the same do  
ye also.  
1 Cor. 17. 28  
Chrysostom and  
12.

1 Pet. 1. 10  
Chrysostom.

Council. Antioch  
can. 10.



one Pastor preheminance and superiority above the rest. But they answer, That he who being a Pastor according to the order of their Discipline, is for the time some little deal mightier then his brethren, doth not continue so longer then only during the Synod. Which answer serveth not to help them out of the briars: for by their practice they confirm our principle touching the necessity of one mans preheminance wheresoever a concurrency of many is required unto any one solemn action: this nature teacheth, and this they cannot chule but acknowledge. As for the change of his person to whom they give this preheminance, if they think it expedient to make for every Synod a new Superior, there is no law of God which bindeth them so to, neither any that telleth them that they might suffer one and the same man being made President, even to continue so during life, and to have his preheminance unto his Successors after him, as by the ancient order of the Church, Archbishops, Presidents amongst Bishops have used to do. The ground therefore of their preheminance above Bishops is the necessity of often concurrency of many Bishops about the publick affairs of the Church, as consecrations of Bishops, consultations of remedy of general disorders, audience judicial, when the actions of any Bishop should be called in question, or appeals are made from his sentence by such as think themselves wronged. These and the like affairs usually requiring, that many Bishops should orderly assemble, begin, and conclude somewhat, it hath seemed, in the eyes of reverend Antiquity, a thing most requisite, that the Church should not only have Bishops, but even amongst Bishops some to be in Authority chiefest. Unto which purpose, the very state of the whole World, immediately before Christianity took place, doth seem by the special Providence of God to have been prepared: For we must know, that the Countreys where the Gospel was first planted, were for the most part subject to the Roman Empire. The Romans use was commonly, when by war they had subdued Forreign Nations, to make them Provinces, that is, to place over them Roman Governors, such as might order them according to the Laws and Customs of Rome. And to the end that all things might be the more easily and orderly done, a whole Countrey being divided into sundry parts, there was in each part some one City, wherinto they about did resort for justice. Every such part was termed a (a) Diocess. Howbeit, the name Diocess is sometime so generally taken, that it containeth not onely mo such parts of a Province, but even moe Provinces also then one; as the Diocess of Asia contained eight, the Diocess of Africa seven. Touching Diocesses according unto a stricter sense, whereby they are taken for part of a Province, the words of *Livy* do plainly shew, what order the Romans did observe in them. For at what time they had brought the Macedonians into subjection, the Roman Governor, by order from the Senate of Rome, gave charge that Macedonia should be divided into four Regions or Diocesses. *Capita regnum ubi concilia fierent prima sedis Amphipolim, secunda Thessalonica, tertia Pellam, quarta Pelagoniam fecit. Eo concilia sua cujusque regionis indei, pecuniam conferri, ibi Magistratus creari jussit.* This being before the days of the Emperors, by their appointment Thessalonica was afterwards the chiefest, and in it the highest Governor of Macedonia had his seat: Whereupon the other three Diocesses were in that respect inferior unto it, as Daughters unto a Mother City; for not unto every town of justice was that title given, but was peculiar unto those Cities wherein principal Courts were kept. Thus in Macedonia, the Mother City was Thessalonica: In Asia (b) Ephesus; in Africa Carthage; For so (c) Justinian in his time made it. The Governors, Officers and Inhabitants of these Mother Cities were termed for difference sake *Metropolitae*, that is to say; Mother-city-men; then which, nothing could possible have been devised more fit to suit with the nature of that form of spiritual Regiment under which afterward the Church should live. Wherefore if the Prophet saw cause to acknowledge unto the Lord that the light of his gracious providence did shine no where more apparently

a *Ex. lxxv. 17. 18. 19. Si quid habebis cum d. li. p. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.*

b *Ex. ad Att. lib. 1. ep. 17. Item 1. observ. D. deo. p. 1. 2. 3. 4. 5. 6. 7. 8. 9. 10. 11. 12. 13. 14. 15. 16. 17. 18. 19. 20. 21. 22. 23. 24. 25. 26. 27. 28. 29. 30. 31. 32. 33. 34. 35. 36. 37. 38. 39. 40. 41. 42. 43. 44. 45. 46. 47. 48. 49. 50. 51. 52. 53. 54. 55. 56. 57. 58. 59. 60. 61. 62. 63. 64. 65. 66. 67. 68. 69. 70. 71. 72. 73. 74. 75. 76. 77. 78. 79. 80. 81. 82. 83. 84. 85. 86. 87. 88. 89. 90. 91. 92. 93. 94. 95. 96. 97. 98. 99. 100.*



again renewed concerning *Constantinople*, and the reason thereof laid open in the Council of *Chalcedon*: At the length came that second of *Constantinople*, wherein were six hundred and thirty Bishops for a third conformation thereof. Laws imperial there are likewise extant to the same effect. Here with the Bishop of *Constantinople* being over much puffed up, not onely could not indure that *See* to be in estimation higher, whereunto his own had preeminence to be the next, but he challenged more then ever any Christian Bishop in the World before either had, or with reason could have. What he challenged, and was therein as then refused by the Bishop of *Rome*; the same the Bishop of *Rome* in process of time obtained for himself, and having gotten it by bad means, hath both up held and augmented it, and upholdeth it by acts and practices much worse. But Primates according to their first institution, were all in relation unto Archbishops, the some by prerogative, which Archbishops were being compared unto Bishops. Before the council of *Nice*, albeit there were both *Metropolitans* and *Primates*, yet could not this be a means forcible enough to procure the peace of the Church, but all things were wonderful tumultuous and troublesome, by reason of one special practice common unto the Heretiques of those times; which was, That when they had been condemned and cast out of the Church by the sentence of their own Bishops, they contrary to the ancient received orders of the Church, had a custome to wander up and down, and to insinuate themselves into favour where they were not known, imagining themselves to be safe enough, and not to be clean cut off from the body of the Church, if they could any where find a Bishop which was content to communicate with them; whereupon ensued, as in that case there needs must, every day quarrels and just unappeasable amongst Bishops. The *Nice* Council for redress hereof considered the bounds of every Archbishops Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, what they had been in former times, and accordingly appointed unto each grank part of the Christian World some one Primate, from whose judgement no man living within his territory might appeal, unless it were to a Council general of all Bishops. The drift and purpose of which order was, that neither any man oppress by his own particular Bishop might be destitute of a remedy through appeal unto the more indifferent sentence of some other ordinary judge, nor yet every man be left at such liberty as before, to thrust himself out of their hands, for whom it was most meet to have the hearing and determining of his cause. The evil, for remedy whereof this order was taken, remained at that present, especially the Church of *Alexandria* in *Egypt*, where *Arianisme* began. For which cause the state of that Church is in the *Nice* Canons, concerning this matter mentioned before the rest: The words of their sacred edict are these. Let those customs remain in force which have been of old, the customes of *Egypt* and *Libya*, and *Pentapolis*, by which customes the Bishop of *Alexandria* hath authority over all these, the rather for that this hath also been the use of the Bishop of *Rome*, yea the same hath been kept in *Antioch*, and in other Provinces. Now because the custome likewise had been that great honour should be done to the Bishop of *Edessa* or *Jerusalem*, wherefore least their decree concerning the Primate of *Antioch*, should in any while prejudice the dignity and honour of That See, speciall provision is made, that although it were inferior in degree, not onely unto *Antioch* the chief of the East, but even unto *Caserta* too, yet such preeminence it should retain as belonged to a Mother City, and enjoy whatsoever special prerogative or priviledge it had besides. Let men therefore hereby judge of what continuance this order which upholdeth degrees of Bishops must needs have been, when a general Council of three hundred and eighteen Bishops living themselves within three hundred years after Christ doth reverence the time for antiquities sake, as a thing which had been even then of old observed in the most renowned parts of the Christian World. Wherefore needles altogether are those vain and wanton demands; no mention of an Archbishop in *Theophilus* Bishop of *Antioch*? none in *Ignatius*? none in *Clement* of *Alexandria*? none in *Justin Martyr*, *Irenaeus*, *Tertullian*, *Cyprian*? none in all those old Historiographers, out of him in *Theophilus* Bishop of *Antioch*? none in *Clement* of *Alexandria*? none in *Ignatius*? none in *Justin Martyr*, *Irenaeus*, *Tertullian*, *Cyprian*? none in those old Historiographers, out of which a false story was it for his benefit and smallness that he could not be seen among the Bishops, Elders and Deacons, being the chief and principal of them all? Can the Cedar of Lebanon be hidden amongst the Box trees?

which



which *Eusebius* gathereth his story? none till the time of the Council of *Nice* three hundred and twenty years after *Christ*? As if the mention which is thereof made in that very Council, where so many Bishops acknowledge Archiepiscopal dignity even then ancient were not of far more weight and value then if every of those Fathers had written large discourses thereof. But what is it which they will blush

7. c. 1. 1. *ubi supra*. A Metropolitan Bishop was nothing else but a Bishop of that place which pleased the Emperor or Magistrate to make the chief of the Diocess or Shire, and as for this name it makes no more difference between Bishop and a Bishop, then when I say a Minister of *London* and a Minister of *Newington*.

at, who dare so confidently set it down, that in the Council of *Nice* some Bishops being termed Metropolitans; no more difference is thereby meant to have been between one Bishop and another, then is shewed between one Minister and another, when we say such a one is a Minister in the City of *London*, and such a one Minister in the town of *Newington*. So that to be termed a Metropolitan Bishop did in their conceit import no preeminence above other Bishops, then we mean that a Girdler hath over others of

the same trade, if we term him which doth inhabit some Mother-city for difference sake a Metropolitan Girdler. But the truth is too manifest to be so deluded; a Bishop at that time had power in his own Diocess over all other Ministers there, and a Metropolitan Bishop sundry preeminences above other Bishops, one of which preeminences was in the ordination of Bishops, to have *episcopi sui primatus*, the chief power of ordering all things done. Which preeminence that Council it self doth mention, as also a greater belonging unto the Patriarch or Primate of *Alexandria*, concerning whom it is there likewise said, that to him did belong *sedes, auctoritas and power over all Egypt, Pentapolis and Lybia*: within which compass sundry Metropolitan Seas, to have been there is no man ignorant, which in those antiquities have any knowledge. Certain prerogatives there are wherein Metropolitans excelled other Bishops, certain also wherein Primates excelled other Metropolitans, Archiepiscopal or Metropolitan prerogatives are those mentioned in old Imperial constitutions, (a) to convocate the holy Bishops under them within the compass of their own Provinces; when need required their meeting together for inquisition and redress of publick disorders; (b) to grant unto Bishops under them leave and faculty of absence from their own Diocess, when it seemed necessary that they should otherwise converse for some reasonable while; (c) to give notice unto Bishops under them of things commanded by supream Authority; (d) to have the hearing and first determining of such causes as any man had against a Bishop; (e) To receive the appeals of the inferior Clergy, in case they found themselves overborn by the Bishop their immediate Judge. And least happily it should be imagined that Canons Ecclesiastical we want to make the self same thing manifest: In the Council of *Antioch* it was thus decreed, (f) *The Bishops in every Province must know, that he which is Bishop in the Mother-city, hath not only charge of his own Parish or Diocess, but even of the whole Province also*. Again, *It hath seemed good that other Bishops without him should do nothing more then only that which concerneth each ones Parish and the places underneath it*. Further by the self same Council (g) all Councils provincial are reckoned void and frustrate, unless the Bishop of the mother City within that province, where such Councils should be, were present at them. So that the want of his presence, and in Canons for Church government, want of his approbation also, did disannul them. Not so the want of any other. Finally concerning elections of Bishops, the Council of *Nice* hath this general rule, that the chief ordering of all things here, is in every Province committed to the Metropolitan. Touching them, who amongst Metropolitans were also Primates, and had of sundry united Provinces, the chiefest Metropolitan See, of such that *Canon*, in the Council of *Carthage*, was eminent, whereby a Bishop is forbidden to go beyond Seas, without the licence of the highest Chair within the same Bishop's own Country; and of such which beareth the name of Apostolical, is that ancient Canon likewise, which chargeth the Bishops of each NATION to know him which is FIRST amongst them, and to esteem of him as an HEAD, and to do no extraordinary thing but with his leave. The chief Primates of the Christian World, were the Bishop of *Rome*, *Alexandria*, and *Antioch*. To whom the Bishop of *Constantinople* being afterwards added, *St. Chrysostom* the Bishop of that Sea, is in that respect said to have had the care and charge not only of the City of *Constantinople*, sed etiam totius *Thracia* quae sex praefaturis est divisa, & *Asia totius*

Con. Nic.  
c. 6. *ilud au-  
tem omni no-  
nifellum, quod  
fiquis obli-  
tropicam sen-  
tentiam salu-  
em. hinc mox  
na. 5. modum de-  
finitis & pili-  
esse non oportet*  
Can. 4.  
a Novel 113.  
can 10  
b Novel 113. c. 9  
c Novel 79. 1.  
d Novel 113.  
can. 1.  
e Novel. 5. 3.  
ca. 13.  
f Can. 9.

g Can. 16.

h Can. 4. a. 12.  
per 11. 11.  
11. 11. 11.

Can. 23.

Can. 34

called. in vita  
11. 11. 11.

qua ab undecim præsidibus regitur. The rest of the East was under Antioch, the South under Alexandria, and the West under Rome. Whereas therefore John the Bishop of Jerusalem being noted of Heresie, had written an Apology for himself unto the Bishop of Alexandria, named Theophilus; St. Jerom reproveth his breach of the order of the Church herein, saying, *Inqui regulas quas Ecclesiasticas, & Niceni concilii canonibus uteris, responde mihi, ad Alexandrinum Episcopum Palestina quid pertinet? Ni fallor hoc ibi decernitur ut Palæstina Metropolis Casarea sit, & totius Orientis Antiochia. Auscitur ad Casariensem Episcopum referre debueras, aut si procul expedirendum iudicium erat, Antiochiam potius littera dirigenda.* Thus much concerning that Local Compass which was antiently set out to Bishops; within the bounds and limits whereof we find that they did accordingly exercise that Episcopal Authority and power which they had over the Church of Christ.

IX. The first whom we read to have bent themselves against the Superiority of Bishops, were Arian and his Followers. Arian seeking to be made a Bishop, could not brook that Eusebius was thereunto preferred before him. Whereas therefore he saw himself unable to rise to that greatness which his ambitious pride did affect, his way of revenge was to try what wit being sharpened with envy and malice could do, in raising a new seditious opinion; that the Superiority which Bishops had, was a thing which they should not have; that a Bishop might not ordain, and that a Bishop ought not any way to be distinguished from a Presbyter: For so doth \*St. Augustine deliver the opinion of Arian: Epiphanius not so plainly nor so directly, but after a more Rhetorical sort. His speech was rather furious then convenient for man to use, *What is, saith he, a Bishop more then a Presbyter? The one doth differ from the other nothing. For their order is one, their honour one, one their dignity. A Bishop imposeth his hands, so doth a Presbyter. A Bishop Baptizeth, the like doth a Presbyter. The Bishop is a Minister of Divine service, a Presbyter is the same. The Bishop sitteth at Judge in a Throne, Even the Presbyter sitteth also. A Presbyter therefore doing thus far the self-same thing which a Bishop did, it was by Arian inferred that they ought not in any thing to differ. Are we to think Arian had wrong in being judged an Heretic for holding this opinion? Surely if heresie be an error, faintly fattered upon Scriptures, but indeed repugnant to the truth of the Word of God, and by the consent of the universal Church, in the councils, or in her contrary uniform practise throughout the whole World, declared to be such, and the opinion of Arian in this point be a plain error of that nature, there is no remedy, but Arian so Schismatically, and listly maintaining it, must even stand where Epiphanius and Augustine have placed him. An error repugnant unto the truth of the Word of God is held by them whosoever they be, that stand in defence of any conclusion drawn erroneously out of Scripture, and untruly thereon fathered. The opinion of Arian therefore being falsly collected out of Scripture, must needs be acknowledged an error repugnant unto the truth of the word of God. His opinion was that there ought not to be any difference between a Bishop and a Presbyter. His grounds and reasons for this opinion, were sentences of Scripture. Under pretence of which sentences, whereby it seemed that Bishops and Presbyters at the first did not differ, it was concluded by Arian that the Church did ill in permitting any difference to be made. The Answer which Epiphanius maketh unto some part of the proofes by Arian alledged, was not greatly studied or laboured, for through a contempt of so base an error, for this himself did perceive and profess, yeildeth he thereof expressly this reason, Men that have wit do evidently see that all this is meer foolishness. But how vain and ridiculous soever his opinion seemed unto wise men; with it Arian deceived many, for which cause, somewhat was convenient to be said against it. And in that very extemporal slightness which Epiphanius there useth, albeit the answer made to Arian be \* in part but raw, yet ought not the Apostle doth name sometime Presbyters and not Bishops, 1 Tim. 4. 14. Sometime Bishops and not Presbyters, Phil. 1. 1. because all Churches had not both, for want of able and sufficient men. In such Churches therefore as had but the one, the Apostle could not mention the other. Which answer is nothing to the latter place above mentioned: For that the Church of Bishops should have more Bishops then one, and want a few able men to be Presbyters under the regiment of one Bishop, how shall we think it probable or likely?*

In what respects Episcopal reglement hath bin gainfald of old by Arian. Aug. ad Arian. ad quod volit deus. Arianus. b. c. r. quodam sunt nominati qui quæm effect Presbyter docuisse ferat quod Episcopi non possent ordinare. Dic. has Episcopum a presbytero nulla ratione debere discerni. Aug. de her.

Ες τὴν μάλα ὡς ἰσχυροῦ. \* As in that he saith the

hereby the truth to finde any less favour then in other causes it doth, where we do not therefore judge Heresie to have the better, because now and then it alledge that for it self, which Defensors of Truth do not always so fully answer. Let it therefore suffice, that *Arius* did bring nothing unanswerable. The weak Solutions which the one doth give, are to us no prejudice against the cause, as long as the others oppositions are of no greater strength and validity. Did not *Arius*, trow you, deserve to be esteemed as a new *Apollis*, mighty and powerful in the Word, which could for maintenance of his cause, bring forth so plain Divine Authorities, to prove by the Apostles own Writings, that Bishops ought not in any thing to differ from other

1 Tim. 4.14. with the imposition of the Presbyters hands. Of which Presbyter *S. Paul* was chief. 1 Tim. 1. 6. And I think no man will deny that *S. Paul* had more then a simple Presbyters Authority.

Phil. 1. 1. To all the Saints at Philippi, with the Bishops and Deacons. For as yet in the Church of *Philippi*, there was no one which had Authority besides the Apostles, but their Presbyters or Bishops were all both in title and in power equal.

Presbyters? for example, where it is said that Presbyters made *Timothy* Bishop, is it not clear that a Bishop should not differ from a Presbyter, by having power of Ordination? again, if a Bishop might by order be distinguished from a Presbyter, would the Apostle have given, (a) as he doth unto Presbyters, the title of Bishops? These were the invincible demonstrations wherewith *Arius* did so fiercely assault Bishops. But the sentence of *Arius* perhaps was onely, that the difference between a Bishop and a Presbyter, hath grown by the order and custom of the Church, the Word of God not appointing that any such difference should be. Well, let *Arius* then finde the

favour to have his sentence so construed; yet his fault in condemning the order of the Church, his not submitting himself unto that order, the schism which he caused in the Church about it, who can excuse? No, the truth is, that these things did even necessarily ensue, by force of the very opinion which he and his followers did hold. His conclusion was, That there ought to be no difference between a Presbyter and a Bishop. His proofs, those Scripture sentences which make mention of Bishops and Presbyters, without any such distinction or difference. So that if between his conclusion and the proofs whereby he laboured to strengthen the same, there be any shew of coherence at all, we must of necessity confess, that when *Arius* did plead, There is by the Word of God no difference between a Presbyter and a Bishop, his meaning was not onely, that the Word of God it self appointeth not, but that it enforceth on us, the duty of not appointing nor allowing that any such difference should be made.

In what respect Episcopal Regiment is gained by the Authors of pretended Reformation at this day.

X. And of the self same minde are the Enemies of Government by Bishops, even at this present day. They hold as *Arius* did, that if Christ and his Apostles were obeyed, a Bishop should not be permitted to ordain; that between a Presbyter and a Bishop the Word of God alloweth not any inequality or difference to be made; that their Order, their Authority, their Power, ought to be one; that it is but by usurpation and corruption, that the one sort are suffered to have rule of the other, or to be any way Superior unto them. Which opinion having now so many Defensors, shall never be able while the World doth stand, to finde in some, believing antiquity, as much as one which hath given it countenance, or born any friendly affection towards it. Touching these men therefore, whose desire is to have all equal, three ways there are, whereby they usually oppugn the received Order of the Church of Christ. First, by disgracing the inequality of Pastors, as a new and meer Humane invention, a thing which was never drawn out of Scripture, where all Pastors are found (they say) to have one and the same power, both of Order and Jurisdiction. Secondly, by gathering together the differences between that power which we give to Bishops, and that which was given them of old in the Church: So that albeit even the ancient took more then was warrantable, yet so far they swerved not as ours have done. Thirdly, by endeavouring to prove, that the Scripture directly forbiddeth, and that the judgement of the wisest, the holiest, the best in all Ages, condemneth utterly the inequality which we allow.

XI. That



XI. That inequality of Pastors is a meer Humane invention, a thing not found in the Word of God, they prove thus :

1. All the places of Scripture where the word Bishop is used, or any other derived of that name, signifie an oversight in respect of some particular Congregation onely, and never in regard of Pastors committed unto his oversight. For which cause the names of Bishops, and Presbyters, or Pastoral Elders are used indifferently, to signifie one and the self same thing. Which so indifferent and common use of these words, for one and the self same Office, so constantly and perpetually in all places declareth, that the word Bishop in the Apostles Writing; importeth not a Pastor of higher Power and Authority over other Pastors.

2. All Pastors are called to their Office by the same means of proceeding; the Scripture maketh no difference in the manner of their Tryal, Election, Ordination, which proveth their Office and Power to be by Scripture all one.

3. The Apostles were all of equal power; and all Pastors do alike succeed the Apostles in their Ministry and Power, the Commission and Authority whereby they succeed, being in Scripture but one and the same that was committed to the Apostles; without any difference of committing to one Pastor more, or to another less.

4. The power of the Censures and Keys of the Church, and of Ordaining and ordering Ministers (in which two points especially this Superiority is challenged) is not committed to any one Pastor of the Church, more then to another; but the same is committed as a thing to be carried equally in the guidance of the Church. Whereby is appeareth, that Scripture maketh all Pastors, not onely in the Ministry of the Word and Sacraments, but also in all Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction and Authority equal.

5. The Council of Nice doth attribute this difference, not unto any Ordination of God, but to an ancient Custom used in former times, which judgement is also followed afterward by other Councils, Concil. Antioch. cap. 9.

6. Upon these premises, their summary collection and conclusion is, That the Ministry of the Gospel, and the functions thereof, ought to be from Heaven, and of God, Joh. 1. 23. that if they be of God, and from Heaven, then are they set down in the word of God; that if they be not in the Word of God (as by the promises it doth appear (they say) that our kind of Bishops are not) it followeth, they are invented by the brain of man, and are of the Earth, and that consequently they can do no good in the Church of Christ; but ha m.

from Heaven: From Heaven, I say, and Heavenly, because al though it be executed by Earthly men, and Ministers are chosen also by men like unto themselves: yet because it is done by the Institution of God, it may well be accounted to come from Heaven, and from God.

Our Answer hereunto is, first, That their proofs are unavailable to shew that Scripture affordeth no evidence for the inequality of Pastors. Secondly, That albeir the Scripture did no way insinuate the same to be Gods Ordinance, and the Apostles to have brought it in, albeir the Church were acknowledged by all men to have been the first beginner thereof, along time after the Apostles were gone, yet is not the Authority of Bishops hereby disannulled, it is not hereby proved unjust, or unprofitable for the Church:

1. That the Word of God doth acknowledge no inequality of power among Pastors of the Church, neither doth it appear by the signification of this word Bishop, nor by the indifferent use thereof. For concerning signification, first it is clearly untrue, that no other thing is thereby signified, but onely an oversight in respect of a particular Church and Congregation. For I beseech you of what Parits, or particular Congregation was Matthias Bishop? His Office Scripture doth term Episkopal: which being no other then was common unto all the Apostles of Christ; forasmuch as in that number there is not any to whom the oversight of many Pastors did not belong, by force and vertue of that Office; it followeth that the very word doth sometimes even in Scripture signifie an oversight, such as includeth charge over Pastors themselves. And if we look to the use of the word, being applied with reference unto some one Church, as Ephesus, Philippi, and such like, albeir the Guides of those Churches be interchangeably in Scripture termed sometime Bishops, some-

Their Arguments in disgrace of Rement by Bishops, as being a meer invention of man, and not found in scripture; Answered.

Tit. 1. 5.  
1 Tim. 3. 5.  
Phil. 1. 1.  
1 Pet. 5. 1. 2.

T. 6. 1. 2. p. 13.  
So that it appeareth that the Ministry of the Gospel, and the functions thereof, ought to be Earthly men, and by the Word and

Answer

Acts 1. 2. 5.

Revel. 2.

time Presbyters, to signifie men having oversight and charge, without relation at all unto other then the Christian Laity alone; yet this doth not hinder, but that Scripture may in some place have other names, whereby certain of those Presbyters or Bishops, are noted to have the oversight and charge of Pastors, as out of all peradventure they had, whom S. John doth intitle Angels.

2. As for those things which the Apostle hath set down concerning Tryal, Election, and Ordination of Pastors, that he maketh no difference in the manner of their calling, this also is but a silly argument to prove their Office and their Power equal by the Scripture. The form of admitting each sort unto their Offices, needed no particular instruction: There was no fear but that such matters of course would easily enough be observed. The Apostle therefore toucheth those things wherein Judgement, Wisdom and Conscience is required, he carefully admonisheth of what quality Ecclesiastical persons should be, that their dealing might not be scandalous in the Church. And forasmuch as those things are general, we see that of Deacons there are delivered in a manner the self same Precepts, which are given concerning Pastors, so far as concerneth their Tryal, Election and Ordination. Yet who doth hereby collect, that Scripture maketh Deacons and Pastors equal? If notwithstanding it be yet demanded, *wherefore be which teacheth what kind of persons Deacons and Presbyters should be, hath nothing in particular about the quality of chief Presbyters, whom we call Bishops?* I answer briefly, that there it was no fit place for any such discourse to be made, inasmuch as the Apostle wrote unto Timothy and Titus, who having by Commission Episcopal Authority, were to exercise the same in ordaining, not Bishops (the Apostles themselves yet living, and retaining that power in their own hands) but Presbyters, such as the Apostles at the first did create throughout all Churches. Bishops by subsequence (conely James at Jerusalem excepted) were not yet in being.

3. About equality amongst the Apostles, there is by us no Controversie moved. If in the rooms of the Apostles, which were of equal Authority, all Pastors do by Scripture succeed alike, where shall we finde a Commission in Scripture which they speak of, which appointed all in second in the self same equality of power, except that Commission which doth authorize to preach and baptize should be alledged, which maketh nothing to the purpose, for in such things all Pastors are still equal: We must I fear we, wait very long before any other will be shewed. For howsoever the Apostles were equals amongst themselves, all other Pastors were not equals with the Apostles while they lived, neither are they any where appointed to be afterward each others equal. Apostles had, as we know, authority over all such as were no Apostles, by force of which their Authority, they might both command and judge. It was for the singular good and benefit of those Disciples whom Christ left behinde him, and of the Pastors which were afterwards chosen: For the great good, I say, of all sorts, that the Apostles were in power above them. Every day brought forth somewhat wherein they saw by experience, how much it stood them in stead to be under controulment of those Superiors and higher Governors of Gods House. Was it a thing so behoveful that Pastors should be subject unto Pastors in the Apostles own times? and is there any commandment that this subjection should cease with them? and that the Pastors of the succeeding ages should be all equals? No, no, this strange and absurd conceit of equality amongst Pastors (the mother of schism, and of confusion) is but a dream newly brought forth, and seen never in the Church before.

4. Power of Censure and Ordination appeareth even by Scripture marvellous probable, to have been derived from Christ to his Church, without this surmised equality in them, to whom he hath committed the same. For I would know whether Timothy and Titus were commanded by S. Paul to do any thing, more then Christ hath authorized Pastors to do? And to the one it is Scripture which saith, *Against a Presbyter receive THOU no accusation, saving under two or three witnesses:* Scripture which likewise hath said to the other, *For this very cause left I THEE IN CRETE, that THOU shouldst rebuke the thing that remain, and thou shalt Q. & D. A. I. N. Presbyters in every City, as I appointed THEE.* In the former place the power of Censure is spoken of, and the power of Ordination in the latter. Will they say that every Pastor there was equal to Timothy, and Titus in these things? If they do

1 Tim. 5. 19.

Tit. 1. 5.

do, the Apostle himself is against it, who saith that of their two very persons he had made choice, and appointed in these places them, for performance of these duties; whereas if the same had belonged unto others, no duty then to them, and not principally unto them above others, it had been fit for the Apostle accordingly to have directed his Letters concerning these things in general unto them all which had equal interest in them; even as it had been likewise fit to have written those Epistles in St. *James* Revelation, unto whole Ecclesiastical Senates, rather than only unto the Angels of each Church, had not some one been above, the rest in Authority to order the affairs of the Church. Scripture therefore doth most probably rather for the inequality of Pastors, even in all Ecclesiastical affairs, and by very express mention as well in Censures as Ordinations.

5. In the *Nice* Council there are confirmed certain prerogatives and dignities belonging unto Primates or Archbishops, and of them it is said that the ancient custom of the Church, had been to give them such prominence, but no syllable whereby any man should conjecture that those fathers did not honour the superiority which Bishops had over other Pastors, only upon ancient customs, and not as a true Apostolical heavenly and divine ordinance.

6. Now although we should leave the general received persuasion held from the first beginning, that the Apostles themselves left Bishops vested with power above other Pastors, although I say, we should give over this opinion, and embrace that other conjecture which so many have thought good to follow, and which my self did sometimes judge a great deal more probable than now I do, merely that after the Apostles were deceased, Churches did agree amongst themselves for preservation of peace and order, to make one Presbyter in each City chief over the rest, and to translate into him that power, by force and virtue whereof the Apostles while they were alive, did preserve and uphold order in the Church; exercising spiritual jurisdiction, partly by themselves and partly by Evangelists, because they could not always every where themselves be present: This order taken by the Church it self (for so let us suppose that the Apostles did neither by word nor deed appoint it) were notwithstanding more warrantable than that it should give place and be abrogated, because the Ministry of the Gospel and the functions thereof ought to be from Heaven: There came chief Priests and Elders unto our Saviour Christ as he was teaching in the Temple, and the Question which they moved unto him was this, *By what authority dost thou these things, and who give thee this authority?* their question he repelled with a Counterdemand, *The Baptism of John whence was it, from Heaven or of men?* Hereat they paused, secretly disputing within themselves, *If we shall say from Heaven, he will ask, wherefore did ye not then believe him? And if we say of men, we fear the people, for all hold John a Prophet.* What is it now which hereupon these men would infer? That all functions Ecclesiastical, ought in such sort to be from Heaven, as the function of John was! No such matter here contained. Nay doth not the contrary rather appear most plainly by that which is here set down? For when our Saviour doth ask concerning the Baptism that it is to say the whole spiritual function of John, whether it were from Heaven or of men; he giveth clear to understand that men give Authority unto some, and some God himself from Heaven doth Authorize. Nor is it said, or in any sort signified that none have lawful authority which have it not in such manner as John, from Heaven. Again when the Priests and Elders were loth to say that John had his calling from men, the reason was not because they thought that so John should not have had any good or lawful calling, but because they saw that by this means they should somewhat embase the calling of John, whom all men knew to have been sent from God, according to the manner of Prophets, by a meer celestial vocation. So that out of the evidence here allowed, these things we may directly conclude, first that whoso doth exercise any kind of function in the Church, he cannot lawfully so do except authority be given him; Secondly that if authority be not given him from men, as the Authority of teaching was given unto *Scribes* and *Pharisees*, it must be given him from Heaven, as Authority was given unto Christ, Elias, John Baptist and the Prophets. For these two onely ways there are to have Authority. But a strange conclusion it is, God himself did from Heaven authorize John to bear witness of the light, to prepare a way for the promised Messiah, to publish the nearness of the

• They of  
Walden, &c.  
Syl. b. p. 200.  
Marshall, De-  
sen. par. Niel.  
Thom. Wald. C.  
1. La. ca. 60.  
Calvin, Comment  
in 1. ad Tit.  
Bullinger;  
Deed. 1. Ser. 3.  
Tack, Defens.  
apud par. 2. Ca.  
9. Di. 1. Falk.  
Ans. to the Test.  
Tit. 1. 5.  
Ioh. 1. 15.  
Mat. 11. 13.



the Kingdom of God, to Preach repentance and to baptize (for by this part which was in the function of John most noted, all the rest are together signified). Therefore the Church of God hath no power upon new occurrences to appoint, to ordein an Ecclesiastical function, as Moses did upon Jethroes advice devise a civil. All things we grant which are in the Church ought to be of God. But for as much as they may betwo ways accompted such, one, if they be of his own institution, and not of ours, another if they be of ours, and yet with his approbation, this latter way there is no impediment but that the same thing which is of men, may be also justly and truly said to be of God, the same thing from heaven which is from earth. Of all good things God himself is Author and consequently an approver of them. The rule to discern when the actions of men are good when they are such as they ought to be, is more ample and large then the law which God hath set particular down in his holy Word, the Scripture is but a part of that rule as hath been heretofore at large declared. If therefore all things be of God which are well done, and if all things be well done, which are according unto the rule of well doing, and if the rule of well-doing be more ample then the Scripture, what necessity is there, that every thing which is of God, should be set down in holy Scripture? true it is in things of some one kind, true it is, that what we are now of necessity for ever bound to beleive or observe in the special mysteries of salvation, Scripture must needs give notice of it unto the World; yet true it cannot be, touching all things that are of God. Sufficient it is for the proof of lawfulness in any thing done, if we can shew that God approveth it. And of his approbation, the evidience is sufficient if either himself have by revelation in his word warranted it, or we by some discourse of reason, find it good of it self, and unrepugnant unto any of his revealed laws and ordinances. Wherefore injurious we are unto God, the Author and giver of humane capacity, judgement and wit, when because of somethings wherein he precisely forbiddeth men to use their own inventions, we take occasion to disauthorize and disgrace the works which he doth produce by the hand, either of nature or of grace in them. We offer contumely, even unto him, when we scornfully reject what we list without any other exception then this, *the brain of man hath devised it*. Whether we look into the Church or Common-weal, as well in the one as in the other, both the Ordination of Officers, and the very institution of their Offices may be truly derived from God, and approved of him, although they be not always of him in such sort as those things are which are in Scripture. Doth not the Apostle term the law of nature, even as the Evangelist doth the law of Scripture, *Lex ipsa est Deus* Gods own righteous ordinance? The law of nature then being his law, that must needs be of him which it hath directed men unto. Great oada, I grant, there is between things devised by men, although agreeable with the law of nature, and things in Scripture set down by the finger of the holy Ghost. Howbeit the dignity of these is no hinderance, but that those be also reverently accompted of in their place. Thus much they very well saw, who although not living themselves under this kind of Church Polity, yet being through some experience more moderate, grave and circumspect in their judgement, have given hereof their sounder and better advised sentence. That which the holy fathers (saith Zanchius) have by common consent without contradiction of Scripture received, for my part I neither will nor dare with good conscience disallow. And what more certain then that the ordering of Ecclesiastical persons, one in authority above another, was received into the Church by the common consent of the Christian World. What am I that I should take upon me to control the whole Church of Christ in that which is so well known to have been lawfully, religiously and to notable purpose instituted? Calvin making mention even of Primates that have authority above Bishops, *It was*, saith he, *the institution of the ancient Church, so the end that the Bishops might by this bond of concord, continue the sister linked amongst themselves*. And least any man should think that as well he might allow the papacy it self to prevent this he addeth, *Aliud est moderatum gerere & hominem quam totum terrarum orbem immergi imperio compelli*. These things standing as they do, we may conclude that albeit the Offices which Bishops execute, had been committed unto them onely by the Church, and that the superiority which they have over other Pastors, were not first by Christ himself given to the Apostles, and from them descended to others, but afterwards in such consideration brought in and agreed upon as is pretended, yet could not this be a just or lawful exception against it.

XII. But

Lib. 1.

Rom. 1. 32.  
Lk. 1. 6.

Confes. 169.

Epist. 190.



Churches; and that each of them did guide some Parish without any other Pastors under him. S. Cyprian's own Person may serve for a manifest disproof hereof. Pontius being Deacon under Cyprian noteth, that his admirable vertues caused him to be Bishop with the soonest, which advancement therefore himself endeavoured for a while to avoid. It seemed in his own eyes too soon for him to take the title of so great Honor, in regard whereof a Bishop is termed *Pontifex*, *Sacerdos*, *Admissus Dei*. Yet such was his quality, that whereas others did hardly perform that duty, whereunto the Discipline of their Order, together with the Religion of the Oath they took at their entrance into the Office even constrained them; him the Chair did not make, but receive such a one, as removed that a Bishop should be. But soon after followed that prescription, whereby being driven into exile, and continuing in that estate for the space of some two years, he ceased not by Letters to deal with his Clergy, and to direct them about the publique affairs of the Church. They unto whom those

*Et si fratres pro dilectione sua cupidi sunt ad  
conveniens & visitandum ad se ipsos venire,  
quos illustravit jam gloriosus in christo dominus, dis-  
tinctio, tamen caute hoc non gloriatur, sed ut  
multis donem deus, ut in pace possint esse. In-  
ne ex hoc ipso involvatur cunctis etur, & ipsi non  
aditus denegetur, & dum inaccessibiles multi in  
u hominibus, totum perditur. An si ergo ex  
p aritate ut cum temperantia, ut qui in  
posuit. Ita ut Porphyrius quodam modo ad  
confessoris officium & singulis in regno, quod  
per hoc a se invicem quodammodo separantur,  
& visitatione, et visitatione in manu, et visitatione,  
Ep. 1.*

Epistles were written, he commonly entitleth the Presbyters and Deacons of that Church. If any man doubt, whether those Presbyters of Carthage were Ministers of the Word and Sacraments or no, let him consider but that one only place of Cyprian, where he giveth them his careful advice, how to deal with circumspection in the perilous times of the Church, that neither they which were for the truths sake in prisoned, might want those Ghostly comforts which they ought to have, nor the Church by mistrusting the same unto them, incur unnecessary danger and peril. In which Epistle it doth expressly appear, that the Presbyters of whom he speaketh, did offer, that is to say, administer the Eucharist, and that many there were of them in the Church of Carthage, so as they might have every day change for performance of that duty. Nor will any man of sound judgement I think deny, that Cyprian was in Authority and Power above the Clergy of that Church, above those Presbyters unto whom he gave direction. It is apparently therefore untrue, that in Cyprian's time Ministers of the Word and Sacraments were all equal, and that no one of them had either title more excellent then the rest, or Authority and Government over the rest. Cyprian being Bishop of Carthage, was clearly Superior unto all other Ministers there: Yea, Cyprian was, by reason of the Dignity of his See an Archbishop, and so consequently Superior unto Bishops. Bishops we say there have been always, even as long as the Church of Christ is felt hath been. The Apostles who planted it, did themselves rule as Bishops over it, neither could they so well have kept things in order during their own times, but that Episcopal Authority was given them from above, to exercise far and wide over all other Guides and Pastors of Gods Church. The Church indeed for a time continued without Bishops by restraint, everywhere established in Christian Cities. But shall we thereby conclude, that the Church hath no use of them, that without them it may stand and flourish? No, the cause wherefore they were so soon universally appointed was, for that it plainly appeared, that without them the Church could not have continued long. It was by the special Providence of God no doubt so disposed, that the evil whereof this did serve for remedy, might first be felt, and so the reverend Authority of Bishops be made by so much the more effectual, when our general experience had taught men what it was for Churches to want them. Good Laws are never esteemed so good, nor acknowledged so necessary, as when precedent crimes are as seeds out of which they grow. Episcopal Authority was even in a manner sanctified unto the Church of Christ, by that little better experience which it first had of the pestilent evil of Schisms. Again, when this very thing was proposed as a remedy, yet a more suspicious and fearful acceptance it must needs have found, if the self-same provident Wisdom of Almighty God, had not also given beforehand sufficient tryal thereof in the Regiment of Jerusalem, a Mother Church, which having received the same order even at the first, was by it most peaceably governed, when other Churches without it had trouble. So that by all means, the necessary use of Episcopal Government is confirmed, yea strengthened it is and ratified, even by the not establishment thereof in all Churches every where



at the first. 2. When they further dispute, *That if any such thing were needful, Christ would in Scripture have set down particular Statutes and Laws, appointing that Bishops should be made, and prescribing in what order, even as the Law doth for all kinde of Officers which were needful in the Jewish Regiment*; might not a man that would bend his wit to maintain the fury of the *Petersonian* Hereticks, in pulling down Oratories, use the self same argument; with as much countenance of reason? *If it were needful that we should assemble our selves in Churches, would that God which taught the Jews so exactly the frame of their sumptuous Temple, leave us no particular instructions in writing, no not so much as which way to lay any one stone?* Surely such kinde of Argumentation doth not so strengthen the sinews of their cause, as weaken the credit of their judgement which are led therewith. 3. And whereas thirdly, in disproof that use which Episcopall Authority hath in judgement of spiritual causes, they bring forth the verdict of *Cyprian*, who saith, *That equity requireth every mans cause to be heard, where the fault he was charged with was committed, so far as that they may have both accusers and witnesses in the cause*: This Argument grounding it self on principles no less true in Civil, then in Ecclesiastical causes, unless it be qualified with some exceptions or limitations, overturneth the highest Tribunal Seats both in Church and Commonwealth, it taketh utterly away all appeal, it secretly condemneth even the blessed Apostle himself, as having transgressed the Law of Equity, by his appeal from the Court of *Judea*, unto those higher which were in *Rome*. The generality of such kinde of axiomes deceiveth, unless it be construed with such cautions as the matter whereunto they are applicable doth require. An usual and ordinary transportation of causes out of *Africa* into *Italy*, out of one Kingdom into another, as discontented persons list, which was the thing that *Cyprian* disalloweth, may be unequal and unmeet, and yet not therefore a thing unnecessary to have the Courts erected in higher places, and judgement committed unto greater persons, to whom the meaner may bring their causes either by way of appeal, or otherwise, to be determined according to the order of Justice; which hath been always observed every where in Civil States, and is no less requisite also for the State of the Church of God. The Reasons which teach it to be expedient for the one, will shew it to be for the other, at leastwise not unnecessary. Inequality of Pastors is an Ordinance both Divine and profitable: Their exceptions against it in these two respects we have shewed to be altogether causeless, unreasonable, and unjust.

XIV. The next thing which they upbraid us with, is the difference between that inequality of Pastors which hath been of old, and which now is: For at length they grant, *That the superiority of Bishops and of Archbishops is somewhat ancient, but no such kind of Superiority as ours have*. By the Laws of our Discipline a Bishop may ordain without asking the peoples consent, a Bishop may excommunicate and release a Bishop may imprison, a Bishop may bear civil office in the Realm, a Bishop may be a Counsellor of State, these things, ancient Bishops neither did nor might do. Be it granted that ordinarily neither in elections nor deprivations, neither in excommunicating nor in releasing the excommunicate, in none of the weighty affairs of Government, Bishops of old were wont to do any thing without consultation with their Clergy, and consent of the people under them. Be it granted that the same Bishops did neither touch any man with corporal punishment, nor meddle with secular affairs and Offices, the whole Clergy of God being then tied by the strict and severe Canons of the Church, to use no other then ghostly power, to attend no other business then heavenly. *Tarquinius* was in the Roman Commonwealth deservedly hated, of whose unorderly proceedings the History speaketh thus, *Hic regum primum traditum a prioribus morem de omnibus Senatui consulendi solvis, domestica consilia rempub. administravit, bellum, pacem, fadera, societates, per se ipsum cum quibus voluit in iussu populi ac Senatus fecit dirimitque*. Against Bishops the like is objected, *That they are invaders of other mens right, and by intolerable usurpation take upon them to do that alone wherein ancient Laws have appointed that others, not they only, should bear sway*. Let the case of Bishops be put, not in such sort as it is, but even as their very heaviest adversaries would devise it: Suppose that Bishops at the first had encroached upon the Church, that by sleights and cunning practices they had appropriated ecclesiastical, as *Augustus* did, imperial power, that they had taken the advantage of mens inclinable affections, which did not suffer them for revenue sake

177. lib. 1. Ep. 3.

An Answer unto those things which are objected, concerning the difference between that power which Bishops now have, and that which ancient Bishops had more then other Presbyters.

liv. lib. 1.

to be suspected of ambition; that in the mean while their usurpation had gone forward by certain easie and unsensible degrees; that being not discerned in the growth, when it was thus far grown, as we now see it hath proceeded, the world at length perceiving there was just cause of complaint, but no place of remedy left, had assented unto it by a general secret agreement to bear it now as an helpless evil: all this supposed for certain and true, yet surely a thing of this nature, as for the Superiour to do that alone, unto which of right the consent of some other Inferiours should have been required by them: though it had an indirect entrance at the first, must needs through continuance of so many ages as this hath stood be made now a thing more natural to the Church, then that it should be oppress'd with the mention of contrary orders worn so many ages since quite and clean out of use. But with Bishops the case is otherwise; for in doing that by themselves, which others together with them have been accustomed to do, they do not any thing, but that whereunto they have been upon just occasions authorized by orderly means. All things natural, have in them naturally more or less the power of providing for their own safety: And as each particular man hath this power, so every politick Society of men must needs have the same, that thereby the whole may provide for the good of all parts therein. For other benefit we have not any, by forcing our selves into Politique Societies, saving onely that by this mean each part hath that relief, which the vertue of the whole is able to yield it. The Church therefore being a Politique Society or Body, cannot possibly want the power of providing for it self: And the chiefeit part of that power consisteth in the Authority of making Laws. Now forasmuch as Corporations are perpetual, the Laws of the ancients Church cannot choise but binde the latter, while they are in force: But we must note withal, that because the body of the Church continueth the same, it hath the same Authority still, and may abrogate old Laws, or make new, as need shall require. Wherefore vainly are the ancient Canons and Constitutions, objected as Laws, when once they are either let secretly to dye by disusage, or are openly abrogated by contrary laws. The Ancient had cause to do no otherwise then they did; and yet so strictly they judg'd not themselves in conscience bound to observe those Orders, but that in sundry cases they easily dispensed therewith, which I suppose they would never have done, had they esteem'd them as things whereunto everlasting, immutable, and undispensible observation did belong. The Bishop usually promoted none, which were not first allowed as fit, by conference had with the rest of his Clergy, and with the people: Notwithstanding, in the case of *Aurélius*, *S. Cyprian* did otherwise. In matters of deliberation and counsel, for disposing of that which belongeth generally to the whole body of the Church, or which being more particular, is nevertheless of so great consequence, that it needeth the force of many judgements conferred, in such things the common saying must necessarily take place, *An eye cannot see that which eyes can*. As for Clerical Ordinations, there are no such reasons alledged against the Order which is, but that it may be esteemed as good in every respect, as that which hath been; and in some considerations better, at leastwise (which is sufficient to our purpose) it may be held in the Church of Christ, without transgressing any Law, either ancient or late, Divine or Humane, which we ought to observe and keep. The form of making Ecclesiastical Officers, hath sundry parts, neither are they all of equal moment. When Deacons having not been before in the Church of Christ, the Apostles saw it needful to have such ordained, They first assemble the multitude, and shew them how needful it is that Deacons be made. Secondly, they name unto them what number they judge convenient, what quality the men must be of, and to the people they commit the care of finding such out. Thirdly, the people hereunto assenting, make their choice of *Stephen* and the rest, those chosen men they bring and present before the Apostles: Howbeit, all this doth not endue them with any Ecclesiastical power. But when so much was done, the Apostles finding no cause to take exception, did with prayer and imposition of hands, make them Deacons. This was it which gave them their very being, all other things besides were onely preparations unto this. Touching the form of making Presbyters, although it be not wholly of purpose any where set down in the Apostles Writings, yet sundry speeches there are, which insinuate the chiefeit things that belong unto that action: As when *Paul* and *Barnabas* are said

to have fasted, prayed, and made Presbyters: When *Timothy* is willed to lay hands suddenly on no man, for fear of participating with other mens sins. For this cause the Order of the Primitive Church was, between Choice and Ordination to have some space for such Probation and Tryal as the Apostle doth mention in *Deacons*, saying, *Let them first be proved, and then minister, if so be they be found blameless.* Acts 14. 23.  
1 Tim 5. 22.  
1 Tim. 3. 10.

*Alexander Severus* beholding in his time how careful the Church of Christ was, especially for this point; how after the choice of their Pastors, they used to publish the names of the parties chosen, and not to give them the final act of Approbation, till they saw whether any let or impediment would be alleaged; he gave Commandment, That the like should also be done in his own Imperial Elections, adding this as a Reason wherefore he so required, namely, *For that both Christians and Jews being so wary about the Ordination of their Priests, it seemed very unequal for him not to be in like sortwircumspelt, to whom he committed the Government of Provinces, containing power over mens both Estates and Lives.* This the Canon Law it self doth provide for, requiring before Ordination scrutiny: *Let them diligently be examined three days together before the Sabbath, and on the Sabbath let them be presented unto the Bishop.* And even this in effect also is the very use of the Church of England, at all Solemn Ordaining of Ministers; and if all Ordaining were Solemn, I must confess it were much the better. Lampyd. in A.  
lex. Sever.  
D. ca. quando  
Epi-Signat,

The pretended disorder of the Church of England is, That Bishops Ordain them, to whose Election the people give no voyces, and so the Bishops make them alone, that is to say, they give Ordination without popular Election going before, which ancient Bishops neither did nor might do. Now in very truth, if the multitude have hereunto a right, which right can never be translated from them for any cause, then is there no remedy but we must yield, that unto the lawful making of Ministers, the voyce of the people is required; and that according unto the Adverse Parties Assertion, Such as make Ministers without asking the peoples consent, do but exercise a certain Tyrannie. Ecclesi. p. 34.

At the first Erection of the Commonwealth of *Rome*, the people (for so it was then fittest) determined of all affairs: Afterwards this growing troublesome, their Senators did that for them, which themselves before had done: In the end all came to one mans hand, and the Emperor alone was instead of many Senators.

In these things the experience of time may breed both Civil and Ecclesiastical change from that which hath been before received, neither do latter things always violently exclude former, but the one growing less convenient then it hath been, giveth place to that which is now become more. That which was fit for the people themselves to do at the first, might afterwards be more convenient for them to do by some other: Which other is not thereby proved a Tyrant, because he alone doth that which a multitude were wont to do, unless by violence he take that Authority upon him, against the Order of Law, and without any publique appointment; as with us if any did, it should (I suppose) not long be safe for him so to do.

This Answer (I hope) will seem to be so much the more reasonable, in that themselves, who stand against us, have furnished us therewith. For whereas against the making of Ministers by Bishops alone, their use hath been to object, What sway the people did bear when *Stephen* and the rest were ordained Deacons: They begin to espy how their own Platform swerveth not a little from that example wherewith they controul the practise of others. For touching the form of the peoples concurrence in that action, they observe it not; no, they plainly profess that they are not in this point bound to be followers of the Apostles. The Apostles Ordained whom the people had first chosen. They hold, that their Ecclesiastical Senate ought both to choose, and also to Ordain: Do not themselves then take away that which the Apostles gave the people, namely, the privilege of choosing Ecclesiastical Officers? They do. But behold in what sort they answer it.



Eccles. Discipl.  
fol. 41.

By the sixth and the fourteenth of the Acts (say they) it doth appear, that the people had the chiefest power of choosing. Howbeit that, as unto me it seemeth, was done upon special cause, which doth not so much concern us, neither ought it to be drawn unto the ordinary and perpetual form of governing the Church: For as in establishing Commonweals, not onely if they be popular, but even being such as are ordered by the power of a few the chiefest, or as by the sole Authority of one, till the same be established, the whole sway is in the peoples hands, who voluntarily appoint those Magistrates by whose Authority they may be governed; so that afterward not the multitude is self, but those Magistrates which were chosen by the multitude, have the ordering of publique Affairs: After the self same manner is fared in establishing also the Church: When there was not as yet any placed over the people, all Authority was in them all; but when they all had chosen certain to whom the Regiment of the Church was committed, this power is not now any longer in the hands of the whole multitude, but wholly in theirs who are appointed Guides of the Church. Besides, in the choice of Deacons, there was also another special cause wherefore the whole Church at that time should choose them. For inasmuch as the Grecians murmured against the Hebrews, and complained, that in the daily distribution which was made for relief of the poor, they were not indifferently respected, nor such regard had of their widows as was meet, this made it necessary that they all should have to deal in the choice of those unto whom that care was afterwards to be committed, to the end that all occasion of jealousies and complaints might be removed. Wherefore that which was done by the people for certain causes, before the Church was fully settled, may not be drawn out and applied unto a constant and perpetual form of ordering the Church.

Let them cast the Discipline of the Church of England into the same scales where they weigh their own, let them give us the same measure which here they take, and our stripes shall soon be brought to a quiet end. When they urge the Apostles as presidents, when they condemn us of Tyrannie because we do not, in making Ministers the same which the Apostles did, when they plead, *That with us one alone doth ordain, and that our Ordinations are without the peoples knowledge, contrary to that example which the blessed Apostles gave:* We do not request at their hands allowance as much as of one word we speak in our own defence, if that which we speak be of our own; but that which themselves speak, they must be contented to listen unto. To exempt themselves from being over far prest with the Apostles example, they can answer, *That which was done by the people once upon special causes, when the Church was not yet established, is not to be made a rule for the constant and continual ordering of the Church.* In defence of their own election, although they do not therein depend on the people so much as the Apostles in the choice of Deacons, they think it a very sufficient Apology, that there were special considerations why Deacons at that time should be chosen by the whole Church, but not so now. In excuse of dissimilitudes between their own and the Apostles Discipline, they are contented to use this answer, *That many things were done in the Apostles times, before the settling of the Church, which afterward the Church was not tied to observe.* For countenance of their own proceedings, wherein their Governors do more then the Apostles, and their people, less then under the Apostles the first Churches are found to have done, at the making of Ecclesiastical Officers, they deem it a marvellous reasonable kinde of pleading to some, *That even as in Commonweals, when the multitude have once chosen many, or one to rule over them, the right which was at the first in the whole body of the people, is now derived into those many, or that one which is so chosen; and that this being done, it is not the whole multitude, so whom the administration of such Publique affairs any longer appertaineth, but that which they did, their Rulers may now do lawfully without them; after the self same manner it standeth with the Church also.*

How easie and plain might we make our defence? how clear and allowable even unto them, if we could but obtain of them to admit the same things consonant unto equity in our monthes, which they require to be so taken from their own? If that which is truth, being uttered in maintenance of Scotland and Geneva, do not cease to be truth when the Church of England once alledgeth it, this great crime of Tyrannie wherewith we are charged, hath a plain and an easie defence? Yea, but we do not at all ask the peoples approbation, which they do, whereby they shew themselves more indifferent and more free from taking away the peoples right. Indeed, when their lay-Elders have chosen whom they think good, the peoples consent thereunto

is asked, and if they give their approbation, the thing standeth warranted for sound and good. But if not, is the former choice overthrown? No, but the people is to yield to reason, and if they which have made the choice, do folike the peoples reason, as to reverse their own deed at the hearing of it, then a new election to be made; otherwise the former to stand, notwithstanding the peoples negative and dislike. What is this else but to deal with the people, as those Nurses do with Infants, whose mouthes they besmeare with the backside of the spoon, as though they had fed them; when they themselves devour the food. They cry in the ears of the people, that all mens consent should be had unto that which concerns all; they make the people believe we wrong them, and deprive them of their right in making Ministers, whereas with us, the people have commonly far more sway and force then with them. For inasmuch as there are but two main things observed in every Ecclesiastical function, Power to exercise the duty it self, and some charge of people whereon to exercise the same; the former of these is received at the hands of the whole visible Catholick Church: For it is not any one particular multitude that can give power, the force whereof may reach far and wide indefinitely, as the power of Order doth; which who so hath once received, there is no action which belongeth thereunto, but he may exercise effectually the same in any part of the World, without iterated Ordination. They whom the whole Church hath from the first beginning used as her Agents, in conferring this power, are not either one or more of the Laity, and therefore it hath not been heard of, that ever any such were allowed to ordain Ministers: Onely persons Ecclesiastical, and they in place of calling, Superiors both unto Deacons, and unto Presbyters, onely such persons Ecclesiastical have been authorized to ordain both, and to give them the power of Order, in the name of the whole Church. Such were the Apostles, such was *Timothy*, such was *Titus*, such are Bishops. Not that there is between these no difference, but that they all agree in pre-eminence of place above both Presbyters and Deacons, whom they otherwise might not ordain. Now whereas hereupon some do infer, that no Ordination can stand, but onely such as is made by Bishops, which have had their Ordination likewise by other Bishops before them, till we come to the very Apostles of Christ themselves. In which respect it was demanded of *Beza* at *Poissie*, *By what Authority he could administer the holy Sacraments*; being not thereunto ordained by any other then *Calvin*, or by such as to whom the power of Ordination did not belong, according to the ancient Orders and Customs of the Church, sith *Calvin*; and they who joyned with him in that action, were no Bishops: And *Athanasius* maintaineth the fact of *Macarius* a Presbyter, which overthrew the holy Table, whereat one *Ischyas* would have ministered the blessed Sacrament, having not been consecrated thereunto by laying on of some Bishops hands, according to the Ecclesiastical Canons; as also *Epiphanius* inveigheth sharply against divers for doing the like, when they had not Episcopal Ordination. To this we answer, That there may be sometimes very just and sufficient reason to allow Ordination made without a Bishop. The whole Church visible being the true original subject of all power, it hath not ordinarily allowed any other then Bishops alone to ordain: Howbeit, as the ordinary course is ordinarily in all things to be observed, so it may be in some cases not unnecessary that we decline from the ordinary ways. Men may be extraordinarily, yet allowably two ways admitted unto Spiritual Functions in the Church. One is, when God himself doth of himself raise up any, whose labour he useth without requiring that men should Authorize them. But then he doth ratifie their calling by manifest signs and tokens himself from Heaven. And thus even such as believed not our Saviours teaching, did yet acknowledge him a lawful Teacher sent from God: *Thou art a Teacher sent from God*, otherwise none could do those things which thou dost. *Luther* did but reasonably therefore, in declaring that the Senate of *Mulhouse* should do well to ask of *Munzer* from whence he received power to teach, who it was that had called him, and if his answer were that God had given him his charge, then to require at his hands some evident sign thereof for mens satisfaction; because so God is wont, when he himself is the Author of any extraordinary calling. Another extraordinary kinde of vocation is, when the exigence of necessity doth constrain to leave the usual ways of the Church, which otherwise we would willingly keep: Where the Church must needs have some ordained; and neither hath nor can have possibly a Bishop to ordain; in

*Eccles. Discipl.*  
p. 41.

*Neque enim fas erat aut licebat ut inferior ordinaret majorem Coment. q. Ambros. tribuuntur, in 1 Tim. 3.*

*Enimvero xpo dicitur;*

case

case of such necessity, the ordinary Institution of God hath given oftentimes, and may give place. And therefore we are not simply without exception, to urge a lineal descent of power from the Apostles by continued succession of Bishops in every effectual Ordination. These cases of inevitable necessity excepted, none may ordain but onely Bishops: By the Imposition of their hands it is, that the Church giveth power of Order, both unto Presbyters and Deacons. Now when that power so received is once to have any certain subject whereon it may work, and whereunto it is to be tied, *here cometh in the peoples consent, and not before.* The power of Order I may lawfully receive, without asking leave of any multitude; but that power I cannot exercise upon any one certain people utterly against their wills; Neither is there in the Church of England any man, by order of Law, possessed with Pastoral charge over any Parish, but the people in effect do chuse him thereunto. For albeit they chuse not by giving every man personally his particular voyce, yet can they not say that they have their Pastors violently obtruded upon them, inasmuch as their ancient and original interest therein, hath been by orderly means derived into the Patron who chooseth for them. And if any man be desirous to know how Patrons came to have such interest, we are to consider, that at the first erection of Churches, it seemed but reasonable in the eyes of the whole Christian World, to pass that right to them and their Successors, on whose soil, and at whose charge the same were founded. This all men gladly and willingly did, both in honor of so great Piety, and for encouragement of many others unto the like, who peradventure else, would have been as slow to erect Churches, or to endow them, as we are forward both to spoil them, and to pull them down.

Its no true assertion therefore in such sort as the pretended Reformers mean it, *That all Ministers of Gods Word ought to be made by consent of many, that is to say, by the peoples suffrages; that ancient Bishops neither did nor might ordain otherwise, and that ours do herein usurp a far greater power then was, or then lawfully could have been granted unto Bishops which were of old.* Furthermore, as touching spiritual Jurisdiction, our Bishops, they say, do that which of all things is most intollerable, and which the Ancient never did. *Our Bishops excommunicate and release alone, whereas the Censures of the Church neither ought, nor were wont to be administrated otherwise, then by consent of many.* Their meaning here when they speak of *many*, is not as before it was: when they hold that Ministers should be made with consent of many, they understand by *many* the multitude, or common people; But in requiring that many should evermore joyn with the Bishop in the administration of Church Censures, they mean by *many*, a few lay-Elders, chosen out of the rest of the people to that purpose. This they say is ratified by Ancient Councils, by Ancient Bishops this was practised. And the reason hereof, as *Beza* supposeth was, *Because if the power of Ecclesiastical Censures did belong unto any one, there would this great inconvenience follow, Ecclesiastical Regiment should be changed into meer Tyrannie, or else into a Civil Royalty: Therefore no one, either Bishop or Presbyter, should or can alone exercise that Power, but with his Ecclesiastical Consistory be ought to do it, as may appear by the old Discipline.*

And is it possible, that one so grave and judicious should think it in earnest Tyrannie for a Bishop to excommunicate, whom Law and Order hath authorized so to do? or be perswaded that Ecclesiastical Regiment degenerateth into Civil Regality, when one is allowed to do that which hath been at any time the deed of moe? Surely, far meaner witted men then the World accompteth Mr. *Beza*, do easily perceive, that Tyrannie is power violently exercised against Order, against Law; and that the difference of these two Regiments, Ecclesiastical and Civil, consisteth in the matter about which the actions of each are conversant; and not in this, that Civil Royalty admitteth but one, Ecclesiastical Government requireth many supreme Correctors. Which Allegation, were it true, would prove no more then onely, that some certain number is necessary for the assistance of the Bishop: But that a number of such as they do require is necessary, how doth it prove? Wherefore albeit Bishops should now do the very same which the Ancients did, using the Colledges of Presbyters under them as their Assistants, when they administer Church Censures, yet should they still swerve utterly from that which these men so busily labour for, because the Agents whom they require to assist in those cases, are a sort of lay-Elders, such as no ancient Bishop ever was assisted with.

Shall

20. cil. Carth.

4. ca. 23.

Cyp. l. 1. ep. 10.

14. l. 1. ep. 8.



Shall these fruitless jars and janglings never cease? shall we never see end of them? How much happier were the world if those eager Taskmasters whose eyes are so curious and sharp in discerning what should be done by many and what by few, were all changed into painful doers of that which every good Christian man ought either onely or chiefly to do, and to be found therein doing when that great and glorious Judge of all mens boeh deeds and words shall appear? In the mean while, be it one that hath this charge, or be they many that be his assistants, let there be careful provision that justice may be administred, and in this shall our God be glorified more then by such contentious Disputes.

XV. Of which nature that also is, wherein Bishops are over and besides all this accused to have much more excessive power than the ancient, in as much as unto their Ecclesiastical authority, the Civil Magistrate for the better repressing of such as condemn Ecclesiastical censures, hath for divers ages annexed Civil. The crime of Bishops herein is divided into these two severall branches, the one that in causes Ecclesiastical, they seize with the sword of secular punishments; the other, that offices are granted them, by virtue whereof they meddle with Civil affairs. Touching the one, it reacheth no farther then onely unto restraint of liberty by imprisonment (which yet is not done but by the Law of the Land, and by virtue of authority derived from the Prince.) A thing which being allowable in Priests amongst the Jews, must needs have received some strange alteration in nature since, if it be now so pernicious and venomous to be coupled with a spiritual vocation in any man which beareth office in the Church of Christ. Schemais writing to the Colledge of Priests which were in Jerusalem, and to Zephania the Principal of them, told them they were appointed of God, that they might be Officers in the house of the Lord, for every man which raved, and did make himself a Prophet, to the end that they might by the force of this their authority put such in prison and in the stocks. His malice is reprov'd, for that he provoketh them to shew their power against the innocent. But surely, when any man justly punishable had been brought before them, it could be no unjust thing for them even in such sort then to have punished. As for Offices by virtue whereof Bishops have to deal in civil affairs, we must consider that Civil Affairs are of divers kinds, and as they be not all fit for Ecclesiastical persons to meddle with, so neither is it necessary, nor at this day happily convenient, that from meddling with any such thing at all they all should without exception be secluded. I will therefore set down some few causes, wherein it cannot but clearly appear unto reasonable men, that Civil and Ecclesiastical Functions may be lawfully united in one and the same person.

First therefore, in case a Christian Society be planted amongst their professed enemies, or by toleration do live under some certain State whereinto they are not incorporated, whom shall we judge the meetest men to have the hearing and determining of such meer civil controversies as are every day wont to grow between man and man? Such being the state of the Church of Corinth, the Apostle giveth them this direction, *Dare any of you having business against another be judged by the unjust, and not under Saints? Do ye not know that the Saints shall judge the world? If the world then shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? Know ye not that we shall judge the Angels? How much more things that appertain to this life? If then ye have judgement of things pertaining to this life, set up them which are least esteemed in the Church. I speak it to your shame; Is it so that there is not a wise man amongst you? no not one that can judge between his brethren, but a brother goeth to law with a brother and that under the Infidels? Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another; why rather suffer ye not wrong, why rather sustain ye not harm? In which speech there are these degrees; Better to suffer and to put up injuries, then to contend; better to end contention by arbitrement, then by judgement; better by judgement before the wisest of their own, then before the simpler; better before the simplest of their own, then the wisest of them without: So that if judgement of secular affairs should be committed unto wise men, unto men of chiefest credit and account amongst them, when the Pastors of their souls are such, who more fit to be also their Judges for the ending of strifes? The wisest in things divine, may be also in things humane the most skilful.*

Concerning the civil power and authority which our Bishops have.

Jer. 19. 26.

1 Cor. 6:

Vid. Barab.  
Br. Jan. antiq.  
jur. lib. 4. c. 14.

*Aug. de oper.  
Monach. c. 29.*

skilful. At leastwise they are by likelihood commonly more able to know right from wrong then the common unlettered sort. And what St. Augustine did hereby gather, his own words do sufficiently shew. I call God to witness upon my soul, saith he, that according to the order which is kept in well ordered Monasteries, I could wish to have every day my hours of labouring with my hands, my hours of reading and of praying, rather then to endure these most tumultuous perplexities of other mens causes, which I am forced to bear while I travel in secular businesse, either by judging to discuss them, or to cut them off by intreaty: Unto which talls that Apostle, who himself sustained them not, for any thing we read, hath notwithstanding tied us not of his own accord, but being thereunto directed by that Spirit which speaks in him. His own Apostleship which drew him to travel up and down, suffered him not to be any where settled for this purpose; wherefore the wise, faithful and holy men which were seated here and there, and not them which travelled up and down to preach, he made examiners of such businesse. Whereupon of him it is no where written, that he had leisure to attend these things, from which we cannot excuse our selves although we be simple; because even such he requireth, if wisemen cannot be had, rather then the affairs of Christians should be brought into publick judgement. Howbeit not without comfort in our Lord are these travels undertaken by us, for the hopes sake of eternal life, to the end that with patience we may reap fruit. So far is St. Augustine from thinking it unlawful for Pastors in such sort to judge civil causes, that he plainly collecteth out of the Apostles words, a necessity to undertake that duty; yea himself he comforteth with the hope of a blessed reward, in lieu of travel that way sustained.

Again, even where whole Christian Kingdoms are, how troublesome were it for Universities and other greater Collegiate Societies, erected to serve as Nurseries unto the Church of Christ, if every thing which civilly doth concern them were to be carried from their own peculiar Governors, because for the most part they are (as fittest it is they should be) persons of Ecclesiastical calling? It was by the wisdom of our famous Predecessors foreseen how unfit this would be, and hereupon provided by grant of special Charters that it might be as now it is in the Universities; where their Vice-Chancellors, being for the most part Professors of Divinity, are nevertheless Civil Judges over them in the most of their ordinary causes.

And to go yet some degrees further, A thing impossible it is not, neither altogether unusual, for some who are of royal blood to be consecrated unto the Ministry of Jesus Christ, and so to be Nurses of Gods Church, not only as the Prophet did foretel, but also as the Apostle St. Paul was. Now in case the Crown should by this mean descend unto such persons, perhaps when they are the very last, or perhaps the very best of their Race, so that a greater benefit they are not able to bestow upon a Kingdom then by accepting their right therein; shall the sanctity of their Order deprive them of that honour whereunto they have right by blood? or shall it be a bar to shut out the publick good that may grow by their virtuous Regiment? If not, then must they cast off the Office which they received by divine imposition of hands; or if they carry a more religious opinion concerning that heavenly function; it followeth, that being invested as well with the one as the other, they remain Gods lawfully anointed both ways. With men of skill and mature judgement there is of this so little doubt, that concerning such as at this day are under the Archbishops of *Mentz, Colen, and Trevers*, being both Archbishops and Princes of the Empire; yea such as live within the Popes own Civil Territories, there is no cause why any should deny to yeild them civil obedience in any thing which they command, not repugnant to Christian piety; yea even that civilly, for such as are under them, not to obey them, were the part of seditious persons: Howbeit for persons Ecclesiastical, thus to exercise Civil Dominion of their own, is more then when they only sustain some publick Office, or deal in some business Civil, being thereunto even by supream Authority required. As Nature doth not any thing in vain, so neither Grace: Wherefore if it please God to bless some principal attendants on his own Sanctuary, and to endue them with extraordinary parts of excellency, some in one kind and some in another, surely a great derogation it were to the very honour of him who bestoweth so precious graces, except they on whom he hath bestowed them should accordingly be employed that the fruit of those heavenly Gifts might extend it self unto the body of the Commonwealth wherein

*Zanch. p. 2. 4.  
objec. 12. con. 9.*

wherein they live; which being of purpose instituted (for so all Commonwealths are) to the end, that all might enjoy whatsoever good it pleaseth the Almighty to endue each one man with, must needs suffer loss; when it hath not the gain which eminent civil hability in Ecclesiastical persons is now and then found apt to afford. Shall we then discommend the people of *Milan* for using *Ambrose* their Bishop as an Ambassador about their publick and politick Affairs; the Jews for electing their Priests sometimes to be leaders in War; *David* for making the High-priest his chiefest Counsellor of State; finally, all Christian Kings and Princes which have appointed unto like services, Bishops or other of the Clergy under them? No, they have done in this respect that which most sincere and religious wisdom alloweth. Neither is it allowable onely, when either a kind of necessity doth cast civil offices upon them, or when they are thereunto preferred in regard of some extraordinary fitness, but further also when there are even of right annexed unto some of their places, or of course imposed upon certain of their persons, functions of dignity and account in the Commonwealth, albeit no other consideration be had therein save this, that their credit and countenance may by such means be augmented. A thing if ever to be respected, surely most of all now, when God himself is for his own sake generally no where honoured; religion almost no where, no where religiously adored; the Ministry of the Word and Sacraments of Christ a very cause of disgrace in the eyes both of high and low, where it hath not somewhat besides itself to be countenanced with. For unto this very pass things are come, that the glory of God is constrained even to stand upon borrowed credit, which yet were somewhat the more tolerable if there were not that dissuade to lend it him. No practice so vile, but pretended holiness is made sometime as a cloak to hide it.

The French King *Philip Valois* in his time made an Ordinance that all Prelates and Bishops should be clean excluded from Parliaments where the Affairs of the Kingdom were handled; pretending that a King with good conscience, cannot draw Pastors, having cure of Soules, from so weighty a business, to trouble their heads with Consultations of State. But irreligious intents are not able to hide themselves, no not when holiness is made their cloak. This is plain and simple truth. That the counsels of wicked men have always the presence of them, whose vertue, though it should not be able to prevail against their purposes, would notwithstanding be unto their minds a secret corrosive; and therefore, till either by one thit or another they can bring all things to their own hands alone, they are not secure. Ordinances holier and better there stand as yet in force by the grace of Almighty God, and the works of his Providence amongst us. Let not envy so far prevail, as to make us account that a blemish, which if there be in us any spark of sound Judgement, or of religious Conscience, we must of necessity acknowledge to be one of the chiefest Ornaments unto this Land: By the ancient Laws whereof, the Clergy being held for the cheif of those Three Estates, which together make up the entire body of this Commonwealth, under one Supreme Head and Governour, it hath all this time ever borne a sway proportionable in the weighty affairs of the Land, wise and vertuous Kings condescending most willingly thereunto, even of reverence to the Most High, with the flower of whose sanctified Inheritance, as it were with a kind of Divine presence, unless their chiefest Civil Assemblies were so far forth beautified as might be without any notable impediment unto their heavenly Functions, they could not satisfy themselves as having showed towards God an Affection most dutiful.

Thus first, in defect of other Civil Magistrates; Secondly, for the ease and quietness of Scholastical Societies; Thirdly, by way of political necessity; Fourthly, in regard of quality, care, and extraordinacy; Fifthly, For countenance unto the Ministry; And lastly, even of devotion and reverence towards God himself, there may be admitted at least wise in some particulars well and lawfully enough a conjunction of Civil and Ecclesiastical Power, except there be some such Law or Reason to the contrary, as may prove it to be a thing simply in itself haught.

Against it many things are objected, as first, That the matters which are noted in the holy Scriptures to have belonged to the ordinary Office of any Minister of Gods holy



*Word and Sacraments, are these which follow, with such like, and no other, namely, The watch of the Sanctuary, the business of God, the Ministry of the Word and Sacraments, Over-sight of the House of God, Watching over his Flock, Prophecy, Prayer, Dispensations of the Mysteries of God, Charge and care of mans faults. If a man would shew what the offices and duties of a Chyrurgeon or Physician are; I suppose it were not his part, as much as to mention any thing belonging unto the one or the other, in case either should be also a Souldier or a Merchant, or an House-keeper, or a Magistrate; Because the Functions of these are different from those of the former, albeit one and the same man may happily be both. The case is like, when the Scripture teacheth what duties are required in an Ecclesiastical Minister; in describing of whose office, to touch any other thing then such as properly and directly toucheth his office that way were impertinent.*

*Yes, But in the Old Testament the two Powers Civil and Ecclesiastical were distinguished, not only in nature, but also in person, the one committed unto Moses, and the Magistrates joyned with him, the other to Aaron and his Sons. Jehosaphat in his Reformation doth not only distinguish causes Ecclesiastical from Civil, and erecteth diverse Courts for them, but appointeth also diverse Judges. With the Jews these two Powers were not so distinguished, but that sometimes they might and did concur in one and the same person: Was not Ely both Priest and Judge? After their return from captivity, Esdras a Priest, and the same their chief Governor even in Civil Affairs also? These men which urge the necessity of making always a personal distinction of these two Powers, as it by Jehosaphats example the same person ought not to deal in both causes, yet are not scrupulous to make men of Civil place and calling, Presbyters and Ministers of spiritual jurisdiction in their own spiritual Consistories.*

*If it be against the Jewish precedents for us to give Civil power unto such as have Ecclesiastical; is it not as much against the same for them to give Ecclesiastical power unto such as have Civil? They will answer perhaps, That their Position is onely against conjunction of Ecclesiastical Power of order, and the power of Civil jurisdiction in one person. But this Answer will not stand with their proofs, which make no less against the power of Civil and Ecclesiastical jurisdiction in one person, for of these two Powers Jehosaphats example is: Besides the contrary example of Hely and of Ezra, by us alledged do plainly shew that amongst the Jews, even the power of order Ecclesiastical and Civil jurisdiction were sometimes lawfully united in one and the same person. Pressed further we are with our Lord and Saviours example, who denieth his Kingdom to be of this world, and therefore as not standing with his calling refused to be made a King, to give sentence in a criminal cause of Adultery, and in a civil of dividing an Inheritance.*

*The Jews imagining that their Messiah should be a Potent Monarch upon earth, no marvail, though when they did otherwise wonder at Christs greatness, they sought forthwith to have him invested with that kinde of Dignity, to the end he might presently begin to reign. Others of the Jews, which likewise had the same imagination of the Messiah, and did somewhat incline to think that peradventure this might be he, thought good to try whether he would take upon him that which he might do, being a King, such as they supposed their true Messiah should be. But Christ refused to be a King over them, because it was no part of the Office of their Messiah, as they did falsely conceive, and to intermeddle in whose acts of civil judgement he refused also, because he had no such jurisdiction in that Commonwealth, being in regard of his Civil person, a man of mean and low calling. As for repugnancy between Ecclesiastical and Civil Power, or any inconvenience that these two Powers should be united, it doth not appear that this was the cause of his resistance either to reign or else to judge.*

*What say we then to the blessed Apostles, who teach, that Souldiers intangle not themselves with the business of this life, but leave them to the end they may please him who hath chosen them to serve, and that so the good Souldiers of Christ ought to do.*

The Apostles which taught this, did never take upon them any place or Office of Civil power. No, they gave over the Ecclesiastical care of the poor, that they might wholly attend upon the Word and Prayer. *S. Paul* indeed doth exhort *Timothy* after this manner, *Suffer thou evil as a noble Soldier of Jesus Christ: no man warring is entangled with the affairs of life, because he must serve such as have pressed him unto Warfare.* The sense and meaning whereof is plain, that Souldiers may not be nice and tender, that they must be able to endure hardness, that no man ventering himself unto Wars, continueth entangled with such kinde of businesses as tend onely unto the ease and quiet felicity of this life, but if the service of him who hath taken them under his banner, require the hazard, yea, the loss of their lives, to please him, they must be content and willing with any difficulty, any peril, be it never so much against the natural desire which they have to live in safety. And at this point the Clergy of God must always stand, thus it becometh them to be affected as oft as their Lord and Captain leadeth them into the field, whatsoever conflicts, perils or evils they are to endure. Which duty being not such, but that therewith the Civil Dignities which Ecclesiastical persons amongst us do enjoy may enough stand. The Exhortation of *Paul* to *Timothy*, is but a slender Allegation against them; As well might we gather out of this place, that men having children, or wives, are unfit to be Ministers (which also hath been collected, and that by sundry of the Ancients) and that it is requir'd to the Clergy be utterly forbidden marriage: For as the duties of Civil Regiment doth make them who bear it, the less able to attend their Ecclesiastical charge; even so *S. Paul* doth say, that the married are careful for the World, the unmarried freer to give themselves wholly to the service of God. Howbeit, both experience hath found it safer, that the Clergy should bear the cares of honest marriage, then be subject to the inconveniences which single life, imposed upon them, would draw after it. And as many as are of sound Judgement know it to be far better for this present age, that the detrimment be born, which happily may grow through the lessening of some few mens spirituall labours, then that the Clergy and Commonwealth should lack the benefit which both the one and the other may reap through their dealing in Civil affairs. In which consideration, that men consecrated unto the spiritual service of God, be licensed so far forth to meddle with the secular affairs of the World, as doth seem for some special good cause requisite, and may be without any grievous prejudice unto the Church. Surely there is not in the Apostles, being rightly understood, any let. That no Apostle did ever bear Office, may it not be a wonder, considering the great devotion of the age wherein they lived, and the zeal of *Herod*, of *Nero* the great Commander of the known World, and of other Kings of the earth, at that time to advance by all means Christian Religion? Their deriving unto others that smaller charge of distributing of the goods which were laid at their feet, and of making provision for the poor, which charge, being in part Civil, themselves had before (as I suppose lawfully) undertaken; and their following of that which was weightier, may serve as a marvellous good example, for the dividing of one mans Office into divers slips, and the subordinating of inferiors to discharge some part of the same, when by reason of multitude encreasing, that labour waxeth great and trouble some, which before was easie and light: but very small force it hath to infer a perpetual divorce between Ecclesiastical and Civil power in the same persons. The notion that can be said in this case is, That sundry eminent Canons, bearing the name of Apostolical, and divers Councils likewise there are, which have forbidden the Clergy to bear any Secular Office; and have enjoyned them to attend altogether upon reading, preaching, and prayer: Whereupon the most of the ancient Fathers, have shewed great dislike, that these two powers should be united in one person.

For a full and final Answer whereunto, I would first demand, Whether commensation and separation of these two powers, be a matter of meer positive Law, or else a thing simply with or against the Law immutable of God and Nature? That which is simply against this latter Law, can at no time be allowable in any person, more then Adultery, Blasphemy, Sacrilege, and the like. But conjunction of power Ecclesiastical and Civil, what law is there which hath not at some time or other al-

*Convenit hujusmodi eligi & ordinari sacerdotes qui ut nec liberi sunt nec reperti sunt viri ut videretur hujusmodi quidam non tunc quos liberi creant parentibus proxima, omne huiusmodi omni cogitationem christianam, nam iuriam & res ecclesiasticas consumat, l. 48. §. 1. C. de Episc. & Cler.*

lowed as a thing convenient and meet? In the Law of God we have examples sundry, whereby it doth most manifestly appear, how of him the same hath oftentimes been approved. No Kingdom or Nation in the World, but hath been thereunto accustomed, without inconvenience and hurt. In the prime of the World, Kings and Civil

a Cum multa de his pontificibus a maioribus  
notis inventa atque instituta sunt, cum nihil pre-  
clarior quam quod eos eisdem & religionibus  
Deorum immortalium & summa reipublice preesse  
voluerunt. Cic. pro domo sua ad pontifices.

b Hinc (secundum formam) potentia  
affinebatur, Tacit. hist. lib. 5. He sheweth  
the reason wherefore their Rulers were  
also Priests. The joining of these two  
powers, as now, so then likewise profi-  
table for the publique State, but in re-  
spects clean opposite and contrary. For  
whereas then Divine things being more  
esteemed, were used as helps for the  
countenance of Secular power, the case  
in these latter ages is turned upside down,  
earth hath now brought Heaven under  
foot, and in the cause of the World,  
hath of the two the greater credit. Priest-  
hood was then a strengthening to Kings,  
which now is forced to take strength and  
credit from far meaner degrees of Civil  
Authority.

Hic maxime videtur, sicut ut eisdem reges &  
sacerdotes habuerunt, quoniam iustitia religionis per-  
mixta incedit quatenus oportet. Just. hist.  
lib. 36.

Lib. 4. c. 5. de Episcopis.

Orders must therefore every where still be observed? The reason is not always evident, why former Orders have been repealed, and other established in their room: Herein therefore we must remember the axiome used in the Civil Laws, *That the Prince is always presumed to do that with reason, which is not against reason being done, although no reason of his deed be expressed.* Which being in every respect as true of the Church, and her Divine Authority in making Laws, it should be some bridle unto those malapert and proud spirits, whose will not conceiving the reason of Laws that are established, they adore their own privatency, as the supreme Law of all, and accordingly take upon them to judge that whereby they should be judged. But why labour we thus in vain? For even to change that which now is, and to establish instead thereof, that which themselves would acknowledge the very self same which hath been, to what purpose were it, such they profess, *That they utterly condemn as well that which hath been, as that which is; as well the ancient, as the present Superiority, Authority, and Power of Ecclesiastical persons?*

T.C. l. 1 p. 116.

The Argu-  
ments an-  
swered,  
we chyt'ey  
would prove,  
that the Law  
of God, and  
the judgment  
of the best in  
all ages, con-  
demneth the  
ruling superi-  
ority of one  
Minister over  
another.  
T.C. l. 1 p. 111.

XVI. Now where they lastly alledge, *That the Law of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the judgement of the best in all ages, condemn all ruling Superiority of Ministers over Ministers;* they are in this, as in the rest, more bold to affirm, then able to prove the things which they bring for support of their weak and feeble cause. *The bearing of Dominion, or the exercising of Authority (they say) is that wherein the Civil Magistrate is severed from the Ecclesiastical Officer, according to the words of our Lord and Saviour, Kings of Nations bear rule over them, but it shall not be so with you: Therefore bearing of Dominion doth not agree to one Minister over another.* This place hath been, and still is, although most fallily, yet with far greater shew and likelihood of truth, brought forth by the Anabaptists, to prove that the Church of Christ ought to have no Civil Magistrates, but ordered onely by Christ. Wherefore they urge the opposition between Heathens, and them unto whom our Saviour speaketh, For such the Apostles were opposite to Heathens, not in that they were Apostles, but in that they



they were Christians, The Anabaptists inference is, *That Christ doth here give a Law, to be for ever observed by all true Christian men, between whom and Heathens there must be always this difference, that whereas Heathens have their Kings and Princes to rule, Christians ought not in this thing to be like unto them.* Wherein their construction hath the more shew, because that which Christ doth speak to his Apostles, is not found always agreeable unto them as Apostles, or as Pastors of mens souls; but oftentimes it toucheth them in generality, as they are Christians; so that Christianity being common unto them with all Believers, such speeches must be so taken; that they may be applied unto all, and not onely unto them. They which consent with us; in rejecting such Collections as the Anabaptist maketh with more probability, must give us leave to reject such as themselves have made with less: For a great deal less likely it is, that our Lord should here establish an everlasting difference; not between his Church and Pagans, but between the Pastors of his Church and Civil Governors. For if herein they must always differ, that the one may not bear rule, the other may; How did the Apostles themselves observe this difference, the exercise of whose Authority, both in commanding, and in controuling others, the Scripture hath made so manifest, that no gloss can overshadow it? Again, it being, as they would have it, our Saviours purpose to withhold his Apostles, and in them all other Pastors from bearing rule; why should Kingly Dominion be mentioned, which occasions men to gather, that not all Dominion and Rule, but this one onely form was prohibited, and that Authority was permitted them, so it were not Regal? Furthermore, in case it had been his purpose to withhold Pastors altogether from bearing rule, why should Kings of Nations be mentioned, as if they were not forbidden to exercise, no not Regal Dominion it self, but onely such Regal Dominion as Heathen Kings do exercise? The very truth is, our Lord and Saviour did aim at a far other mark then these men seem to observe. The end of his speech was to reform their particular misperfection to whom he spake: And their misperfection was, that which was also the common fancy of the Jews at that time, that their Lord being the Messias of the World, should restore unto Israel that Kingdom, whereof the Romans had as then bereaved them; they imagined that he should not onely deliver the State of Israel, but himself reign as King in the Throne of David, with all Secular Pomp and Dignity; that he should subdue the rest of the World, and make Jerusalem the seat of an universal Monarchy. Seeing therefore they had forsaken all to follow him, being now in so mean condition, they did not think, but that together with him, they also should rise in state, that they should be the first, and the most advanced by him.

Of this conceit it came that the mother of the Sons of Zebedee sued for her childrens preferment; of this conceit it grew that the Apostles began to question amongst themselves which of them should be greatest: And in controlement of this conceit it was that our Lord so plainly told them, *that the thoughts of their hearts were vain*; the King of Nations have indeed their large and ample Dominions, they reign far and wide, and their servants they advance unto honour in the world, they bestow upon them large and ample secular Preferments, in which respect they are also termed many of them Benefactors; because of the liberal hand which they use in rewarding such as have done them service: But was it the meaning of the ancient Prophets of God, that the Messias the King of Israel should be like unto these Kings, and his retinue grow in such sort as theirs? wherefore ye are not to look for at my hands such preferments as Kings of Nations are wont to bestow upon their Attendants, *With you not so.* Your reward in Heaven shall be most ample, on earth your chiefest honour must be to suffer persecution for righteousness sake; submission, humility and meekness are things fitter for you to imite your mindes withal, then these aspiring cogitations, if any amongst you be greater then other, let him shew himself greatest in being lowliest, let him be above them in being under them, even as a servant for their good. These are Affections which you must put on; as for degrees of preferment and honour in this world, if ye expect any such thing at my hands, ye deceive your selves, for in the world your portion is rather the cleave contrary. Wherefore they who alledge this place against Episcopal Authority abuse it, they many ways deprave and wreat it, clean from the true understanding wherein our Saviour himself did utter it.

For

For First, whereas he by way of meer negation had said, *With you it shall not be so*, foretelling them onely that it should not so come to pass, as they vainly furnished; these men take his words in the plain nature of a prohibition, as if Christ had thereby forbidden all inequality of Ecclesiastical power. Secondly, Whereas he did but cut off their idle hope of secular advancements, all standing superiority amongst persons Ecclesiastical these men would rase off with the edge of his speech. Thirdly, whereas he in abating their hope even of secular advancements spake but onely with relation unto himself, informing them that he would be no such munificent Lord unto them in their temporal dignity and honor, as they did erroneously suppose, so that any Apostle might afterwards have grown by means of others to be even Emperor of Rome, for any thing in those words to the contrary; these men removing quite and clean the hedge of all such restraints, enlarge so far the bounds of his meaning, as if his very precise intent and purpose had been not to reform the error of his Apostles, conceived as touching him, and to teach what himself would not be towards them; but to prescribe a special law both to them and their Successors for ever; a Law determining what they should not be in relation of one to another, a law forbidding that any such title should be given to any Minister as might import or argue in him a Superiority over other Ministers. Being thus defeated of that succour which they thought their cause might have had out of the words of our Saviour Christ, they try their adventure in seeking what aid mans testimony will yield them: Cyprian objecteth it to Florentinus as a proud thing, that by believing evil reports, and mis-judging of Cyprian, he made himself Bishop of a Bishop, and Judge over him, whom God had for the time appointed to be Judge. *lib. 4. ep. 9.* The endeavour of godly men to strike at these insolent names, may appear in the Council of Carthage, where it was decreed, That the Bishop of the chief Sea should not be entitled the Exarch of Priests, or the highest Priest, or any other thing of like sense, but onely the Bishop of the chiefest Sea; whereby are shut out the name of Archbishop, and all other such baughty titles. In these Allegations it saith, as in broken reports snatched out of the Authors mouth, and broached before they be half either told on the one part, or on the other understood. The matter which Cyprian complaineth of in Florentinus was thus, Novatus milking the easiness of Cyprian to admit men into the fellowship of Believers, after they had fallen away from the bold and constant confession of Christian faith, took thereby occasion to separate himself from the Church, and being united with certain excommunicate persons, they joyned their wits together, and drew out against Cyprian their lawful Bishop sundry grievous accusations; the crimes such, as being true, had made him incapable of that Office whereof he was six years as then possessed; they went to Rome, and to other places, accusing him every where as guilty of those faults, of which themselves had lewdly condemned him, pretending that twenty five African Bishops (a thing most false) had heard and examined his cause in a solemn Assembly, and that they all had given their sentence against him, holding his Election by the Canons of the Church void. The same factions and seditious persons coming also unto Florentinus, who was at that time a man imprisoned for the testimony of Jesus Christ, but yet a favourer of the error of Novatus, their malicious accusations he over-willingly hearkned unto, gave them credit, concurred with them, and unto Cyprian in time wrote his Letters against Cyprian: Which letters he justly taketh in marvellous evil part, and therefore severely controulleth his so great presumption, in making himself a Judge of a Judge, and as it were, a Bishops Bishop, to receive accusations against him, as one that had been his Ordinary. *What height of pride is this, saith Cyprian, what arrogancy of spirit, what a puffing up of minde, to call Guides and Priests to be examined and sifted before him? so that unless we shall be cleared in your Court, and absolved by your sentence, behold for these six years space, neither shall the Brotherhood have had a Bishop, nor the people a Guide, nor the Flock a Shepherd, nor the Church a Governor, nor Christ a Prelate, nor God a Priest.* This is the pride which Cyprian condemneth in Florentinus, and not the title or name of Archbishop, about which matter there was not at that time so much as the dream of any controversy at all between them. A jilly collection it is, that because Cyprian reproveth Florentinus for lightness of belief, and presumptuous rashness of judgement, therefore he held the title of Archbishop to be a vain and a proud name. Archbishops were chief amongst Bishops, yet Archbishops had not over Bishops that

T.C. 1. 1. 1.

162. 95.

"On + t + oja"

Ius ad id pas

in ius ius ad

ad id id id

Ius ad id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

ad id id id

that full Authority which every Bishop had over his own particular Clergy: Bishops were not subject unto their Archbishop as an ordinary, by whom at all times they were to be judged, according to the manner of inferior Pastors, within the compass of each Diocese. A Bishop might suspend, excommunicate, depose such as were of his own Clergy, without any other Bishops Assistants; not so in an Archbishop the Bishops that were in his own Province, above whom divers Prerogatives were given him, howbeit no such Authority and Power, as alone to be judge over them: For as a Bishop could not be ordained, so neither might he be judged by any one only Bishop, albeit that Bishop were his Metropolitan: Wherefore Cyprian, concerning the liberty and freedom which every Bishop had, spake in the Council of Carthage, whereat fourscore and seven Bishops were present, saying, *It rejoiceth that every of us declare, what we think of this matter, neither judging nor severing from the right of communion, any that shall think otherwise: For of us there is not any which maketh himself a Bishop of Bishops, or with Tyrannical fear, constraineth his Colleagues unto the necessity of obedience, inasmuch as every Bishop, according to the reach of his liberty and power, hath his own free judgement, and can no more have another his Judge, then himself be Judge to another. Whereby it appeareth, that amongst the African Bishops, none did use such Authority over any, as the Bishop of Rome did afterwards claim over all, forcing upon them opinions by main and a volute power. Wherefore unto the Bishop of Rome, the same Cyprian also writeth concerning his opinion about Baptism, These things we present unto your Conscience, most dear brother, as well for common honors sake, as of single and sincere love, trusting that as you are truly your self Religious and faithful, so those things which agree with Religion and Faith, will be acceptable unto you: Howbeit we know, that what some have overdrunk in, they will not let go, neither easily change their minde, but with care of preserving whole amongst their Brethren the bond of peace and concord, retaining still to themselves certain their own opinions wherewith they have been inured: Wherein we neither use force, nor prescribe a Law unto any, knowing that in the Government of the Church, every Ruler, hath his own voluntary free judgement, and of that which he doth shall render unto the Lord himself an account. As for the Council of Carthage, doth not the very first Canon thereof establish (a) with most effectual terms, all things which were before agreed on in the Council of Nice? And that the Council of Nice did ratifie the pre-eminence of Metropolitan Bishops, who is ignorant? The name of an Archbishop importeth only a Bishop, having chiefly of certain Prerogatives above his Brethren of the same Order. Which thing the Council of Nice doth allow, it cannot be that the other of Carthage should condemn it, inasmuch as this doth yield unto that a Christian unrestrained approbation.*

The thing provided for by the Synod of Carthage, can be no other therefore, then onely that the chiefest Metropolitan, where many Archbishops were within any greater Province, should not be termed by those names, as to import the power of an ordinary Jurisdiction, belonging in such degree and manner unto him, over the rest of the Bishops and Archbishops, as did belong unto every Bishop over other Pastors under him. But much more absurd it is to affirm, that both Cyprian and the Council of Carthage condemn even such Superiority also of Bishops themselves, over Pastors their inferiors, as the words of Ignatius imply, in terming the Bishop, *A Prince of Priests*. Bishops to be termed Archpriests, in regard of their Superiority over Priests, is in the writings of the ancient Fathers a thing so usual and familiar, as almost no one thing more. At the Council of Nice, saith (b) Theodoret, three hundred and eighteen Archpriests were present. Were it the meaning of the Council of Carthage, that the title of Chief-Priest, and such like, ought not in any sort at all to be given unto any Christian Bishop, what excuse should we make for (c) so many ancient, both Fathers, and Synods of Fathers, as have generally applied the title of Archpriest unto every Bishop's Office? High time I think it is, to give over the obstinate defence of this most miserable, forsaken cause, in the favour whereof, neither God, nor, amongst so many wise and vertuous men as Antiquity hath brought forth, any one can be found to have hitherto directly spoken. Unsome confusion must of necessity be the end whereunto all such vain and ungrounded confidence,

Council. Carthage.  
de heres. bapt.  
et aliis.

Lib. 1. ep. 1.

Νεχίαν οὐδέ  
δὲ ὁρῶντες  
οὐκ ἔστιν  
ἐκκλησίαν  
οὐκ ἔστιν.

T. C. L. 1. p. 113.

b Theodoret. Ezech. lib. 1. cap. 7. ἀρχιερεῖς.  
c Hieronymus contra Luciferian. salutem Ecclesiam proinde dicit alicui Sacerdotii dignitate, id est Episcopi. Idem est in Hieronymo summi sacerdotis quod ἀρχιεπίσκοπος in Carthagenensi Concilio. Vide C. Omnes 32. dist. Item C. Pontifices 12. q. 1. Item C. De his, Decretis, dist. 5.



ndence doth bring, as hath nothing to bear it out, but only an excessive measure of bold and peremptory words, holpen by the start of a little time, before they came to be examined. In the writings of the ancient Fathers, there is not any thing with more serious asseveration inculcated, then that it is God which maketh Bishops, that their Authority hath Divine allowance, that the Bishop is the Priest of God, that he is Judge in Christs stead, that according to Gods own Law, the whole Christian Fraternity standeth bound to obey him. Of this there was not in the Christian World of old any doubt or controversie made, it was a thing universally every where agreed upon. What should move men to judge that now so unlawful and naught, which then was so reverently esteemed? Surely no other cause but this, men were in those times meek, lowly, tractable, willing to live in dutiful law and subjection unto the Pastors of their souls: Now we imagine our selves to be every man to teach and direct all others, that none of us can brook it to have Superiors; and for a mask to hide our pride, we pretend falsely the Law of Christ, as if we did seek the execution of his will, when in truth we labour for the meer satisfaction of our own against his.

The second  
main thing  
wherein the  
state of Bi-  
shops suffer-  
eth obloquy,  
is their ho-  
nor.

Numb. 16.3.

XVII. The chiefest cause of disdain and murmur against Bishops in the Church of England, is, that evil-affected eye wherewith the World looked upon them, since the time that irreligious Prophanes, beholding the due and just advancements of Gods Clergy, hat under pretence of enmity unto Ambition and Pride, proceeded so far, that the contumely of old offered unto Aaron in the like quarrel, may seem very moderate and quiet dealing, if we compare it with the fury of our own times. The ground and original of both their proceedings, one and the same, in Declaration of their grievances they differ not; the complaints as well of the one as the other are, *Wherefore lift ye up your selves thus far above the Congregation of the Lord? it is too much which ye take upon you, too much power, and too much honor.* Wherefore as we have shewed, that there is not in their power any thing unjust or unlawful, so it reflecteth that in their honor also the like be done. The labour we take unto this purpose is by so much the harder, in that we are forced to wrangle with the stream of obstinate affection, mightily carried by a wilful prejudice, the dominion whereof is so powerful over them in whom it reigneth, that it giveth them no leave, no not as much as patiently to hearken unto any speech which doth not profess to feed them in this their bitter humor. Notwithstanding, forasmuch as I am perswaded, that against God they will not thrive, if they perceive once that in truth it is he against whom they open their mouths, my hope is their own confession will be at the length, *Behold we have done exceeding foolishly, it was the Lord, and we knew it not, him in his Ministers we have despised, we have in their honor impugned his.* But the alteration of mens hearts must be his good and gracious work, whose most Omnipotent Power framed them. Wherefore to come to our present purpose, Honor is no where due, saving only unto such as have in them that whereby they are found, or at the least presumed voluntarily beneficial unto them of whom they are honored. Wheresoever nature seeth the countenance of a man, it still presumeth that there is in him a minde willing to do good, if need require, inasmuch as by nature so it should be; for which cause men unto men do honor, even for very humanity sake. And unto whom we deny all honor, we seem plainly to take from them all opinion of humane dignity, to make no account or reckoning of them, to think them so utterly without vertue, as if no good thing in the World could be looked for at their hands. Seeing therefore it seemeth hard that we should so hardly think of any man, the precept of S. Peter is, *Honor all men.* Which duty of every man towards all, doth vary according to the several degrees whereby they are more or less beneficial, whom we do honour. *Honor the Physician,* saith the Wiseman. The reason why, because for necessities sake, God created him. Again, *Thou shalt rise up before the hoary head, and honor the person of the aged.* The reason why, because the younger sort have great benefit by their gravity, experience and wisdom, for which cause, these things the Wiseman termeth the Crown or Diadem of the aged. Honor due to Parents: The reason why, because we have our beginning from them, *Obey the Father that hath begotten thee, the mother that bare thee despise thou not.* Honor due unto Kings and Governors: The reason

1 Pet. 2.17

Eccles. 38.1

Levit. 19.32.

Eccles. 25.6.

Prov. 23.22.

reason why, because God hath set them for the punishment of evil doers, and for the praise of them that do well. Thus we see by every of these particulars, that there is always some kinde of vertue beneficial, wherein they excel, who receive honor, and that degrees of honor are distinguished, according to the value of those effects which the same beneficial vertue doth produce.

Nor is honor onely an inward estimation, whereby they are revered, and well thought of in the mindes of men, but honor whereof we now speak, is defined to be an External sign, by which we give a sensible testimony, that we acknowledge the beneficial vertue of others. Sarah honored her Husband Abraham; this appeareth by the title she gave him. The Brethren of Joseph did him honor in the Land of Egypt; their lowly and humble gesture sheweth it. Parents will hardly perswade themselves that this intentional honor, which reacheth no farther then to the inward conception onely, is the honor which their children owe them.

Touching that Honor which mystically agreeing unto Christ, was yielded literally and really unto Solomon; the words of the Psalmist concerning it are, *Unto him they shall give of the gold of Sheba, they shall pray for him continually, and daily bless him.* Weigh these things in themselves, titles, gestures, presents, other the like external signs wherein honor doth consist, and they are matters of no great moment. Howbeit, take them away; let them cease to be required, and they are not things of small importance, which that surcease were likely to draw after it. Let the Lord Mayor of London, or any other unto whose Office honor belongeth, be deprived but of that title which in it self is a matter of nothing; and suppose we that it would be a small maim unto the credit, force, and countenance of his Office? It hath not without the singular wisdom of God been provided, that the ordinary outward tokens of honor should for the most part be in themselves things of mean account; for to the end they might easily follow as faithful testimonies of that beneficial vertue whereunto they are due, it behoved them to be of such nature, that to himself no man might over eagerly challenge them, without blushing; nor any man where they are due withhold them, but with manifest appearance of too great malice or pride. Now soasmuch, as according to the ancient Orders and Customs of this Land, as of the Kingdom of Israel, and of all Christian Kingdoms through the World, the next in degree of honor unto the chief Sovereign, are the chief Prelates of Gods Church; what the reason hereof may be, it resteth next to be enquired.

XVIII. Other reason there is not any, wherefore such honor hath been judged due, saving onely that publique good which the Prelates of Gods Clergy are Authors of: For I would know, which of these things it is whereof we make any question, either that the favour of God is the chiefe pillar to bear up Kingdoms and States; or that true Religion publicly exercised, is the principal mean to retain the favour of God; or that the Prelates of the Church are they, without whom the exercise of true Religion cannot well and long continue? If these three be granted, then cannot the publique benefit of Prelacy be dissembled. And of the first or second of these, I look not for any protest denial: The World at this will blush not to grant at the leastwise in word as much as (a) Heathens themselves have of old with most earnest asseveration acknowledged; concerning the force of Divine grace in upholding Kingdoms. Again, though his mercy doth so far strive with mens ingratitude, that all kinde of Publique iniquities deservng his indignation, their safety is through his gracious Providence, many times nevertheless continued, to the end that amendment might, if it were possible, *Quis est tam viciis qui aut cum suspexit in caelum Deus esse non sentiat & ea que tanta mente sunt ut vix quispam arte ulla ordinem rerum ac vicissitudinem persequi possit, casu fieri putet, aut cum Deus esse intueretur non intell. got eorum numine hoc tantum imperium esse notum & audum & retentum? Cic. Orat. de harusp. responsis.*

What good doth publicly grow from the Prelacy.

*a Quis est tam viciis qui aut cum suspexit in caelum Deus esse non sentiat & ea que tanta mente sunt ut vix quispam arte ulla ordinem rerum ac vicissitudinem persequi possit, casu fieri putet, aut cum Deus esse intueretur non intell. got eorum numine hoc tantum imperium esse notum & audum & retentum? Cic. Orat. de harusp. responsis.*

Tit. 1. 3. C. de  
summa trinit.  
L. 43. C. de  
Episc. & cler.  
L. 14. C. de  
Episc. audient.

avert their envy: so that as well Commonweals, as particular persons, both may and do endure much longer, when they are careful, as they should be, to use the most effectual means of procuring his favour, on whom their continuance principally dependeth: Yet this point no man will stand to argue, no man will openly arm himself to enter into set Disputation against the Emperors Theodosius and Valentinian for making unto their Laws concerning Religion, this Preface, *Decere arbitramur nostrum imperium, subditos nostros de Religione communi facere. Ita enim & pleniorum acquiri Dei ac Salvatoris nostri Jesu Christi beniginitatem possibile esse existimamus, si quando & nos pro vicibus ipsi placere studuerimus, & nostros subditos ad eam rem instituerimus:* Or against the Emperor Justinian, for that he also maketh the like Profession, *Per Sanctissimas Ecclesias & nostrum imperium sustineri, & communes res clementissimi Dei gratia muniri credimus.* And in another place, *Certissime credimus, quia Sacerdotum puritas & decus, & ad Dominum Deum ac salvatorem nostrum Jesum Christum fervor, & ab ipsis missa perpetua preget multum favorem nostrae Reipublicae & incrementum praebent.*

Psal 77. 20.

Wherefore onely the last point is, that which men will boldly require us to prove; for no man seareth now to make it a question, *Whether the Prelacy of the Church be any thing available or no to effect the good and long continuance of true Religion?* Amongst the principal blessings wherewith God enriched Israel, the Prophet in the Psalm acknowledgeth especially this for one, *Thou didst lead thy people like sheep by the hands of Moses and Aaron.* That which sheep are, if Pastors be wanting, the same are the people of God, if so be they want Governors: And that which the principal Civil Governors are, in comparison of Regents under them, the same are the Prelates of the Church, being compared with the rest of Gods Clergy.

Qui sacerdotes in veteri testamento vocabantur hi sunt qui nunc Presbyteri appellantur: & qui tunc principes sunt dicuntur nunc presbyteri vocantur. Raba. Maur. de instit. cler. l. 1. c. 2. 6.

Wherefore inasmuch as amongst the Jews, the benefit of Civil Government grew principally from Moses, he being their principal Civil Governor. even so the benefit of spiritual Regiment grew from Aaron principally, he being in the other kinde their principal Rector, although even herein subject to the Sovereign Dominion of Moses. For which cause, these two alone are named as the heads and Well-springs of all. As for the good which others did in service either of the Commonwealth, or of the Sanctuary, the chiefest glory thereof did belong to the chiefest Governors of the one sort, and of the other, whose vigilant care and oversight kept them in their due order. Bishops are now, as High-Priests were then, in regard of power over other Priests, and in respect of subjection unto High-Priests: What Priests were then, the same now Presbyters are, by way of their place under Bishops: The ones Authority therefore being so profitable, how should the others bethought unnecessary. Is there any

man professing Christian Religion, which holdeth it not as a Maxime, That the Church of Jesus Christ did reap a singular benefit by Apostolical Regiment, not onely for other respects, but even in regard of that Prelacy, whereby they had and exercised power of jurisdiction over lower Guides of the Church? Prelates are herein the Apostles Successors, as hath been proved.

Thus we see, that Prelacy must needs be acknowledged exceedingly beneficial in the Church: And yet for more perspicuities sake, it shall not be pain superfluously taken, if the manner how be also declared at large. For this one thing not understood by the vulgar sort, causeth all contempt to be offered unto higher Powers, not onely Ecclesiastical, but Civil, whom when proud men have disgraced, and are therefore reproved by such as carry some dutiful affection of minde: The usual Apologies which they make for themselves, are these, *What more virtue in these great ones, then in others? we see no such eminent good which they do above other men.* We grant indeed, that the good which higher Governors do, is not so immediate and neer unto every of us, as many times the meaner labours of others under them, and this doth make it to be less esteemed.



But we must note, that it is in this case, as in a ship, he that sitteth at the Stern is quiet, he moveth not; he seemeth in a manner to do little or Nothing, in comparison of them that sweat about other toil, yet that which he doth is in value and force more then all the labours of the residue laid together. The influence of the Heavens above, worketh infinitely more to our good, and yet appeareth not half so sensible as the force doth of things below. We consider not what it is which we reap by the Authority of our chiefest spiritual Governors, nor are likely to enter into any consideration thereof, till we want them, and that is the cause why they are at our hands so unthankfully rewarded. Authority is a confining power, which power were needless, if we were all such as we should be, willing to do the things we ought to do without constraint. But because generally we are otherwise, therefore we all reap singular benefit by that Authority, which permitteth no men, though they would, to slack their duty. It doth not suffice that the Lord of an household appoint labourers what they shall do, unless he set over them some chief workman to see they do it. Constitutions and Canons made for the ordering of Church affairs, are dead Taskmasters. The due execution of Laws spiritual dependeth most upon the vigilant care of the chiefest spiritual Governors, whose charge is to see that such Laws be kept by the Clergy and people under them: With those duties which the Law of God, and the Ecclesiastical Canons require in the Clergy, lay Governors are neither for the most part so well acquainted, nor so deeply and nearly touched. Requisite therefore it is, that Ecclesiastical persons have authority in such things. Which kinde of Authority, maketh them that have it Prelates. If then it be a thing confest, as by all good men it needs must be, to have Prayers read in all Churches, to have the Sacraments of God administered, to have the mysteries of Salvation painfully taught, to have God every where devoutly worshipped, and all this perpetually, and with quietness, bringeth unto the whole Church, and unto every member thereof, inestimable good; how can that Authority, which hath been proved the Ordinance of God for preservation of these duties in the Church, how can it choose but deserve to be held a thing publickly most beneficial? It were to be wished, and is to be laboured for, as much as can be, that they who are set in such rooms, may be furnished with honorable qualities and graces, every way fit for their calling: But be they otherwise, howsoever so long as they are in Authority, all men reap some good by them, albeit not so much good as if they were abler men. There is not any amongst us all, but is a great deal more apt to exact another mans duty, then the best of us is to discharge exactly his own; and therefore Prelates, although neglecting many ways their duty unto God and men, do notwithstanding by their Authority great good, in that they keep others at the leastwise in some awe under them.

It is our duty therefore in this consideration, to honor them that rule as Prelates; which Office if they discharge well, the Apostles own verdict is, that the honor they have, they be worthy of, yea, though it were double: And if their Government be otherwise, the judgement of sage men hath ever been this, that albeit the dealings of Governors be culpable, yet honorable they must be, in respect of that Authority by which they govern. Great caution must be used, that we neither be emboldened to follow them in evil, whom for Authorities sake we honor; nor induced in Authority to dishonor them, whom as examples we may not follow. In a word, not to dislike sin, though it should be in the highest, were unrighteous meekness, and proud righteousness it is to condemn or dishonor Highness, though it should be in the sinfulness of men that live. But so hard it is to obtain at our hands, especially as now things stand, the yielding of honor, to whom honor in this case becometh, that by a brief Declaration only, what the Duties of men are towards the principal Guides and Pastors of their souls, we cannot greatly hope to prevail, partly for the malice of their open adversaries, and partly for the cunning of such as in a sacrilegious intent work their dishonor under covert, by more mystical and secret means. Wherefore requisite, and in a manner necessary it is, that by particular instances we make it even palpably manifest, what singular benefit and use publique, the nature of Prelates is apt to yield.

First, no man doubteth but that unto the happy condition of Commonwealths, it is a principal help and furtherance, when in the eye of Forreign States, their esti-

Deut. 4. 6.

Mat. 5. 13.

mation and credit is great. In which respect, the Lord himself commending his own Laws unto his people, mentioneth this as a thing not meanly to be accounted of, that their careful obedience yielded therunto, should purchase them a great good opinion abroad, and make them every where famous for wisdom. Fame and reputation groweth, especially by the vertue, not of common ordinary persons, but of them which are in each estatemost eminent, by occasion of their higher place and calling. The mean mansactions, be they good or evil, they reach not far, they are not greatly enquired into, except perhaps by such as dwell at the next door; whereas men of more ample dignity, are as Cities on the tops of Hills, their lives are viewed afar off; so that the more there are which observe aloof what they do, the greater glory by their well doing they purchase, both unto God whom they serve, and to the state wherein they live. Wherefore if the Clergy be a beautifying unto the body of this Commonweal in the eyes of Foreign beholders; and if in the Clergy, the Prelacy be most exposed unto the Worlds eye, what publique benefit doth grow from that order, in regard of reputation thereby gotten to the Land from abroad, we may soon conjecture? Amongst the Jews (their Kings excepted) who so renowned throughout the World, as their High-Priest, who so much, or so often spoken of, as their Prelates?

2. Which order is not for the present only the most in sight, but for that very cause also the most commended unto Posterity: For if we search those Records wherein there hath descended from age to age, whatsoever notice and intelligence we have of those things which were before us, is there any thing almost else, surely not any thing so much kept in memory, as the successions, doings, sufferings, and affairs of Prelates. So that either there is not any publique use or that light which the Church doth receive from Antiquity; or if this be absurd to think, then must we necessarily acknowledge our selves beholden more unto Prelates, then unto others their inferiors, for that good of direction which Ecclesiastical actions recorded do always bring.

3. But to call home our cogitations, and more inwardly to weigh with our selves, what principal commodity that order yieldeth, or at leastwise is of it own disposition and nature apt to yield; Kings and Princes, partly for information of their own consciences, partly for instruction what they have to do in a number of most weighty affairs, intangled with the cause of Religion, having, as all men know, so usual occasion of often consultations and conferences with their Clergy; suppose we, that no publique detriment would follow, upon the want of honorable Personages Ecclesiastical to be used in those cases? It will be haply said, *That the highest might learn to stoop, and not to disdain the advice of some circumspect, wise, and virtuous Minister of God, albeit the Ministry were not by such degrees distinguished.* What Princes in that case might or should do, it is not material. Such difference being presupposed therefore, as we have proved already to have been the Ordinance of God, there is no judicious man will ever make any question or doubt, but that fit and direct it is, for the highest and chiefest order in Gods Clergy, to be employed before others, about so near and necessary Offices as the sacred estate of the greatest on earth doth require. For this cause Joshua had Eliazer; David, Abiathar; Constantine, Hosius Bishop of Corduba; other Emperors and Kings their Prelates, by whom in private (for with Princes this is the most effectual way of doing good) to be admonished, counselled, comforted, and if need were, reproved.

Whensoever Sovereign Rulers are willing to admit these so necessary private conferences, for their spiritual and ghostly good, inasmuch as they do for the time while they take advise, grant a kinde of Superiority unto them of whom they receive it, albeit haply they can be contented, even so far to bend to the gravest and chiefest persons in the order of Gods Clergy, yet this of the very best being rarely and hardly obtained, now that there are whose greater and higher callings do somewhat more proportion them unto that ample conceit and spirit, wherewith the minde of so powerable persons are possessed; what should we look for in case God himself not authorizing any by miraculous means, as of old he did his Prophets, the equal meanness of all did leave, in respect of calling, no more place of decency for one, then for another to be admitted? Let unexperienced wits imagine what pleaseth them, in having to deal with so great Personages, these personal differences are so necessary, that there must be regard had of them.

4. King-

4. Kingdoms being principally (next unto Gods Almightyness, and the Soveraignty of the highest under God) upheld by wisdom, and by valour, as by the chieftest humane means to cause continuance in safety with honor (for the labours of them who attend the service of God, we reckon as means Divine, to procure our protection from Heaven,) from hence it riseth, that men excelling in either of these, or descending from such, as for excellency either way have been enabled, or possessing howsoever the rooms of such as should be in Politique wisdom, or in Martial prowesse eminent, are had in singular recommendation. Notwithstanding, because they are by the state of Nobility great, but not thereby made inclinable to good things; such they oftentimes prove even under the best Princes, as under *David* certain of the Jewish Nobility were. In Polity and Counsel the World had not *Achisapels* equal, nor *Hell* his equal in deadly malice. *Joab* the General of the Host of *Israel*, valiant, industrious, fortunate in War; but withal headstrong, cruel, treacherous, void of piety towards God; in a word, so conditioned, that euen it is not to define, whether it were for *David* harder to miss the benefit of his Warlike hability, or to bear the enormity of his other crimes. As well for the cherishing of those virtues therefore, wherein if Nobility do chance to flourish, they are both an ornament and a stay to the Commonwealth wherein they live; as also for the bridling of those disorders, which if they loosly run into, they are by reason of their greatness dangerous; what help could there ever have been invented more Divine, then the sorting of the Clergy into such degrees, that the chieftest of the Prelacy being matched in a kinde of equal yoke, as it were, with the higher, the next with the lower degree of Nobility, the reverend Authority of the one, might be to the other as a courteous bridle, a mean to keep them lovingly in aw that are exorbitant, and to correct such excesses in them, as whereunto their courage, state and dignity maketh them over prone? O that there were for encouragement of Prelates herein, that inclination of all Christian Kings and Princes towards them, which sometime a famous King of this Land either had, or pretended to have; for the countenancing of a principal Prelate under him, in the actions of spiritual Authority.

Let my Lord Archbishop know (saith he) that if a Bishop, or Earl, or any other great Person, yea, if my own chosen Son, shall presume to withstand, or to binder his will and disposition, whereby he may be withheld from performing the work of the Embassage committed unto him; such a one shall finde, that of his contempts I will shew my self no less a Persecutor and Revenger, then if Treason were committed against mine own very Crown and Dignity. Sith therefore by the Fathers and first Founders of this Commonwealth, it hath upon great experience and foresight, been judged most for the good of all sorts, that as the whole Body Politique wherein we live, should be for strengths sake a threefold Cable, consisting of the King as a Supreme Head over all, of Peers and Nobles under him, and of the people under them; so likewise, that in this conjunction of States, the second wreath of that Cable should, for important respects, consist as well of Lords Spiritual as Temporal: Nobility and Prelacy being by this mean twined together, how can it possibly be avoided, but that the tearing away of the one, must needs exceedingly weaken the other, and by consequent impair greatly the good of all?

5. The force of which detriment there is no doubt, but that the common sort of men would feel to their helpless wo, how goodly a thing soever they now surmise it to be, that themselves and their godly Teachers did all alone without controulment of their Prelate: For if the manifold jeopardies whereto a people destitute of Pastors is subject, be unavoidable without Government; and if the benefit of Government, whether it be Ecclesiastical or Civil, do grow principally from them who are principal therein, as hath been proved out of the Prophet, who albeit the people of *Israel* had sundry inferior Governors, ascribeth not unto them the publique benefit of Government, but maketh mention of *Moses* and *Aaron*, onely the chief Prince, and chief Prelate, because they were the well-spring of all the good which others under them did; may we not boldly conclude, that to take from the people their Prelate, is to leave them in effect without Guides, at leastwise, without those Guides which are the strongest hands that God doth direct them by? Thou didst lead thy people like sheep, saith the Prophet, by the hands of *Moses* and *Aaron*.

Petr. Bishop.  
Ep. 5.

Psal. 77. 20.



If now there arise any matter of grievance between the Pastor and the people that are under him, they have their Ordinary, a Judge indifferent to determine their causes, and to end their strife. But in case there were no such appointed to sit, and to hear both, what would then be the end of their quarrels? They will answer perhaps, *That for such purposes, their Synods shall serve.* Which is, as if in the Commonwealth the higher Magistrates being removed, every Township should be a State, altogether free and independent; and the Controversies which they cannot end speedily within themselves, to the contentment of both parties, should be all determined by solemn Parliaments. Merciful God! where is the light of wit and judgement, which this age doth so much vaunt of, and glory in, when unto these such odd imaginations, so great, not onely assent, but also applause is yielded?

6. As for those in the Clergy, whose place and calling is lower, were it not that their eyes are blinded, lest they should see the thing, that of all others, is for their good most effectual, somewhat they might consider the benefit which they enjoy by having such in Authority over them, as are of the self same Profession, Society and Body with them; such as have trodden the same steps before; such as know by their own experience, the manifold intolerable contempts and indignities which faithful Pastors, intermingled with the multitude, are constrained every day to suffer in the exercise of their spiritual charge and function, unless their Superiors, taking their causes even too heart, be by a kinde of sympathy drawn to relieve and aid them in their vertuous proceedings, no less effectually, then loving Parents their dear children.

Thus therefore Prelacy being unto all sorts so beneficial, ought according'y to receive honor at the hands of all: But we have just cause exceedingly to fear, that those miserable times of confusion are drawing on, wherein *the people shall be oppressed one of another*, inasmuch as already that which prepareth the way thereunto is come to pass, *children presume against the ancient, and the vile against the honorable*: Prelacy, the temperature of excesses in all estates, the glew and soder of the Publique weal, the ligament which tieth and connecteth the limbs of this Body Politique each to other, hath instead of deserved honor, all extremity of disgrace; the foolish every where plead, that unto the wife in heart they ow neither service, subjection nor honor.

Ita. 3. 1.

What kinde  
of honor be  
due unto Bi-  
shops.

XIX. Now that we have laid open the causes for which honor is due unto Prelates, the next thing we are to consider, is, *what kinde of honor be due.* The good Government either of the Church, or the Commonwealth, dependeth scarcely on any one external thing, so much as on the Publique Marks and Tokens, whereby the estimation that Governors are in, is made manifest to the eyes of men. True it is, that Governors are to be esteemed according to the excellency of their vertues; the more vertuous they are, the more they ought to be honored, if respect be had unto that which every man should voluntarily perform unto his Superiors. But the question is now, of that honor which Publique Order doth appoint unto Church Governors, in that they are Governors; the end whereof is, to give open, sensible testimony, that the place which they hold is judged publiquely in such degree beneficial, as the marks of their excellency, the honors appointed to be done unto them do import. Wherefore this honor we are to do them, without presuming ourselves to examine how worthy they are; and withdrawing it, if by us they be thought unworthy. It is a note of that publique judgement which is given of them, and therefore not tolerable that men in private, should by refusal to do them such honor, reverse as much as in them lieth the publique judgement. If it deserve so grievous punishment, when any particular person adventurern to deface those marks whereby is signified what value some small piece of Coyne is publicly esteemed at; is it sufferable that honors, the characters of that estimation which publicly is had of publique Estates and Callings in the Church, or Commonwealth, should at every mans pleasure be cancelled? Let us not think that without most necessary cause, the same have been thought expedient. The first Authors thereof were wise and judicious men; they knew it a thing altogether impossible, for each particular in the multitude to judge what benefit doth grow unto them from their Prelates, and thereupon uniformly

uniformly to yield them convenient honor. Wherefore that all sorts might be kept in obedience and awe, doing that unto their Superiors of every degree, not which every mans special fancy should think meet, but which being beforehand agreed upon as meet, by publique sentence and decision, might afterwards stand as a rule for each in particular to follow; they found that nothing was more necessary, then to allot unto all degrees their certain honor, as marks of publique judgement, concerning the dignity of their places; which mark, when the multitude should behold, they might be thereby given to know, that of such or such estimation their Governors are, and in token thereof, do carry those notes of excellency. Hence it groweth, that the different notes and signs of Honor, do leave a correspondent impression in the mindes of common beholders. Let the people be asked who are the chiefest in any kinde of calling? who most to be listned unto? who of greatest account and reputation? and see if the very discourse of their mindes, lead them not unto those sensible marks, according to the difference whereof they give their suitable judgement, esteeming them the worthiest persons who carry the principal note, and publique mark of worthiness. If therefore they see in other estates a number of tokens sensible, whereby testimony is given what account there is publickly made of them, but no such thing in the Clergy; what will they hereby, or what can they else conclude, but that where they behold this, surely in that Commonwealth, Religion, and they that are conversant about it, are not esteemed greatly beneficial? Whereupon to time, the open contempt of God and godliness, must needs ensue: *Qui bona fide Deo colit, amat & Sacerdotes*, saith Papinius. In vain doth that Kingdom or Commonwealth pretend zeal to the honor of God, *Prof. L. S. Silva;* which doth not provide that his Clergy also may have honor. Now if all that are employed in the service of God, should have one kinde of honor, what more confused, absurd, and unseemly? Wherefore in the honor which hath been allotted unto Gods Clergy, we are to observe, how not onely the kindes thereof, but also in every particular kinde, the degrees do differ. The honor which the Clergy of God hath hitherto enjoyed, consisteth especially in pre-eminence of Title, Place, Ornament, Attendance, Priviledge, Endowment. In every of which it hath been evermore judged meet, that there should be no small odds between Prelates, and the inferior Clergy.

XX. Concerning title, albeit even as under the Law, all they whom God had severed to offer him sacrifice, were generally termed Priests; so likewise the name of Pastor or Presbyter, be now common unto all that serve him in the Ministry of the Gospel of Jesus Christ: Yet both then and now the higher Orders, as well of the one sort, as of the other, have by one and the same congruity of reason, their different titles of honor, wherewith we finde them in the phrase of ordinary speech exalted above others. Thus the Heads of the twenty four companies of Priests, are in Scripture termed Archpriests; *Aaron*, and the successors of *Aaron* being above those Archpriests; themselves are in that respect further entituled, High and Great. After what sort Antiquity hath used to stile Christian Bishops, and to yield them in that kinde honor more then were meet for inferior Pastors, I may the better omit to declare, both because others have sufficiently done it already; and in so slight a thing, it were but a loss of time to bestow further travel. The allegation of Christs prerogative to be named an Arch-pastor simply, in regard of his absolute excellency over all, is no impediment, but that the like title in an unlike signification, may be granted unto others besides him, to note a more limited Superiority, whereof men are capable enough, without derogation from his glory, then which nothing is more Sovereign. To quarrel at syllables, and to take so pour exceptions at the first four letters in the name of an Archbishop, as if they were manifestly stollen goods, whereof restitution ought to be made to the Civil Magistrate, toucheth no more the Prelates that now are, then it doth the very blessed Apostle, who giveth unto himself the title of an Archbuilder.

As for our Saviours words, alledged against the title of Lordship and Grace, we have before sufficiently opened how far they are drawn from their natural meaning, & bolster up a cause which they nothing at all concern: Bishop *Theodoros* entitleth most

Honor in title, place, ornament, attendance, and priviledge.

*ap. 1. p. 10.*

Lib 5. ap. 8.  
Hisor. 1 cc. of.  
L. 7. C. de sum-  
ma Trinit.  
L. 33. C. de  
Episc. & cler.  
L. 16. C. de sa-  
crof. Ecclief.  
Mat. 23. 6, 7.  
They love to  
have the  
chief seats in  
the Assem-  
blies; and to  
be called of  
men Rabbi.

Ecclus 45. 7.

most honorable. Emperors writing unto Bishops, have not disdained to give them their appellations of honor, *Your Holiness, your Blessedness, your Amplitude, your Highness*, and the like: Such as purposely have done otherwise, are noted of insolent singularity and pride.

Honor done by giving pre-eminence of place unto one sort before another, is for decency, order, and quietness sake so needful, that both Imperial Laws and Canons Ecclesiastical, have made their special provisions for it. Our Saviours invective against the vain affectation of Superiority, whether in title, or in place, may not hinder these seemly differences usual in giving and taking honor, either according to the one, or the other.

Some thing there is even in the Ornaments of honor also: Otherwise idle it had been for the Wiseman speaking of *Aaron*, to stand so much upon the circumstance of his Priestly attire, and to urge it as an argument of such dignity and greatness in him: *An everlasting Covenant God made with Aaron, and gave him the Priesthood among the people, and made him blessed through his comely ornament, and clothed him with the garment of honor.* The Robes of a Judge do not add to his virtue; the chiefest Ornament of Kings is Justice; holiness and purity of conversation doth much more adorn a Bishop, than his peculiar form of cloathing. Notwithstanding, both Judges, through the garments of judicial Authority, and through the ornaments of Sovereignty, Princes, yea Bishops through the very attire of Bishops, are made blessed, that is to say, marked and manifested they are to be such, as God hath poured his blessing upon, by advancing them above others, and placing them where they may do him principal good service. Thus to be called is to be blessed, and therefore to be honored with the signs of such a calling, must needs be in part a blessing also; for of good things, even the signs are good.

Of honor, another part is Attendancy; and therefore in the visions of the glory of God, Angels are spoken of as his attendants. In setting out the honor of that mystical Queen, the Prophet mentioneth the Virgin Ladies which waited on her. Amongst the tokens of *Solomon's* honorable condition, his servants and waiters, the sacred History omitteth not. This doth prove attendants a part of honor: But this as yet doth not shew with what attendancy Prelates are to be honored. Of the High-Priests retinue amongst the Jews, somewhat the Gospel it self doth intimate: And albeit our Saviour came to Minister, and not, as the Jews did imagine their Messiah should, to be ministered unto in this World, yet attended on he was by his blessed Apostles, who followed not onely as scholars, but even as servants about him. After that he had sent them, as himself was sent of God, in the midst of that hatred and extreme contempt which they sustained at the Worlds hands, by Saints and Believers this part of honor was most plentifully done unto them. Attendants they had provided in all places where they went; which custom of the Church was still continued in Bishops, their successors, as by *Ignatius* it is plain to be seen. And from hence no doubt, those Acolytes took their beginning, of whom so frequent mention is made, the Bishops attendants, his followers they were, in regard of which service, the name of Acolytes seemeth plainly to have been given. The custom for Bishops to be attended upon by many, is as *Justinian* doth shew, ancient: The affairs of Regiment, wherein Prelates are employed, make it necessary, that they always have many about them, whom they may command, although no such thing did by way of honor belong unto them.

Some mens judgment is, that if Clerks, Students, and Religious Persons were more, common Servingmen and lay Retainers fewer then they are in Bishops Palaces, the use, and the honor thereof would be much more suitable than now. But these things, concerning the number and quality of persons fit to attend on Prelates, either for necessity, or for honors sake, are rather in particular discretion to be ordered, then to be argued of by disputes. As for the vain imagination of some, who teach the original hereof to have been a preposterous imagination of *Maximian* the Emperor, who being addicted unto Idolatry, chose of the choicest Magistrates to be Priests; and to the end they might be in great estimation, gave unto each of them a train of followers: And that Christian Emperors, thinking the same would promote Christianity, which promoted superstition, endeavoured to make their Bishops encounter and match with those Idolatrous Priests; such frivolous conceits

having

To Cal. p. 126.  
out of 81. 1. 8.  
ca. 15.



having no other ground then conceit, we weigh not so much as to frame any answer unto them, our declaration of the true original of ancient attendancy on Bishops being sufficient. Now if that which the light of sound reason doth teach to be fit, have upon like inducements reasonable, allowable and good, approved it self in such wise as to be accepted, not onely of us, but of Pagans and Infidels also? doth conformity with them that are evil in that which is good, make that thing which is good evil? We have not herein followed the Heathens, nor the Heathens us, but both we and they one and the self same Divine rule, the light of a true and sound understanding, which sheweth what honor is fit for Prelates, and what attendancy convenient to be a part of their honor.

Touching priviledges granted for honors sake, partly in general unto the Clergy; and partly unto Prelates the chiefest persons Ecclesiastical in particular: of such quality and number they are, that to make but rehearse of them, we scarce think it safe, lest the very entrails of some of our godly Brethren, as they term themselves should thereat haply burst in sunder.

L. 12. C. de sac.  
Eccles. 45 C. de  
sac. Eccles. la. C.  
de Epif. & cler.  
l. 10 C. de Epif.  
& cler.

XXI. And yet of all these things rehearsed, it may be there never would have grown any question, had Bishops been honored onely thus far, forth. But the honouring of the Clergy with wealth, this is in the eyes of them which pretend to seek nothing but meer Reformation of abuses, a sin that can never be remitted.

Honor by  
endowment  
with Lands  
and Livings.

How soon, O how soon might the Church be perfect, even without any spot or wrinkle, if Publique Authority would at the length say Amen; unto the holy and devout requests of those godly Brethren, who as yet with out-stretched necks, groan in the pangs of their zeal to see the Houses of Bishops rifled, and their so long desired Livings gloriously divided amongst the Righteous. But there is an impediment, a let, which somewhat hindreth those good men's prayers from taking effect: They in whose hands the Sovereignty of Power and Dominion over this Church doth rest, are perswaded there is a God; for undoubtedly either the name of Godhead is but a feigned thing, or if in Heaven there be a God, the Sacrilegious intention of Church-Robbers, which lurketh under this plausible name of Reformation, is in his sight a thousand times more hateful then the plain professed malice of those very Miscreants, who threw their vomit in the open face of our blessed Saviour.

They are not words of perswasion by which true men can hold their own, when they are over beset with Thieves: And therefore to speak in this cause at all were but labour lost, saving onely in respect of them, who being as yet unjoynt unto this Conspiracy, may be haply somewhat stayed, when they shall know betimes, what it is to see Thieves, and to run on with them, as the Prophet in the Psalm speaketh, *When thou sawest a Thief, then thou consentedst with him, hast been partakers with Adulterers.*

Psal. 50. 18.

For the better information therefore of men which carry true, honest and indifferent mindes, these things we will endeavour to make most clearly manifest:

First, That in Goods and Livings of the Church, none hath propriety but God himself.

Secondly, That the honour which the Clergy therein hath, is to be, as it were Gods Receivers, the honour of Prelates to be his chief and principal Receivers.

Thirdly, That from him they have right, not onely to receive, but also to use such Goods, the lower sort in smaller; and the higher in larger measure.

Fourthly, That in case they be thought, yea, or found to abuse the same, yet may not such honour be therefore lawfully taken from them, and be given away unto persons of other calling.

## XXII. Possessions, Lands and Livings Spiritual, the wealth of the Clergy, the

That of Ecclesiastical goods, and consequently of the Lands and Livings which Bishops enjoy, the property belongeth unto God alone. *a Host. 1. 5.*

goods of the Church are in such sort the Lords own, that man can challenge no propriety in them. His they are, and not ours; all things are his, in that from him they have their being. *(a) My corn, and my wine, and mine oyl,* saith the Lord. All things his, in that he hath absolute power to dispose of them at his pleasure. *Mine,* saith he,

*Psal. 50. 10.*

*are the sheep and oxen of a thousand hills:* All things his, in that when we have them, we may say with *Job,* *God hath given;* and when we are deprived of them, *the Lord,* whose they are, hath likewise *taken them away* again. But these sacred possessions are his by another tenure: His, because those men who first received them from him, have unto him returned them again, by way of Religious gift, or oblation: And in this respect it is, that the Lord doth term those Houses wherein such gifts and Oblations were laid, *his Treasuries.*

*Job 1. 21.*

*Mal. 3. 10.*

*Prov 3. 9.*

*Sermon.*

The ground whereupon men have resigned their own interest in things Temporal, and given over the same unto God, is that Precept which *Solomon* borroweth from the Law of Nature, *Honor the Lord out of thy substance, and of the chiefest of all thy revenue: so shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and with new wine, the fate of thy press, shall overflow:* For although it be by one most fitly spoken against those superstitious persons that onely are scrupulous in external Rites. *Wilt thou win the favour of God? Be virtuous. They best worship him, that are his followers.* It is not the bowing of your knees, but of your hearts; it is not the number of your oblations, but the integrity of your lives; not your incense, but your obedience, which God is delighted to be honored by: Nevertheless, we must beware lest simply understanding this, which comparatively is meant, that is to say, whereas the meaning is, that God doth chiefly respect the inward disposition of the heart, we must take heed we do not hereupon so worship him in Spirit, that outwardly we take all Worship, Reverence and honor from him.

Our God will be glorified both of us himself, and for us by others: To others, because our hearts are known, and yet our example is required for their good; therefore it is not sufficient to carry Religion in our hearts, as fire is carried in flint stones, but we are outwardly, visibly, apparently, to serve and honor the living God, yea, to employ that way, as not onely our souls, but our bodies; so not onely our bodies, but our goods, yea, the choice, the flower, the chiefest of all thy revenue, saith *Solomon:* If thou hast any thing in all thy possessions of more value and price then other, to what use shouldest thou convert it, rather then this? *Samuel* was dear unto *Hanna* his Mother: The childe that *Hannah* did so much esteem, she could not but greatly wish to advance, and her Religious conceit was, that the honoring of God with it, was the advancing of it unto honor. The chiefest of the off-spring of men are, the males which be first-born, and for this cause, in the ancient World, they all were by right of their birth Priests to the most High. By these and the like presidents, it plainly enough appeareth, that in what heart soever doth dwell unfeigned Religion, in the same there resteth also a willingness to bestow upon God that soonest, which is most dear. Amongst us the Law is, that sith Gold is the chiefest of mettals, if it be any where found in the bowels of the earth, it belongeth in right of honor, as all men know, to the King: Whence hath this custom grown, but onely from a natural perswasion, whereby men judge it decent, for the highest persons always to be honored with the choicest things? *If ye offer unto God the blinde,* saith the Prophet *Malachi,* *it is not evil; if the lame and sick, it is good enough. Present it unto thy Prince, and see if he will content himself, or accept thy person,* saith the Lord of Hosts. When *Abel* presented God with an offering, it was the fattest of all the Lambs in his whole flock; he honored God not onely out of his substance, but out of the very chiefest therein, whereby we may somewhat judge, how religiously they stand affected towards God, who grudge that any thing worth the having should be his. Long it were to reckon up particularly, what God was owner of under the Law: For of this sort was all which they spent in Legal Sacrifices; of this sort their usual oblations and offerings; of this sort

*Mal. 1. 8.*

tythes

Tithes and First-fruits; of this sort that which by extraordinary occasions they vowed unto God; of this sort all that they gave to the building of the Tabernacle; of this sort all that which was gathered amongst them for the erecting of the Temple, and the (a) adorning of it erected; of this sort whatsoever their Corban contained, wherein that blessed Widows Deodate was laid up. Now either this kinde of honor was prefiguratively altogether ceremonial, and then our Saviour accepteth it not, or if we find that to him also it hath been done, and that with divine approbation given for encouragement of the World, to shew by such kinde of service their dutiful hearts towards Christ, there will be no place left for men to make any question at all, whether herein they do well or no.

(a) Because (saith David) I have delight in the House of my God, therefore I have given thereunto of mine own both Gold and Silver to adorn it with, 2 Chron. 31.

Wherefore to descend from the Synagogue unto the Church of Christ; albeit sacrifices wherewith sometimes God was highly honoured, be not accepted as heretofore at the hands of men: Yet forasmuch as Honor God with thy riches is an Edict of the unseparable Law of Nature, so far forth as men are therein required by such kind of homage to testify their thankful minds, this sacrifice God doth accept still. Wherefore as it was said of Christ, *That all Kings should worship him, and all Nations do him service*; so this very kinde of worship or service was likewise mentioned lest we should think that our Lord and Saviour would allow of no such thing. *The Kings of Tharbis and of the Isles shall bring presents, the Kings of Seba and of Seba shall bring gifts.* And as it maketh not a little to the praise of those sages mentioned in the Gospel, that the first amongst men which did solemnly honour our Saviour on earth were they; so it soundeth no less to the dignity of this particular kinde that the rest by it were prevented; *They fell down and worshipped him, and opened their treasures, and presented unto him gifts, gold, and incense, and mirr.*

Psal. 50. 13, 14

Phil. 4. 18.

Psal. 72. 11.

Matth. 2. 11

Of all those things which were done to the honour of Christ in his life time there is not one whereof he spake in such sort, as when Mary to testify the largeness of her affection, seemed to waste away a gift upon him, the price of which gift might, as they thought who saw it, much better have been spent in works of mercy towards the poor, *Verily, I say unto you, whosoever this Gospel shall be preached throughout all the world, there shall also this that she hath done be spoken of for memorial of her.* Of service to God, the best works are they which continue longest: And for permanency what like Donation, whereby things are unto him for ever dedicated? That the ancient Lands and Livings of the Church were all in such sort given into the hands of God by the just lords and owners of them, that unto him they passed over their whole interest and right therein, the form of sundry the said Donations as yet extant, most plainly sheweth. And where time hath left no such evidence as now remaining to be seen; yet the same intention is presumed in all Donors, unless the contrary be apparent. But to the end it may yet more plainly appear unto all men under what title the several kinds of Ecclesiastical possessions are held, Our Lord himself (saith Saint Augustine) had coffers to keep those things which the faithful OFFERED unto him. Then was the form of the Church-treasury first instituted, to the end, that whilst we might understand that the forbidding to be careful for to morrow, his purpose was not to bar his Saints from keeping money, but to withdraw them from doing God service for wealths sake, and from forsaking righteousness through fear of losing their wealth.

Matth. 26. 13.

Joh. 15. 16.

Aug. ep. 15. de mend.

The first gifts consecrated unto Christ after his departure out of the world were sums of money, in process of time other moveables were added, and at length goods unmoveable, Churches and Oratories hallowed to the honour of his glorious Name, Houses and Lands for perpetuity conveyed unto him, inheritance given to remain his as long as the world should endure. (b) The Apostles (saith Melchior) they foresaw that God would have his Church amongst the Gentiles; and for that cause in Judaea they took no lands but price of lands sold. This he conjectureth to have been the cause why the Apostles did that which the History reporteth of them.

b.c. 12. q. 1. cap. 15. 16.



The truth is, that so the state of those times did require, as well other where, as in *Judea*: Wherefore when afterwards it did appear much more commodious for the Church to dedicate such inheritances; then the value and price of them being sold, the former custom was changed for this, as for the better. The Devotion of *Constantine* herein all the World even till this very day admireth: They that lived in the prime of the Christian World, thought no Testament Christianly made, nor any thing therein well bequeathed, unless something were thereby added unto Christs Patrimony: Touching which men, what judgement the world doth now give, I know not; perhaps we deem them to have been herein but blind and superstitious persons. Nay, we in these cogitations are blinde; they contrariwise did with *Salomon* plainly know and perswade themselves, that thus to diminish their wealth, was not to diminish, but to augment it, according to that which God doth promise to his own people, by the Prophet *Malachi*, and which they by their own particular experience found true: If *Wickliff* therefore were of that opinion which his adversaries ascribe unto him (whether truly, or of purpose to make him odious, I cannot tell, for in his writings I do not finde it) namely, That *Constantine*, and others following his steps did evil, or having no sufficient ground whereby they might gather, that such Donations are acceptable to *Jesus Christ*, it was in *Wickliff* a palpable error. I will use but one onely Argument to stand in the stead of many: *Jacob* taking his journey unto *Haram*, made in this sort his solemn vow, *If God will be with me, and will keep me in this journey which I go, and will give me bread to eat, and clothes to put on, so that I come again to my Fathers house in safety, then shall the Lord be my God, and this stone which I have set up a pillar, shall be the buse of God, and of all that thou shalt give me, will I give the tenth unto thee.* May a Christian man desire as great things as *Jacob* did at the hands of God? may he desire them in as earnest manner? may he promise as great thankfulness acknowledging the goodness of God? may he vow any certain kinde of publique acknowledgement before hand; or though he vow it not, perform it after in such sort, that men may see he is perswaded how the Lord hath been his God? Are these particular kinde of testifying thankfulness to the God, the erecting of Oratories, the dedicating of lands and goods to maintain them, forbidden any where? Let any mortal man living shew but one reason wherefore in this point to follow *Jacobs* example, should not be a thing both acceptable unto God, and in the eyes of the World for ever most highly commendable? Concerning goods of this nature, goods whereof when we speak, we term them *res sacre*, the goods that are consecrated unto God; and as *Tertullian* speaketh, *Deposita pietatis*, things which Piety and Devotion hath laid up, as it were, in the bosom of God: Touching such goods, the Law Civil following meer light of Nature, defineth them to be no mans, because no mortal man, or community of men, hath right of propriety in them.

### XXIII. Persons Ecclesiastical are Gods Stewards, not onely for that he hath

That Ecclesiastical persons are receivers of Gods rents, and that the honor of Prelates is, to be thereof his chief receivers, not without liberty from him granted, of converting the same unto their own use, even in large manner. (a) Numb. 18. 24. (b) Numb. 18. 28. (c) Numb. 31.

set them over his Family, as the Ministers of Ghostly food; but even for this very cause also, that they are to receive and dispose his temporal Revenues, the gifts and oblations which men bring him. Of the Jews it is plain, that their tythes they offered unto the Lord, and those (a) offerings the Lord bestowed upon the Levites. When the Levites gave the tenth of their tythes, this their gift the Law doth term the Lords heave-offering, and (b) appoint that the High-Priest should receive the same. (c) Of spoils taken in War, that part which they were accustomed to separate unto God, they brought it before the Priest of the Lord, by whom it was laid up in the Tabernacle of the Congregation, for a memorial of their thankfulness towards God, and his goodness towards them, in fighting for them against their enemies. As therefore the Apostle magnifieth the honor of *Melchisedec*, in that he being an High-Priest, did receive at the hands of *Abraham* the tythes which *Abraham* did honor God with: so it argueth in the Apostles themselves great honor, that at their feet the price of those possessions was laid, which men thought good to bestow on Christ.

Heb 7.3.

Acts 4.34.

S. Paul commending the Churches which were in Macedonia, for their exceeding liberality this way, saith of them, that he himself would bear record, they had declared their forward mindes, according to their power, yea, beyond their power, and had so much exceeded his expectation of them; that they seemed, as it were, *even to give away themselves first to the Lord*, saith the Apostle, and then by the will of God unto us: To him, as the owner of such gifts; to us, as his appointed receivers and dispensers. The gift of the Church of Antioch, bestowed unto the use of distressed Brethren which were in Judea, Paul and Barnabas did deliver unto the Presbyters of Jerusalem; and the head of those Presbyters was James, he therefore the chiefest disposer thereof.

Amongst those Canons which are entituled Apostolical, one is this, *We appoint, that the Bishop have care of those things which belong to the Church*; the meaning is, of Church goods, as the reason following sheweth: For if the precious souls of men must be committed unto him of trust; much more is bestowed the charge of money to be given him, that by his Authority the Presbyters and Deacons may administer all things to them that stand in need. So that he which hath done them the honor to be, as it were, his Treasurers, hath left them also authority and power to use these his treasures, both otherwise, and for the maintenance even of their own estate; the lower sort of the Clergy, according unto a meaner: the higher after a larger proportion. The use of spiritual goods and possessions, hath been a matter much disputed of; grievous complaints there are usually made against the evil and unlawful usage of them; but with no certain determination hitherto, on what things and persons; with what proportion and measure they being bestowed, do retain their lawful use. Some men condemn it as idle, superfluous, and altogether vain, that any part of the treasure of God should be spent upon costly Ornaments, appertaining unto his service: who being best worshipped, when he is served in Spirit and truth, hath not for want of pomp and magnificence, rejected at any time those who with faithful hearts have adored him. Whereupon the Hereticks, termed *Henriciani* and *Petrobustiani*, threw down Temples and Houses of Prayer, erected with marvelous great charge, as being in that respect not fit for Christ by us to be honored in. We deny not, but that they who sometime wandered as Pilgrims on earth, and had no Temples, but made caves and dens to pray in, did God such honor as was most acceptable in his sight; God did not reject them for their poverty and nakedness sake: Their Sacraments were not abhorred for want of vessels of Gold.

Howbeit, let them who thus delight to plead, answer me; when *Moses* first, and afterwards *David*, exhorted the people of Israel unto matter of charge about the service of God; suppose we it had been allowable in them to have thus pleaded, *Our Fathers in Egypt served God devoutly, God was with them in all their afflictions, he heard their prayers, piloted their case, and delivered them from the tyranny of their oppressors; what House, Tabernacle, or Temple had they?* Such Argumentations are childish and fond; God doth not refuse to be honored at all, where there lacketh wealth; but where abundance and store is, he there requireth the flower thereof, being bestowed on him, to be employed even unto the Ornament of his service: In Egypt the state of his people was servitude, and therefore his service was accordingly. In the Desert they had no sooner ought of their own, but a Tabernacle is required; and in the Land of Canaan a Temple. In the eyes of *David* it seemed a thing not fit, a thing not decent, that himself should be more richly seated then God.

But concerning the use of Ecclesiastical goods bestowed this way, there is not so much contention amongst us, as what measure of allowance is fit for Ecclesiastical persons to be maintained with. A better rule in this case to judge things by, we cannot possibly have, then the Wisdom of God himself; by considering what he thought meet for each degree of the Clergy to enjoy in time of the Law; what for Levites; what for Priests, and what for High-Priests, somewhat we shall be the more able to discern rightly, what may be fit, convenient, and right for the Christian Clergy likewise. Priests for their maintenance had those first-fruits of (a) Cattel, (b) Corn, Wine, Oyl, and (c) other commodities of the earth, which

Can. 41. *Eccl. Antioch. ca. 25.*

*Encomium Ixur. Et de ecclesiasticis opibus ministris, in domibus suis velat Augustinus*

John 4.24.

Heb. 11.38.

a Num 18.15.

b Num. 13.

c Num. 13.

d Verſ. 15.  
e Verſ. 8.  
f Lev. 27. 11.  
Verſ. 14.  
Numb. 18. 2.  
g Verſ. 8.  
h Verſ. 9.  
i Verſ. 21.  
k Verſ. 28.

the Jews were accuſtomed yearly to preſent God with. They had (d) the price which was appointed for men to pay in lieu of the firſt-born of their children, and the price of the firſt-born alſo amongſt Cattel, which were unclean: They had the vowed (e) gifts of the people, or (f) the prices, if they were redeemable by the Dohors after vow, as ſome things were: They had the (g) free, and unwoven oblations of men: They had the remainder of things (h) ſacrificed: With (i) tythes the Levites were maintained, and with the (k) tythe of their tythes, the High-Prieſt.

1 Chron. 3.

Gen. 47. 21.

Numb. 35. 7.  
Joſh. 14. 4.

Deut. 18. 8.  
Lev. 25. 33, 34.

In a word, if the quality of that which God did aſſign to his Clergy be conſidered, and their manner of receiving it, without labour, expence, or charge, it will appear, that the Tribe of Levi being but the twelfth part of *Iſrael*, had in effect as good as four twelfth parts of all ſuch goods as the holy Land did yield: So that their Worldly eſtate was four times as good as any other Tribes in *Iſrael* beſides. But the High-Prieſts condition, how ample? to whom belonged the tenth of all the tythe of this Land, eſpecially the Law providing alſo, that as the people did bring the beſt of all things unto the Prieſts and Levites, ſo the Levite ſhould deliver the choice and flower of all their commodities to the High-Prieſt, and ſo his tenth part by that mean be made the very beſt part amongſt ten: By which proportion, if the Levites were ordinarily in all not above thirty thouſand men (whereas when *David* numbred them, he found almoſt thirty eight thouſand above the age of thirty years) the High Prieſt after this very reckoning, had as much as three or four thouſand others of the Clergy to live upon. Over and beſides all this, left the Prieſts of *Egypt* holding Lands, ſhould ſeem in that reſpect better provided for, then the Prieſts of the true God, it pleaſed him further to appoint unto them forty and eight whole Cities, with Territories of Land adjoining, to hold as their own free Inheritance for ever. For to the end they might have all kinde of encouragement, not onely to do what they ought, but to take pleaſure in that they did: albeit they were expreſſly forbidden to have any part of the Land of *Canaan* laid out whole to themſelves, by themſelves, in ſuch ſort as the reſt of the Tribes had, forasmuch as the will of God was, rather that they ſhould throughout all Tribes be diſperſed, for the eaſier acceſs of the people unto knowledge: Yet were they not barred altogether to hold a land, nor yet otherwiſe the worſe provided for, in reſpect of that former reſtraint; for God by way of ſpecial pre-eminence, undertook to feed them at his own table, and out of his own proper treaſury to maintain them, that want and penury they might never feel, except God himſelf did firſt receive injury. A thing moſt worthy our conſideration, is the wiſdom of God herein; for the common ſort being prone unto envy and murmur, little conſidereth of what neceſſity, uſe and importance, the ſacred duties of the Clergy are, and for that cauſe hardly yieldeth them any ſuch honor, without repining and grudging thereat; they cannot brook it, that when they have laboured, and come to reap, there ſhould ſo great a portion go out of the fruit of their labours, and be yielded up unto ſuch as ſweat not for it. But when the Lord doth challenge this as his own due, and require it to be done by way of homage unto him, whoſe meer liberality and goodneſs had raiſed them from a poor and ſervile eſtate, to place them where they had all thoſe ample and rich poſſeſſions, they muſt be worſe then bruiſt beaſts, if they would ſtorm at any thing which he did receive at their hands. And for him to beſtow his own on his own ſervants (which liberty is not denied unto the meaneſt of men) what man liveth that can think it other then moſt reaſonable? Wherefore no cauſe there was, why that which the Clergy had, ſhould in any mans eye ſeem too much, unleſs God himſelf were thought to be of an over-having diſpoſition.

Deut. 10. 9.  
Joſh. 13. 14.  
Numb. 18. 24.

Verſ. 19.

This is the mark whereat all thoſe ſpeeches drive, *Levi hath no part nor inheritance with his brethren, the Lord is his inheritance*; again, *To the Tribe of Levi, he gave no inheritance, the Sacrifices of the Lord God of Iſrael an inheritance of Levi*; again, *The tribes of the which they ſhall offer as an offering unto the Lord, I have given the Levites for an inheritance*; and again, *All the heave-offerings of the holy things which the children of Iſrael ſhall offer unto the Lord, I have given thee, and thy ſons, and thy daughters with thee, ſo be a duty for ever, it is a perpetual Covenant of ſalt before the Lord*. Now that, if ſuch proviſion be poſſible to be made, the Chriſtian Clergy ought not herein to be inferior



ferior unto the Jewish, What sounder proof then the Apostles own kinde of Argument? *De ye not know, that they which minister about the holy things, eat of the things of the temple? and they which wait at the Altar are partakers with the Altar? So even SO hath the Lord ordained, that they which preach the Gospel should live of the Gospel.* Upon which words I thus conclude, that if the people of God do abound, and abounding can so far forth finde in their hearts to shew themselves towards Christ their Saviour, thankful as to honour him with their riches (which no Law of God or Nature forbiddeth) no less then the ancient Jewish people did honour God; the plain ordinance of Christ appointeth as large and as ample proportion out of his own treasure unto them that serve him in the Gospel as ever the priests of the law did enjoy? what further proof can we desire? It is the blessed Apostles testimony, That even so the Lord hath ordained. Yea, I know not whether it be found to interpret the Apostle otherwise then that whereas he judgeth the Presbyters which rule well in the Church of Christ to be worthy of double honour, he means double unto that which the Priests of the Law received; For if that Ministry which was of the letter were so glorious, how shall not the Ministry of the Spirit be more glorious? If the teachers of the Law of Moses, which God delivered written with letters in tables of stone were thought worthy of so great honour, how shall not the teachers of the Gospel of Christ be in his sight most worthy, the Holy Ghost being sent from heaven to ingrave the Gospel on their hearts who first taught it, and whose successors they that teach it at this day are? So that according to the Ordinance of God himself, their estate for worldly maintenance ought to be no worse then is granted unto other sorts of men, each according to that degree they were placed in. Neither are we so to judge of their worldly condition, as if they were servants of men, and at mens hands did receive those earthly benefits by way of stipend in lieu of pains whereunto they are hired; nay that which is paid unto them is homiage and tribute due unto the Lord Christ. His servants they are, and from him they receive such goods by way of stipend. Not so from men? For at the hands of men, he himself being honored with such things, hath appointed his servants therewith according to their several degrees and places to be maintained. And for their greater encouragement who are his labourers he hath to their comfort assured them for ever, that they are in his estimation worthy the hire which he alloweth them; and therefore if men should withdraw from him the store which those his servants that labour in his work are maintained with, yet he in his Word shall be found everlastingly true, their labour in the Lord shall not be forgotten; the hire he accounteth them worthy of, they shall surely have either one way or other answered.

1 Cor. 9. 13.

1 Tim. 5. 17.

2 Cor. 3. 8.

Vide 22. 4. 17.

et. 1.

1 Tim. 5. 18.

Acts 4. 35.

Acts 2. 44.

In the prime of the Christian world, that which was brought and laid down at the Apostles feet, they disposed of by distribution according to the exigence of each mans need. Neither can we think that they who out of Christs treasury made provision for all others, were careless to furnish the Clergy with all things fit and convenient for their estate: And as themselves were cheifest in place of authority, and calling, so no man doubteth but that proportionably they had power to use the same for their own decent maintenance. The Apostles with the rest of the Clergy in Jerusalem lived at that time according to the manner of a fellowship or Collegiate Society maintaining themselves and the poor of the Church with a common purse, the rest of the faithful keeping that purse continually stored. And in that sense it is that the sacred History saith, *All which believed were in one place, and had all things common.* In the Histories of the Church, and in the Writings of the Ancient Fathers for some hundreds of years after we finde, no other way for the maintenance of the Clergy but onely this, the treasury of Jesus Christ furnished through mens devotion, bestowing sometimes Goods, sometimes Lands that way, and out of his treasury the charge of the service of God was defrayed, the Bishop and the Clergy under him maintained, the poor in their necessity ministred unto. For which purpose, every Bishop had some one of the Presbyters under him to be \* Treasurer of the Church, to receive, keep, and deliver all; which Office in Churches Cathedral remaineth even till this day, albeit the use thereof be not altogether so large now as heretofore. The disposition of these goods was by the appointment of the Bishop. Wherefore (a) Prosper speaking of the Bishops care herein

\* Diff. en. P. off. de vita contemp. l. 2. c. 12. De con. l. 1. 4. c. de sac. eccles. & Nov. 17. in princip.

\* Prosp. de vita contemp. l. 1. 2. c. 16.

faithy

saith, It was necessary for one to be troubled therewith, so the end that the rest under him might be the freer to attend quietly their spiritual business. And lest any man should imagine that Bishops by this means were hindered themselves from attending the service of God, Even herein, saith he, they do God service; for if those things which are bestowed on the Church by God, be doth the work of God, who not of a covetous mind, but with purpose of most faithful administration, taketh care of things consecrated unto God. And forasmuch as the Presbyters of every Church could not all live with the Bishop, partly for that their number was great, and partly because the people being once divided into Parishes, such Presbyters as had severally charge of them were by that mean more conveniently to live in the midst each of his own particular flock, there-

¶ *Cypr. lib. 4. ep. 5. Presbyteri honorem designasse nos illis jam flant ut & Sportula eisdem cum Presbyteris honoratur, & Sportulae munus aequis quantitatibus participant, sicuti nobiscum pariter & cura vrain acris suis.* Which words of Cypris do shew, that every Presbyter had his standing allowance out of the Church treasury; that besides the same allowance called *sportula*, some also had their portion in that dividend which which was the remainder of every moneths expence; thirdly, that out of the Presbyters under him, the Bishop as then had certain number of the gravest, who lived and communed always with him.

*Præf. de vita contemp. l. 1. c. 9. Pater Diacon i. vita C. pr.*

fore a competent number being fed at the \* same table with the Bishop, the rest had their whole allowance apart, which several allowances were called *Sportula*, and they who received them, *Sportulantes fratres*. Touching the Bishop, as his place and estate was higher, so likewise the proportion of his charges about himself, being for that cause in all equity and reason greater, yet forasmuch as his stint herein was no other then it pleased himself to set, the rest (as the manner of inferiors is to think that they which are over them always have too much) grudged many times at the measure of the Bishops private expence, perhaps not without cause: Howsoever, by this occasion there grew amongst them great heart-burning, quarrel and strife: where the Bishops were found culpable, as eating too much beyond their tether, and drawing more to their own private maintenance then the proportion of Christs patrimony being not greatly abundant could bear, sundry constitutions hereupon were made to moderate the same, according to the Churches condition in those times. Some before they were made Bishops, having been owners of ample possessions, sold them, and gave them away to the poor: Thus did *Paulinus*, *Hilary*, *Cyprian*, and sundry others. Hereupon, they who entering into the same Spiritual and high function, held their Secular possessions still, were hardly thought of: And even when the case was fully resolved, that so to do was not unlawful, yet it grew a question, *Whether they lawfully might then take anything out of the Publick Treasury of Christ?* a question, *Whether Bishops, holding by Civil title, sufficient to live of their own, were bound in Conscience to leave the goods of the Church altogether to the use of others.* Of contentions about these matters there was no end, neither appeared there any possible way for quietness, otherwise then by making partition of Church Revenues, according to the several ends and uses for which they did serve, that so the Bishops part might be certain. Such partition being made, the Bishop enjoyed his portion several to himself; the rest of the Clergy likewise theirs; a third part was severd to the furnishing and upholding of the Church; a fourth to the erection and maintenance of Houses wherein the poor might have relief. After which separation made, Lands and Livings began every day to be dedicated unto each use severally, by means whereof every of them became in short time much greater then they had been for worldly maintenance, the fervent devotion of men being glad that this new opportunity was given, of shewing zeal to the House of God in more certain order.

By these things it plainly appeareth, what proportion of maintenance hath been ever thought reasonable for a Bishop; sith in that very partition agreed on, tobring him unto his certain stint, as much is allowed unto him alone, as unto all the Clergy under him, namely, a fourth part of the whole yearly Rents and Revenues of the Church. Nor is it likely, that before those Temporalities, which now are such eye-fores, were added unto the honor of Bishops, their state was so mean as some imagine: For if we had no other evidence then the covetous and ambitious humour of Hereticks, whose impotent desires of aspiring thereunto, and extreme discontentment as oft as they were defeated, even this doth shew that the state of Bishops was not a few degrees advanced above the rest. Wherefore of grand Apostates which were in the very prime of the Primitive Church, thus *Lollantius*

above

above thirteen hundred years sithence testified, *Men of a slippery faith they were, who Laſt de vera feigning that they knew and worſhipped God, but ſeeking onely that they might grow in WEALTH and Honor, affected the place of the HIGHEST PRIESTHOOD; whereunto when their betters were choſen before them, they thought it better to leave the Church, and to draw their favourers with them, then to endure thoſe men their Governors, whom themſelves deſired to govern.* Now whereas againſt the preſent eſtate of Biſhops, and the greatneſs of their poſt, and the largeneſs of their expences at this day, there is not any thing more commonly objected then thoſe ancient Canons, whereby they are reſtrained unto a far more ſparing life, their houſes, their retinue, their diet limited within a far more narrow compaſs then is now kept; we muſt know, that thoſe Laws and Orders were made, when Biſhops lived of the ſame purſe which ſerved as well for a number of others, as them, and yet all at their diſpoſing: So that convenient it was to provide, that there might be a moderate ſtint appointed to meaſure their expences by, leſt others ſhould be injured by their waſtefulneſs. Contrariwiſe there is now no cauſe wherefore any ſuch Law ſhould be urged, when Biſhops live only of that which hath been peculiarly allotted unto them: They having therefore Temporalities and other revenues to beſtow for their own private uſe, according to that which their ſtate requireth, and no other having with them any ſuch common intereſt therein, their own diſcretion is to be their Law for this matter; neither are they to be preſſed with the rigour of ſuch ancient Canons as were framed for other times, much leſs ſo odiously to be upbraided with unconformity unto the pattern of our Lord and Saviours eſtate, in ſuch circumſtances as himſelf did never minde to require, that the reſt of the world ſhould of neceſſity be like him. Thus againſt the wealth of the Clergy, they allege how meanly Chriſt himſelf was provided for; againſt Biſhops Palaces, his want of a hole to hide his head in; againſt the ſervice done unto them, that he came to miniſter, not to be miniſtered unto in the world. Which things, as they are not unfit to controul covetous, proud or ambitious deſires of the Miniſters of Chriſt, and even of all Chriſtians, whatſoever they be; and to teach men contentment of minde, how mean ſoever their eſtate is, conſidering that they are but ſervants to him, whoſe condition was far more abaſed then theirs is, or can be; ſo to prove ſuch difference in ſtate between us and him unlawful, they are of no force or ſtrength at all. If one convented before their Conſiſtories, when he ſtandeth to make his answer, ſhould break out into invectives againſt their Authority, and tell them, that Chriſt when he was on earth, did not fit to judge, but ſtand to be judged; would they hereupon think it requiſite to diſſolve their Elderſhip, and to permit no Tribunals, no Judges at all, for fear of ſwarving from our Saviours example? If thoſe men, who have nothing in their mouthes more uſual, then the poverty of Jeſus Chriſt and his Apoſtles, allege not this as *Julian* ſometime did, *Beaſti pauperes*, unto Chriſtians, when his meaning was to ſpoil them of that they had; our hope is then, that as they ſeriously and ſincerely wiſh, that our Saviour Chriſt in this point may be followed, and to that end onely propoſe his bleſſed example; ſo at our hands again they will be content to hear with like willingneſs, the holy Apoſtles Exhortation, made unto them of the Laity alſo, *Be ye followers of us, even as we are of Chriſt; let us be your example, even as the Lord Jeſus* *1 Cor. 11. 1.* *Phil. 2. 16.* *Chriſt is ours, that we may all proceed by one and the ſame rule.*

XXIV. But beware we of following Chriſt, as Thieves follow true men, to take their goods by violence from them. Be it that Biſhops were all unworthy, not onely of living, but even of life, yet what hath our Lord Jeſus Chriſt deſerved, for which men ſhould judge him worthy to have the things that are his given away from him, unto others that have no right unto them; For at this mark it is, that the head lay- Reformers do all aim. Muſt theſe unworthy Prelates give place; what then? Shall better ſucceed in their room? Is this deſired, to the end that others may enjoy their Honors, which ſhall do Chriſt more faithful ſervice then they have done? Biſhops are the worſt men living upon earth; therefore let their ſanctified Poſſeſſions be divided: Amongſt whom? O bleſſed Reformation! O happy men, that put to their helping hands for the furtherance of ſo good and glorious a work! Wherefore

That for their unworthineſs, to deprive both them and their ſucceſſors of ſuch goods, and to convey the ſame unto men of ſecular calling were extreme ſacrilegious injuſtice.



Psal. 7. 8.

Epiph. contra  
haer. l. 3. 10. 1.  
bar. 70.

a Amnian.  
Mancel li. 6. 17.  
b Vide in vita  
Greg. 1. 1.  
c Nemo gradum  
sacerdotii pretii  
venalitate mer-  
cetuz: quantum  
quisque meretur  
non quantum  
dare sufficit  
estimetur. Pro-  
fello enim quis  
locus tutus &  
qua causa esse  
poterit excusata  
si veneranda  
Dei templa pe-  
cuniis expugnentur? Quam murum integritatis aut valium providimus si auri sacra fames in penetralia veneranda proferpat?

quid dmiq; cautum esse poterit aut securum si sanctitas incorrupta corrumpatur? Cesset altissimis imminere profanus ardet eva-  
ritie; & sacris adytis repellatur piaculare flagitium. Itaq; cultus & lumini vestris temporibus eligatur Episcopus, ut quocumq; luca-  
rum perventis omnia vita propria integritate purificet. Nec presbiteri precibus ordinatur. Antist. l. 31. C. de Episc. & Cler.

albeit the whole World at this day do already perceive, and posterity be likewise after a great deal more plainly to discern; not that the Clergy of God is thus heaved at because they are wicked, but that means are used to put it into the heads of the simple multitude, that they are such indeed; to the end that those who thirst for the Spoil of Spiritual Possessions, may till such time as they have their purpose, be thought to cover nothing but onely the just extinguishment of unreformable persons; so that in regard of such men's intentions, practices, and machinations against them, the part that suffereth these things, may most fitly pray with David, *Judge thou me, O Lord, according to my Righteousness, and according unto mine innocency: O let the malice of the wicked come to an end, and be thou the guide of the just.* Notwithstanding, forasmuch as it doth not stand with Christian humility otherwise to think, then that this violent outrage of men, is a rod in the ireful hands of the Lord our God, the smart whereof we deserve to feel: Let it not seem grievous in the eyes of my reverend L. L. the Bishops, if to their good consideration, I offer a view of those sores which are in the kinde of their heavenly function, most apt to breed, and which being not in time cured, may procure at the length that which God of his infinite mercy avert. Of Bishops in his time St. Jerome complaineth, that they took it in great disdain to have any fault, great or small found with them. Epiphanius likewise before Jerome, noteth their impatience this way, to have been the very cause of a Schism in the Church of Christ; at what time one Audius, a Man of great integrity of life, full of faith and zeal towards God, beholding those things which were corruptly done in the Church, told the B. B. and Presbyters their faults in such sort as those men are wont, who love the truth from their hearts, and walk in the pathes of a most exact life. Whether it were covetousness, or sensuality in their lives; absurdity or error in their teaching; any breach of the Laws and Canons of the Church wherein he espied them faulty, certain and sure they were to be thereof most plainly told. Which thing, they whose dealings were justly culpable, could not bear; but instead of amending their faults, bent their hatred against him who sought their amendment, till at length they drove him by extremity of infestation, through weariness of striving against their injuries, to leave both them, and with them the Church. Amongst the manifold accusations, either generally intended against the Bishops of this our Church, or laid particularly to the charge of any of them, I cannot finde that hitherto their spitefullest adversaries have been able to say justly, that any man for telling them their personal faults in good and Christian sort, hath sustained in that respect much persecution. Wherefore notwithstanding mine own inferior estate and calling in Gods Church, the consideration whereof assureth me, that in this kinde the sweetest Sacrifice which I can offer unto Christ, is meek obedience, reverence and awe unto the Prelates which he hath placed in seats of higher Authority over me, emboldned I am, so far as may conveniently stand with that duty of humble subjection, meekly to crave, my good L. L. your favourable pardon, if it shall seem a fault thus far to presume; or if otherwise, your wonted courteous acceptation,

— Sinite haec haud mollia fatu

Antist. l. 12.

Sublatis aperire dolis

In government, be it of what kinde soever, but especially if it be such kinde of Government as Prelates have over the Church, there is not one thing publicly more hurtful then that an hard opinion should be conceived of Governors at the first: And a good opinion how should the World ever conceive of them for their after-proceedings in Regiment, whose first access and entrance thereunto, giveth just occasion to think them corrupt men, which fear not that God, in whose name they are to rule? Wherefore a scandalous thing it is to the Church of God, and to the Actors themselves dangerous, to have aspired unto rooms of Prelacy by wicked means. We are not at this day troubled much with that tumultuous kinde of ambition wherewith the elections of (a) Damasus in S. Jeromes age, and of (b) Maximus in Gregories time, and of others, were long sitheence stained. Our greatest fear is rather the evil which (c) Leo and Anthemius did by Imperial constitution, endeavour as much as in them lay to prevent. He which granteth, or he which receiveth the office and dig-

nity

nity of a Bishop, otherwise then becometh a thing Divine and most holy; he which bestoweth, and he which obtaineth it after any other sort then were honest and lawful to use; if our Lord Jesus Christ were present himself on earth to bestow it even with his own hands, sinneth a sin by so much more grievous then the sin of *Balaazar*, by how much Offices and Functions heavenly are more precious then the meanest ornaments or implements which thereunto appertain. If it be as the Apostle saith, That the Holy Ghost doth make Bishops, and that the whole action of making them is Gods own deed, men being therein but his Agents; what spark of the fear of God can there possibly remain in their hearts, who representing the person of God in naming worthy men to Ecclesiastical charge, do sell that which in his name they are to bestow, or who standing as it were at the Throne of the Living God do bargain for that which at his hands they are to receive? Wo worth such impious and irreligious profanations. The Church of Christ hath been hereby made, not a den of thieves, but in a manner the very dwelling place of foul spirits; for undoubtedly, such a number of them have been in all ages who thus have climbed into seat of Episcopal Regiment.

2. Men may by orderly means be invested with spiritual Authority, and yet do harm by reason of ignorance how to use it to the good of the Church. It is faith *hryssom*, *μάταις ἀκούουσιν* *ἀκούουσιν* *ἡ ἀκούουσιν*; a thing highly to be accounted of, but an hard thing to be that which a Bishop should be. Yea a hard and a toilsome thing it is, for a Bishop to know the things that belong unto a Bishop. A right good man may be a very unfit Magistrate. And for discharge of a Bishops Office, to be well minded is not enough, no not to be well learned also. Skill to instruct is a thing necessary, skill to govern much more necessary in a Bishop. It is not safe for the Church of Christ, when Bishops learn what belongeth unto Government, as Empericks learn phylick by killing of the sick. Bishops were wont to be men of great learning in the Laws both Civil and of the Church; and while they were so, the wisest men in the land for Counsel and Government were Bishops.

3. Know we never so well what belongeth unto a charge of so great moment, yet can we not therein proceed but with hazard of publique detriment if we relye on our selves alone, and use not the benefit of conference with others. A singular mean to unity and concord amongst themselves, a marvellous help unto uniformity in their dealings, no small addition of weight and credit unto that which they do, a strong bridle unto such as watch for occasions to stir against them; finally, a very great stay unto all that are under their Government, it could not chuse but be soon found, if Bishops did often and seriously use the help of mutual consultation. These three rehearsed are things onely preparatory unto the course of Episcopal proceedings. But the hurt is more manifestly seen which doth grow to the Church of God by faults inherent in their several actions, as when they carelessly ordein, when they institute negligently, when corruptly they bestow Church-Livings, Benefices, Prebends, and rooms especially of Jurisdiction, when they visit for gain-sake, rather then with serious intent to do good; when their Courts erected for the maintenance of good Order are disordered; when they regard not the Clergy under them; when neither Clergy nor Laity are kept in that awe for which this authority should serve; when any thing appeareth in them rather then a fatherly affection towards the flock of Christ; when they have no respect to posterity; and finally, when they neglect the true and requisite means whereby their authority should be upheld. Surely the hurt which groweth out of these defects must needs be exceeding great. In a Minister, ignorance and disability to teach is a main, nor is it held a thing allowable to ordain such, were it not for the avoiding of a greater evil which the Church must needs sustain, if in so great scarcity of able men, and unsufficiency of most Parishes throughout the Land to maintain them, both publick Prayer and the administration of Sacraments should rather want, then any man thereunto be admitted lacking dexterity and skill to perform that which otherwise was most requisite. Wherefore the necessity of ordaining such is no excuse for the rash and careless ordaining of every one that hath but a friend to bestow some two or three words of ordinary commendation in his behalf. By reason whereof the Church groweth burdened with silly creatures more then need, whose noted baseness and insufficiency bringeth their very Order it self into contempt.

It may be that the fear of a *Quare impedit* doth cause institutions to pass more easily than otherwise they would. And to speak plainly the very truth, it may be that Writs of *Quare non impedit*, were for these times most necessary in the others place: Yet where Law will not suffer men to follow their own judgement, to shew the ir judgement they are not hindred. And I doubt not but that even conscienceless and wicked Patrons, of which sort, the swarms are too great in the Church of England, are the more imboldened to present unto Bishops any refuse, by finding so easie acceptance thereof. Somewhat they might redress this sore, notwithstanding so strong impediments, if it did plainly appear that they took it indeed to heart, and were not in a manner contented with it.

Shall we look for care in admitting whom others present, if that which some of your selves confer, be at any time corruptly bestowed? A foul and an ugly kinde of deformity it hath, if a man do but think what it is for a Bishop to draw commodity and gain from those things whereof he is left a free bestower, and that in trust, without any other obligation then his sacred Order onely, and that religious Integrity which hath been presumed on in him. Simoniacal corruption I may not for honors sake suspect to be amongst men of so great place. So often they do not I trust offend by sale, as by unadvised gift of such preferments, where-in that ancient Canon should specially be remembered, which forbiddeth a Bishop to beale by humane affection, in bestowing the things of God. A fault no where so hurtful, as in bestowing places of jurisdiction, and in furnishing Cathedral Churches, the Prebendaries and other Dignities whereof are the very true successors of those ancient Presbyters which were at the first as Counsellors unto Bishops. A foul abuse it is, that any one man should be loaded as some are with Livings in this kinde, yea some even of them who condemn utterly the granting of any two Benefices unto the same man, whereas the other is in truth a matter of far greater sequel, as experience would soon shew, if Churches Cathedral being furnished with the residence of a competent number of vertuous, grave, wise and learned Divines, the rest of the Prebends of every such Church were given within the Diocese unto men of worthiest desert, for their better encouragement unto industry and travel; unless it seem also convenient to extend the benefit of them unto the learned in Universities, and men of special imployment otherwise in the affairs of the Church of God. But howsoever, surely with the publick good of the Church it will hardly stand, that in any one person such favours be more multiplied, then law permitteth, in those Livings which are with Cure.

Touching Bishops Visitations, the first institution of them was profitable to the end that the state and condition of Churches being known, there might befor evils growing convenient remedies provided in due time. The observation of Church Laws, the correction of faults in the service of God and manners of men, these are things that Visitors should seek. When these things are inquired of formally, and but for custom sake, fees and pensions being the onely thing which is sought, and little else done by Visitations; we are not to marvel if the baseness of the end doth make the action it self loathsome. The good which Bishops may do not onely by these Visitations belonging ordinarily to their Office, but also in respect of that power which the Founders of Colledges have given them of special trust, charging even fearfully their consciences therewith: the good I say which they might do by this their authority, both within their own Diocese, and in the well-springs themselves, the Universities, is plainly such as cannot chuse but add weight to their heavy accounts in that dreadful day if they do it not.

In their Courts, where nothing but singular integrity and Justice should prevail, if palpable and gross corruptions be found, by reason of Offices so often granted unto men who seek nothing but their own gain, and make no account what disgrace doth grow by their unjust dealings unto them under whom they deal, the evil hereof shall work more then they which procure it do perhaps imagine.

At the hands of a Bishop the first thing looked for is a care of the Clergy under him, a care that in doing good they may have whatsoever comforts and encouragements his countenance, authority and place may yeild. Otherwise what heart shall they have to proceed in their painful course, all sorts of men besides being so ready



ready to malign, despise, and every way oppress them? Let them finde nothing but disdain in Bishops; in the enemies of present Government, if that way they list to betake themselves, all kinde of favourable and friendly helps; unto which part think we it likely that men having wit, courage and stomach will incline?

As great a fault is the want of severity when need requireth, as of kindness and courtesie in Bishops. But touching this, what with ill usage of their power amongst the meaner, and what with disfaige amongst the higher sort, they are in the eyes of both sorts as Bees that have lost their sting. It is a long time since any great one hath felt, or almost any one much feared the edge of that Ecclesiastical severity, which sometime beld Lords and Dukes in a more religious awe then now the meane are able to be kept.

A Bishop, in whom there did plainly appear the marks and tokens of a fatherly affection towards them that are under his charge, what good might he do ten thousand ways more then any man knows how to set down? But the souls of men are not loved, that which Christ shed his blood for, is not esteemed precious. This is the very root, the fountain of all negligence in Church-Government.

Most wretched are the terms of mens estate when once they are at a point of wretchedness so extream, that they bend not their wits any further then onely to shift out the present time, never regarding what shall become of their Successors after them. Had our Predecessors so loosely cast off from them all care and respect to posterity, a Church Christian there had not been about the regiment whereof we should need at this day to strive. It was the barbarous affection of Nero, that the ruine of his own Imperial Seat he could have been well enough contented to see, in case he might also have seen it accompanied with the fall of the whole World: An affection not more intollerable then theirs, who care not to overthrow all posterity, so they may purchase a few days of ignominious safety unto themselves, and their present estates, if it may be termed a safety which tendeth so fast unto their very overthrow, that are the Purchasers of it in so vile and base manner.

Men, whom it standeth upon to uphold a reverend estimation of themselves in the minds of others, without which the very best things they do are hardly able to escape disgrace, must before it be over late remember how much easier it is to retain credit once gotten, then to recover it being lost. The Executors of Bishops are sued if their Mansion house be suffered to go to decay: But whom shall their Successors sue for the dilapidations which they make of that credit; the unrepaired diminutions whereof will in time bring to pass, that they which would most do good in that calling, shall not be able, by reason of prejudice generally settled in the mindes of all sorts against them. By what means their estimation hath hitherto decayed, it is no hard thing to discern. *Herd* and *Archbishops* are noted to have sought out purposely the dullest and most ignoble that could be found amongst the people, preferring such to the High-Priests Office, thereby to abate the great opinion which the multitude had of that Order, and to procure a more expedite course for their own wicked Counsels, whereunto they saw the High-Priests were no small impediment, as long as the common sort did much depend upon them. It may be there hath been partly some show and just suspicion of like practice in some, in procuring the undeserved preferments of some unworthy persons, the very cause of whose advancement hath been principally their unworthiness to be advanced. But neither could this be done altogether without the inexcusable fault of some preferred before, and so oft we cannot imagine it to have been done, that either onely or chiefly from thence this decay of their estimation may be thought to grow. Somewhat it is that the malice of their cunning Adversaries, but much more which themselves have effected against themselves. A Bishops estimation doth grow from the excellency of vertues suitable unto his place. Unto the place of a Bishop those high Divine Vertues are judged suitable, which vertues being not easily found in other sorts of great men, do make him appear so much the greater in whom they are found.

Devotion, and the feeling sence of Religion are not usual in the noblest, wisest, and chiefest Personages of State, by reason their wits are so much employed another way, and their mindes so seldom conversant in heavenly things. If therefore where-in themselves are defective, they see that Bishops do blessedly excel, it frameth secretly

cretly their hearts to a stooping kinde of disposition, clean opposit to contempt: The very countenance of *Moses* was glorious after that God had conferred with him. And where Bishops are, the powers and faculties of whose soules God hath possesst, those very actions, the kind whereof is common unto them with other men, have notwithstanding in them a more high and heavenly form, which draweth correspondent estimation unto it, by vertue of that celestial impression, which deep meditation of holy things, and as it were conversation with God doth leave in their mindes. So that Bishops which will be esteemed of as they ought, must frame themselves to that very pattern from whence those *Asian* Bishops unto whom *St. John* writeth were denominated, even so far forth as this our frailty will permit; shine they must as Angels of God in the midst of perverse men. They are not to look that the world should always carry the affection of *Constantine*, to bury that which might derogate from them, and to cover their imbecillities. More then high time it is, that they bethink themselves of the Apostles admonition; *Attende tibi, Have a vigilant eye to thy self.* They err if they do not perswade themselves that wheresoever they walk or sit, be it in their Churches or in their Consistories, abroad and at home, at their Tables or in their Closets, they are in the midst of snares laid for them: Wherefore as they are with the Prophet every one of them to make it their hourly prayer unto God, *Lead me O Lord in thy righteousness, because of enemies;* so it is not safe for them, no not for a moment to slacken their industry in seeking every way that estimation which may further their labours unto the Churches good. Absurdity, though but in words, must needs be this way a main, where nothing but wisdom, gravity and judgement is looked for. That which the son of *Syrach* hath concerning the Writings of the old Sages, *Wise sentences are found in them;* should be the proper mark and character of Bishops speeches; whose lips, as doors, are not to be opened, but for egress of instruction and sound knowledge. If base servility and dejection of minde be ever espied in them, how should men esteeme them as worthy the rooms of the great Ambassadors of God? A wretched desire to gain by bad and unseemly means, standeth not with a mean mans credit, much less with that reputation which Fathers of the Church should be in. But if besides all this, there be also coldness in works of Piety and Charity, utter contempt even of Learning it self, no care to further it by any such helps as they easily might and ought to afford, no not as much as that due respect unto their very Families about them, which all men that are of account do order as neer as they can in such sort, that no grievous, offensive deformity be therein noted; if there still continue in that most Reverend Order, such as by so many Engines, work day and night to pull down the whole frame of their own estimation amongst men; some of the rest secretly also permitting others their industrious opposites, every day more and more to seduce the multitude, how should the Church of God hope for great good at their hands?

What we have spoken concerning these things, let not malicious Accusers think themselves therewith justified? no more then *Shimei* was by his Sovereigns most humble and meek acknowledgement even of that very crime which so impudent a Caitiffs tongue upbraided him withal; the one in the virulent rancour of a canckred affection, took that delight for the present, which in the end did turn to his own more tormenting woe; the other in the contrite patience even of deserved malediction, had yet this comfort, *It may be the Lord will look on mine affliction, and do me good for his cursing this day.* As so: us over whom Christ hath placed them to be the chiefeest Guides and Pastors of our souls, our common fault is, that we look for much more in our Governors then a tolerable sufficiency can yield, and bear much less, then Humanity and Reason do require we should. Too much perfection over rigorously exacted in them, cannot but breed in us perpetual discontentment, and on both parts cause all things to be unpleasant. It is exceedingly worth the noting, which *Plato* hath about the means whereby men fall into an utter dislike of all men with whom they converse: *This softness of minde which maketh every mans dealings unsavoury in our taste, entereth by an unskilful over-weening, which at the first we have of one, and so of another, in whom we afterwards finde our selves to have been deceived, they declaring themselves in the end to be frail men, whom we judged demi-gods: When we have oftentimes been thus beguiled, and thus far besides expectation, we grow at the length to this plain conclusion, That there is nothing at all found in any man.*

1 Sam. 16. 18.

Plat. in Plat.

man. Which bitter conceit is unseemly, and plain to have risen from lack of mature judgement in humane affairs; which if so be we did handle with art, we would not enter into dealings with men, otherwise then being beforehand grounded in this persuasion, that the number of persons notably good or bad, is but very small; that the most part of good have some evil, and of evil men, some good in them. So true our experience doth finde those Aphorisms of Marcusius Trismegistus, *Adversus vi avaritia invidiam & omnia*, To purge goodness quite and clean from all mixture of evil heere, is a thing impossible. Again, *Tunc alia ratio in dicitur vi avaritia in*, When in this World we term a thing good, we cannot by exact construction have any other true meaning, then that the said thing so termed, is not noted to be a thing exceedingly evil. And again, *Mores & Avaritia et iniquitas in avaritia in dicitur*, Amongst men, *Q* Esculapim, the name of that which is good we finde, but no where the very true thing it self. When we censure the deeds and dealings of our Superiors, to bring with us a fore-conceit thus qualified, shall be as well on our part as theirs, a thing available unto quietness: But howsoever the case doth stand with mens either good or bad quality, the verdict which our Lord and Saviour hath given, should continue for ever sure, *Que Dei sunt Dei*, let men bear the burthen of their own iniquity, as for those things which are Gods, let not God be deprived of them. For if onely to withhold that which should be given, be no better then to rob God? if to withdraw any mite of that which is but in propose onely bequeathed, though as yet undelivered into the sacred treasure of God, be a sin for which *Ananias and Saphira* felt so heavily the dreadful hand of Divine revenge; quite and clean to take that away which we never gave, and that after God hath for so many ages therewith been possessed, and that without any other shew of cause, saving onely that it seemeth in their eyes who seek it, to be too much for them which have it in their hands, can we term it, or think it less then most impious injustice, most hainous sacriledge? Such was the Religious affection of *Joseph*, that it suffered him not to take that advantage, no not against the very Idolatrous Priests of Egypt, which he took for the purchasing of other mens lands to the King; but he considered, that albeit their Idolatry deserved hatred, yet for the honors sake due unto Priesthood, better it was the King himself should yield them relief in publique extremity, then permit that the same necessity should constrain also them to do as the rest of the people did. But it may be men have now found out, that God hath proposed the Christian Clergy, as a prey for all men freely to seize upon; that God hath left them as the fishes of the Sea, which every man that listeth to gather into his net may; or that there is no God in Heaven to pitty them, and to regard the injuries which man doth lay upon them: Yet the publique good of this Church and Commonwealth doth, I hope, weigh somewhat in the hearts of all honestly disposed men. Unto the publique good, no one thing is more directly available, then that such as are in place, whether it be of Civil, or of Ecclesiastical Authority, be so much the more largely furnished even with external helps and ornaments of this life, how much the more highly they are in power and calling advanced above others. For nature is not contented with bare sufficiency unto the sustenance of man, but doth evermore covet a decency proportionable unto the place which man hath in the body or society of others: For according unto the greatness of mens calling, the measure of all their actions doth grow in every mans secret expectation, so that great men do always know, that great things are at their hands expected. In a Bishop great liberality, great hospitality, actions in every kinde great are looked for: And for actions which must be great, mean instruments will not serve. Men are but men, what room soever amongst men they hold: If therefore the measure of their Worldly habilities be beneath that proportion which their calling doth make to be looked for at their hands, a stronger inducement it is then perhaps men are aware of, unto evil and corrupt dealings, for supply of that defect. For which cause, we must needs think it a thing necessary unto the common good of the Church, that great Jurisdiction being granted unto Bishops over others, a state of wealth proportionable should likewise be provided for them: where wealth is had in so great admiration, as generally in this golden age it is, that without it Angelical perfections are not able to deliver from extreme contempt, surely to make Bishops poorer then they are, were to make them of less account and estimation then they should be. Wherefore

St. Trif. in 1.  
mandro. dial. 6

Mal. 3. 8.  
Ails. 2.

Gen. 47. 26

if



if detriment and dishonor do grow to Religion, to God, to his Church, when the publique account which is made of the chief of the Clergy decayeth, how should it be, but in this respect, for the good of Religion, of God, of his Church, that the wealth of Bishops be carefully preserved from further diminution? The travels and crosses wherewith Prelacy is never unaccompanied, they which feel them know how heavy; and how great they are. Unless such difficulties therefore, annexed unto that estate, be tempered by co-annexing thereunto things esteemed of in this World, how should we hope that the mindes of men, shunning naturally the burthens of each function, will be drawn to undertake the burthen of Episcopall care and labour in the Church of Christ? Wherefore if long we desire to enjoy the peace, quietness, order and stability of Religion, which Prelacy (as hath been declared) causeth, then must we necessarily, even in favour of the publique good, uphold those things, the hope whereof being taken away, it is not the meer goodness of the charge, and the Divine acceptation thereof, that will be able to invite many thereunto. What shall become of that Commonwealth or Church in the end, which hath not the eye of Learning to beautifie, guide, and direct it? At the length, what shall become of that Learning, which hath not wherewith any more to encourage her industrious followers? And finally, what shall become of that courage to follow learning, which hath already so much failed through the onely diminution of her chiefest rewards, Bishopricks? Surely, wheresoever this wicked intendment of overthrowing Cathedral Churches, or of taking away those Livings, Lands and Possessions which Bishops hitherto have enjoyed shall once prevail, the handmaids attending thereupon will be Paganism, and extreme Barbarity. In the Law of Moses, how careful provision is made that goods of this kinde might remain to the Church for ever: *Te shall not make common the holy things of the children of Israel, lest ye dye, saith the Lord.* Touching the fields annexed unto Levitical Cities, the Law was plain, they might not be sold; and the reason of the Law, this, *for it was their possession for ever*; he which was Lord and owner of it, his will and pleasure was, that from the Levites it should never pass, to be enjoyed by any other. The Lords own portion, without his own Communion and grant, how should any man justly hold? They which hold it by his appointment, had it plainly with this condition, *They shall not sell of it, neither change it, nor alienate the first-fruits of the Land; for it is holy unto the Lord.* It falleth sometimes out, as the Prophet Habbakkuk noteth, that the very prey of Savage Beasts becometh dreadful unto themselves. It did so in Judas, Achan, Nebuchadnezzar, their evil purchased goods were their snare, and their prey their own terror: A thing no where so likely to follow, as in those Goods and Possessions, which being laid where they should not rest, have by the Lords own testimony, his most bitter curse, their undividable companion. These persuasions we use for other mens cause, not for theirs with whom God and Religion are parts of the abrogated Law of Ceremonies. Wherefore not to continue longer in the cure of a sore desperate, there was a time when the Clergy had almost as little as these good people wish. But the Kings of this Realm and others, whom God had blest, considered devoutly with themselves, as David in like case sometimes had done, *Is it meet that we at the hands of God should enjoy all kindes of abundance, and Gods Clergy suffer want?* They considered that of Solomon, *Honor God with thy substance, and the chiefest of all thy revenue, so shall thy barns be filled with corn, and thy vessels shall run over with new wine.* They considered how the care which Jehoshaphat had, in providing that the Levites might have encouragement to do the work of the Lord chearfully, was left of God as a fit pattern to be followed in the Church for ever. They considered what promise our Lord and Saviour hath made unto them, at whose hands his Prophets should receive but the least part of the meanest kinde of friendliness, though it were but a draught of water: Which promise seemeth not to be taken, as if Christ had made them of any higher courtesie incapable, and had promised reward not unto such as give them but that, but unto such as leave them but that. They considered how earnest the Apostle is, that if the Ministers of the Law were so amply provided for, less care then ought not to be had of them, who under the Gospel of Jesus Christ, possess correspondent rooms in the Church. They considered how needful it is that they who provoke all others unto works of Mercy and

Charity,

Num. 18. 32

Levit. 25.

Ezek. 48. 14.

Habak. 2. 17.

Mal. 3. 9.

Prov. 3. 9.

2 Chron. 9.  
chap. 19.

Charity, should especially have wherewith to be examples of such things, and by such means to win them, with whom other means without those, do commonly take very small effect.

In these and the like considerations, the Church Revenues were in ancient times augmented, our Lord thereby performing manifestly the promise made to his servants, that they which did leave either Father, or Mother, or Lands, or goods for his sake, should receive them in this World an hundred fold. For some hundreds of years together, they which joyaned themselves to the Church, were faine to relinquish all worldly emoluments, and to endure the hardieth of an afflicted estate. Afterward the Lord gave rest to his Church, Kings and Princes became as Fathers thereof, the hearts of all men inclined towards it, and by his Providence there grew unto it every day earthly possessions in more and more abundance, till the greatness thereof bred envy, which no diminutions are able to satisfie: For as those ancient Nursing Fathers thought they did never bestow enough, even so in the eye of this present age, as long as any thing remaineth, it seemeth to be too much. Our Fathers we imitate in *perversum*, as *Tertullian* speaketh, like them we are by being in equal degree the contrary unto that which they were. Unto those earthly blessings which God as then did with so great abundance pour down upon the Ecclesiastical state, we may in regard of most neerer resemblance, apply the self same words which the Prophet hath, *God blessed them exceedingly, and by this very mean, turned the hearts of their own Brethren to hate them, and to deal perversely with his servants.* Computations are made, and there are huge sums set down for Princes, to see how much they may amplify and enlarge their own treasure; how many publique burthens they may ease; what present means they may have to reward their servants about them, if they please but to grant their assent; and to accept of the spoil of Bishops, by whom Church goods are but abused unto pomp and vanity. Thus albeik they deal with one, whose Princely vertue giveth them small hope to prevail in impious and sacrilegious motions, yet shame they not to move her Royal Majesty even with a suit not much unlike unto that wherewith the Jewish High-Priest tried *Judas*, whom they sollicked unto Treason against his Master, and proposed unto him a number of silver pence in lieu of so vertuous and honest a service. But her sacred Majesty disposed to be always like her self, her heart so far estranged from willingness to gain by pillage of that estate, the only awe wherof under God she hath been unto this present hour, as of all other parts of this noble Common-wealth wherof she hath vowed her self a protector, till the end of her days on earth, which if nature could permit, we will, as good cause we have, endless: this her gracious inclination is more then a seven times sealed warrant, upon the same assurance, wherof touching time and action, to dishonourable as this, we are on her part most secure, not doubting but that unto all posterity, it shall for ever appear, that from the first to the very last of her sovereign proceedings, there hath not been one authorized deed, other then consonant with that *Symonides* saith, *Fiscus banorum principum, non sacerdotum damnis sed hostium spoliis augetur*; consonant with that imperial law, *ea que ad beatissime ecclesie jura pertinent, tanquam ipsam sacrosanctam & religiosam Ecclesiam intacta convenit venerabiliter custodiri*; *Us sicut ipsa religionis & fidei mater perpetua est, ita ejus patrimonium juxta servatur illatum.* As for the ease of publique burthens, let any politician living, make it appear, that by confiscation of Bishops livings, and their utter dissolution, at once the Common-wealth shall ever have half that relief and ease which it receiveth by their continuance as now they are, and it shall give us some cause to think, that albeit we see they are impiously and irreligiously minded, yet, we may esteem them at least to be tolerable Common-wealths-men. But the case is too clear and manifest, the World doth but too plainly see it that no order of subjects whatsoever within this Land doth bear the seventh part of that proportion which the Clergy beareth in the burthens of the Common-wealth. No revenue of the Crown like unto it, either for certainty or for greatness. Let the good which this way hath grown to the common wealth by the dissolution of religious houses, teach men what ease unto publique burthens there is like to grow, by the overthrow of the Clergy. My meaning is not hereby to make the state of Bishops rich, and of those dissolved companies alike, the one no less unlawful to be removed then the other. For those Religious persons were men which followed chiefly

Psa. 105. 14, 15

Lib. 10. Ep. 54.  
D.D.D. Valens  
Theodor & At-  
chad.

L. 14. c. de sa-  
crif. Ecclie.

special kind of Contemplative life in the Common-wealth, they were properly no portion of Gods Clergy (onely such amongst them excepted, as were also Priests) their goods (that excepted, which they unjustly held through the Popes usurped Power, of appropriating Ecclesiastical livings unto them) may in part seem to be of the nature of Civil possessions, held by other kinds of Corporations such as the City of London hath divers. Wherefore as their institution was humane, and their end for the most part Superstitious, they had not therein meerly that holy and diuine interest which belongeth unto Bishops, who being employed by Christ in the principal service of his Church, are receivers and disposers of his patrimony, as hath been showed, which whosoever shall with-hold or with-draw at any time from them he undoubtedly robbeth God himself. If they abuse the goods of the Church unto pomp and vanity, such faults we do not excuse in them. Onely we wish it to be considered whether such faults be verily in them, or else but objected against them by such as gaze after spoil, and therefore are no competent judges, what is moderate and what excessive in them, whom under this pretence they would spoil. But the accusation may be just, in plenty and fulness it may be we are of God more forgetful then were requisite. Notwithstanding men should remember how not to the Clergy alone it was said by Moses in Deuteronomy, *Necum manducaueris & biberis & domos optimas edificaueris*: If the remedy prescribed for this disease be good, let it impartially be applied. *Interest reip. ut res sua QVISQUE bene utatur.* Let all states be put to their moderate penions, let their livings and lands be taken away from them whosoever they be, in whom such ample possessions are found to have been matters of grievous abuse. Were this just? would Noble Families think this reasonable? The Title which Bishops have to their livings is as good as the title of any sort of men unto whatsoever we account to be most justly held by them; yea, in this one thing, the claim of B. B. hath preeminence above all secular Titles of right, that Gods own interest is the tenure whereby they hold, even as also it was to the Priests of the Law, an assurance of their spiritual goods and possessions, whereupon though they many times abused greatly the goods of the Church, yet was not Gods patrimony therefore taken away from them, and made saleable unto other Tribes. To rob God, to ransack the Church, to overthrow the whole order of Christian Bishops, and to turn them out of Land and Living, out of House and Home, what man of common honesty can think it for any manner of abuse to be a remedy lawful or just? We must confess that God is righteous in taking away that which men abuse. But doth that excuse the violence of Thieves and Robbers? Complain we will not with \* S. Jerom, that the hands of men are so straightly tied, and their liberal minds so much bridled and held back from doing good by augmentation of the Church Patrimony. For we confess that herein mediocrity may be and hath been sometime exceeded. There did want heretofore a Moses to temper mens liberality, to say unto them who enriched the Church, *Sufficit*, Stay your hands

*Pudeat dicere, facies dotes id totum dirige, in mi  
& scorta bene dote capiunt, uti clerici & mona-  
chis id lege prohibetur & prohibetur non a persequen-  
toribus sed principibus christianis. Nec ut legi  
conquerat dotes quod a christianis bene legem  
ad Nepot. 7.*

Obad. vers 5

least fervour of zeal do cause you to empty your selves too far. It may be the largeness of mens hearts being then more moderate, had been after more durable, and one state by too much over-growing the rest, had not given occasion unto the rest to undermine it. That evil is now sufficiently cured, the Church treasury, if then it were overful, hath since been reasonable well implied. That which Moses spake unto givers, we must now inculcate unto takers away from the Church, let there be some stay, some sting in spoiling. If Grape-gatherers came unto them, saith the Prophet would they not leave some remnant behind? But it hath fared with the wealth of the Church as with a Tower which being built at the first with the highest, overthroweth it self after by its own greatness, neither doth the ruine thereof cease, with the onely fall of that, which hath exceeded mediocrity, but one part beareth down another, till the whole be laid prostrate; For although the state Ecclesiastical, both others and even Bishops themselves, be now fallen to so low an ebb, as all the World at this day doth see, Yet because there remaineth still somewhat which unsatiable minds can thirst for, therefore we seem not to have been hitherto sufficiently wronged. Touching that which hath been taken from the Church in appropriations known to amount to the value of one hundred twenty six thousand pounds yearly, we rest contentedly, and quietly with-



without it, till it shall please God to touch the hearts of men, of their own voluntary accord to restore it to him again; judging thereof no otherwise then some others did of those goods which were by *Sylla* taken away from the Citizens of *Rome*, that albeit they were in truth *male Capta* unconscionably taken away from the right owners at the first, nevertheless seeing that such as were after possessed of them held them not without some title, which law did alter for the sake good, *petitis coram proculdubio labefactabat compositam civitatem*; What hath been taken away & dedicated unto uses superstitious, and consequently not given unto God, or at the leastwise not so rightly given, we repine not thereat. That which hath gone by means secret and indirect, through corrupt compositions or compacts we cannot help. What the hardness of mens hearts doth make them loath to have exacted, though being due by Law, even thereof the want we do also bear. Out of that which after all these Deductions cometh clearly unto our hands, I hope it will not be said that towards the publike charge, we disburse nothing. And doth the residue seem yet excessive? The ways whereby temporal men provide for themselves and their Families, are foreclosed unto unto us. All that we have to sustain our miserable life with, is but a remnant of Gods own treasure, so far already diminished and clipt, that if there were any sence of common humanity left in this hard-hearted World, the impoverished estate of the Clergy of God, would at the length even of very commiseration be spared. The mean Gentleman that hath but an hundred pound Land to live on, would not be hasty to change his Worldly estate and condition with many of these so overabounding Prelates; a common Artisan or Tradesman of the City, with ordinary Pastors of the Church. It is our hard and heavy lot that no other sort of men being grudged at, how little benefit soever the publike Weal reap by them, no state complained of for holding that which hath grown unto them by lawful means, only the governors of our souls, they that study day and night so to guide us, that both in this world we may have comfort and in the world to come endless felicity and joy (for then such is the very scope of all their endeavours, this they wish, or this they labour, how hardly soever we use to conftrue of their intents; hard that only they should be thus concinnally listed at for possessing but that whereunto they have by law both of God and man most just Title. If there should be no other remedy but that the violence of men in the end must needs bereave them of all succor, further then the inclination of others shall vouchsafe to cast upon them, as it were by way of alms for their relief but from hour to hour; better they are not then their Fathers, which have been contented with as hard a portion at the Worlds hands: let the light of the Sun and Moon, the common benefit of Heaven and Earth be taken from *S. B.* if the Question were whither God should lose his glory, and the safety of his Church be hazarded, or they relinquish the right and interest which they have in the things of this World. But sith the question in truth is whither *Levi* shall be deprived of the portion of God or no, to the end that *Simeon* or *Ruben* may devour it as their spoil, the comfort of the one in sustaining the injuries which the other would offer, must be that prayer powred out by *Moses* the prince of Prophets, in most tender affection to *Levi*, bless *O Lord his substance, accept thou the work of his hands, smile through the loins of them that rise up against him, and of them which hate him, that they rise no more.* Deut. 33. 10, 21.

# OF THE LAWES OR Ecclesiastical Polity.

## *The Eighth Book.*

### Containing their seventh Assertion:

*That to no Civil Prince or Governour, there may be given such power of Ecclesiastical Dominion, as by the Lawes of this Land belongeth unto the Supreme Regent thereof.*

Maccab. 14.



**V**E come now to the last thing whereof there is Controversie moved, namely, *The Power of Supreme Jurisdiction*, which for distinction sake we call, *The Power of Ecclesiastical dominion*. It was not thought fit in the *Jews Commonwealth*, that the exercise of *Supremacy Ecclesiastical* should be denied unto him, to whom the exercise of *Chiefly Civil* did appertain; and therefore their Kings were invested with both. This power they gave unto *Simon*, when they consented that he should be their Prince, not onely to set men over their Works, and Countrey, and Weapons, but also to provide for the Holy things; and that he should be obeyed of every man, and that the Writings of the Countrey should be made in his name; and that it should not be lawful for any of the people, or Priests to withstand his words, or to call any Congregation in the Countrey without him. And if happily it be surmised, that thus much was given to *Simon*, as being both Prince and High-Priest; which otherwise (being their *Civil Governour*) he could not lawfully have enjoyned: We must note, that all this is no more then the ancient Kings of that People had, being Kings, and not Priests. By this power, *David*, *Asa*, *Jehoshaphat*, *Josias*, and the rest, made those Laws and Orders which sacred History speaketh of, concerning matters of meer Religion, the affairs of the Temple, and service of God. Finally, had it not been by the vertue of this power, how should it possibly have come to pass, that the piety or impiety of the Kings did always accordingly change the publique face of Religion; which things the Prophets by themselves never did, nor at any time could hinder from being done: Had the Priests alone been posselt of all power in Spiritual affairs, how should any thing concerning matter of Religion have been made but onely by them; in them it had been, and not in the King, to change the face of Religion at any time; the altering of Religion, the making of Ecclesiastical Laws, with other the like actions belonging unto the Power of Dominion, are still termed *the deeds of the King*; to shew, that in him was placed the supremacy of power in this kinde over all, and

and that unto their Priests the same was never committed, saving only at such times as the Priests were also Kings and Princes over them. According to the pattern of which example, the like power in causes Ecclesiastical is by the Laws of this Realm annexed unto the Crown; and there are which do imagine, that Kings being meere Lay-persons, do by this means exceed the lawfull bounds of their callings; which thing to the end that they may perswade, they first make a necessary separation perpetual & personal between the Church and the Common-wealth. Secondly, they so tie all kind of power Ecclesiastical unto the Church, as if it were in every degree their only right; who are by proper spiritual functions termed Church Governours, and might not unto Christian Princes in any wise appertain. To lurk under shifting ambiguities and equivocations of words in matter of principal waight, is childish. A Church and a Common-wealth we grant, are things in nature one distinguished from the other: a Common-wealth is one way, and a Church an other way defined. In their opinions the Church and Common-wealth are corporations, not distinguished only in nature and definition, but in substance perpetually severed: so that they which are of the one, can neither appoint, nor execute, in whole nor in part, the duties which belong to them which are of the other, without open breach of the Law of God which hath divided them; and doth require, that so being divided, they should distinctly or severally work, as depending both upon God, and not hanging one upon the others approbation. For that which either hath to do, we say that the care of Religion being common to all societies Politique, such societies as do embrace the true Religion have the name of the Church given unto every one of them for distinction from the rest: so that every body Politique hath some Religion, but the Church that Religion which is only true. Truth of Religion is the proper difference whereby a Church is distinguished from other Politique societies of men; we here mean true Religion in gross, and not according to every particular: for they which in some particular points of Religion do sever from the truth, may nevertheless truly if we compare them to men of an heathenish Religion be said to hold and profess that Religion which is true. For which cause there being of old so many Politique societies stablished through the world, only the Common-wealth of Israel which had the truth of Religion, was in that respect the Church of God: and the Church of Jesus Christ is every such Politique society of men, as doth in Religion hold that truth which is proper to Christianity. As a Politique society it doth maintain Religion, as a Church, that Religion which God hath revealed by Jesus Christ: with us, therefore the name of a Church importeth onely a society of men, first united into some publique form of Regiment, and secondly distinguished from other societies by the exercise of Religion. With them on the other side, the name of the Church in this present question, importeth not onely a multitude of men so united, and so distinguished, but also further, the same divided necessarily and perpetually from the body of the Common-wealth: so that even in such a Politique society as consisteth of none but Christians, yet the Church and Common-wealth are two Corporations, independently subsisting by it self.

We hold, that seeing there is not any man of the Church of England, but the same man is also a member of the Common-wealth; nor any member of the Common-wealth, which is not also of the Church of England. Therefore, as in a figure Triangle, the base doth differ from the sides thereof, and yet one and the self same line is both a base and also a side; a side simply, a base if it chance to be the bottom and underly the rest. So albeit, properties and actions of one do cause the name of a Common-wealth; qualities and functions of another sort, the name of the Church to be given to a multitude; yet one and the self same multitude may in such sort be both. Nay, it is so with us, that no person appertaining to the one, can be denied also to be of the other: contrariwise, unless they against us should hold that the Church and the Common-wealth are two, both distinct and separate societies; of which two, one comprehendeth alwayes persons not belonging to the



other, (that which they do) they could not conclude out of the difference between the Church and the Common-wealth, namely that the Bishops may not meddle with the affairs of the Common-wealth, because they are Governours of an other Corporation, which is the Church; nor Kings, with making Lawes for the Church, because they have government not of this Corporation, but of another divided from it; the Common-wealth and the walls of separation between these two, must for ever be upheld: they hold the necessity of personal separation which clean excludeth the power of one mans dealing with both; we of natural, but that one and the same person may in both bear principal sway.

The causes of common received errors in this point seem to have been especially two: one, that they who embrace true Religion, living in such Common-wealths as are opposite thereunto; and in other publique affairs, retaining civil communion with such as are constrained for the exercise of their Religion, to have a severall communion with those who are of the same Religion with them. This was the state of the Jewish Church both in Egypt and Babylon, the state of Christian Churches along time after Christ. And in this case, because the proper affairs and actions of the Church, as it is the Church, hath no dependance on the Laws, or upon the Government of the civil State; an opinion hath thereby grown, that even so it should be alwayes: this was it which deceived Allen in the writing of his Apology; *The Apostles* (saith he) *did govern the Church in Rome when Nero bare rule, even as at this day in all the Churches dominions: the Church hath a spiritual regiment without dependance, and so ought shee to have amongst heathens, or with Christians.* Another occasion of which misconceit is, That things appertaining to Religion are both distinguished from other affairs, and have alwayes had in the Church spiritual persons chosen to be exercised about them. By which distinction of Spiritual affairs, and persons therein employed from Temporal, the error of personal separation alwayes necessary between the Church and Common-wealth hath strengthened it self. For of every Politique society, that being true which Aristotle saith, namely, *That the scope thereof is not simply to live, nor the duty so much to provide for the life, as for means of living well: And that even as the soul is the worthier part of man, so humane societies are much more to care for that which tendeth properly to the soules estate, then for such temporal things wch the life hath need of.* Other proof there needeth none to shew, that as by all men the Kingdom of God is to be sought first, for so in all Common-wealths, things spiritual ought above temporal to be sought for; and of things spiritual, the chiefest is Religion. For this cause, persons and things employed peculiarly about the affairs of Religion, are by an excellency termed spiritual. The Heathens themselves had their spiritual lawes, and causes, and affairs, alwayes severed from their temporal; neither did this make two independent estates among them. God by revealing true Religion doth make them that receive it his Church. Unto the Jews he so revealed the truth of Religion, that he gave them in special considerations, Laws, not only for the administration of things spiritual, but also temporal. The Lord himself appointing both the one and the other in that Common-wealth, did not thereby distract it into severall independent communities, but institute severall functions of one and the self same community: some reasons therefore must there be alleadged why it should be otherwise in the Church of Christ.

I shal not need to spend any great store of words in answering that which is brought out of the holy Scripture, to shew that Secular and Ecclesiastical affairs & offices are distinguished; neither that which hath been borrowed from antiquity, using by phrase of speech to oppose the Common-weal to the Church of Christ: neither yet their reasons wch are wont to be brought forth as witnesses, that the Church & Common-weal were always distinct, for whether a Church or Common-weal do differ, is not the question we strive for; but our controversy is concerning the kind of distinction, whereby they are severed the one from the other; whether as under heathen Kings the Church did deal with her own

*Arist. polit. lib. 3. cap. 16.*

*Maccab. 7.*

*Arist. polit. lib. 3. cap. 20.*  
*Livius lib. 1.*

Three kinds of their proofs are taken from the difference of affairs and offices.

affairs

affairs within her self, without depending at all upon any in Civil authority; and the Common-weal in hers, altogether without the privity of the Church: so it ought to continue still even in such Common-weals as have now publicly embraced the truth of Christian Religion; whether they ought evermore to be two societies in such sort, several and distinct I ask therefore what society was that in Rome, whereunto the Apostle did give the name of the Church of Rome in his time? If they answer (as needs they must) that the Church of Rome in those dayes was that whole society of men, which in Rome professed the name of Christ, & not that Religion which the Laws of the Common-weal did then authorize; we say as much, and therefore grant that the Common-weal of Rome was one society, and the Church of Rome another, in such sort that there was between them no mutual dependence. But when whole Rome became Christian where they all embraced the Gospel, and made Laws in defence thereof, if it be held that the Church and Common-weal of Rome did then remain as before, there is no way how this could be possible; save only one, and that is, They must restrain the name of a Church in a Christian Common-weal to the Clergy, excluding all the rest of believers both Prince, and people; For if all that believe be contained in the name of the Church, how should the Church remain by personal subsistence divided from the Common-weale, when the whole common-weal doth believe? The Church and the Common-weal are in this case therefore personally one society, which society being termed a Common-weal as it liveth under whatsoever form of secular Law and Regiment, a Church as it liveth under the spiritual Law of Christ; For so much as these two Laws contain so many and different Offices, there must of necessity be appointed in it some to one charge, and some to another, yet without deviding the whole, and making it two several impaled Societies.

The difference therefore either of affairs or offices Ecclesiastical from secular, is no argument that the Church and Common-weal are alwayes separate and independent, the one on the other; which thing even *Allaine* himself considering somewhat better, doth in this point a little correct his former judgement before mentioned, & confesseth in his defence of English Catholics, that the power political hath her Princes, Laws, Tribunals; the spiritual her Prelates, Canons, Councils, Judgements; and those (when the temporal Princes and Pagans wholly separate, but in Christian Common-weals joyned; though not confounded. Howbeit afterwards his former sting appeareth again; for in a Common-wealth he holdeth, that the Church ought not to depend at all upon the authority of any civil person whatsoever, as in England he saith it doth.

It will be objected that the Fathers do oftentimes mention the Common-weale and the Church of God, by way of opposition. Can the same thing be opposed to it self? If one and the same society, be both Church and Common-wealth, what sence can there be in that speech, that they suffer and flourish together? What sence is that which maketh one thing to be adjudged to the Church, and another to the Common wealth? Finally, in that which putteth a difference between the causes of the Province and the Church, doth it not hereby appear, that the Church and the Common-weal, are things evermore personally separate? No, it doth not hereby appear that there is not perpetually any such separation; we speak of them as two, we may sever the rights and the causes of the one well enough from the other, in regard of that difference which we grant is between them, albeit we make no personal difference. For the truth is, that the Church and the Common-wealth, are names which import things really different; but those things are accident, and such accidents as may and alwayes should lovingly dwell together in one subject. Wherefore the real difference between the accidents signified by these names, doth not prove different subjects for them always to reside in. For albeit the subjects wherein they be resident be sometimes different, as when the people of God have their residence among Infidels; yet the nature of them is not such, but that their subject maybe one; and therefore it is but a

*1 Chron. 14. 8.*  
*11.*  
*Heb. 5. 1.*  
*Allaine lib. 31.*  
*p. 151.*

*2. Taken from the speeches of the Fathers opposing the one to the other.*

*Euseb. de vita constant. lib. 2.*  
*Aug. Epist. 157*

changeable accident in those accidents they are to be divers : There can be no error in our conceit concerning this point, if we remember still what accident is, for which a society hath the name of a Common-wealth, and what accident that which doth cause it to be termed a Church : a Common-wealth, we name it simply in regard of some regiment or policy under which men live ; a Church for the truth of that Religion which they profess. Now names betokening accidents inabstracted, betoken not only the accidents themselves, but also together with them subjects whereunto they cleave. As when we name a School-master and a Physician, those names do not only betoken two accidents, teaching and curing, but also some person or persons in whom those accidents are. For there is no impediment but both may be in one man, as well as they are for the most part divers. The Common-weale and the Church therefore being such names, they do not only betoken these accidents of Civil Government and Christian Religion, which we have mentioned, but also together with them such multitudes as are the subjects of those accidents. Again, their nature being such as they may well enough dwell together in one subject, it followeth that their names though alwayes implying that difference of accidents that hath been set down, yet do not alwayes imply differet subjects also. When we oppose therefore the Church and the Common-wealth in Christian Society, we mean by the Common-wealth that Society with relation to all the publike affairs thereof, only the matter of true Religion excepted : By the Church the same Society with only reference unto the matter of true Religion, without any affairs ; besides, when that Society which is both a Church and a Common-wealth, doth flourish in those things which belong unto it as a Common-wealth, we then say, the Common-wealth doth flourish ; when in both them, we then say, the Church and Common-wealth do flourish together.

The Prophet Esay to note corruptions in the Common-wealth, complaineth, *That where justice and judgement had lodged, now were murderers ; Princes were become Companions of Thieves, every one loved gifts, and rewards ; but the Fatherlesse was not judged, neither did the widows cause come before them. To shew abuses in the Church, Malachy doth make his complaint, Ye offer unclean bread upon mine Altar. If ye offer the blind for sacrifice, it is not evil as ye think, if the lame and the sick, nothing is amiss. The Treasure which David bestowed upon the Temple, did argue the love which he bore unto the Church : The pains which Nehemiah took for building the wals of the City, are tokens of his care for the Common-wealth. Causes of the Common-wealth, or Province, are such as Gallio was content to be judge of. If it were a matter of wrong, or an evil deed ( O ye Jews ) I would according to reason maintain you. Causes of the Church, are such as Gallio there reciteth, if it be a question of your Law, look ye to it, I will be no Judge thereof : In respect of this difference therefore the Church and the Common-wealth, may in speech be compared or opposed aptly enough the one to the other ; yet this is no argument, that they are two independent Societies.*

2. Taken from the effect of punishment inflicted by the one or the other.

Some other reasons there are which seem a little more nearly to make for the purpose, as long as they are but heard, and not sifted : For what though a man being severed by Excommunication from the Church, be not thereby deprived of freedom in the City, or being there discomened, is not therefore forthwith Excommunicated and excluded the Church ? What though the Church be bound to receive them upon repentance, whom the Commonweal may refuse again to admit ? If it chance the same man to be shut out of both, division of the Church and Common-weale which they contend for, will very hardly hereupon follow : For we must note that members of a Christian Common-weale have a triple state, a natural, a civil, and a spiritual : No mans natural estate is cut off otherwise then by that capital execution. After which, he that is none of the body of the Common-wealth, doth not I think remain fit in the body of that visible Church. And concerning mans civil estate, the same is subject partly to inferiour abatements of liberty, and partly to dimi-  
nution



nurion in the highest degree, such as banishment is; sith it casteth out quite and cleane from the body of the Common-weale, it must needs also consequently cast the banished party even out of the very Church he was of before; because that Church and the Common-weale he was of, were both one and the same Society; So that whatsoever doth utterly separate a man's person from the one, it separateth from the other also. As for such abatements of civil estate as take away only some priviledge, dignity, or other benefit, which a man enjoyeth in the Common-weale, they reach only to our dealing with publicke affairs, from which what may let, but that men may be excluded, and thereunto restored again without diminishing or augmenting the number of persons, in whom either Church or Common wealth consisteth. He that by way of punishment looseth his voyce in a publicke election of Magistrates, ceaseth not thereby to be a Citizen; A man dis-franchised may notwithstanding enjoy as a subject the common benefit of protection under Laws and Magistrates; so that these inferiour diminutions which touch men civilly, but neither do cleane extinguish their estates, as they belong to the Common-wealth, or impaire a whit their condition as they are of the Church of God: These I say do clearly prove a difference of the one from the other, but such a difference as maketh nothing for their surmise of distracted Societies.

And concerning Excommunication, it cutteth off indeed from the Church, and yet not from the Common-wealth; howbeit so that the party Excommunicate is not thereby severed from one body which subsisteth in it self, and retained by another in like sort subsisting; but he which before had fellowship with that Society whereof he was a member, as well touching things Spiritual as civil, is now by force of Excommunication, although not severed from the body in Civil affairs, nevertheless for the time cut off from it as touching communion in those things which belong to the same body, as it is the Church: A man which having been both Excommunicated by the Church, & deprived of Civil dignity in the Common-wealth, is upon his repentance necessarily reunited into the one, but not of necessity into the other. What then? That which he is admitted unto, is a communion in things Divine, whereof both parts are partakers, that from which he is withheld, is the benefit of some humane priviledge, or right, which other Citizens happily enjoy. But are not these Saints and Citizens, one and the same people, are they not one and the same Society? Doth it hereby appear that the Church which received an Excommunicate, can have no dependency on any person which hath chief Authority and power, of these things in the Common-wealth whereunto the same party is not admitted. Wherefore to end this point, I conclude; First, that under the dominions of infidels, the Church of Christ, and their Common-wealth, were two Societies independent. Secondly, that in those Common-wealths, where the Bishop of Rome beareth sway, one Society is both the Church and the Common-wealth: But the Bishop of Rome doth devide the body into two divers bodies, and doth not suffer the Church to depend upon the power of any civil Prince and Potentate. Thirdly, that within this Realm of England, the case is neither as in the one, nor as in the other of the former two, but from the state of Pagans we differ; in that with us one Society is both the Church and Common wealth, which with them it was not. As also from the state of those Nations which subjected themselves to the Bishop of Rome, in that our Church hath dependance from the chief in our Common-wealth, which it hath not when he is suffered to rule. In a word, our state is according to the pattern of Gods own antient elect people, which people was not part of them the Common-wealth, & part of them the Church of God; but the self-same people whole and entire were both under one chief Governour, on whose Supream Authority they did all depend. Now the drift of all that hath been alleadged to prove perpetual separation and independency between the Church and the Common-wealth, is, that this being held necessary, it might consequently be thought fit, that in a Christian Kingdome, he whose power is greatest over the Common-

Common-wealth, may not lawfully have supremacy of power also over the Church, that is to say, so far as to order thereby and to dispose of spiritual affairs, so far as the highest uncommanded Commander in them. Whereupon it is grown a question, whether Government Ecclesiasticall, and power of Dominion in such degrees as the Law of this Land do grant unto the Sovereign Governour thereof, may by the said supream Governour lawfully be enjoyd and held: For resolution wherein we are, First, to define what the power of dominion is. Secondly, then to shew by what right. Thirdly, after what sort. Fourthly, in what measure. Fifthly, in what inconveniency. According to whose example Christian Kings may have it. And when these generals are opened, to examine afterwards how lafull that is which we in regard of Dominion do attribute unto our own: namely, the title of headship over the Church, so far as the bounds of this Kingdom do reach. Secondly, the Prerogative of calling and dissolving great assemblies, about spiritual affairs publick. Thirdly, the right of assenting unto all those orders concerning Religion, which must after be in force as Law. Fourthly, the advancement of Principal Church Governours to their roomes of Prelacy. Fifthly, judical authority higher then others are capable of. And sixthly, exemption from being punishable with such kind of Censures as the platform of Reformation doth teach, that they ought to be Subject unto.

*What the Power of Dominion is.*

*Luke 24.  
1 Cor. 14.*

Without order there is no living in publike Society, because the want thereof is the mother of confusion, whereupon division of necessity followeth, and out of division, destruction. The Apostle therefore giving instruction to publike Societies, requireth that all things be orderly done: Order can have no place in things, except it be settled amongst the persons that shall by office be conversant about them. And if things and persons be ordered, this doth imply that they are distinguished by degrees. For order is a graduall disposition: The whole world consisting of parts so many, so different, is by this only thing upheld; he which framed them hath set them in order: The very Deity it self both keepeth and requireth for ever this to be kept as a Law, that wheresoever there is a coaugmentation of many, the lowest be knit unto the highest, by that which being interjacent, may cause each to cleave to the other, and so all to continue one. This order of things and persons in publike Societies, is the work of Policie, and the proper instrument thereof in every degree in power, power being that hability which we have of our selves, or receive from others for performance of any action. If the action which we have to perform be conversant about matters of mean Religion, the power of performing it is then spiritual; And if that power be such as hath not any other to over-rule it, we term it Dominion, or Power Supream; so far as the bounds thereof extend. When therefore Christian Kings are said to have Spiritual Dominion or Supream Power in Ecclesiasticall affairs and causes, the meaning is, that within their own Precincts and Territories, they have an authority and power to command even in matters of Christian Religion, and that there is no higher nor greater that can in those cases overcommand them, where they are placed to raige as Kings. But withal we must likewise note that their power is termed supremacy, as being the highest, not simply without exception of any thing. For what man is so brain-sick, as not to except in such speeches God himself the King of all Dominion? who doubteth, but that the King who receiveth it, must hold it of, and order the Law according to that old axiome, *Attribuat Rex legi, quod lex attribuit ei potestatem*: And againe, *Rex non debet esse sub homine, sed sub deo & lege*. Thirdly, whereas it is altogether without reason, That Kings are judged to have by vertue of their Dominion, although greater power then any, yet not then all the state of those Societies conjoynd, wherein such Sovereign rule is given them, there is not any thing hereunto to the contrary by us affirmed, no not when we grant  
supream

supream Authority unto Kings; because Supremacy is not otherwise intended or meant to exclude partly forraign powers, and partly the power which belongeth in several unto others, contained as parts in that publick body over which those Kings have Supremacy; *Where the King hath power of Dominion, or Supream power, there no forraign State, or Potentate, no State or Potentate Domestical, whether it consisteth of one or many, can possibly have in the same affairs and causes Authority higher then the King.* Power of Spiritual Dominion, therefore is in causes Ecclesiastical that ruling Authority, which neither any forraign State, nor yet any part of that polittick body at home, wherein the same is established, can lawfully over-rule. It hath been declared already in general, how *the best established dominion is, where the Law doth most rule the King;* the true effect whereof particularly is found as well in Ecclesiastical as civil affairs: In these the King, through his Supream Power, may do sundry great things himself, both appertaining to Peace and War, both at home, and by command, and by commerce with States abroad, because the Law doth so much permit. Sometimes on the other side, *The King alone hath no right to do without consent of his Lords and Commons in Parliament: The King himself cannot change the nature of Pleas, nor Courts, no not so much as restore blood;* because the Law is a bar unto him; the positive Laws of the Realm have a priviledge therein, and restrain the Kings Power; which positive Laws, whether by custom or otherwise established without repugnancy to the Laws of God, and nature, ought not less to be in force even in supernatural affairs of the Church, whether in regard of Ecclesiastical Laws, we willingly embrace that of *Ambrose, Imperator bonus intra Ecclesiam, non supra Ecclesiam est.* Kings have Dominion to exercise in Ecclesiastical causes, but according to the Laws of the Church; whether it be therefore the nature of Courts, or the form of Pleas, or the kind of Governours, or the order of proceeding in whatsoever business, for the received Laws and Liberty of the Church, *The King hath Supream Authority and power, but against them never;* What such positive Laws hath appointed to be done by others then the King, or by others with the King, and in what form they have appointed the doing of it, the same of necessity must be kept; neither is the Kings sole Authority to alter it; yet as it were a thing unreasonable, if in civil affairs the King, albeit the whole universal body did joyn with him, should do any thing by their absolute power for the ordering of their state at home, in prejudice of those ancient Laws of Nations, which are of force throughout all the World, because the necessary commerce of Kingdomes dependeth on them: So in principal matters belonging to Christian Religion, a thing very scandalous and offensive it must needs be thought, if either Kings or Lawes should dispose of the Law of God, without any respect had unto that which of old hath been reverently thought of throughout the World, and wherein there is no Law of God which forceth us to swerve from the wayes wherein so many and holy Ages have gone: Wherefore not without good consideration, the very Law it self hath provided, *That Judges Ecclesiastical appointed under the Kings Commission, shal not adjudge for heresie any thing but that which heretofore hath been adjudged by the Authority of the Canonical Scriptures, or by the first four general Councils, or by some other general Council, wherein the same hath been declared heresie, by the expresse words of the said Canonical Scriptures, or such as hereafter shal be determined to be heresie by the high Court of Parliament of this Realm, with the assent of the Clergy in the Convocation, Ann. 1. Reg. Eliz.* By which words of the Law, who doth not plainly see, how that in one branch of proceeding by vertue of the Kings Supream Authority, the credit which those four first general Councils have throughout all Churches, and evermore had, was judged by the making of the foresaid Act a just cause wherefore they should be mentioned in that case, as a requisite part of that rule wherewith Dominion was to be limited. But of this we shal further consider, when we come unto that which Sovereign Power may do in making Ecclesiastical Laws.

Unto which Supream Power in Kings, two kinds of adversaries there



The Right  
which men  
gives, God  
ratifies.

*Corona est po-  
testas delegata  
a deo. Bracton*

of adversaries there are which have opposed themselves: one sort defending that *Supream power in causes Ecclesiastical throughout the world, appertaineth of Divine Right to the Bishop of Rome*: Another sort, That the said Power belongeth in every National Church unto the Clergy thereof assembled. We which defend as well against the one, as against the other, That *Kings within their own Precincts may have it*, must shew by what right it must come unto them. First, unto me, it seemeth almost out of doubt & controversie, that every independent multitude before any certain form of Regiment established, hath under God *Supream Authority*, full Dominion over it self, even as a man not tyed with the band of subjection as yet unto any other, hath over himself the like power. God creating mankind, did endue it naturally with power to guide it self, in what kind of Society soever he should chuse to live. A man which is born Lord of himself, may be made anothers servant. And that power which naturally whole societies have, may be derived unto many, few, or one; under whom the rest shall then live in subjection: Some multitudes are brought into subjection by force, as they who being subdued, are faine to submit their necks unto what yoke it pleaseth their Conquerors to lay upon them; which Conquerors by just and lawful Wars do hold their Power over such multitudes, as a thing descending unto them; Divine Providence it self so disposing. For it is God who giveth victory in the day of War, and unto whom Dominion in this sort is derived, the same they enjoy according to the Law of Nations; which Law authorizeth Conquerours to reign as absolute Lords over them whom they vanquish. Sometimes it pleaseth God himself by special appointment to chuse out and nominate such, as to whom Dominion shall be given; which thing he did often in the Common-wealth of *Israel*: They which in this sort receive power immediately from God, have it by meer Divine Right; they by humane, on whom the same is bestowed, according to mens discretion, when they are left freely by God to make choice of their own Governours. By which of these means soever it happen, that Kings or Governours be advanced unto their Estates, we must acknowledge both their lawful choice to be approved of God, and themselves to be Gods Lieutenants; and confesse their Power which they have to be his. As for *Supream Power* in Ecclesiastical affairs, the Word of God doth no where appoint that all Kings should have it, neither that any should not have it; for which cause, it seemeth to stand altogether by humane Right, that unto Christian Kings there is such Dominion given.

Again, on whom the same is bestowed at mens discretions, they likewise do hold it by Divine Right: If God in his revealed Word, hath appointed such Power to be, although himself extraordinarily bestow it not, but leave the appointment of persons to men; yea, albeit God do neither appoint nor assign the person: nevertheless, when men have assigned and established both, who doth doubt but that sundry duties and affairs depending thereupon are prescribed by the Word of God, and consequently by that very right to be exacted? for example sake, the power which *Roman* Emperours had over foreign Provinces, was not a thing which the Law of God did ever institute: Neither was *Tiberius Caesar* by especial commission from Heaven therewith invested, and yet payment of Tribute unto *Caesar* being now made Emperour, is the plain Law of *Jesus Christ*: unto Kings by humane Right, honour by very Divine Right, is due; mans Ordinances, are many times proposed as grounds in the Statutes of God: And therefore of what kind soever the means be, whereby Governours are lawfully advanced to their States, as we by the Laws of God stand bound meekly to acknowledge them for Gods Lieutenants; and to confesse their Power his: So by the same Law they are both authorized, and required to use that Power as far as it may be in any State available to his honour. The Law appointeth no man to be a husband; but if a man hath betaken himself unto that condition, it giveth him power and authority over his own wife. That the Christian world should be ordered by the Kingly Regiment, the Law of God doth not any where command: and yet the Law of God doth give

give them, which once are exalted unto that place of Estate, right to exact at the hands of their Subject general obedience in whatsoever affairs their power may serve to command, and God doth ratifie works of that Sovereign Authority, which Kings have received by men. This is therefore the right whereby Kings do hold their power; but yet in what sort the same doth rest & abide in them, it somewhat behoveth further to search, where that we be not enforced to make overlarge discourses about the different conditions of Sovereign or Supream Power; that which we speak of Kings, shall be in respect of the State, and according to the nature of this Kingdom, where the people are in no subjection, but such as willingly themselves have condescended unto for their own most behoof and security. In Kingdoms therefore of this quality, the highest Governour hath indeed universal Dominion, but with dependency upon that whole entire body, over the several parts whereof he hath Dominion: so that it standeth for an axiome in this case; The King is *Major singulis, universis minor*. The Kings dependency, we do not construe as some have done, who are of opinion that no mans birth can make him a King, but every particular person advanced to such Authority, hath at his entrance into his Raign, the same bestowed on him as an estate in condition by the voluntary deed of the people, in whom it doth lie to put by any one, and to prefer some other before him, better liked of or judged fitter for the place, and that the party so rejected hath no injury done unto him; no although the same be done in a place where the Crown doth go *jure* by succession, and to a person which is capital and hath apparently if blood be respected the nearest right. They plainly affirm in all well appointed Kingdoms, the custom evermore hath been, and is, that children succeed not their Parents, till the people after a sort have created them anew, neither that they grow to their Fathers as natural and proper Heirs, but are then to be reckoned for Kings, when at the hands of such as represent the Kings Majesty, they have by a Scepter and a Diadem received, as it were, the investiture of Kingly power: Their very words are, *That where such power is settled into a family or kindred, the stock it self is thereby chosen, but not the twig that springeth of it. The nest of the stock unto him that raiseth, are not through nearness of blood made Kings, but rather set forth to stand for the Kingdom; where Regal Dominion is hereditary, it is notwithstanding (if we look to the persons which have it) altogether elective.* To this purpose are selected heaps of Scriptures concerning the Solemn Coronation or Inauguration of Saul, of David, of Solomon, and others, by the Nobles, Ancients, and people of the Common-weal of Israel; as if these solemnities were a kind of deed, whereby the right of Dominion is given, with strange, untrue, and unnatural conceits, set abroad by seed-men of Rebellion, onely to animate unquiet spirits, and to feed them with possibility of aspiring to Thrones, if they can win the hearts of the people, what hereditary title soever any other before them may have. I say unjust and insolent positions, I would not mention, were it not thereby to make the countenance of truth more orient; for unless we will openly proclaim defiance unto all law, equity, and reason, we must (there is no remedy) acknowledge, that in kingdoms hereditary, birth giveth right unto Sovereign Dominion; and the death of the predecessor putteth the successor by blood in seisin. Those publique solemnities before specified, do but serve for an open testification of the inheritours right, or belong unto the form of inducting him into possession of that thing he hath right unto: therefore, in case it doth happen, that without right of blood a man in such wise be possessed, all these new elections and investings are utterly void; they make him no indefeasible estate, the inheritour by blood may dispossesse him as an usurper. The case thus standing, albeit we judge it a thing most true, that Kings, even inheritours, do hold their right in the Power of Dominion, with dependency upon the whole body politique, over which they have Rule as Kings; yet so it may not be understood as if such dependency did grow, for that every supream Governour doth personally take from thence his power by way of gift, bestowed of their own

Janus Brutus  
vindict. pag. 83

pag. 85.

Tully de Offic.)

free accord upon him at the time of his entrance into the said place of his sovereign Government. But the cause of dependency is that first Original conveyance, when power was derived from the whole into one; to passe from him unto them, whom out of him nature by lawful births should produce, and no natural or legal inability make incapable: Neither can any man with reason think, but that the first institution of Kings, a sufficient consideration wherefore their power should alwayes depend on that from which it did alwayes flow by Original influence of power, from the body into the King, is the cause of Kings dependency in Power upon the body. By dependency we mean subordination and subjection: A manifest token of which dependency may be this; as there is no more certain Argument, that lands are held under any as Lords, then if we see that such lands in defect of heirs fall unto them by escheat: In like manner it doth follow rightly, that seeing Dominion when there is none to inherit it, returneth unto the body; therefore, they which before were inheritours thereof, did hold it with dependency upon the body; so that by comparing the body with the head, as touching power, it seemeth alwayes to reside in both; fundamentally and radically in the one, in the other derivatively; in the one the habit, in the other the Act of Power. May a body politique then at all times, withdraw in whole or in part the influence of Dominion which passeth from it, if inconveniences do grow thereby? It must be presumed, that supream Governours will not in such case oppose themselves, and be stiff in detaining that, the use whereof is with publique detriment: but surely without their consent I see not how the body by any just means should be able to help it self, saving when Dominion doth escheat; such things therefore must be thought upon before hand, that Power may be limited ere it be granted, which is the next thing we are to consider.

*In what Measure.*Arist. Pol. lib.  
3. Cap. 1<sup>o</sup>Polybius apud  
Erdant. de  
Regno.

IN power of Dominion, all Kings have not an equal latitude: Kings by conquest make their own Charter; so, that how large their power, either Civil or Spiritual, is, we cannot with any certainty define further, then onely to set them in the line of the Law of God and Nature for bounds. Kings by Gods own special appointment, have also that largeness of power which he doth assign or permit with approbation touching Kings which were first instituted by agreement and composition made with them over whom they reign, how far their power may extend; the Articles of compact between them is to shew not onely the Articles of Compact at the first beginning, which for the most part are either clean worn out of knowledge, or else known to very few; but whatsoever hath been after in free & voluntary manner condiscended unto, whether by expresse consent, (whereof positive laws are witnesses,) or else by silent allowance, famously notified through custome, reaching beyond the memory of man. By which means of after agreement, it cometh many times to pass in Kingdoms, that they whose ancient predecessours were by violence and force made subject, do by little and little grow into that sweet form of Kingly Government, which Philosophers define, *Regency willingly sustained, and indued with Chieftie of power in the greatest things*. Many of the ancients in their writings do speak of Kings with such high and ample terms, as if universality of Power, even in regard of things and not of persons, did appertain to the very being of a King: The reason is, because their speech concerning Kings, they frame according to the state of those Monarchs, to whom unlimited authority was given; which some not observing, imagine, that all Kings, even in that they are Kings, ought to have whatsoever power they judge any Sovereigne Ruler lawfully to have enjoyed. But the most judicious Philosopher, whose eye scarce any things did escape which was to be found in the bosom of nature, he considering how far the power of one Sovereigne Ruler may be different from another regal authority, noteth in *Spartan Kings*, that of all others they were most tyed to Law, and so the most restrained power. A King wch hath not supream power in the greatest things, is rather entituled a King, then invested with real Sovereignty. We cannot



cannot properly term him a King, of whom it may not be said, at the least wise, as touching certain the chiefest affairs of the State, *rex est rex in his rebus*, his right in them is to have rule, not subject to any other predominancy. I am not of opinion that simply in Kings the most, but the best limited power is best, both for them and the people: the most limited is that which may deal in fewest things: the best, that which in dealing is tyed unto the soundest, perfectest, and most indifferent Rule, which Rule is the Law: I mean not onely the Law of Nature, and of God; but the National law consonant thereunto. Happier that people whose Law is their King in the greatest things, then that whose King is himself their Law: where the King doth guide the State, and the Law the King, that Common-wealth is like an Harp or Mellodious Instrument, the strings whereof are turned and handled all by one hand, following as Laws, the Rules and Canons of Musical Science. Most Divinely therefore Archytas maketh unto publique felicity these four steps and degrees, every of which doth spring from the former as from another cause, *i. N bene deus regit, i. A regem audiente, i. A regis legibus arbitrio, i. A deo regem indiguit*. The King ruling by Law, the Magistrate following, the Subject free, and the whole society happy. Adding on the contrary side, that where this order is not, it cometh by transgression thereof to passe that a King groweth a Tyrant; he that ruleth under him abhorreth to be guided by him or commanded; the people subject unto both, have freedom under neither, and the whole community is wretched. In which respect, I cannot chuse but commend highly their wisdom, by whom the Foundations of the Common-wealth hath been laid; wherein, though no manner of Person, or cause be unsubject unto the Kings Power, yet so is the Power of the King over all, and in all limited, that unto all his proceedings the Law it self is a rule. The Axiomes of our Regal Government are these, *Lex facit Regem*: The Kings grant of any favour made contrary to Law, is void. *Rex nihil potest nisi quod jure potest*: Our Kings therefore, when they are to take possession of the Crown they are called unto, have it pointed out before their eyes, even by the very solemnities and rites of their inauguration, to what affairs by the same Law their Supream Power and Authority reacheth; Crowned we see they are, enthronized and annointed; the Crown a sign of a Military Dominion; the Throne of Sedentary or Judicial; the Oyl of Religious and Sacred Power. It is not on any side denied, that Kings may have Authority in secular affairs. The question then is, *What power they may lawfully have, and exercise in causes of God. A Prince, or Magistrate, or a Community, (saith Doctor Stapleton) may have power to lay corporal punishment on them which are teachers of perverse things; power to make Laws for the Peace of the Church; Power to Proclaim, to Defend, and even by revenge to preserve dogmata the very Articles of Religion themselves from violation.* Others in affection no lesse devoted unto the Papacy; do likewise yield, that the Civil Magistrate may by his Edicts and Laws keep all Ecclesiastical Persons within the bounds of their duties, and constrain them to observe the Canons of the Church, to follow the rule of ancient Discipline. That if *Joash* was commended for his care and provision concerning so small a part of Religion, as the Church treasure; it must needs be both unto Christian Kings themselves greater honour, and to Christianity a larger benefit, when the custody of Religion, and the Worship of God in general is their charge. If therefore all these things mentioned be most properly the affairs of Gods Ecclesiastical causes; if the actions specified be works of power; and if that power be such as Kings may use of themselves, without the fear of any other power superiour in the same thing; it followeth necessarily, that Kings may have supream power, not only in Civil, but also in Ecclesiastical affairs; & consequently, that they may withstand what Bishop, or Pope soever shall under the pretended claim of higher Spiritual Authority, oppose themselves against their proceedings. But they which have made us the former grant, will never hereunto condescend; what they yield that Princes may do, it is with secret exception always understood, if the Bishop of Rome give leave, if he enterpose no prohibition; wherefore, somewhat it is in shew, in truth nothing which they grant. Our own

Stap. do. De.  
Princip. lib.  
1, 6. 17.

T. C. l. 1. p.  
192.

Farmers def.  
of the Godly  
Magistrate.

Humble moun-  
ten, page 63.

Cicero, lib. 1.  
de nat. Deor.

Kind.

By what Rule.

mers do the very like, when they make their discourse in general, concerning the Authority which Magistrates may have, a man would think them to be far from withdrawing any jot of that, which with reason may be thought due. *The Prince and Civil Magistrate* (saith one of them) *both to see the Laws of God, touching his Worship, and touching all Matters, and all Orders of the Church to be executed, and duly observed, and to see every Ecclesiastical Person do that office, whereunto he is appointed; and to punish those which fail in their office accordingly. Another acknowledgeth, That the Magistrate may lawfully uphold all truth by his Sword, punish all persons, enforce all to their duties towards God and men; Maintain by his Laws, every point of Gods Word, punish all vice in all men; see into all causes, visit the Ecclesiastical Estate, and correct the abuses thereof: Finally to look to his Subjects, that under him they may lead their lives in all godlinesse and honesty. A third more frankly protesteth, That in case their Church Discipline were established, so little it shortneth the Arms of Sovereign Dominion in causes ecclesiastical, that Her Gracious Majesty for anything they teach or hold to the contrary, may no less then now remain still over all persons, in all things Supreme Governesse; even without full and Royal Authority, Superiority, and Prebeminence, Supremacy, and Prerogative, which the Laws already established do give her; and her Majesties Injunctions, and the Articles of the Convocation house, and other writings apologetical of her Royal Authority, and supreme Dignity, do declare and explain. Possidonus was wont to say of the Empire, That he thought there were no Gods, but that those things which he spake concerning the Gods, were onely given out for fear of growing odious amongst men: and therefore that in words he left Gods remaining, but in very deed overbrow them, in so much as he gave them no kind of Allion. After the very self same manner, when we come unto those particular effects, Prerogatives of Dominion which the Laws of this Land do grant unto the Kings thereof, it will appear how these men, notwithstanding their large and liberal Speeches, abate such parcels out of the afore alleadged grant and flourishing shew, that a man comparing the one with the other, may half stand in a doubt, least their Opinion in very truth be against that Authority, which by their Speeches they seem mightily to uphold, partly for the voiding of public obloquie, envie and hatred, partly to the intent they may both in the end by the establishment of their Discipline, extinguish the force of Supreme Power, which Princes have, and yet in the mean while, by giving forth these smooth Discourses, obtain that their favourers may have somewhat to alleadge for them by way of Apologie, and that such words onely sound towards all kind of fulnesse of Power. But for my self, I had rather construe such their contradictions in the better part, and impure their general acknowledgment of the lawfulness of Kingly Power, unto the force of truth, presenting it self before them sometimes above their particular contrarieties, oppositions, denials, unto that error which having so fully possessed their minds, casteth things inconvenient upon them; of which things in their due place. Touching that which is now in hand, we are on all sides fully agreed, First, that there is not any restraint or limitation of matter for regal Authority and Power to be conversant in, but of Religion onely; and of whatsoever cause thereunto appertaineth Kings may lawfully have charge, they lawfully may therein exercise Dominion, and use the temporal Sword. Secondly, that some kind of actions conversant about such affairs are denied unto Kings: As namely, Actions of Power and Order, and of Spiritual Jurisdiction, which hath with it inseparably joyned Power to Administer the Word and Sacraments, power to Ordain, to Judge as an Ordinary, to bind and loose, to Excommunicate, and such like. Thirdly, that even in those very actions, which are proper unto Dominion, there must be some certain rule whereunto Kings in all their proceedings ought to be strictly tyed; Which rule for proceeding in Ecclesiastical affairs and causes by Regal Power, hath not hitherto been agreed upon with such uniform consent, and certainty as might be wished. The different sentences of men herein I will now go about to examine, but it shall be enough to propose what Rule doth seem in this case most reasonable.*

The

The case of deriving Supream Power from a whole intire multitude into some special part thereof; as partly the necessity of expedition in publick affaires, partly the inconvenience of confusion and trouble, where a multitude of equals dealeth; and partly the dissipation which must needs ensue in companies, where every man wholly seeketh his own particular (as we all would do even with other mens hurts) and haply the very overthrow of themselves, in the end also; if for the procurement of the common good of all men, by keeping every severall man in order, some were not invested with Authority over all, and encouraged with Prerogative honour to sustain the weighty burthen of that charge. The good which is proper unto each man belongeth to the common good of all, as part to the whole perfection; but these two are things different; for men by that which is proper, are severed; united they are by that which is common; Wherefore, besides that which moveth each man in particular to seek his private, there must be of necessity in all publick Societies also a general mover, directing unto common good, and framing every mans particular unto it. The end whereunto all Government was instituted, was *Bonum publicum, the Universal or Common good*. Our question is of Dominion, for that end and purpose derived into one; such as all in one publick State have agreed, that the Supream charge of all things should be committed unto one: They I say, considering what inconveniency may grow, where States are subject unto sundry Supream Authorities, have for fear of these inconveniencies withdrawn from liking to establish many; in *apelle transiuntis*, the multitude of Supream Commanders is troublesome. No man (saith our Saviour) can serve two Masters; surely, two Supream Masters would make any ones service somewhat uneasy in such cases as might fall out. Suppose that to morrow the Power which hath Dominion in Justice, require thee at the Court; that which in War, at the Field; that which in Religion at the Temple; all have equal Authority over thee and impossible it is, that then in such case thou shouldst be obedient unto all: By chusing any one whom thou wilt obey, certain thou art for thy disobedience to incur the displeasure of the other two.

*Ob utilitatem publicam resp. per unum consulti operis, prudentissimi docent. I. C. 11. F. de origine juris Civilis.*

But there is nothing for which some comparable reason or other may not be found; are we able to shew any commendable State of Government, which by experience and practice hath felt the benefit of being in all causes subject unto the Supream Authority of one? against the policy of the *Israelites*, I hope there will no man except, where *Moses* deriving to great a part of his burthen in Government unto others, did notwithstanding retain to himself Universal Supremacy; *Jehosaphat* appointing one to be chosen in the affairs of God, and another in the Kings affaires, did this as having Dominion over them in both. If therefore from approbation of Heaven, the Kings of Gods own chosen people had in the affaires of Jewish Religion Supream Power, why not Christian Kings the like also in Christian Religion? First, unless men will answer as some have done, That the Jews Religion was of far lesse perfection and dignity then ours, ours being that truth whereof theirs was but a shadowish perfigurative resemblance. Secondly, That all parts of their Religion, their Laws, their Sacrifices, and their Rights and Ceremonies, being fully set down to their bands, and needing no more, but only to be put in execution; the Kings might well have highest Authority to see that done; whereas with us, there are a number of Mysteries even in belief, which were not so generally for them, as for us necessary to be with sound expresse acknowledgement understood: A number of things belonging to external Government, and our manner of serving God, not set down by particular Ordinances, and delivered to us in writing, for which cause the State of the Church doth now require, that the Spiritual Authority of Ecclesiastical persons be large, absolute and not subordinate to Regal power. Thirdly, That whereas God armeth Religion Jewish as Temporal Christian with the sword; But of Spiritual punishment, the one with power to imprison, to scourge, to put to death: The other with bare authority to Censure and Excommunicate: There is no reason that the Church which hath no visible sword, should in Regiment be subject unto any other power, then only unto theirs which have authority to bind and loose. Fourthly, that albeit whilst the Church

According to what exam-  
pl:

*Strapl. de prins  
Doct. pag. 197.  
Strapl. id.*

*Item id.*

was



was restrained into one people, it seemed not incommensurable to grant their King the general Chieftie of Power; yet now the Church having spread it self over all Nations, great inconveniences must thereby grow, if every Christian King in his several Territory, should have the like power. Of all these differences, there is not one which doth prove it a thing repugnant to the Law, either of God, or of nature, that all Supremacie of external power be in Christian Kingdoms granted unto Kings thereof, for preservation of quietnesse, unity, order, and peace, in such manner as hath been shewed.

Of the Title of Headship.

For the Title of State it self, although the Laws of this Land have annexed it to the Crown, yet so far we should not strive, if so be men were nice and scrupulous in this behalf only; because they do wish that for reverence to Christ Jesus, the Civil Magistrate did rather use some other form of speech wherewith to expresse that Sovereign Authority which he lawfully hath over all, both persons and causes of the Church. But I see that hitherto they which condemn utterly the names so applyed, do it because they mislike that such power should be given to Civil Governours. The great exception that Sir Thomas Moor took against that Title, who suffered death for denial of it, was, for that it maketh a Lay, a secular person, the head of the State Spiritual or Ecclesiastical; as though God himself did not name Saul, the Head of all the Tribes of Israel; and consequently of that Tribe also among the rest, whereunto the State Spiritual or Ecclesiastical belonged; when the Authors of the Centuries reprove it in Kings and Civil Governours, the reason is, *Itis non competit iste primatus*; such kind of power is too high for them, they fit it not: In excuse of Mr. Calvin by whom this Realm is condemned of blasphemy, for intituling, H. 8. Supream Head of this Church under Christ, a charitable conjecture is made, that he spake by mis-information; howbeit as he professeth utter dislike of that name, so whether the name be used or no, the very power it self which we give unto Civil Magistrates, he much complaineth of, and protesteth, That their Power over all things was it which had ever wounded him deeply: That unadvised persons had made them too spiritual, that throughout Germany this fault did reign, that in those very parts where Calvin himself was, it prevailed more then was to be wished, that Rulers by imagining themselves so spiritual, have taken away Ecclesiastical Government, that they think they cannot reign unlesse they abolish all the Authority of the Church, and be themselves the chief Judges, as well in Doctrine as in the whole spiritual regency. So that in truth, the question is, whether the Magistrate by being Head in such sense as we term him, do use or exercise any part of that Authority, not which belongeth unto Christ, but which other men ought to have.

These things being first considered thus, it will be easier to judge concerning our own estate, whether by force of Ecclesiastical Government, Kings have any other kind of Prerogative then they may lawfully hold and enjoy. It is as some do imagine, too much, that Kings of England should be termed Heads in relation to the Church. That which we do understand by Headship, is their only Supream Power in Ecclesiastical affairs and causes; that which lawful Princes are, what should make it unlawful for men in spiritual Stiles or Titles to signifie? If the having of Supream Power be allowed, why is the expressing thereof by the Title of Head, condemned? They seem in words, (at leastwise some of them) now at the length to acknowledge, that Kings may have Dominion or Supream Government even over all, both persons and causes. We in terming our Princes Heads of the Church, do but testify that we acknowledge them such Governours. Again to this, it will peradventure be Replied, That whosoever we interpret our selves, it is not fit for a mortal man, and therefore not fit for a Civil Magistrate to be intituled the Head of the Church, which was given to our Saviour Christ to lift him above all Powers, Rules, Dominions, Titles, in Heaven or in Earth. Where if this Title belong also to Civil Magistrates, then it is manifest that there is a power in Earth whereunto our Saviour Christ is not

Rosses  
Epist. pag.  
5 17.  
Pref. cent. 7.  
Calvin in  
com 7.  
Aunt 7. 13.

T. C. lib. 2.  
page 437.

in this point superior. Again, if the Civil Magistrate may have this title, he may be termed also the first begotten of all creatures. The first begotten of all the dead, yea the Redeemer of his people. For these are alike given him as dignities whereby he is lifted up above all creatures. Besides this, the whole argument of the Apostle in both places doth lead to show that this title, Head of the Church, cannot be said of any creature. And further, the very demonstrative Articles among the Hebrews, especially whom St. Paul doth follow, serveth to tie that which is verified of one, unto himself alone: so that when the Apostle doth say that Christ is *the head*, it is as if he should say, Christ, and none other is the head of the Church. Thus have we against the entitling of the highest Magistrate, head, with relation unto the Church, four several arguments gathered by strong surmise out of words marvellous unlikely to have been written to any such purpose, as that whereunto they are now used and urged. To the Ephesians, the Apostle writeth, That Christ, God had set on his right hand in the Heavenly places above all Regency and Authority, and Power, and Dominion, and whatsoever name is named, not in this world only, but in that which shall be also: and hath under his feet set all things, and hath given him head above all things unto the Church which is his body, even the fulnesse of him which accomplisheth all in all. To the Colossians in like manner, That he is the head of the body of the Church, who is a first born Regency out of the dead, to the end he might be made amongst them all such an one as hath the Chiefty: He meaneth amongst all them whom he mentioned before, saying, By him all things that are, were made; the things in the Heavens, and the things in the Earth, the things that are visible, and the things that are invisible, whether they be Thrones, or Dominions, or Regencies, &c. Unto the fore alleadged arguments therefore we answer: First, that it is not simply the title of Head, in such sort understood, as the Apostle himself meant it; so that the same being imparted in another sense unto others, doth not any wayes make those others his equals; in as much as diversity of things is usually to be understood, even when of words there is no diversity; and it is only the adding of one and the same thing unto divers persons, which doth argue equality in them. If I term Christ and Cesar lords, yet this is no equalizing Cesar with Christ, because it is not thereby intended: To term the Emperour lord, saith Tertullian) I for my own part, will not refuse, so that I be not required to call him Lord in the same sense that God is so termed. Neither doth it follow, which is objected in the second place, that if the Civil Magistrate may be intitled a Head: he may as well also be termed the first begotten of all creatures, the first begotten of the dead, and the Redeemer of his people. For albeit the former dignity doth lift him up no lesse then these, yet these terms are not appliable and apt to signifie any other inferiour dignity, as the former term of head was. The argument or matter which the Apostle followeth, hath small evidence or proof, that his meaning was to appropriate unto Christ, that the aforesaid title, otherwise then only in such sense as doth make it, being so understood, too high to be given to any creature.

As for the force of the Article where our Lord and Saviour is called the Head, it serveth to tie that unto him by way of excellency, which in meaner degrees is common to others; it doth not exclude any other utterly from being termed Head, but from being intituled as Christ is the Head, by way of the very highest degree of excellency; not in the communication of names, but in the confusion of things there is error. Howbeit, if Head were a name that could not well be, for never had been used to signifie that which a Magistrate may be in relation to some Church; but were by continual use of speech appropriated unto the only thing it signifieth, being applyed unto Jesus Christ, then although we must carry in our selves a right understanding, yet ought we otherwise rather to speak, unless we interpret our own meaning by some clause of plain speech, because we are else in manifest danger to be understood according to that construction and sense, wherein such words are personally spoken. But here the rarest construction and most removed from common sense, is that which the word doth import being applyed unto Christ; that which

Ephes. 1. 21.  
Col. 1. 18.

Ephes. 1. 22.  
21, 22, 23.

Col. 1. 18.  
Col. 10.

which we signifie by it in giving it to the Magistrate, is a great deal more familiar in the common conceit of men.

*Esey. 7. 9.  
I ekah is termed the head  
of Samaria.*

The word is so fit to signifie all kinds of Superiority, Preheminence, and Chiefly, that nothing is more ordinary then to use it in vulgar speech, and in common understanding so to take it: If therefore Christian Kings may have any preheminence or chiefly above all other, although it be lesse then that which *Theodore Beza* giveth, who placeth Kings amongst the principal members, whereunto publick function, in the Church belongeth, and denieth not, but that of them which have publick function, the civil Magistrates power hath all the rest at command, in regard of that part of his office, which is to procure that peace and good order be especially kept in things concerning the first Table; if even hereupon they term him *the Head of the Church*, which is *his Kingdom*, it should not seem so unfit a thing; which title surely we could not communicate to any other, no not although it should at our hands be exacted with torments: but that our meaning herein is made known to the World, so that no man which will understand can easily be ignorant that we do not impart unto Kings when we term them *Heads*, the honour which is properly given to our Lord and Saviour Christ, when the blessed Apostle in Scripture doth term him *the Head of the Church*.

The power which we signifie in that name, differeth in three things plainly from that which Christ doth challenge.

*Ephes. 1. 21.*

First, it differeth in order, because God hath given to his Church for the head, *super omnia, in omni saeculo saeculorum*: Far above all principalities, and powers, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not in this World only, but also in that which is to come: Whereas the power which others have, is subordinate unto his.

*Psal. 2. 8.*

Secondly, again, as he differeth in order, so in measure of power also; because God hath given unto him the ends of the Earth for his possession: unto him, dominion from sea to sea, unto him all power both in Heaven and earth, unto him such sovereignty, as doth not only reach over all places, persons, and things, but doth rest in his own only person, and is not by any succession continued; he reigneth as Head and King, nor is there any kind of law which tieth him, but his own proper will and wisdom, his power is absolute, the same joyntly over all which it is severally over each: not so the power of any other Headship. How Kings are restrained, and how their power is limited, we have shewed before; so that unto him is given by the title of *Headship over the Church* that largeness of power, wherein neither man, nor angel, can be matched nor compared with him.

Thirdly, the last and greatest difference between him and them, is in the very kind of their power. The Head being of all other parts of the body most divine, hath dominion over all the rest; it is the fountain of sense, of motion, the throne where the guide of the soul doth reign; the court from whence direction of all things humane proceedeth. Why Christ is called *the Head of the Church*, these causes themselves do yield. As the Head is the chiefeft part of a man, above which there is none, alwayes joyned with the body; so Christ the highest in his Church, is alwayes knit to it. Again as the head giveth sense and motion unto all the body, so he quickneth us, and together with understanding of heavenly things, giveth strength to walk therein: seeing therefore that they cannot affirm Christ sensibly present, or alwayes visibly joyned unto his body the Church which is on earth, in as much as his corporal residence is in heaven. Again, seeing they do not affirm (it were intolerable if they should) that Christ doth personally administer the external Regiment of outward actions in the Church, but by the secret inward influence of his grace, giveth spiritual life, & the strength of ghostly motions thereunto: Impossible it is that they should so close up their eyes, as not to discern what odds there is between that kind of operation, which we imply in the *Headship of Princes*, and that which agreeth to our Saviours dominion over the Church. The *Headship* which we give unto Kings, is altogether visibly exercised,



cised, and ordereth only the external frame of the Church affairs here amongst us; so that it plainly differeth from Christs, even in very nature and kind. To be in such sort united unto the Church as he is; to work as he worketh, either on the whole Church or upon any particular assembly, or in any one man, doth neither agree, nor hath any possibility of agreeing unto any one besides him.

Against the first distinction or difference it is to be objected, That to entitle a Magistrate head of the Church, although it be under Christ, is not absurd. For *T.C.L. 2.9. 411.* Christ hath a two-fold superiority over his, and over Kingdomes: according to the one, he hath a superiour, which is his Father; according to the other, none but immediate authority with his Father; that is to say, of the Church he is head and governour only as the Sonne of man; head and governour of Kingdomes onely as the Son of God. In the Church, as man, he hath officers under him, which officers are Ecclesiastical persons: As for the Civil Magistrate, his office belongeth unto Kingdomes, and to Common-wealths, neither is he there an under or subordinate head, considering that his author. ty cometh from God, simply and immediately, even as our Saviour Christs doth. Whereunto the summe of our answer is, First, that as Christ being Lord or Head over all, doth by virtue of that Sovereignty rule all; so he hath no more a superiour in governing his Church, then in exercising sovereign Dominion upon the rest of the world besides. Secondly, that all authority as well Civil as Ecclesiastical, is subordinate unto him. And thirdly, the Civil Magistrate being termed head, by reason of that authority in Ecclesiastical affairs which hath been already declared, that themselves do in word acknowledge to be lawful: It followeth that he is a head even subordinated of Christ, and to Christ. For more plain explication whereof, unto God we acknowledge daily that Kingdome, Power, and Glory are his; that he is the immortal and invincible King of ages, as well the future which shall be, as the present which now is. That which the Father doth work as Lord and King over all, he worketh not without, but by the Sonne, who through coeternal generation, receiveth of the Father that power, which the Father hath of himself. And for that cause our Saviours words concerning his own Dominion are; *To me all power both in Heaven and in Earth is given: The Father by the Sonne did create, and doth guide all; wherefore Christ hath supream Dominion over the whole univerſal world. Christ is God, Christ is  $\alpha\omega$ , the consubstantial word of God; Christ is also that consubstantial word which made man: As God, he saith of himself, I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end: he which was, and which is, and which is to come; even the very omnipotent.* *Apo. 1.3.* As the consubstantial word of God, he hath with God before the beginning of the world, that glory which as he was man, he requireth to have: Father, glorifie thy Son with that glory which with thee he enjoyed before the world was. Further it is not necessary, that all things spoken of Christ should agree to him; either as God, or else as man; but some things as he is the consubstantial word of God, some things as he is that word incarnate. The works of supream Dominion we have been since the first beginning wrought by the power of the Son of God, are now most properly and truly the works of the Son of man: the word made flesh doth sit for ever, and reign as sovereign Lord over all. Dominion belongeth unto the Kingly office of Christ, as Propitiation and Mediation unto his Priestly Instruction, unto his pastoral and propheticall Office. His works of dominion are in sundry degrees and kinds, according to the different conditions of them which are subject unto it: he presently doth govern, and hereafter shal judge the world, intire and wholly, & therefore his Regal power cannot be with truth restrained unto a proportion of the world only: Notwithstanding, forasmuch as all do not shew and acknowledge with dutiful submission; that obedience which they owe unto him; therefore such as do, their Lord he is termed by way of excellency, no other wise then the Apostle doth term God the succour generally of all, but especially of the faithful; these being brought to the obedience of faith, are every where spoken of, as men translated into that Kingdom, wherein whosoever is comprehended, Christ

Heb. 12. 22.

is the Author of eternal salvation unto them; they have a high and ghosly fellowship with God and Christ, and Saints; or as the Apostle in more ample manner speaketh, *Aggregated they are unto Mount Sion, and to the City of the living God; the Celestial Jerusalem, and to the company of innumerable Angels, and to the Congregation of the first born, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the Spirits of just and perfect men, and to Jesus the Mediator of the new Testament.* In a word, they are of that mysticall body, which we term the Church of Christ. As for the rest we account them *Aliens from the Commonwealth of Israel, and that live in the kingdom of darknesse, and that are in this present world without God.* Our Saviours Dominion is therefore over these as over rebels; over them as over dutiful and loving subjects; which things being in holy Scriptures so plain, I somewhat muse at the strange politions, that Christ in the Government of his Church and Superiority over the Officers of it, hath himself a Superiour which is the Father: But in governing of Kingdoms and Common-wealths, and in the Superiority which he hath over Kingdoms, no Superiour.

T.C.H. 4. pag. 411.

Again, *That the Civil Magistrates Authority cometh from God immediately, as Christs doth, and is subordinate unto Christ.* In what Evangelist, Apostle, or Prophet, is it found, that Christ (Supream Governour of the Church) should be so unequal to himself, as he is Supream Governour of Kingdoms? The works of his providence for the preservation of mankind, by upholding Kingdoms not onely obedient unto, but also obstinate and rebellious against him, are such as proceed from Divine Power; and are not the works of his providence for safety of Gods Eleſt, by gathering, inspiring, comforting, and every way preserving his Church, such as proceed from the same power likewise? Surely if Christ as God and man have ordained certain means for the gathering and keeping of his Church, seeing this doth belong to the Government of that Church, it must in reason follow I think, that as God and man, he worketh in Church Regiment, and consequently hath no more there any Superiours, then in the Government of the Common-wealth. Again, to be in the midst of his, wheresoever they are assembled in his name, and to be with them to the worlds end, are comforts which Christ doth perform to his Church as Lord and Governour; yea, such as he cannot perform but by that very Power wherein he hath no Superiour. Wherefore unlesse it can be proved that all the works of our Saviours Government in the Church are done by the meer and onely force of his humane nature, there is no remedy but to acknowledge it a manifest error, that Christ in the Government of the world is equal to the Father, but not in the government of the Church. Indeed to the honour of this Dominion, it cannot be said that God did exalt him otherwise then onely according to that humane nature, wherein he was made low. For as the Son of God, there could no advancement or exaltation grow unto him: And yet the Dominion, whereunto he was in his humane nature lifted up, is not without Divine Power exercised. It is by Divine Power that the Son of man who sitteth in heaven, doth work as King and Lord upon us which are on earth. The exercise of his Dominion over the Church Militant cannot chuse but cease, when there is no longer any Militant Church in the World. And therefore as Generals of Armies when they have finished their work, are wont to yield up such Commissions as were given for that purpose, and to remain in the state of subjects and not as Lords, as concerning their former Authority; even so when the end of all things is come, the Son of man (who till then reigneth) shall do the like, as touching regiment over the Militant Church on the earth. So that between the Son of man and his brethren, over whom he reigneth now in this their warfare, there shall be then as touching the exercise of that regiment no such difference, they not warring any longer under him, but he together with them under God, receiving the joys of everlasting triumph, that so God may be all in all; all misery in all the wicked through his Justice; in all the righteous, through his love all felicity and blisse. In the mean while he reigneth  
over

over the World as King, and doth those things wherein none is superior unto him, whether we respect the works of his providence and Kingdom, or of his regiment over the Church; the cause of error in this point, doth seem to have been a misconceit that Christ as Mediator, being inferior to his Father, doth as Mediator, all works of regiment over the Church, when in truth, regiment doth belong to his Kingly Office, Mediatorship to his Priestly. For as the High Priest both offered Sacrifices, for expiation of the peoples sins, and entered into the holy place, there to make intercession for them: So Christ having finished upon the Crosse that part of his Priestly Office, which wrought the propitiation for our sins, did afterwards enter into very heaven, and doth there as Mediator of the New Testament, appear in the sight of God for us. A like sleight of judgement it is, when they hold that Civil Authority is from God, but not immediately through Christ, nor with any subordination to God, nor doth any thing from God, but by the hands of our Lord Jesus Christ. They deny it not to be said of Christ in the old Testament, *By me Princes rule, and the Nobles, and all the Judges of the earth.* In the new as much is taught, *That Christ is the Prince of the Kings of the earth.* Wherefore to the end it may more plainly appear how all Authority of man is derived from God through Christ, and must by Christian men be acknowledged to be no otherwise held then of, and under him; we are to note that because whatsoever hath necessary being, the Son of God doth cause it to be, and those things without which the world cannot well continue, have necessary being in the world: a thing of so great use as Government, cannot chuse but be originally from him. Touching that Authority which civil Magistrates have in Ecclesiastical affairs, it being from God by Christ, as all other good things are, cannot chuse but be held as a thing received at his hands; and because such power is of necessity for the ordering of Religion, wherein the essence and very being of the Church consisteth, can no otherwise flow from him, then according to that special care which he hath to govern and guide his own people: it followeth that the said Authority is of and under him after a more special manner, in that *he is Head of the Church,* and not in respect of his general Regency over the World. *All things* (saith the Apostle speaking unto the Church) *are yours, and ye are Christs, and Christ is Gods.* Kings are Christs as Saints, because they are of the Church, if not Collectively, yet divisively understood. It is over each particular person within that Church where they are Kings; surely, Authority reacheth both unto all mens persons, and to all kinds of causes also: It is not denyed, but that they may have and lawfully exercise it; such Authority it is, for which and for no other in the world we term them heads; such Authority they have under Christ, because he in all things is Lord over all; and even of Christ it is that they have received such Authority, in as much as of him all lawful Powers are; therefore the Civil Magistrate is in regard of this Power, an under and subordinate Head of Christs people.

It is but idle where they speak, *That although for several companies of men there may be severall Heads or Governours, differing in the measure of their Authority from the chiefest who is Head over all, yet seeing it cannot be in the Church, for that the reason why Head Magistrates appoint others for such several places, is because they cannot be present every where to perform the Office of an Head. But Christ is never from his body, nor from any part of it, and therefore needeth not to substitute any, which may be Heads, some over one Church, and some over another.* Indeed the consideration of mans imbecillity, which maketh many heads necessary, where the burthen is too great for one, moved Jethro to be a perswader of Moses, that the number of Heads or Rulers might be instituted for discharge of that duty by parts, which in whole he saw was troublesome. Now although there be not in Christ any such defect, or weakness, yet other causes there be divers more then we are able to search into. Wherefore it might seem unto him expedient to divide his Kingdom into many Provinces, and place many Heads over it, that the power which each of them hath in particular with restraint,



might illustrate the greatnesse of his unlimited Authority. Besides, howsoever Christ be Spiritually alwayes united unto every part of his body, which is the Church: Nevertheless, we do all know, and they themselves who alledge this, will I doubt confesse also, that from every Church here visible, Christ touching visible and corporal presence, is removed as far as heaven from the earth is distant. Visible government is a thing necessary, for the Church and it doth not appear, how the exercise of visible government over such multitudes every where dispersed throughout the World should consist without sundry visible Governours, whose power being the greatest in that kind so far as it reacheth, they are in consideration thereof termed so far Heads. Wherefore notwithstanding the perpetual conjunction, by vertue whereof our Saviour alwayes remaineth Spiritually united unto the parts of his mystical body; Heads indeed with supream power, extending to a certain compasse, are for the exercise of a visible regiment not unnecessary. Some other reasons there are belonging unto this branch, which seem to have been objected, rather for the exercise of mens wits, in dissolving Sophisms, then that the Authors of them could think in likelihood thereby to strengthen their cause. For example, *If the Magistrate be Head of the Church within his own Dominion, then is he none of the Church: For all that are of the Church make the body of Christ, and every one of the Church fulfilleth the place of one member of the body: By making the Magistrate therefore Head, we do exclude him from being a member subject to the Head, and so leave him no place in the Church.* By which reason the name of a body politick, is supposed to be alwayes taken of the inferiour sort alone, excluding the principal Guides and Governours, contrary to all mens customs of speech. The error ariseth by misconceiving of some Scripture sentences, where Christ as the Head, and the Church as the body, are compared or opposed the one to the other. And because in such comparisons of oppositions, the body is taken for those onely parts which are subject unto the Head, they imagine that whoso is the Head of any Church, he is therefore even excluded from being a part of that Church; That the Magistrate can be none of the Church if so we make him the Head of the Church in his own Dominions: A chief and principal part of the Church therefore next this, is surely a strange conclusion. A Church doth indeed make the body of Christ being wholly taken together; and every one in the same Church fulfilleth the place of a member in the body, but not the place of an inferiour member, the which hath Supream Authority and Power over all the rest. Wherefore by making the Magistrate Head in his own Dominions, we exclude him from being a member subject unto any other person, which may visibly there rule in place of a Superiour or Head over him; but so far are we off from leaving him by this means no place in the Church that we do grant him the chief place. Indeed the Heads of those visible bodies, which are many, can be but parts inferiour in that Spiritual Body which is but one; yea, they may from this be excluded clean, who notwithstanding ought to be honoured, as possessing in order the highest rooms: But for the Magistrate to be termed in his Dominions an Head, doth not bar him from being any way a part or member of the Church of God.

As little to the purpose are those other cavils; *A Church which hath the Magistrate for head, is perfect man without Christ:* so that the knitting of our Saviour thereunto, should be an addition of that which is too much. Again, *If the Church be the body of Christ, and of the Civil Magistrate, it shall have two heads, which being monstrous, is to the great dishonour of Christ and his Church.* Thirdly, *if the Church be planted in a popular estate, then so far as all govern in common, and all have authority, all shall be heads there, and no body at all, which is another monster.* It might be feared what this birth of so many monsters together might pretend, but that we know how things natural enough in themselves may seem monstrous through misconceit; which error of mind is indeed a monster: and the skillful in natures mysteries have used to term it the womb of Monsters; if any be, it is that troubled understanding, wherein,

T.C. lib. 7.  
419.  
Ut Hen. 2.  
6. 9.

wherein, because things lie confusedly mixt together, what they are it appeareth not. A Church perfect without Christ, I know not how a man shall imagine, unless there may be either Christianity without Christ, or else a Church without Christianity. If Magistrates be heads of the Church, they are of necessity Christians, then is their head Christ. The adding of Christ universal head over all unto Magistrates particular headship, is no more superfluous in any Church then in other societies: each is to be both severally subject unto some head, and to have a head also general for them all to be subject unto. For so in Armies, in civil Corporations, we see it fareth: A body politique in such respects is not like a natural body, in this; more heads then one is superfluous, in that not; it is neither monstrous, nor yet uncomely for a Church to have different heads: for if Christian Churches be in number many, and every of them a perfect body by it self, Christ being Lord & head over all, why should we judge it a thing more monstrous for one body to have two heads, then one head to many bodies? Him that God hath made the supream head of the whole Church, the head not only of that mystical body which the eye of man is not able to discern, but even of every Christian politique society, of every visible Church in the world. And whereas, lastly, it is thought so strange, that in popular states a multitude to it self should be both body and head, all this wonderment doth grow from a little oversight, in deeming that the subject wherein headship ought to reside should be evermore some one person, which thing is not necessary. For in the collective body that hath not derived as yet the principality of power into some one or few, the whole of necessity must be head over each part; otherwise it could not have power possibly to make any one certain person head; in as much as the very power of making a head belongeth unto headship. These supposed *Monsters* we see therefore are no such *Giants*, as that there should need any *Hercules* to tame them.

The last difference which we have between the title of head when we give it unto Christ, and when we give it to other Governours, is, that the kind of Dominion which it importeth is not the same in both: Christ is head as being the fountain of life and ghostly nutriment, the well-spring of spiritual blessings powred into the body of the Church; they heads, as being the principal instruments for the Churches outward government; he head, as founder of the house; they, as his chiefest overseers. Against this is exception especially taken, and our purveyours are herein said to have their provision from the Popish shambles: for by *Pighius* and *Harding*, to prove that Christ alone is not head of the Church, this distinction they say is brought, that according to the inward influence of grace, Christ only is head: but according to the outward government, the being of head is a thing common to him with others. To raise up falsehoods of old condemned, and bring it for confirmation of any thing doubtful, which already hath sufficiently been proved an error, and is worthily so taken, this would justly deserve censuring. But shall manifest truth therefore be reproached, because men convicted in some things of manifest untruth have at any time thought or alledged it? If too much eagerness against their adversaries had not made them forget themselves, they might remember where being charged as maintainers of those very things, for which others before them have been condemned of heresie, yet left the name of any such heretick holding the same which they do should make them odious, they sticke not frankly to confesse, *That they are not afraid to consent in T.C. l. 3. p. 631 some points, with Jews, and Turkes*: which defence, for all that, were a very weak buckler for such as should consent with Jews and Turks, in that which they have been abhorred and hated for in the Church. But as for this distinction of headship, Spiritual and Mystical of Jesus Christ, ministerial and outward in others besides Christ; what cause is there to mislike either *Harding*, or *Pighius*, or any other besides for it? That which they have been reprov'd for is, not because they did therein utter an untruth, but such a truth as was not sufficient to bear up the cause which they did thereby seek to maintain. By this distinction they have both truly and sufficiently proved that

T.C.1.2.7.  
415.

that the name of Head importing power and Dominion over the Church, might be given to others besides Christ without prejudice to any part of his honour. That which they should have made manifest, was the name of Head, importing the power of universal dominion over the whole Church of Christ militant, doth, and that by divine right, appertain to the Pope of Rome: They did prove it lawful to grant unto others besides Christ the power of Headship in a different kind from his; but they should have proved it lawful to challenge, as they did to the Bishop of Rome, a power universal in that different kind. Their fault was therefore in exacting wrongfully so great power as they challenged in that kind, and not in making two kinds of power, unless some reasons can be shewed for which this distinction of power should be thought erroneous and false. A little they stir (although in vain) to prove that we cannot with truth make such distinction of power, whereof the one kind should agree unto Christ only, and the other be further communicated. Thus therefore they argue, *If there be no head but Christ in respect of Spiritual government there is no head but he in respect of the Word, Sacraments, and Discipline administered by those whom he hath appointed, for as much also as it is his Spiritual government*: Their meaning is, that whereas we make two kinds of power, of which two, the one being spiritual, is proper unto Christ, the other men are capable of because it is visible and external. We do amiss altogether in distinguishing, they think, forasmuch as the visible and external power of regiment over the Church is only in relation unto the world, the Sacraments, and Discipline, administered by such as Christ hath appointed thereunto, and the exercise of this power is also his spiritual government: therefore we do but vainly imagine a visible and external power in the Church differing from his spiritual power. Such disputes as this doth somewhat resemble the practising of well-willers upon their friends in the pangs of death, whose manner is even then to put smock in their nostrils, and so to fetch them again, although they know it a matter impossible to keep them living. The kind of affliction which the favourers of this labouring cause bear towards it, will not suffer them to see it dye, although by what means they should make it live, they do not see; but they may see that these wrestlings will not help: can they be ignorant how little it booteth to overcast so clear a light with some mist of ambiguity in the name of spiritual regiment? To make things therefore plain, that henceforward a child's capacity may serve rightly to conceive our meaning, we make the spiritual regiment of Christ to be generally that whereby his Church is ruled and governed in things spiritual. Of this general we make two distinct kinds; the one invisible, exercised by Christ himself in his own person; the other outwardly administered by them, whom Christ doth allow to be rulers and guiders of his Church. Touching the former of these two kinds, we teach that Christ in regard thereof is particularly termed *the head of the Church of God*; neither can any other creature in that sense & meaning be termed head besides him, because it importeth the conduct and government of our souls by the hand of that blessed Spirit wherewith we are sealed and marked, as being peculiarly his; him only therefore do we acknowledge to be the Lord, which dwelleth, liveth, and reigneth in our hearts; him only to be that head, which giveth salvation and life unto his body; him only to be that fountain from whence the influence of heavenly graces distilleth, and is derived into all parts, whether the Word or the Sacraments, or Discipline, or whatsoever be the means whereby it floweth. As for the power of administering these things in the Church of Christ, which power we call the power of order, it is indeed both spiritual and his; spiritual, because such properly concerns the Spirit: his, because by him it was instituted. Howbeit neither spiritual as that which is inwardly and invisibly exercised; nor his, as that which he himself in person doth exercise. Again that power of dominion which is indeed the point of this controversie, and doth also belong to the second kind of spiritual government, namely unto that regiment which is external and visible: this likewise being spiritual in regard of the manner about which



which it dealeth; and being his, in as much as he appoynteth whatsoever is done by it must notwithstanding be distinguished also from that power whereby he himself in person administred the former kind of his own Spiritual regiment, because he himself in person doth not administer this; we do not therefore vainly imagine, but truly and rightly discern a power external and visible in the Church, exercised by men, and severed in nature from that Spiritual power of Christs own regiment, which power is termed Spiritual, because it worketh secretly, inwardly, & invisibly: His, because none doth, nor can it personally exercise, either besides, or together with him; seeing that him only we may name our Head, in regard of his, and yet in regard of that other power from this, term others also besides him Heads, without any contradiction at all; which thing may very well serve for answer unto that also which they further alledge against the aforesaid distinction, namely, *That even the outward societies and assemblies of the Church, where one or two are gathered together in his Name, either for hearing of the Word, or for Prayer, or any other Church exercise, our Saviour Christ being in the midst of them as Mediatour, must be their Head: and if he be not there idle, but doing the office of a head fully, it followeth that even in outward societies and meetings of the Church, no meer man can be called the head of it, seeing that our Saviour Christ doing the whole office of the head himself alone, leaveth nothing to men by doing whereof they may obtain that title.* Which objection I take as being made for nothing but only to maintain argument: for they are not so far gone as to argue thus in sooth and right good earnest. *God standeth* (saith the Psalmist) *in the midst of gods*; if God be there present, he must undoubtedly be present as God; if he be not there idle, but doing the office of a God fully, it followeth, that God himself alone doing the whole office of a God, leaveth nothing in such assemblies to any other, by doing whereof they may obtain so high a name. The Psalmist therefore hath spoken amisse, and doth ill to call Judges Gods. Not so; for as God hath his office differing from theirs, and doth fully discharge it even in the midst of them, so they are not hereby excluded from all kind of duty for which that name should be given unto them also; but in that duty for which it was given them, they are encouraged Religiously and carefully to order themselves after the self same manner. Our Lord and Saviour being in the midst of his Church as Head, is our comfort, without the abridgement of any one duty; for performance whereof, others are termed Heads in another kind then he is. If there be of the ancient Fathers which say, *That there is but one head of the Church, Christ; and that the Minister that baptizeth cannot be the head of him that is baptized, because Christ is the head of the whole Church: and that Paul could not be head of the Church which he planted, because Christ is the head of the whole body:* They understand the name of head in such sort as we grant that it is not applicable to any other, no not in relation to the least part of the whole Church; he which baptizeth, baptizeth into Christ; he which converteth, converteth into Christ; he which ruleth, ruleth for Christ. The whole Church can have but one to be head as Lord and owner of all; wherefore if Christ be head in that kind, it followeth, that no other besides can be so either to the whole or to any part.

*To call and dissolve all solemn Assemblies about the publick Affairs of the Church.*

**A**mongst sundry Prerogatives of Simons Dominion over the Jews, there is reckoned as not the least, that no man might gather any great assembly in the Land without him. For so the manner of Jewish regiment had alwayes been, that whether the cause for which men assembled themselves in peaceable, good, and orderly sort, were Ecclesiastical, or Civil, Supream Authority should assemble them; David gathered all Israel together unto Jerusalem; when the Arke was to be removed, he assembled the Ionnes of Aaron and the Levites. Solomon did the like at such time as the Temple was to be dedicated; when the Church was to be reformed, Asa in his time did the same: The

sa me

same upon like occasions was done afterwards by *Isaiah, Hezekiah, Isaiab* and others.

*Polib. l. 6. de  
milit ac do-  
mest. Rom.  
discipl.*

*Lib. 1. de Col-  
liclich & de  
conventiculis.  
cap. de Episc.  
& presbyt.*

*Hierarch. lib.  
6. cap. 1.*

*Constat. consil.  
à Thersidre.*

*Cardicen consil.  
à Constat.*

*Hieron. cont.  
Ruf. lib. 1. 2.*

*Suzomen. lib. 6  
cap. 7.  
Ambrose Epist.  
32.*

The Consuls of *Rome*, *Polibius* affirmeth to have had a kind of Regall Authority, in that they might call together the Senate and People whensoever it pleased him. Seeing therefore the affairs of the Church and Christian Religion, are publick affairs, for the ordering whereof more solemn Assemblies sometimes are of as great importance and use, as they are for secular affairs: It seemeth no less an act of Supream Authority to call the one then the other. Wherefore the Clergy, in such wise gathered together, is an Ecclesiastical Senate, which with us, as in former times the chiefeſt Prelate at his discretion did use to assemble, so that afterwards in such considerations as have been before specified, it seemeth more meet to annex the said Prerogative to the Crown. The plot of reformed Discipline not liking thereof so well, taketh order that every former Assembly before it breaketh up, should it self appoint both the time and place of their after meeting again. But because I find not any thing on that side particularly alleadged against us herein, a longer disputation about so plain a cause shall not need. The ancient Imperial Law forbiddeth such assemblies as the Emperours Authority did not cause to be made. Before Emperours became Christians, the Church had never any general Synod, their greatest meeting consisting of Bishops and others, the gravest in each Province. As for the Civil Governours Authority, it suffered them only as things not regarded or not accounted of at such times as it did suffer them. So that what right a Christian King hath as touching Assemblies of that kind we are not able to judge, till we come to latter times, when Religion had won the hearts of the highest Powers. *Constantine* (as *Pighius* doth grant) was not only the first that ever did call any general Council together, but even the first that devised the calling of them for consultation about the businesses of God. After he had once given the example, his Successors a long time followed the same; in so much that *S. Hieron* to disprove the Authority of a Synod which was pretended to be general, useth this as a forcible Argument, *Dic quis Imperator hanc Synodum jussit convocari?* Their answer hereunto, is no answer, which say, That Emperours did not this without conference had with the Bishops: for to our purpose it is enough, if the Clergy alone did it not otherwise then by the leave and appointment of their Sovereign Lords and Kings. Whereas therefore it is on the contrary side alleadged, that *Valentinian* the elder being requested by Catholick Bishops, to grant that there might be a Synod for the ordering of matters called in question by the *Arians*, answered, that he being one of the Laity, might not meddle with such matters, and thereupon willed that the Priests and Bishops, to whom the care of those things belongeth, should meet & consult together by themselves where they thought good. We must with the Emperours speech weigh the occasion & drift thereof. *Valentinian* and *Valens*, the one a Catholick, the other an *Arian*, were Emperours together: *Valens* the Governour of the East; and *Valentinian* of the West Empire. *Valentinian* therefore taking his journey from the East, unto the West parts, and passing for that intent through *Thracia*, there the Bishops which held the soundness of Christian belief, because they knew that *Valens* was their professed Enemy, and therefore if the other was once departed out of those quarters, the Catholick cause was like to find very small favour, moved presently *Valentinian* about a Counsel to be assembled under the countenance of his Authority; who by likelyhood considering, what inconvenience might grow thereby, inasmuch as it could not be but a means to incense *Valens* the more against them, refused himself to be Author of, or present at any such Assembly, and of this his denial gave them a colourable reason, to wit, that he was although an Emperour, yet a secular person, and therefore not able in matters of so great obscurity to sit as a competent judge. But if they wch were Bishops and learned men, did think good to consult thereof together, they might; whereupon when they could not obtain that which they most desired, yet that which he granted unto them they took, and

and forthwith had a Council. *Valentinian* went on towards *Rome*, they remaining in consultation, till *Valens* which accompanied him returned back; so that now there was no remedy, but either to incur a manifest contempt, or else at the hands of *Valens* himself, to seek approbation of that they had done. To him therefore they became suitors, his answer was short, *Either Arianism, or Exile, which they would*; whereupon their banishment ensued. Let reasonable men now therefore be judges, how much this example of *Valentinian*, doth make against the Authority, which we say that Sovereign Rulers may lawfully have, as concerning Synods and meetings Ecclesiastical.

Of the Authority of making Laws.

Here are which wonder that we should account any Statute a Law, which the High Court of Parliament in *England* hath established about the matter of *Church Regiment*; the Prince and Court of Parliament, having (as they suppose) no more lawful means to give order to the Church and Clergy in those things, then they have to make Laws for the Hierarchies of Angels in Heaven; that the Parliament being a meer temporal Court, can neither by the Law of nature, nor of God, have competent power to define of such matters; that Supremacy in this kind cannot belong unto Kings, as Kings, because Pagan Emperours whose princely power was true Sovereignty, never challenged so much over the Church; that power in this kind cannot be the right of any earthly Crown, Prince, or State, in that they be Christians, forasmuch as if they be Christians, they all owe subjection to the Pastors of their souls; that the Prince therefore not having it himself, cannot communicate it to the Parliament, and consequently cannot make Laws here, or determine of the Churches Regiment by himself, Parliament or any other Court subjected unto him.

The Parliament of *England* together with the Convocation annexed therunto, is that whereupon the very essence of all Government within this Kingdom doth depend; it is even the body of the whole Realm, it consisteth of the King, and of all that within the Land are subject unto him. The Parliament is a Court not so meerly Temporal as if it might meddle with nothing but only leather and wooll: Those dayes of *Queen Mary* are not yet forgotten, wherein the Realm did submit itself unto the Legate of *Pope Julius*, at which time had they been perswaded as this man seemeth now to be, had they thought that there is no more force in Laws made by Parliament concerning Church affairs, then if men should take upon them to make Orders for the Hierarchies of Angels in Heaven, they might have taken all former Statutes of that kind as cancelled, and by reason of nullity abrogated. What need was there that they should bargain with the Cardinal, and purchase their pardon by promise made before hand, that what Laws they had made, assented unto, or executed, against the Bishop of *Romes* Supremacy, the same they would in that present Parliament, effectually abrogate and repeal? Had they power to repeal Laws made, and none to make Laws concerning the Regiment of the Church? Again, when they had by suit obtained his confirmation for such foundations of Bishopricks, Cathedral Churches, Hospitals, Colledges, and Schools; for such marriages before made, for such Institutions into livings Ecclesiastical, and for all such Judicial Processes, as having been ordered according to the Laws before in force, but contrary unto the Canons and Orders of the Church of *Rome*, were in that respect thought defective, although the Cardinal in his Letters of Dispensation, did give validity unto those Acts, even *Apostolica firmitatis robur*, the very strength of Apostolical solidity; what had all these been without those grave authentic words? Be it enabled by the Authority of this present Parliament, that all and singular Articles and Clauses contained in the said dispensation, shall remain and be reputed and taken to all intents and constructions in the Laws of this Realm, lawful, good and effectual to be alledged and pleaded in all Courts Ecclesiastical and Tem-

An 1. & 2.  
Phil. & Mari.  
cap. 8.



poral, for good and sufficient matter either for the Plaintiff or Defendant, without any Allegation or Objection to be made against the validity of them by pretence of any general Council, Canon, or Decree to the contrary. Somewhat be like they thought there was in this meer Temporal Court, without which the Popes owne meer Ecclesiastical Legates Dispensations had taken small effect in the Church of England; neither did they, or the Cardinal imagine any thing committed against the law of nature, or of God, because they took order for the Churches affairs, and that even in the Court of Parliament. The most natural and Religious course in making laws, is, that the matter of them be taken from the judgement of the wisest in those things which they are to concern; in matters of God to set down a form of prayer, a solemn confession of the Articles of the Christian Faith, and Ceremonies meet for the exercise of Religion. It were unnatural not to think the Pastors and Bishops of our Souls a great deal more fit, then men of Secular Trades, and Callings: Howbeit, when all which the wisdom of all sorts can do, is done for the devising of Laws in the Church, it is the general consent of all that giveth them the form and vigour of Laws, without which they could be no more unto us then the Councils of Physicians to the sick; well might they seem as wholesome admonitions and instructions, but Laws could they never be without consent of the whole Church to be guided by them, whereunto both nature and the practice of the Church of God set down in Scripture, is found every way so fully consonant, that God himself would not impose, no not his own Laws upon his people by the hand of Moses without their free and open consent. Wherefore to define and determine even of the Churches affairs by way of assent and approbation, as Laws are defined in that Right of Power, which doth give them the force of Laws: thus to define of our own Churches Regiment, the Parliament of England hath competent Authority.

Touching that Supremacy of Power which our Kings have in this case of making Laws, it resteth principally in the strength of a negative voice; which not to give them, were to deny them that without which they were Kings but by meer title and not in exercise of Dominion. Be it in Regiment Popular, Aristocratical, or Regal, Principality resteth in that person, or those persons unto whom is given right of excluding any kind of Law whatsoever it be, before establishment. This doth belong unto Kings, as Kings; Pagan Emperours, even Nero himself had no lesse; but much more then this in the Laws of his own Empire; that he challenged not any interest of giving voice in the Laws of the Church, I hope no man will so construe, as if the cause were conscience, and fear to incroach upon the Apostles right. If then it be demanded by what right from Constantine downward, the Christian Emperours did so far intermeddle with the Churches affairs, either we must herein condemn them, as being over presumptuously bold, or else judge that by a Law, which is termed *Regia*, that is to say Regal, the people having derived unto their Emperours their whole Power for making of Laws, and by that means his Edicts being made Laws, what matter soever they did concern, as Imperial Dignity endowed them with competent Authority and Power to make Laws for Religion, so they were thought by Christianity to use their power being Christians unto the benefit of the Church of Christ: Was there any Christian Bishop in the World which did then judge this repugnant unto the dutiful subjection which Christians do owe to the Pastors of their souls, to whom, in respect of their sacred order, it is not by us, neither may be denied, that Kings and Princes are as much, as the very meanest that liveth under them, bound in conscience to shew themselves gladly and willingly obedient, receiving the seals of Salvation, the blessed Sacraments at their hands, as at the hands of our Lord Jesus Christ, with all reverence, not disdaining to be taught and admonished by them, nor withholding from them as much as the least part of their due and decent honour? All which, for any thing that hath been alledged, may stand very well without renunciation of supremacy of Power in making Laws, even Laws concerning the most spiritual affairs of the Church; which

Laws

*Item quod  
principale  
cuius, Legis  
habet ut go-  
ver. Inst. de  
J. N. G. & C.*

Laws being made amongst us, are not by any of us so taken or interpreted, as if they did receive their force from power which the Prince doth communicate unto the Parliament, or unto any other Court under him, but from Power which the whole body of the Realm being naturally possess'd with, hath by free and deliberate assent derived unto him that ruleth over them, so far forth as hath been declared; so that our Laws made concerning Religion, do take originally their essence from the power of the whole Realm and Church of England, then which nothing can be more consonant unto the law of nature and the will of our Lord Jesus Christ.

To let these go, and return to our own Men; Ecclesiastical Governours, they say, may not meddle with making of Civil Laws, and of Laws for the Common-wealth; nor the Civil Magistrate, high or low, with making of Orders for the Church. It seemeth unto me very strange, that these men which are in no cause more vehement and fierce, then where they plead that Ecclesiastical persons may not be Lords, should hold that the power of making Ecclesiastical laws, which thing of all other is most proper unto Dominion, belongeth to none but Ecclesiastical persons onely: their oversight groweth herein for want of exact observation, what it is to make a Law. Tully speaking of the law of nature, saith, That thereof God himself was inventor, disceptator, lator, the deviser, the discussor, and deliverer: wherein he plainly alludeth unto the chiefest parts which then did appertain to his publick action. For when Laws were made, the first thing was to have them devised; the second to list them with as much exactnesse of judgement as any way might be used; the next by solemn voice of Sovereign authority to passe them, and give them the force of Laws. It cannot in any reason seem otherwise then most fit, that unto Ecclesiastical persons the care of devising Ecclesiastical Laws be committed, even as the care of Civil unto them which are in those affairs most skilful. This taketh not away from Ecclesiastical persons all right of giving voice with others, when Civil Laws are proposed for regiment of the Common-wealth, whereof themselves, though now the world would have them annihilated, are notwithstanding as yet a part; much lesse doth it cut off that part of the power of Princes, whereby as they claim, so we know no reasonable cause wherefore we may not grant them, without offence to Almighty God, so much authority in making all manner of Laws within their own Dominions, that neither Civil, nor Ecclesiastical do passe without their Royal assent.

In devising and discussing of Laws, wisdom especially is required; but that which establisheth them and maketh them, is power, even power of Dominion; the Chieftie wherof (amongst us) resteth in the person of the King. Is there any Law of Christs which forbiddeth Kings and Rulers of the Earth to have such Sovereign and supream Power in the making of Laws, either Civil or Ecclesiastical? If there be, our controversie hath an end. Christ in his Church hath not appointed any such Law concerning Temporal power, as God did of old unto the Common-wealth of Israel; but leaving that to be at the Worlds free choice, his chiefest care is that the spiritual Law of the Gospel might be published far and wide. They that received the Law of Christ, were for a long time people scattered in sundry Kingdoms, Christianity not exempting them from the Laws which they had been subject unto, saving onely in such cases as those Laws did injoyne that which the Religion of Christ did forbid: Hereupon grew their manifold persecutions throughout all places where they lived; as oft as it thus came to passe there was no possibility that the Emperours and Kings under whom they lived, should meddle any whit at all with making Laws for the Church. From Christ, therefore having received power, who doubteth, but as they did, so they might bind them to such orders as seemed fittest for the maintenance of their Religion, without the leave of high or low in the Common-wealth, for as much as in Religion it was divided utterly from them, and they from it. But when the mightiest began to like of the Christian faith, by their means whole free States and Kingdoms became obedient unto Christ. Now the question is, whether

T. C. L. 3. 51.

Kings by embracing Christianity, do thereby receive any such Law as taketh from them the weightiest part of that Sovereignty which they had even when they were Heathens : whether being infidels they might do more in causes of Religion, then now they can by the Laws of God, being true believers. For whereas in Regal States, the King or supream Head of the Common-wealth, had before Christianity a supream stroak in making of Laws for Religion ; he must by embracing Christian Religion utterly deprive himself thereof, and in such causes become subject unto his Subject, having even within his own Dominions them whose Commandment he must obey ; unlesse his power be placed in the Head of some forraign spiritual Potentate : so that either a forraign or domestical Commander upon Earth he must admit more now then before he had, and that in the chiefest things whereupon Common-wealths do stand. But apparent it is unto all men which are not strangers unto the Doctrine of Jesus Christ, that no State of the world receiving Christianity, is by any law therein contained, bound to resign the power which they lawfully held before : but over what persons, and in what causes soever the same hath been in force, it may so remain and continue still. That which as Kings they might do in matters of Religion, and did in matter of false Religion, being Idolatrous and Superstitious Kings the same they are now even in every respect fully authorized to do in all affairs pertinent to the state of true Christian Religion. And concerning the supream power of making Laws for all persons, in all causes to be guided by, it is not to be let passe that the head enemies of this Headship are constrained to acknowledge the King endued even with this verypower, so that he may & ought to exercise the same, taking order for the Church and her affaires, of what nature or kind soever, in case of necessity, as when there is no lawful Ministry, which they interpret then to be ( and this surely is a point very remarkable ) wheresoever the Ministry is wicked. A wicked Ministry is no lawful Ministry, and in such sort no lawful Ministry, that what doth belong unto them as Ministers by right of their calling, the same to be annihilated in respect of their bad qualities ; their wickednesse in it self a deprivation of right to deal in the affaires of the Church, and a warrant for others to deal in them which are held to be of a clean other society, the members whereof have been before so preumptorially for ever excluded from power of dealing for ever with affaires of the Church. They which once have learned throughly this lesson, will quickly be capable perhaps of another equivalent unto it. For the wickednesse of the Ministry transfers their right unto the King ; in case the King be as wicked as they, to whom then shall the right descend ? There is no remedy, all must come by devolution at length, even as the family of *Browne* will have it, unto the godly among the people, for confusion unto the wise and the great by the poor and the simple : some *Kimberdoling* with his retinue must take this work of the Lord in hand ; and the making of Church Laws and Orders, must prove to be their right in the end. If not for love of the truth, yet for shame of grosse absurdities, let these contentions and stifling fancies be abandoned. The cause which moved them for a time to hold a wicked Ministry no lawful Ministry, and in this defect of a lawful Ministry, authorized Kings to make Laws and Orders for the affaires of the Church, till it were well established, is surely this. First, they see that whereas the continual dealing of the Kings of *Israel* in the affairs of the Church, doth make now very strong against them, the burthen whereof they shall in time well enough shake off, if it may be obtained that it is indeed lawful for Kings to follow these holy examples ; howbeit no longer then during the case of necessity, while the wickednesse, and in respect thereof the unlawfulness of the Ministry doth continue. Secondly, they perceive right well, that unlesse they should yield authority unto Kings in case of such supposed necessity, the Discipline they urge were clean excluded, as long as the Clergy of *England* doth thereunto remain opposit. To open therefore a door for her entrance, there is no remedy but the tenent must be this ; That now when the Ministry of *England* is universally wicked, and in that respect hath



hath lost all authority, and is become no lawful Ministry, no such Ministry as hath the right, which otherwise should belong unto them if they were virtuous and godly, as their adversaries are; in this necessity the King may do somewhat for the Church: that which we do imply in the name of Headship, he may both have and exercise till they be entered, which will disburthen and ease him of it: till they come, the King is licenced to hold that power which we call Headship. But what afterwards? In a Church ordered, that which the supream Magistrate hath, is to see that the Laws of God touching his Worship, and touching all matters and orders of the Church, be executed and duly observed; to see that every Ecclesiastical person do that office whereunto he is appointed, to punish those that fail in their office. In a word, that which *Allen* himself acknowledgeth unto the earthly power which God hath given him, it doth belong to defend the Laws of the Church; to cause them to be executed, and to punish rebels and transgressors of the same: on all sides therefore it is confest, that to the King belongeth power of maintaining the Laws made for Church regiment, and of causing them to be observed; but principality of Power in making them, which is the thing we attribute unto Kings, this both the one sort, and the other do withstand.

*T.C.J. 1. p. 192*

*Apul. fol. 40. p. 4*

Touching the Kings supereminent authority in commanding, and in judging of causes Ecclesiastical, First, to explain therein our meaning. It hath been taken as if we did hold, that Kings may prescribe what themselves think good to be done in the service of God: how the Word shall be taught, how the Sacraments Administred; that Kings may personally sit in the Consistory where the Bishops do, hearing and determining what causes soever do appertain unto the Church. That Kings and Queens in their own proper persons, are by judicial sentence to decide the questions which do rise about matters of Faith and Christian Religion; that Kings may excommunicate; finally, that Kings may do whatsoever is incident unto the office and duty of an Ecclesiastical Judge; which opinion, because we account as absurd, as they who have fathered the same upon us, we do them to wit, that this our meaning is and no otherwise. There is not within this Realm an Ecclesiastical officer, that may by the Authority of his own place command universally throughout the Kings Dominions; but they of this people whom one may command, are to an others commandement unsubject; only the Kings Royal Power is of so large compasse, that no man commanded by him according to the order of Law, can plead himself to be without the bounds and limits of that Authority. I say according to order of Law, because that with us the highest have thereunto so tyed themselves, that otherwise then so they take not upon them to command any. And that Kings should be in such sort supream Commanders over all men, we hold it as requisite as well for the ordering of Spiritual as Civil affairs; in as much as without universal authority in this kind, they should not be able when need is, to do as vertuous Kings have done. *Iosiah* purposing to renew the house of the Lord, assembled the Priests and Levites, and when they were together, gave them their charge, saying: Go out unto the Cities of Judah, and gather of Israel money to repair the House of God from year to year, and best the things: But the Levites hastned not. Therefore the King called *Jehoiada*, the Chief, and said unto him; why hast thou not required of the Levites to bring in out of Judah and Jerusalem, the Tax of Moses, the Servant of the Lord, and of the Congregation of Israel, for the Tabernacle of the Testimony? For wicked *Athalia*, and her Children brake up the House of the Lord God, and all the things that were dedicated for the House of the Lord, did they bestow upon *Balaam*. Therefore the King commanded, and they made a Chest, and set it at the gate of the House of the Lord without, and they made a Proclamation through Judah and Jerusalem, to bring unto the Lord, the Tax of Moses the Servant of the Lord, laid upon Israel in the Wilderness. Could either he have done this, or after him *Ezechias* the like concerning the celebration of the Passeeover, but that all sorts of men in all things did owe unto these their Sovereign Rulers, the same obedience, which sometimes *Josiah* had them by vow and promise bound unto? Whose-

Power to command all persons, and to be over all Judges in causes Ecclesiastical.

*2 Chron. 21. ver. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9*

*2 Chron. 6. 30 vers. 6,*

*Jos. 1. v. 18,*

ver

*Just. de Offic.  
jud.*

*1 Eliz. cap. 1.*

ver shall rebel against thy Commandments, and will not obey thy words in all thou commandest him, let him be put to death: onely be strong and of a good courage. Furthermore, judgement Ecclesiastical we say is necessary for decision of Controversies rising between man and man, and for correction of faults committed in the affairs of God, unto the due execution whereof there are three things necessary, Laws, Judges, and Supream Governours of Judgements; what Courts there shall be, and what causes shall belong unto each Court, and what Judges shall determine of every cause, and what order in all judgements shall be kept; of those things the Laws have sufficiently disposed, so that his duty who sitteth in any such Court, is to judge, not of, but after the same Law. *In primis illud observare debet iudex: ne aliter judicet quam legibus, constitutionibus, aut moribus proditum est, ut Imperator Justinianus;* which Laws (for we mean the positive Laws of our Realm, concerning Ecclesiastical affairs) if they otherwise dispose of any such thing, then according to the Law of reason, and of God, we must both acknowledge them to be amisse, and endeavour to have them reformed: But touching that point, what may be objected, shall after appear. Our Judges in causes Ecclesiastical, are either Ordinary or Commissionary; Ordinary, those whom we term Ordinaries; and such by the Laws of this Land are none but Prelates onely, whose power to do that which they do, is in themselves, and belonging to the nature of their Ecclesiastical calling. In spiritual causes, a Lay Person may be no Ordinary; a Commissionary Judge there is no let but that he may be; and that our Laws do evermore refer the ordinary judgement of spiritual causes unto spiritual persons such as are termed Ordinaries, no man which knoweth any of the Practice of this Realm, can easily be ignorant. Now besides them which are Authorized to judge in several Territories, there is required an universal Power which reacheth over all, imparting Supream Authority of Government, over Courts, all Judges, all Causes, the operation of which power is as well to strengthen, maintain and uphold particular Jurisdictions, which haply might else be of small effect: as also to remedy that which they are not able to help, and to redresse that wherein they at any time do otherwise then they ought to do. This power being sometime in the Bishop of Rome, who by sinister Practises had drawn it into his hands, was for just considerations by publick consent annexed unto the Kings Royal Seat and Crown; from thence the Authors of Reformation would translate it into their National Assemblies or Synods, which Synods are the onely helps that they think lawful to use against such evils in the Church as particular Jurisdictions are not sufficient to redress. In which cause, our Laws have provided that the Kings Supereminent Authority and Power shall serve. As namely, when the whole Ecclesiastical state, or the Principal persons therein, do need Visitation and Reformation; when in any part of the Church Errours, Schisms, Heresies, Abuses, Offences, Contempts, Enormities, are grown; which men in their several Jurisdictions, either do not or cannot help. Whatsoever any Spiritual Authority and Power (such as Legates from the See of Rome did sometimes exercise) hath done, or might heretofore have done, for the remedy of those evils in lawful sort (that is to say, without the violation of the Laws of God, or nature in the deed done) as much in every degree our Laws have fully granted, that the King for ever may do, not onely by setting Ecclesiastical Synods on work, that the thing may be their Act, and the King their motion unto it, for so much perhaps the Masters of Reformation will grant: But by Commissions few or many, who having the Kings Letters Patents, may in the vertue thereof execute the premises as Agents in the right, not of their own peculiar and Ordinary, but of his supereminent power. When men are wronged by inferiour Judges, or have any just cause to take exception against them, their way for redress, is to make their appeal; and appeal is a present delivery of him which maketh it, out of the hands of their power and jurisdictions from whence it is made. Pope Alexander having sometimes the King of England at advantage, caused him amongst o-  
ther

other things to agree, that as many of his Subjects as would might have appeal to the Court of Rome. And thus (saith one) that wherewithal mean persons at this day would scorn to submit himself, so great a King was content to be subjected. Notwithstanding even when the Pope (saith he) had so great authority amongst Princes which were far off, the Romans he could not frame to obedience; nor was able to obtain that himself might abide at Rome, though promising not to meddle with other then Ecclesiastical Affairs. So much are things that terrifie more leaured by such as behold them aloof off then at hand. Reformers I doubt not in some causes will admit appeals, but appeals made to their Synods, even as the Church of Rome doth allow of them, so they be made to the Bishop of Rome. As for that kind of appeal which the English Laws do approve from the Judge of any certain particular Court unto the King as the onely Supream Governour on Earth, who by his Delegates may give a final definitive Sentence from which no farther appeal can be made: will their platform allow of this? Surely, for asmuch as in that estate which they all dream of, the whole Church must be divided into Parishes, in which none can have greater or less Authority and power then another: again the King himself must be but as a common member in the body of his own Parish, and the causes of that onely Parish must be by the officers thereof determinable: In case the King had so much favour or preferment as to be made one of those Officers (for otherwise by their positions, he were not to meddle any more then the meanest amongst his Subjects with the judgements of any Ecclesiastical cause) how is it possible they should allow of appeals to be made from any other a-road to the King? To receive appeals from all other Judges, belongeth unto the highest in power of all; and to be in power over all (as touching judgement in Ecclesiastical causes) this as they think belongeth onely to Synods. Whereas therefore with us, Kings do exercise over all things, persons, and causes Supream Power, both of voluntary and litigious jurisdictions; so that according to the one they incite, reform and command, according to the other, they judge universally, doing both in far other sort then such as have ordinary spirital power; oppugned we are herein by some colourable shew of Argument, as if to grant thus much to any Secular Person, it were unreasonable. For it is (say they) apparent out of the Chronicles, that judgement in Church matters pertaineth to God, Seeing likewise it is evident out of the Apostles, that the High-Priest is set over those matters in Gods behalf, it must needs follow that the Principality or direction of the judgement of them is by Gods Ordinance appertaining to the High-Priest, and consequently to the Ministry of the Church, and if it be by Gods Ordinance appertaining unto them, how can it be translated from them to the civil Magistrate? Which Argument briefly drawn into form, is thus, That which belongeth unto God, may not be translated unto any other, but whom he hath appointed to have it in his behalf: But principality of judgement in Church matters appertaineth unto God, which hath appointed the High-priest, and consequently the Ministry of the Church alone to have it in his behalf, Ergo It may not from them be translated to the Civil Magistrate. The first of which propositions we grant, as also in the second, that branch which ascribeth unto God Principality in Church matters. But that either he did appoint none but onely the High-Priest to exercise the said Principality for him, or that the Ministry of the Church may for reason from thence be concluded to have alone the same principality by his appointment; these two points we deny utterly. For concerning the High-Priest there is first no such Ordinance of God to be found: Every High-Priest (saith the Apostle) is taken from amongst men, and is ordained for men in things pertaining to God whereupon it may well be gathered, that the Priest was indeed Ordained of God to have Power in things appertaining unto God. For the Apostle doth there mention the Power of offering gifts and sacrifices for sin, which kinde of Power was not onely given of God unto Priests, but restrained unto Priests onely. The power of jurisdiction and ruling Authority, this also God gave them, but not them alone: For it is held as all men know, that others of the



Laitie were herein joynd by the law with them. But concerning Principality in Church affairs, (for of this our question is and of no other) the Priest neither had it alone, nor at all, but in spiritual or Church affairs, (as hath been already shewed) it was the Royal Prerogative of Kings onely. Again, though it were so that God had appointed the high Priest to have the said principality of Government in those matters; yet how can they who alleadge this, enforce thereby, that consequently the Ministry of the Church, and no other ought to have the same, when they are so far off from allowing so much to the Ministry of the Gospel, as the Priest-hood of the Law had by Gods appointment: That we but collecting thereout a difference in Authority and Jurisdiction amongst the Clergy, to be for the Politie of the Church not inconvenient; they forthwith think to close up our mouths by answering, *That the Jewish High-Priest, had authority above the rest, onely in that they presigued the Sovereignty of Jesus Christ; as for the Ministers of the Gospel, it is altogether unlawful to give them as much as the least tittle, any syllable wherof may sound to Principality.* And of the Regency which may be granted, they hold others even of the Laitie, no less capable then the Pastors themselves. How shall these things cleave together? The truth is, that they have some reason to think it not at all of the fittest for Kings, to sit as ordinary Judges in matters of Faith and Religion. An ordinary Judge must be of the quality which in a supream Judge is not necessary, because the person of the one is charged with that which the other Authority dischargeth, without imploying personally himself therein. It is an error to think that the Kings authority can have no force nor power in the doing of that which himself may not personally do. For first, impossible it is that at one and the same time, the King in person should order to many, and so different affairs, as by his power every where present, are wont to be ordered both in peace and war, at home and abroad. Again, the King in regard of his nonage or minority, may be unable to perform that thing wherein years of discretion are requisite for personal action; and yet this authority even then be of force. For which cause we say, that the Kings authority dyeth not but is and worketh always alike. Sundry considerations there may be effectual, to withhold the Kings person from being a doer of that which notwithstanding his power must give force unto, even in civil affairs; where nothing doth more either concern the duty, or better besseem the Majesty of Kings, then personally to Administer Justice to their people (as most famous Princes have done;) yet if it be in case of Felony or Treason, the Learned in the Laws of this Realm do affirm, that well may the King commit his authority to another, to judge between him and the offender, but the King being himself there a party, he cannot personally sit to give judgement.

512. 171. 172. of  
the Church, &c.  
cap. 3.

As therefore the person of the King may, for just considerations, even where the cause is Civil, be notwithstanding withdrawn from occupying the seat of judgement, and others under his Authority be fit, he unfit himself to judge; so the considerations for which it were haply not convenient for Kings to sit and give sentence in Spiritual Courts, where causes Ecclesiastical are usually debated, can be no bar to that force and efficacy which their Sovereign Power hath over those very *Consistories*, and for which, we hold without any exception that all Courts are the Kings. All men are not for all things sufficient, and therefore publique affairs being divided, such persons must be authorized Judges in each kinde, as Common reason may presume to be most fit. Which cannot of Kings and Princes ordinarily be presumed in causes meerly Ecclesiastical; so that even common sense doth rather adjudge this burthen unto other men. We see it hereby a thing necessary, to put a difference, as well between that ordinary Jurisdiction which belongeth to the Clergy alone, and that *Commissary* wherein others are for just considerations appointed to joyn with them, as also between both these Jurisdictions; and a third; whereby the King hath transcendent Authority, and that in all causes over both. Why this may not lawfully be granted unto him, there is no reason. A time there was when Kings were not capable of any such power

power, as namely, when they professed themselves open Enemies unto Christ and Christianity. A time there followed when they, being capable, took sometimes more, sometimes less to themselves, as seemed best in their own eyes, because no certainty touching their right was as yet determined. The Bishops who alone were before accustomed to have the ordering of such affairs saw very just cause of grief, when the highest, favouring Heresie, withstood by the strength of Sovereign Authority, Religious proceedings. Whereupon they often times, against this unresistable power, pleaded the use and custom, which had been to the contrary; namely, that the affairs of the Church should be dealt in by the Clergy, and by no other; unto which purpose, the sentences that then were uttered in defence of unabolished Orders and Laws, against such as did, of their own heads, contrary thereunto, are now altogether impertinently brought in opposition against them, who use but that power which Laws have given them, unless men can shew, that there is in those Laws some manifest iniquity or injustice. Whereas therefore against the force Judicial and Imperial, which supreme Authority hath, it is alledged, how *Constantine* termeth Church-Officers, Overseers of things within the Church, himself, of those without the Church: how *Augustine* witnesseth that the Emperor not daring to judge of the Bishops cause, committed it to the Bishops; and was to crave pardon of the Bishops, for that by the *Donatists* importunity, which made no end of appealing unto him, he was, being weary of them, drawn to give sentence in a matter of theirs; how *Hilary* beseecheth the Emperor *Constantine*, to provide that the Governors of his Provinces should not presume to take upon them the judgement of Ecclesiastical causes, to whom onely Commonwealth matters onely belonged; How *Ambrose* affirmeth, that *Palaces* belong unto the Emperor, Churches to the Minister; that the Emperor hath the authority over the Common-walls of the City, and not in holy things; for which cause he never would yeild to have the causes of the Church debated in the Princes Consistories, but excused himself to the Emperor *Valentinian*, for that being convented to answer concerning Church matters in a Civil Court, he came not: We may by these testimonies drawn from antiquity, if we list to consider them, discern how requisite it is that authority should always follow received Laws in the manner of proceeding. For in as much as there was at the first no certain Law, determining what force the principal Civil Magistrates authority should be of, how far it should reach, and what order it should observe; but Christian Emperors from time to time did what themselves thought most reasonable in those affairs; by this means it cometh to pass that they in their practice vary, and are not uniform. Vertuous Emperors, such as *Constantine* the Great was, made conscience to swerve unnecessarily from the custom which had been used in the Church, even when it lived under Infidels; *Constantine* of reverence to Bishops, and their spiritual authority, rather abstained from that which himself might lawfully do, then was willing to claim a power not fit or decent for him to exercise. The order which hath been before, he ratifieth, exhorting the Bishops to look to the Church, and promising that he would do the office of a Bishop over the Commonwealth; which very *Constantine*, notwithstanding did not thereby so renounce all authority in judging of special causes, but that sometime he took, as *St. Augustine* witnesseth, even personall cognition of them; howbeit whether as purposing to give therein judicially any sentence, I stand in doubt; for if the other of whom *St. Augustine* elsewhere speaketh, did in such sort judge, surely there was cause why he should excuse it as a thing not usually done. Otherwise there is no let, but that any such great person may hear those causes too and fro debated, and deliver in the end his own opinion of them, declaring on which side himself doth judge that the truth is. But this kind of sentence bindeth no side to stand thereunto; it is a sentence of private perswasion, and not of solemne jurisdiction, albeit a King or an Emperor pronounce it; again, on the contrary part, when Governors infected with Heresie were possessed with the highest power, they thought they might use it as pleased themselves, to

T.C. 43, p. 155.

Hist. de vit.  
Co. stat. 4.  
67, 102, 156.

Lib. 5. ep. 33.

\* See the  
stat. of Edw.  
1. and Edw.  
2. and Nat.  
Brev. touch-  
ing Prohibi-  
tion. See also  
in Bracton  
these sen-  
tences, lib. 5.  
c. 2. Est ju-  
risdictio ordi-  
naria que-  
dam delega-  
ta, que perti-  
net ad Sa-  
cerdotium, &  
Forum Ec-  
clesiasticum,  
sicut in causis  
Spirituali-  
bus & Spiritu-  
alitati an-  
nexis. Et eti-  
am alia ju-  
risdictio ordi-  
naria vel  
delegata que  
pertinet ad  
Coronam, &  
dignitatem  
Regis & ad  
Regnum in  
causis & pla-  
citis rerum  
temporalium  
in foro secu-  
lari. Again,  
Cum diverse  
sint hinc in-  
de jurisdicti-  
ones, & di-  
versi Judi-  
ces, & diver-  
se cause, de-  
bet quilibet  
ipsorum in-  
primis esti-  
mare, an  
sua sit ju-  
risdictio, ne falcem videatur ponere in Messum alienam. Again, Non pertinet ad regem injungere pen-  
itentias, nec ad judicem secularem, nec etiam ad eos pertinet cognoscere de iis qua sunt spiritualibus  
annexa, sicut de decimis & aliis Ecclesie provenionibus. Again, Non est Laicus componendus cor-  
ram judice Ecclesiastico de aliquo quod in foro seculari terminari possit & debeat.

further by all means that opinion which they desired should prevail, they not respecting at all what was meet, presumed to command and judge all men in all causes, without either care of orderly proceeding, or regard to such Laws and Customs as the Church had been wont to observe. So that the one sort feared to do even that which they might, and that which the other ought not they boldly presumed upon; the one sort of modestly, excused themselves where they scarce needed; the other, though doing that which was inexcusable, bare it out with main power, not enduring to be told by any man how far they roved beyond their bounds. So great odds was between them whom before we mentioned, and such as the younger *Valentinian*, by whom *Saint Ambrose* being commanded to yield up one of the Churches under him unto the *Arians*, whereas they which were sent on his Message alleaged, That the Emperour did but use his own right, for as much as all things were in his power: The Answer which the holy Bishop gave them was, *That the Church is the House of God, and that those things that are Gods are not to be yielded up, and disposed of, at the Emperors will and pleasure; His Palaces he might grant to whomsoever he pleaseth, but Gods own Habitation not so.* A cause why many times Emperors do more by their absolute Authority then could very well stand with reason, was the over great importunity of wicked Hereticks, who being enemies to peace and quietness, cannot otherwise then by violent means be supported,

In this respect therefore we must needs think the state of our own Church much better settled then theirs was; because our Laws have with far more certainty prescribed bounds unto each kinde of Power. All decision of things doubtful, and corrections of things amiss are proceeded in by order of Law, what person soever he be unto whom the administration of Judgement belongeth. It is neither permitted unto Prelates nor Prince to judge and determine at their own discretion, but Law hath prescribed what both shall do. What power the King hath he hath it by Law, the bounds and limits of it are known, the intire community giveth general order by Law how all things publicly are to be done, and the King as the Head thereof, the highest in Authority over all, causeth according to the same Law every particular to be framed and ordered thereby. The whole Body Politique maketh Laws, which Laws gave power unto the King, and the King having bound himself to use according unto Law that power, it so falleth out, that the execution of the one is accomplished by the other in most religious and peaceable sort. There is no cause given unto any to make supplication, as *Hilary* did, that Civil Governors, to whom Commonwealth matters onely belong, may not presume to take upon them the judgement of Ecclesiastical causes. If the cause be Spiritual, Secular Courts do not meddle with it; we need not excuse our selves with *Ambrose*, but boldly and lawfully we may refuse to answer before any Civil Judge in a matter which is not Civil, so that we do not mistake either the nature of the cause, or of the Court, as we easily may do both, without some better direction then can be by the rules of this new-found Discipline. But of this most certain we are, that our Laws do neither suffer a \* Spiritual Court to entertain those causes which by the Law are Civil, nor yet if the matter be indeed Spiritual, a meer Civil Court to give judgement of it. Touching Supreme Power therefore to command all men, and in all manner of causes of judgement to be highest, let thus much suffice as well for declaration of our own meaning, as for defence of the truth therein.

The cause is not like when such Assemblies are gathered together by Supreme Authority concerning other affairs of the Church, and when they meet about the making of Ecclesiastical Laws or Statutes. For in the one they are

onely



only to advise, in the other to decree. The persons which are of the one; the King doth voluntarily assemble, as being in respect of quality fit to consult withal; them which are of the other, he calleth by prescript of Law, as having right to be thereunto called. Finally, the one are but themselves, and their sentence hath but the weight of their own judgement; the other represent the whole Clergy, and their voyces are as much as if all did give personal verdict. Now the question is, Whether the Clergy alone so assembled, ought to have the whole power of making Ecclesiastical Laws, or else consent of the Laity may thereunto be made necessary, and the Kings assent so necessary, that his sole denial may be of force to stay them from being Laws.

If they with whom we dispute were uniform, strong and constant in that which they say, we should not need to trouble our selves about their persons to whom the power of making Laws for the Church belongs: for they are sometimes very vehement in contention, that from the greatest thing unto the least about the Church, all must needs be immediately from God. And to this they apply the pattern of the ancient Tabernacle which God delivered unto Moses, and was therein so exact, that there was not left as much as the least appurtenance for the wit of man to devise in the framing of it. To this they also apply that streight and severe charge which God so often gave concerning his own Law, *Whatsoever I command ye, take heed ye do it: Thou shalt put nothing thereto, thou shalt take nothing from it*: Nothing, whether it be great or small; yet sometimes bethinking themselves better, they speak as acknowledging that it doth suffice to have received in such sort the principal things from God, and that for other matters the Church hath sufficient Authority to make Laws; whereupon they now have made it a question, What persons they are whose right it is to take order for the Churches affairs, when the institution of any new thing therein is requisite. Law may be requisite to be made either concerning things that are only to be known and believed in, or else touching that which is to be done by the Church of God. The Law of Nature, and the Law of God, are sufficient for declaration in both what belongeth unto each man separately as his soul is the Spouse of Christ, yea so sufficient, that they plainly and fully shew whatsoever God doth require by way of necessary introduction unto the state of everlasting bliss. But as a man liveth joynd with others in common society, and belongeth to the outward politique body of the Church, albeit the same Law of Nature and Scripture have in this respect also made manifest the things that are of greatest necessity; nevertheless, by reason of new occasions still arising which the Church having care of souls must take order for as need requireth, hereby it cometh to pass, that there is and ever will be so great use even of Humane Laws and Ordinances, deducted by way of discourse as a conclusion from the former Divine and Natural, serving for principals thereunto. No man doubteth, but that for matters of action and practice in the affairs of God, for manner in Divine Service, for order in Ecclesiastical proceedings about the regiment of the Church, there may be oftentimes cause very urgent to have laws made: but the reason is not so plain wherefore humane laws should appoint men what to believe. Wherefore in this we must note two things; 1. That in matter of opinion, the law doth not make to be truth which before was not, as in matter of action it causeth that to be a duty which was not before, but manifesteth only and giveth men notice of that to be truth, the contrary whereunto they ought not before to have believed. 2. That opinions do cleave to the understanding, and are in heart assented unto, it is not in the power of any humane law to command them, because to prescribe what men shall think belongeth only unto God; *Corda creditur ore fit confessio*, saith the Apostle. As opinions are either fit, or inconvenient to be professed, so mans law hath to determine of them. It may for publique unities sake require mens professed assent, or prohibite their contradiction to special articles, wherein as there haply hath been Controversie what is true, so the same were like to continue still, not without grievous detriment unto a number of souls, except Law to remedy that evil, should set down a certainty, which no man afterwards is to gain-say. Wherefore

What Laws may be made for the affairs of the Church and to whom the power of making them appertaineth.

Deut 12.32.  
and 4.2.  
Josh 1.7.

Thom 2.2. quæst.  
108. art. 1.



miraculous, rare, and extraordinary illumination, in relation whereunto the Apostle comparing the Old Testament and the New together, termeth the one a Testament of the Letter, for that God delivered it written in stone, the other a Testament of the Spirit, because God imprinted it in the hearts and declared it by the tongues of his chosen Apostles through the power of the Holy Ghost, feigning both their conceits and speeches in most Divine and incomprehensible manner. Wherefore in as much as the Council of Jerusalem did chance to consist of men so enlightened, it had authority greater then were meet for any other Council besides to challenge, wherein such kind of persons are, as now the state of the Church doth stand, Kings being not then, that which now they are, and the Clergy not now, that which then they were, till it be proved that some special Law of Christ hath for ever annexed unto the Clergy alone the power to make Ecclesiastical Laws, we are to hold it a thing most consonant with equity and reason, that no Ecclesiastical Laws be made in a Christian Common-wealth, without consent as well of the Laity, as of the Clergy, but least of all without consent of the highest Power.

For of this thing no man doubteth, namely that in all Societies, Companies and Corporations, what severally each shal be bound unto it must be with all their assents ratified. Against all equity it were that a man should suffer detriment at the hands of men for not observing that which he never did either by himself or by others, medietely or immediately agree unto. Much more then a King should constrain all others unto the strict observation of any such humane ordinance as passeth without his own approbation. In this case therefore especially that vulgar aisme is of force, *quod omnes tangit ab omnibus tractari & approbari debet*. Whereupon Pope Nicholas, although otherwise not admitting Lay persons, no not Emperors themselves, to be present at Synods, doth notwithstanding seem to allow of their presence, when matters of faith are determined, whereunto all men must stand bound. *Ubinam legis Imperatores antecessores vestros, synodalibus conventibus interfuisse nisi forsitan in quibus de fide tractatum est quæ non solum ad clericos, verum etiam ad laicos & omnes pertinet Christianos*; A Law, be it Civil or Ecclesiastical, is a publique obligation, wherein seeing that the whole standeth charged, no reason it should pass without his privy, and will whom principally the whole doth depend upon. *Sic ut laici jurisdictionem clericorum perterbare, ita clerici jurisdictionem laicorum non debent minuire*, saith Innocentius, *Extra de judiciis novis*. As the Laity should not binder the Clergies jurisdiction, so neither is it reason that the Laities right should be abridged by the Clergy: saith Pope Innocent. But were it so that the Clergy alone might give Laws unto all the rest, for as much as every estate doth desire to enlarge the bounds of their own liberties, is it not easie to see how injurious this might prove unto men of other conditions. Peace and Justice are maintained by preserving unto every order their rights, and by keeping all estates as it were in an even ballance, which thing is no way better done, then if the King their common Parent, whose care is presumed to extend most indifferently over all, do bear the cheifest sway in the making laws which all must be ordered by. Wherefore of them which in this point attribute most to the Clergy, I would demand what evidence there is, whereby it may clearly be shewed, that in ancient Kingdoms Christian, any Canon devised by the Clergy alone in their Synods, whether Provincial, National, or General, hath by mere force of their agreement taken place as a law, making all men constrainable to be obedient thereunto, without any other approbation from the King, before or afterwards, required in that behalf. But what speak we of ancient Kingdoms, when at this day, even the papacy itself, the very Tridentine Council, hath not every where as yet obtained to have in all points the strength of Ecclesiastical Law; did not Philip King of Spain, publishing that Council in the Low Countries, add thereunto an expresse clause of special provision, that the same should in no wise prejudice, hurt or diminish any kind of priviledge, which the King or his vassals a fore time, had enjoyed, touching either possessory judgements of Ecclesiastical livings, or concerning nominations thereunto, or belonging

1 Cor. 3.

*cap. de illis, de  
excess. Prætor  
L. per fundum  
Rusticæ, grad.  
& s. Religiosum  
de rerum divis.*

*Gloss. dist. 9.  
c. ubinam.*

*But. Ep. b. r. o.  
in quæst. 6. 1.  
s. 124.*



longing to whatsoever rights they had else in such affairs. If therefore the Kings exception taken against some part of the Canons contained in that Council, were a sufficient bar to make them of none effect within territories, it followeth that the like exception against any other part, had been also of like efficacy, and so consequently that no Part thereof had obtained the strength of a Law, if he which excepted against a part had so done against the whole: as what reason was there but that the same authority which limited might quite and clean have refused that Council, who so alloweth the said Act of the Catholique Kings for good and lawful, must grant that the Canons even of general Councils, have but the face of wise mens opinions, concerning that whereof they treat, till they be publicquely assented unto, where they are to take place as Laws, and that in giving such publique assent, as maketh a Christian Kingdom subject unto those Laws, the Kings Authority is the cheifest. That which an University of men, a Company or Corporation, doth without consent of their Rector, is as nothing. Except therefore we make the Kings Authority over the Clergy, less in the greatest things, then the power of the meanest Governour is in all things over the Colledge, or Society, which is under him, how should we think it a matter decent, that the Clergy should impose Laws; the Supreme Governours assent not asked.

Yea that which is more, the Laws thus made, God himself doth in such sort authorize, that to despise them, is to despise in them him. It is a loose and licentious opinion, which the *Anabaptists* have embraced, holding that Christian mans liberty is lost, and the soul which Christ hath redeemed unto himself injuriously drawn into servitude under the Yoke of humane power, if any Law be now imposed besides the Gospel of Christ, in obedience wherunto the Spirit of God, and not the constraint of men, is to lead us, according to that of the blessed Apostle, Such as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the Sons of God, and not such as live in thralldom unto men. Their judgement is therefore that the Church of Christ should admit of no Law-makers but the Evangelists, no Courts but Presbyteries, no punishments but Ecclesiastical censures: as against this sort, we are to maintain the use of humane Laws, and the continuall necessity of making them from time to time, as long as this present World doth last, so likewise the Authority of Laws, so made, doth need much more by us to be strengthened against another sort, who although they do not utterly condemn the making of Laws in the Church, yet make they a great deal less account of them then they should do. There are which think simply of humane Laws, that they can in no sort touch the conscience. That to break and transgress them, cannot make men in the sight of God culpable, as sin doth; onely when we violate such laws, we do thereby make our selves obnoxious unto external punishment in this World, so that the Magistrate may in regard of such offence committed justly correct the offender, and cause him without injury to indure such pains as law doth appoint, but further it reacheth not. For first the conscience is the proper Court of God, the guiltiness thereof is sin, and the punishment eternal death, men are not able to make any law that shall command the heart, it is not in them to make inward conceit a crime, or to appoint for any crime other punishment then corporal; their laws therefore can have no power over the soul, neither can the heart of man be polluted by transgressing them. *St. Augustine* rightly defineth sin to be that which is spoken, done or desired, not against any laws, but against the Law of the Living God. The Law of God is proposed unto man, as a glass wherein to behold the stains and the spots of their sinful souls. By it they are to judge themselves, and when they feel themselves to have transgressed against it, then to bewail their offences with *David*, Against thee onely O Lord, have I sinned and done wickedly in thy sight; that so our present tears may extinguish the flames, which otherwise we are to feel, and which God in that day shall condemn the Wicked unto, when they shall render account of the evil which they have done, not by violating statute Laws, and Canons, but by disobedience unto his law and his word.

For

For our better instruction therefore concerning this point, first we must note That the Law of God it self doth require at our hands subjection. Be ye subject, saith S. Peter, and S. Paul, *Let every soul be subject: subject all unto such powers as are set over us.* For if such as are, be set over us, require our subjection, we by denying it are not disobedient to the Law of God, or undutiful unto higher Powers, because though they be such in regard of others over whom they have lawful dominion, yet having not so over us, unto us they are not such. Subjection therefore we owe, and that by the Law of God, we are in conscience bound to yield it even unto every of them that hold the same of Authority and Power in relation unto us. Howbeit, not all kinds of subjection, unto every such kind of power: concerning *Seribes and Pharisees*, our Saviours precept was, *Whatsoever they shall tell ye, do it.* Was it his meaning, that if they should at any time enjoyn the people to levy an Army or to sell their Land and Goods, for the furtherance of so great an enterprize, and in a word, that simply whatsoever it were which they did command, they ought without any exception forth-with to be obeyed. No, but what so ever they shall tell you, must be understood in *pernitentibus adhibendum*, it must be construed with limitation, and restrained unto things of that kind, which did belong to their place and power. For they had not power general, absolutely given them to command all things. The reason why we are bound in conscience to be subject unto all such power, is because all powers are of God.

They are of God either instituting, or permitting them, power is then of Divine institution, when either God himself doth deliver, or even by light of nature find out the kind thereof. So that the power of Parents over Children, and of Husbands over their Wives, the power of all sorts of Superiours, made by consent of Common wealths, within themselves, or grow from agreement amongst Nations, such power is of Gods own institution in respect of the kind thereof; Again, if respect be had unto those particular persons, to whom the same is derived, if they either receive it immediately from God, as *Moses* and *Aaron* did; or from nature, as Parents do; or from men by a natural and orderly course, as every Governour appointed in any Common wealth, by the orders thereof doth, then is not the kind of their power, onely of Gods instituting, but the derivation thereof also into their Persons is from him. He hath placed them in their rooms, and doth term them his Ministers; Subjection therefore is due unto all such powers, inasmuch as they are of Gods own institution, even then when they are of mans creation, *Omni humane Creature*, which things the Heathens themselves do acknowledge. *Sanctus & Cæsaris* *Hom. II. 12.*

As for them that exercise power altogether against order, although the kind of power which they have may be of God, yet is their exercise thereof against God, and therefore not of God, otherwise then by Permission, as all Injustice is.

Touching such Acts as are done by that power which is according to his institution, that God in like sort doth authorize them, and account them to be his; though it were not confessed, it might be proved undeniable, for if that be accounted our deed, which others do, whom we have appointed to be our agents, how should God but approve those deeds, even as his own, which are done by vertue of that commission and power which he hath given. Take heed, (saith *Jehosaphat* unto his Judges) *be careful and circumspiced what ye do, ye do not execute the judgements of man but of the Lord.* 2 Chron. 19. 6. The Authority of *Cæsar* over the *Jews*, from whence was it? Had it any other ground then the Law of Nations, which maketh Kingdoms, subdued by just War, to be subject unto their Conquerors? By this power *Cæsar* exacting tribute, our Saviour confesseth it to be his right, a right which could not be withheld without injury, yea disobedience herein unto him, and even rebellion against God. Usurpers of power, whereby we do not mean them that by violence have

Fff

aspired

A Scepter-  
waying  
King, to  
whom even  
Jupiter him-  
self hath gi-  
ven honour,  
and com-  
mandment.

aspired unto places of highest Authority, but them that use more Authority then they did ever receive in birth and manner before mentioned; (for so they may do, whose title unto the rooms of Authority, which they possess, no man can deny to be just and lawful, even as contrariwise some men proceedings in Government have been very orderly, who notwithstanding did not attain to be made Governors, without great violence and disorder) such usurpers thereof, as in the exercise of their power do more then they have been authorized to do, cannot in Conscience binde any man unto obedience.

That subjection which we owe unto lawful Powers, doth not onely import that we should be under them by order of our state, but that we shew all submission towards them, both by honor and obedience. He that resisteth them, resisteth God: And resisted they be, if either the Authority it self which they exercise be denied, as by Anabaptists all Secular Jurisdiction is; or if resistance be made but onely so far forth, as doth touch their persons which are invested with power; (for they which said, *Nolimus hunc regnare*, did not utterly exclude Regiment; nor did they with all kinde of Government clearly removed, which would not at the first have David to govern) or if that which they do by vertue of their power, namely, their Laws, Edicts, Services, or other acts of Jurisdiction, be not suffered to take effect contrary to the blessed Apostles most holy rule, *Oby them that have the oversight of you*, Heb. 13. 17. or if they do take effect, yet is not the will of God thereby satisfied neither, as long as that which we do is contemptuously, or repiningly done, because we can do no other wise. In such sort the Israelites in the Desert obeyed Moses, and were notwithstanding deservedly plagued for disobedience. The Apostles Precept therefore is, *Be subject even for Gods sake: Be subject, not for fear, but of mee Conscience, knowing that he which resisteth them, purchaseth to himself condemnation.* Disobedience therefore unto Laws, which are made by men, is not a thing of so small account as some would make it.

Howbeit, too rigorous it were, that the breach of every Humane Law should be held a deadly sin: A mean there is between those extremities, if so be we can find it out.



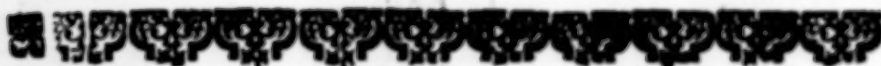
The Committee of the Senate

W. S.



## The Contents of these Treatises following.

- I. **A** *Supplication made to the Councel by Master* **WALTER TRAVERS.**
- II. *Master* **HOOKERS** *Answer to the Supplication then Master TRAVERS made to the Councel.*
- III. *A learned Discourse of Iustificacion, Works, and how the foundation of Faith is overthrowen.*
- IV. *A learned Sermon of the nature of Pride.*
- V. *A Remedy against Sorrow and Fear, delivered in a Funeral Sermon.*
- VI. *Of the certainty and perpetuity of Faith in the Elect: especially of the Prophet Habbakkuk's Faith.*
- VII. *Two Sermons upon part of Saint Iudas Epistle.*





A  
SUPPLICATION

Made to the

COUNCEL

BY

Master Walter Travers.

*Right Honourable,*



THE manifold benefits which all the Subjects within this Dominion do at this present, and have many years enjoyed, under Her Majesties most happy and prosperous reign, by your godly wisdom, and careful watching over this Estate night and day: I truly and unfeignedly acknowledge from the bottom of my heart ought worthily to binde us all, to pray continually to Almighty God for the continuance and encrease of the life and good estate of your Honours, and to be ready with all good duties to satisfie and serve the same to our power. Besides publick benefits common unto all, I must needs, and do willingly confess my self to stand bound by most special obligation to serve and honour you more then any other, for the honourable favour it hath pleased you to vouchsafe both oftentimes heretofore, and also now of late, in a matter more dear unto me then any earthly commodity, that is, the upholding and furthering of my service in the ministring of the Gospel of Jesus Christ. For which cause, as I have been always careful so to carry my self as I might by no means give occasion to be thought unworthy of so great a benefit, so do I still, next unto her Majesties gracious countenance, hold nothing more dear and precious to me, then that I may always remain in your Honours favour, which hath oftentimes been helpful and comfortable unto me in my Ministry, and to all such as reaped any fruit of my simple and faithful labour. In which dutiful regard I humbly beseech your Honours to vouchsafe to do me this grace, to conceive nothing of me otherwise then according to the duty wherein I ought to live, by any information against me, before your Honours have heard my answer, and been thoroughly informed of the matter. Which although it be a thing,



thing, that your wisdoms, not in favour but in justice yield to all men, yet the state of the calling into the Ministry, whereunto it hath pleased God of his goodness to call me, though unworthiest of all, is so subject to mis-information, as except we may find this favour with your Honours, we cannot look for any other, but that our mindifferent parties may easily procure us to be hardly esteemed of; and that we shall be made like the poor fisherboats in the Sea, which every swelling wave and billow raketh and runneth over. Wherein my estate is yet harder then any others of my rank and calling, who are indeed to fight against flesh and blood in what part soever of the Lords Host and field they shall stand marshalled to serve, yet many of them deal with it naked and unfortified with weapons: But my service was in a place where I was to encounter with it well appointed and armed with skill and with authority, whereof as I have always thus deserved, and therefore have been careful by all good means to entertain still your Honors favourable respect of me, so have I special cause at this present, wherein mis-information to the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, and other of the High Commission hath been able so far to prevail against me, that by their letter they have inhibited me to preach, or execute any act of Ministry in the Temple or elsewhere, having never once called me before them to understand by mine answer the truth of such things as had been informed against me. We have a story in our books wherein the Pharisees proceeding against our Saviour Christ without having heard him, is reproved by an honorable Counsellor (as the Evangelist doth term him) saying, *Doth our Law judge a man before it hear him, and know what he hath done?* Which I do not mention, to the end that by an indirect and covert speech I might so compare those, who have without ever hearing me, pronounced a heavy sentence against me; for, notwithstanding such proceedings, I purpose by Gods grace to carry my self towards them in all seeming duty agreeable to their places: muchless do I presume to liken my cause to our Saviour Christs, who hold it my chiefest honor and happiness to serve him, though it be but among the hindes and hired Servants, that serve him in the basest corners of his house. But my purpose in mentioning it, is, to shew by the judgement of a Prince and great man in Israel, that such proceeding standeth not with the Law of God, and in a princely pattern to shew it to be a noble part of an honorable Counsellor, not to allow of indirect dealings, but to allow and affect such a course in justice, as is agreeable to the Law of God. We have also a plain rule in the Word of God, not to proceed any otherwise against any Elder of the Church; muchless against one that laboureth in the word and in teaching: which rule is delivered with this most earnest charge and obtestation, *I beseech and charge thee in the sight of God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Elect Angels, that thou keep these [rules] without preferring one before another, doing nothing of partiality or inclining to either part;* which Apostolical and most earnest charge, I refer it to your Honors wisdom how it hath been regarded in so heavy a judgement against me, without ever hearing my cause; and whether, as having God before their eyes, and the Lord Jesus, by whom all former judgements shall be tried again, and as in the presence of the Elect Angels, witnesses and observers of the regiment of the Church, they have proceeded thus to such a sentence. They alleage indeed two reasons in their letters, whereupon they restrain my Ministry, which, if they were as strong against me as they are supposed, yet I refer to your Honors wisdoms, whether the quality of such an offence as they charge me with, which is in effect but an indiscretion, deserve so grievous a punishment both to the Church and me, in taking away my Ministry, and that poor little commodity which it yeeldeth for the necessary maintenance of my life; if so unequal a ballancing of faults and punishments should have place in the Commonwealth, surely we should shortly have no Actions upon the Case, nor of Trespas, but all should be pleas of the Crown, nor any man amerced, or fined, but for every light offence put to his ransom. I have credibly heard, that some of the Ministry have been committed for grievous transgressions of the laws of God and men, being of no ability to do other service in the Church then to read, yet hath it been thought charitable and standing with Christian moderation and temperancy, not to deprive such of Ministry and Beneficency, but to inflict some more tolerable punishment. Which I write not because such, as I think, were to be favoured, but to shew how unlike their dealing is with me, being through the goodness of God not to be touched with any such blame, and one who according to the measure of the gift of God have laboured now some years painfully, in regard of the weak estate of my body, in preaching the Gospel, and as I hope, not altogether unprofitably

(1 Tim. ii. 15.)

profitably in respect of the Church. But I beseech your Honours to give me leave briefly to declare the particular reasons of their Letters, and what answer I have to make unto it.

The first is, that as they say, *I am not lawfully called to the Function of the Ministry, nor allowed to preach according to the Laws of the Church of England.*

For answer to this, I had need to divide the points, and first to make answer to the former, wherein leaving to shew what by the holy Scriptures is required in a lawful calling, and that all this is to be found in mine, that I be not too long for your weighty affairs, I rest.

I thus answer : My calling to the Ministry was such as in the calling of any therunto, is appointed to be used by the orders agreed upon in the National Synods of the Low Countreys, for the direction and guidance of their Churches, which orders are the same with those whereby the French and Scottish Churches are governed, whereof I have shewed such sufficient testimonial to my Lord the Archbishop of *Canterbury*, as is requisite in such a matter : whereby it must needs fall out, if any man be lawfully called to the Ministry in those Churches, then is my calling, being the same with theirs, also lawful. But I suppose notwithstanding they use this general speech, they mean only my calling is not sufficient, to deal in the Ministry within this land, because I was not made Minister according to that order which in this cause is ordained by our laws. Whereunto I beseech your Honors to consider thoroughly of mine answer, because exception now again is taken to my Ministry, whereas having been heretofore called in question for it, I so answered the matter, as I continued my ministry, and for any thing I discerned, looked to hear that no more objected unto me. The communion of Saints (which every Christian man professeth to beleive) is such, as that the acts which are done in any true Church of Christ according to his word, are held as lawful, being done in one Church as in another. Which as it holdeth in other acts of ministry, as baptism, mariage and such like, so doth it in the calling to the ministry ; by reason whereof all Churches do acknowledge and receive him for a Minister of the word who hath been lawfully called therunto in any Church of the same profession. A Doctor created in any University of Christendom, is acknowledged sufficiently qualified to teach in any country. The Church of *Rome* it self, and the Canon law holdeth it, that being ordered in *Spain*, they may execute that belongeth to their order in *Italy*, or in any other place. And the Churches of the Gospel never made any question of it ; which if they shall now begin to make doubt of, and deny such to be lawfully called to the Ministry, as are called by another order then our own, then may it well be looked for that other Churches will do the like : And if a Minister called in the Low-countries be not lawfully called in *England*, then may they say to our preachers which are there, that being made of another order then theirs, they cannot suffer them to execute any act of ministry amongst them ; which in the end must needs breed a schism and dangerous division in the Churches. Further I have heard of those that are learned in the Laws of this land, that by express Statute to that purpose *Annus 13.* upon subscription of the Articles agreed upon *Annus 63.* that they who pretend to have been ordered by another order then that which is now established, are of like capacity to enjoy any place of ministry within the land, as they that have been ordered according to that is now by law in this case established. Which comprehending manifestly all, even such as were made Priests according to the order of the Church of *Rome*, it must needs be, that the law of a Christian land professing the Gospel, should be as favourable for a Minister of the word, as for a Popish Priest, which also was so found in *Mr. Whittinghams* case, who notwithstanding such replies against him, enjoyed still the benefit he had by his Ministry, and might have done until this day if God had spared him life so long ; which if it be understood so and practised in others, why should the change of the person alter the right, which the Law giveth to all other ?

The place of Ministry, whereunto I was called, was not presentative : and if it had been so, surely they would never have presented any man whom they never knew ; and the order of this Church is agreeable herein to the word of God, and the ancient and best Canons, that no man should be made a Minister *sine titulo* : therefore having none, I could not by the orders of this Church have entred into the Ministry, before I had charge to send upon. When I was at *Antwerp*, and to take a place of Ministry among the people of that nation, I see no cause why I should have returned again over the seas for

Orders here, nor how I could have done it, without disallowing the Orders of the Churches provided in the Countrey where I was to live. Whereby I hope it appeareth, that my calling to the Ministry is lawful, and maketh me by our Law, of capacity to enjoy any benefit or commodity, that any other by reason of his Ministry may enjoy. But my cause is yet more easie, who reaped no benefit of my Ministry by Law, receiving onely a benevolence and voluntary contribution; and the Ministry I dealt with, being preaching onely, which every Deacon heremay do being licensed, and certain that are neither Ministers nor Deacons. Thus I answer the former of these two points, whereof if there be yet any doubt, I humbly desire for a final end thereof, that some competent Judges in Law may determine of it; whereunto I refer and submit myself with all reverence and duty.

The second is, *That I preached without License*. Whereunto this is my answer, I have not presumed upon the calling I had to the Ministry abroad, to preach or deal with any part of the Ministry within this Church, without the consent and allowance of such as were to allow me unto it: my allowance was from the Bishop of London, testified by his two several Letters to the Inner-Temple, who without such testimony would by no means rest satisfied in it; which Letters being by me produced, I refer it to your Honors wisdom, whether I have taken upon me to preach, without being allowed (as they charge) according to the Orders of the Realm. Thus having answered the second point also, I have done with the objection, *Of dealing without calling or license*.

The other Reason they alledge, is, concerning a late action, wherein I had to deal with Mr. Hooker, Master of the Temple. In the handling of which cause, they charge me with an indiscretion, and want of duty; *In that I inveighed (as they say) against certain points of Doctrine taught by him as erroneous, not conferring with him, nor complaining of it to them*. My answer hereunto standeth, in declaring to your Honors the whole course and carriage of that Cause, and the degrees of proceeding in it, which I will do as briefly as I can, and according to the truth, God be my witness, as near as my best memory and notes of remembrance may serve me thereunto. After that I have taken away that which seemeth to have moved them to think me not charitably minded to Mr. Hooker; which is, because he was brought in to Mr. *Alvins* place, wherein this Church desired that I might have succeeded: which place, if I would have made suit to have obtained, or if I had ambitiously affected and sought, I would not have refused to have satisfied by subscription, such as the matter then seemed to depend upon: whereas contrariwise, notwithstanding I would not hinder the Church to do that they thought to be most for their edification and comfort, yet did I neither by speech nor letter, make suit to any for the obtaining of it; following herein that resolution, which I judge to be most agreeable to the Word and Will of God; that is, that labouring and suing for places and charges in the Church is not lawful. Further, whereas at the suit of the Church, some of your Honors entertained the cause, and brought it to a near issue, that there seemed nothing to remain, but the commendation of my Lord the Archbishop of Canterbury, when as he could not be satisfied, but by my subscribing to his late Articles; and that my answer agreeing to subscribe according to any Law, and to the Statute provided in that case, but praying to be respited for subscribing to any other, which I could not in conscience do, either for the Temple (which otherwise he said, he would not commend me to) nor for any other place in the Church, did so little please my Lord Archbishop, as he resolved, that otherwise I should not be commended to it. I had utterly here no cause of offence against Mr. Hooker, whom I did in no sort esteem to have prevented or undermined me, but that God disposed of me as it pleased him, by such means and occasions as I have declared.

Moreover, as I had taken no cause of offence at Mr. Hooker for being preferred, so there were many witnesses, that I was glad that the place was given him, hoping to live in all godly peace and comfort with him, both for acquaintance and good will which hath been between us, and for some kinde of affinity in the marriage of his neere kindred and mine: Since his coming, I have so carefully endeavoured to entertain all good correspondence and agreement with him, as I think he himself will bear me witness of many earnest Disputations and Conferences with him about the matter, the rather, because that contrary to my expectation, he inclined from the  
beginning



beginning but finally thereunto, but joynd rather with such as had always opposed themselves to any good order in this charge, and made themselves to be brought indisposed to his present state and proceedings: For both knowing that Gods Commandment charged me with such duty, and discerning how much our peace might further the good service of God and his Church, and the mutual comfort of us both, I had resolved constantly to seek for peace; and though it should flie from me (as I saw it did by means of some, who little desired to see the good of our Church) yet according to the rule of Gods Word, to follow after it: Which being so (as hereof I take God to witness, who searcheth the heart and reins, and by his Son will judge the World, both the quick and dead) I hope no charitable judgement can suppose me to have stood evil-affected towards him for his place, or desirous to fall into any controversie with him.

Which my resolution I pursued, that whereas I discovered sundry unsound matters in his Doctrine (as many of his Sermons tasted of some four leaven or other) yet thus I carried my self towards him: matters of smaller weight, and so covertly discovered, that no great offence to the Church was to be feared in them, I wholly passed by, as one that discerned nothing of them, or had been unfurnished of replies; for others of great moment, and so openly delivered, as there was just cause of fear, lest the Truth and Church of God should be prejudiced and perilled by it, and such as the conscience of my duty and calling would not suffer me altogether to pass over, this was my course, to deliver, when I should have just cause by my Text, the truth of such Doctrine as he had otherwise taught, in general speeches, without touch of his person in any sort, and further at convenient opportunity to confer with him in such points.

According to which determination, whereas he had taught certain things concerning Predestination, otherwise then the Word of God doth, as it is understood by all Churches professing the Gospel, and not unlike that wherewith *Coranus* sometimes troubled his Church, I both delivered the truth of such points in a general doctrine, without any touch of him in particular, and conferred with him also privately upon such Articles. In which Conference, I remember, when I urged the consent of all Churches and good Writers against him that I knew; and desired if it were otherwise, what Authors he had seen of such Doctrine? He answered me, That his best Author was his own Reason; which I wished him to take heed of as a matter standing with Christian modesty and wisdom, in a Doctrine not received by the Church, not to trust to his own judgement so far, as to publish it before he had conferred with others of his Profession, labouring by daily prayer and study, to know the will of God, as he did, to see how they understood such Doctrine: Notwithstanding, he with wavering replying, That he would some other time deal more largely in the matter, I wished him, and prayed him not so to do, for the peace of the Church, which by such means might be hazarded; seeing he could not but think, that men, who make any conscience of their Ministry, will judge it a necessary duty in them, to teach the truth, and to convince the contrary.

Another time, upon like occasion of this Doctrine of his, *That the assurance of that we believe by the Word, is not so certain, as of that we perceive by sense*; I both taught the Doctrine otherwise, namely, the assurance of Faith to be greater, which assured both of things above, and contrary to all sense and humane understanding, and dealt with him also privately upon that point: According to which course of late, when as he had taught, *That the Church of Rome is a true Church of Christ, and a sanctified Church by profession of that Truth, which God hath revealed unto us by his Son, though not a pure and perfect Church*; and further, *That he doubted not, but that thousands of the Fathers, which lived and dyed in the Superstitions of that Church, were saved, because of their ignorance, which excuseth them*, misallegding to that end a Text of Scripture to prove it: The matter being of fit purpose openly and at large handled by him, and of that moment, that might prejudice the Faith of Christ, encourage the ill-affected to continue still in their damnable ways, and others weak in Faith to suffer themselves easily to be seduced, to the destruction of their souls, I thought it my most bounden duty to God, and to his Church, whilst I might have opportunity to speak with him, to teach the Truth in a general speech in such points of Doctrine.

At which time I taught, *That such as dye, or have dyed at any time in the Church of Rome, holding in their ignorance that Faith, which is taught in it, and namely, Justification in part by works, could not be said by the Scriptures to be saved.* In which matter, foreseeing that if I waded not warily in it, I should be in danger to be reported, (as hath fallen out since notwithstanding) to condemn all the Fathers, I said directly and plainly to all mens understanding, *That it was not indeed to be doubted, but many of the Fathers were saved; but the means (I said) was not their ignorance, which excludes no man with God, but their knowledge and faith of the Truth, which it appeareth God vouchsafed them, by many notable Monuments and Records extant in all Ages.* Which being the last point in all my Sermon, rising so naturally from the Text I then propounded, as would have occasioned me to have delivered such matter, notwithstanding the former Doctrine had been sound; and being dealt in by a general speech, without touch of his particular; I looked not that a matter of controversy would have been made of it, no more then had been of my like dealing in former time. But far otherwise then I looked for, Mr. Hooker shewing no grief of offence taken at my speech all the week long, the next Sabbath, leaving to proceed upon his ordinary Text, professed to preach again, that he had done the day before, for some question that his Doctrine was drawn into, which he desired might be examined with all severity.

Apoc. 19. 4.  
Gal. 5. 3, 4.

So proceeding, he bestowed his whole time in that discourse, concerning his former Doctrine, and answering the places of Scripture, which I had alledged, to prove that a man dying in the Church of Rome, is not to be judged by the Scriptures to be saved: In which long speech, and utterly impertinent to his Text, under colour of answering for himself, he impugned directly and openly to all mens understanding, the true Doctrine which I had delivered; and added to his former points some other like (as willingly one Error followeth another) that is, *That the Galatians joining with Faith in Christ Circumcision, as necessary to Salvation, might not be saved: And that they of the Church of Rome, may be saved by such a Faith of Christ as they had, with a general Repentance of all their errors, notwithstanding their opinion of Justification, in part, by their works and merits.* I was necessarily, though not willingly, drawn to say something to the points he objected against sound Doctrine; which I did in a short speech in the end of my Sermon, with protestation of so doing, not of any sinister affection to any man, but to bear witness to the Truth, according to my calling; and wished, if the matter should needs further be dealt in, some other more convenient way might be taken for it; wherein I hope, my dealing was manifest to the consciences of all indifferent hearers of me that day, to have been according to peace, and without any uncharitableness, being duly considered.

For that I conferred with him the first day, I have shewed that the cause requiring of me the duty, at the least not to be altogether silent in it, being a matter of such consequence, that the time also being short, wherein I was to preach after him, the hope of the fruit of our communication being small, upon experience of former Conferences, my expectation being, that the Church should be no further troubled with it, upon the motion I made of taking some other course of dealing. I suppose my deferring to speak with him till some fit opportunity, cannot in Charity be judged uncharitable.

The second day, his unlooked for opposition with the former Reasons, made it to be a matter that required of necessity some publique answer; which being so temperate, as I have shewed, if notwithstanding it be censured as uncharitable, and punished so grievously as it is, what should have been his punishment, if (without all such cautions and respects as qualified my speech) I had before all, and in the understanding of all, so reproved him offending openly, that others might have feared to do the like? which yet if I had done, might have been warranted by the rule and charge of the Apostle, *Them that offend openly, rebuke openly, that the rest may also fear;* and by his example, who when Peter in this very case which is now between us, had (not in preaching) but in a matter of Conversation, not gone with a right foot, as was fit for the truth of the Gospel, conferred not privately with him, but, as his own rule required, reproved him openly before all, that others might hear, and fear, and not dare to do the like: All which reasons together weighed, I hope, will shew the manner of my dealing to have been charitable, and warrantable in every sort.

The

¶ The next Sabbath day after this, Mr. Hooker kept the way he had entred into before, and bestowed his whole hour and more onely upon the questions he had moved and maintained; wherein he set forth the agreement of the Church of Rome with us, and their disagreement from us, as if we had consented in the greatest and weightiest points, and differed onely in certain smaller matters: Which agreement noted by him in two chief points, is not such as he would have made men believe. The one, in that he said, *They acknowledged all men sinners, even the blessed Virgin*, though some of them freed her from sin; for the Council of Trent holdeth that she was free from sin. Another, in that he said, *They teach Christ's Righteousness to be the only meritorious cause of taking away sin, and differ from us onely in the applying of it*: For Thomas Aquinas their chief Schoolman, and Archbishop Catherinus teach, *That Christ took away onely Original sin, and that the rest are to be taken away by our selves*; yea, the Council of Trent teacheth, *That Righteousness whereby we are righteous in Gods sight, is an inherent Righteousness*: which must needs be of our own works, and cannot be understood of the righteousness inherent onely in Christs person, and accounted unto us. Moreover he taught the same time, *That neither the Galatians, nor the Church of Rome, did directly overthrow the foundation of Justification by Christ alone, but onely by consequent, and therefore might well be saved*; or else *neither the Churches of the Lutherans, nor any which hold any manner of Error could be saved*; because (saith he) *every error by consequent overthroweth the foundation*. In which discourses, and such like, he bestowed his whole time and more; which, if he had affected either the truth of God, or the peace of the Church, he would truly not have done.

Whose example could not draw me to leave the Scripture I took in hand, but standing about an hour to deliver the Doctrine of it, in the end, upon just occasion of the Text, leaving sundry other his unsound speeches, and keeping me still to the principal, I confirmed the believing the Doctrine of Justification by Christ onely, to be necessary to the Justification of all that should be saved, and that the Church of Rome directly denieth, that a man is saved by Christ, or by Faith alone, without the works of the Law. Which my answer, as it was most necessary for the service of God, and the Church, so was it without any immodest or reproachful speech to Mr. Hooker: whose unsound and wilful dealings in a cause of so great importance to the Faith of Christ, and salvation of the Church, notwithstanding I knew well what speech it deserved, and what some zealous earnest man of the spirit of John and James, surnamed Boanerges, sons of Thunder, would have said in such a case; yet I chose rather to content my self in exhorting him to revisit his Doctrine, as Nathan the Prophet did the device, which without consulting with God he had of himself given to David, concerning the building of the Temple; and with Peter the Apostle, to endure to be withstood in such a case, not unlike unto this. This in effect, was that which passed between us concerning this matter, and the invectives I made against him, wherewith I am charged: Which rehearsal, I hope, may clear me (with all that shall indifferently consider it) of the blames laid upon me for want of duty to Mr. Hooker, in not conferring with him, whereof I have spoken sufficiently already; and to the High-Commission, in not revealing the matter to them, which yet now I am further to answer. My answer is, That I protest, no contempt nor wilful neglect of any lawful Authority, stayed me from complaining unto them, but these Reasons following:

First, I was in some hope, that Mr. Hooker, notwithstanding he had been overcarried with a shew of Charity to prejudice the Truth, yet when it should be sufficiently proved, would have acknowledged it, or at the least induced with peace, that it might be offered without either offence to him, or to such as would receive it; either of which would have taken away any cause of just complaint. When neither of these fell out according to my expectation and desire, but that he replied to the truth, and objected against it, I thought he might have some doubts and scruples in himself, which yet if they were cleared, he would either embrace sound Doctrine, or at least suffer it to have his course: Which hope of him I nourished so long, as the matter was not bitterly and immodestly handled between us.

Another Reason was the cause it self, which according to the Parable of the Tares (which are said to be sown among the Wheat) sprung up first in his graft: Therefore as the servants in that place are not said to have come to complain to the Lord till,

Mark 3. 27.

2 Sam. 7. 2, 3.

4. c.

Gal. 3. 1. 140.



till the Tares came to shew their fruits in their kinde: so I thinking it yet but a time of discovering of it what it was, desired not their sickle to cut it down.

Ezek 21. 33.  
Ez. 33. 6.

For further answer, It is to be considered, that the conscience of my duty to God, and to his Church, did binde me at the first to deliver sound Doctrine in such points, as had been otherwise uttered in the place, where I had now some years taught the truth; Otherwise the rebuke of the Prophet had fallen upon me, for not going up to the breach, and standing in it, and the peril for answering the blood of the City, in whose Watch-Tower I sat, if it had been surprized by my default. Moreover, my publique Protestation, in being unwilling, that if any were not yet satisfied, some other more convenient way might be taken for it. And lastly, that I had resolved (which I uttered before to some, dealing with me about the matter) to have protested the next Sabbath day, that I would no more answer in that place, any objections to the Doctrine taught by any means, but some other way satise such as should require it.

These I trust may make it appear, that I failed not in duty to Authority, notwithstanding I did not complain, nor give over so soon dealing in the case: If I did, how is he clear, which can alledge none of all these for himself; who leaving the expounding of the Scriptures, and his ordinary calling, voluntarily discouried upon School Points and Questions, neither of edification, nor of truth; who after all this, as promising to himself, and to untruth, a victory by my silence, added yet in the next Sabbath day, to the maintenance of his former opinions, these which follow?

*That no additament taketh away the foundation, except it be a privative; of which sort, neither the works added to Christ by the Church of Rome, nor Circumcision by the Galatians were: as one denieth him not to be a man, that saith he is a righteous man, but he that saith he is a dead man: Whereby it might seem, that a man might, without hurt, adde works of Christ, and pray also that God and S. Peter would save them.*

*That the Galatians case is harder then the case of the Church of Rome, because the Galatians joynd Circumcision with Christ, which God hath forbidden and abolished; but that which the Church of Rome joynd with Christ, were good works which God hath commanded. Wherein he committed a double fault, one, in expounding all the questions of the Galatians, and consequently of the Romans, and other Epistles, of Circumcision onely, and the Ceremonies of the Law (as they do who answer for the Church of Rome in their writings) contrary to the clear meaning of the Apostle, as may appear by many strong and sufficient reasons: The other, in that he said, the addition of the Church of Rome was of works commanded of God; whereas the least part of the works whereby they looked to merit, was of such works, and most were works of supererogation, and of works which God never commanded, but was highly displeased with, as of Masses, Pilgrimages, Pardons, pains of Purgatory, and such like: That no sequel urged by the Apostle against the Galatians for joyning Circumcision with Christ, but might be as well enforced against the Lutherans; that is, that for their ubiquity it may be as well said to them, If ye hold the Body of Christ to be in all places, you are fallen from grace, you are under the curse of the Law, saying, Cursed be he that filleth not all things written in this Book, with such like. He added yet further, That to a Bishop of the Church of Rome, to a Cardinal, yea to the Pope himself, acknowledging Christ to be the Saviour of the world, denying other errors, and being discomforted for want of works whereby he might be justified, he would not doubt, but use this speech, Thou holdest the foundation of Christian Faith, though it be but by a slender thred; thou holdest Christ, though but as by the hem of his garment; why shouldst thou not hope that vertue may pass from Christ to save thee? That which thou holdest of Justification by thy works, overthroweth indeed by consequent the foundation of Christian Faith; but be of good cheer, thou hast not to do with a captious Sophister, but with a merciful God, who will justify thee for that thou holdest, and not take the advantage of doubtful construction to condemn thee. And if this, said he, be an error, I hold it willingly, for it is the greatest comfort I have in this world, without which I would not wish either to speak or to live. Thus far, being not to be answered in it any more, he was bold to proceed, the absurdity of which speech I need not to stand upon. I think the like to this, and other such in this Sermon, and the rest of this matter, hath not been heard in publique places within this Land, since Queen Maries days. What consequence this Doctrine may be of, if he be not by Authority ordered to revoke it, I beseech your H H. as the truth*

of

of God and his Gospel is dear and precious unto you, according to your godly wisdom to consider.

I have been bold to offer to your H.H. a long and tedious discourse of these matters; but speech being like to Tapestry, which if it be folded up, sheweth but part of that which is wrought, and being unlapt and laid open, sheweth plainly to the eye all the work that is in it, I thought it necessary to unfold this Tapestry, and to hang up the whole chamber of it in your most Honourable Senate, that so you may the more easily discern of all the pieces, and the sundry words and matters contained in it. Wherein my hope is, your H.H. may see I have not deserved so great a punishment, as is laid upon the Church for my sake, and also upon my self, in taking from me the exercise of my Ministry: Which punishment, how heavy it may seem to the Church, or fall out indeed to be, I refer it to them to judge, and spare to write what I fear; but to my self it is exceeding grievous, for that it taketh from me the exercise of my calling. Which I do not say is dear unto me, as the means of that little benefit whereby I live (although this be a lawful consideration, and to be regarded of me in due place, and of the Authority under whose protection I most willingly live, even by Gods Commandment both unto them, and unto me;) but which ought to be more precious to me than my life, for the love which I should bear to the glory and honour of Almighty God, and to the edification and salvation of his Church, for that my life cannot any other way be of like service to God, nor of such use and profit to men by any means; For which cause, as I discern how dear my Ministry ought to be unto me, so it is my hearty desire, and most humble request unto God, to your H.H. and to all the Authority I live under, to whom any dealing herein belongeth, that I may spend my life according to his Example, who in a word of like sound, of fuller sense, comparing by it the bestowing of his life to the Offering poured out upon the Sacrifice of the faith of Gods people, and especially of this Church, whereupon I have already poured out a great part thereof in the same calling, from which I stand now restrained. And if your H.H. shall find it to that I have not deserved so great a punishment, but rather performed the duty, which a good and faithful servant ought in such case to do his Lord, and the people he putteth him in trust withal carefully to keep: I am a most humble Suiter by these presents to your H.H. that by your godly wisdom, some good course may be taken for the restoring of me to my Ministry and place again. Which so great a favour, shall binde me yet in a greater obligation of duty (which is already so great, as it seemed nothing could be added unto it to make it greater) to honour God daily for the continuance and increase of your good estate, and to be ready with all the poor means God hath given me, to do your H.H. that faithful service I may possibly perform: But if notwithstanding my cause be never so good, your H.H. can by no means pacifie such as are offended, nor restore me again, then am I to rest in the good pleasure of God, and to commend to your H.H. protection, under Her Majesties, my private life, while it shall be led in duty; and the Church to him, who hath redeemed to himself a people with his precious blood, and is making ready to come to judge both the quick and the dead, to give to every one according as he hath done in this life, be it good or evil; to the wicked and unbeliever, Justice unto death; but to the faithful, and such as love his truth, mercy and grace to life everlasting.

Your Honours most bounden, and most humble  
Suppliant,

WALTER TRAVERS,

Minister of the Gospel.



Mr. *H O O K E R S*  
**A N S W E R**  
 TO THE  
**S U P P L I C A T I O N**  
 THAT  
 Mr. *T R A V E R S*  
 Made to the  
**C O U N C I L.**

To my Lord of Canterbury  
 his Grace.



Y duty is most humble wise remembred: May it please your Grace to understand, That whereas there hath been a late Controverſie raised in the *Temple*, and purſued by Mr. *Travers*, upon conceit taken at ſome words by me uttered with a moſt ſimple and harmleſſ meaning: In the heat of which purſuit, after three publique Inveſtives, ſilence being enjoined him by Authority, he hath hereupon for defence of his proceedings, both preſented the Right Honourable Lords and others of Her Majesties Privy Council with a Writing; and alſo cauſed or ſuffered the ſame to be Copied out, and ſpred through the hands of ſo many, that well nigh all ſort of men have it in their poſſomes: The matters wherewith I am therein charged being of ſuch quality as they are, and my ſelf being better known to your Grace, then to any other of their Honours beſides, I have choſen to offer to your Graces hands a plain declaration of my innocence in all thoſe things wherewith I am ſo hardly, and ſo heavily charged, leſt if I ſtill remain ſilent, that which I do for quietneſſ ſake, be taken as an Argument, that I lack what to ſpeak truly and juſtly in mine own defence.

2. Firſt, becauſe Mr. *Travers* thinketh it is expedient to breed an opinion in mens mindes,



mindes, that the root of all inconvenient events which are now sprung out, is, the surly and unpeaceable disposition of the man with whom he hath to do; therefore the first in the rank of accusations laid against me, is, *my inconformity, which have so little inclined to so many, and so earnest Exhortations and Conferences, as my self, he saith, can witness, to have been spent upon me, for my better fashioning unto good correspondence and agreement.*

3. Indeed, when at the first, by means of special well-willers, without any suit of mine, as they very well know (although I do not think it had been a mortal sin, in a reasonable sort, to have shewed a moderate desire that way) yet when by their endeavour, without instigation of mine, some reverend and honorable, favourably affecting me, had procured her Majesties grant of the place; At the very point of my entering thereinto the evening before I was first to preach, he came, and two other Gentlemen joyned with him: The effect of his Conference then was, *that he thought it his duty to advise me, not to enter with a strong hand, but to change my purpose of preaching there the next day, and to stay till he had given notice of me to the Congregation, that so their allowance might seal my calling.* The effect of my answer was, *That as in a place where such order is; I would not break; so here where it never was, I might not of mine own head take upon me to begin it: but liking very well the motion of the opinion which I had of his good meaning who made it, requested him not to dislike my answer, though it were not correspondent to his minde.*

4. When this had so displeased some, that whatsoever was afterwards done or spoken by me, it offended their taste, angry informations were daily sent on, intelligence given far and wide, what a dangerous enemy was crept in; the worst that jealousy could imagine, was spoken and written to so many, that at the length some knowing me well, and perceiving how injurious the reports were, which grew daily more and more unto my discredit, wrought means to bring Mr. Travers and me to a second Conference. Wherein when a common friend unto us both, had quietly requested him to utter those things wherewith he found himself any way grieved: He first renewed the memory of my entering into this Charge, by vertue onely of an humane creature (for so the want of that formality of popular allowance was then censured) and unto this was annexed a Catalogue, partly of causeless surmises; as, *That I had conspired against him, and that I sought Superiority over him;* and partly of faults, which to note, I should have thought it a greater offence then to commit, if I did account them faults, and had heard them so curiously observed in any other then my self, they are such silly things, as, *Praying in the entrance of my Sermon onely, and not in the end; naming Bishops in my prayer, kneeling when I pray, and kneeling when I receive the Communion, with such like, which I would be as loth to recite, as I was sorry to hear them objected, if the rehearsal thereof were not by him thus wrestled from me.* These are the Conferences wherewith I have been wooed to entertain peace and good agreement.

A meer formality it had been to me in that place; whereas no man had ever used it before me, so it could neither further me if I did use it, nor hinder me if I did not

5. As for the vehement Exhortations he speaketh of, I would gladly know some reason, wherefore he thought them needful to be used. Was there any thing found in my speeches or dealings that gave them occasion, who are studious of peace, to think that I disposed my self to some unquiet kinde of proceedings? Surely, the special Providence of God I do now see it was, that the first words I spake in this place, should make the first thing whereof I am accused, to appear not onely untrue, but improbable, to as many as then heard me with indifferent ears; and do, I doubt not, in their consciences clear me of this suspicion. Howbeit, I grant this were nothing, if it might be shewed, that my deeds following were not suitable to my words. If I had spoken of peace at the first, and afterwards sought to molest and grieve him, by crossing him in his Function, by storming if my pleasure were not asked, and my will obeyed in the least occurrences, by carping needlessly sometimes at the manner of his teaching, sometimes at this, sometimes at that point of his doctrine: I might then with some likelihood have been blamed, as one disdaining a peaceable hand when it had been offered. But if I be able (as I am) to prove that my self have a now full year together, born the continuance of such dealings, not onely without any manner of resistance, but also without any such complaint, as might let or hinder him in his course, I see no cause in the world, why of this I should be accused, unless it be, lest I should accuse, which I meant not. If therefore I have given him occasion to

use conferences and exhortations to peace, if when they were bestowed upon me I have despised them, it will not be hard to shew some one word or deed wherewith I have gone about to work disturbance: one is not much, I require but one. Onely I require if any thing be shewed, it may be proved, and not objected onely as this is, *That I have joyned to such as have always opposed to any good order in his Church, and made themselves to be thought indisposed to the present estate and proceedings.* The words have reference, as it seemeth, unto some such things as being attempted before my coming to the Temple, went not so effectually (perhaps) forward, as he that devised them would have wished. An Order, as I learn, there was tendred, that Communicants should neither kneel, as in the most places of the Realm; nor sit, as in this place the custom is; but walk to the one side of the table, and there standing till they had received, pass afterwards away round about by the other. Which being on a sudden begun to be practised in the Church, some sate wondering what it should mean, others deliberating what to do: Till such time as at length by name one of them being called openly thereunto, requested that they might do as they had been accustomed, which was granted; and as Mr. Travers, had ministered his way to the rest, so a Curate was sent to minister to them after their way. Which unprosperous beginning of a thing (saving only for the inconvenience of needless alterations, otherwise harmless) did so disgrace that order in their conceit, who had to allow or disallow it, that it took no place. For neither could they ever induce themselves to think it good, and it so much offended Mr. Travers, who supposed it to be the best, that he since that time, although contented to receive it as they do, at the hands of others, yet hath not thought it meet they should ever receive it out of his, which would not admit that order of receiving it, and therefore in my time hath been always present not to minister, but onely to be ministered unto.

6. Another Order there was likewise devised, but an Order of much more weight and importance. This soile in respect of certain immunities and other specialities belonging unto it, seemed likely to bear that which in other places of the Realm of England doth not take. For which cause request was made to her Majesties Privy Council, that whereas it is provided by a Statute, there should be Collectors and Sidemen in Churches, which thing, or somewhat correspondent unto it, this place did greatly want; it would please their Honours to motion such a matter to the Ancients of the Temple. And according to their honorable manner of helping forward all motions so grounded, they wrote their Letters, as I am informed to that effect. Whereupon, although these Houses never had use of such Collectors and Sidemen as are appointed in other places, yet they both erected a Box to receive mens devotion for the poor, appointing the Treasurer of both Houses to take care for bestowing it where need was, and granting further, that if any could be intreated (as in the end some were) to undertake the labour of observing mens slackness in divine duties, they should be allowed, their complaints heard at all times, and the faults they complained of, if Mr. Alveys private admonition did not serve, then by some other means to be redressed; but according to the old received Orders of both Houses. Whereby the substance of their Honours Letters were indeed fully satisfied. Yet because Mr. Travers intended not this, but as it seemed another thing; therefore notwithstanding the orders which have been taken, and for any thing I know, do stand still in as much force in this Church now, as at any time heretofore. He complaineth much of the good Orders which he doth mean have been withstood. Now it were hard if as many as did any ways oppose unto these and the like orders in his perswasion good, do thereby make themselves dislikers of the present state and proceeding. If they whom he aimeth at, have any other ways made themselves to be thought such, it is likely he doth know wherein, and will I hope disclose wherein it appertaineth, both the persons whom he thinketh, and the causes why he thinketh them so ill affected. But whatsoever the men be, do their faults make me faulty? They do, if I joyn my self with them. I beseech him therefore to declare wherein I have joyned with them. Other joyning then this with any man here, I cannot imagine: It may be I have talked, or walked, or eaten, or interchangeably used the duties of common humanity with some such as he is hardly perswaded of. For I know no Law of God or man, by force whereof they should be as Heathens and Publicans unto me that are not gracious in the eyes of another man, perhaps without cause, or if with cause,  
yet

yet such cause as he is privy unto, and not I. Could he, or any reasonable man think it a charitable course in me, to observe them that shew by external courtesies a favourable inclination towards him, and if I spie out any one amongst them, of whom I think not well, hereupon to draw such an accusation as this against him, and to offer it where he hath given up his against me? which notwithstanding, I will acknowledge to be just and reasonable, if he or any man living shall shew that I use as much as the bare familiar company but of one, who by word or deed hath ever given me cause to suspect or conjecture him, such as here they are termed, with whom complaint is made that I joyn my self. This being spoken therefore, and written without all possibility of proof, doth not Mr. Travers give me over-great cause to stand in some fear, lest he make too little conscience how he useth his tongue or pen? These things are not laid against me for nothing, they are to some purpose if they take place. For in a mind perswaded that I am, as he deciphereth me, one which refuses to be at peace with such as embrace the truth, and hide my self with men sinisterly affected thereunto, any thing that shall be spoken concerning the unsoundness of my Doctrine, cannot chuse but be favourably entertained. This presupposed, it will have likelihood enough, which afterwards followeth, that *many of my Sermons have tasted of some four Leaven or other*, that in them he hath *be hath discovered many unsound matters*. A thing much to be lamented, that such a place as this, which might have been so well provided for, hath fallen into the hands of one no better instructed in the truth. But what if in the end it be found that he judgeth my words, as they do colours, which look upon them with green spectacles, and think that which they see is green, when indeed that is green whereby they see.

7. Touching the first point of this discovery, which is about the matter of Predestination, to set down that I spake (for I have it written) to declare and confirm the several branches thereof, would be tedious now in this writing, where I have so many things to touch, that I can but touch them onely. Neither is it herein so needful for me to justify my speech, when the very place and presence where I spake, doth it self speak sufficiently for my clearing. This matter was not broached in a blinde Alley, or uttered where none was to hear it, that had skill with Authority to control, or covertly insinuated by some gliding sentence.

8. That which I taught was at *Pauls Cross*; it was not hudled in amongst other matters, in such sort that it could pass without noting; it was opened, it was proved, it was some reasonable time stood upon. I see not which way my Lord of *London*, who was present and heard it, can excuse so great a fault, as patiently, without rebuke or controlment afterwards, to hear any man there teach otherwise then the *Word of God* doth; not as it is understood by the private interpretation of some one or two men, or by a special construction received in some few books; but as it is understood by all *Churches professing the Gospel*, by them all, and therefore even by our own also amongst others. A man that did mean to prove that he speaketh, would surely take the measure of his words shorter.

9. The next thing discovered, is an opinion about the assurance of mens perswasion in matters of Faith. I have taught he saith, *That the assurance of things which are believed by the Word, is not so certain as of that we perceive by sense*. And is it as certain? Yea, I taught as he himself, I trust, will not deny, that the things which God doth promise in his Word, are surer unto us, then any thing we touch, handle or see. But are we so sure and certain of them; If we be, why doth God so often prove his promises unto us as he doth, by argument taken from our sensible experience? We must be sure of the proof, then of the thing proved, otherwise it is no proof. How is it, that if ten men do all look upon the Moon, every one of them knoweth it is as certainly to be the Moon as another; but many believing one and the same promises, all have not one and the same fulness of perswasion? How falleth it out, that men being assured of any thing by sense, can be no surer of it then they are; whereas the strongest in faith that liveth upon the earth, hath always need to labour, and strive, and pray that his assurance concerning heavenly and spiritual things, may grow, encrease, and be augmented?

10. The Sermon wherein I have spoken somewhat largely of this point, was long before this late Controversie rose between him and me, upon request of some



of my friends, seen and read by many, and amongst many, some who are thought able to discern: And I never heard that any one of them hitherto, hath condemned it as containing unsound matter. My case were very hard, if as oft as any thing I speak displeasing one mans taste, my Doctrine upon his onely word should be taken for four leaven.

11: The rest of this discovery is all about the matter now in question; wherein he hath two faults predominant, would tire out any that should answer unto every point severally: unapt speaking of School-Controversies, and of my words so untoward a reciting, that he which should promise to draw a mans Countenance, and did indeed express the parts, at leastwise most of them truly, but perversly place them, could not represent a more offensive visage, then unto me my own speech seemeth in some places, as he hath ordered it. For answer whereunto, that writing is sufficient, wherein I have set down both my words and meaning in such sort, that where this Accusation doth deprave the one, and either misinterpret, or without just cause mislike the other, it will appear so plainly, that I may spare very well to take upon me a new needless labour here.

12. Onely at one thing which is there to be found, because Mr. Travers doth here seem to take such a special advantage, as if the matter were unanswerable, he constraineth me either to detect his oversight, or to confess mine own in it. In settling the Question between the Church of Rome and us, about Grace and Justification, lest I should give them an occasion to say, as commonly they do, that when we cannot refute their opinions, we propose to our selves such instead of theirs, as we can refute; I took it for the best and most perspicuous way of teaching, to declare first, how far we do agree, and then to shew our disagreement: not generally. (as Mr. Travers his (a) words would carry it, for the easier fastning that upon me, wherewith saving onely by him, I was never in my life touched;) but about the matter onely of Justification: for further I had no cause to meddle at this time. What was then my offence in this case? I did, as he saith, so set it out, as if we had consented in the greatest and weightiest points, and differed onely in smaller matters. It will not be found, when it cometh to the ballance, a light difference where we disagree, as I did acknowledge that we do, about the very essence of the Medicine whereby Christ cureth our disease. Did I go about to make a shew of agreement in the weightiest points, and was I so fond as not to conceal our disagreement about this? I do wish that some indifferency were used by them that have taken the weighing of my words.

(a) His words be these, The next Sabbath day after this Mr. Hooker kept the way he entered into before, and bestowed his whole hour

and more, onely upon the questions he had moved and maintained. Wherein he so set the agreement of the Church of Rome with us, and their disagreement from us, as if we had consented in the greatest and weightiest points, and differed onely in certain smaller matters. Which agreement noted by him in two chief points, is not such as he would have made men believe: The one, in that he said they acknowledge all men sinners, even the blessed Virgin, though some of them free her from sin: for the Council of Trent holdeth, that she was free from sin: Another, in that he said, They teach Christs Righteousness to be the onely meritorious cause of taking away sin, and differ from us onely in the applying of it. For Thomas Aquinas, their chief School-man, and Archbishop Catharinus, teach, That Christ took away onely Original sin, and that the rest are to be taken away by our selves: yea, the Council of Trent teacheth, That the Righteousness whereby we are righteous in Gods sight, is inherent righteousness, which must needs be our own works, and cannot be understood of the righteousness inherent onely in Christs person, and accounted unto us.

13. Yea, but our agreement is not such in two of the chiefest points, as I would have men believe it is? And what are they? The one is, I said, They acknowledge all men sinners, even the blessed Virgin, though some of them free her from sin. Put the case I had affirmed, That onely some of them free her from sin, and had delivered it as the most currant opinion amongst them, that she was conceived in sin: doth not Bonaventure say plainly, *Omnnes fere*, in a manner all men do hold this? doth he not bring many reasons wherefore all men should hold it? Were their voyces since that time ever counted, and their number found smaller which hold it, then theirs that hold the contrary? Let the question then be, Whether I might say, The most of them acknowledged all men sinners, even the blessed Virgin herself. To shew, that their general received opinion is the contrary, the Tridentine Council is alledged,

alleged, peradventure not altogether so considerably. For if that Council have by resolute determination freed her, if it hold as Mr. Travers saith it doth, that she was free from sin; then must the Church of Rome needs condemn them that hold the contrary: For what that Council holdeth, the same they all do and must hold. But in the Church of Rome, who knoweth not that it is a thing indifferent to think and defend the one or the other? So that by this argument, The Council of Trent holdeth the Virgin free from sin, ergo, it is plain that none of them may, and therefore untrue that most of them do acknowledge her a sinner, were forcible to overthrow my supposed Assertion, if it were true that the Council did hold this. But to the end it may clearly appear, how it neither holdeth this nor the contrary, I will open what many do conceive of the Canon that concerneth this matter. The Fathers of Trent perceived, that if they should define of this matter, it would be dangerous howsoever it were determined. If they had freed her from her Original sin, the reasons against them are unanswerable, which Bonaventura and others do allege, but especially Thomas, whose line, as much as may be, they follow. Again, if they did resolve the other way, they should control themselves in another thing, which in no case might be altered. For they profess to keep no day holy in the honour of an unholy thing; and the Virgins Conception they honour with a \* Feast, which they could not abrogate without cancelling a Constitution of Xystus Quartus. And that which is worse, the world might perhaps suspect, that if the Church of Rome did amiss before in this, it is not impossible for her to fall in other things. In the end, they did wisely quote out their Canon by a middle thread, establishing the Feast of the Virgins Conception, and leaving the other question doubtful as they found it; giving onely a caveat, that no man should take the decree, which pronounceth all mankind originally sinful, for a definitive sentence concerning the blessed Virgin. This in my sight is plain by their own words, *Declarat hoc ipsa sancta Synodus, &c.* Wherefore our Countreymen at Rheims, mentioning this point, are Anno. in Rom. marvellous wary how they speak; they touch it as though it were a hot coal: § 1. sec. 3. Many godly devout men judge, that our blessed Lady was neither born nor conceived in sin. Is it their wont to speak nicely of things definitively set down in that Council?

In like sort we finde that the rest, which have since the time of the Tridentine Synod written of Original sin, are in this point, for the most part, either silent, or very sparing in speech: and when they speak, either doubtful what to think, or whatsoever they think themselves, fearful to set down any certain determination. If I bethought to take the Canon of that Council otherwise then they themselves do, let him expound it, whose sentence was neither last asked, nor his pen least occupied in setting it down; I mean Andradinus, whom Gregory the thirteenth hath allowed plainly to confess, that it is a matter which neither express evidence of Scripture, nor the Tradition of the Fathers, nor the sentence of the Church hath determined; that they are too surly and self-willed, which defending their opinion, are displeased with them by whom the other is maintained: finally, that the Fathers of Trent have not set down any certainty about this question, but left it doubtful and indifferent.

Now whereas my words which I had set down in writing, before I uttered them, were indeed these, *Although they imagine that the Mother of our Lord Jesus Christ, were for his honour, and by his special protection, preserved clean from all sin, yet concerning the rest, they teach as we do, that all have sinned.* Against my words they might with more pretence take exception, because so many of them think she had sin: which exception notwithstanding, the Proposition being indefinite, and the matter contingent, they cannot take, because they grant, that many whom they count grave and devout amongst them, think that she was clear from all sin. But whether Mr. Travers did note my words himself, or take them upon the credit of some other mans notings, the Tables were faulty wherein it was noted: *All men sinners, even the blessed*

\* This doth much trouble Thomas, holding her Conception stained with the natural blemish inherent in mortal seed. And therefore he putteth it off with two answers; the one, That the Church of Rome doth not allow, but tolerate the Feast, which answer now will not serve: the other, that being sure she was sanctified before birth, but unsure how long a while after her Conception, therefore under the name of her Conception-day, they honour the time of her Sanctification. So that besides this, they have now no sodeto make the certain allowance of their Feast, and their uncertain sentence concerning her sin, to cleave together. *Tom. 3. part. quæst. 27. art. 2. ad. 2. & 3.*

Lib. 1. c. defens.  
fidei.

blessed Virgin. When my speech was rather, *All men except the blessed Virgin. To leave this, another fault he findeth, that I said, They teach Christs Righteousness to be the onely meritorious cause of taking away sin, and differ from us onely in the applying of it. I did say, and do, They teach as we do, that although Christ be the onely meritorious cause of our justice, yet as a medicine which is made for health, doth not heal by being made, but by being applied: So by the merits of Christ there can be nor life no justification, without the application of his merits: But about the manner of applying Christ, about the number and power of means whereby he is applied, we dissent from them. This of our dissenting from them is acknowledged.*

Or bod. lib. 2.  
In 4 Sent. dist. 1  
quest. 4. art. 6.

Refarm. Iudic.  
de lib. Concor.  
Mordac. 18.  
Nemo Catholicus  
ram. ung. am. 6.  
de. nit. sed. cr.  
dinus & profi-  
temur. Christum  
in Cruce pro  
omnibus omni-  
bus peccatis satis-  
fecisse, tam ori-  
ginales quam  
admixtos.

14. Our agreement in the former is denied to be such as I pretend. Let their own words therefore and mine concerning them, be compared. Doth not *Andradus* plainly confess, *our sins do shut, and onely the merits of Christ open the entering unto blessedness?* And *Soto*, *It is purer a good ground, that all since the fall of Adam, obtained Salvation onely by the Passion of Christ: howbeit, as no cause can be effectual without applying, so neither can any man be saved, to whom the suffering of Christ is not applied.* In a word, who not? When the Council of *Trent* reckoning up the causes of our first Justification, doth name no end, but Gods Glory, and our Felicity; no efficient, but his Mercy; no instrumental, but Baptism; no meritorious, but Christ; whom to have merited the taking away of no sin but Original, is not their opinion: which himself will finde, when he hath well examined his witnesses, *Catharinus* and *Thomas*. Their Jesuits are marvellous angry with the men out of whose gleanings *Mr. Travers* seemeth to have taken this; they openly disclaim it, they say plainly, *Of all the Catholicks there is no one that did ever so teach; they make solemn protestation, We believe and profess, That Christ upon the Cross hath altogether satisfied for all sins, as well Original as Actual.* Indeed they teach, that the merit of Christ doth not take away Actual sin, in such sort as it doth Original; wherein if their Doctrine had been understood, I for my speech had never been accused. As for the Council of *Trent*, concerning inherent righteousness, what doth it here? No man doubteth, but they make another formal cause of Justification then we do. In respect whereof, I have shewed you already, that we disagree about the very essence of that which cureth our spiritual Disease. Most true it is which the grand Philosopher hath, *Every man judgeth well of that which he knoweth*; and therefore till we know the things thoroughly, whereof we judge, it is a point of judgement to stay our judgement.

15. Thus much labour being spent in discovering the unsoundness of my Doctrine, some pains he taketh further to open faults in the manner of my teaching, as that, *I bestowed my whole hour and more, my time, and more then my time, in discourses utterly importunent to my Text.* Which if I had done, it might have past without complaining of to the Privy Council.

16. But I did worse, as he saith, *I left the expounding of the Scriptures, and my ordinary calling, and discoursed upon School-points and questions, neither of edification, nor of truth.* I read no Lecture in the Law, or in Paylick. And except the bounds of ordinary Calling may be drawn like a purse, how are they so much wider unto him then to me, that he which in the limits of his ordinary Calling, should reprove that in me which he understood not; and I labouring that both he and others might understand, could not do this without forsaking my Calling? The matter whereof I spake was such, as being at the first by me but lightly touched, he had in that place openly contradicted, and solemnly taken upon him to disprove. If therefore it were a School-question, and unfit to be discoursed of there, that which was in me but a Proposition onely at the first, wherefore made he a Probleme of it? Why took he first upon him to maintain the negative of that, which I had affirmatively spoken, onely to shew mine own opinion, little thinking that ever it would have a question? Of what nature soever the question were, I could do no less then there explain my self to them, unto whom I was accused of unsound Doctrine; wherein if I shew, what had been through ambiguity mistaken in my words, or misapplied by him in this cause against me, I used the distinctions and helps of Schools, I trust that herein I have committed no unlawful thing. These School-implements are acknowledged by grave and wise men not unprontable to have been invented. The most approved for learning and judgement do use them without blame; the use of them hath been well liked in some that have taught even in this very place before me: the

1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.



the quality of my hearers is such, that I could not but think them of capacity very sufficient, for the most part, to conceive harder then I used any; the cause I had in hand did in my judgement necessarily require them which were then used: when my words spoken generally without distinctions had been perverted, what other way was there for me, but by distinctions to lay them open in their right meaning, that it might appear to all men, whether they were consonant to truth or no? And although Mr. Travers be so injured with the City, that he thinketh it unmeet to use any speech which favourerth of the School, yet his opinion is no Canon: though unto him, his minde being troubled, my speech did seem like fetters and manacles, yet there might be some more calmly affected, which thought otherwise; his private judgement will hardly warrant his bold words, that the things which I spake, were neither of edification nor truth. They might edifie some other for any thing he knoweth; and be true for any thing he proveth to the contrary. For it is no proof to cry *Aburdities*, the like whereunto have not been heard in publique places within this Land since Queen Maries days. If this came in earnest from him, I am sorry to see him so much offended without cause; more sorry, that his fit should be so extreme, to make him speak he knoweth not what. That I neither affected the truth of God, nor the peace of the Church; *Mibi pro minimo est*, it doth not much move me, when Mr. Travers doth say that, which I trust a greater then Mr. Travers will gainsay.

17. Now let all this which hitherto he hath said be granted him, let it be as he would have it, let my Doctrine and manner of teaching be as much disallowed by all mens judgements as by his, what is all this to his purpose? He alledgeth this to be the cause why he bringeth it in, The High-Commissioners charge him with an indiscretion and want of duty, in that he inveighed against certain points of Doctrine taught by me at *criminosus*, not conferring first with me, nor complaining of it to them. Which fault, a sea of such matter as he hath hitherto waded in, will never be able to scoure from him. For the avoiding Schism and disturbance in the Church, which must needs grow, if all men might think what they list, and speak openly what they think; therefore by a \* Decree agreed upon by the Bishops, and confirmed by her Majesties Authority, it was ordered, that erroneous Doctrine, if it were taught publicquely, should not be publicquely refuted, but that notice thereof should be given unto such as are by her Highness appointed to hear, and to determine such causes. For breach of which Order, when he is charged with lack of duty, all the faults that can be heaped upon me, will make but a weak defence for him: As surely his defence is not much stronger, when he alledges for himself, that He was in some hope his speech in proving the truth, and clearing those scruples which I had in my self, might cause me either to embrace sound Doctrine, or suffer it to be embraced of others; which if I did, he should not need to complain: that, It was meet he should discover first what I had said, and make it manifest to be false, and then desire their siths to cut it down: that, Conscience did binde him to do otherwise, then the foresaid Order requirerth: that, He was unwilling to deal in that publique manner, and wished a more convenient way were taken for it: that, He had resolved to have protested the next Sabbath day, that he would some other way satisfy such as should require it, and not deal more in that place. Be it imagined, [let me not be taken as if I did compare the offenders, when I do not, but their answers onely] be it imagined that a Libeller did make this Apology for himself, I am not ignorant that if I have just matter against any man, the Law is open, there are Judges to hear it, and Courts where it ought to be complained of; I have taken another course against such or such a man, yet without breach of duty, forasmuch as I am able to yield a reason of my doing, I conceive some hope that a little discredit amongst men would make him ashamed of himself, and that his shame would work his amendment; which if it did, other accusation there should not need; could his answer be thought sufficient, could it in the judgement of discreet men free him from all blame? No more can the hope Mr. Travers conceived, to reclaim me by publike speech, justify his fault against the established Order of the Church.

\* In the Advertisements published in the seve<sup>th</sup> year of her Majesties Reign: If any Preacher, or Person, or Person in Curial so charged, shall fortune to preach any matter tending to division, or to derogation of the Religion and Discipline received, that the hearers denounce the same in the Ordinary, or to the next Bishop of the same Diocese, but not openly to the contrary, or to impugn the same speech so disorderly uttered, whereby may grow offence, and disquiet of the people, the same shall be continued and reprov'd by the Ordinary, after such reasonable order as shall be seen taken according to the gravity of the offence: And that it be prepared within one month after the words spoken.

18. His thinking it meet *he should first openly discover to the people the tares that had been sown amongst them, and then require the hand of authority to mow them down*, doth only make it a question, whether his opinion that this was meet, may be a priviledge or protection against the lawful constitution which had before determined of it as of a thing unmeet. Which question I leave for them to discuss whom it most concerneth. If the Order be such that it cannot be kept without hazarding a thing so precious as a good conscience, the peril whereof could be no greater to him then it needs must be to all others whom it toucheth in like causes, then this is evident, it will be an effectual motive, not only for England, but also for other reformed Churches, even Geneva it self [for they have the like] to change or take that away which cannot but with great inconvenience be observed. In the mean while the breach of it may in such consideration be pardoned [which truly I wish howsoever it be] yet hardly defended as long as it standeth in force uncancelled.

19. Now whereas he confesseth another way had been more convenient, and that he found in himself secret unwillingness to do that which he did, doth he not say plainly in effect that the light of his own understanding, proved the way that he took perverse and crooked; reason was so plain and pregnant against it, that his mind was alienated, his will averted to another course? yet somewhat there was that so far overruled, that it must needs be done even against the very stream, what doth it bewray? Finally his purposed protestation, whereby he meant openly to make it known, that he did not allow this kind of proceeding, and therefore would satisfie men otherwise, and deal no more in this place, sheweth his good mind in this, that he meant to stay himself from further offending; but it serveth not his turn. He is blamed because the thing he hath done was amiss, and his answer is, That which I would have done afterwards had been well, if so be I had done it.

20. But as in this he standeth perswaded, that he hath done nothing besides duty, so he taketh it hardly that the High Commissioners should charge him with indiscretion. Wherefore as if he could so wash his hands, he maketh a long and a large declaration concerning the carriage of himself: how he waded in matters of smaller weight and how in things of greater moment; how wary he dealt; how naturally he took his things rising from the Text; how closely he kept himself to the Scriptures he took in hand; how much pains he took to confirm the necessity of believing Justification by Christ only; and to shew how the Church of Rome denieth that a man is saved by faith alone, without works of the Law; what the sons of thunder would have done, if they had been in his case; that his answer was very temperate, without immodest or reproachful speech, that when he might before all have reprov'd me, he did not, but contented himself with exhorting me before all, to follow Nathans example, and revisit my doctrine; when he might have followed St. Pauls example in reproving Peter, he did not, but exhorted me with Peter, to endure to be withstood. This testimony of his discreet carrying himself in the handling of his matter, being more agreeably framed and given him by another then by himself, might make somewhat for the praise of his person; but for defence of his action unto them by whom he is thought indiscreet, for not conferring privately before he spake, will it serve to answer, that when he spake, he did it considerately? He perceiveth it will not, and therefore addeth reasons, such as they are. As namely; how he purposed at the first to take another course, and that was this, Publickly to deliver the truth of such doctrine as I had otherwise taught, and as convenient opportunity to confer with me upon such points. Is this the rule of Christ. If thy brother offend openly in his speech, controll it first with contrary speech openly, and confer with him afterwards upon it, when convenient opportunity serveth? Is there any Law of God or Man, whereupon to ground such a resolution, any Church extant in the World, where Teachers are allowed thus to do or to be done unto? He cannot but see how weak an allegation it is, when he bringeth in his following this course, first in one matter, and so afterwards in another, to approve himself, now following it again. For if the purpose of doing a thing so uncharitable be a fault, the deed is a greater fault; and doth the doing of it twice, make it the third time fit and allowable to be done? The weight of the cause, which is his third defence, relieveth him as little. The weightier it was, the more it required considerate advice and consultation, the more it stood him upon to take good heed, that

that nothing were rashly done or spoken in it. But he meaneth rightly, in regard of the wonderful danger, except he had presently withstood me without expecting a time of Conference. This cause being of such moment that might prejudice the faith of Christ, encourage the ill-affected to continue still in their damnable ways, and other well in faith, to suffer themselves to be seduced, to the destruction of their souls; he thought it his bounden duty to speak before he talked with me. A man that should read this, and not know what I had spoken, might imagine that I had at the least denied the Divinity of Christ. But they which were present at my speech, and can testify, that nothing passed my lips more then is contained in their writings, whom for soundness of Doctrine, Learning and Judgement, Mr. Travers himself doth, I dare say, not onely allow, but honor, they which heard, and do know, that the Doctrine here signified in so fearful manner, the Doctrine that was so dangerous to the faith of Christ, that was so likely to encourage ill-affected men to continue still in their damnable ways; that gave so great cause to tremble for fear of the present destruction of souls, was onely this, I doubt not but, God was merciful to save thousands of our Fathers, living heretofore in the Popish Superstition, in as much as they sinned ignorantly; and this spoken in a Sermon, the greatest part whereof was against Popery, they will hardly be able to discern how CHRISTIANITY should herewith be so grievously shaken.

21. Whereby his fourth excuse is also taken from him. For what doth it boot him to say, *The time was short wherein he was to preach after me*, when his preaching of this matter perhaps ought, surely might have been either very well omitted, or at least more conveniently for a while deferred; even by their Judgements that cast the most favourable aspect towards these his hasty proceedings. The poyson which men had taken at my hands, was not so quick and strong in operation, as in eight days to make them pass cure; by eight days delay, there was no likelihood that the force and power of his speech could dye; longer meditation might bring better and stronger proofs to minde, then extemporal dexterity could furnish him with: And who doth know whether Time, the onely Mother of sound judgement and discreet dealing, might have given that action of his some better ripeness, which by so great festination hath, as a thing born out of time, brought small joy unto him that begat it? Doth he think it had not been better that neither my speech had seemed in his eyes as an arrow sticking in a thigh of flesh; nor his own as a childe whereof he must needs be delivered by an hour? His last way of disburthening himself, is, by casting his load upon my back; as if I had brought him by former conferences out of hope that any fruit should ever come of conferring with me. Loth I am to rip up those Conferences, whereof he maketh but a slippery and loose relation. In one of them the question between us was, Whether the perswasion of faith concerning remission of sins, eternal life, and whatsoever God doth promise unto man, be as free from doubting, as the perswasion which we have by sense concerning things tasted, felt, and seen? For the Negative, I mentioned their example, whose Faith in Scripture is most commended, and the experience which all faithful men have continually had of themselves. For proof of the Affirmative, which he held, I desiring to have some reason, heard nothing but *as good-writer*; oftentimes inculcated. At the length, upon request to see some one of them, *Peter Martyrs* Common places were brought, where the leaves were turned down, at a place sounding to this effect, *That the Gospel doth make Christians more virtuous, then moral Philosophy doth make Heathens*: which came not near the question by many miles.

22. In the other Conference he questioned about the matter of Reprobation, mistaking first, that I had termed God a permissive, and no positive cause of the evil, which the Schoolmen do call *malum culpæ*. Secondly, that to their objection who say, *God electeth, do what I will, I shall be saved*, I had answered, that the will of God in this thing is not absolute, but conditional, to save his Elect believing, fearing, and obediently serving him. Thirdly, that to stop the mouthes of such as grudge and repine against God for rejecting Cast-aways, I had taught that they are not rejected, no not in the purpose and counsel of God, without a foreseen worthiness of rejection going though not in time, yet in order, before. For if Gods electing do in order (as needs it must) presuppose the foresight of their being that are elected, though they be elected before they be nor onely the positive foresight of their being, but also the permissive of their being miserable, because election is through mercy, and mercy doth always presuppose



suppose misery: it followeth, that the very chosen of God acknowledge to the praise of the riches of his exceeding free compassion, that when he in his secret determination set it down, *Those shall live and not die*, they lay as ugly spectacles before him, as Lepers covered with dung and mire, as ulcers putrified in their Fathers loyns, miserable, worthy to be had in detestation; and shall any forsaken creature be able to say unto God thou did plunge me into the depth, and assign me unto endless torments, onely to satisfy thine own will, finding nothing in me for which I could seem in thy sight so well worthy to feel everlasting flames?

23. When I saw that Mr. *Travers* carped at these things, onely because they lay not open, I promised at some convenient time to make them clear as light, both to him and all others. Which if they that reprove me will not grant me leave to do, they must think that they are for some cause or other more desirous to have me reputed an unsound man, then willing that my sincere meaning should appear and be approved. When I was further asked what my grounds were? I answered, that St. *Paul* words concerning this cause were my grounds. His next demand, what Author I did follow in expounding S. *Paul*, and gathering the Doctrine out of his words, against the judgement (he saith) of *all Churches and all good Writers*. I was well assured that to control this over-reaching speech, the sentences which I might have cited out of Church Confessions, together with the best learned monuments of former times, and not the meanness of our own, were mo in number then perhaps he would willingly have heard of: but what had this bootied me? For although he himself in generality do much use those formal speeches, *All Churches and all good Writers*: yet as he holdeth it in Pulpit lawful to say in general, the *Papists* think this, or the *Heathens* that, but utterly unlawful to cite any sentence of theirs that say it: so he gave me at that time great cause to think that my particular alledging of other mens words, to shew their agreement with mine, would as much have displeased his mind, as the thing it self for which it had been alledged, for he knoweth how often he hath in publick place bitten me for this, although I did never in any Sermon use many of the sentences of other Writers, and do make most without any, having always thought it meetest neither to affect nor condemn the use of them.

24. He is not ignorant that in the very entrance to the talk, which we had privately at that time, to prove it unlawful altogether in preaching, either for confirmation, declaration or otherwise, to cite any thing but meer Canonical Scripture, he brought in, *The Scripture is given by inspiration, and is profitable to teach, improve, &c.* tising much the vigour of these two clauses, *The man of God and every good work*. If therefore the work were good which he required at my hands, if privately to shew why I thought the Doctrine I had delivered to be according to St. *Pauls* meaning, were a good work, can they which take the place before alledged for a Law, condemning every man of God, who in doing the work of preaching any other way useth humane authority, like it in me, if in the work of strengthening that which I had preached, I should bring forth the testimonies and the sayings of mortal men? I alledged therefore that which might under no pretence in the world be disallowed, namely reasons, not meaning thereby mine own reason, as now it is reported, but true, sound, divine reason; reason whereby those Conclusions might be out of St. *Paul* demonstrated, and not probably discoursed of only; reason proper to that science whereby the things of God are known: Theological reason without principles in Scripture that are plain, soundly deduced more doubtful inferences, in such sort that being heard they cannot be denied, nor any thing repugnant unto them received, but whatsoever was before otherwise by miscollecting gathered out of dark places, is thereby forced to yield it self, and the true consonant meaning of sentences not understood, is brought to light. This is the reason which I intended. If it were possible for me to escape the Ferula in any thing I do or speak, I had undoubtedly escaped in this. In this I did that which by some is enjoined as the onely allowable, but granted by all as the most sure and safe way, whereby to resolve things doubted of in matters appertaining to Faith and Christian Religion. So that Mr. *Travers* had here small cause given him to be weary of conferring, unless it was in other respects then that poor one which is here pretended, that is to say, the little hope he had of doing me any good by conference.

25. Yet behold his first reason of not complaining to the High Commission, is,

is, That sith I offended only through an over charitable inclination, he conceived good hope; when I should see the truth cleared, and some scruples which were in my minde, removed by his diligence I would yield. But what experience soever he had of former Conferences, how small soever his hope was that fruit would come of it if he should have conferred, will any man Judge this a cause sufficient, why to open his mouth in publique, without any one word privately spoken? He might have considered that men do sometimes reap where they sow, but with small hope; he might have considered, that although unto me (whereof he was not certain neither) but if to me his labour should be as water spilt, or poured into a torn dish, yet to him it could not be fruitless to do that which Order in Christian Churches, that which Charity amongst Christian men, that which at many mens hands, even common humanity itself, at his, many other things besides did require. What fruit could there come of his open contradicting in so great haste, with so small advice, but such as must needs be unpleasant, and mingled with much acerbity? surely, he which will take upon him to defend, that in this there was no over-sight, must beware lest by such defence, he leave an opinion dwelling in the mindes of men, that he is more stiff to maintain what he hath done, then careful to do nothing but that which may justly be maintained.

26. Thus have I as near as I could, seriously answered things of weight: with smaller I have dealt as I thought their quality did require. I take no joy in striving, I have not been nuzzled or trained up in it. I would to Christ they which have at this present enforced me hereunto, had so ruled their hands in any reasonable time, that I might never have been constrained to strike so much as in mine own defence. Wherefore to prosecute this long and tedious contention no further, I shall wish that your Grace and their Honours (unto whose intelligence the dutiful regard which I have of their judgements, maketh me desirous, that as accusations have been brought against me, so that this my answer thereunto may likewise come) did both with the one and the other, as *Constantine* with Books containing querulous matter. Whether this be convenient to be wished or no, I cannot tell: But sith there cannot come nothing of contention, but the mutual waste of the parties contending, till a common enemy dance in the ashes of them both, I do with heartily that the grave advice which *Constantine* gave for reuniting of his Clergy so many times, upon some small occasions, in so lamentable sort divided; or rather the strict commandment of Christ unto his, that they should not be divided at all, may at the length, if it be his blessed will, prevail so far, at least in this corner of the Christian world, to the burying and quite forgetting of strife, together with the causes which have either bred it, or brought it up, that things of small moment never disjoyn them, whom one God, one Lord, one Faith, one Spirit, one Baptism, bands of so great force have linked; that a respective eye towards things wherewith we should not be disquieted, make us not, as through infirmity the very Patriarchs themselves sometimes were, full gorged, unable to speak peaceably to their own brother. Finally, that no strife may ever be heard of again, but this, who shall hate strife most, who shall pursue peace and unity with swiftest paces.



TO THE  
Christian Reader.



Hereat many desirous of resolution in some points handled in this learned discourse, were earnest to have it Copied out; to ease so many labours, it hath been thought most worthy and very necessary to be printed: that not onely they might be satisfied, but the whole Church also hereby edified. The rather, because it will free the Author from the suspicion of some errors, which he hath been thought to have favoured. Who might well

Lib. 4. Ann.

Lib. 1. Hig.

In vita Agri.  
ca.

Lib. 1.

have answered with Cremutius in Tacitus, Verba mea arguuntur, adeo factorum innocens sum. Certainly, the event of that time wherein he lived, shewed that to be true, which the same Author spake of a worse, Cui deerat inimicus, per amicos oppressus; and that there is not minus periculum ex magna fama, quam ex mala. But he hath so quit himself, that all may see, how, as it was said of Agricola, Simul suis virtutibus, simul vitiis aliorum in ipsam gloriam preceps agebatur. Touching whom I will say no more, but that which my Author said of the same man, Integritatem, &c. in tanto viro referre, injuria virtutum fuerit. But as of all other his writings, so of this I will adde that which Velleius spake in commendation of Piso, Nemo fuit, quimagis quæ agenda erant curaret, sine ulla ostentatione agendi. So not doubting, good Christian Reader, of thy assent herein, but wishing thy favourable acceptance of this work (which will be an inducement to set forth others of his learned Labours) I take my leave, from Corpus Christi Colledge in Oxford, the sixth of July, 1612.

Thine in Christ Jesus,

HENRY JACKSON.



# LEARNED DISCOURSE OF

justification, Works, and how the foundation of Faith is overthrown.

HABAK. 1. 4.

*The wicked doth compass about the righteous : therefore perverse Judgement doth proceed.*



**O**R the better manifestation of the Prophets meaning in this place, we are first to consider the *wicked*, of whom he saith, that *They compass about the righteous* : Secondly, the *righteous*, that are compassed about by them : and Thirdly, That which is inferred ; *Therefore perverse judgement proceedeth*. Touching the first, There are two kinds of wicked men, of whom, in the list of the former to the *Corinthians*, the blessed Apostle speaketh thus : *Do ye not judge them that are within ; But God judgeth them that are without*. There are wicked therefore whom the Church may judge, and there are wicked whom God onely judgeth : wicked within, and wicked without the walls of the Church. If within the Church, particular persons be apparently such, as cannot otherwise be reformed ; the rule of the Apostolical judgment, is this, *Separate them from among you* : if whole Assemblies, this : *Separate your selves from among them* : *For what society hath light with darkness ?* But the wicked, whom the Prophet meaneth, were *Babylonians*, and therefore without. For which cause we have heard at large heretofore in what sort he urgeth God to judge them.

2. Now concerning the righteous, their neither is, nor ever was any meer natural man absolutely righteous in himself, that is to say, void of all unrighteousness of all sin. We dare not except, no nor the blessed Virgin her self, of whom although we say with *St. Augustine*, for the honour sake which we owe to our Lord and Saviour Christ, we are not willing in this cause, to move any question of his Mother : yet forasmuch as the Schools of *Rome* have made it a question, we may answer with (a) *Eusebius Emisenus*, who, speaketh of her and to her in this effect : *Thou didst, by special prerogative nine months together entertain within the closet of thy flesh, the hope of all the ends of the Earth, the honour of the world, the common joy of Men : He, from whom all things had their beginning, had his beginning from thee ; of thy body he took the blood, which was to be shed for the life of the world ; of thee he took that which even for thee he payed. A peccati enim veteris nexu (b) per se non est immunus ipsa genetrix Redemptoris : the Mother of the Redeemer, her self is not otherwise loosed*

Ggg

from

1.  
2.  
3.  
1 Cor. 5. 12, 13.  
2 Cor. 6. 7.  
Or whofo-  
ever it be that  
was the author  
of those Homi-  
lies that go un-  
der his name.  
Knowing,  
how the  
Schoolmen  
hold this que-  
stion, true  
Critical wits  
may perhaps  
half suspect  
that these two  
words, *Per se*,  
are In-mates.  
But if the  
place which  
they have,  
be their own,  
their sense can  
be none other  
then that  
which I have  
given them by  
a paraphrasti-  
cal interpreta-  
tion.

from the bond of ancient sin, then by redemption: if Christ have paid a ransom for all, even for her, it followeth, that all without exception were captives. If one have dyed for all, then all were dead in sin: all sinful therefore, none absolutely righteous in themselves; but we are absolutely righteous in Christ. The World then must shew a righteous man, otherwise it is not able to shew a man that is perfectly righteous: *Christ is made to us wisdom, Justice, Sanctification and Redemption: Wisdom*, because he hath revealed his Father's will: *Justice*, because he hath offered up himself a sacrifice for sin: *Sanctification*, because he hath given us his spirit, *Redemption*, because he hath appointed a day to vindicate his Children out of the bands of corruption into liberty, which is glorious. How Christ is made *Wisdom*, and how *Redemption*, it may be declared, when occasion serveth. But how Christ is made the *Righteousness* of men, we are now to declare.

3. There is a glorifying righteousness of men in the World to come: as there is a justifying and sanctifying righteousness here. The righteousness, wherewith we shall be clothed in the world to come, is both perfect and inherent. That whereby here we are justified is perfect, but not inherent. That whereby we are sanctified, is inherent, but not perfect. This openeth a way to the understanding of that grand question, which hangeth yet in controversy between us and the Church of *Rome*, about the matter of justifying righteousness.

They teach as we do, that God doth justify the soul of man alone, without any co-efficient; cause of justice.

*Deus sine medi-  
coefficiente ani-  
mam justificat.  
Casal. de quadri-  
part. just. l. 1. c. 1.  
Idem ibi. 3. d. 9.*

The difference be-  
tween the  
Papists and u-  
about justifica-  
tion.

(a) Tho. Aquin. 1. 2. q. 110. Gratia gra-  
tum faciens id est, justificans, est in anima quoddam  
reale et positivum quoddam (art. 1. cor. 1.)  
supernaturale, non eadem cum virtute infusa, et  
Magister; sed aliquid (art. 2.) prae virtute in-  
fusa, sedem spiritus sancti tenens utroque modo quoddam (art.  
3. ad 3.) quo presupponitur in virtutibus istis sunt  
eorum principium et radix, effectum autem ten-  
quam subiectum operatur non potentes; sed ab ipsa  
(art. 4. ad 1.) effluunt virtutes in potentes ani-  
ma, per quas potestas movetur ad alius plac. vid.  
quest. 113. de justificatione.

4. First, although they imagine, that the Mother of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, were for his honour and by his special protection, preserved clean from all sin: yet touching the rest they teach as we do; that infants that never did actually offend, have their natures defiled, destitute of Justice, averted from God; that in making man righteous: none do efficiently work with God, but God. They teach as we do, that unto Justice no man ever attained, but by the Merits of Jesus Christ. They teach as we do, that although Christ as God, be the efficient; as Man, the meritorious cause of our Justice: yet in us also there is some thing required. God is the cause of our natural life, in him we live: but he quickneth not the body without the soul in the body. Christ hath merited to make us just: but as a medicine, which is made for health, doth not heal by being made; but by being applied: so by the merits of Christ there can be no Justification, without the application of his Merits. Thus far we joyn hands with the Church of *Rome*.

5. Wherein then do we disagree? We disagree about the nature and essence of the Medicine, whereby Christ cureth our disease; about the manner of applying it; about the number, and the power of means, which God requireth in us for the effectual applying thereof to our souls comfort. When they are required to shew what the righteousness is, whereby a Christian man is justified: they (a) answer, that it is a divine spiritual quality, which quality received into the soul, doth first make it to be one of them, who are born of God: and secondly, induc it with power, to bring forth such works, as they do that are born of him; even as the soul of man being joyned to his body, doth first make him to be of the number of reasonable creatures; and secondly inable him to perform the natural functions which are proper to his kind: that it maketh the soul amiable and gracious in the sight of God, in regard whereof it is termed grace: that it purgeth, purifieth, and washeth out all the staines, and pollutions of sin, that by it, through the merit of Christ we are delivered as from sin, so

from eternal death and condemnation, the reward of sin. This grace they will have to be applied by infusion: to the end, that as the body is warm by the heat which is in the body, so the soul might be righteous by the inherent grace: which grace they make capable of increase; as the body may be more and more warm, so the soul more and more justified, according as grace shall be augmented; the augmentation whereof is merited by good works, as good Works are made meritorious by it. Wherefore, the first receipt of grace in their divinity, is the first justification; the increase thereof the second justification. As grace may be increased by the merit of good works: so it may be diminished by the demerit of sins venial, it may be lost by mortal sin. In as much therefore as it is needful in the one case to repair, in the other to re-

cover the loss which is made: the infusion of grace hath her sundry after-meals, for the which cause, they make many ways to apply the infusion of grace. It is applied to infants through Baptism, without either Faith or Works, and in them really it taketh away original sin, and the punishment due unto it: it is applied to Infidels and wicked men in the first justification, through Baptism without Works, yet not without Faith: and it taketh away both sins actual and original together, withal whatsoever punishment, eternal or temporal, thereby deserved. Unto such as have attained the first justification, that is to say, the first receipt of grace, it is applied farther by good works to the increase of former grace, which is the second justification. If they work more and more, grace doth more increase, and they are more and more justified. To such as diminished it by venial sins, it is applied by holy water, Ave Marias, Crossings, Papal salutations, and such like, which serve for reparations of grace decayed. To such as have lost it through mortal sin, it is applied by the Sacrament (as they terme it) of Penance: which Sacrament hath force to confer grace anew, yet in such sort, that being so conferred, it hath not altogether so much power, as at the first. For it onely cleanseth out the stain or guilt of sin committed; and changeeth the punishment eternal into a temporal satisfaction: punishment here, if time do serve, if not, hereafter to be endured, except it be lightened by Masses, works of Charity, Pilgrimages, Fasts, and such like: or else shortened by pardon for terme, or by plenary pardon quite removed, and taken away. This is the mystery of the man of sin. This maketh the Church of Rome doth cause her followers to tread, when they ask her the way to justification. I cannot stand now to unrip this building, and to sift it pece by pece; onely I will pass by it in few words, that that may befall *Babylon* in the presence of that which God hath builded as hapned unto *Dagon* before the Ark.

6. Doubtless saith the Apostle, *I have counted all things loss, and judge them to be dung, that I may win Christ; and to be found in him, not having my own righteousness, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God through Faith.* Whether they speak of the first or second justification, they make it the essence of a divine quality inherent, they make it righteousness which is in us. If it be in us, then is it ours, as our souls are ours though we have them from God and can hold them no longer than pleaseth him: for if he withdraw the breath of our nostrils, we fall to dust: but the righteousness wherein we must be found, if we will be justified, is not our own; therefore we cannot be justified by any inherent quality. Christ hath merited righteousness for as many as are found in him. In him God findeth us, if we be faithful, for by faith we are incorporated into Christ. Then although in our selves we be altogether sinful and unrighteous yet even the man which is impious in himself, full of iniquity, full of sin; him being found in Christ through faith, and having his sin remitted through repentance; him God upbeldeth with a gracious eye, putteth away his sin by not imputing it, taketh quite away the punishment due thereunto by pardoning it; and accepteth him in Jesus Christ, as perfectly righteous, as if he had fulfilled all that was commanded him in the Law: Shall I say more perfectly righteous then if himself had fulfilled the whole Law? I must take heed what I say: but the Apostle saith, *God made him to be sin for us who knew no sin: that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.* Such we are in the sight of God the Father, as is the very Son of God himself. Let it be counted folly or phrensie, or fury, whatsoever; it is our comfort, and our wisdom; we care for no knowledge in the world but this, That Man hath sinned, and God hath suffered: That God hath made himself the Son of man, and that men are made the righteousness of God. You see therefore that the Church of Rome, in teaching justification by inherent grace, doth pervert the truth of Christ; and that by the hands of the Apostles we have received otherwise then she teacheth. Now concerning the righteousness of sanctification, we deny it not to be inherent: we grant, that unless we work, we have it not: onely we distinguish it as a thing different in nature from the righteousness of justification: we are righteous the one way by the faith of Abraham; the other way, except we do the works of Abraham, we are not righteous. Of the one St. Paul To him that worketh not, but believeth, faith is counted for righteousness. Of the other, St. John; *Qui facit justitiam justus est*: He is righteous which worketh righteousness. Of the one, St. Paul doth prove by Abraham; Example, that we have it of faith with-

Phil. 1. 3.

2 Cor. 5. 21.

Rom. 4. 6.



Rom. 6.

our works. Of the other, St. James by *Abraham's* Example, that by works we have it, and not onely by faith. St. Paul doth plainly sever these two parts of Christian righteousness one from the other. For in the first to the *Rom.* thus he writeth, *Being freed from sin, and made servants to God, ye have your fruit in holiness, and the end everlasting life. Ye are made free from sin, and made servants unto God; this is the righteousness of justification: ye have your fruit in holiness; this is the righteousness of sanctification.* By the one we are interested in the right of inheriting; by the other we are brought to the actual possession of eternal bliss, and so the end of both is everlasting life.

7.<sup>th</sup> The Prophet *Habak.* doth here term the Jews *righteous* men, not onely because being justified by faith they were free from sin: but also because they had their measure of fruits in holiness. According to whose example of charitable judgment, which leaveth it to God to discern what we are, and speaketh of them according to that which they do profess themselves to be, although they be not holy men, whom men do think, but whom God doth know indeed to be such: yet let every Christian man know, that in Christian equity, he standeth bound for to think and speak of his Brethren, as of men that have a measure in the fruit of holiness, and a right unto the Titles, wherewith God, in token of special favour and mercy, vouchsafeth to honour his chosen servants. So we see the Apostles of our Saviour Christ, do use every where the name of *Saints*; so the Prophet, the name of *righteous*. But let us all be such as we desire to be termed. *Reatus impi est pium nomen*, saith *Salvianus*. Godly names do not justify godless men. We are but upbraided, when we are honoured with Names and Titles, whereunto our lives and manners are not suitable. If indeed we have our fruit in holiness, notwithstanding we must note, that the more we abound therein the more need we have to crave that we may be strengthened and supported. Our very virtues may be snares unto us. The enemy, that waiteth for all occasions to work our ruine, hath found it harder to overthrow an humble Sinner, then a proud Saint. There is no mans case so dangerous, as his whom Satan hath persuaded that his own righteousness shall present him pure and blameless in the sight of God. If we could say, we were not guilty of any thing at all in our consciences (we know our selves far from this innocency; we cannot say we know nothing by our selves; but if we could) should we therefore plead not guilty before the presence of our Judge, that sees further into our hearts then we our selves can do? if our hands did never offer violence to our brethren, a bloody thought doth prove us Murderers before him: if we had never opened our mouth to utter any scandalous, offensive or hurtful word, the cry of our secret cogitations is heard in the ears of God. If we did not commit the sins, which daily and hourly either in deed, word, or thoughts we do commit; yet in the good things which we do, how many defects are there intermingled! God in that which is done, respecteth the mind and intention of the doer. Cō of then all those things wherein we have regarded our own glory, those things which men do to please men, and to satisfy our own liking, those things which we do for any by respect, not sincerely and purely for the love of God: and a small score will serve for the number of our righteous deeds. Let the holiest and best thing we do be considered; we are never better affected unto God then when we pray; yet when we pray, how are our affections many times distracted! How little reverence do we shew unto the grand Majesty of God, unto whom we speak! How little remorse of our own miseries! How little tast of the sweet influence of his tender mercies do we feel! Are we not as unwilling many times to begin, and as glad to make an end; as if in saying, *Call upon me*, he had set us a very burthensome task? It may seem somewhat extreme, which I will speak: therefore let every one judge of it, even as his own heart shall tell him; and no otherwise; I will but onely make a demand: If God should yeild unto us, not as unto *Abraham*, If fifty, forty, thirty, twenty, yea, or if ten good persons could be found in a City, for their sakes that City should not be destroyed: but, and if he should make us an offer thus large: Search all the Generations of men, sithence the Fall of our *Father Adam*, find one man, that hath done one action, which hath past from him pure, without any strait or blemish at all, and for that one mans onely action, neither man nor Angel shall feel the torments which are prepared for both. Do you think that this ransome, to deliver men and Angels, could be found to be among the sons of men? The best thing which we do,

do, have somewhat in them to be pardoned. How then can we do any thing meritorious, or worthy to be rewarded? Indeed God doth liberally promise whatsoever appertaineth to a blessed life, to as many as sincerely keep his law, though they be not exactly able to keep it. Wherefore we acknowledge a dutiful necessity of doing well; but the meritorious dignity of doing well, we utterly renounce. We see how far we are from the perfect righteousness of the Law; the little fruit which we have in holiness, it is, God knoweth, corrupt and unsound: we put no confidence in all in it, we challenge nothing in the world for it, we dare not call God to reckoning, as if we had him in our debt-books: our continual suit to him, is, and must be, to bear with our infirmities, and pardon our offences.

8. But the people of whom the prophet speaketh, were they all, or were the most part of them such as had care to walk uprightly? Did they thirst after righteousness? Did they wish? Did they long with the righteous Prophet, *that our ways were so direct; that we might keep thy statutes?* Did they lament with the righteous Apostle, *that our miserable men, the good which we wish and purpose, and strive to do, we cannot?* No, the words of the other Prophet concerning this people, do shew the contrary. How grievously hath *Esay* mourned over them? *Oh sinful nation, laden with iniquity, wicked seed, that corrupt children!* All which notwithstanding, so wide are the bowels of his compassion enlarged, that he denyeth us not, no, not when we were laden with iniquity, leave to commune familiarly with him, liberty to crave and intreat, that what plagues soever we have deserved, we may not be in worse case than unbelievers, that we may not be hemmed in by Pagans and Infidels. *Jerusalem* is a sinful polluted City: but *Jerusalem* compared with *Babylon*, is righteous. And shall the righteous be overborn? shall they be compass'd about by the wicked? But the Prophet doth not wendly complain; Lord, how cometh it to pass, that thou handlest us so hardly, of whom thy name is called, and bearest with the Heathen Nations, that despite thou? No, he beareth us through extremity of grief and intercessory violence: *This people is to perishes, the righteous are thus handled; therefore his severe judgments shall prevail.*

Rom. 7. 19.

Ca. 1. v. 4

9. Which illation containeth many things, whom it will serve best such both for you to hear, and me to speak; if necessity did not draw me to another task. *Paul* and *Barnabas* being requested to preach the same things again which once they had preached, thought it their duties to further the godly desires of men, sincerely affected to the truth. Nor may it seem burdensome for me, nor for you unprofitable, that I follow their example, the like occasion unto theirs being offered me. When we had last the Epistle of *St. Paul* to the *Hebrews* in hand, and of that Epistle these words: *In these last days he hath spoken unto us by his Son:* After we had thence collected the nature of the visible Church of Christ; and had defined it to be a community of men sanctified through the profession of the Truth, which God hath taught the world by his Son; and had declared, that the scope of Christian Doctrine is the comfort of them whose hearts are overburdened with the burden of sin; and had proved that the doctrine professed in the Church of Rome, doth bereave men of comfort both in their lives and in their deaths: the conclusion in the end, whereunto we came, was this; the Church of Rome being in faith so corrupted, as she is, and refusing to be reformed, as she doth, we are to sever our selves from her; the example of our Fathers may not retain us in communion with that Church, under hope that we so continuing, may be saved as well as they. God, I doubt not, was merciful to save thousands of them, though they lived in popish superstitions, inasmuch as they sinned ignorantly: but the truth is now laid before our eyes. The former part of this last sentence, namely, these words: *I doubt not, but God was merciful to save thousands of our Fathers living in Popish superstitions, inasmuch as they sinned ignorantly:* this sentence, I beseech you to mark, and to sift it with the severity of austere judgement, that if it be found to be gold, it may be suitable to the precious foundation whereon it was then laid: for I protest, that if it be hay or stubble, my own hand shall set fire on it. Two questions have risen by reason of this speech before alledged: The one, *Whether our Fathers, infected with Popish errors and superstitions, may be saved?* The other, *Whether their ignorance be a reasonable inducement to make us think they might?* We are then to examine: first, what possibility: then what probability there is that God might be merciful unto so many of our Fathers.

Act. 13. 41. 46.

Heb. 1. w 1

By sanctification, I mean a separation from others not professing as they do. For true holiness consisteth not in professing, but in obeying the truth of Christ

10. So many of our Fathers living in Popish superstitions, yet by the mercy of God

Apoc. 18. 4.

Mat. 24. 16.

Gen. 19. 15.

God be saved? No; this could not be: God hath spoken by his Angel from Heaven, unto his people concerning *Babylon* (by *Babylon* we understand the Church of Rome;) *Go out of her my people, that ye be not partakers of her plagues.* For answer whereunto, first, I do not take the words to be meant onely of temporal plagues, of the corporal death, sorrow, famine and fire, whereunto God in his wrath hath condemned *Babylon*; and that to save his chosen people from these plagues, he saith, *Go out*, with like intent, as in the Gospel, speaking of *Jerusalem's* detolations, he saith *Lest they that are in Judea, flee unto the Mountaines, and them that are in the midst thereof depart out*: or, as in the former times to *Lot*, *Arise, take thy Wife and thy Daughters which are there, lest then be destroyed in the punishment of the City*: but so far as here it is said, *Go out of Babylon*; we doubt, their everlasting destruction, which are partakers therein, is either principally ment, or necessarily implied in this sentence. How then was it possible for so many of your fathers to be saved, sith they were so far from departing out of *Babylon*, that they took her for their Mother, and in her bosome yielded up the Ghost?

11. First, for the plagues being threatned unto them that are partakers in the sins of *Babylon*, we can define nothing concerning our fathers, out of this sentence: unless we shew what the sins of *Babylon* be; and what they be which are such partakers of them, that their everlasting plagues are inevitable. The sins which may be common both to them of the Church of Rome, and to others departed thence, must be severed from this question. He which saith, *Depart out of Babylon, lest ye be partakers of her sins*: sheweth plainly, that he meaneth such sins, as, except we separate our selves, we have no power in the World to avoyd; such impieties, as by their Law they have established, and whereunto all that are among them, either do indeed assent, or else are by powerable means forced in shew and appearance, to subject themselves. As for example, in the Church of *Rome* it is maintained, that the same credit and reverence that we give to the Scriptures of God, ought also to be given to unwritten verities; That the Pope is supreme head ministerial over the universal Church militant; That the bread in the Eucharist is transubstantiated into Christ; That it is to be adored, and to be offered up unto God, as a sacrifice propitiatory for quick and dead; That Images are to be worshipped; Saints to be called upon as intercessors, and such like. Now, because some Heresies do concern things only beleived, as the transubstantiation of the sacramental Elements in the *Eucharist*; some concern things which are practised and put in ure, as the adoration of the Elements transubstantiated: we must note, that *erroniously*, the practice of that is sometime received, whereof the doctrine, that teacheth it, is not *heretically* maintained. They are all partakers of the maintenance of Heresies, who by word or deed allow them, knowing them, although not knowing them to be heresies; as also they, and that most dangerously of all others, who knowing Heresie to be Heresie, do notwithstanding in worldly respects, make semblance of allowing that, which in heart and judgment they condemn: But heresie is heretically maintained, by such as obstinately hold it, after wholesome admonition. Of the last sort, as of the next before, I make no doubt, but that their condemnation without an actual repentance, is inevitable. Lest any man therefore should think, that in speaking of our fathers, I should speak indifferently of them all: let my words I beseech you be well marked: *I doubt not, but God was merciful to save thousands of our Fathers*: which thing I will now by Gods assistance, set more plainly before your eyes.

12. Many are partakers of the error, which are not of the heresie of the Church of Rome. The people following the conduct of their guides, and observing as they did, exactly, that which was prescribed, thought they did God good service, when indeed they did dishonour him. This was their error: but the Heresie of the Church of *Rome*, their dogmatical Positions opposite unto Christian truth, what one man amongst ten thousand, did ever understand? Of them, which understand *Roman* Heresies, and allow them, all are not alike partakers in the action of allowing. Some allow them as the first founders and establishers of them: which crime toucheth none but their Popes and Councels: the people are clear and free from this. Of them which maintain Popish Heresies, not as Authors, but receivers of them from others, all maintain them not as Masters. In this are not the people partakers neither but onely the Predicants and Schoolmen. Of them which have been partakers in this sin of teach-

ing



ing Popish heresie, there is also a difference; for they have not all been Teachers of all Popish Heresie. Put a difference, saith St. Jude; have compassion upon some. Shall we lap up all in one condition? Shall we cast them all head-long? Shall we plunge them all into that infernal and everlasting flaming lake? Them that have been partakers of the errors of *Babylon*, together with them which are in the heresie? them which have been the Authors of Heresie, with them that by terror and violence have been forced to receive it? Them who have taught it, with them whose simplicity hath by slights and conveyances of false Teachers, been seduced to beleive it? Them which have been partakers in one, with them which have been partakers in many? Them which in many, with them which in all?

13. Notwithstanding I grant, that although the condemnation of them be more tolerable then of these; yet for the man that laboureth at the plough, to him that sitteth in the Vatican; to all partakers in the sins of *Babylon*; to our Fathers, though they did but erroneously practise that which the guide heretically taught; to all without exception, plagues were due. The pit is ordinarily the end, as well of the guide, as of the guided in blindness. But wo worth the hour wherein we were born, except we might promise our selves better things; things which accompany mans salvation, even where we know that worse and such as accompany condemnation are due. Then must we shew some way how possibly they might escape. What way is there that sinners can find to escape the judgement of God, but onely by appealing to the seat of his saving mercy? Which mercy, with Origen, we do not extend to Devils and damned spirits. God hath mercy upon thousands, but there be thousands also which he hardeneth. Christ hath therefore set the bounds, he hath fixed the limits of his saving mercy within the compass of these termes: *God sent not his own Son to condemn the World, but that the world through him might be saved.* In the third of St. Johns Gospel mercy is restrained to believers: *He that believeth shall not be condemned; He that believeth not, is condemned already, because he believeth not in the Son of God.* In the second of the Revelation, mercy is restrained to the penitent. For of *Jezabel* and her sectaries, thus he speaketh: *I gave her space to repent, and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit fornication with her into great affliction, except they repent them of their works, and I will kill her Children with death.* Our hope therefore of the Fathers, is, if they were not altogether faithless and impenitent, that they are saved.

14. They are not all faithless that are weak in assenting to the truth, or stiff in maintaining things opposite to the truth of Christian Doctrine. But as many as hold the foundation which is precious, though they hold it but weakly, and as it were with a slender thred, although they frame many base and unsutable things upon it, things that cannot abide the tryal of the fire; yet shall they pass the fiery tryal and be saved, which indeed have builded themselves upon the rock, which is the foundation of the Church. If then our fathers did not hold the foundation of Faith, there is no doubt but they were faithless. If many of them held it, then is therein no impediment, but many of them might be saved. Then let us see what the foundation of faith is, and whether we may think that thousands of our Fathers being in Popish superstitions, did notwithstanding hold the foundation.

15. If the foundation of Faith do import the general ground, whereupon we rest when we do believe, the writings of the Evangelists and the Apostles are the foundation of the Christian faith: *Credimus quia legimus*, saith S. Jerome: Oh that the Church of *Rome* did as (a) soundly interpret these fundamental writings whereupon we build our faith, as the doth willingly hold and embrace them.

16. But if the name of Foundation do note the principal thing which is believed; then is that the foundation of our Faith which S. Paul hath to Timothy: (b) *God manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, &c.* that of Nathaniel, (c) *thou art the Son of the living God: thou art the King of Israel*: that of the inhabitants of *Samaria*, (d) *This is Christ the Saviour of the world*: he that directly denyeth this, doth utterly raze the very foundation of our Faith. I have proved heretofore, that although the Church of *Rome* hath plaid the Harlot worse then ever did *Israel*; yet are they not as now the Synagogue of the *Jews*, which plainly deny Christ Jesus, quite and clean excluded from the new Covenant. But as *Samaria* compared with *Jerusalem* is termed *Abolath*, a Church or Tabernacle of her own; contrarwise,

John 3. 17.

Revel. 2. 22.

a They misinterpret, not only by making false and corrupt glosses upon the Scripture, but also by forcing the old vulgar translation as the only authentic; however, they refuse no book which is Canonical, though they admit sundry which are not.  
b 1 Tim. 3. 16.  
c John 1. 49.  
d John 4. 42.

trariwise, *Jerusalem Abolished*, the resting place of the Lord: so, whatsoever we terme the Church of *Rome*, when we compare her with reformed Churches, still we put a difference, as then between *Babylon* and *Samaritan*, so now between *Rome* and the Heathenish assemblies. Which opinion I must and will retul; I must grant and will; that the Church of *Rome* together with all her Children, is clean excluded. There is no difference in the World between our Fathers and *Saracens*, *Turks* and *Painims*, if they did directly deny Christ crucified for the Salvation of the World.

17. But how many millions of them were known so to have ended their lives, that the drawing of their breath hath ceased with the uttering of this Faith, *Christ my Saviour, my Redeemer Jesus*? Answer is made, That this they might unfainedly confess, and yet be far enough from Salvation. For behold, saith the Apostle, *I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing*. Christ in the work of mans salvation is alone: the *Galatians* were cast away by joyning *Circumcision* and the other rites of the Law with Christ: the Church of *Rome* doth teach her children to joyne other things likewise with him; therefore their faith, their belief doth not profit them any thing at all. It is true that they do indeed joyne other things with Christ: but how? Not in the work of redemption it self, which they grant, that Christ alone hath performed sufficiently for the salvation of the whole World; but in the application of this inestimable treasure, that it may be effectual to their salvation: how demurely soever they confess, that they seek remission of sins no otherwise then by the blood of Christ, using humbly the means appointed by him to apply the benefit of his holy blood; they teach indeed, so many things pernicious in Christian Faith, in setting down the means whereof they speak, that the very foundation of Faith which they hold, is thereby (a) plainly overthrown, and the force of the blood of Jesus Christ extinguished. We may therefore dispute with them, urge them even with as dangerous sequels, as the Apostle doth the *Galatians*. But I demand, If some of those *Galatians* heartily embracing the Gospel of Christ, sincere and sound in faith (this one only error excepted) had ended their lives before they were ever taught how perilous an opinion they held; shall we think that the danger of this error did so overweigh the benefit of their faith, that the mercy of God might not save them? I grant they overthrew the foundation of Faith by consequence: doth not that so likewise which the (b) *Lutheran* Churches do at this day so fustly & so firmly maintain? For mine own part I dare not here deny the possibility of their salvation which have bin the chiefest instruments of ours, albeit they carried to their grave a persuasion so greatly repugnant to the truth: For as much therefore as it may be said of the Church of *Rome*, she hath yet a little strength, she doth not directly deny the foundation of Christianity: I may, I trust without offence, persuade my self, that thousands of our Fathers in former times living and dying within her walls, have found mercy at the hands of God.

a Plainly, in all mens sight whose eyes God hath enlightened to behold his truth. For they which are in error, are in darkness, and see not that which in light is plain, in that which the teach concerning the nature of

Christ, they hold it same with *Nicenus* fully, the same with *Antistes* about the properties of his nature, b The opinion of the *Lutherans* though it be no direct denial of the foundation, may notwithstanding be dangerous unto some; and I do not think but that in many respects it is less damnable, as at this day some maintain it, than it was in them which held it at first; as *Luther* and others, whom I had an eye unto in this speech. The question is not whether an error with such and such circumstances: but simply, whether an error overthrowing the foundation, do exclude all possibility of salvation, if it be not repented and expressly repented of.

18. What although they repented not of their errors? God forbid that I should open my mouth to gain-say that which Christ himself hath spoken: *Except ye repent, ye shall all perish*. And if they did not repent they perished. But withal note, that we have the benefit of a double repentance: the least sin which we commit in Deed, Thought, or Word, is death, without repentance. Yet how many things do escape us in every of these, which we do not know? How many, which we do not observe to be sins? And without the knowledge, without the observation of sin, there is no actual repentance. It cannot then be chosen, but that for as many as hold the foundation, and have a holden sins and errors, in hatred, the blessing of repentance for unknown sins and errors, is obtained at the hands of God, through the gracious mediation of Jesus Christ, for such suiters as cry with the Prophet *David*: *Purge me, O Lord, from my secret sins*.

19. But we with a wall of lome; we labour in vain; all this is nothing; it doth not prove; it cannot justify that which we go about to maintain. Infidels and Heathen men are not so godless, but that they may no doubt, cry God mercy, and desire in general to have their sins forgiven them. To such as deny the foundation of faith

faith

faith there can be no salvation (according to the ordinary course which God doth use in saving men) without a particular repentance of that error. The Galatians<sup>e</sup> thinking that unless they were circumcised, they could not be saved, overbrowed the foundation of faith directly: therefore if any of them did die so persuaded, whether before or after they were told of their errors, their end is dreadful; there is no way with them but one, death and condemnation. For the Apostle speaketh nothing of men departed, but saith generally of all, *If you be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. They are abolished from Christ, who are justified by the Law; ye are fallen from grace, Gal. 5.* Of them in the Church of Rome the reason is the same. For whom Antichrist hath seduced, concerning them did not St. Paul speak long before, they received not the word of truth, that they might not be saved: therefore God would send them strong delusions to believe lies; that all they might be damned which believe not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. And St. John, *All that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life, Apoc. 13.* Indeed many in former times as their Books and Writings do yet shew, held the foundation, to wit salvation by Christ alone, and therefore might be saved. God hath always had a Church amongst them, which firmly kept his saving truth. As for such as hold with the Church of Rome; that we cannot be saved by Christ alone without works; they do not onely by a circle of consequence, but directly deny the foundation of faith; they hold it not, no not so much as by a thread.

<sup>a</sup> Thess. 2. 12.

Apoc. 13. ver. 8

20. This to my remembrance, being all that hath been opposed with any countenance or shew of reason, I hope, if this be answered, the cause in question is at an end. Concerning general repentance therefore: what? A Murderer, a Blasphemer, an unclean person, a Turk, a Jew, any sinner to escape the wrath of God by a general repentance *God forgive me?* Truly it never came within my heart, that a general repentance doth serve for all sins: it serveth onely for the common oversights of our sinful life, and for the faults which either we do not mark, or do not know that they are faults. Our Fathers were actually penitent for sins, wherein they knew they displeased God; or else they fall not within the compass of my first speech. Again, that otherwise they could not be saved, then holding the foundation of Christian Faith, we have not only affirmed, but proved. Why is it not then confessed, that thousands of our Fathers which lived in popish superstitions, might yet by the mercy of God be saved? First, if they had directly denied the very foundations of Christianity, without repenting them particularly of that sin, he which saith there could be no salvation for them, according to the ordinary course which God doth use in saving men, granteth plainly, or at the least closely insinuateth, that an extraordinary privilege of mercy might deliver their souls from hell, which is more then I required. Secondly, if the foundation be denied, it is denied for fear of some heresie which the Church of Rome maintaineth. But how many were there amongst our Fathers, who being seduced by the common error of that Church, never knew the meaning of her Heresies? So that although all popish Hereticks did perish; thousands of them which lived in Popish superstitions, might be saved. Thirdly, seeing all that held Popish Heresies, did not hold all the heresies of the Pope: why might not thousands which were infected with other-leaven, live and die unsoured with this, and so be saved? Fourthly, if they all held this Heresie, many there were that held it, no doubt, but onely in a general form of words, which a favourable interpretation might expound in a sense differing far enough from the poisoned conceit of Heresie. As for example; Did they hold, that we cannot be saved by Christ, without good works? We our selves do, I think, all say as much, with this construction, salvation being taken as in that sentence, *Corda creditur ad iustitiam, ore fit confessio ad salutem*; except infants and men, cut off upon the point of their conversion: of the rest none shall see God, but such as seek peace and holiness, though not as a cause of their salvation, yet as a way which they must walk, which will be saved. Did they hold, that without works we are not justified? Take justification so as it may also imply sanctification, and St. James doth say as much. For except there be an ambiguity in the same terme, St. Paul and St. James do contradict each the other: which cannot be. Now there is no ambiguity in the name either of faith, or of works, being meant by them both in one and the same sence. Finding therefore, that justification is spoken of by St. Paul, without implying sanctification, when

For this is the onely thing acknowledged to prove the impossibility of their salvation: The Church of Rome joyneth works with Christ, which is a denial of the foundation, and unless we hold the foundation, we cannot be saved.

he



he proveth, that a man is justified by faith without works; finding likewise that justification doth sometime imply sanctification also with it: I suppose nothing to be more sound, then so to interpret St. *James*, speaking not in that sense, but in this.

21. We have already shewed, that there be two kinds of Christian righteousness: the one without us, which we have by imputation; the other in us, which consisteth of faith, hope, and charity, and other Christian virtues: And S. *James* doth prove that *Abraham* had not onely the one, because the thing believed was imputed unto him for righteousness; but also the other, beause he offered up his son. God giveth us both the one justice and the other: the one by accepting us for righteous in Christ; the other, by working Christian righteousness in us. The proper and most immediate efficient cause in us of this latter, is the Spirit of adoption we have received into our hearts. That whereof it consisteth, whereof it is really and formally made, are those infused virtues, proper and peculiar unto Saints, which the Spirit in the very moment, when first it is given of God, bringeth with it: the effects whereof are such actions as the Apostle doth call the fruits of works, the operations of the Spirit: The difference of the which operations from the root whereof they spring, maketh it needful to put two kinds likewise of sanctifying righteousness, *Habitual*, and *Actual*. *Habitual*, that holiness, wherewith our souls are inwardly indued, the same instant, when first we begin to be the Temples of the holy Ghost. *Actual*, that holiness, which afterwards beautifieth all the parts and actions of our life, the holiness for which *Enoch*, *Job*, *Zachary*, *Elizabeth*, and other Saints, are in the Scriptures so highly commended. If here it be demanded, which of these we do first receive: I answer, that the Spirit, the virtue, of the Spirit, the habitual justice, which is ingrafted, the external justice of *Jesus Christ*, which is imputed: these we receive all at one and the same time; whensoever we have any of these, we have all; they go together. Yet *fish no man is justified except he believe*, and *no man believeth except he hath faith*, and *no man except he hath received the Spirit of adoption, hath faith*: forasmuch as they do necessarily infer justification, and justification doth of necessity presuppose them: we must needs hold that imputed righteousness, in dignity being the chiefest, is notwithstanding in order to the last of all these; but *actual righteousness*, which is the righteousness of good works, succeedeth all, followeth after all, both in order and time. Which being attentively marked, sheweth plainly how the faith of true Believers cannot be divorced from hope and love; how faith is a part of sanctification, and yet unto justification necessary; how faith is perfected by good works, and not works of ours without faith: finally, how our Fathers might hold, that we are justified by Faith alone and yet hold truly that without works we are not justified. Did they think that men do merit rewards in heaven, by the works they performe on earth? The ancient use *meriting for obtaining*, and in that sense they of *Wittenberg* have it in their confession; *We teach that good works commanded of God, are necessarily to be done, and by the free kindness of God they merit their certain rewards*. Therefore speaking as our Fathers did, and we taking their speech, in a sound meaning, as we may take our Fathers, and might, for as much as their meaning is doubtful, and charity doth always interpret doubtful things favourably: what should induce us to think, that rather the damage of the worst construction did light upon them all, then that the blessing of the better was granted unto thousands? Fifthly, if in the worst construction that may be made, they had generally all embraced it living, might not many of them dying utterly renounce it? Howsoever men when they sit at ease, do vainly tickle their hearts with the vain conceit of I know not what proportionable correspondence, between their merits and their rewards, which in the trance of their high speculations they dream that God hath measured, weighed, and laid up, as it were in bundles for them: notwithstanding, we see by daily experience, in a number even of them, that when the hour of death approacheth, when they secretly hear themselves summoned forthwith to appear, and stand at the Bar of that Judge, whose brightness causeth the eyes of the Angels themselves to dazel, all these idle imaginations do then begin to hide their faces, to name merits then is to lay their souls upon the rack, the memory of their own deeds is loathsome unto them, they forsake all things; wherein they have put any trust or confidence, no staff to lean upon, no ease, no rest, no comfort then, but onely in *Jesus Christ*.

22. Wherefore if this proposition were true: *To hold in such wise, as the Church of Rome doth, that we cannot be saved by Christ alone without works, is directly to deny the foundation of Faith*; I say, that if this proposition were true: nevertheless so many ways I have shewed, whereby we may hope that thousand of our Fathers which lived in popish superstition, might be saved. But what if it be not true? What if neither that of the *Galathians*, concerning Circumcision; nor this of the Church of Rome by Workes be any direct denial of the foundation as it is affirmed, that both are? I need not wade so far as to discuss this Controversie, the matter which first was brought into question being so clear, as I hope it is. Howbeit because I desire, that the truth even in that also should receive light, I will do mine endeavour to set down somewhat more plainly; first, the foundation of Faith, what it is: Secondly, what is directly to deny the foundation: Thirdly whether they whom God hath chosen to be heirs of life, may fall so far as directly to deny it: Fourthly, whether the *Galathians* did so by admitting the error about Circumcision and the Law: last of all, whether the Church of Rome for this one opinion of Works, may be thought to do the like, and thereupon to be no more a Christian Church, then are the Assemblies of Turks and Jews.

They may cease to put any confidence in works, and yet never think, living in Popish superstition they did amiss. Popish dyed Popery in the Article of Iustification by works long before his death.

23. This word foundation being figuratively used, hath always reference to something which resembleth a material building, as both that Doctrine of *Laws* and the community of Christians do. By the Masters of Civil Policy nothing is so much inculcated, as that *Common-weals are founded upon Laws*; for that a multitude cannot be compacted into one body otherwise then by a common acception of Laws, whereby they are to be kept in order. The ground of all civil Laws is this: *No man ought to be hurt or injured by another*; Take away this perswasion, and ye take away all the Laws: take away Laws, and what shall become of Common-weals? So it is in our spiritual Christian Community: I do not mean that body Mystical, whereof Christ is onely the head, that building undiscernable by mortal eyes, wherein Christ is the chief corner stone: but I speak of the visible Church, the foundation whereof is the doctrine which the Prophets and the Apostles profess. The mark wherunto their Doctrine tendeth, is pointed at in these words of Peter unto Christ, *Thou hast the words of eternal life*: in those words of Paul to Timothy, *The holy Scriptures are able to make thee wise unto salvation*. It is the demand of nature it self, *What shall we do to have eternal life?* The desire of immortality and the knowledge of that, whereby it may be obtained, is so natural unto all men, that even they who are not perswaded, that they shall, do notwithstanding wish, that they might know a way how to see no end of life. And because natural means are not able still to resist the force of Death: there is no people in the earth so savage, which hath not devised some supernatural help or other, to fly for aid and succour in extremities, against the Enemies of the Laws. A longing therefore to be saved, without understanding the true way how, hath been the cause of all the Superstitions in the World: O that the miserable state of others, which wander in darkness, and wot not whither they go, could give us understanding hearts, worthily to esteem the riches of the mercy of God towards us, before whose eyes the doors of the Kingdom of Heaven are set wide open I should we offer violence unto it? it offereth violence unto us, and we gather strength to withstand it. But I am besides my purpose, when I fall to bewail the cold affection which we bear towards that whereby we should be saved; my purpose being only to set down, what the ground of salvation is. The Doctrine of the Gospel proposeth salvation as the end: and doth it not teach the way of attayning thereunto? Yet the Damocles possesse with a spirit of divination, spake the truth: *These men are the Servants of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of Salvation: A new and living way which Christ hath prepared for us, through the veil, that is, his flesh*; Salvation purchased by the death of Christ. By this foundation the children of God before the written Law, were distinguished from the sons of men; the reverend Patriarks both possesse it living, and spake expressly of it as the hour of their death: It comforted Job in the midst of grief: as it was afterwards the anker-hold of all the righteous in Israel, from the writing of the Law, to the time of grace. Every Prophet maketh mention of it. It was famously spoken of about the time, when the coming of Christ to accomplish the promises, which were made long before it, drew near, that the sound thereof was heard even amongst

What the foundation of faith is: *Verba ad conclusionem multitudinis, que coalescere in populi unum corpus nulla repugnantia poterat, Licet de Rom. lib. 4. Ephes. 1. 23. & 4. 15. Ephes. 2. 20.*

John 6. 67.  
1 Tim. 3. 16

Acts 16. 17.  
Heb. 10. 22.

Gen. 49.  
Job. 19.

Acts 4. 12.

Luke 1. 11.  
1 Cor. 3.

the Gentiles. When he was come, as many as were his, acknowledged that he was their Salvation; he, that long expected hope of *Israel*; he, that *Seed*, in whom all the Nations of the earth shall be blessed. So that now he is a name of ruin, a name of death and condemnation, unto such as dream of a new *Messias*, to as many as look for salvation by any other but by him. For amongst men there is given no other name under heaven whereby we must be saved. Thus much *S. Mark* doth intimate by that, which he doth put in the front of this book, making his entrance with these words: *The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.* His Doctrine he termeth the Gospel, because it teacheth Salvation; the Gospel of Jesus Christ the son of God, because it teacheth salvation by him. This is then the foundation, whereupon the frame of the Gospel is erected; that very Jesus whom the *Virgin* conceived of the holy Ghost, whom *Simeon* imbraced in his arms, whom *Pilate* condemned, whom the *Jews* crucified, whom the *Apostles* preached, he is Christ, the Lord, the only Saviour of the World: Other foundation can no man lay. Thus I have briefly opened that principle in Christianity, which we call the foundation of our faith. It followeth now, that I declare unto you, what is directly to overthrow it. This will be better opened, if we understand, what it is to hold the foundation of Faith.

24. There are which defend, that many of the Gentiles, who never heard the Name of Christ, held the foundation of Christianity, and why? they acknowledged many of them, the Providence of God, his infinite wisdom, strength, power; his goodness, and his mercy towards the Children of men; that God hath judgment in store for the wicked, but for the righteous, which serve him, rewards, &c. In this which they confessed, that lyeth covered, which we believe, in the Rudiments of their knowledge concerning God, the foundation of our faith concerning Christ, lyeth secretly wrapped up, and is virtually contained: therefore they held the foundation of Faith, though they never had it. Might we not with as good a colour of Reason defend, that every Plowman hath all the Sciences, wherein Philosophers have excelled? For no man is ignorant of their first Principles, which do virtually contain, whatsoever by natural means is or can be known. Yea, might we not with as great reason affirm, that a man may put three mighty Oaks whereforever three Akorns may be put? For virtually an Akorn is an Oak. To avoid such Paradoxes, we teach plainly, that to hold the foundation, is in express terms to acknowledge it.

25. Now, because the foundation is an affirmative Proposition, they all overthrow it, who deny it; they directly overthrow it, who deny it directly; and they overthrow it by consequent, or indirectly, which hold any one assertion whatsoever, whereupon the direct denial thereof may be necessarily concluded. What is the Question between the Gentiles and us, but this, *Whether salvation be by Christ?* What between the Jews and us, but this, *Whether by this Jesus, whom we call Christ, yea or no?* This is to be the main point, whereupon Christianity standeth, it is clear by that one sentence of *Festus* concerning *Paul's* accusers: *They brought no crime of such things as I supposed, but had certain questions against him of their superstition, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.* Where we see that Jesus, dead and raised for the Salvation of the World, is by Jews denied, despised by a Gentile, by a Christian Apostle maintained. The Fathers therefore in the Primitive Church when they wrote; *Terrullian*, the book, which he called *Apologeticus*; *Minutius Felix*, the Book which he intitleth *Ottavins*; *Arnobius*, the seven books against the Gentiles; *Chrysostom*, his Orations against the Jews; *Eusebius*, his ten books of *Evangelical demonstration*: they stand in defence of Christianity against them, by whom the foundation thereof was directly denied. But the writings of the Fathers against *Nestorians*, *Pelagians*, and other Hereticks of the like note, refel Positions, whereby the foundation of Christian Faith was overthrown by consequent onely. In the former sort of Writings the foundation is proved; in the later, it is alledged as a proof, which to men that had been known directly to deny, must needs have seemed a very beggerly kind of disputing. All Infidels therefore deny the foundation of Faith directly; by consequent, many a Christian man, yea whole Christian Churches have denied it, and do deny it at this present day. Christian Churches, the foundation of Christianity: not directly, for then they cease to be Christian Churches: but by conse.



e consequent, in respect whereof we condemn them as erroneous, although for holding the foundation we do and must hold them Christians.

26. We see what it is to hold the foundation; what directly, and what by consequent, to deny it. The next thing which followeth, is, whether they whom God hath chosen to obtain the glory of our Lord Jesus Christ, may once effectually called, and through faith justified truly, afterwards fall so far, as directly to deny the foundation, which their hearts have before embraced with joy and comfort in the Holy Ghost; for such is the faith, which indeed doth justify. Devils know the same things which we believe, and the mindes of the most ungodly may be fully perswaded of the Truth; which knowledge in the one, and in the other, is sometimes certain faith, but equivocally, being indeed no such faith as that, whereby a Christian man is justified. It is the Spirit of Adoption, which worketh faith in us, in them not: the things which we believe, are by us apprehended, not onely as true, but also as good; and that to us: as good, they are not by them apprehended; as true, they are. Whereupon followeth the third difference; the Christian man the more he increaseth in faith, the more his joy and comfort aboundeth: but they, the more sure they are of the truth, the more they quake and tremble at it. This begetteth another effect, where the hearts of the one sort have a different disposition from the other. *Non ignora plerosque conscientia meritorum, nihil se esse per meritum magis optare quam credere. Multum enim extingui penitus, quam ad supplicia reparari.* I am not ignorant, faith *Münster*, that there be many, who being conscious what they are to look for, do rather wish that they might, then think that they shall cease, when they cease to live, because they hold it better that death should consume them unto nothing, then God revive them unto punishment. So it is in other Articles of Faith, whereof wicked men think no doubt, many times they are too true: On the contrary side, to the other, there is no grief or torment greater, then to feel their perswasion weak in things, whereof when they are perswaded, they reap such comfort and joy of spirit: such is the faith whereby we are justified; such, I mean, in respect of the quality. For touching the principal object of faith, longer then it holdeth the foundation whereof we have spoken, it neither justifieth, nor is, but ceaseth to be faith; when it ceaseth to believe, that Jesus Christ is the onely Saviour of the World. The cause of life spiritual in us, is Christ, not carnally or corporally inhabiting, but dwelling in the soul of man, as a thing which (when the minde apprehendeth it) is said to inhabite or possess the minde. The minde conceiveth Christ by hearing the Doctrine of Christianity, as the lights of Nature doth the minde to apprehend those truths which are merely rational, so that saving truth, which is far above the reach of Humane Reason, cannot otherwise, then by the Spirit of the Almighty, be conceived. All these are implied, wheresoever any of them is mentioned as the cause of the spiritual life. Wherefore if we have read, that (a) *the Spirit is our life*; or, (b) *the Word our life*; or, (c) *Christ our life*: We are in every of these to understand, that our life is Christ, by the hearing of the Gospel, apprehended as a Saviour, and assented unto through the power of the Holy Ghost. The first intellectual conceit and comprehension of Christ so embraced, *S. Peter* calleth, (d) *the seed whereof we be new born*: our first embracing of Christ, is our first (d) reviving from the state of death and condemnation. (e) *He that hath the Son, hath life*, faith *S. John*, and *he that hath not the Son of God hath not life*. If therefore he which once hath the Son, may cease to have the Son, though it be for a moment, he ceaseth for that moment to have life. But the life of them which have the Son of God, (e) is everlasting in the world to come. But because as Christ being raised from the dead dyed no more, death hath no more power over him: so justified man, (b) being allied to God in Jesus Christ our Lord, doth as necessarily from that time forward always live, as Christ (i) by whom he hath life, liveth always. I might, if I had not elsewhere largely done it already, shew by many and sundry manifest and clear proofs, how the motions and operations of life are sometime, so indiscernable, and so secret, that they seem stone-dead, who notwithstanding are still alive unto God in Christ. For as long as that abideth in us, which animareth, quickneth, and giveth life, so long we live; and we know that the cause of our faith abideth in us for ever. If Christ the Fountain of Life, may flit and leave the Habitation, where once he dwelleth: What shall become of his Promise, *I am with you to the Worlds end*? If the Seed of God, which

23.  
 1st Pet. 1. 1.  
 2d John 3. 7.  
 14.  
 Eph. 1. 11.  
 John 4. 14.

containeth Christ, may be first conceived, and then cast out: how doth S. Peter term it (a) *immortal*? How doth S. John term it, (b) *It abideth*? If the Spirit, which is given to cherish, and preserve the Seed of Life, may be given and taken away, how is it (c) the earnest of our inheritance until Redemption? how doth it continue with us for ever? If therefore the man which is once just by faith, shall live by faith, and live for ever; it followeth, that he which once doth believe the foundation, must needs believe the foundation for ever. If he believe it for ever, how can he ever directly deny it? Faith holding the direct affirmations, the direct negation, so long as faith continueth, is excluded.

*Objed.* But you will say, *That as he that is to day holy, may to morrow forsake his holiness, and become impure; as a friend may change his minde, and be made an enemy; as hope may wither: so faith may dye in the heart of man, the Spirit may be quenched, Grace may be extinguished, they which believe, may be quite turned away from the Truth.*

• Col. 1. 12.

1st Tim. 2. 15.  
 1st John 1.

*Sol.* The case is clear, long experience hath made this manifest, it needs no proof. I grant we are apt, prone, and ready to forsake God; but is God as ready to forsake us? Our mindes are changeable; is his so likewise? Whom God hath justified, hath not Christ assured, that it is his Fathers will to give them a Kingdom? Notwithstanding, it shall not be otherwise given them, then if they continue grounded and established in the faith, and be not moved away from the hope of the Gospel; (a) *if they abide in love and holiness*. Our Saviour therefore: when he spake of the sheep effectually called, and truly gathered into his fold, (b) *I give unto them eternal life, and they shall never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hands*; in promising to save them, he promised, no doubt, to preserve them in that, without which there can be no salvation, as also from that whereby it is irrecoverably lost. Every error in things appertaining unto God, is repugnant unto faith; every fearful cogitation, unto hope; unto love, every stragling inordinate desire; unto holiness, every blemish wherewith either the inward thoughts of our mindes, or the outward actions of our lives are stained. But Heresie, such as that of Eblion, Cerinthus, and others, against whom the Apostles were forced to bend themselves, both by word, and also by writing; that repining discouragement of heart, which tempteth God, whereof we have Israel in the Desert for a pattern; coldness, such as that in the Angels of Ephesus; foul sins, known to be expressely against the first, or second table of the Law, such as Noah, Manasse, David, Solomon, and Peter committed: These are each in their kinde so opposite to the former vertues, that they leave no place for salvation without an actual repentance. But Infidelity, extream despair, hatred of God and all goodness, obduration in sin cannot stand where there is but the least spark of faith, hope, love and sanctity; even as cold in the lowest degree cannot be, where heat in the highest degree is found. Whereupon I conclude, that although in the first kinde, no man liveth, which sinneth not; and in the second, as perfect as any do live may sin: yet with the man which is born of God, hath a promise, that in him the Seed of God shall abide, which Seed is a sure preservative against the sins that are of the third suit: Greater and clearer assurance we cannot have of any thing, then of this, that from such sins God shall preserve the righteous, as the apple of his eye for ever. Directly to deny the foundation of faith, is plain infidelity; where faith is entred, there infidelity is for ever excluded: Therefore by him which hath once sincerely believed in Christ, the foundation of Christian faith can never be directly denied, Did not Peter? Did not Marcellinus? Did not others both directly deny Christ, after that they had believed, and again believe, after they had denied? No doubt, as they confess in words, whose condemnation is nevertheless their not believing: (for example we have Judas:) So likewise, they may believe in heart, whose condemnation, without repentance, is their not confessing. Although therefore, Peter and the rest, for whose faith Christ hath prayed, that it might not fail, did not by denial, sin the sin of Infidelity, which is an inward abnegation of Christ (for if they had done this, their faith had clearly failed:) Yet because they sinned notoriously and grievously, committing that which they knew to be expressely forbidden by the Law, which faith, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve*; necessary it was, that he which purposed to save their souls, should, as he did, touch their hearts with true unfeigned repentance, that his mercy might restore

1st John 3. 9.

restore them again to life, whom sin had made the children of death and condemnation. Touching the point therefore, I hope I may safely set down, that if the justified erre, as he may, and never come to understand his error, God doth give him through general repentance: But if he fall into Heresie, he calleth him at one time profligate by actual repentance; but from infidelity, which is an inward direct denial of the foundation, he preserveth him by special providence for ever. When they may easily know, what to think of those *Galatians*, whose hearts were so possessed with the love of the truth, that if it had been possible, they would have plucked out their eyes to bestow upon their Teachers. It is true, that they were greatly changed, both in perswasion and affection: so that the *Galatians* when *S. Paul* wrote unto them, were not now the *Galatians* which they had been in former time, for that through error they wandered, although they were his sheep. I do not deny, but that I should deny, that they were his sheep; if I should grant, that through error they perished. It was a perilous opinion that they held; perilous, even in them that held it onely as an error, because it overthroweth the foundation by consequent. But in them which obstinately maintain it, I cannot think it less then a damnable Heresie. We must therefore put a difference between them, which erre of ignorance, retaining nevertheless a mind desirous to be instructed in truth, and them, which altho the truth is laid open, persist in the stubborn defence of their blindness. Heretical defenders, forward and stiff-necked Teachers of Circumcision, the blessed Apostle calls dogs: Silly men, who were seduced to think they taught the truth, he pitieth, he taketh up in his arms, he lovingly instructeth, he kisseth, and with more then fatherly tenderness doth so temper, qualifie, and correct the speech he useth toward them, that a man cannot easily discern, whether they did most abound, the love which he bare to their godly affection, or the grief which the danger of their opinion bred him. Their opinion was dangerous; was not theirs also, who thought the Kingdom of Christ should be earthly? was not theirs, which thought the Gospel onely should be preached to the Jews? What more opposite to Prophetical Doctrine, concerning the coming of Christ, then the one? concerning the Catholick Church, then the other? Yet they which had these fantasies, even when they had them, were not the worst men in the world. The Heresie of *Free-will* was a millstone about the *Palagians* neck: shall we therefore give sentence of damnation evitable against all those Fathers in the Greek Church, which being mis-perswaded, dyed in the error of *Free-will*? Of these *Galatians* therefore, which first were justified, and then deceived, as I can see no cause, why as many as dyed before admonition, might not by mercy be received, even in error; so I make no doubt, but as many as lived till they were admonished, found the mercy of God effectual in converting them from their (a) error, lest any one that is Christs should perish. Of this I take it, there is no controversy, onely against the salvation of them that dyed, though before admonition, yet in error, it is objected, that their opinion was a very plain direct denial of the foundation. If *Paul* and *Barnabas* had been so perswaded, they would haply have used the terms otherwise, speaking of the Masters themselves; who did first set that error abroad (b) certain of the Sects of the Pharisees which believed. What difference was there between these Pharisees, and other Pharisees, from whom by a special description they are distinguished, but this? These which came to *Antioch*, teaching the necessity of Circumcision, were Christians; the other, enemies of Christianity. Why then should these be required so distinctly Believers, if they did directly deny the foundation of our belief; besides which, there was no other thing, that made the rest to be no believers? We need go no farther then *S. Paul*'s very reasoning against them, for proof of this matter; seeing you know God, or rather are known of God, how turn you again to impotent rudiments? (c) The Law engendreth servants, her children are in bondage: (d) They which are gotten by the Gospel, are free. (e) Brethren, we are not children of the servant, but of the free woman, and will ye yet be under the Law? That they thought it unto salvation necessary, for the Church of Christ, to (f) observe days, and months, and times, and years, to keep the Ceremonies and Sacraments of the Law, this was their error. Yet he which condemneth their error, confesseth, that notwithstanding they knew God, and were known of him; he taketh not the honour from them to be termed Sons begotten of the immortal Seed of the Gospel. Let the heaviest words they are taught what the truth is, and plainly taught. (b) Acts 15. 1. (c) Gal. 4. 14. 35 (d) Ver. 22 (e) Ver. 31. (f) Ver. 11.

• Howsoever men be changed (or changed) God they may be, even the best amongst men; they that have received, as it seemeth, some of the *Galatians* which fell into error, had received the gifts and graces of God which are called, *agape*, such as faith, hope and charity are, which God doth never take away from him, to whom they are given, as if it repeated him to have given them; it might be so far changed by error, as that the very root of faith should be quite extinguished in them, & so their salvation utterly lost: it would shake the hearts of the strongest and stoutest of us all. See the courtesy in *S. Paul*'s observations upon the harmony of confessions.



which he useth, be weighed, consider the drift of those dreadful conclusions: *If ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing: As many are justified by the Law, are fallen from Grace?* It had been to no purpose in the world to urge them, had not the Apostle been perswaded, that at the hearing of such sequels; *Not taught by Christ, a deflection from Grace*, their hearts would tremble and quake within them: And why? because that they knew, that in Christ, and in Grace, their Salvation lay, which is a plain direct acknowledgement of the foundation: *Left I should beguile you to hold that which no one learned or godly hath done*, let these words be considered, which import as much as I affirm: Surely those brethren, which in *S. Paul's* time, thought that God did lay a necessity upon them to make choice of days and meats, spake as they believed, and could not but in words condemn the liberty, which they supposed to be brought in against the Authority of Divine Scripture. Others, who if it had been needless for *S. Paul* to admonish them, not to condemn such as eat without scrupulosity, whatsoever was set before them: This error, if you weigh what it is of itself, did at once overthrow all Scriptures, whereby we are taught salvation by faith in Christ; all that ever the Prophets did foretell, all that ever the Apostles did preach of Christ, it drew with it the denial of Christ utterly: Inasmuch, that *S. Paul* complaineth, that his labour was lost upon the *Galatians*, unto whom this error was obtruded, affirming that Christ, if so be they were circumcised, should not profit them any thing at all: Yet so far was *S. Paul* from striking their names out of Christ's book, that he commandeth others to entertain them, to accept with singular humanity, to use them like brethren; he knew mans imbecility, he had a feeling of our blindness which are mortal men, how great it is, and being sure that they are the Sons of God whosoever be endued with his fear, would not have them counted enemies of that whereunto they could not as yet frame themselves to be friends, but did ever upon a very Religious affection, to the Truth, willingly reject the truth. They acknowledged Christ to be their only and perfect Saviour, but saw not how repugnant their believing, the necessity of Mosaicall Ceremonies was to their faith in Jesus Christ. Hereupon a reply is made, that if they had not directly denied the foundation, they might have been saved; but saved they could not be, therefore their opinion was not truly by consent, but directly a denial of the foundation. When the question was about the possibility of their salvation, their denying of the foundation was brought to prove, that they could not be saved: now that the question is about their denial of the foundation, the impossibility of their salvation, is alledged to prove, they denied the foundation: Is there nothing which excludeth men from salvation, but onely the foundation of faith denied? I should have thought, that besides this, many other things are death unto as many as understanding that to cleave thereunto, was to fall from Christ, did notwithstanding cleave unto them. But of this enough. Wherefore I come to the last question, *Whether that the Doctrine of the Church of Rome, concerning the necessity of works unto salvation, be a direct denial of our faith.*

27. I seek not to obtrude unto you any private opinion of mine own; the best learned in our profession are of this judgement, that all the corruptions of the Church of Rome, do not prove her to deny the foundation directly; if they did, they should grant her simply to be no Christian Church. But I suppose, saith one, that in the Papacy some Church remaineth; a Church crazed, or, if you will, broken quite in pieces, fallen, misshapen, yet some Church: his reason is this, *Antichrist must sit in the temple of God.* Left any man should think such sentences as these to be true onely in regard of them, whom that Church is supposed to have kept by the special providence of God, as it were, in the secret corners of his bosom, free from infection, and as found in the faith, as we trust by his mercy, we our selves are; I permit it to your wise considerations, whether it be more likely, that as frenzy, though it take away the use of reason, doth notwithstanding prove them reasonable creatures which have it, because none can be frantick but they: So Antichristianity being the bane and plain overthrow of Christianity, may nevertheless argue, the Church where Antichrist sitteth, to be Christian. Neither have I ever hitherto heard or read any one word alledged of force to warrant, that God doth otherwise, then so as in the two next questions before hath been declared, binde himself to keep his Elect from worshipping the Beast, and from receiving his mark in their foreheads: but

but he hath preserved, and will preserve them from receiving any deadly wound at the hands of the Man of Sin, whose deceit hath prevailed over none unto death, but onely unto such as never loved the truth, such as took pleasure in unrighteousness: They in all ages, whose hearts have delighted in the principal truth, and whose souls have thirsted after righteousness, if they received the mark of Error, the mercy of God, even erring, and dangerously erring, might save them; if they received the mark of Heresie, the same mercy did, I doubt not, convert them. How far Romish Heresies may prevail over Gods Elect, how many God hath kept falling into them, how many have been converted from them, is not the question now in hand: for if Heaven had not received any one of that coat for these thousand years, it may still be true, that the Doctrine which this day they do profess, doth not directly deny the foundation, and so prove them simply to be no Christian Church. One I have alledged, whose words, in my ears, sound that way: shall I adde \* another, whose speech is plain? I deny her not the name of a Church, saith another, *more, do no more then to a man the name of a man, as long as he liveth, what sickness soever he hath.* His Reason is this, Salvation in Jesus Christ, which is the mark which joyneth the head with the body, Jesus Christ with the Church is so cut off by many merits, by the merits of Saints, by the Popes Pardons, and such other wickednesses, that the life of the Church holdeth by a very thread, yet still the life of the Church holdeth. \* A third hath these words, *I acknowledge the Church of Rome, even at this present day, for a Church of de Relig.* Christ, such a Church as Israel did Jeroboam, yet a Church. His Reason is this, Every man seeth, except he willingly hoodwink himself, that at all ways, so now, the Church of Rome holdeth firmly and stedfastly the Doctrine of truth concerning Christ, and baptizeth in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost; confesseth and avoucheth Christ for the onely Redeemer of the World, and the Judge that shall sit upon quick and dead, receiving true believers into endless joy, faithles and godles men being cast with Satan and his Angels into flames unquenchable.

28. I may, and will, rein the question shorter then they do. Let the Pope take down his top, and captivate no more mens souls by his Papal jurisdiction; let him no longer count himself Lord Paramount over the Princes of the World, no longer hold Kings as his servants *paravails*; let his stately Senate submit their necks to the yoke of Christ, and cease to die their garments like *Edem*, in blood; let them from the highest to the lowest, hate and forsake their Idolatry, abjure all their Errours and Heresies, wherewith they have any way perverted the truth; let them strip their Churches, till they leave no polluted rag, but onely this one about her, *By Christ alone, without works, we cannot be saved*: It is enough for me, if I shew, that the holding of this one thing, doth not prove the foundation of faith directly denied in the Church of Rome.

29. Works are an addition: Be it so, what then? the foundation is not subverted by every kinde of addition: Simply to adde unto those fundamental words, is not to mingle Wine with Water, Heaven and Earth, things polluted with the sanctified blood of Christ: Of which crime indict them, which attribute those operations in whole or in part to any creature, which in the work of our salvation wholly are peculiar unto Christ, and if I open my mouth to speak in their defence, if I hold my peace and plead not against them as long as breath is within my body, let me be guilty of all the dishonor that ever hath been done to the Son of God. But the more dreadful a thing it is to deny salvation by Christ alone; the more slow and fearful I am, except it be too manifest, to lay a thing so grievous to any mans charge. Let us beware, lest if we make too many ways of denying Christ, we scarce leave any way for our selves truly and soundly to confess him. Salvation onely by Christ is the true foundation, wherupon indeed Christianity standeth. But what if I say you cannot be saved onely by Christ, without this addition, Christ believed in heart, confessed with mouth, obeyed in life and conversation? Because I adde, do I therefore deny that which I did directly affirm? There may be an additament of explication, which overthroweth not, but proveth and concludeth the proposition, wherunto it is annexed. He which saith, *Peter* was a chief Apostle, doth prove that *Peter* was an Apostle: He which saith, Our Salvation is of the Lord, \* through sanctification of the Spirit, and Faith of the truth, proveth that our salvation is of the Lord. But if that which is added be such a privation as taketh away the very essence of that wherunto it is added,

Rom. 11, 6.

\* I deny not  
but that the  
Church of  
Rome requi-  
reth some  
kind of works  
which she  
ought not to  
acquire at  
mens hands.  
But our ques-  
tion is general  
about the ad-  
ding of good  
works, not  
whether such  
or such works  
be good. In  
this compar-  
son it is enough to touch so much of the matter in question between St. Paul and the Galatians, as inferreth these con-  
clusions. *Ye are fallen from grace, if any profit you nothing*: which conclusions will follow Circumcision and the Law Ceremonial, if any be required as things necessary to salvation. This only was all dged against me: and  
need I touch more than say. *Mat. 5. 20. b Luke 11. 39. c Mat. 5. 12.*

added, then by the sequel it overthroweth. He which saith *Judas* is a dead man, though in word he granteth *Judas* to be a man, yet in effect he prayeth him by that very speech no man, because death depriveth him of being. In like sort, he that should say, our election is of grace for our works sake, should grant in sound of words, but indeed by consequent deny that our election is of Grace; for the Grace which electeth us, is no grace, if it elect us for our works sake.

30. Now whereas the Church of Rome addeth works, we must note further, that the adding of \* Works is not like the adding of Circumcision unto Christ. Christ came not to abrogate and put away good works: he did, to change Circumcision; for we see that in place thereof, he hath substituted holy Baptism. To say, ye cannot be saved by Christ except ye be circumcised, is to adde a thing excluded, a thing not only not necessary to be kept, but necessary not to be kept by them that will be saved. On the other side, to say ye cannot be saved by Christ without works, is to adde things, not only not excluded, but commanded, as being in their place, and in their kinde necessary, and therefore subordinated unto Christ, by Christ himself, by whom the web of salvation is spun: *a Except your righteousness exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall not enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.* They were rigorous exacter of things not utterly to be neglected, and left undone, washing and tything, &c. As they were in these, so must we be in judgement and the love of God. Christ in works ceremonial, giveth more liberty, in a moral much less, then they did. Works of righteousness therefore are added in the one proposition; as in the other, Circumcision is.

31. But we say, our salvation is by Christ alone, therefore howsoever, or whatsoever we adde unto Christ in the matter of salvation, we overthrow Christ. Our case were very hard, if this argument so universally meant as it is proposed, were sound and good. We our selves do not teach Christ alone, excluding our own faith, unto justification; Christ alone, excluding our own works, unto sanctification; Christ alone excluding the one or the other unnecessary unto Salvation. It is a childish cavil wherewith in the matter of justification, our Adversaries do so greatly please themselves, exclaiming, that we tread all Christian virtues under our feet, and require nothing in Christians but faith, because we teach that faith alone justifieth: whereas by this speech we never meant to exclude either Hope or Charity from being always joyned as inseparable Mates with Faith in the man that is justified; or works from being added as necessary duties required at the hands of every justified man: But to shew that Faith is the only hand which putteth on Christ unto justification; and Christ the only garment, which being so put on, covereth the shame of our defiled natures, hideth the imperfection of our works, preserveth us blameless in the sight of God, before whom otherwise, the weakness of our faith were cause sufficient to make us culpable, yea, to shut us from the Kingdom of Heaven, where nothing that is not absolute can enter. That our dealing with them be not as childish as theirs with us: when we hear of Salvation by Christ alone, considering that [*alone*] as an exclusive particle, we are to note what it doth exclude, and where. If I say, *Such a Judge only ought to determine such a case*, all things incident to the determination thereof, besides the person of the Judge, as Laws, Depositions, Evidences, &c. are not hereby excluded; persons are not excluded from witnessing herein, or assisting, but only from determining and giving sentence. How then is our salvation wrought by Christ alone: Is it our meaning, that nothing is requisite to mans salvation but Christ to save, and he to be saved quietly without any more ado? No, we acknowledge no such foundation. As we have received, so we teach, that besides the bare and naked work, wherein Christ without any other Associate, finished all the parts of our Redemption, and purchased salvation himself alone; for conveyance of this eminent blessing unto us, many things are of necessity required, as to be known and chosen of God before the foundation of the World; in the World to be called, justified, sanctified; after we have left the World, to be received unto glory; Christ in every of these hath somewhat which he worketh alone.

Through



Through him, according to the Eternal purpose of God, before the foundation of the World, Born, Crucified, Buried, Raised, &c. we were in a gracious acceptation known unto God, long before we were seen of men: God knew us, loved us, was kinde to us in Jesus Christ, in him we were elected to be heirs of life. Thus far God through Christ hath wrought in such sort alone, that our selves are meer Patients, working no more then dead and senseless Matter, Wood, or Stone, or Iron doth in the Artificers hands; no more then Clay, when the Potter appointeth it to be framed for an honourable use; nay, not so much for the matter whereupon the Craftsman worketh, he chuseth being moved by the fitness which is in it to serve his turn; in us no such thing. Touching the rest, which is laid for the foundation of our Faith, importeth farther, That \* by him we are called, that we have a Redemption, b Remission of sin through his blood, Health by his d stripes, Justice by him; that e he doth sanctifie his Church, and make it glorious to himself, that f entrance into joy shall be given us by him; yea, all things by him alone. Howbeit, not so by him alone, as if / in us to our g Vocation, the hearing of the Gospel; to our Justification, Faith; to our Sanctification, the fruits of the Spirit; to our entrance into rest, perseverance in Hope, in Faith, in Holiness, were not necessary.

Eph. 1.6, 7.  
Gal. 3.3.  
1 Pet. 2.9.  
and 5.1.  
b Ephel. 1.7.  
e 1 Thes. 2.12.  
d Ephel. 2.26.  
e Mat. 1.23.  
f Gal. 2.16.  
g 1 Thes. 2.14.  
h 1 Thes. 2.15.

32. Then what is the fault of the Church of Rome? Not that she requireth works at their hands which will be saved: but that she attributeth unto Works a power of satisfying God for sin; yea, a vertue to merite both grace here, and in heaven glory. That this overthroweth the foundation of faith, I grant willingly; that it is a direct denial thereof, I utterly deny: what it is to hold, and what directly to deny the foundation of faith, I have already opened. Apply it particularly to this cause, and there needs no more ado. The thing which is handled, if the form under which it is handled be added thereunto, it sheweth the foundation of any Doctrine whatsoever. Christ is the Matter whereof the Doctrine of the Gospel treateth; and it treateth of Christ as of a Saviour. Salvation therefore by Christ is the foundation of Christianity: as for works, they are a thing subordinate, no otherwise then because our Sanctification cannot be accomplished without them: The Doctrine concerning them is a thing builded upon the foundation; therefore the Doctrine which addeth unto them the power of satisfying or of meriting, addeth unto a thing sub-ordinated, builded upon the foundation, not to the very foundation it self; yet is the foundation by this addition consequently overthrown, forasmuch as out of this addition it may be negatively concluded, He which maketh any work good and acceptable in the sight of God, to proceed from the natural freedom of our will; he which giveth unto any good works of ours, the force of satisfying the wrath of God for sin, the power of meriting either earthly or heavenly rewards; he which holdeth works going before our Vocation, in congruity to merite our Vocation; works following our first, to merite our second Iustificacion, and by condignity our last reward in the Kingdom of Heaven, pulleth up the Doctrine of Faith by the roots; for out of every of these the plain direct denial thereof may be necessarily concluded. Not this onely, but what other Heresie is there, that doth not raze the very foundation of faith by consequent? Howbeit, we make a difference of Heresies, accounting them in the next degree to Infidelity, which directly deny any one thing to be, which is expressly acknowledged in the Articles of our Belief; for out of any one Article so denied, the denial of the very foundation it self is straightway inferred. As for example, if a man should say, *There is no Catholick Church*, it followeth immediately thereupon, that this *Jesus* whom we call the Saviour, is not the Saviour of the World; because all the Prophets bear witness, that the true *Messias* should *shew light unto the Gentiles*; that is to say, gather such a Church as is Catholick, not restrained any longer unto one circumcised Nation. In the second rank we place them, out of whose Positions, the denial of any the fore-said Articles may be with like facility concluded: such as are they which have denied with *Helian*, or with *Marcion*, his Humanity; an example whereof may be that of *Cassianus*, defending the Incarnation of the Son of God, against *Nestorius* Bishop of *Antioch*, which held, That the Virgin, when she brought forth Christ, did not bring forth the Son of God, but a sole and meer man: out of which Heresie, the denial of the Articles of the Christian faith he deduced thus, *If thou dost deny our Lord Jesus Christ, in denying the Son, thou canst not choose but deny the Father; for according to the voyce of the Father himself, He that hath not the Son, hath not the Father.* Wherefore denying

him which is begotten, thou deniest him which doth beget. Again, denying the Son of God to have been born in the flesh, how canst thou believe him to have suffered? believing not his Passion, what remaineth, but that thou deny his Resurrection? For we believe him not raised, except we first believe him dead: Neither can the reason of his rising from the dead stand, without the faith of his death going before. The denial of his death and Passion, inferreth the denial of his Rising from the death. Whereupon it followeth that thou also deny his Ascension into Heaven. The Apostle affirmeth, That he which ascended, did first descend; so that as much as lieth in thee, our Lord Jesus Christ hath neither risen from the death, nor is ascended into Heaven, nor sitteth at the right hand of God the Father, neither shall he come at the day of the final account which is looked for, nor shall judge the quick and the dead. And darest thou yet set foot in the Church? Canst thou think thyself a Bishop, when thou hast denied all those things whereby thou dost obtain a Bishoply Calling? Nestorius confessed all the Articles of the Creed, but his opinion did imply the denial of every part of his Confession. Heresies there are of the third sort, such as the Church of Rome maintaineth, which be removed by a greater distance from the foundation, although indeed they overthrow it. Yet because of that weakness, which the Philosopher noteth in mens capacities, when he saith, That the common sort cannot see things which follow in reason, when they follow, as it were, afar off by many deductions; therefore the repugnancy of such Heresie and the foundation, is not so quickly, or so easily found, but that an Heretick of this, sooner then of the former kinde, may directly grant, and consequently nevertheless deny the foundation of Faith.

33. If reason be suspected, tryal will shew that the Church of Rome doth no otherwise, by teaching the Doctrine she doth teach concerning good works. Offer them the very fundamental words, and what man is there that will refuse to subscribe unto them? Can they directly grant, and directly deny one and the very self same thing? Our own proceedings in disputing against their works satisfactory and meritorious, do shew not onely that they hold, but that we acknowledge them to hold the foundation, notwithstanding their opinion. For are not these our Arguments against them? Christ alone hath satisfied and appeased his Fathers wrath: Christ hath merited salvation alone. We should do fondly to use such disputes, neither could we think to prevail by them, if that whereupon we ground, were a thing which we know they do not hold, which we are assured they will not grant. Their very answers to all such reasons as are in this Controversie brought against them, will not permit us to doubt, whether they hold the foundation or no. Can any man that hath read their books concerning this matter, be ignorant how they draw all their answers unto these heads? That the remission of all our sins, the pardon of all whatsoever punishments thereby deserved, the rewards which God hath laid up in Heaven, are by the blood of our Lord Jesus Christ purchased, and obtained sufficiently for all men: but for no man effectually, for his benefit in particular, except the blood of Christ be applied particularly to him, by such means as God hath appointed that to work by. That those means of themselves, being but dead things, onely the blood of Christ is that which putteth life, force, and efficacy in them to work, and to be available, each in his kinde, to our salvation. Finally, that grace being purchased for us by the blood of Christ, and freely without any merit or desert at the first bestowed upon us, the good things which we do, after grace received, be thereby made satisfactory and meritorious. Some of their sentences to this effect, I must alledge for mine own warrant. If we desire to hear foreign judgements, we finde in one this Confession, He that could reckon how many the vertues and merits of our Saviour Jesus Christ have been, might likewise understand how many the benefits have been that are to come to us by him, forasmuch as men are made partakers of them all by means of his Passion: by him is given unto us remission of our sins, grace, glory, liberty, praise, salvation, redemption, justification, justice, satisfaction, sacraments, merits, and all other things which we had, and were behoveful for our salvation. In another we have these oppositions, and answers made unto them. All grace is given by Christ Jesus: True, but not except Christ Jesus be applied. He is the propitiation for our sin; by his stripes we are healed, he hath offered himself up for us: all this is true, but apply it: we put all satisfaction in the blood of Jesus Christ; but we hold that the means which Christ hath appointed for us in the case to apply it, are our penal works. Our Countrey men in Rhemes make the like answer, that they seek salvation no other way then by the blood of Christ; and that humbly they do use Prayers, Fastings, Alms, Faith, Charity, Sacrifice, Sacraments, Priests, onely as

the

Iuris of Gra.  
nat. Me. ut cap.  
12. 3.

Paulus ad Ro.  
11.

Annot. in  
1. Ioh. 1.

the means appointed by Christ, to apply the benefit of his holy blood unto them, touching our good works, that in their own natures they are not meritorious, nor answerable to the joys of Heaven; it cometh by the grace of Christ, and not of the work it self, that we have by well-doing a right to Heaven, and deserve it worthily. If any man think that I seek to varnish their opinions, to set the better foot of a lame cause foremost; let him know, that since I began thoroughly to understand their meaning, I have found their halting greater then perhaps it seemeth to them which know not the deepness of Satan, as the blessed Divine speaketh. For although this be proof sufficient, that they do not directly deny the foundation of Faith; yet if there were no other leaven in the lump of their Doctrine but this, this were sufficient to prove, that their Doctrine is not agreeable to the foundation of Christian Faith. The Pelagians being over-great friends unto Nature, made themselves enemies unto Grace, for all their confessing, that men have their souls, and all the faculties thereof, their wills, and all the ability of their wills from God. And is not the Church of Rome still an adversary unto Christs Merits, because of her acknowledging, that we have received the power of meriting by the blood of Christ? Sir Thomas More setteth down the odds between us and the Church of Rome in the matter of works, thus, *Lik as we grant them, That no good work of man is rewardable in heaven of his own nature, but through the meer goodness of God, that lifts to set so high a price upon so poor a thing; and that this price God setteth through Christs Passion, and for that also they be his own works with us; for good works in God-ward worketh no man, without Gods work in him; and as we grant them also, that no man may be proud of his works, for his imperfect working, and for that in all that man may do, he can do Gods no good, but is a servant unprofitable, and doth but his bare duty: as we, I say, grant unto them these things: so shall we thing or twain do they grant us again. That men are bound to work good works, if they have time and power; and that whose worketh in true faith most, shall be most rewarded: but then sit they therein, That all his rewards shall be given him, for his faith alone, and nothing for his works at all, because his faith is the thing, they say, that setteth him to work well.* I see by this of Sir Thomas More, how easie it is for men of the greatest capacity, to mistake things written or spoken, as well on the one side as on the other. Their Doctrine, as he thought, maketh the work of man rewardable in the world to come, through the goodness of God, whom it pleased to set so high a price upon so poor a thing: and ours, that a man doth receive that eternal and high reward, not for his works, but for his faiths sake, by which he worketh; whereas in truth our doctrine is no other then that we have learned at the feet of Christ himself, That God doth justify the believing man, yet not for the worthiness of him, but for the worthiness of him which is believed; God rewardeth abundance every one which worketh, yet not for any meritorious dignity which is, or can be in the work, but through his meer mercy by whose commandment he worketh. Contrariwise, their Doctrine is, That as pure water of it self hath no flavour, but if it pass through a sweet pipe, it taketh a pleasant smell of the pipe through which it passeth: so, although before grace received, our works do neither satisfy nor merit; yet after, they do both the one and the other. Every vertuous action hath then power in such to satisfy; that if we our selves commit no mortal sin, no hainous crime, whereupon to spend this treasure of satisfaction in our own behalf, it turneth to the benefit of other mens release, on whom it shall please the Steward of the house of God to bestow it; so that we may satisfy for our selves and others, but merit only for our selves. In meriting, our actions do work with two hands; with one they get their morning stipend, the increase of grace; with the other their evening hire, the Everlasting Crown of glory. Indeed they teach, that our good works do not these things as they come from us, but as they come from grace in us; which grace in us is another thing in their Divinity, then is the meer goodness of Gods mercy to wards us in Christ Jesus.

34. If it were not a long deluded Spirit which hath possession of their hearts; were it possible but that they should see how plainly they do herein gain-say the very ground of Apostolick faith? Is this that salvation by grace, whereof so plentiful mention is made in the Scriptures of God? Was this their meaning, which first taught the world to look for salvation only by Christ? By grace, the Apostle saith; and by grace in such sort as a gift: a thing that cometh not of our selves, nor of our works, lest any man should boast,

In his Book of  
Consolation.

Works of Supererogation.



boast, and say, *I have wrought out my own salvation*. By grace they confess; but by grace in such sort, that as many as wear the Diadem of bliss, they were nothing but what they have won. The Apostle, as if he had foreseen how the Church of Rome would abuse the world in time, by ambiguous terms, to declare in what sense the name of *Grace* must be taken, when we make it the cause of our salvation, saith, *He saved us according to his mercy*: which mercy, although it exclude not the washing of our new birth, the renewing of our hearts by the Holy Ghost, the means, the virtues, the duties which God requireth of our hands which shall be saved; yet it is so repugnant unto merits, that to say we are saved for the worthiness of any thing which is ours, is to deny we are saved by grace. Grace bestoweth freely; and therefore justly requireth the glory of that which is bestowed. We deny the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, we abuse, disannul and annihilate the benefit of his bitter passion, if we rest in these proud imaginations, that life is deservedly ours, that we merit it, and that we are worthy of it.

35. Howbeit, considering how many vertuous and just men, how many Saints, how many Martyrs, how many of the ancient Fathers of the Church, have had their sundry perilous opinions: and amongst sundry of their opinions this, that they hoped to make God some part of amends for their sins, by the voluntary punishments which they laid upon themselves, because by a consequent it may follow hereupon, that they were injurious unto Christ: shall we therefore make such deadly Epitaphs, and set them upon their graves, *They denied the foundation of faith directly, they are damned, there is no salvation for them*? S. Austin saith of himself, *Errare possum, haereticus esse nolo*. And except we put a difference between them that erre, and them that obstinately persist in error, how is it possible that ever any man should hope to be saved? Surely in this case, I have no respect of any person alive or dead. Give me a man, of what estate or condition soever, yea, a Cardinal or a Pope, whom in the extreme point of his life affliction hath made to know himself, whose heart God hath touched with true sorrow for all his sins, and filled with love towards the Gospel of Christ, whose eyes are opened to see the Truth, and his mouth to renounce all heresie and error, any wise opposite thereunto: This one opinion of Merits excepted, he thinketh God will require at his hands, and because he wanteth, therefore trembleth and is discouraged, it may be I am forgetful, unskilful, not furnished with things new and old, as a wise and learned Scribe should be, nor able to alledge that, whereunto if it were alledged, he doth bear a minde most willingly to yield, and so to be recalled as well from this, as from other errors. And shall I think because of this one error, that such a man toucheth not so much as the hem of Christs garment? If he do, wherefore should not I have hope, that vertue may proceed from Christ to save him? Because his error doth by consequent overthrow his faith, shall I therefore call him *an* ~~one~~ *one* that hath utterly cast off Christ? one that holdeth not so much as by a slender thred? No, I will not be afraid to say unto a Pope or Cardinal in this plight. Be of good comfort, we have to do with a merciful God, ready to make the best of a little which we hold well, and not with a captious Sophister, which gathereth the worst out of every thing wherein we erre. Is there any Reason that I should be suspected, or you offended for this speech? \* Is it a dangerous thing to imagine that such men may finde mercy? The hour may come, when we shall think it a blessed thing to hear, that if our sins were the sins of the Popes and Cardinals, the bowels of the mercy of God are larger. I do not propose unto you a Pope with the neck of an Emperor under his feet; a Cardinal, riding his horse to the bridle in the blood of Saints: but a Pope or a Cardinal sorrowful, penitent, disrobed, stript, not only of usurped power, but also delivered and recalled from error and Antichrist, converted and lying prostrate at the foot of Christ: and shall I think that Christ will spurn at him? and shall I cross and gain-say the merciful promises of God, generally made unto penitent sinners, by opposing the name of a Pope or a Cardinal? What difference is there in the world between a Pope and a Cardinal, and John Stile in this case? If we think it impossible for them, after they be once come within that rank, to be afterwards touched with any such remorse, let that be granted. The Apostle saith, *If I, or an Angel from heaven preach heresie, as that a Pope or Cardinal should be brought so far forth to acknowledge the truth: yet if a Pope or Cardinal should, what finde we in their persons why they might not be saved?* It is not the persons you will say, but the error, wherein

† Let all affection be laid aside; i.e. the matter is differently be considered.

wherein I suppose them to dye, which excluded them from the hope of mercy: the opinion of merits doth take away all possibility of salvation from them. What if they hold it onely as an error? Although they hold the truth truly and sincerely in all other parts of Christian faith? Although they have in some measure all the virtues and graces of the Spirit, all other tokens of Gods elect children in them? Although they be far from having any proud presumptuous opinion, that they shall be saved by the worthiness of their deeds? Although the onely thing which troubleth and molesteth them, be but a little too much dejection, somewhat too great a fear, rising from a verrous conceit that God will require a worthiness in them, which they are grieved to finde wanting in themselves? Although they be not obstinate in this persuasion? Although they be willing, and would be glad to forsake it, if any one reason were brought sufficient to disprove it? Although the onely let, why they do not forsake it ere they dye, be the ignorance of the means, by which it might be disproved? Although the cause why the ignorance in this point is not removed, be the want of knowledge in such as should be able, and are not, to remove it? Let me dye, if ever it be proved, that simply an error doth exclude a Pope or a Cardinal in such a case, utterly from hope of life. Surely, I must confess unto you, if it be an error that God may be merciful to save men, even when they erre, my greatest comfort is my error; were it not for the love I bear unto this error, I would never wish to speak, nor to live.

36. Wherefore to resume that mother sentence, whereof I little thought that so much trouble would have grown, *I doubt not but that God was merciful to save thousands of our Fathers, living in Popish superstitions, inasmuch as they sinned ignorantly.* Alas! what bloody matter is there contained in this sentence, that it should be an occasion of so many hard censures? Did I say, that thousands of our Fathers might be saved? I have shewed which way it cannot be denied, Did I say, *I doubt not but they were saved?* I see no impiety in this persuasion, though I had no reason for it. Did I say, *Their ignorance did make me hope they did finde mercy, and so were saved?* What hindreth salvation but sin? Sins are not equal; and ignorance, though it doth not make sin, to be sin, yet seeing it did make their sin the less, why should it not make our hope concerning their life, the greater? We pity the most, and doubt not but God hath most compassion over them that sin for want of understanding. As much is confessed by sundry others, almost in the self same words which I have used. It is but onely my evil hap that the same sentences which favour verity in other mens books, should seem to bolster Heretic, when they are once by me recited. If I be deceived in this point, not they, but the blessed Apostle hath deceived me. What I said of others, the same he said of himself, *I obtained mercy, for I did ignorantly.* Construe his words, and you cannot misconstrue mine. I spake no otherwise; I meant no otherwise then he did.

37. Thus have I brought the question concerning our Fathers, at the length, unto an end. Of whose estate, upon so fit an occasion as was offered me, handling the weighty causes of separation between the Church of Rome and us, and weak motives which ate commonly brought to retain men in that Society; amongst which motives, the examples of our Fathers deceased is one; although I saw it convenient to utter the sentence which I did, to the end that all men might thereby understand, how untrue we are said to condemn as many as have been before us otherwise persuaded then we our selves are; yet more then that once sentencc, I did not think it expedient to utter, judging it a great deal meet for us to have regard to our own estate, then to sift over-curiously what is become of other men. And fearing, lest that such questions as these, if voluntarily they should be too far waded into, might seem worthy of that rebuke, which our Saviour thought needful in a case not unlike, *What is this unto thee?* When I was forced, much beside my expectation, to render a reason of my speech, I could not but yield at the call of others, and proceed so far as duty bound me, for the fuller satisfying of mindes. Wherein I have walked, with reverence, so with fear: with reverence, in regard of our Fathers, which lived in former times; not without fear, considering them that are alive.

38. I am not ignorant, how ready men are to feed and sooth up themselves in evil. Shall I, will the man say, that loveth the present world more then he loveth Christ, shall I incur the high displeasure of the mightiest upon Earth? Shall I hazard

hazard my goods, endanger my estate, put my self in jeopardy, rather then to yield to that which so many of my fathers imbraced, and yet found favour in the sight of God? *Curse Meron*, saith the Lord, *curse her Inhabitants; because they helped not the Lord, they helped him not against the mighty*. If I should not onely not help the Lord against the mighty, but help to strengthen them that are mighty, against the Lord; worthily might I fall under the burthen of that Curse, worthy I were to bear my own judgement. But if the Doctrine which I teach, be a flower gathered in the Garden of the Lord; a part of the saving truth of the Gospel; from whence notwithstanding, poysoned creatures do suck venome: I can tell with it were otherwise, and content my self with the lot that hath befallen me, the rather, because it hath not befallen me alone. *S. Paul* taught a truth, and a comfortable truth, when he taught, that the greater our misery is, in respect of our iniquities, the readier is the mercy of God for our release. If we seek unto him, the more we have sinned, the more praise, and glory, and honor unto him that pardoneth our sin. But mark what lewd Collections were made hereupon by some: *Why then am I condemned for a sinner?* And the Apostle (as we are blamed, and as some affirm that we say, *Why do we not evil that good may come of it?*) he was accused to teach that which ill-disposed men did gather by his teaching, though it were clean, not onely besides, but against his meaning. The Apostle addeth, *Their condemnation (which thus do) is just*. I am not hasty to apply sentences of Condemnation. I wish from mine heart their conversion, whosoever are thus perversely affected. For I must needs say, their case is fearful, their estate dangerous, which harden themselves, presuming on the mercy of God towards others. It is true that God is merciful, but let us beware of presumptuous sins. God delivered *Jehonab* from the bottom of the Sea, will you therefore cast your selves headlong from the tops of Rocks; and say in your hearts, God shall deliver us? He pitieth the blinde that would gladly see; but will he pity him that may see, and hardeneth himself in blindness? No, Christ hath spoken too much unto you, to claim the privilege of your Fathers.

39. As for us that have handled this cause concerning the condition of our Fathers, whether it be this thing or any other, which we bring unto you, the counsel is good which the wise man giveth, *Stand thou fast in thy sure understanding, in the way and knowledge of the Lord, and have but one manner of word, and follow the Word of peace and righteousness*. As a loose tooth is a grief to him that eateth: so doth a wavering and unstable word in speech, that tendeth to instruction offend. *Shall a wise man speak words of the wind*, saith *Eliphaz*, light, unconstant, unstable words? Surely, the wisest may speak words of the wind, such is the untoward constitution of our nature, that we do neither so perfectly understand the way and knowledge of the Lord, nor so stedfastly imbrace it when it is understood; nor so graciously utter it, when it is imbraced; nor so peaceably maintain it, when it is uttered; but that the best of us are overtaken sometime through blindness, sometime through hastiness, sometime through impatience, sometime through other passions of the minde, whereunto (God doth know) we are too subject. We must therefore be contented both to pardon others, and to crave that others may pardon us for such things. Let no man, that speaketh as a man, think himself whiles he liveth, always freed from scapes and over-sights in his speech. The things themselves which I have spoken unto you are sound, howsoever they have seemed otherwise unto some: at whose hands I have, in that respect, received injury. I willingly forget it: although indeed, considering the benefit which I have reaped by this necessary speech of truth, I rather incline to that of the Apostle, *They have not injured me at all*. I have cause to wish them as many blessings in the Kingdom of Heaven, as they have forced me to utter words and syllables in this cause; wherein I could not be more sparing of speech then I have been. *It becometh no man*, saith *S. Jerome*, *to be patient in the crime of Heresie*. Patient, as I take it, we should be always, though the crime of Heresie were intended; but silent in a thing of so great consequence I could not, beloved, I durst not be; especially the love that I bear to the truth of Christ Jesus being hereby somewhat called in question. Whereof I beseech them in the meekness of Christ, that have been the first original cause, to consider that a watch-man may cry (*an enemy*) when indeed a friend cometh. In which cause, as I deem such a watch-man more worthy to



to be loved for his care, then mis-liked for his Error: So I have judged it my own part in this, as much as in me lieth, to take away all suspicion of any unfriendly intent or meaning against the Truth, from which, God doth know, my heart is free.

40. Now to you, Beloved, which have heard these things, I will use no other words of admonition, than those which are offered me by *S. James, My Brethren, have not the faith of our glorious Lord Jesus in respect of persons.* Ye are not now to learn, that as of itself it is not hurtful, in neither should it be to any scandalous and offensive in doubtful cases, to hear the different judgements of men. Be it that *Cephas* hath one interpretation, and *Apollas* hath another; that *Paul* is of this minde, that *Barnabas* of that; if this offend you, the fault is yours. Carry peaceable mindes, and you may have comfort by this variety.

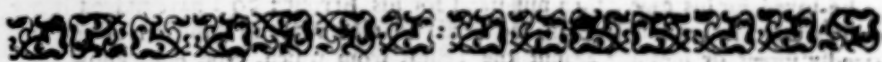
*Now the God of Peace give you peaceable minds, and turn it to your  
—overlasting comfort.*

## ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

... ..

11

1. The first of these is the fact that the  
2. second of these is the fact that the  
3. third of these is the fact that the  
4. fourth of these is the fact that the  
5. fifth of these is the fact that the  
6. sixth of these is the fact that the  
7. seventh of these is the fact that the  
8. eighth of these is the fact that the  
9. ninth of these is the fact that the  
10. tenth of these is the fact that the



A Learned  
**S E R M O N**  
 OF THE  
 Nature of Pride.

HABAK. 2. 4.

*His Minde swelleth, and is not right in him; But the Just by his faith shall live.*



**T**HE nature of man being much more delighted to be led then drawn, doth many times stubbornly resist Authority, when to perswasion it easily yieldeth. Whereupon the wisest Law-makers have endeavoured always, that those Laws might seem most reasonable, which they would have most inviolably kept. A Law simply commanding or forbidding, is but dead in comparison of that which expresseth the reason wherefore it doth the one or the other. And surely, even in the Laws of God, although that he hath given Commandment be in it self a reason sufficient to exact all obedience at the hands of men; yet a forcible inducement it is to obey with greater alacrity and cheerfulness of minde, when we see plainly that nothing is imposed more then we must needs yield unto, except we will be unreasonable. In a word, whatsoever be taught, be it Precept, for direction of our Manners; or Article, for instruction of our faith; or Document any way for information of our mindes, it then taketh root and abideth, when we conceive not onely what God doth speak, but why. Neither is it a small thing, which we derogate as well from the honour of his truth, as from the comfort, joy and delight which we our selves should take by it, when we loosely slide over his speech, as though it were as our own is, commonly vulgar and trivial: Whereas he uttereth nothing but it hath besides the substance of Doctrine delivered, a depth of wisdom, in the very choice and frame of words to deliver it in: The reason whereof being not perceived, but by greater intention of brain then our nice mindes for the most part can well away with, fain we would bring the World, if we might, to think it but a needles curiosity, to rip up any thing further then extemporal readines of wit doth serve to reach unto. Which course, if here we did list to follow, we might tell you, that in the first branch of this sentence, God doth condemn the *Babylonians* pride; and in the second teach, what happiness of state shall grow to the righteous by the constancy of their faith, notwithstanding the troubles which now they suffer; and after certain notes of wholesome instruction hereupon collected, pass over without detaining your mindes in any further removed speculation. But as I take it, there is a difference between the talk that becometh Nurses among Children, and that which men of capacity and judgement do for should receive instruction by.

The minde of the Propheer being erected with that which hath been hitherto spoken, receiveth here for full satisfaction a short abridgement of that which is afterwards more particularly unfolded. Wherefore as the question before disputed of doth concern two sorts of men, the wicked flourishing as the Bay, and the righteous like the withered Grasse; the one full of pride, the other cast down with utter discouragement: so the answer which God doth make for resolution of doubts hereupon arisen, hath reference unto both sorts, and this present sentence containing a brief Abstract thereof,

thereof, comprehendeth summarily as well the fearful estate of iniquity over-exalted, as the hope laid up for righteousness oppressed. In the former branch of which sentence, let us first examine what this rectitude or straitness importeth, which God denieth to be in the minde of the *Babylonian*. All things which God did create, he made them at the first, true, good and right. True, in respect of correspondence unto that pattern of their being, which was eternally drawn in the counsel of Gods fore-knowledge; Good, in regard of the use and benefit which each thing yeldeth unto other; Right, by an apt conformity of all parts with that end which is outwardly proposed for each thing to tend unto. Other things have ends proposed, but have not the faculty to know, judge, and esteeme of them, and therefore as they tend thereunto unwittingly, so likewise in the means whereby they acquire their appointed ends, they are by necessity so held, that they cannot divert from them. The ends why the Heavens do move, the Heavens themselves know not, and their motions they cannot but continue. Onely men in all their actions know what it is which they seek for, neither are they by any such necessity tied naturally unto any certain determinate mean to obtain their end by, but that they may, if they will, forsake it. And therefore in the whole World, no creature but onely man, which hath the last end of his actions proposed as a recompence and reward, whereunto his minde directly bending it self, is termed right or strait, otherwise perverse.

To make this somewhat more plain, we must note, that as they which travel from City to City, enquire ever for the straitest way, because the straitest is that which soonest bringeth them unto their journeys end: So we having here, as the Apostle speaketh, *no abiding City*, but being always in travel towards that place of Joy, Immortality and Rest, cannot but in every of our deeds, words and thoughts, think that to be best, which with most expedition leadeth us thereunto, and is for that very cause termed right. That Sovereign good, which is the Eternal fruition of all good, being our last and chiefest felicity, there is no desperate despiser of God and godliness living which doth not wish for. The difference between right and crooked mindes, is in the means which the one or the other eschew or follow. Certain it is, that all particular things which are naturally desired in the World, as food, raiment, honor, Wealth, pleasure, knowledge, they are subordinated in such wise unto that future good which we look for in the world to come, that even in them there lieth a direct way tending unto this. Otherwise we must think, that God making promises of good things in this life, did seek to pervert men, and to lead them from their right mindes. Where is then the obliquity of the minde of man? his minde is perverse, crooked, and crooked, not when it bendeth itself unto any of these things, but when it bendeth so, that it swarveth either to the right hand or to the left, by excess or defect, from that exact rule whereby humane actions are measured. The rule to measure and judge them by, is the Law of God. For this cause, the Prophet doth make so often and so earnest suit, *O direct me in the way of thy Commandments: As long as I have respect to thy Statutes, I am sure not to tread amiss*. Under the name of the Law, we must comprehend not onely that which God hath written in Tables and leaves, but that which Nature also hath engraven in the hearts of men. Else how shall those Heathen which never had Books, but Heaven and Earth to look upon, be convicted of perverseness? But the Gentiles which had not the Law in Books, had, saith the Apostle, the effect of the Law written in their hearts.

Then seeing that the heart of man is not right exactly, unless it be found in all parts such, that God examining and calling it unto account with all severity of rigour, be not able once to charge it with declining or swarving aside (which absolute perfection when did God ever finde in the sons of meer mortal men?) Doth it not follow that all flesh must of necessity fall down and confess, we are not dust and ashes, but worse, our mindes from the highest to the lowest are not right? If not right, then undoubtedly not capable of that blessedness which we naturally seek, but subject unto that which we most abhor, Anguish, Tribulation, Death, Wo, endless Misery. For whatsoever misseth the way of life, the issue thereof cannot be but perdition. By which reason, all being wrapped up in sin, and made thereby the children of death, the mindes of all men being plainly convicted not to be right; shall we think that God hath induced them with so many excellencies, more not only then any, but then all the Creatures in the World besides, to leave them in such estate, that they had been happier if they had never been? Here cometh necessarily in a new way unto Salvation, so that they while



were in the other perverse, may in this be found strait and righteous. That the way of Nature, this the way of Grace. The end of that way, Salvation merited, presupposing the righteousness of mens works; their righteousness, a natural habilitie to do them; that habilitie the goodness of God which created them in such perfection. But the end of this way, Salvation bestowed upon men as a gift, presupposing not their righteousness, but the forgiveness of their unrighteousness, justification; their justification, not their natural ability to do good, but their hearty sorrow for their not doing, and unfeigned belief in him, for whose sake not doers are accepted, which is their vocation; their vocation, the election of God, taking them out from the number of lost children; their election a Mediator in whom to be elect: this meditation, inexplicable mercy; his mercy their misery, for whom he vouchsafed to make himself a Mediator. The want of exact distinguishing between these two ways, and observing what they have common, what peculiar, hath been the cause of the greatest part of that confusion whereof Christianity at this day laboureth. The lack of diligence in searching, laying down, and inuring mens mindes with those hidden grounds of Reason, whereupon the least particulars in each of these are most firmly and strongly builded, is the onely reason of all those scruples and uncertainties wherewith we are in such sort intangled, that a number despair of ever discerning what is right or wrong in any thing. But we will let this matter rest, wherein to we stepped to search out a way how some mindes may be, and are right truly even in the sight of God, though they be simply in themselves not right.

Howbeit, there is not onely this difference between the just and impious, that the minde of the one is right in the sight of God, because his obliquity is not imputed; the other perverse, because his sin is unrepented of: but even as lines that are drawn with a trembling hand, but yet to the point which they should, are thought ragged and uneven, nevertheless direct in comparison of them which run clean another way; so there is no incongruity in terming them right-minded men, whom though God may charge with many things amiss, yet they are not as those hideous and ugly Monsters, in whom because there is nothing but wilful opposition of minde against God, a more then tolerable deformity is noted in them, by saying, that their mindes are not right. The Angel of the Church of *Thyatira*, unto whom the Son of God, sendeth this greeting, *I know thy works, and thy love, and service, and faith, notwithstanding, I have a few things against thee*, was not as he unto whom *S. Peter*, *Thou hast no fellowship in this business, for thy heart is not right in the sight of God*. So that whereas the orderly disposition of the minde of man should be this, perturbations, and sensual appetites all kept in awe by a moderate and sober will, in all things framed by reason; reason, directed by the Law of God and Nature; this *Babylonian* had his minde, as it were, turned upside down: In him unreasonable cecity and blindness trampled all Laws both of God and Nature under feet; Wilfulness tyrannized over Reason; and brutish Sensuality over Will. An evident token, that his outrage would work his overthrow, and procure his speedy ruine. The Mother whereof was that which the Prophet in these words signifieth, *His minde doth swell*.

Immoderate swelling, a token of very eminent breach, and of inevitable destruction: Pride, a vice which cleaveth so fast unto the hearts of men, that if we were to strip our selves of all faults one by one, we should undoubtedly finde it the very last and hardest to put off. But I am not here to touch the secret itching humour of vanity wherewith men are generally touched. It was a thing more then meanly inordinate, wherewith the *Babylonian* did swell. Which that we may both the better conceive, and the more easily reap profit by the nature of this vice, which setteth the whole World out of course, and hath put so many even of the wisest besides themselves, is first of all to be inquired into. Secondly, the dangers to be discovered, which it draweth inevitably after it, being not cured. And last of all, the ways to cure it.

Whether we look upon the gifts of Nature, or of Grace, or whatsoever is in the World admired as a part of mans excellency, adorning his body, beautifying his minde, or externally any way commending him in the account and opinion of men, there is in every kinde somewhat possible which no man hath, and somewhat had which few men can attain unto. By occasion whereof, there groweth disparagement necessarily; and by occasion of disparagement, Pride through mens ignorance. First therefore, although men be not proud of any thing which is not at least in opinion good, yet every good thing

thing they are not proud of, but onely of that which neither is common unto many, and being desired of all, causeth them which have it, to be honored above therest. Now there is no man so void of brain, as to suppose that Pride consisteth in the bare possession of such things; for then to have Vertue were a Vice, and they should be the happiest men who are most wretched, because they have least of that which they would have. And though in speech we do intimate a kind of vanity to be in them of whom we say, *They are proud men*, and they know it; yet this doth not prove, that every wise man is proud, which doth not think himself to be blockish. What we may have, and know that we have it, without offence; do we then make offensive, when we take joy and delight in having it? What difference between men enriched with all abundance of earthly and heavenly blessings, and Idols gorgeously attired, but this, *the one takes pleasure in that which they have, the other none*? If we may be possesst with beauty, strength, riches, power, knowledge, if we may be privy what we are every way, if glad and joyfull for our own welfare, and in all this remain unchangeable, nevertheless some there are who granting thus much, doubt whether it may stand with humility to accept those testimonies of praise and commendation, those titles, robes, and other honors which the world yieldeth as acknowledgements of some men excellencies above others. For inasmuch as Christ hath said unto those that are his, *The Kings of the Gentiles reign over them, and they that bear rule over them are called princes Lords, so ye also*: The Anabaptist hereupon argueth equality amongst Christians, as if all exercise of Authority were nothing else but Heathenish Pride. Our Lord and Saviour had no such meaning. But his Disciples feeding themselves with a vain imagination for the time, that the Messiah of the world should in *Jerusalem* erect his Throne, and exercise dominion with great pomp and outward stateliness, advanced in honour and terrene power above all the Princes of the Earth, began to think how with their Lord condition, their own would also rise; that having left and forsaken all to follow him, their place about him should not be mean: and because they were many, it troubled them much, which of them should be the greatest man? When salt was made for use by name, that of them one might sit at his right hand, and the other at his left; the rest began to stomach, each taking it grievously, that any should have what all did affect, their Lord and Master to correct this humour, turneth aside their cogitations from these vain and fanciful conceits, giving them plainly to understand that they did but deceive themselves. His coming was not to purchase an earthly, but to bestow an heavenly Kingdom, wherein they (if any) shall be greatest, whom unfeigned Humility maketh in this World lowest, and least amongst others: *Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations, therefore I leave unto you a Kingdom, as my Father hath appointed me, that ye may eat and drink at my Table in my Kingdom, and sit on seats, and judge the twelve Tribes of Israel*. But my Kingdom is no such Kingdom as ye dream of. And therefore these hungry ambitious contentions are seemlier in Heathen in you. Wherefore from Christs intent and purpose nothing further removed, then dislike of distinction in titles and callings annexed for orders sake unto Authority, whether it be Ecclesiastical or Civil. And when we have examined thoroughly what the nature of this vice is, no man knowing it, can be so simple, as not to see an ugly shape thereof apparent many times in rejecting honors offered, more then in the very exacting of them at the hands of men. For as *Judas* his care for the poor was meer covetousness, and that franck-hearted wastefulness spoken of in the Gospel, thrift; so there is no doubt but that going in rag may be Pride, and Thrones be challenged with unfeigned humility.

We must go further therefore, and enter somewhat deeper, before we can come to the Closet wherein this payson lieth. There is in the heart of every proud man, first, an error of understanding; a vain opinion whereby he thinketh his own excellency, and by reason thereof, his worthiness of estimation, regard, and honor to be greater then in truth it is. This maketh him in all his affections accordingly to raise up himself, and by his inward affections his outward acts are fashioned. Which if you list to have exemplified; you may either by calling to minde things spoken of them whom God himself hath in Scripture specially noted with this fault, or by presenting to your secret cogitations that which you daily behold in the odious lives and manners of high-minded men. It were too long to gather together so plentiful an harvest of examples in this kinde as the sacred Scripture affordeth. That which we drink in at our ears, doth not so piercingly enter, as that which the minde doth conceive by sight. Is

there any thing written concerning the Assyrian Monarch in the tenth of *Isaiah*, of his swelling minde, his haughty looks, his great and presumptuous taunts, *By the power of mine own hand I have done all things, and by mine own wisdom I have subdued the World?* Any thing concerning the Canaan of *Sin* in the third of the Prophet *Isaiah*, of their stretched out necks, their immodest eyes, their Pageant-like, stately, and pompous gate? Any thing concerning the practices of *Corah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram*; of their impatience to live in subjection, their mutinies, repining at lawful Authority, their grudging against their Superiours Ecclesiastical and Civil? Any thing concerning Pride in any sort of *Self*, which the present face of the world doth not as in the glass, represent to the view of all mens beholding? So that if Books, both prophane and holy, were all lost, as long as the manners of men retain the state they are in: for him that observeth how that when men have once conceived an over-weening of themselves it maketh them in all their affections to swell, how deadly their hatred, how heavy their displeasure, how unappeasable their indignation and wrath is above other men, in what manner they compose themselves to be as *Heserulites*, without the compass of all such Rules as common sort are measured by; how the Oathes which Religious hearts do tremble at, they affect as principal graces of speech; what felicity they take to see the enormity of their crimes above the reach of Laws and punishments; how much it delighteth them when they are able to appale with the cloudiness of their look; how far they exceed the terms wherewith mans nature should be limited; how high they bear their heads over others; how they brow-beat all men which do not receive their Sentences as Oracles, with marvellous applause and approbation; how they look upon no man, but with an indirect countenance, nor hear any thing saving their own praise, with patience, nor speak without scornfulness and disdain; how they use their servants as if they were beasts, their inferiours as servants, their equals as inferiours, and as for Superiours acknowledge none; how they admire themselves as venerable, puissant, wise, circumspect, provident, every way great, taking all men besides themselves for cyphers, poor, inglorious silly creatures, needless burthens of the earth, off-scourings, nothing: in a word, for him which marketh how irregular and exorbitant they are in all things, it can be no hard thing hereby to gather, that Pride is nothing but an inordinate elation of the minde, proceeding from a false conceit of mens excellency in things honoured, which accordingly frameth also their deeds and behaviour, unless there be cunning to conceal it. For a foul scar may be covered with a fair cloth. And as proud as *Lucifer*, may be in outward appearance lowly.

No man man expecteth Grapes of Thistles; nor from a thing of so bad a nature, can other then suitable fruits be looked for. What harm soever in private families there groweth by disobedience of children, stubbornness of servants, untractableness in them, who although they otherwise may rule, yet should in consideration of the imparity of their Sex be also subject; whatsoever by strife amongst men combined in the fellowship of greater Societies, by tyranny of Potentates, ambition of Nobles, Rebellion of Subjects in Civil States; by Heresies, Schisms, Divisions in the Church; naming Pride, we name the Mother which brought them forth, and the onely Nurse that feedeth them. Give me the hearts of all men humbled, and what is there that can overthrow or disturb the peace of the world? Wherein many things are the cause of much evil, but Pride of all.

To declaim of the swarms of evils issuing out of Pride, is an easie labour. I rather wish that I could exactly prescribe and perswade effectually the remedies, whereby a sore so grievous might be cured, and the means how the pride of swelling minde might be taken down. Whereunto so much we have already gained, that the evidence of the cause, which breedeth it, pointeth directly unto the likeliest and fittest helps to take it away: diseases that come of fulness, emptiness must remove. Pride is not cured, but by abating the error which causeth the minde to swell. Then seeing that they swell by misconceit of their own excellency; for this cause all which tend to the beating down of their pride, whether it be advertisement from men, or from God himself chastisement, it then maketh them cease to be proud, when it causeth them to see their error in over-seeing the thing they were proud of. At this mark, *Job*, in his Apology unto his eloquent friends, aimeth. For perceiving how much they delighted to hear themselves talk, as if they had given their poor afflicted familiar a schooling of marvellous deep and rare instruction, as if they had taught him more then all  
the



the world besides could acquaint him with: His answer was to this effect, Ye swell as though ye had conceived some great matter, but as for that which ye are delivered of, who knoweth it not? Is any man ignorant of these things? At the same mark the blessed Apostle driveth, Ye abound in all things, ye are rich, ye reign, and would to Christ we did reign with you, but boast not. For what have ye, or are ye of your selves? To this mark all those humble confessions are referred, which have been always frequent in the mouths of Saints, truly wading in the tryal of themselves; as that of the Prophet, *We are nothing but sinners, and full of corruption*: our very light is darkness, and our righteousness it self unrighteousness; that of Gregory, *les no man ever put confidence in his own desert*; *Sordet in conspectu Judicii, quod fulget in conspectu operantis*. In the light of that dreadful Judge it is noysome, which in the doers judgement maketh a beautiful shew: Thus of Anselm, *I adore thee, I bless thee, Lord God of heaven, and Redeemer of the world, with all the power, ability and strength of my heart and soul, for thy goodness so unmeasurably extended, not in regard of my merits, whereunto onely torments were due, but of thy meer-unprocured benignity*. If these Fathers should be raised again from the dust, and have the books laid open before them wherein such sentences are found as this, *Work no other then the value, desert price, and worth of the joys, of the Kingdom of Heaven*; *Heaven, in relation to our works, as the very stipend, which the hired Labourer covenanteth to have of him whose works he doth, as a thing equally and justly answering unto the time and weight of his travels, rather then to a voluntary or bountiful gift*. If, I say, those Reverend fore-rehearsed Fathers, whose books are so full of sentences, witnessing their Christian humility, should be raised from the dead, and behold with their eyes such things written; would they not plainly pronounce of the Authors of such writ, that they were fuller of Lucifer then of Christ, that they were proud-hearted men, and carried more swelling mindes then sincerely and feelingly known Christianity can tolerate?

Annor. them, in 1 Cor. 3.

But as unruly children, with whom wholesome admonition prevaileth little, are notwithstanding brought to fear that ever after, which they have once well smarted for: so the minde which falleth not with instruction, yet under the rod of Divine chastisement ceaseth to swell. If therefore the Prophet David, instructed by good experience, have acknowledged, Lord, *I was even at the point of clean forgetting my self, and so straying from my right minde, but thy rod hath been my reformer*; it hath been good for me, even as much as my soul is worth, that I have been with sorrow troubled: If the blessed Apostle did need the corollive of sharp and bitter strokes, lest his heart shoul swell with too great abundance of heavenly Revelations, surely, upon us whatsoever God in this world doth, or shall inflict, it cannot seem more then our pride doth exact, not onely by way of revenge, but of remedy. So hard it is to cure a sore of such quality as pride is, inasmuch as that which rooteth out other vices, causeth this, and (which is even above all conceit) if we were clean from all spot and blemish, both of other faults of pride; the fall of Angels doth make it almost a question whether we might not need a preservative still, lest we should haply wax proud that we are not proud. What is vertue, but a medicine; and vice, but a wound? Yet we have so often deeply wounded our selves with medicine, that God hath been faine to make wounds mediacable, to cure by vice where vertue hath stricken, to suffer the just man to fall, that being raised, he may be taught what power it was which upheld him standing. I am not afraid to affirm it boldly with S. Augustine, that men puffed up through a proud opinion of their own sanctity and holiness, receive a benefit at the hands of God, and are assisted with his grace, when with his grace they are not assisted, but permitted, and that grievously to transgress, whereby as they were in over-great liking of themselves supplanted, so the dislike of that which did supplant them, may establish them afterwards the surer. Ask the very soul of Peter, and it shall undoubtedly make you it self this answer, My eager protestations made in the glory of my ghostly strength, I am ashamed of, but those Chrystal tears wherewith my sin and weakness was bewailed, have procured my endless joy; my strength hath been my ruine, and my fall my stay.

## A REMEDY against SORROW and FEAR. Delivered in a Funeral Sermon.

John 14. 27. *Let not your hearts be troubled, nor fear.*

**T**HE Holy Apostles having gathered themselves together by the special appointment of Christ, and being in expectation to receive from him such instructions as they had been accustomed with, were told that which they least looked for; namely, That the time of his departure out of the world was now come. Whereupon they fell into consideration, first, of the manifold benefits which his absence should bereave them of: and secondly, of the sundry evils which themselves should be subject unto, being once bereaved of so gracious a Master and Patron. The one consideration over-whelmed their souls with heaviness; the other with fear. Their Lord and Saviour, whose words had cast down their hearts, raiseth them presently again with chosen sentences of sweet encouragement. My dear, it is for your own sakes that I leave the world. I know the affections of your hearts are tender, but if your love were directed with that advised and steady judgement which should be in you, my speech of leaving the world, and going unto my Father, would not a little augment your joy. Desolate and comfortless I will not leave you in Spirit I am with you to the worlds end; whether I be present or absent, nothing shall ever take you out of these hands: My going is to take possession of that in your names, which is not onely for me, but also for you prepared; where I am, you shall be. In the mean while, *My peace: I give, not as the world giveth, give I unto you: let not your hearts be troubled, nor fear.* The former part of which sentence having other where already been spoken of, this unacceptable occasion to open the latter part thereof here, I did not look for. But so God disposeth the ways of men. Him I heartily beseech, that the thing which he hath thus ordered by his providence, may through his gracious goodness turn unto your comfort.

Our nature coveteth preservation from things hurtful. Hurtful things being present, do breed heaviness; being future, do cause fear. Our Saviour to abate the one, speaketh thus unto his Disciples, *Let not your hearts be troubled;* and to moderate the other, addeth *Forasmuch as I have said, I give you my peace.* Grief & heaviness in the presence of sensible evils, cannot but trouble the minds of men. It may therefore seem that Christ required a thing impossible. *Be not troubled:* Why, how could they choose? But we must note, this being natural, and therefore simply not reproveable, is in us good or bad, according to the causes for which we are grieved, or the measure of our grief. It is not my meaning to speak so largely of this affliction, as to go over all particulars whereby men do one way or other offend in it, but to teach it so far onely as it may cause the very Apostles equals to swerve. Our grief and heaviness therefore is reproveable, sometime in respect of the cause from whence, sometime in regard of the measure whereunto it groweth.

When Christ the life of the world was led unto cruel death, there followed a number of people and women, which women bewailed much his heavy case. It was a natural compassion which caused them, where they saw undeserved miseries, there to pour forth unrestrained tears. Nor was this reprov'd. But in such readiness to lament where they less needed, their blindness in not discerning that for which they ought much rather to have mourned; this our Saviour a little toucheth, putting them in minde that the tears which were wasted for him, might better have been spent upon themselves. *Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, weep for your selves, and for your children.* It is not as the Stoicks have imagined, a thing unseemly for a wise man to be touched with grief of minde; but to be sorrowful when we least should; and where we should lament, there to laugh; this argueth our small wisdom. Again, when the Prophet David confesseth thus of himself, *I grieved to see the great prosperity of godless men, how they flourish and go untouched,* Psal. 73. Himself hereby openeth both our common and his peculiar imperfection, whom this cause should not have made so pensive. To grieve at this, is to grieve where we should not, because this grief doth rise from error. We erre when we grieve at wicked mens impunity and prosperity, because their estate being rightly discerned, they neither prosper

prosper nor go unpunished. It may seem a Paradox, it is truth, that no wicked mans estate is prosperous, fortunate, or happy. For what though they bless themselves, and think their happiness great? Have not frantick persons many times a great opinion of their own wisdom? It may be that such as they think themselves, others also do account them. But what others? Surely such as themselves are. Truth and Reason discerneth far otherwise of them. Unto whom the Jews with all prosperiky, unto them the phrase of their speech is to wish peace. Seeing then the name of Peace containeth in it all parts of true happiness, when the Prophet saith plainly, that the Wicked have no peace, how can we think them to have any part of other then vainly imagined Felicity? What wise man did ever account fools happy? If Wicked men were wise, they would cease to be wicked. Their iniquity therefore proving their folly, how can we stand in doubt of their misery. They abound in those things which all men desire. A poor happiness to have good things in possession, *A man to whom God hath given riches, and treasures, and honour, so that he wanteth nothing for his soul of all that it desireth, but yet God giveth him not the power to eat thereof;* such a felicity Solomon esteemeth but as a vanity, a thing of nothing. If such things adde nothing to mens happiness, where they are not used, surely wicked men that use them ill, the more they have, the more wretched. Of their prosperity therefore, we see what we are to think. Touching their impunity, the same is likewise but supposed. They are oftner plagued then we are aware of. The pangs they feel are not always written in their fore-head. Though wickedness be Sugar in their mouths, and wantonness as Oyl to make them look with a chearful countenance, nevertheless if their hearts were disclosed, perhaps their glittering state would not greatly be envied. The voyces that have broken out from some of them, *O that God had given me a heart senseless like the flint in the rock of stone?* which as it can taste no pleasure, so it feeleth no wo; these and the like speeches are surely tokens of the curse which *Zophar* in the Book of *Job* poureth upon the head of the impious man, *Hell shall suck the gall of Asps, and the Vipers tongue shall slay him.* If this seem light, because it is secret, shall we think they go unpunished, because no apparent plague is presently seen upon them? The judgements of God do not always follow crimes, as Thunder doth Lightning, but sometimes the space of many Ages coming between. When the Sun hath shined fair the space of six days upon their Tabernacle, we know not what Clouds the seventh may bring. And when their punishment doth come, let them make their account, in the greatness of their sufferings to pay the interest of that respite which hath been given them. Or if they chance to escape clearly in this World, which they seldom do, in the Day when the heavens shall shrivel as a scrowl, & the mountains move as frightened men out of their place, what Cave shall receive them? what Mountain or Rock shall they get by intreaty to fall upon them? what covert to hide them from that wrath which they shall neither be able to abide nor avoid? No mans misery therefore being greater then theirs whose impiety is most fortunate; much more cause there is for them to bewail their own infelicity, then for others to be troubled with their prosperous and happy estate, as if the hand of the Almighty did not, or would not touch them. For these causes and the like unto these, therefore be not troubled.

Now, though the cause of our heaviness be just, yet may not our affections herein be yielded unto with too much indulgency and favour. The grief of compassion, whereby we are touched with the feeling of other mens woes, is of all other least dangerous. Yet this is a let unto sundry duties, by this we are to spare sometimes where we ought to strike. The grief which our own sufferings do bring, what temptations have not risen from it? What great advantage Satan hath taken even by the godly grief of hearty contrition for sins committed against God, the near approaching of so many afflicted souls, whom the conscience of sin hath brought unto the very brink of extreme despair, doth but too abundantly shew. These things, wheresoever they fall, cannot but trouble and molest the minde. Whether we be therefore moved vainly with that which seemeth hurtful, and is not; or have just cause of grief, being pressed indeed with those things which are grievous, our Saviours Lesson is, touching the one, Be not troubled, nor over-troubled for the other. For though to have no feeling of that which nearly concerneth us, were stupidity, nevertheless, seeing that as the Authour of our Salvation was himself Consecrated

by



by affliction, so the way which we are to follow him by, is not strewd with rushes, but set with thorns; be it never so hard to learn, we must learn to suffer with patience, even that which seemeth almost impossible to be suffered, that in the hour when God shall call us unto our trial, and turn this honey of peace and pleasure wherewith we swell, into that gall and bitterness which flesh doth shrink to taste of, nothing may cause us in the troubles of our souls to stoim, and grudge, and repine at God, but every heart be enabled with divinely inspired courage, to inculcate unto it self, *Be not troubled*; and in those last and greatest conflicts to remember it, that nothing may be so sharp and bitter to be suffered, but that still we our selves may give our selves this encouragement, *Even learn also patience, O my soul.*

Naming Patience, I name that vertue which onely hath power to stay our souls from being over-excessively troubled: A vertue, wherein if ever any, surely that soul had good experience, which extremity, of pains having chased out of the Tabernacle of this flesh, Angels, I nothing doubt, have carried into the bosom of her Father *Abraham*. The death of the Saints of God is precious in his sight. And shall it seem unto us superfluous at such times as these are, to hear in what manner they have ended their lives? The Lord himself hath not disdain'd so exactly to register in the Book of life, after what sort his Servants have closed up their days on earth, that he descendeth even to their very meanest actions, what meat they have longed for in their sickness, what they have spoken unto their Children, Kinsfolks and Friends, where they have willed their dead Carcasses to be laid, how they have framed their Wills and Testaments; yea, the very turning of their faces to this side or that, the setting of their eyes, the degrees whereby their natural heat hath departed from them, their crys, their groans, their pantings, breathings, and last gaspings he hath most solemnly commended unto the memory of all Generations. The care of the living both to live and to dye well, must needs be somewhat encreased, when they know that their departure shall not be folded up in silence, but the ears of many be made acquainted with it. Again, when they hear how mercifully God hath dealt with others in the hour of their last need, besides the praise which they give to God, and the joy which they have, or should have, by reason of their Fellowship and Communion of Saints, is not their hope also much confirmed against the day of their own dissolution? Finally, the sound of these things doth not so pass the ears of them that are most loose and dissolute of life, but it causeth them sometime or other to wish in their hearts, *Oh, that we might dye the death of the Righteous, and that our end might be like his!* Howbeit, because to spend herein many words, would be to strike even as many wounds into their mindes, whom I rather wish to comfort: Therefore concerning this vertuous Gentlewoman, onely this little I speak, and that of knowledge, *She lived a Dove, and dyed a Lamb.* And if amongst so many Vertues, hearty Devotion towards God, towards Poverty tender Compassion, Motherly Affection towards servants; towards friends even servicable kindeness, milde behaviour, and harmless meaning towards all; if where so many vertues were eminent, any be worthy of special mention, I with her dearest friends of that sex to be her nearest followers in two things: *Silence*, saving onely where duty did exact speech; and *Patience*, even when extremity of pains did enforce grief. *Blessed are they that dye in the Lord.* And concerning the dead which are blessed, let not the hearts of any living be over-charged with grief, or over-trouble.

Touching the latter affection of fear, which respecteth evil to come, as the other which we have spoken of doth present evils; first, in the nature thereof it is plain, that we are not of every future evil afraid. Perceive we not how they, whose tenderness shrinketh at the least rase of a Needle's Point, do kiss the sword that pierceth their souls quite thorow? If every evil did cause fear, sin, because it is sin, would be feared; whereas properly sin is not feared as sin, but onely as having some kinde of harm annexed. To teach men to avoid sin, it had been sufficient for the Apostle to say, *Flee it.* But to make them afraid of committing sin, because the naming of sin sufficed not, therefore he addeth further, that it is as a *Serpent which stingeth the soul.* Again, be it that some noxious or hurtful things be towards us, must fear of necessity follow hereupon? Not, except that hurtful things do threaten us either with destruction or vexation, and that such as we, have

have neither a conceit of ability to resist, nor of utter impossibility to avoid. That which we know our selves able to withstand, we fear not, and that which we know we are unable to defer or diminish, or any way avoid, we cease to fear, we give our selves over to bear and sustain it. The evil therefore which is feared, must be in our persuasion unable to be resisted when it cometh, yet not utterly impossible for a time in whole or in part to be shunned. Neither do we much fear such evils, except they be imminent and near at hand; nor if they be near, except we have an opinion that they be so. When we have once conceived an opinion, or apprehended an imagination of such evils press, and ready to invade us, because they are hurtful unto our nature, we feel in our selves a kinde of abhorring, because they are thought near, yet not present, our nature seeketh forthwith how to shift and provide for it self; because they are evils which cannot be resisted, therefore she doth not provide to withstand, but to shun and avoid. Hence it is, that in extreme fear, the Mother of life contracting herself, avoiding as much as may be the reach of evil, and drawing the heat together with the spirits of the body to her, leaveth the outward parts cold, pale, weak, feeble, unapt to perform the functions of life; as we see in the fear of *Balthasar King of Babel*. By this it appeareth, that fear is nothing else but a perturbation of the minde; through an opinion of some imminent evil, threatening the destruction or great annoyance of our nature, which to shun, it doth contract and deject it self.

Now because not in this place onely, but otherwhere often we hear it repeated, *Fear not*; it is by some made a question, *Whether a man may fear destruction or vexation without sinning?* First, the reproof wherewith Christ checketh his Disciples more then once, *O men of little faith, wherefore are ye afraid?* Secondly, the punishment threatened in *Revel. 21*; the Lake, and Fire, and Brimstone, not onely to Murderers, unclean Persons, Sorcerers, Idolaters, Lyers, but also to the fearful and faint-hearted! This seemeth to argue, that fearfulness cannot but be sin. On the contrary side we see, that he which never felt motion unto sin, had of this affection more then a slight feeling. How clear is the evidence of the Spirit, that in the days of his flesh he offered up Prayers and Supplications, with strong crys and tears, unto him that was able to save him from death, and was also dead in that which he feared, *Heb. 5. 7*. Whereupon it followeth, that fear in it self is a thing not sinful. For is not fear a thing natural, and for mens preservation necessary, implanted in us by the provident and most gracious giver of all good things, to the end that we might not run headlong upon those mischiefs wherewith we are not able to encounter, but use the remedy of shunning those evils which we have not ability to withstand? Let that people therefore which receive a benefit by the length of their Princes days, the Father or Mother that rejoyleth to see the Off-spring of their flesh grow like green and pleasant Plants, let those children that would have their Parents, those men that would gladly have their friends and brethrens days prolonged on earth (as there is no natural-hearted man but gladly would) let them bleis the Father of lights as in other things, so even in this, that he hath given man a fearful heart, and settled naturally that affection in him, which is a preservation against so many ways of death. Fear then in it self being meer nature, cannot in it self be sin, which sin is not nature, but thereof an accessory Deprivation.

But in the matter of fear we may sin, and do, two ways. If any mans danger be great, theirs is greatest that have put the fear of danger farthest from them. Is there any estate more fearful then that Babylonian Strumpets, that sitteth upon the tops of seven hills; glorying and vaunting, *I am a Queen*, &c. *Rev. 18. 7*. How much better and happier they, whose estate hath been always as his who speaketh after this sort of himself, *Lord, from my youth have I born thy yoke*: They which sit at continual ease and are settled in the lees of their security, look upon them, view their countenance, their speech, their gesture, their deeds, *Put them in fear, O God*, saith the Prophet, *that so they may know themselves to be but men*; Worms of earth, dust and ashes, frail, corruptible, feeble things. To shake off security therefore, and to breed fear in the hearts of mortal men, so many admonitions are used concerning the power of evils which beset them, so many threatnings of calamities, so many descriptions of things threatned, and those so lively, to the end they may leave behind them a deep impression of such as have force to keep the heart continually waking. All which do shew, that we are to stand in fear of nothing more then the extremity of not fearing.

When

When fear hath delivered us from that pit, wherein they are sunk that have put far from them the evil day; that have made a league with death, and have said, *Tush, we shall feel no harm*; it standeth us upon to take heed it cast us not into that, wherein souls destitute of all hope are plunged. For our direction, to avoid, as much as may be, both extremities, that we may know as a Ship-master by his Card, how far we are wide, either on the one side, or on the other; we must note, that in a Christian man there is first, Nature: Secondly, Corruption perverting Nature: Thirdly, Grace, correcting and amending Corruption. In fear, all these have their several operations: Nature teacheth simply, to wish preservation and avoidance of things dreadful; for which cause our Saviour himself prayeth, and that often, *Father, if it be possible*. In which case, corrupt Natures suggestions are, for the safety of temporal life, not to stick at things excluding from eternal; wherein how far, even the best may be led, the chiefest Apostles frailty teacheth. Were it not therefore for such cogitations, as on the contrary side, Grace and Faith ministrereth, such as that of *Jeh, Though God kill me*; that of *Paul, Scio cui credidi*, I know him on whom I do rely; small evils would soon be able to overthrow even the best of us. A wise man, saith Solomon, doth see a plague coming, and hideth himself. It is Nature which teacheth a wise man in fear to hide himself, but Grace and Faith doth teach him where. Fools care not where they hide their heads: but where shall a wise man hide himself, when he feareth a plague coming? Where should the frightened Child hide his head, but in the bosom of his loving Father? where a Christian, but under the shadow of the wings of Christ his Saviour? *Coma my people*, saith God in the Prophet, *Enter into thy chamber, hide thy self*, &c. Isa. 26. But because we are in danger, like chased Birds, like Doves that seek and cannot see the resting holes, that are right before them; therefore our Saviour giveth his Disciples these encouragements beforehand, that fear might never so amaze them, but that always they might remember, that whatsoever evils at any time did beset them, to him they should still repair for comfort, counsel and succour. For their assurance whereof, his Peace he gave them, his peace he left unto them, not such a peace as the world offereth, by whom his name is never so much pretended, as when deepest treachery is meant; but Peace, which passeth all understanding, Peace that bringeth with it all happiness, Peace that continueth for ever and ever with them that have it.

*This Peace, God the Father grant, for his Sons sake, unto whom with the Holy Ghost, three Persons, one Eternal and Everliving God, be all honour, and glory, and praise, now and for ever. Amen.*



**A**  
**Learned and comfortable Sermon of the**  
**certainty and perpetuity of Faith in the Elect:**  
**especially of the Prophet Habakkuk's Faith.**

HABAK. I. 4.

*Whether the Prophet Habakkuk, by admitting this cogitation into his mind, The Law doth fail, did thereby shew himself an unbeliever?*



WE have seen in the opening of this clause, which concerneth the weakness of the Prophets faith; First, what things they are whereunto the faith of sound believers doth assent: Secondly, wherefore all men assent not thereunto: and Thirdly, why they that do, do it many times with small assurance. Now because nothing can be so truly spoken, but through mis-understanding it may be depraved; therefore to prevent if it be possible, all misconstruction in this cause, where a small error cannot rise but with great danger, it is perhaps needful ere we come to the fourth point, that something be added to that which hath been already spoken concerning the third.

That meer natural men do neither know nor acknowledge the things of God, we do not marvel, because they are spiritually to be discerned: but they in whose hearts the light of grace doth shine, they that are taught of God, why are they so weak in faith? Why is their assenting to the Law so scrupulous? so much mingled with fear and wavering? It seemeth strange that ever they should imagine the Law to fail. It cannot seem strange if we weigh the reason. If the things which we believe be considered in themselves, it may truly be said, that faith is more certain then any Science. That which we know either by sense, or by infallible demonstration is not so certain as the principles, articles and conclusions of Christian Faith. Concerning which we must note, that there is a *certainty of evidence*, and a *certainty of adherence*. *Certainty of evidence* we call that, when the mind doth assent unto this or that, not because it is true in it self, but because the truth is clear, because it is manifest to us. Of things in themselves most certain, except they be also most evident, our perswasion is not so assured, as it is of things more evident, although in themselves they be less certain. It is as sure if not surer, that there be spirits as that there be men: but we be more assured of these than of them, because these are more evident. The truth of some things is so evident, that no man which heareth them can doubt of them: as when we hear that *a part of any thing is less, than the whole*, the mind is constrained to say, This is true. If it were so in matters of Faith, then, as all men have equal certainty of this, so no believer should be more scrupulous and doubtful then another. But we find the contrary. The Angels and Spirits of the righteous in heaven, have certainty most evident of things spiritual: but this they have by the light of glory. That which we see by the light of grace, though it be indeed more certain, yet is it not to us so evidently certain, as that which sense or the light of nature will not suffer a

man to doubt of. Proofs are vain and frivolous, except they be more certain than is the thing proved: and do we not see how the Spirit every where in the Scripture proveth matters of faith, laboureth to confirme us in the things which we beleive by things whereof we have sensible knowledge? I conclude therefore that we have less certainty of evidence concerning things beleived, then concerning sensible or naturally perceived. Of these who doth doubt at any time? Of them at sometime who doubteth not? I will not here alledge the sundry confessions of the perfectest that have lived upon earth, concerning their great imperfections this way; which if I did, I should dwell too long upon a matter sufficiently known by every faithful man that doth know himself.

The other which we call the *certainty of adherence*, is when the heart doth cleave and stick unto that which it doth beleive. This certainty is greater in us then the other. The reason is this, The faith of a Christian doth apprehend the words of the Law, the promises of God, not onely as true, but also as good: and therefore even then when the evidence which he hath of the truth is so small, that it grieveth him to feel his weakness in assenting thereto; yet is there in him such a sure adherence unto that which he doth but faintly and fearfully beleive, that his spirit having once truly tasted the heavenly sweetness thereof, all the world is not able quite and clean to remove him from it: but he striveth with himself to hope against all reason of beleiving, being settled with Job upon this unmoveable resolution, *Though God kill me, I will not give over trusting in him.* For why? This lesson remaineth for ever imprinted in him, *It is good for me to cleave unto God,* 1<sup>st</sup> *sal.* 37.

Now the minds of all men being so darkned, as they are with the foggy damp of original corruption, it cannot be that any mans heart living should be either so enlightened in the knowledge, or so established in the love of that wherein his salvation standeth, as to be perfect, neither doubting nor shrinking at all. If any such were, what doth let why that man should not be justified by his own inherent righteousness? For righteousness inherent, being perfect, will justifie. And perfect faith is a part of perfect righteousness inherent; yea a principal part, the root and the Mother of all the rest: so that if the fruit of every tree be such as the root is, faith being perfect, as it is if it be not at all mingled with distrust and fear, what is there to exclude other Christian vertues from the like perfections? And then what need we the righteousness of Christ? His garment is superfluous? we may be honourably clothed with our own robes, if it be thus. But let them beware who challenge to themselves a strength which they have not, lest they lose the comfortable support of that weakness which indeed they have.

Some shew, although no soundness of ground, there is, which may be alledged for defence of this supposed perfection in certainty touching matters of our faith: as first that *Abraham* did beleive and doubted not: secondly, that the spirit which God hath given us to no other end, but only to assure us that we are the sons of God; to embolden us to call upon him as our Father, to open our eyes, and to make the truth of things beleived evident unto our minds, is much mightier in operation then the common light of nature, whereby we discern sensible things: wherefore we must needs be more sure of that we beleive, then of that we see; we must needs be more certain of the mercies of God in Christ Jesus, then we are of the sight of the sun when it shineth upon our faces. To that of *Abraham*, *he did not doubt*, I answer that this negation doth not exclude all fear, all doubting; but onely that which cannot stand with true faith. It freeth *Abraham* from doubting through *infidelity*, not from doubting through *infirmity*; from the doubting of *unbelievers*, not of *weak believers*; from such a doubting as that whereof the Prince of *Samaria* is attained, who hearing the promise of sudden plenty in the midst of Extream dearth, answered, *Though the Lord would make windows in heaven, were it possible so to come to pass?* But that *Abraham* was not void of all doubting, what need we any other proof than the plain evidence of his own words? *Gen.* 17. v. 17. The reason which is taken from the power of the spirit were effectual, if God did work like a natural Agent, as the fire doth inflame, and the sun enlighten, according to the uttermost ability which they have to bring forth their effects. But the incomprehensible wisdom of God doth limit the effects of his power, to such a measure as seemeth best unto himself. Wherefore he worketh that certainty in all, which sufficeth abundantly to their salvation in the life to come; but in none

so great as attaineth in this life unto perfection. Even so, O Lord, it hath pleased thee, even so it is best and fittest for us, that feeling still our own infirmities, we may no longer breath, then pray, *Adjuva Domine, Help Lord our incredulity*. Of the third question, this, I hope, will suffice, being added unto that which hath been thereof already spoken. The fourth question respecteth, and so an end of this point.

That which cometh last of all in this first branch to be considered concerning the weakness of the Prophets Faith, is, *Whether he did by this very thought, The Law doth fail, quench the spirit, fall from faith, and turn himself an unbeliever or no?* The question is of Moment, theretofore and tranquillity of infinite souls doth depend upon it. The Prophets case is the case of many, which way soever we cast for him, the same way it passeth for all others. If in him this cogitation did extinguish grace; why the like thoughts in us should not take the like effect, there is no cause. Forasmuch therefore as the matter is weighty, dear and precious, which we have in hand, it behoveth us with so much the greater charity to wade through it, taking special heed both what we build, and whereon we build, that if our building be pearl, but foundation be not flubble; if the Doctrine we teach be full of comfort and consolation, the ground whereupon we gather it, be sure: otherwise we shall not save, but deceive both our selves and others. In this we know we are not deceived, neither can we deceive you, when we teach that the faith whereby ye are sanctified, cannot fail; it did not in the Prophet, it shall not in you. If it be so, let the difference be shewed between the condition of unbelievers and his, in this or in the like imbecillity and weakness. There was in *Habakkuk*, that which St. *John* doth call the seed of God; meaning thereby, the first grace which God powreth into the hearts of them that be incorporated into Christ, which having received, if because it is an adversary to sin, we do therefore think we sin not both otherwise, and also by distrustful and doubteful apprehending of that, which we ought stedfastly to believe, surely, we do but deceive our selves. Yet they which are of God, do not sin either in this, or in any thing any such sin as doth quite extinguish grace, cleave them off from Christ Jesus: because the seed of God abideth in them, and doth shield them from receiving any irreparable wound. Their faith when it is at strongest is but weak; yet even then when it is at the weakest, so strong, that utterly it never faileth, it never perfectly altogether, no not in them who think it extinguished in themselves. There are, for whose sakes I dare not deal slightly in this cause, spiring that labour which must be bestowed to make it plain. Men in like agonies unto this of the Prophet *Habakkuk*, who through the extremity of grief are many times in judgement so confounded, that they find not themselves in themselves. For that which dwelleth in their hearts they seek: they make diligent search and enquiry. It abideth, it worketh in them; yet still they ask where? Still they lament as for a thing which is past finding: they mourn as *Rachel*, and refuse to be comforted, as if that were not, which indeed is; and as if that which is not, were; as if they did not believe when they do; and as if they did despair when they do not. Which in some, I grant, is but a melancholly passion proceeding only from that dejection of mind, the cause whereof is in the body, and by bodily means can be taken away. But where there is no such bodily cause, the mind is not lightly in this mood, but by some of these three occasions. One, that judging by comparison either with other men or with themselves at some other time more strong, they think imperfection to be plain deprivation, weakness to be utter want of Faith. Another cause is; they often mistake one thing for another. Saint *Paul* wishing well to the Church of Rome, prayeth for them after this sort: *The God of hope fill you with all joy of believing*. Hence an error groweth, when men in heaviness of spirit, suppose they lack faith, because they find not the sugared joy and delight which indeed doth accompany Faith, but so as a separable accident, as a thing that may be removed from it; yea, there is a cause why it should be removed. The light would never be so acceptable, were it not for that usual intercourse of darkness. Too much honey doth turn to gall; and too much joy even spiritually would make us wanton. Happier a great deal is that mans case, whose soul by inward desolation is humbled, then he whose heart is through abundance of spiritual delight lifted up, and exalted above measure. Better it is sometimes to go down into the pit with him, who beholding darkness, and bewailing the loss of inward joy



and consolation, cryed from the bottom of the lowest hell. *My God my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* then continually to walk arm in arm with Angels, to sit, as it were, in Abraham's bosom, and to have no thought, no cogitation, but, *I thank my God in all times for him as it is with other men.* No; God will have them that shall walk in light, to feel now and then what it is to sit in the shadow of death. A grieved spirit therefore is no argument of a faithless mind. A third occasion of men's misjudging themselves, as if they were faithless when they are not, is, That often their cogitations upon the distrustful suggestions of the flesh, whereof finding great abundance in themselves, they gather thereby, surely, unbelief hath full dominion; it hath taken bloody possession of me: If I were faithless, it could easily thus stir up the motions of the Spirit and of Faith, because they lie buried and over-whelmed with the contrary: when notwithstanding at the blessed Apostle doth acknowledge, that the Spirit groweth, and that God heareth when we do not; so there is no doubt, but that our faith may have, and hath, her pains in opposition to her to us, yet known to him by whom they are. Tell this to a man that hath a mind decayed by too hard an opinion of himself, and it doth but suggest his good: he hath his answer ready: will you make me think otherwise than I find, when I first in my self I have thoroughly considered and exquisitely fixed all the corners of my heart, and I see what there is: never seek to persuade me against my knowledge: I do not, I say, I cannot believe. Well so far our them a little in their weakness: let that be granted which they do imagine; be it that they are faithless, and without belief. But are they not grieved for their unbelief? They are. Do they not wish it might, and all the way that it may be otherwise? We know they do. Whence cometh this, but from a secret love and liking which they have of those things that are believed? No, man is a loving thing which in his own opinion is none. And if they think those things to be so, which they think they lose when they desire to believe them, then must it needs be, that by desiring to believe, they prove themselves true believers. For without faith, no man thinketh of believing, and so, which argument all the subtilties of infernal powers will never be able to dissolve. The Faith therefore of true believers, though it have many and many a weak point, yet doth it still continue invincible: it conquers, and conquers it all in the end. The dangerous confidence which unto it is added, are not able to prevail against it. The proper sin which remained faithful is weakness, though weak in faith. It is true, such is our weak and wavering nature, we have no sooner received grace, but we are ready to fall from it: we have no sooner given our assent to the law that it cannot fail, but the next conceit which we are ready to embrace, is, that it may, and that it doth fail: though we fit in our selves a most willing heart to obey unfeignably unto God, even so far as to think unfeignedly with *Bartholomew*, *Lord, I am ready to gain with thee in all things and in all ways*; yet how soon and how easily, upon how small occasions are we changed, if we be but a while let alone and left unto our selves? the *Galatians* to day be for their fakes which teach them the truth in Christ, are content if need were to pluck out their own eyes, and the next day ready to pluck out theirs which taught them: The love of the Angel to the Church of *Ephesus*, how greatly enflamed, and how quickly flaked? the higher we flow, the nearer we are upon an ebb, if men be respected as mere men, according to the woollen course of their alterable inclination, without the heavenly support of the Spirit. Again, the desire of our ghostly enemy is so incredible, and his means so forcible to overthrow our faith, that when the blessed Apostle hath bewitched and made hand-fast unto Christ, to them he could not write but with great trembling: *I am jealous over you with a godly jealousy*; for I have prepared you to me, *Brachides*, to present you a pure Virgin unto Christ: and so forth. *Behold the Sonnet*, he writeth, *But through his subtilty, so your minds should be converted from the serpent which is in Christ.* The simplicity of faith which is in Christ, takes in the naked promise of God, his bare Word, and on that it resteth. This simplicity the Serpent laboureth continually to pervert, corrupting the mind with many imaginations of repugnancy, and contrariety between the promise of God and those things which come on experience, or some other fore-conceived persuasion hath impressed. The word of the promise of God unto his people, is, *I will not leave thee, nor forsake thee*: upon this the simplicity of faith resteth, and is not afraid of failure. But mark how the subtilty of the Serpent did corrupt the minds of that Re-

bellious generation; whose Spirits were not faithful unto God. They beheld the desolate state of the desert in which they were, and by the wisdom of their School concluded the promise of God to be but folly: *Can God prepare a Table in the Wilderness?* The word of the promise to Sarah, was, *Thou shalt bear a Son*. Faith is simple; and doubteth not of it: but Satan, to corrupt this simplicity of Faith, entangleth the mind of the Woman with an argument drawn from common experience to the contrary: *A Woman that is old*; Sarah, *now to be acquainted again with forgotten passions of youth*! The word of the promise of God by *Moses* and the prophets, made the Saviour of the World so apparent unto *Philip*, that his simplicity could conceive no other Messiah then *Jesus of Nazareth* the son of *Joseph*. But to stay *Nathaniel*, left being invited to come and see, he should also believe, and so be saved the subtilty of Satan casteth a mist before his eyes, putteth in his head against this, the common conceived persuasion of all men concerning *Nazareth*; *Is it possible that a good thing should come from thence?* this stratagem he doth use with so great dexterity, that the minds of all men are so strangely bewitched with it, that it bereaveth them for the time of all perceivance of that which should relieve them and be their comfort; yea, it taketh all remembrance from them, even of things wherewith they are most familiarly acquainted. The people of *Israel* could not be ignorant, that he which led them through the Sea, was able to feed them in the Desert; but this was obliterated and put out by the sence of their present want. Feeling the hand of God against them in their food, they remember not his hand in the day that he delivered them from the hand of the Oppressor. Sarah was not then to learn, that *with God all things were possible*. Had *Nathaniel* never noted how *God doth chuse the base things of this World to disgrace them that are most honourably esteemed*? The Prophet *Habakkuk* knew that the promises of grace, protection and favour which God in the Law doth make unto his people, do not grant them any such immunity as can free and exempt them from all chastisements: he knew, that as God said, *I will continue my mercy for ever towards them*; so he likewise said, *Their transgressions I will punish with a rod*: he knew that it cannot stand with any reason, we should set the measure of our own punishments, and prescribe unto God how great or how long our sufferings shall be, he knew that we were blind, and altogether ignorant what is best for us; that we sue for many things very unwisely against our selves, thinking we ask *Fish*, when indeed we crave a *Serpent*: he knew that when the thing we ask is good, and yet God seemeth slow to grant it, he doth not deny, but deferr our petitions, to the end we might learn to desire great things greatly: all this he knew. But beholding the Land which God had severed for his own people and seeing it abandoned unto Heathen Nations; viewing how reproachfully they did tread it down, and wholly make havock of it at their pleasure; beholding the Lords own Royal Seat made an heap of stones, his temple defiled, the carcases of his servants cast out for the souls of the air to devour, and the flesh of his meek ones for the beasts of the field to feed upon; being conscious to himself how long and how earnestly he had cryed,  *Succour us, O God of our welfare, for the Glory of thine own Name*; and feeling that their sore was still increased: the conceit of repugnancy between this which was object to his eyes, and that which faith upon promise of the Law did look for, made so deep an impression and so strong, that he disputeth not the matter, but without any further inquiry or search, inferreth as we see: *The law doth fail*.

Of us who is here, which cannot very soberly advise his brother? Sir, you must learn to strengthen your faith by that experience which heretofore you have had of Gods great goodness towards you, *per ea quæ agnoscas præstita, discas sperare promissa*; By those those things which you have known performed, learn to hope for those things which are promised. Do you acknowledge to have received much? Let that make you certain to receive more. *Habenti dabitur*: To him that hath, more shall be given. When you doubt what you shall have, search what you have had at Gods hands. Make this reckoning, that the benefits which he hath bestowed, are Bills obligatory and sufficient Sureties that he will bestow further. His present mercy is still a warrant of his future love, because *whom he loveth, he loveth to the end*. Is it not thus? Yet if we could reckon up as many evident, clear, undoubted signs of Gods reconciled love towards us, as there are years, yea days, yea hours past over our heads; all these set together have not such force to confirm our faith, as the loss, and

sometimes the only fear of losing a little transitory goods, credit, honour, or favour of men; a small calamity, a matter of nothing to breed a conceit, and such a conceit as is not easily again removed; that we are clean crost out of Gods book, that he regards us not, that he looketh upon others, but passeth by us like a stranger, to whom we are not known. Then we think, looking upon others and comparing them with our selves; their Tables are furnished day by day, earth and ashes are our bread: they sing to the Lute, and they see their children dance before them; our hearts are heavy in our bodys as lead, our fighes beat as thick as a swift Pulse, our tears do wash the beds wherein we lye: The Sun shineth fair upon their fore-heads; we are hanged up like Bottles in the smoke, cast into corners like the sherds of a broken Pot: tell not us of the promises of Gods favour, tell such as do reap the fruit of them, they belong not to us, they are made to others: the Lord be merciful to our weakness, but thus it is. Well, let the frailty of our nature, the Subtilty of Satan, the force of our deceivable imaginations be, as we cannot deny but they are things that threaten every moment the utter subversion of our faith; faith notwithstanding is not hazarded by these things. That which one sometimes told the Senators of Rome, *Ego sic exultabam, P. C. uti patrem saepe meum predicantem audire, qui vestram amicitiam diligenter colerent eos multum laborem suscipere, ceterum ex omnibus maxime tutus esse*: As I have often heard my Father acknowledge, so I my self did ever think, that the friends and favourers of this State charged themselves with great labour, but no mans condition so safe as theirs; the same we may say a great deal more justly in this case: our Fathers and prophets, our Lord and Master hath full often spoken, by long experience we have found it true; as many as have entred their names in the mystical book of life, *eos maximum laborem suscipere*, they have taken upon them a labour-som, a toylefom, a painful profession, *sed omnium maxime tutus esse*, but no mans security like to theirs. *Simon, Simon, Satan hath desired to winnow thee as wheat*; Here is our toyl: *but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not*; this is our safety. No mans condition so sure as ours: the prayer of Christ is more then sufficient both to strengthen us, be we never so weak: and to overthrow all adversary power, be it never so strong and potent. His prayer must not exclude our labour: their thoughts are vain, who think that their watching can preserve the City which God himself is not willing to keep. And are not theirs as vain, who think that God will keep the City, for which they themselves are not careful to watch? the husbandman may not therefore burn his Plough, nor the Merchant forsake his trade, because God hath promised, *I will not forsake thee*. And do the promises of God concerning our stability, think you, make it a matter indifferent for us, to use or not to use the means whereby to attend or not to attend to reading, to pray or not to pray that we fall not into temptation? Surely if we look to stand in the faith of the Sons of God, we must hourly, continually be providing and setting our selves to strive. It was not the meaning of our Lord and Saviour in saying, *Father keep them in thy name*, that we should be careless to keep our selves. To our own safety, our own sedulity is required. And then blessed for ever and ever be that Mothers Child, whose faith hath made him the Child of God. The earth may shake, the pillars of the World may tremble under us: the countenance of the Heaven may be appaled, the Sun may lose his light, the Moon her beauty, the Stars their glory: but concerning the man that trusteth in God, if the fire have proclaimed it self unable as much as to singe a hair of his head; if Lyons, Beasts ravenous by nature, and keen with hunger, being set to devour, have as it were religiously adored the very flesh of the faithful man, what is there in the World that shall change his heart, overthrow his Faith, alter his affection towards God, or the Affection of God to him? If I be of this note, who shall make a separation between me and my God? shall tribulation, or anguish, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? No; I am perswaded that neither tribulation, nor anguish, nor persecution, nor famine, nor nakedness, nor peril nor sword, nor death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other creature shall ever prevail so far over me. I know in whom I have beleived; I am not ignorant whose precious blood hath been shed for me; I have a shepherd full of kindness, full of care, and full of power: unto him I commit my self; his own finger hath engraven this sentence in the Tables of my heart; *Satan hath desired to winnow thee as wheat but I have prayed that thy faith fail not*. Therefore the assurance of my hope I will labour to keep as a Jewel unto the end, and by labour, through the gracious mediation of his prayer, I shall keep it.



To the W<sup>or</sup>shipful Mr. G<sup>EO</sup>RGE SUMMASTER,  
Principal of Broad-Gates Hall in Oxford, Henry Jackson  
wilteth all Happines.

S I R,



Our kind acceptance of a former testification of that respect I owe you, hath made me venture to shew the World these godly Sermons under your name. In which, as every point is worth observation, so some especially are to be noted, The first, that, as the spirit of Prophecy is from God himself, who doth inwardly beat and enlighten the hearts and minds of his holy Pen-men, (which if some would diligently consider, they would not puzzle themselves with the contentions of Scot, and Thomas, Whether God only, or his Ministring Spirits, do infuse into mens minds propheticall Revelations, per species intelligibiles) so God framed their words also. Whence the holy Father a St. Augustine religiously observeth, That all those that understand the sacred Writers, will also perceive, that they ought not to use other words then they did, in expressing those heavenly mysterie: which their hearts conceived, as the Blessed Virgin did our Saviour, By the Holy Ghost. The greater is Castellio his offence, who had laboured to teach the Prophets to speak otherwise then they have already. Much like to that impious King of Spain, Alphonfus the tenth, who found fault with Gods works, b Si, inquis, creationi affuissem, mundum melius ordinassem, If he had been with God at the Creation of the World, the World had gone better then now it doth. As this man found fault with Gods works, so did the other with Gods words; but because we have a most sure word of the Prophets, to which we must take heed, I will let his words pass with the wind, having elsewhere spoken to you more largely of his errors, whom notwithstanding for his other excellent parts, I much respect.

You shall moreover from hence understand how Christianity consists not in formal and seeming purity (under which, who knows not notorious villany to mask?) but in the heart root. Whence the Author truly teacheth, that Mockers, which use Religion as a cloak, to put off and on, as the weather serveth, are worse then Pagans and Infidels. Where I cannot omit to shew, how justly this kind of men hath been reproved by that renowned Martyr of Jesus Christ, B. Latimer, both because it will be apposite to this purpose, and also free that Christian Worthy from the slanderous reproaches of him, who was, if ever any, a Mocker of God, Religion, and all good men. But first I must desire you, and in you all Readers, not to think lightly of that excellent man, for using this and the like witty similitudes in his Sermon. For whosoever will call to mind, with what riff-raff Gods people were fed in those days, when their Priests, whose lips should have preserved knowledge, preached nothing else but dreams & false miracles of counterfeit Saints, enrolled in that sottish Legend, coyned and amplified by a drowsie head, between sleeping and waking. He that will consider this, and how the people were delighted with such toys (God sending them strong delusions that they should beleieve lies) and how hard it would have been for any man, wholly, and upon the sudden, to draw their minds to another bent, will easily perceive, both how necessary it was to use Symbolical Discourse, and how wisely and moderately it was applied by the religious Father, to the end he might lead their understanding so far, till it were so convinced, informed and settled, that it might forget the means and way by which

a Lib. 4. cap. 6. de doctr. chr.

b 2<sup>o</sup> Rob. Tolet. lib. 4. cap. 5.

c 1<sup>o</sup> Pet. 1.  
d Pref. in Orat.  
D. Rainold.

e Persons in 3<sup>o</sup> convict.

f Mal. 2. 7.

g Exam locur. lib. 11. cap. 6.  
Hucus, lib. 2. de corrupt. ar.  
Hard lib. 4.

# The Epistle Dedicatry.

it was led, and think only of that I had acquired. For in all such mystical speeches who knows not that the end for which they are used is only to be thought upon? This then being first considered, let us hear the story, as it is related by Mr. Fox: Mr. Latimer (sayeth he) in his Sermon gave the people certain Cards out of the fift, sixt & seventh chapter of Matth. For the chief Triumph in the Cards he li-mitted the Heart, as the principal thing that they should serve God withal, where-by he quite overthrew all hypocritical and external Ceremonies not tending to the necessary furtherance of Gods holy Word and Sacraments. By this, he exhor-ted all men to serve the Lord with inward heart and true affection, and not with outward Ceremonies; adding moreover to the praise of that Triumph, that though it were never so small, yet it would take up the best Court card, beside in the Bunch, yea, though it were the King of Clubs, &c. meaning thereby, how the Lord would be worshipped and served in simplicity of the heart, and verity, wherein consisteth true Christian Religion, &c. Thus Master Fox.

By which it appears, that the holy mans intention was to lift up the peoples hearts to God, and not that he made a Sermon of playing at Cards, and taught them how to play at Triumph, and plaid (himself) at cards in the Pulpit, as that base companion Parlons reports the matter, in his scurrilous vein of railing, whence he calleth it a Christsmas Sermon. Now he that will think ill of such Al-lusions, may out of the abundance of his folly, jest at Demosthenes for his story of the Sheep, Wolves, and Dogs, and Menenius, for his fition of the Belly. But, hinc illa lacryma, The good Bishop meant that the Romish Religion came not from the heart, but consisted in outward Ceremonies: Which sorely grieved Parlons, who never had the least warmth or spark of honesty. Whether B. Lati-mer compared the Bishops to the Knaves of Clubs, as the follow interprets him, I know not: I am sure Parlons, of all others, deserved those colours, and so I leave him. We see then, what inward purity is required of all Christians, which if they have, then in prayer, and all other Christian duties, they shall lift up pure hands, as the Apostle speaks, not as Baronius would have it, washed from sin with holy water, but pure, this is holy, free from the pollutions of sin, as the Greek word *hain* doth signifie.

You may also see here refuted those calumnies of the Papists, that we abandon all religious Rites, and godly duties, as also the confirmation of our Doctrine touching certainty of Faith (and so of Salvation) which is so strongly denied by some of that Faction, that they have told the World, \*S. Paul himself was un-certain of his own salvation. What then shall we say, but pronounce a wote to the most strict observers of St. Francis rule, and his Canonical Discipline (though they make him even equal with Christ) and the most meritorious Monk that ever was registred in their Kalender of Saints? But we for our comfort are otherwise taught out of the holy Scripture, and therefore exhorted to build our selves in our most holy faith, that so, when our earthly house of this Tabernacle shall be destroyed, we may have a building given of God, a house not made with hands, but eternal in the Heavens.

Exue Franciscum tunica Liberoq; cucullo, Qui Franciscus est, jam vbi Christus erit, Francisci cucullis (6 quā dicat) induat Christum, iam Franciscus erit, qui modo Christus erat. The last hath another Iesuit. q. 2. Conf. 1.

This is that, which is most piously and feelingly taught in these few leaves, so that you shall read nothing here, but what I perswade my self, you have long practised in the constant course of your life. It remaineth only, that you accept of these Labours tendered to you by him, who wisheth you the long joys of this world, and the eternal of that which is to come.

Oxon. from Corp. Christi Colledge,  
this 13. of January, 1613.

g Pag. 1903.  
edit. 1570.

in the third  
part of 13. con-  
versions of  
England, in the  
Examin. of  
Foxes Saints  
cap. 1. & 53.  
i S. & 55.  
k Pict. m De 2  
mo 3 ben.  
l 10. Dec. 7.  
lib. 2. an. 7. C. 60

m 1 Tim. 2. 8  
n Annal. 10. 1.  
An. 17. n. 10.  
110 O 19. 2. An.  
132 num.  
o S. Paulus de  
sua salute inco-  
tus Kicherm. 10.  
sunt 1. 2. c. 12.  
Idolat. Hague.  
p. 119. in marg.  
dit loc.  
Mozant 13. m.  
12. 1701. Marcel.  
Bomper. 1. 5. 11.  
p Witen. is the  
veres of Hora-  
tus a Iesuite,  
recited by  
Fosse. Bishops.  
Select part. 2.  
l 11. c. 9. Exue  
dicat. induat Christum, iam Franciscus erit, qui modo Christus erat.



# TWO SERMONS

Upon part of  
St. Iude's Epistle.

The First Sermon.

JUDE, VERSE, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.

*But ye beloved, remember the words which I have written unto you, as the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

*How that they told you, that there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own ungodly lusts.*

*These are makers of sects, fleshly, having not the Spirit,*

*but ye beloved, consider your salvation in your most daily faith, praying in the holy Ghost.*

*And keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, unto eternal life.*

**T**HIS occasions whereupon, together with the end wherefore, this Epistle was written, is opened in the front and end title of the same. There were then, as there are now, many evil and wickedly disposed persons, not of the mystical body, yet within the visible bounds of the Church, men which were of old ordained to condemnation, ungodly men, which turned the grace of our God into wantonness, and denied the Lord Jesus. For this cause the Spirit of the Lord is in the hand of Iude, the servant of Jesus, and brother of James, to exhort them that are called, and sanctified of God the Father, that they would earnestly contend to maintain the faith, which was once delivered unto the Saints. Which faith because we cannot maintain, except we know perfectly, first, against whom, secondly, in what sort it must be maintained; therefore in the former three verses of that part of Scripture which I have read, the enemies of the Cross of Christ are plainly described; and in the latter two, they that love the Lord Jesus, have a sweet lesson given them, how to strengthen and establish themselves in the faith. Let us first therefore examine the description of these reproaches, concerning faith; and afterwards come to the words of the exhortation; wherein Christians are taught how to rest their hearts on Gods eternal and everlasting Truth. The description of these godless persons is two-fold, general and special. The general doth point them out, and shew what manner of men they should be. The

particular



particular pointeth at them, and saith plainly: these are they. In the general description we have to consider of these things. *First*, when they were described, they were *told of before*. *Secondly*, the men by whom they were described. They were spoken of by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ. *Thirdly*, the days, when they should be manifested unto the World, they told you they should be in the last time. *Fourthly*, their disposition and whole demeanour, *mockers and walkers after their own ungodly lusts*.

2. In the third to the *Philippians*, the Apostle describeth certain. They are men (saith he) of whom I have told you often, and now with tears I tell you of them, their God is their belly, their glory and rejoicing is in their own shame, they mind earthly things.

These were enemies of the Cross of Christ, enemies whom he saw, and his eyes gushed out with tears to behold them. But we are taught in this place how the Apostles spake also of enemies, whom as yet they had not seen, described a family of men as yet unheard of, a generation reserved for the end of the World, and for the last time, they had not only declared what they heard and saw in the days wherein they lived, but they have prophesied also of men in time to come. And you do well (saith S. Peter) in that ye take heed to the words of the Prophecy, so that ye first know this, that no Prophecy in the Scripture cometh of any mans own resolution. No Prophecy in Scripture cometh of any mans own resolution. For all prophecy, which is in Scripture, came by the secret inspiration of God. But there are prophecies which are no Scripture; yea, there are prophecies against the Scripture: my brethren, beware of such Prophecies, and take heed you heed them not. Remember the things that were spoken of before; but spoken of before by the Apostles of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. Take heed to Prophecies, but to prophecies which are in Scripture: For both the manner and matter of those prophecies do shew plainly, that they are of God.

Of the Spirit  
of prophesie  
received from  
God himself.

3. Touching the manner, how men by the Spirit of prophecy in holy Scripture have spoken and written of things to come, we must understand what as the knowledge of that they spake, so likewise the utterance of that they knew, came not by these usual and ordinary means, whereby we are brought to understand the mysteries of our salvation, and are wont to instruct others in the same. For whatsoever we know, we have it by the hands and Ministry of men, which lead us along like children, from a letter to a syllable, from a syllable to a word, from a word to a line, from a line to a sentence, from a sentence to a side, and so turn over. But God himself was their instructor, he himself taught them, partly by Dreams and visions in the night, partly by Revelations in the day, taking them aside from amongst their brethren, and talking with them, as a man would talk with his neighbour in the way. Thus they became acquainted even with the secret and hidden counsels of God. They saw things, which themselves were not able to utter, they heard that whereat men and Angels were astonished. They understood in the beginning, what should come to pass in the last days.

Of the Prophets manner  
of speech.

4. God, which lightened thus the eyes of their understanding, giving them knowledge by unusual and extraordinary means, did also miraculously himself frame and fashion their words and writings, in so much that a greater difference there seemeth not to be between the manner of their knowledge, then there is between the manner of their speech and ours. When we have conceived a thing in our hearts & thoroughly understand it, as we think within our selves, ere we can utter in such sort that our brethren may receive instruction or comfort at our mouths, how great, how long, how earnest meditation are we forced to use? And after much travail, and much pains, when we open our lips to speak of the wonderful works of God, our tongues do falter within our mouths, yea many times we disgrace the dreadful mysteries of our faith, and grieve the spirit of our hearers by words unsavoury, and unseemly speeches. Shall a wise man fill his belly with the Eastern Wind, saith Eliphaz, shall a wise man dispute with words not comely? or with talk that is not profitable? Yet behold, even they that are wisest amongst us living, compared with the Prophets, seem no otherwise to talk of God, then as if the children which are carried in armes, should speak of the greatest matters of state. They whose words do most shew forth their wise understanding and whose lips do utter the purest knowledge, so long as they understand and speak as men, are they not faint

Iob 15. 2, 3.

fain sundry ways to excuse themselves? Sometimes acknowledging with the wise man, *Hardly can we discern the things that are on earth, and with great labour find we but the things that are before us, who can then seek out the things that are in heaven*: Sometimes confessing with *Job* the righteous, in treating of things too wonderful for us, we have spoken we wist not what. Sometimes ending their talk as doth the History of the *Macchabees*, If we have done well, and as the cause required, it is that we desire, if we have spoken slenderly and barely, we have done what we could. But *God hath made my mouth like a sword*, saith *Esay*. And we have received, saith the *Apostle*, *not the spirit of the World, but the spirit which is of God, that we might know the things which are given to us of God, which things also we speak, not in words, which mans wisdom teacheth, but which the holy Ghost doth teach*. This is that which the Prophets mean by those books written full within, and without; which books were so often delivered them to eat, not because God fed them with Ink and paper, but to teach us, that so oft as he employed them in this heavenly work, they neither spake nor wrote any word of their own, but uttered syllable by syllable as the Spirit put it into their mouthes, no otherwise then the Harp or the Lute doth give a sound according to the discretion of his hands that holdeth and striketh it with skill. The difference is onely this: An Instrument, whether it be a Pipe or harp, maketh a distinction in the times and sounds, which distinction is well perceived of the *hearer*, the instrument it self understanding not what is piped or Harped. The Prophets and holy men of God not so. *I opened my mouth*, saith *Ezechiel*, *and God reached me a scroll, saying Son of man, cause thy belly to eat, and fill thy bowels with this I give thee, I eat it and it was sweet in my mouth as honey*, saith the Prophet. Yea sweeter, I am persuaded, then either honey or the honey comb. For herein they were not like harps or Lutes, but they felt, they felt the power and strength of their own words. When they spake of our peace, every corner of their hearts, was filled with joy. When they prophesied of mournings, lamentations, and woes to fall upon us, they wept in the bitterness and indignation of spirit, the arm of the Lord being mighty and strong upon them.

Wild 9.11.

Esay 49. 2.

Ezechiel. 3.

5. On this manner were all the Prophecies of holy Scripture. Which Prophecies, although they contain nothing which is not profitable for our instruction, yet as one star differeth from another in glory, so every word of prophecy hath a treasure of matter in it, but all matters are not of like importance, as all treasures, are not of equal price. The chief and principal matter of prophecy is the promise of righteousness, peace, holiness, glory, victory, immortality, unto every soul which beleiveth that *Jesus is Christ*, of the *Jew* first, and of the *Gentile*. Now because the doctrine of Salvation to be looked for by Faith in him, who was in outward appearance as it had been a man forsaken of God, in him who was numbred, judged; and condemned with the wicked, in him whom men did see buffeted on the face, scoffed at by Souldiers, scourged by tormentors, hanged on the cross, peirced to the heart, in him whom the eyes of many witnesses did behold, when the anguish of his soul enforced him to roar as if his heart had rent in sunder, *O my God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me*? I say, because the Doctrine of salvation by him, is a thing improbable to a natural man, that whether we preach it to the Gentile, or to the *Jew*, the one condemneth our faith as madness, the other as blasphemy, therefore to establish, and confirm the certainty of this saving truth in the hearts of men, the Lord together with their preachings, whom he sent immediately from himself to reveal these things unto the world, mingled prophecies of things, both Civil and Ecclesiastical, which were to come in every age from time to time, till the very last of the latter days, that by those things wherein we see dayly their words fulfilled and done, we might have strong consolation in the hope of things which are not seen, because they have revealed as well the one as the other. For when many things are spoken of before in Scripture, whereof we see first one thing accomplished, and then another, and so a third, perceive we not plainly, that God doth nothing else but lead us along by the hand, till he have settled us upon the rock of an assured hope, that no one jot or tittle of his Word shall pass till all be fulfilled? It is not therefore said in vain, that these godless wicked ones were spoken of before.

6. But by whom? By them whose words if men or Angels from heaven gainsay they are accursed; by them, whom whosoever despiseth, despiseth not them, but me,

A natural man  
perceiveth not  
heavenly  
things.

1am. 2.

Acts 12.

Acts 17.

me, saith Christ. If any man therefore doth love the Lord Jesus (and wo worth him that loveth not the Lord Jesus!) hereby we may know that he loveth him indeed, if he despise not the things that are spoken of by his Apostles; whom many have despised even for the baseness and simpleness of their persons. For it is the property of fleshly and carnal men to honour, and dishonor, credit, and discredit the words and deeds of every man, according to that he wanteth or hath without. If a man with gorgeous apparel come amongst us, although he be a Thief or a Murderer (for there are Theeves and Murderers in gorgeous apparel) be his heart whatsoever, if his Coat be of Purple or Velvet, or Tissue, every one riseth up, and at the reverent Solemnities we can use, are too little. But the man that serveth God, is contemned and despised amongst us for his Poverty. Herod speaketh in judgement, and the people cry out, *The voice of God, and not of man*, Paul preacheth Christ, they term him a trifler. Harken, beloved: hath not God chosen the poor of this World, that they should be rich in faith? Hath he not chosen the refuse of the World to be heirs of his Kingdom, which he hath promised to them that love him? hath he not chosen the the off-scurings of men to be Lights of the World, and the Apostles of Jesus Christ? Men unlearned, yet how fully replenished with understanding? few in number, yet how great in power? contemptible in shew, yet in spirit how strong? how wonderful? *I would fain learn the mystery of the eternal generation of the Son of God*, saith Hilary. Whom shall I seek? Shall I get me to the Schools of the Grecians? Why? I have read, *Vbi sapiens? ubi Scriba? ubi conquistor hujus saculi?* These wise men in the world must needs be dumb in this, because they have rejected the wisdom of God. Shall I beseech the *Scribes* and interpreters of the Law, to become my teachers? how can they know this, sith they are offended at the Crosse of Christ? It is death for me to be ignorant of the unfearchable mystery of the Son of God: of which mystery notwithstanding I should have been ignorant, but that a poor Fisherman, unknown, unlearned, new come from his boat with his clothes wringing wet hath opened his mouth and taught me, *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God*. These poor silly creatures have made us rich in the knowledge of the mysteries of Christ.

We must not  
halt between  
two opinions.

7. Remember therefore that which is spoken of by the Apostles; Whose words if the Children of this World do not regard, is it any marvaile? they are the Apostles of our Lord Jesus; not of their Lord, but of ours. It is true which one hath said in a certain place, *Apostolicam fidem seculi homo non capit*. A man sworn to the World, is not capable of that Faith which the Apostles do teach. What mean the Children of this World then to tread in the courts of our God? What shall your bodys do at Bethel, whose hearts are at Bethaven? the God of this World, whom ye serve, hath provided Apostles and teachers for you, *Chaldeans, Wizards, Sooth-sayers, Astrologers*, and such like: Hear them. Tell not us that ye will sacrifice to the Lord our God, if we will sacrifice to *Astarteth* or *Moloch*; that ye will read our Scriptures, if we will listen to your Traditions; that if ye may have a Maie by permission, we shall have a Communion with good leave and liking; that ye will admit the things that are spoken of by the Apostles of our Lord Jesus, if your Lord and Master may have his ordinances observed, and his statutes kept. *Solomon* took it (as he well might) for an evident proof, that she did not bear a motherly affection to her Child, which yielded to have it cut in divers parts. He cannot love the Lord Jesus with his heart, which lendeth one ear to his Apostles, and another to false Apostles; which can brook to see a mingle-mangle of Religion and Superstition, Ministers and Massing Priests, Light and darkness, Truth and Error, Traditions, and Scriptures. No; we have no Lord but Jesus; no Doctrine but the Gospel; no Teachers but his Apostles. Were it reason to require at the hands of an *English* Subject, obedience to the Laws and Edicts of the *Spaniard*? I do marvel, that any man bearing the name of a Servant of the Servants of Jesus Christ, will go about to draw us from our Allegiance. We are his sworn Subjects; it is not lawful for us to hear the things that are not told us by his Apostles. They have told us, that in the last days there shall be Mockers; therefore we beleive it; *Credimus quia legimus*, We are so perswaded, because we read it it must be so. If we did not read it, we would not teach it: *Nam quæ libro legis non continentur, ea nec nosse debemus*, saith Hilary: Those things that are not written in the book of the Law, we ought not so much as to be acquainted with them.



them. Remember the words which were spoken of before of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ.

8. The third thing to be considered in the description of these men of whom we speak, is the time, wherein they should be manifested to the World. They told you, there should be mockers in the last time. *Noah* at the commandment of God, *Mockers in the last time.* built an Ark, and there were in it Beasts of all sorts, clean and unclean. A Husbandman planteth a Vineyard, and looketh for Grapes, but when they come to the gathering, behold, together with Grapes there are found also wild Grapes. A rich man prepareth a great supper, and biddeth many, but when he sitteth him down, he findeth amongst his friends here and there a man whom he knoweth not. This hath been the state of the Church since the beginning. God always hath mingled his Saints with faithless and godless persons; as it were the clean with the unclean, Grapes with sowre grapes, his friends and children with aliens and strangers. Marvel not then, if in the last days also ye see the men, with whom you live and walk arm in arm, laugh at your Religion, and blaspheme that glorious name, whereof you are called. Thus it was in the days of the Patriarchs and Prophets; and are we better then our Fathers? Albeit we suppose, that the blessed Apostles, in foreshewing what manner of men were set out for the last days, meant to note a calamity special and peculiar to the ages and Generations, which were to come: As if he should have said; As God hath appointed a time of Seed for the Sower, and a time of Harvest for him that reapeth, as he hath given unto every herb and every tree his own fruit, and his own season, not the season nor the fruit of another (for no man looketh to gather figs in the Winter, because the Summer is the season for them; nor Grapes of Thistles, because Grapes are the fruit of the Vine) so the same God hath appointed sundry for every Generation of them, other men for other times, and for the last times the worst men, as may appear by their properties, which is the fourth point to be considered of in this description.

9. They told you, that there should be *mockers*. He meaneth men that shall use Religion as a cloak, to put off, and on, as the weather serveth; such as shall with *Herod* hear the preaching of *John Baptist* to day, and to morrow condescend to have him beheaded; or with the other *Herod* say, they will worship Christ, when they purpose a massacre in their hearts; kiss Christ with *Judas* and betray Christ with *Judas*. These are Mockers. For *Ishmael* the son of *Hagar* laughed at *Isaac*, which was heir of the promise; so shall these men laugh at you as the maddest people under the Sun, if ye be like *Moses*, choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season. And why? God hath not given them eyes to see, nor hearts to conceive that exceeding recompence of your reward. The promises of salvation made to you are matters wherein they can take no pleasure, even as *Ishmael* took no pleasure in that promise, wherein God had said unto *Abraham*, in *Isaac* shall thy seed be called; because the promise concerned not him, but *Isaac*. They are termed for their impiety towards God, *mockers*, and for the impurity of their life and conversation, *walkers after their own ungodly lusts*. *S. Peter* in his second Epistle and third Chapter, soundeth the very depth of their impiety: shewing first, how they shall not shame at the length to profess themselves prophane, and irreligious, by flat denying the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and deriding the sweet and comfortable promises of his appearing: *Secondly*, that they shall not be only deriders of all religion, but also disputers against God, using Truth to subvert the truth: yea Scriptures themselves to disprove Scriptures. Being in this sort *mockers*, they must needs be also followers of *their own ungodly lusts*. Being Atheists in persuasion, can they choose but be beasts in conversation? For why remove they quite from them the fear of God? Why take they such paines to abandon and put out from their hearts all sense, all tast, all feeling of Religion? but onely to this end and purpose, that they may without inward remorse and grudging of conscience give over themselves to all uncleanness. Surely the state of these men is more lamentable, then is the condition of Pagans and Turks. For at the bare beholding of Heaven and Earth, the Infidels heart by and by doth give him, that there is an eternal, infinite, immortal, and ever-living God; whose hands have fashioned and framed the world; he knoweth that every house is builded of some man, though he see not the man which built the house, and he considereth, that it must be God, which hath built and created all things; *Mockers worse then Pagans and Infidels.* although

although because the number of his days be few, he could not see when God disposed his works of old, when he caused the light of his clouds first to shine, when he laid the corner stone of the earth, and swaddled it with bands of Water and darkness, when he caused the morning star to know his place, and made bars and doors to shut up the Sea within his house; saying, *Hitherto shalt thou come, but no farther*: he hath no eye-witness of these things. Yet the light of natural reason hath put this wisdom in his reins, and hath given his heart thus much understanding. Bring a Pagan to the Schools of the Prophets of God; prophesie to an Infidel, rebuke him, lay the judgements of God before him, make the secret sins of his heart manifest, and he shall fall down and worship God. They that crucified the Lord of Glory, were not so far past recovery, but that the Preaching of the Apostles was able to move their hearts and to bring them to this, *Men and brethren, what shall we do?* Agrippa, that sat in judgement against Paul for preaching, yielded notwithstanding thus far unto him, *Almost thou persuadest me to become a Christian*. Although the Jews for want of knowledge have not submitted themselves to the righteousness of God; yet I bear them record, saith the Apostle; *that they have a zeal*. The Athenians, a people having neither Zeal, nor knowledge, yet of them also the same Apostle beareth witness, *To men of Athens, I perceive ye are Deists*; some way religious: but Mockers, walking after their own ungodly lusts, they have smothered every spark of that heavenly light, they have stifled even their very natural understanding. O Lord, thy mercy is over all thy works, thou savest man and Beast! yet a happy case it had been for these men if they had never been born: and so I leave them.

10. S. Jude having his mind exercised in the Doctrine of the Apostles of Jesus Christ, concerning things to come in the last time, became a man of a wise and staid judgement. Grieved he was, to see the departure of many, and their falling away from the Faith, which before they did profess: *grieved*, but not *dismayed*. With the simpler and weaker sort it was otherwise: Their countenance began by and by to change, they were half in doubt they had deceived themselves in giving credit to the Gospel of Jesus Christ. S. Jude, to comfort and refresh those silly babes, taketh them up in his armes, and sheweth them the men at whom they were offended. Look upon them that forsake this blessed Profession wherein you stand: they are now before your eyes; view them, mark them, are they not carnal? are they not like to noysome carrion cast out upon the Earth? is there that Spirit in them which cryeth *Abba* Father in your bosomes? Why should any man be discomfited? Have you not heard that there should be mockers in the last time? These verily are they, that now do separate themselves.

11. For your better understanding, what this severing and separating of themselves doth mean, we must know, that the multitude of them which truly believe (howsoever they be dispersed far and wide each from other) is all *one body*, whereof the head is Christ; *one building*, whereof he is the corner Stone, in whom they as the members of the body being knit, and as the stones of the building, being coupled, grow up to a man of perfect stature, and rise to an holy Temple in the Lord. That which linketh Christ to us, is his meer mercy and love towards us. That which tyeth us to him, is our faith in the promised salvation revealed in the Word of truth. That which uniteth and joyneth us amongst our selves, in such sort that we are now as if we had but one heart and one soul, is our love. Who be inwardly in heart the lively members of this body, and the polished stones of this building, coupled and joyned to Christ, as flesh of his flesh, and bones of his bones, by the mutual bond of his unspeakable love towards them, and their unfained faith in him, thus linked and fastned each to other by a spiritual, sincere, and hearty affection of love, without any manner of simulation; who be Jews within, and what their names be; none can tell, save he whose eyes do behold the secret disposition of all mens hearts. We, whose eyes are too dim to behold the inward man, must leave the secret judgement of every servant to his own Lord, accounting and using all men as brethren both neer and dear unto us, supposing Christ to love them tenderly, so as they keep the profession of the Gospel, and joyn in the outward communion of Saints. Whereof the one doth warrantize unto us their faith, the other their love, till they fall away, and forsake either the one, or the other, or both; and then it is no injury to term them

as they are. When they separate themselves, they are *separated*, not judged by us, but by their own doings. Men do separate themselves either by Heretic, Schism, or Apostatic. If they loose the bond of faith, which then they are justly supposed to do, when they forwardly oppugn any principal point of Christian doctrine, this is to separate themselves by *Heretic*. If they break the bond of unity, whereby the body of the Church is coupled and knit in one, as they do, which willfully forsake all external communion with Saints in holy sacrifices purely and orderly established in the Church, this is to separate themselves by *Schism*. If they willingly cast off, and utterly forsake both profession of Christ, and communion with Christians, taking their leave of all Religion, this is to separate themselves by plain *Apostasy*. And so *Jude*, to express the manner of their departure, which by *Apostasy* fell away from the faith of Christ, saith, *They separated themselves*; noting thereby, that it was not constraint of others, which forced them to depart, it was not infirmity and weakness in themselves, it was not fear of persecution to come upon them, whereas their hearts did hold it was not grief of torment, whereof they had tasted, and were not able any longer to endure them; but they voluntarily did separate themselves with a fully settled, and altogether determined purpose never to name the Lord Jesus any more, nor to have any fellowship with his Saints, but to bend all their counsel, and all their strength, to take out their memorial from amongst men.

Threefold Separation:  
1. Heretic.  
2. Schism.  
3. Apostatic.

12. Now because that by such examples, not only the hearts of Infidels were hardened against the truth, but the minds of weak Brethren also much troubled, the Holy Ghost hath given sentence of these backsliders, that they were carnal men, and had not the Spirit of Christ Jesus, lest any man having an over-weening of their persons, should be overmuch amazed and offended at their fall. For simple men not able to discern their spirits, were brought by their Apostasy, thus to reason with themselves, If Christ be the Son of the living God, if he have the words of Eternal life, if he be able to bring salvation to all men that come unto him, what manner is this Apostasy, and unconstrained departure? why do his servants so willingly forsake him? Babes, be not deceived, his servants forsake him not. They that separate themselves were amongst his servants, but if they had been of his servants, they had not separated themselves. They were amongst us, not of us, saith *S. John*; and *S. Jude* proclaims it, because they were carnal, and had not the Spirit. Will you judge of wheat by chaff, which the wind hath scattered from amongst it? Have the children no bread, because the dogs have not tasted it? Are Christians deceived of that salvation they look for, because they were denied the joys of the life to come, which were no Christians? What if they seemed to be Pillars and principal Upholders of our Faith? What is that to us, which know that Angels have fallen from Heaven? Although if these men had been of us indeed (O the blessedness of Christian mans estate!) they had stood surer then the Angels that had never departed from their place. Whereas now we marvel not at their departure at all, neither are we prejudiced by their falling away; because they were not of us, sith they are fleshly, and have not the Spirit. Children abide in the house for ever; they are Bond-men, and Bond-women, which are cast out.

Infalible evidence in the faithful, that they are Gods Children.

13. It behoveth you therefore greatly every man to examine his own estate, and to try whether you be bond or free, children or no children. I have told you already, that we must beware we presume not to sit as Gods in judgement upon others, and rashly, as our conceit and fancy doth lead us so to determine of any man, he is sincere; or of that man, he is an hypocrite, except by their falling away they make it manifest and known that they are. For who art thou that takest upon thee to judge another before the time? Judge thy self. God hath left us infalible evidence, whereby we may at any time give true and righteous sentence upon our selves. We cannot examine the hearts of other men, we may our own. That we have passed from death to life we know it, saith *S. John*, because we love our Brethren: And know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ is in you, except ye be Reprobates? I trust, Beloved, we know that we are not Reprobates, because our spirit doth bear us record, that the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ is in us.

14. It is as ealie a matter for the Spirit within you to tell whose ye are, as for the eyes of your body to judge where you sit, or in what place you stand. For what saith the Scripture? *Te which were in times past strangers and enemies, because your*



minde were set on evil works, Christ hath now reconciled in the body of his flesh through death, to make you holy, and unblameable, and without fault in his sight: If you continue grounded and established in the faith, and be not moved away from the hope of the Gospel, *Colos. 1.* And in the third to the *Colossians*, Ye know, that of the Lord ye shall receive the reward of that inheritance, for ye serve the Lord Christ. If we can make this account with our selves, I was in times past dead in trespasses and sins, I walked after the Prince that ruleth in the Ayre, and after the Spirit that worketh in the children of disobedience, but God, who is rich in mercy, through his great love, wherewith he loved me, even when I was dead, hath quickned me in Christ. I was fierce, heady, proud, high-minded; but God hath made me like the childe that is newly weaned: I loved pleasures more then God, I followed greedily the joys of this present World; I esteemed him, that erected a Stage or Theatre, more then *Solomon*, which built a Temple to the Lord; the Harp, Viol, Timbrel, and Pipe, Men Singers, and Women fingers were at my feast; it was my felicity to see my children dance before me: I said of every kinde of vanity, O how sweet art thou in my soul! All which things now are crucified to me, and I to them: Now I hate the pride of life, and pomp of this World; now I take as great delight in the way of thy testimonies, O Lord, as in all riches; now I finde more joy of heart in my Lord and Saviour, then the worldly-minded man, when his Wheat and Oyl do much abound: Now I taste nothing sweet, but the Bread which came down from Heaven, to give unto the World: Now mine eyes see nothing, but Jesus rising from the dead: Now my ear refuseth all kinde of melody, to hear the Song of them that have gotten a Victory of the Beast, and of his Image, and of his mark, and of the number of his Name, that stand on the Sea of Glass, having the Harps of God, and singing the Song of *Moses* the servant of God, and the Song of the Lamb, saying, Great and marvellous are thy works, Lord God Almighty, just and true are thy ways, O King of Saints. Surely, if the Spirit have been thus effectual in the secret work of our Regeneration unto newness of life; if we endeavour thus to frame our selves anew, then we may say boldly with the blessed Apostle in the tenth to the *Hebrews*, *We are not of them which withdraw our selves to perdition, but which follow faith to the conservation of the soul.* For they that fall away from the grace of God, and separate themselves unto perdition; they are fleshly and carnal, they have not Gods holy Spirit. But unto you, because ye are Sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, to the end ye might know, that Christ hath built you upon a Rock unmoveable; that he hath registered your names in the Book of life; that he hath bound himself in a sure and everlasting Covenant, to be your God, and the God of your children after you, that he hath inferred as much; groined as out, prayed as heartily for you, as for Peter, O Father, *keep them in thy Name! O Righteous Father, the world hath not known thee, but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me, I have declared thy name unto them, and will declare it, that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them.* The Lord of his infinite mercy give us hearts plentifully fraught with the treasure of this blessed assurance of faith unto the end.

The Papists  
saile accuse  
us of I heresie  
and Apostasie.

14. Here I must advertise all men, that have the testimony of Gods holy fear within their breasts, to consider how unkindely and injuriously our own Countrey men and Brethren have dealt with us by the space of four and twenty years, from time to time, as if we were the men of whom *S. Jude* here speaketh; never ceasing to charge us, some with Schism, some with Heresie, some with plain and manifest Apostasie, as if we had cleane separated our selves from Christ, utterly forsaken God, quite abjured Heaven, and trampled all Truth and all Religion under our feet. Against this third sort, God himself shall plead our Cause in that day, when they shall answer us for their words, not we them. To others, by whom we are accused for Schism and Heresie, we have often made our reasonable, and in the sight of God, I trust, allowable answers. For in the way which they call *Heresie*, we worship the God of our Fathers, believing all things which are written in the Law and the Prophets. That which they call *Schism*, we know to be our reasonable service unto God, and obedience to his voyce, which cryeth thrill in our ears, *Go out of Babylon my people, that you be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.* And therefore when they rise up against us, having no quarrel but this, we need not to seek

*Acts 15.*

*Apoc. 18.*

any

any farther for our Apology, then the words of *Abiah* to *Jeroboam* and his Army, 2 Chron. 13. *O Jeroboam and Israel, hear you me, ought you not to know, that the Lord God of Israel hath given the Kingdom over Israel to David for ever, even to him and to his sons, by a Covenant of Salt: that is to say, an everlasting Covenant.* Jesuits and Papists, hear yeme, ought you not to know, that the Father hath given all power unto the Son, and hath made him the onely Head over his Church, wherein he dwelleth as an Husbandman in the midst of his Vine, manuring it with the sweat of his own brows, not letting it forth to others? For as it is in the *Canticles*, *Solomon* had a Vineyard in *Baalhamon*, he gave the Vineyard unto Keepers, every one bringing for the fruit thereof a thousand pieces of Silver; but my Vineyard, which is mine, is before me, saith Christ. It is true, this is meant of the mystical Head set over the body, which is not seen. But as he hath reserved the mystical Administration of the Church invisible unto himself, so he hath committed the mystical Government of Congregations visible to the sons of *David*, by the same Covenant; whose sons they are, in the governing of the Flock of Christ, whomsoever the Holy Ghost hath set over them, to go before them, and to lead them in several Pastures, one in this Congregation, another in that; as it is written, *Take heed unto your selves, and to all the Flock, whereof the Holy Ghost hath made you Overseers, to feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his own blood.* Neither will ever any Pope or Papist, under the Cope of Heaven, be able to prove Romish Bishops usurped Supremacy over all Churches, by any one word of the Covenant of Salt, which is the Scripture. For the children in our streets do now laugh them to scorn, when they force, *Thou art Peter*, to this purpose. The Pope hath no more reason to draw the Charter of his universal Authority from hence, then the Brethren had to gather by the words of Christ, in the last of *S. John*, that the Disciple, whom Jesus loved, should not dye. *If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?* saith Christ. Straitways a report was raised amongst the Brethren, that this Disciple should not dye. Yet Jesus said not to him, He shall not dye; but, *If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?* Christ hath said in the sixteenth of *S. Matthews Gospel*, to *Simon* the Son of *Jonas*, *I say to thee, thou art Peter.* Hence an opinion is held in the World, That the Pope is universal Head of all Churches. Yet Jesus said not, *The Pope is universal Head of all Churches*; but, *Thou art Peter*. Howbeit, as *Jeroboam*, the son of *Nebat*, the servant of *Solomon*, rose up and rebelled against his Lord, and there were gathered unto him vain men and wicked, which made themselves strong against *Raboaam*, the son of *Solomon*, because *Raboaam* was but a childe, and tender-hearted, and could not resist them: So the Son of Perdition, and Man of Sin, being not able to brook the words of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, which forbade his Disciples to be like Princes of Nations, *They bear Rule that are called Gracious, it shall not be so with you*, hath risen up and rebelled against his Lord, and to strengthen his arm, he hath crept into the houses almost of all the Noblest Families round about him, and taken their children from the Cradle, to be his Cardinals: He hath favoured upon the Kings and Princes of the Earth, and by Spiritual Cozenage hath made them sell their lawfull Authority and Jurisdiction, for Titles of *Catholicus*, *Christianissimus*, *Defensor fidei*, and such like: He hath proclaimed sale of Pardons, to inveigle the ignorant, built Seminaries to allure young men, desirous of Learning; erected Stews, to gather the dissolute unto him. This is the rock whereupon his Church is built. Hereby the man is grown huge and strong, like the Cedars, which are not shaken with the wind, because Princes have been as children, over-tender hearted, and could not resist.

Hereby it is come to pass, as you see this day, that the Man of Sin doth war against us, not by men of a Language which we cannot understand, but he cometh as *Jeroboam* against *Judah*, and bringeth the fruit of our own bodies to eat us up, that the bowels of the childe may be made the Mothers grave, that hath caused no small number of our Brethren to forsake their Native Countrey, and with all disloyalty to cast off the yoke of their Allegiance to our dread Sovereign, whom God in mercy hath set over them; for whose safeguard, if they carried not the hearts of Tygers in the bosomes of men, they would think the dearest blood in their bodies well spent. But now, saith *Abiah* to *Jeroboam*, Ye think ye be able to resist the Kingdom of Lord, which is in the hands of the Sons of *David*. Ye be a great multitude,

Cant. 8. 11.

Act. 10.

The Pope is  
usurped Supre-  
macy.

Écrit de l'Év. r.  
ardi Laurent.  
Surius Com. de  
rebus gestis a Pio 5.  
Francisco. San-  
cti de guberna-  
tione pub. l.  
11. cap. d. iud.  
Ch. Ar. scil. Ch.  
Soldat.

the golden Calves are with you, which *Jeroboam* made you for gods: Have ye not driven away the Priests of the Lord, the sons of *Aaron*, and the *Levites*? and have made you Priests like the people of Nations? Whosoever commeth with a young Bullock, and seven Rams, the same may be a Priest of them that are no gods. If I should follow the Comparison, and here uncover the Cup of those deadly and ugly Abominations wherewith this *Jeroboam*, of whom we speak, hath made the Earth so drunk; that it hath reeled under us, I know, your godly hearts would loath to see them. For my own part, I delight not to rake in such filth, I had rather take a garment upon my shoulders and go with my face from them, to cover them. The Lord open their eyes, and cause them, if it be possible, at the length to see, how they are wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked! For it, O Lord in their hearts, to seek white Raiment, and to cover themselves, that their filthy nakedness may no longer appear! For, beloved in Christ, we bow our knees, and lift up our hands to heaven in our Chambers secretly, and openly in our Churches we pray heartily and hourly; even for them also: though the Pope hath given out as a Judge, in a solemn declaratory Sentence of *Excommunication* against this Land, That our gracious Lady hath quite abolished Prayers within her Realm; and his Scholars, whom he hath taken from the midst of us, have in their published Writings charged us not onely not to have any holy Assemblies unto the Lord for Prayer, but to hold a common School of Sin and flattery; to hold Sacrilege to be Gods Service; Unfaithfulness, and breach of promise to God, to give it to a strumpet, to be a Vertue; to abandon Fasting; to abhor confession; to dislike with Penance; to like well of Usury; to charge none with restitution; to find no good before God in single life; nor in no well-working; that all men, as they fall to us, we much worse, and more than afore, corrupted. I do not add one word, or syllable, unto that which Mr. *Brislow*, a man both born and sworn amongst us, hath taught his hand to deliver to the view of all. I appeal to the conscience of every soul, that hath been truly converted by us, Whether his heart were never raised up to God by our Preaching; whether the words of our exhortation never wrung any tear of a penitent heart from his eyes; whether his soul never reaped any joy, and comfort, any consolation in Christ Jesus by our Sacraments, and Prayers and Psalms, and Thanksgiving; whether he were never bettered, but always worsed by us.

O merciful God! If Heaven and Earth in this case do not witness with us, and against them; let us be razed out from the land of the living! Let the Earth on which we stand swallow us quick, as it hath done *Corah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram*! But if we belong unto the Lord our God, and have not forsaken him: if our Priests, the sons of *Aaron*, Minister unto the Lord, and the Levites in their Office: if we offer unto the Lord every morning and every evening the burnt Offerings, and sweet incense of Prayers, and thanksgivings; if the Bread be set in order upon the pure Table, and the Candlestick of Gold, with the Lamps thereof, burn every morning; that is to say, if amongst us Gods blessed Sacraments be duly administred, his holy Word sincerely and daily preached; if we keep the Watch of the Lord our God, and if ye have forsaken him: then doubt ye not, this God is with us as a Captain, his Priests with sounding Trumpets must cry alarme against you; O ye children of *Israel*, fight not against the Lord God of your Fathers, for ye shall not prosper.

a Chr. cap. 13.

Verse 10.

THE



# THE SECOND S E R M O N.

J U D E , V E R S E , 17, 18, 19, 20, 21.

*But ye, beloved, remember the words which were spoken of before of the Apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ,*

*How that they told you, that there should be mockers in the last time, which should walk after their own ungodly lusts.*

*These are makers of sects, fleshly, having not the Spirit.*

*But ye, beloved, edifie your selves in your most holy faith, praying in the holy Ghost.*

*And keep your selves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, unto eternal life.*

**H**AVING ocherwhere spoken of the words of Saint Jude going next before, concerning *Mockers*, which should come in the last time, and backsliders, which even then should fall away from the faith of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ; I am now by the aid of Almighty God, and through the assistance of his good Spirit, to lay before you the words of Exhortation, which I have read.

2. Wherein first of all, whosoever hath an eye to see, let him open it, and he shall well perceive, how careful the Lord is for his children, how desirous to see them profit and grow up to a manly stature in Christ, how loth to have them any way mis-led, either by examples of the wicked, or by inticements of the world, and by provocation of the flesh, or by any other means forcible to deceive them, and likely to estrange their hearts from God. For God is not at that point with us that he careth not whether we sink or swim. No, he hath written our names in the Palme of his hand, in the Signet upon his finger are we graven, in sentences not only of Mercy, but of Judgement also, we are remembered. He never denounceth Judgements against the wicked, but he maketh some *Proviso* for his Children, as it were for some certain priviledged persons, *Touch not mine anointed, do my Prophets no harm, hurt not the Earth, nor the Sea, nor the Trees, till we have sealed the servants of God in their foreheads.* He never speaketh to godless men, but he adjoyneth words of comfort, or admonition, or exhortation, whereby we are moved to rest and settle our hearts on him. In the second to Timothy, the third Chapter, *Evil men (saith the Apostle) and deceivers shall wax worse, deceiving, and being deceived. But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned.* And in the first to Timothy the sixth Chapter, *Some men lusting after money, have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves thorow with many sorrows: But thou, O man of God, flee these things, and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience, meekness.* In the second to the Thessalonians, the second Chapter, *they have not received the love of the truth, that they might be saved, God shall send them strong delusions, that they*

they may believe lies. But we ought to give thanks alway to God for you, brethren, beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of the Spirit, and faith in the Truth. And in this Epistle of St. Jude: *There shall come mockers in the last time, walking after their own ungodly lusts. But, beloved, edifie ye your selves in your most holy faith.*

3. These sweet Exhortations, which God putteth every where in the mouthes of the Prophets and Apostles of Jesus Christ, are evident tokens, that God sitteth not in Heaven careless and unmindful of our estate. Can a mother forget her child? Surely, a Mother will hardly forget her child. But if a Mother be haply found unnatural, and do forget the fruit of her own Womb, yet Gods judgements shew plainly, that he cannot forget the man whose heart he hath framed and fashioned a new, in simplicity and truth to serve and fear him. For when the wickedness of man was so great, and the earth so filled with cruelties, that it could not stand with the righteousness of God any longer to forbear, wrathful sentences brake out from him, like Wine from a vessel that hath no vent: *My Spirit (saith he) can struggle and strive no longer, an end of all flesh is come before me.* Yet then did Noah find grace in the eyes of the Lord, *I will establish my Covenant with thee (saith God) thou shalt go into the Ark, thou, and thy sons, and thy wife, and thy sons wives with thee.*

4. Do we not see what shift God doth make for Lot, and for his family, in the 19. of Genesis, lest the fiery destruction of the wicked should overtake him? Over-night the Angels make enquiry, what sons and daughters, or sons in law, what wealth and substance he had. They charge him to cary out all, *Whatsoever thou hast in the City, bring it out.* God seemeth to stand in a kind of fear, lest some thing or other would be left behind. And his will was, that nothing of that which he had, not an hoof of any beast, not a thread of any garment, should be singled with that fire. In the morning the Angels sail not to call him up, and to hasten him forward, *Arise, take thy wife and thy daughters which are here, that they be not destroyed in the punishment of the City.* The Angels having spoken again and again, *Lot for all this lingereth out the time still, till at the length they were forced to take both him, and his wife and his daughters by the armes, (the Lord being merciful unto him) and to carry them forth, & set them without the City.*

5. Was there ever any father thus careful to save his child from the flame? A man would think, that now being spoken unto to escape for his life, and not to look behind him, nor to tarry in the plain, but to hasten to the mountain, and there to save himself, he should do it gladly. Yet behold, now he is so far off from a cheerful and willing heart to do whatsoever is commanded him for his own weal, that he beginneth to reason the matter, as if God had mistaken one place for another, sending him to the Hill, when salvation was in the City. *Not so, my Lord, I beseech thee, Behold, thy servant hath found grace in thy sight, and thou hast magnified thy mercy which thou hast shewed unto me in saving my life. I cannot escape in the Mountain, lest some evil take me and I die. Here is a City hard by, a small thing; O, let me escape thither (is it not a small thing?) and my soul shall live. Well, God is contented to yeild to any conditions, Behold, I have received thy request concerning this thing also, I will spare this City for which thou hast spoken; hast thee; save thee there; For I can do nothing till thou come thither.*

6. He could do nothing! Not because of the weakness of his strength (for who is like unto the Lord in power?) but because of the greatness of his mercy, which would not suffer him to lift up his arm against that City, nor to pour out his wrath upon that place where his righteous servant had a fancy to remain, and a desire to dwell. O the depth of the riches of the mercy and love of God! God is afraid to offend us which are not afraid to displease him! God can do nothing till he have saved us, which can find in our hearts rather to do any thing then to serve him. It contenteth him not to exempt us, when the pit is digged for the wicked; to comfort us at every mention which is made of reprobates and godless men; to save us as the apple of his own eye, when fire cometh down from heaven to consume the inhabitants of the earth; except every Prophet, and every Apostle, and every servant whom he sendeth forth, do come loaden with these and the like exhortations, *O beloved, edifie your selves in your most holy faith; Give your selves to prayer in the Spirit, keep your selves in the love of God; Look for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternall life.*

7. *Edifie your selves.* The speech is borrowed from material builders, and must be spiritually understood. It appeareth in the sixt of St. Johns Gospel by the Jews,

Jews, that their mouths did water too much for bodily food, *Our Fathers*, say they, *did eat Manna in the Desert, as it is written, He gave them bread from Heaven to eat; Lord, evermore give us of this bread!* Our Saviour, to turn their appetite another way, maketh them this answer, *I am the bread of life; he that cometh to me, shall not hunger; and he that believeth in me, shall never thirst.*

8. An usual practice it is of Satan, to cast heaps of worldly baggage in our way, that whilst we desire to heap up gold as dust, we may be brought at length to esteem vilely that spiritual bliss. Christ, in *Matth. 6.* to correct this evil affection, putteth us in minde to lay up treasure for our selves in Heaven. The Apostle, *1 Tim. Chap. 3.* misliking the vanity of those Women which attired themselves more costly then becomed the Heavenly calling of such as professed the fear of God, willett them to cloath themselves with shamefastness and modesty, and to put on the apparell of good works. *Taliter pigmentata, Deum habebitis amatorem*, saith *Tertullian*. Put on on Righteousness as a garment; instead of Civit, have Faith, which may cause a favour of life to issue from you, and God shall be enamoured, he shall be ravished with your beauty. These are the ornaments, and bracelets, and jewels which inflame the love of Christ, and set his heart on fire upon his Spouse. We see how he breaketh out in the *Canticles* at the beholding of this attire, *How fair art thou, and how pleasant art thou, O my Love, in these pleasures!*

9. And perhaps *S. Jude* exhorteth us herenot to build our houses, but our selves; foreseeing by the Spirit of the Almighty, which was with him, that there should be men in the last days like to those in the first, which should encourage and stir up each other to make Brick, and to burn it in the fire, to build Houses huge as Cities, and Towers as high as Heaven, thereby to get them a name upon Earth; men that should stir out the poor, and the fatherless, and the widow, to build places of rest for Dogs and Swine in their rooms; men that should lay Houses of Prayer even with the ground, and make them stables where Gods people have worshipped before the Lord. Surely this is a vanity of all vanities, and it is much amongst men; a special sickness of this age. What it should mean, I know not, except God have set them on work to provide jewel against that day when the Lord Jesus shall shew himself from Heaven with his mighty Angels in flaming fire. What good cometh unto the owners of these things, saith *Solomon*, but onely the beholding thereof with their eyes? *Martha, Martha, thou buiest thyself about many things, One thing is necessary.* Ye are too busie, my Brethren, with Timber and Brick; they have chosen the better part, they have taken a better course that build themselves. *Ye are the Temples of the living God, as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and will walk in them, and they shall be my people, and I will be their God.* Eccles. 5.

10. Which of you will gladly remain, or abide in a mishapen, a ruinous, or a broken house? And shall we suffer sin and vanity to drop in at our eyes, and at our ears, and at every corner of our bodies, and of our souls, knowing that we are the Temples of the Holy Ghost? Which of you receiveth a Guest whom he honoureth, or whom he loveth, and doth not sweep his Chamber against his coming? And shall we suffer the Chamber of our Hearts and Consciences to lie full of vomiting, full of filth, full of garbige, knowing that Christ hath said, *I and my Father will come and dwell with you?* Is it meet for your Oxen to lie in Parlours, and your selves to lodge in Cribbs? Or is it seemly for your selves to dwell in your sealed Houses, and the House of the Almighty to lie waste, whose House ye are your selves? Do not our eyes behold, how God every day overtaketh the wicked in their journeys, how suddenly they pop down into the pit? how Gods judgements for their crimes come so swiftly upon them, that they have not the leisure to cry, *Alas!* how their life is cut off like a thred in a moment? how they pass like a shadow? how they open their mouths to speak, and God taketh them even in the midst of a vain or an idle word? And dare we for all this lie down, take our rest, eat our meat securely and carelessly in the midst of so great and so many ruines? Blessed and praised for ever and ever be his Name, who perceiving of how senseless and heavy metal we are made, hath instituted in his CHURCH a Spiritual Supper, and an Holy Communion, to be Celebrated often, That we might thereby be occasioned often to examine these Buildings of ours, in what case they stand. For sith God doth not dwell in Temples which are unclean, sith a Shrine cannot be a Sanctuary

M in it

unto

The Sacrament  
of the Lords  
Supper.



unto him; and this Supper is received as a seal unto us, that we are his House and his Sanctuary; that his Christ is as truly united to me, and I to him, as my arm is united and knit unto my shoulder; that he dwelleth in me as verily, as the elements of Bread and Wine abide within me; which perswasion, by receiving these dreadful mysteries, we profess our selves to have a due comfort, if truly; and if in hypocrisie, then wo worth us. Therefore ere we put forth our hands to take this blessed Sacrament, we are charged to examine and to try our hearts, whether God be in us of a truth or no: and if by faith and love unfeigned we be found the Temples of the Holy Ghost, then to judge, whether we have had such regard every one to our building, that the Spirit which dwelleth in us hath no way been vexed, molested and grieved: or if it have, as no doubt sometimes it hath by incredulity, sometimes by breach of charity, sometimes by want of zeal, sometimes by spots of life, even in the best and most perfect amongst us; (for who can say his heart is clean?) O then to fly unto God by unfeigned repentance, to fall down before him in the humility of our souls, begging of him whatsoever is needful to repair our decays, before we fall into that desolation whereof the Prophet speaketh, saying, *Thy breach is great like the Sea, who can heal thee?*

Lam. 2. 13.

11. Receiving the Sacrament of the Supper of the Lord after this sort (you that are Spiritual, judge what I speak) is not all other Wine like the Water of *Marah*, being compared to the Cup, which we bless? Is not *Manna* like to gall, and our bread like to *Manna*? Is there not a taste, a taste of Christ Jesus, in the heart of him that eateth? Doth not he which drinketh, behold plainly in this cup, that his soul is earned in the blood of the Lamb? O beloved in our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, if ye will taste how sweet the Lord is, if ye will receive the King of glory, *Build your selves.*

12. *Young men*, I speak this to you; for ye are his house, because by faith ye are Conquerers over Satan, and have overcome that evil. *Fathers*, I speak it also to you; ye are his house, because ye have known him, which is from the beginning. Sweet *Babes*, I speak it even to you also; ye are his house, because your sins are forgiven you for his names sake. *Matrons and Sisters*, I may not hold it from you; ye are also the Lords building; and as *S. Peter* speaketh, *heirs of the grace of life as well as we.* Though it be forbidden you to open your mouthes in publique Assemblies, yet ye must be inquisitive in things concerning this building, which is of God, with your husbands, and friends at home; not as *Dalilah* with *Sampson*, but as *Sara* with *Abraham*, whose daughters ye are, whilst ye do well, and build your selves.

13. Having spoken thus far of the Exhortation, as whereby we are called upon to edifie and build our selves; it remaineth now, that we consider the thing prescribed, namely, wherein we must be built. This prescription standeth also upon two points, the thing prescribed, and the *adjuncts* of the thing. And that is our most pure and holy Faith.

14. The thing prescribed is Faith. For as in a chain, which is made of many links, if you pull the first, you draw the rest; and as in a Ladder of many staves, if you take away the lowest, all hope of ascending to the highest will be removed: So, because all the Precepts and Promises in the Law and in the Gospel do hang upon this, *Believe*; and because the last of the graces of God doth so follow the first, that he glorifieth none, but whom he hath justified, nor justifieth any, but whom he hath called to a true, effectual, and lively faith in Christ Jesus; therefore *S. Jude* exhorting us to *build our selves*, mentioneth here expressly onely faith, as the thing wherein we must be edified, for that faith is the ground and the glory of all the welfare of this building.

15. *Ye are not strangers and foreigners, but Citizens with the Saints, and of the household of God* (saith the Apostle) and are built upon the foundation of the Prophets and Apostles, *Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner Stone, in whom all the building being cunited together, groweth unto an holy Temple in the Lord, in whom ye also are built together to be the habitation of God by the Spirit.* And we are the habitation of God by the Spirit, if we believe; for it is written, *Whoever confesseth, that Jesus is the Son of God, in him God dwelleth, and he in God.* The strength of this habitation is great, it prevaileth against Satan, it conquereth sin, it hath Death in derision; neither Principalities nor Powers can throw it down; it leadeth the World captive, and bringeth every enemy, that riseth up against it, to confusion and shame, and all by faith; for this is the victory that overcometh the World, even our faith. Who is it that overcometh the World, but he which believeth that Jesus is the Son of God?

Ephes. 4.

1 John 4 &amp; 5.

16. The strength of every Building, which is of God, standeth not in any mans arms or

or legs; it is onely in our faith, as the valour of *Sampson* lay onely in his hair. This is the reason, why we are so earnestly called upon to *edifie our selves in faith*. Not as if this bare action of our mindes, whereby we believe the Gospel of Christ, were able in it self, as of it self, to make us unconquerable, and invincible, like stones, which abide in the building for ever, and fall not out. No, it is not the worthiness of our believing, it is the vertue of him in whom we believe, by which we stand sure, as houses that are builded upon a Rock. He is a wise man which hath builded his house upon a Rock; for he hath chosen a good foundation, and no doubt his house will stand; but how shall it stand? Verily, by the strength of the Rock which beareth it, and by nothing else. Our Fathers, whom God delivered out of the Land of Egypt, were a people that had no Peers amongst the Nations of the Earth, because they were built by faith upon the Rock, which Rock is Christ. *And the Rock? saith the Apostle, in the first to the Corinthians, the tenth Chapter) did follow them.* Whereby we learn not onely this, that being built by faith on Christ, as on a Rock, and grafted into him as in an Olive, we receive all our strength and firmness from him; but also, that this strength and firmness of ours ought to be no cause why we should be high-minded, and not work out our salvation with a reverent trembling, and holy fear. For if thou boastest thy self of thy faith, know this, That Christ chose his Apostles, his Apostles chose not him; that Israel followed not the Rock, but the Rock followed Israel; and that thou bearest not the Root, but the Root thee. So that every heart must thus think, and every tongue must thus speak, *Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, nor unto any thing which is within us, but unto thy name onely, onely to thy Name belongeth all the praise of all the Treasures and Riches of every Temple which is of God. This excludeth all boasting and vaunting of our faith.*

Mat. 7.

Rom. 11.

17. But this must not make us careless to edifie our selves in Faith. It is the Lord that delivereth mens souls from death; but not except they put their trust in his mercy. It is God that hath given us eternal life, but no otherwise then thus, If we believe in the Name of the Son of God; for he that hath not the Son of God, hath not life. It was the Spirit of the Lord which came upon *Sampson*, and made him strong to tear a Lion, as a man would rend a Kid; but his strength forsook him, and he became like other men, when the Razor had touched his head. It is the power of God whereby the faithful have subdued Kingdoms, wrought Righteousness, obtained the promises, stopped the mouthes of Lyons, quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword: But take away their faith, and doth not their strength forsake them? are they not like unto other men?

John 7.

18. If ye desire yet farther to know how necessary and needful it is that we edifie and build up our selves in faith, mark the words of the blessed Apostles, *Without faith it is impossible to please God.* If I offer unto God all the Sheep and Oxen that are in the World, if all the Temples that were builded since the days of Adam till this hour, were of my foundation; if I break my very heart with calling upon God, and wear out my tongue with preaching; if I sacrifice my body and my soul unto him, and have no faith, all this availeth nothing. *Without faith it is impossible to please God.* Our Lord and Saviour therefore being asked in the sixth of S. *James* Gospel, *What shall we do that we might work the works of God?* maketh answer, *This is the work of God, that ye believe in him whom he hath sent.*

No pleasing of God without faith.

19. That no work of ours, no building of our selves in any thing can be available or profitable unto us, except we be edified and built in faith: What need we to seek about for long proof? Look upon *Israel*, once the very chosen and peculiar of God, to whom the adoption of the faithful, and the glory of Cherubims, and the Covenants of mercy, and the Law of Moses, and the service of God, and the promises of Christ were made in propriety, who not onely were the off-spring of *Abraham*, father unto all them which do believe, but Christ their off-spring, which is God to be blessed for evermore.

20. Consider this people, and learn what it is to *build your selves in faith*. They were the Lords Vine: He brought it out of Egypt, he threw out the Heathen from their places, that it might be planted; he made room for it, and caused it to take root, till it had filled the earth; the mountains were covered with the shadow of it, and the boughs thereof were as the goodly Cedars, the stretched out her branches unto the Sea, and her boughs unto the River. But when God having sent both his Servants and his Son to visit this Vine, they neither spared the one,

Psal. 69.  
Rom. 11.

Psal. 118. 14.

Rom. 11. 30.

Verse 22.

Hosea 1. 9 not  
my people.  
Ver. 6. no: ob-  
taining mercy.

nor received the other, but stoned the Prophets, and crucified the Lord of glory which came unto them; then began the curse of God to come upon them, even the curse whereof the Prophet David hath spoken, saying, *Let their table be made a snare, and a net, and a stumbling block, even for a recompence unto them: let their eyes be darkened, that they do not see, bow down their backs for ever, keep them down.* And since the hour that the measure of their infidelity was full made up, they have been spoiled with wars, eaten up with plagues, spent with hunger and famine; they wander from place to place, and are become the most base and contemptible people that are under the Sun. Ephraim, which before was a terror unto Nations, and they trembled at his voice, is now by infidelity so vile, that he seemeth as a thing cast out to be trampled under mens feet. In the midst of these desolations they cry, *Return, we beseech thee, O God of hosts, look down from heaven, behold and visit this Vine:* but their very prayers are turned into sin, and their crys are no better then the lowing of beasts before him. Well, saith the Apostle, *by their unbelief they are broken off, and thou dost stand by thy Faith:* Behold therefore the bountifulness, and severity of God; towards them severity, because they have fallen; bountifulness towards thee, if thou continue in his bountifulness, or else thou shalt be cut off. If they forsake their unbelief and be grafted in again, and we at any time for the hardness of our hearts be broken off, it will be at such a judgement as will amaze all the powers and principalities which are above. Who hath searched the counsel of God concerning this secret? And who doth not see that Infidelity doth threaten *Lo-ammi* unto the Gentiles, as it hath brought *Lo-ruchama* upon the Jews? It may be that these words seem dark unto you. But the words of the Apostle in the eleventh to the Romans, are plain enough, *If God have not spared the natural branches, take heed, take heed lest he spare not thee:* Build thy self in faith. Thus much of the thing which is prescribed, and wherein we are exhorted to edifie our selves. Now consider the Condition and Properties which are in this place annexed unto faith. The former of them (for there are but two) is this, *Edifie your selves in your faith.*

21. A strange, and a strong delusion it is wherewith the man of sin hath bewitched the world; a forcible spirit of error it must needs be which hath brought men to such a senseless and unreasonable persuasion as this is, not only that men clothed with mortality and sin, as we our selves are, can do God so much service as shall be able to make a full and perfect satisfaction before the Tribunal seat of God for their own sins; yea, a great deal more then is sufficient for themselves: but also that a man at the hands of a Bishop or a Pope for such or such a price, may buy the over-plus of other mens merits, purchase the fruits of other mens labours, and build his soul by another mans faith. Is not this man drowned in the gall of bitterness? Is his heart right in the light of God? Can he have any part or fellowship with Peter, and with the Successors of Peter, which thinketh so vilely of building the precious Temples of the Holy Ghost? Let his money perish with him, and he with it, because he judgeth that the gift of God may be sold for money.

22. But, beloved in the Lord, deceive not your selves, neither suffer ye your selves to be deceived: Ye can receive no more ease nor comfort for your souls by another mans faith, then warmth for your bodies by another mans cloaths; or sustenance by the bread which another doth eat. The just shall live by his own faith. Let a Saint, yea a Martyr, content himself, that he hath cleansed himself of his own sin, saith Tertullian: No Saint or Martyr can cleanse himself of his own sins. But if so be a Saint or Martyr can cleanse himself of his own sins, it is sufficient that he can do it for himself. Did ever any man by his death deliver another man from death, except only the Son of God? He indeed was able to *Safe-conduct* a Thief from the Cross to Paradise: for to this end he came, that being himself pure from sin, he might obey for sinners. Thou which thinkest to do the like, and supposest that thou canst justify another by thy Righteousness, if thou be without sin, then lay down thy life for thy brother; dye for me. But if thou be a sinner, even as I am a sinner, how can the Oyl of thy Lamp be sufficient both for thee and for me? *Virgins* that are wise, get ye Oyl, while ye have day, into your own lamps: For out of all peradventure, others, though they would, can neither give nor sell. Edifie your selves in your own most holy faith. And let this be observed for the first property of that wherein we ought to edifie our selves.



23. Our faith being such, is that indeed which S. Iude doth heretern *Faith*; namely, a thing most *holy*. The reason is this, We are justified by *Faith*: For *Abraham* believed, and this was imputed unto him for Righteousness. Being justified, all our iniquities are covered; God beholdeth us in the righteousness which is imputed, and not in the sins which we have committed.

24. It is true, we are full of sin, both *original* and *actual*; whosoever denieth it, is a double sinner, for he is both a *sinner* and a *liar*. To deny sin, is most plainly and clearly to prove it, because he that saith he hath no sin, lyeth, and by lying proveth that he hath sin.

25. But *imputation* of righteousness hath covered the sins of every soul which believeth; God by pardoning our sin, hath taken it away: So that now, although our transgressions be multiplied above the hairs of our heads, yet being justified, we are as free, and as clear, as if there were no one spot or stain of any uncleanness in us. For it is God that justifieth; And who shall lay anything to the charge of Gods chosen? saith the Apostle in *Rom. 8*.

26. Now sin being taken away, we are made the righteousness of God in Christ: for David speaking of this righteousness, saith, *Blessed is the man whose iniquities are forgiven*. No man is blessed, but in the righteousness of God. Every man whose sin is taken away, is blessed. Therefore every man whose sin is covered, is made the righteousness of God in Christ. This righteousness doth make us to appear most holy, most pure, most unblameable before him.

27. This then is the sum of that which I say, Faith doth justify, Justification washeth away sin; sin removed, we are clothed with the righteousness which is of God; the righteousness of God maketh us most holy. Every of these I have proved by the testimony of Gods own mouth. Therefore I conclude, That faith is that which maketh us most holy, in consideration whereof, it is called in this place, *Our most holy faith*.

28. To make a wicked and a sinful man most holy through his believing, is more then to create a World of nothing. Our faith most holy! Surely, *Solomon* could not shew the Queen of *Saba* so much treasure in all his Kingdom, as is laid up in these words: O that our hearts were stretched out like tents, and that the eyes of our understanding were as bright as the Sun, that we might thoroughly know the riches of the glorious inheritance of the Saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of his power towards us, whom he accepteth for pure, and most holy; through our believing. O that the Spirit of the Lord would give this doctrine entrance into the stony and brazen heart of the Jew, which followeth the Law of righteousness, but cannot attain unto the righteousness of the Law! Wherefore, saith the Apostle, they seek righteousness, and not by faith; wherefore they stumble at Christ, they are bruised, shivered to pieces as a ship that hath run her self upon a Rock. O that God would cast down the eyes of the proud, and humble the souls of the high-minded! that they might at the length abhor the garments of their own flesh, which cannot hide their nakedness, and put on the faith of Christ Jesus, as he did put it on which hath said, *Doubtless I think all things; but lost, for the excellent knowledge sake of Christ Jesus my Lord, for whom I have counted all things lost, and do judge them to be dung, that I might win Christ; and might be found in him, not having mine own righteousness; which is of the Law; but that which is through the faith of Christ, even the righteousness which is of God through faith*. O that God would open the Ark of Mercy, wherein this Doctrine lieth, and set it wide before the eyes of poor afflicted Conscience, which lie up and down upon the water of their afflictions, and can see nothing but only the gulf and deluge of their sins, wherein there is no place for them to rest their feet. The God of pity and compassion give you all strength and courage, every day, and every hour, and every moment, to build and edifie your selves in this most pure and holy faith. And thus much both of the thing prescribed in this Exhortation, and also of the properties of the thing, *Build your selves in your most holy faith*. I would come to the next branch, which is of Prayer, but I cannot lay this matter out of my hands; till I have added somewhat for the applying of it, both to others; and to our selves.

29. For your better understanding of matters contained in this Exhortation, *Build your selves*, you must note, that every Church and Congregation doth consist of a multitude of Believers, as every house is built of many stones. And although the nature

nature of the mystical body of the Church be such, that it suffereth no distinction in the invisible members, but whether it be *Paul* or *Apollos*, Prince or Prophet, he that is taught, or he that teacheth, all are equally Christs, and Christ is equally theirs: yet in the external administration of the Church of God, because God is not the Author of Confusion, but of peace, it is necessary that in every Congregation there be a distinction, if not of inward dignity, yet of outward degree; so that all are Saints, or seem to be Saints, and should be as they seem: But are all Apostles? If the whole body were an eye, where were then the hearing? God therefore hath given some to be Apostles, and some to be Pastors, &c. for the edification of the body of Christ. In which work, we are Gods labourers (saith the Apostle) and ye are Gods husbandry, and Gods building.

30. The Church, respected with reference unto administration Ecclesiastical, doth generally consist but of two sorts of men, the *Labourers*, and the *Building*; they which are ministered unto, and they to whom the work of the Ministry is committed; *Pastors*, and the *Flock* over whom the Holy Ghost hath made them *Overseers*. If the *Guide* of a Congregation, be his name or his degree whatsoever, be diligent in his vocation, feed the flock of God which dependeth upon him, caring for it, not by constraint, but willingly, not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind; not as though he would tyrannize over Gods heritage, but as a pattern unto the flock, wisely guiding them: if the people in their degree do yield themselves frameable to the truth, not like rough stone or flint, refusing to be smoothed and squared for the building; if the *Magistrate* do carefully and diligently survey the whole order of the work, providing by statutes and laws, and bodily punishments, if need require, that all things may be done according to the rule which cannot deceive; even as *Moses* provided that all things might be done according to the pattern which he saw in the Mount; there the words of this Exhortation are truly and effectually heard. Of such a Congregation every man will say, *Behold a people that are wise, a people that walk in the Statutes and Ordinances of their God, a people full of knowledge and understanding, a people that have skill in building themselves*. Where it is otherwise, there, as *hypocritism* is the *roof* that decays and as by *idleness of hands* the house droppeth *thru*, as it is in *Eccles. 10. 18.* so first one piece, and then another of their building shall fall away, till there be not a stone left upon a stone.

31. We see how fruitless this Exhortation hath been to such as bend all their travel only to build and manage a *Papacy* upon earth, without any care in the World of building themselves in their most holy faith. Gods people have enquired at their mouths, *What shall we do to have Eternal life?* Wherein shall we build and edifie our selves? And they have departed home from their Prophets, and from their Priests, laden with Doctrines which are Precepts of men; they have been taught to tire out themselves with bodily exercise; those things are enjoyed them, which God did never require at their hands, and the things he doth require are kept from them; their eyes are fed with pictures, and their ears are filled with melody, but their souls do wither, and starve, and pine away; they cry for bread, and behold stones are offered them; they ask for fish, see they have Scorpions in their hands. Thou saest, O Lord, that they build themselves, but not in faith; they feed their children, but not with food: Their Rulers say with shame, *Being, and not build*, But Gods righteous; their drunkenness stinketh, their abominations are known, their wickedness is manifest, the wind hath bound them up in her wings, and they shall be ashamed of their doings. *Ephraim*, saith the Prophet, *is joyned to Idols, let him alone, I will turn me therefore from the Priests which do minister unto Idols, and apply this Exhortation to them*, whom God hath appointed to feed his chosen in Israel.

32. If there be any feeling of Christ, any drop of heavenly dew, or any spark of Gods good Spirit within you, stir it up, be careful to build and edifie, first your selves, and then your flocks, in this most holy faith.

33. I say, first your selves; For, he which will set the hearts of other men on fire with the love of Christ, must himself burn with love. It is water of faith in our selves, my Brethren, which makes us wretched in building others. We forsake the Lords inheritance, and feed it not. What is the reason of this? Our own desires are stretched where they should not be. We our selves are like those women, which have a longing to eat coals, and lime, and filth; we are fed, some with honour, some with ease,

some with wealth; the Gospel waxeth loathsome and unpleasant in our taste; how should we then have a care to feed others with that, which we cannot fancy our selves! If Faith wax cold and slender in the heart of the Prophet it will soon perish from the ears of the people. The Prophet *Amos* speaketh of a famine, saying, *I will send a famine in the Land, not a famine of bread, nor a thirst of water: but of hearing the Word of the Lord.* *Amos 8.11.* Men shall wander from sea to sea, and from the North unto the East shall they run to and fro, to seek the Word of the Lord, and shall not finde it. Judgement must begin at the house of God, saith Peter. Yea, I say, at the Sanctuary of God, this judgement must begin. *1 Pet 4.17.* This famine must begin at the heart of the Prophet. He must have darkness for a vision, he must stumble at noon days, as at the twi-light; and then truth shall fall in the midst of the streets, then shall the people wander from sea to sea, and from the North unto the East shall they run to and fro, to seek the Word of the Lord.

34. In the second of *Haggai*, *Speak now*, saith God to his Prophet, *Speak now to Zerubbabel, the son of Shealtiel, Prince of Judah, and to Jehoshua, the son of Jehozadak the High-Priest, and to the residue of the people, saying, Who is left among you, that saw this house in her first glory, and how do you see it now? Is not this house in your eyes, in comparison of it, as nothing?* The Prophet would have all mens eyes turned to the view of themselves, every sort brought to the consideration of their present state. This is no place to shew what duty Zerubbabel or Jehoshua doth owe unto God in this respect. They have, I doubt not, such as put them hereof in remembrance. I ask of you, which are a part of the residue of Gods Elect and chosen people, Who is there amongst you that hath taken a survey of the House of God, as it was in the days of the blessed Apostles of Jesus Christ? Who is there amongst you, that hath seen and considered this Holy Temple in her first glory? And how do you see it now? Is it not in comparison of the other, almost as nothing? when ye look upon them that have undertaken the charge of your souls, and know how far these are, for the most part, grown out of kind, how few there be that tread the steps of their ancient Predecessors, ye are easily filled with indignation, easily drawn unto these complaints, wherein the difference of present, from former times, is bewailed; easily perswaded to think of them that lived to enjoy the days which now are gone, surely they were happy in comparison of us that have succeeded them: Were not their Bishops men unreprouceable, wise, righteous, holy, temperate, well reported of, even of those which were without? Were not their Pastors, Guides and Teachers, able and willing to exhort with wholesome Doctrine, and to reprove those which gain-said the Truth? had they Priests made of the refuse of the people? were men, like to the children which were in *Niniveh*, unable to discern between the right hand and the left, presented to the charge of their Congregation? did their Teachers leave their flocks over which the Holy Ghost had made them overseers? did their Prophets enter upon holy things as spoils, without a reverend calling? were their leaders so unkindly affected towards them, that they could finde in their hearts to sell them as sheep or oxen, not caring how they made them away? But, Beloved, deceive not your selves. Do the faults of your Guides and Pastors offend you? it is your fault if they be thus faulty. *Nullus, qui malum Rectorem patitur, eum accuset, quia sui sunt meriti perversi Pastoris subiaceri ditioni*, saith S. Gregory, whosoever thou art whom the inconvenience of an evil Governor doth press, accuse thy self, and not him: His being such, is thy deserving. O ye disobedient children, turn again, saith the Lord, and then will I give you Pastors according to mine own heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding. So that the onely way to repair all ruines, breaches, and offensive decays in others, is to begin reformation at your selves. Which that we may sincerely, seriously, and speedily do, God the Father grant for his Son our Saviour Jesus sake, unto whom with the Holy Ghost, three Persons, one Eternal and Everlasting God, be honour, and glory, and praise for ever. Amen.







# A N Alphabetical Table,

CONTAINING

All the Principal Matters handled in the first,  
second, third, fourth, fifth, sixth, seventh and eighth Books  
(being now entire and compleat) of the *Ecclesiasti-*  
*cal Polity*, and of other Writings of  
*Mr. Richard Hooker.*

- A.**
- A**ction, any thing by which actions are framed is a Law, 4. Whose actions are freed from prejudice, 143. How Actions make men idle, 278. Men bound to imitate God in his Actions, 8. What are the fountains of humane Actions, 10. Actions, how reduced, 7, 8. Whether Actions are rewardable, 18
- Advice*, where to be sought, 181
- Affairs*, what instruments are fittest to be employed in any affair, 135. What things are convenient in the outward ordering of Church affairs, 141
- Agents*, the law which Agents must keep, 4
- Alchidamas*, his opinion of premeditate speech, 169
- Ambrose* 26, his opinion of the power of mans will, 234
- Angels*, their Law, 7. And Considerations, 8
- Anaxagoras*, 3
- Annuntiation*, the Feast Day thereof, 279
- Apoerypha*, of the reading thereof, 157, 158
- Argument*, see *Disputation*,
- Aristotle*, 44
- Arrius*, his first cause of dissention, 196
- Assertion*, see *Position*.
- Atbanasius*, of his Creed, and the use thereof, 196
- Atheism*, the greatest opposite to Religion, 137
- What maketh *Atheists* politique, 138
- Attire* belonging to the service of God, 178
- The glory of white Attire in the East parts of the World, 179
- Augustine*, 5, 16, 20, 28, 29, 44, 45, 50, 54, 58, 78, 89, 95, 97, 101, 118, 123. his opinion of the Dedication of Churches, 150. Of devout Women, 170. Of short Prayer, 185. Of Christ, 221, 222. Of Revolt after Baptism, 244. Of Baptism administred by Lay-men in case of necessity, *ibid*: His answer to *Boniface*, 248
- Authority*, the force of humane authority, 58. How it may with good conscience be obeyed, 180
- Author*, his cause and inducements of writing this Book, 1
- Awe*, see *Fear*.
- B.**
- B**abylon, before Zion in zeal, 138
- It is taken for the Church of Rome, 246. Her sins, *ibid*.
- Baptism*, the substance, rites and solemnities thereof, 229 230. The ground of its necessity, 231, 234. The kinde of its necessity, 231. Dispensing with things in it, 235. Of it being administred by women, 237. Interrogatories in it, 246. Proposed to Infants
- N n n and

# THE TABLE

- and answered by God-fathers, 247.  
 Of the Cross in it, 251  
*Basil*, his advice touching obedience to Governors, 182. His opinion of mulick in Churches, 191  
*Behaviour*, in prayer, 182  
*Belief*, not begotten by the bare contemplation of Heaven and Earth, 165. What must save believers, 167  
*Benefit*, of keeping Reasons Laws, 17  
*Boniface* his asking of *Aug.* a reason for Interrogatories in Baptism, 248  
*Burial*, the rites thereof, 297  
*Bishop*. B. of *Salisbury* answer to Mr. *Harding*. 50
- C.
- Calvin*, 64, 88, 118  
*Canons*, the making of Ecclesiastical Canons, 78  
*Catechizing*, the first kinde of preaching, 155  
*Ceremony*, no Church can be without the use thereof, 252. The use thereof in our Church, 25, 99. All Ceremonies are not left to the order of the Church, 88. What is condemned in our Ceremonies, 96, 117. Our Ceremonies accused of Popishness, 98. Lawfull to use some of *Rome's* Ceremonies, 100. Our Ceremonies not to be abolished for any of the adversaries reasons, 101. The use of Popish Ceremonies giveth no hope to the Popish Religion, 100, 101. The grief that godly men take at our Ceremonies answered, 108, 109. Touching the Papists taking some Ceremonies from the Jew answered, 109, 110, 111, 112, 113. Difference in Ceremonies should not breed controversies, 117, 118. An answer to the allegation, that our Ceremonies having bin abused by Idolatry, are scandalous, 114, 115, 116. There should be unity both in Doctrine and Ceremonies, 117. An answer touching the abolition of our Ceremonies after the example of other Reformed Churches, *ibid.* The Roman Ceremonies preferred to the Turkish, 104. The Adversaries contradict themselves in expounding Ceremonies, 99, 100  
*Christ*, the manner of his person, 207. By the union of his Natures there is neither gain nor loss of essential properties to either, 208. Of his obtainment to his flesh by vertue of its union with Deity, 218. The four things which compleat the whole state of *Christ*, 220. His ubiquity, *ib.* His love to man, 225. His Laws not altered, 89. Whether he hath forbidden the change of Laws, 83  
*Church*, its power, 114. Its delight, 145. The antiquity of Churches, 148. Solemnities in erecting them, the dedicating and hallowing of them, *ibid.* Burdens not to be carried thorrow them, 150. The names whereof they are distinguished, *ibid.* Of their fashions, 151. Their sumptuousness, *ibid.* The holiness and vertue ascribed to them, 153. Their pretence that would destroy Churches, *ib.* The power and beauty of the Church, a motive to prayer, 175. Its privilege, 272. Sincere Truth the first thing delivered to the Church, 344. The provision of the Church of *England*, *ibid.* The visible Church denned, 245. Of what it consists, 302. Considerations touching it, 303. What it is, and why politick Laws are required, 61. Difference between matters of Church-policy, and matters of faith, 67. Their denning that pleaded against the Polity of the Church of *England*, 62. To condemn Ecclesiastical Laws, an injury to all Churches, *ibid.* That nothing ought to be established in the Church but what is commanded in the scripture answered, 70. The answer to the other device touching the same, 71. for which there be six other proofs, 39, 40, 41, 44, 48. The examples of the eldest Churches do not disprove us, 103. Churches compared rather to families, then to servants of one family, 118. The establishment of Ecclesiastical laws in the C. of *Eng.* 128.  
*Churching* of Women, 226  
*Command*, the exposition thereof, 70  
*Communion*, the faults of its administration, 289  
*Concubine*, different from a wife, 295  
*Confession*, private confession not condemned, but left at liberty, 158  
*Confirmation*, how to be used after Baptism, 259  
*Conscience*, no man can do ill with a good conscience, 140  
*Constantine*, 149, 285  
*Continence*, the effects thereof, 139  
*Corruption*, 12  
*Counsel*, see *Advice*.  
*Creator*, he made the world, not by hand but reason, three proceeding therein by



# THE TABLE.

by a set and certain way, *ib.* see God.  
*Crosse*, the use thereof. 253  
*Cyprian*. 45, 170, 239

## D

**D** *Deacons*, for what use made. 320  
*Death*, the bitterness of it 204.  
*Sudden death*, 303. What is said to  
 him that draweth toward death.

146

*Dedication*, the feast thereof. 279

*Duty*, see God.

*Delight*, see Joy.

*Demands*, see Questions.

*Devil*, see Satan.

*Discles*, his destroying of Churches. 152

*Dionysius*, his Report touching Reba-  
 ptism. 239

*Discipline*, a part of the Gospel. 82

*Disputation*, how the Fathers dispute,  
 44 Custom of disputing from divine  
 authority negatively, 48. Disputa-  
 tion from humane authority. 50

*Doctrine*, what it is, 65. How it is to be  
 examined. 168

*Duties*, how they are best performed,  
 135. The nature of the Ministry  
 which performeth duties. 309

## E

**E** *Ecclesiastical Livings*, who may hold  
 one, or more.

*Edward the 6.* termed a Saint. 124

*Elizabeth, Q. of England* her praise, and  
 great work in Religion. *ibid.*

*Epanetus*. 120

*Evil*. 145

*Eutyches*. 216

*Example*, according to what example.

*Expedient*, see Necessity. 107

*Experience*, that is not to be condemn-  
 ed, which experience in all ages  
 hath allowed. 96

*Expiation*, what *Israel* is bound to on  
 the day of expiation. 146

## F

**F** *Faith*, the difference betwixt it and  
 policy. 67

*Fasting*, 278, 279, 281, 285.

*Fathers*, the manners of their dispu-  
 ting, 44. The first assertion taken,  
 from the Fathers answered. *ibid.*

*Faustus*. 103

*Flax*. 118, 131, 132, 474

*Felicity*, who capable thereof, and who  
 not. 25

*Festival dayes*. 276, 277, 279, 280.

*Flesh*, the honour of our flesh by being  
 the flesh of Christ. 219.

*Form*, what it is in man, and in other  
 Creatures. 6.

*Foundation*. 251.

*Friends*, why friends are naturally de-  
 fired. 305.

## G

**G** *Gloria Patri*, the use thereof, 196, 199

*Gladnesse*, see Joy.

*Gifts*, not offered to God, &c. 186.

*God*, his being the Author of Laws doth  
 not prove Laws unchangeable, 80.

He hath left a prescript form of  
 government, 83. The course which  
 he taketh is not against our conformi-  
 ty with the Church of Rome, 101.

What he requireth at mans hands,  
 142. His goodnesse, 170. His wor-  
 thinnesse, 204. His will that all might  
 be saved, 210. He is in Christ by  
 the personal incarnation, 205. How  
 he is in Christ, 224. see Creatour.

*Godlinesse*, the well-spring of all ver-  
 tues. 135.

*Grace*, how it is a consequent of Sa-  
 crament. 229.

*Gregory*, his charitable speech to Le-  
 ander. 117.

## H

**H** *Anding*, against the Bishop of Sa-  
 lisbury, and the Bps. answer, 50.

*Harmony*, musical harmony, how to be  
 used in the Church. 190.

*Health*, why so precious. 309.

*Heaven*, hard to find out the things in  
 Heaven. 12.

*Henry 8. K. of England* the first who put  
 down superstition. 132.

*Heretie*, often troubled the West part  
 of the World, but the East was ne-  
 ver quiet, 140. Its misinterpretati-  
 on touching the union of the two  
 natures in Christ. 214.

*Hillary*. 14.

*Hymns*, their uses, 187. How to be  
 sung. 189, 190.

*Homer*. 3.

*Homilies* defended. 170

*Hooker*, his Answer to Mr. Travers sup-  
 plication, 430. Mr. Travers first and  
 second conference with Mr. Hooker,  
 131. Mr. H. willingness to peace, *ib.*

The obj. of Tr. answered, as that of  
 predesti-

# THE TABLE.

predestination and faith, 231. That of Justification, 232. The Virgin Mary's sin, 232, 233. The faults Mr. Travers found in Mr. Hooker's manner of Teaching answered, 234. Travers application of the Tares answered, 236. His fourth excuse answered, 239. His demands answered, 238. The citing onely of Canonical Scriptures in preaching. *ibid.* Hypocrites, his Oracle. 6

## I

**I**dolatry, see Superstition.  
*Jerome*, 54, 109. His Complaint. 153  
*Ignorance*, its effects. 146  
*Infants*, how they have right to Baptism, 245. How they may covenant with God. 249  
*Instruction*, how it belongeth to the Sacrament. 212  
*Joy*, it's work, 285. It's easie swerving from Mediocrity. 303  
*Irenaeus*, 54. His opinion touching the flesh of Christ. 216, 217  
*Isidore*, his opinion of reading. 170  
*Jude*, his virtues. 295  
*Julian*, a Persecuter. 176  
*Jupiter*, his counsel fulfilled. 3  
*Justice*, the use and abuse thereof. 135  
*Justification*, what it is, 243. The justification of the Jews, 244. Whether the justified may fall yea or not? 253  
*Justine*, the Martyr, his opinion of Baptism. 247

## K

**K**nowledge, the fountain of humane actions, 10. How it is attained by reading, 159. The knowledge of Truth how gotten by hearing, 162. The knowledge of God is not brought with us into the world 163. What is in the knowledge of God and man, 211. In what estimation knowledge was among the *Valentinian Hereticks*. 233

## L

**L**aw, the Law which God proposed to himself by which to do all things, 2. The Law which natural agents have given them to observe and how to keep it, 4. What a

Law is, *ibid.* The diversity of Laws, *ibid.* 5. The Law, by which Angels do work, 7. By which many must imitate God in his actions, 8. How man began to understand Law, 9. Laws grounded upon mans will, 10. The finding out of Laws by Reason 12. On what all Laws consist, 15. The benefit of keeping Reasons Laws, 17. Supernatural Laws how suffered by God, 24. The cause of setting down natural and rational Laws in the Scripture, 28. The benefit of divine Laws being written, 29. Laws positive, 32. All Church Laws not to be condemned, 69. good Laws for the rule of the Church may be made by the advice of men, 78. Laws are not unchangable, 89. The Laws of Christ not altered, 100. Eleven Circumstances to prove that our Church Laws are unlawful, 90, 91. Laws made against the Jews, 113. All positive Laws of men may be abolished, 122. Good Laws are the voices of Reason, 146. And they are the Images of wisdom. 345  
*Lay-Elders*, their power in Spiritual causes. 137  
*Legards*, their abuse. 160  
*Letany*, the use and singing thereof. 194  
*Lets*, the feast thereof. 279  
*Low*, see Unity.

## M

**M**an, how he is bound to imitate God in his actions, 11. His first knowledge of the Law which he is to observe, 9. The principal Instruments wherewith God hath furnished him, 143. Wherefoever is man is vanity, 204. How men are the Sons of God, 225. The perfection of a Christian man wherein it consisteth, 330. The nature of man, 266. Mans mind not right, 267. The just and the impious man are of contrary minds, 268. Why natural men know not the things of God, 277. Man must not halt between two opinions, 287. The goodnesse of God to man. 296

*Marriage*, see Matrimony.  
*Marcion*, his opinion of Christ. 266  
*Matrimony*, the Celebration thereof, 288. The Ring in it, 295. The fruits of it. 296

*Maximins*,

# THE TABLE.

**Maximinus**, his giving way to build Churches. 152

**Mercurius Trimegistus**. 39

**Ministry**, the nature and function thereof, 301. Power given to men to exegunt the office of the Holy Ghost, 313. The difference between the Minister and other men, 314. In what sort Ministers may give the Holy Ghost, 315. In ordination Ministers receive the Holy Ghost, 316. The Ministry is an office of honour and dignity, *ibid*. The Minister must wait for, and not attempt his office, and Ministers must not be made for reward, 318. The degrees whereby the power of order is distinguished, and the attire of Ministers, 318. The rank of the first Ministry, 312. The learning which should be in Ministers, 333. What learning they should have, 337. Against sloth in them, 334. Of their absence. 335

**Mockers**, 285. they are worse than Pagans. *ibid*

**Moses**, his casting of prayer into poetical models, 176. His attributing of speech to God, 5. The choice he presented to the people, and exhorted them to. 10

**Motion**, humble motion. 153

## N.

**Nature**, her Law, and whence, 5, 6. to which the Heathen held themselves onely obliged, 111. How she coveteth preservation, from things hurtful. 275

**Necessity**, what is needful in Church affairs. 134

**Nestorius**, his opinion and error, touching Christ. 216

**Nicene Creed**, by whom framed, 196.

**Nineveh**, the force of prayer there, 166.

**Novatianus**, his Opinion of Baptism, 29

## O.

**Obedience**, how it belongeth to the Church. 144

**Opinion**, what the variety of Opinions argueth, 268. Dangerous opinions among the Fathers. 473

**Ordination**, of lawful ordination, and what their quality is that enter into holy orders. 330

**Ornaments**, see Attire.

**Orpheus**, his opinion of Gods Throne, 7

## P.

**Pascbasius**, his opinion of Christ. 215, 216

**Patience**, what it is. 274

**Pekab**, termed the head of Samaria. 200

**Pelagius**, his use of Baptism. 233

**Penitency**, second penitency following that before Baptism. 140

**Pharisees**, their most grosse suspicion. 140

**Plato**. 3

**Policy**, how grounded on reason, 18. the Church-policy, 60. Not the best policy to hate no agreement with the Church of Rome, 105. How policy is indebted to Religion. 127

**Pope**, his ambition, 275. And usurped Supremacy. 294

**Position**, the Adversaries first position answered, 38. The first, 39. The second, 199. The third, 41. The fourth proof thereof answered. 42

**Power**, over all causes, both Ecclesiastical, and Political. 213

**Prayer**, what it is, 173. Publick prayer, 174. The form of Common-prayer, *ibid*. The place of publick prayer, 175. The authority of the place, *ibid*. Those that deny Common-prayer, 176. Those who allow a set form of prayer, but not ours, 177. Errours supposed in our form of prayer, *ibid*. Gesture in praying, and different places for that purpose, 182. Easiness of praying after our form, 183. The length of our Common-prayer, 184. Lessons intermingled with prayer, *ibid*. The effect of it, 185, 186. The benefits of it, 186. The number of prayers, and the often Repetition of the Lords prayer, 187. The peoples Repeating prayers after the Minister, 108. A supposed unsoundness in our form of prayer, 202. Examples in some particular words, *ibid*. Prayer from deliverance from sudden death, 203. Other instances of prayer, 202. The prayer, to be ever more delivered from all adversity, 205. The prayer of the just is alwaies accepted, but not alwaies granted, 206. The use of prayer, *ibid*. Vain prayers, 209. The prayer, That all men may find mercy, 210.

prayer,



# THE TABLE.

Prayer, a member of the Sacraments, 204. The point of standing at prayer discussed. 119

*Preaching*, the first publick preaching, 141. Preaching by readings, 148, 149. By sermons, 154. The sense and use of the word Preaching, 155. An Ordinance of God, 162. A glorious shew of Eloquence, no good preaching, 164. The substance of good preaching. *ibid*

*Precepts*, the 7. precepts which the Jews believed, to be given by God, to the sons of Noah. 111

*Priest*, what the word signifieth, 311. who may not be Priests. 331, 332

*Pride*, a Sermon of it, 468. Tokens of it, 470. What is in the heart of a proud man, 471. The mother of all evils, 472. The remedy of it. *ibid*

*Privileges*, their several natures, 228.

*Proof*, the first taken from the difference of affairs and offices, 388. The second from the speeches of the Fathers opposing the one to the other, 389. The third from the effects of punishment inflicted by the one or the other. 390

*Prophets*, their manner of speech, 468. not made by ordination. 313

*Prophecie*, the spirit thereof received from God himself. 488

*Proposition*, of five, four reasonable, and one unreasonable, 133. The first, *ibid*. The second, 134. The third, 136. The fourth, 137. The fifth, 139

*Prosper*, his opinion of the Law and of supplication 204

*Psalms*, their several uses, 181. Mulick with *Psalms*, 182. Singing *Psalms*, where the people and Minister do answer one another. 183

## Q.

**Q**uestions, a question concerning the outward form, in the exercise of Religion, 133. Questions touching judgement. *ibid*

## R.

**R**abanus Maurus, his opinion of Mulick in Churches. 113

*Reading*, what is attributed thereto, 156. It is the Ordinance of God, 162. It forsaketh them that for-

sake God. 130

*Reason*, how it findeth out Laws, 12. The benefit of keeping its Laws, 17. How it teacheth men to make Laws, 18. And how it made the World. 2

*Religion*, the root of Vertue, 127. All things Religions are prosperous, 128. What the Heathen impute to it, *ibid*. Four general demands concerning the outward form in Religion, 133. The fifth rule not safe nor reasonable, *ibid*. The exercise of Religion must have its place, 139. Oblations, Foundations, Endowments of tithes intended for the perpetuity of Religion. 216

*Repentance*, with which all do perish, 150. A general Repentance will not serve for all sins. 249

*Right*, which men give, God doth ratifie. 192

*Righteousness*, no meer natural man absolutely righteous, 413. Of which there are two sorts. 243, 244

*Romulus*, his Laws concerning marriage. 287

## S.

**S**acraments, the Name, the Author, and force of them, 20. Instruction and prayer, the Elements and parts thereof, *ibid*. The necessity of them unto the participation of Christ, 220. Diversly interpreted, *ibid*. They are food, 235. The Sacrament of the Body and Blood of Christ, 235. The three expositions of this is my Body, 260. Faults in the Administration thereof, 261. More of the Lords Supper. 267, 268

*Solomon*, the Author of many parables, 127

*Satan*, his subtilty.

*Satisfaction*, the end of it, 167. The way of satisfying by others. 167

*Scotus*, a question of his concluded. 30

*Scripture*, the sufficiency thereof, 30. What it containeth, 10. A directory to man in all his actions, 40. It denieth the thing, it noteth not, 46. Nothing is taken from it, which may be given it with truth, 68. The whole drift thereof, 75. Some supposed untruths in its translation. 148

*Separation*, the meaning of the word, 195. It is threefold, 196. What separatists are. *ibid*

*Sermons*,

# THE TABLE.

*Sermons*, whether they be the ordinary way of teaching, 162. What is attributed to them onely, 164. A sermon against pride, 159. Against sorrow, and fear, 172. Of the perpetuity of faith, 177. Upon part of *Jude's* Epistle, 184. Out of which a second sermon, 290. Against sorrow, 272. The womans sorrow for Christ, *ibid.* The Apostles sorrow, *ibid.* Moderation of sorrow, 104  
*Singing*, in Churches, 189, 190, 191, 192, 193. The *Magnificate*, *Benedictus*, and *nunc Dimittis*, 193, 194. The *Letany*, *ibid.*  
*Societies*, how founded and governed, 18. how stand and continue, 19, 20, &c.  
*Soul*, what is injurious to it, 12  
*Speech*, compared to tapestry, 227  
*Strabo*, 33  
*Supernatural*, how supernatural Laws made known, 24  
*Superstition*, how it ruled among the *Romans*, 128. The root thereof, 138. The redress thereof, 140

## T.

**T** *Arquins* a Roman Consul, banished onely because of his name, 123.  
*Tertullian*, 45, 46, 47, 62, 73, 12, 104. His opinion of publique prayer, 174. Of Christian Women marrying with Infidels, 194. of feasts, 287. Of the ring in Matrimony, 295  
*Thanksgiving*, the want of particular Thanksgiving, 193. Other thanksgiving for common calamities, *ibid.*  
*Theophrast*, 13  
*Thomas Aquinas*, 72  
*Traditions*, disordered, 29  
*Transmigration*, the first beginning thereof, 136  
*Truth*, what keepeth men from consenting to it, 239. How it is joyned to this work, 56

## V.

**V** *Valentinian*, a persecutor, 196  
*Union*, how the union of Deity came with mankind, 218. The union which is between Christ and the Church, 234  
*Unity*, how allowed, 125. The manner of Unity between the Church, *ibid.*

*Unworthiness*, mans unworthiness, 20  
 W.

**W** *Alter Travers*, his supplication to the Lords of her Majesties Council, 219. He not lawfully called to the Maistrey, and his answer thereto, 221. He preached without licence, and his answer thereto, 222. His action with Mr. *Hooker*, *ibid.* His position, That such as dye in the Church of *Rome*, holding ignorantly that faith, &c. cannot be said by the Scriptures to be saved, 224. The cause of division betwixt him and Mr. *Hooker*, 224, 225. The Church of *Rome* compared with the *Galatians*, 245. By him speech is compared to Tapestry, 247. And he charged with indiscretion by the High Commissioners, 222

*Whitaker*, his Confutation of *Bellarmino*, 32

*Wickedness*, two sorts of wicked men.

*Wife*, the difference between her and a Concubine, 295

*Will*, a Fountain of Humane Actions, 10. Mans will for which Laws are made, *ibid.* Mans will must be framed to Gods will, 212. Whether will be in God, or man, to what it belongeth, 208

*Wisdom*, diversities of Wisdom, 216. The effects thereof, 146. It maketh men desire slowness in death, 146.

The course which Gods wisdom taketh, is not against our conformity with the Church of *Rome*, 101

*Wis*, the weakness and dulness thereof, make men slow to believe what is written, 171

*Women*, Christian Women marrying with Infidels, 194

*Words*, how to be taken, 119

*Works*, what those men call good works errour in the Church of *Rome*, touching good works.

*Worship*, what Worship belongeth to God, 141

*Worthiness*, the worthiness of God, 204

## Y.

**Y** *Young men*, an Exhortation to them,

## Z.

**Z** *Zeal*, a principal root of superstition, 139

*Zonaras*, 37

# An Alphabetical Table of the Seventh Book.

**A.**  
**A**NGELS of the Churches explained, page 9  
*Affection* of Presbyters in Ordination, how in point of power or jurisdiction, 14  
*Apostolical* antiquity resembled in Bishops and Cathedrals, 18  
*Archbishops*, or Metropolitans, the occasion of their advancement, and their preeminence, 20, 21, 24  
*Arians*, his Schism against Superiority of B.B. 25  
*Anabaptists* error common with the non-Conformists about ruling power of B.B. 45  
*An Apology* for humane infirmities in the best of men, 71

**B.**  
**B**ishops, and the Government of them, since a Christian Church was in any Kingdom, and for the space of 1600 years and upwards, 2, 32  
*Bishops* with restraint, what, 5, 7, 8, 11  
*Bishops*, Succession to the Apostles, 8, 13  
*A Bishop* may not be deposed or excommunicated by his Archbishop, 47  
*Bishops*, Stewards of Gods Family, 60, 63

**C.**  
**C**hurch, the power of it, 12, 30  
*The Clergy* had in effect the one third part of goods of the Holy Land, 62  
*Confirmation*, communicable with Bishops and Presbyters, but in the absence of B.B. 14  
*Calvins* Contentions of Episcopal Regiment, 15. Compared by him to the Consulate of Rome, and improved by the Author, 16  
*Consecration*, as to order, alike in Presbyters and Bishops, S. Jerome and S. Chrysostome expounded in the case, 6  
*Cathedrals*, wherefore so called, 19  
*Care* not to be had without the peoples consent in England, 19, 20  
*Christs* refusal of a Worldly Kingdom, no argument against Bishops exercising Civil Power, nor the example of the Apostles, 42. Nor his example in his humiliation against their Dignities, 65

**D.**  
**D**iscipline, what, 19, 20

**E.**  
**E**piphanius his answer to Arius, 26  
*Equality* of the Apostles, no argument for equality of Pastors, 28  
*Episcopacy* ordained for a remedy to Schism, 32  
*Ecclesiastick* and Civil power may be united in one person, 39, 40. Granted to Lay-Elders by the non-Conformists, 42  
*Ecclesiastick* persons mostly capable in Civil matters, 40, 41. Also used in all wise Governments, 44  
*Endowment* of Livings the great eye-sore, 59

**F.**  
**F**avour of God the chief pillar of Kingdom, and next Religion, and consequently Prelacy, 49, 50, 51  
*A Fourth* part of Church Revenues belonged unto Bishops, 64

**G.**  
**G**race and Lordship due unto the Prelacy, proved, 56

**H.**  
**H**eretics, not the righter, because sometimes weakly opposed, 26

*Humane* institution, with Gods approbation is from Heaven, influenced in the dilemma of our Saviour in the question concerning John Baptists, 30  
*Honor* where and how due, 48, 49. A mark of publicke judgement, 55. wherein it consists, *ibid.*

**I.**  
**J**erome explained, in the matter of B.B. Superiority, 9, 10, 11  
*Inequality* betwixt Bishops and Presbyters, the reason whereto, 20, 26, 27, 28

**K.**  
**K**ings always had the chiefest men of the Clergy about them to consult with, 52, 53

**L.**  
**L**aws Imperial for establishing of Bishops, in respect of Territory, 19  
*Lay-Elders* never assistants to Bishops, 38

**M.**  
**M**artyrs in the primitive times were chiefly and commonly the Bishops, 15  
*Metropolitans*, Archbishops, 21, 30  
*Miracles* the only sign of an extraordinary call to teach, 37  
*Money* first, and then moveables offered to the Apostles, 52

**N.**  
**N**ames ancienter then things, 5  
*Necessity* of Episcopal Government, 39

**O.**  
**O**rdination peculiar unto Bishops, and consecrating holy Virgins and Widows unto the service of God, 13, 35, 37  
*Ordination*, in what cases allowable without Bishops, 37  
*Objections* against Superiority of B.B. 27. And against the necessity of their institution, 30

**P.**  
**P**resbytery a novelty of yesterday, 2  
*Presbyters* Assistants onely to Bishops in Church affairs, 18  
*Patriarchs* and Primates, the difference between them and Metropolis, 22  
*Petrusian* Heretic, what, 33. Peoples right in Ordination, objected, 35, 36, 37  
*Propriety* of Church goods in God, and therefore Sacriledge to alienate them, 57, 58

**R.**  
**R**eformation, what it pretends to, and its issue, 1, 2  
*Rome* how advanced to be the Sovereign Episcopal See, 25  
*An humble Remembrance* and Paraphrase to B.B. 67, 68, 69, 70

**S.**  
**S**uperiority, what among the Clergy, 6  
*See* of Bishops, what, 19, 20  
*Societies*, or Corporations, may alter and abrogate Laws, as they finde convenient among themselves, and so may the Clergy, 34

**T.**  
**T**ypes of Christ, in the Old Testament, urged against the Hierarchy, how, 14, 15

**W.**  
**W**isdom of Prelates eminent in all times, 53. Wealth of Bishop: to be carefully preserved: why, 72

**Z.**  
**Z**elus his sons, and their mothers petition, alledged against the B.B. Superiority, explained and returned, 45



